This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

Google™ books

https://books.google.com



EUSEBIUS,

Pamphili, of Caesarea

THE ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY

WITH AN ENGLISH TRANSLATION BY

KIRSOPP LAKE, D.D., D.Litt.

WINN PROFESSOR OF ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY
IN THE UNIVERSITY OF HARVARD

IN TWO VOLUMES

I



LONDON: WILLIAM HEINEMANN
NEW YORK: G. P. PUTNAM'S SONS
MCMXXVI

Digitized by Google

Printed in Great Britain.

Digitized by Google

PREFACE

THE text of the *Historia Ecclesiastica* of Eusebius in the following pages is that of E. Schwartz in volumes i. and ii. of Part II. of the edition of Eusebius in *Die griechischen christlichen Schriftsteller der ersten drei Jahrhunderte*, published by the Berlin Academy. Changes have only been introduced in a few very small points, such as the accentuation of the proper names in the genealogy of Christ.

I am most grateful to the Academy for its kindness in allowing me the use of this magnificent example of how a text ought to be edited.

In preparing the English I have in difficult passages frequently consulted the translation of A. C. M'Giffert and have derived much benefit from his notes. I am also greatly indebted to my friends Mrs. Frederick Winslow, Professor Robert P. Blake, who read proof-sheets and suggested many improvements, and Miss Edith Coe, who helped at every stage, and undertook the laborious work of verifying and inserting the references which were taken from Schwartz.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION	ix
BOOK I	2
BOOK II	98
BOOK III	190
BOOK IV	300
BOOK V	400

Digitized by Google

INTRODUCTION

I. The Life and Writings of Eusebius

No contemporary biography of Eusebius is now extant, for though one was published by Acacius, his successor as bishop of Caesarea, it has been lost, and we are dependent on a few vague statements in later writers and on the evidence of his extant writings.

He was probably born about the year 260. This date is fixed by (1) the fact that he speaks of Dionysius of Alexandria as having been alive in his time: Dionysius was bishop of Alexandria from about 247 to 265. (2) He speaks of Paul of Samosata as a contemporary: Paul was deposed in 270. (3) He speaks of Manes as belonging "to yesterday and our times": Manes lived during the episcopate of Felix at Rome in 270–274. (4) After speaking of Dionysius of Alexandria, who became bishop in 247, and before speaking of Dionysius of Rome (A.D. 259), he seems to draw a chronological line, stating that he now proposes to relate the history of his own generation.[1]

His parentage and the place of his birth are unknown. It is true that Arius in writing to Eusebius of Nicomedia spoke of him as the brother of the latter, but it is probable that this meant no more than "brother bishop." He was sometimes referred to

[1] *H.E.* iii. 28, v. 28, vii. 26, vii. 31; *Theoph.* iv. 30.

Digitized by Google

as " the Palestinian," but this again was probably merely to distinguish him from the other Eusebius, and alluded to his Palestinian bishopric. His most usual designation was " Eusebius of Pamphilus." This doubtless means some close relationship, and has been interpreted as son, nephew, friend, or slave of Pamphilus. All these are possible, but none certain, and in the absence of evidence a decision between them cannot be made.[1] Pamphilus was a native of Phoenicia who had studied in Alexandria and settled in Caesarea. He here collected a large library, including some of the works of Origen and the original of the Hexapla.[2] This library and the similar one made by Bishop Alexander at Jerusalem were the main sources from which Eusebius derived the material for his books.

It is unknown at what time he was ordained deacon or priest, and it has been doubted whether he was in clerical orders at all until his election to the see of Caesarea. He was imprisoned during the persecution at Caesarea under the governor Firmilianus in the year 309 but was neither tortured nor executed. Many years afterwards, at the Council of Tyre (A.D. 335), he was accused by Potammon, the bishop of Heraclea, of having betrayed the faith during the persecution and having thus escaped. But no evidence appears to have been produced that this was so, and in the controversies of that time neither side was unduly reluctant to blacken the character of their opponents; had there been any evidence it would surely have been adduced.

After the end of the persecution in 313 Eusebius

[1] Theodoret, *H.E.* i. 1; Nicephorus Callistus, *H.E.* vi. 37.
[2] Eus. *H.E.* vi. 32.

Digitized by Google

was made bishop of Caesarea, but the exact date is doubtful; it must, however, have been before 315, when as bishop of Caesarea he attended the consecration of the church in Tyre. In 325 he was present at the Council of Nicaea, where he held a very prominent place on the right hand of the Emperor Constantine. It has sometimes been stated that he was actually the president of the Council, but this cannot be proved and is even improbable. Both before and after this time he appears to have been the chief theological adviser of Constantine. His general attitude during and after the Council was that of the moderate man. He was not in agreement with the party of Alexander,[1] and appears to have done his best to induce the Council to adopt a less drastic creed. On the whole he probably was more in agreement with Arius and with his namesake, Eusebius of Nicomedia, than with the opposite party, but his policy and that of the Emperor was to seek a formula of comprehension, while Alexander on the one hand and Arius on the other desired formulae which would exclude their opponents. In the end he was obliged to yield to the pressure of numbers and appears to have voted with the majority in the final decision; but he was never really convinced, and for the rest of his life was an opponent of the Athanasian party, and a firm supporter of all attempts to evict its leaders and to modify the creed so as to leave room for more difference of opinion on metaphysical questions.

Six years after the Council of Nicaea he was present at the Council of Antioch (A.D. 331), which

[1] The Bishop of Alexandria, whose quarrel with Arius was the immediate cause of the Arian controversy and of the Council of Nicaea.

Digitized by Google

deposed Eustathius, one of the leaders of the anti-Arian party. On this occasion he was offered the bishopric of Antioch, but refused it, nominally at least, because he was unwilling to transgress the ecclesiastical rule that a bishop must not leave one see for another. Three years later (A.D. 334) a proposal was made to depose Athanasius. An attempt was apparently made to hold a council for this purpose at Caesarea, but it was unsuccessful, and the Synod was not actually held till a year later at Tyre (A.D. 335). At this meeting, which Eusebius attended, Athanasius was condemned on evidence which though apparently convincing was, to say the least of it, mostly fraudulent. Athanasius was accused of having cut off the hand of a certain bishop. The hand was actually produced as evidence, but not the bishop, whom Athanasius afterwards discovered and convicted of possessing both hands.

In the same year Eusebius was the leading figure at the Synod of Jerusalem during which was held the consecration of the new church. This Synod was distinctly Arian in tendency as, indeed, were most of the councils of the eastern clergy. It was decided to re-admit Arius, and action was begun against Marcellus of Ancyra.[1] In pursuance of this policy a little later during the same year Eusebius attended a Synod at Constantinople. Arius died on the eve of his restoration, but Marcellus was condemned, and during the proceedings Eusebius was the chosen

[1] Marcellus, bishop of Ancyra, was one of the leaders of the extreme anti-Arian party. He was accused of Sabellianism,—the heresy which regarded the Logos or Son as merely a name for God when acting in a certain way, and not as a separate "existence" or—to use the later word—hypostasis. See especially Th. Zahn, *Marcellus von Ancyra.*

Digitized by Google

orator at the famous " tricennalia," the celebration of the thirtieth year of Constantine's reign.

In 337 Constantine died and Eusebius did not long survive him. The day of his death is known with tolerable certainty, but not the year, for the Syriac martyrology of the fourth century, which probably represents the old calendar of Nicomedia, merely says that Eusebius died on May the 30th. Since Socrates, *H.E.* ii. 4, mentions his death in connexion with events which took place in 339 and 340, and since in 341, at the Synod of Antioch, Acacius, the successor of Eusebius, was present as bishop of Caesarea, the death of Eusebius must have taken place on May the 30th in 339 or 340. A definite choice between these years is impossible, but, as Lightfoot points out, the general impression made by the statements in Socrates and Sozomen is that the death of Eusebius took place before that of the younger Constantine and the second exile of Athanasius. These events were probably earlier in 340 than May the 30th, so that probability slightly favours 339 rather than 340 as the year of his death.[1]

Important though his ecclesiastical and political career undoubtedly was, his literary achievements are his chief claim to fame. Once more, there is not extant any complete list of his writings. Jerome, Nicephorus Callistus, and Ebed Jesu, the Syriac writer, have given partial lists, and scattered through the writings of Photius are references to other works. These are some help, but Eusebius himself is our chief source of information.

He began to write in the last years of the third century or at the beginning of the fourth. To the

[1] Socrates, *H.E.* ii. 4 f.; Sozomen, *H.E.* iii. 2.

Digitized by Google

earliest period probably belong two books of controversy with heathen writers. One, *Adversus Hieroclem*, was an answer to the *Philalethes* of Hierocles, who had compared Christ and Apollonius of Tyana. The work of Hierocles is unfortunately lost, but Eusebius's book is extant. It is written in a style rather markedly different from his later works, and he never quotes it. There is, however, scarcely sufficient reason for doubting its authenticity. It was probably a work of his youth. The other book of the same kind was an answer to Porphyry, a heathen controversialist living in Caesarea, who had attacked Origen and other Christians. The text of this book is wholly lost, but a fragment which may belong to it has been published by E. von der Goltz in *Texte und Untersuchungen*, xvii. 4. pp. 41 ff. It is also probable that to the same early period should be ascribed a collection of the lives of the early martyrs. This collection, which would be of inestimable value, has unfortunately been lost, but it was used by the Old Syriac martyrology and other traces of it have been found in later collections of the lives of saints. Finally, it is generally thought that a lost work of his, Περὶ τῆς τῶν παλαιῶν ἀνδρῶν πολυπαιδίας, quoted by Basil the Great, *De Spiritu Sancto*, cap. 29, and mentioned in Eusebius, *Praeparatio*, vii. 8. 29 and *Demonstratio*, i. 9. 20, may belong to this period.

The next period of his life is the ten years of the Diocletian persecution, 303–313. During this time, and possibly even before it, Eusebius was busy with a great project of connected works dealing with the history and philosophy of Christianity. Though they have not all been preserved the greater part of these books remain and are the most valuable extant

Digitized by Google

monument of Christianity as it was immediately before the Council of Nicaea. Part of his great claim to distinction is that when writing philosophy he never neglects history, or philosophy when writing history.

The position of Eusebius is that the Logos existed from the beginning with God the Father. As might be expected from one who wrote earlier than the Council of Nicaea and was afterwards suspected of a tendency to Arianism, he expresses himself with some ambiguity as to whether the Son, or Logos, was created by the Father. The Father was the creator of the universe and all creation within it the work of the Logos. Man, however, was made by the Father, though the Logos shared in the plan of his creation. After the creation it was the Logos who appeared to the righteous; and Eusebius thus explains the visions of Abraham, Moses, Jacob, and Joshua, as well as all references to Wisdom in the sapiential books. He explains that this doctrine of the Logos would have been promulgated long ago, had not men been too wicked to understand it, and that it was actually, though obscurely, contained in the Old Testament, as is shown by passages in the Old Testament which should be regarded as foretelling even the names of Jesus and of Christ. Jesus, according to him, was the incarnate Logos, who came to announce himself and to point out to men the duty of reverencing and worshipping him. Finally, he maintains that the teaching of Christianity was neither new nor strange. What was new was the Church, the race of Christians. Their corporate existence, their general piety, and their increasing influence were indeed new, but their teaching was

Digitized by Google

not. It had been followed centuries before them by Abraham and Moses and the later prophets ; and the religion of the patriarchs was identical with that of the Christians. All history was a contest between God, acting through Patriarchs, Prophets, and the Church, on the one hand, and the Devil, instigating Jews, Persecutors, and Heretics, on the other. It is a contest in which the Devil always gets the worst of it in the long run, but the righteous suffer considerably in the process ; and part of the plan of Eusebius is to reveal the machinations of the Evil One and his followers, and to show the catastrophes which befell Persecutors, Jews, and Heretics.

The student of church history will have little difficulty in recognizing that this teaching is in the direct line of Justin Martyr, Aristides, Clement of Alexandria, and Origen. In some ways he was the last and the greatest of the Apologists, for after his time, when the Church was accepted within the Empire, there was no reason for anyone to write quite the same argumentative justification of Christian religion as was incumbent upon him. It would be interesting if we could know how far his works, incomparably more logical than those of his predecessors, converted the educated classes in the Empire. Origen, no doubt, and Clement of Alexandria were his superiors as philosophers, but neither of them had the same grasp of history and of historical presentation.

To attempt to arrange in chronological order the books which he wrote during this period is misleading. He was doubtless constantly working on the material used in them all, and although it is possible to make a few statements about their relative chronology,

Digitized by Google

this applies only to the dates at which they were begun or at which they were finally put into writing.

At the head of the series must be placed the *Chronicon*. Eusebius perceived that the foundation of history is accurate chronology and for this purpose, using no doubt as the basis of his work the earlier efforts of Julius Africanus and others, and partly at least controverting their position, he produced a work which is now extant in the form of elaborate tables arranged in parallel columns illustrating the whole history of the world year by year. These form the Χρονικοὶ κανόνες, which have been preserved in an Armenian translation and in the Latin version of Jerome. Whether this was the original form of Eusebius's own work is open to question. Possibly it is a later, more precise but less trustworthy recension.[1] To these tables was prefixed a Χρονογραφία, or explanation and introduction, which has unfortunately been lost. From references in *Eclogae* i. 1 and i. 8, it would appear that this work was produced before 303, but according to Jerome Eusebius afterwards re-edited it, carrying it down to 325.

During the years of persecution which followed he began two great connected works entitled the *Praeparatio Evangelica* and the *Demonstratio Evangelica*, dedicated to Theodotus, bishop of Laodicaea. The beginning of these books can be dated as after 303 and before 313, for both *Praeparatio*, xii. 10. 7 and *Demonstratio*, iii. 5. 7 refer to the persecution as

[1] See Schwartz's Prolegomena to the *Hist. Eccl.* pp. ccxv ff.

Digitized by Google

still raging. Nevertheless, the *Demonstratio* was not finished until after the peace, to which a reference is made in *Demonstratio*, v. 3. 11.

The *Praeparatio* is fully extant, but of the *Demonstratio*, which originally contained twenty books, only the first ten are preserved. Taken together they constitute a statement of the positive and negative cases for Christianity as Eusebius conceived them. The *Praeparatio* is especially concerned with the treatment of heathenism which it describes and refutes. The *Demonstratio* shows how the prophets foretold Christianity, and how the religion of the Christians was not new but was identical with that which had been followed by the patriarchs and saints of Old Testament days even before the time of Moses. It is thus incidentally an answer to Jewish controversialists.

Closely connected with these two books is a third called Ἡ καθόλου στοιχειώδης εἰσαγωγή, or *General Elementary Introduction*, in ten books, of which four are extant in the form of the Προφητικαὶ ἐκλογαί, commonly quoted as the *Eclogae*, or *Prophetic Extracts*. It is not quite clear what was the relation of this book to the Εἰσαγωγή, but apparently it was an extract from the larger work. It must have been begun before 313, as it contains a reference to the persecution as still continuing (*Ecl.* i. 8). It presents another version of the same argument from prophecy as is contained in the *Demonstratio*, and lists of passages are given from the Old Testament, which are held to refer to the person and work of Christ. The first book of the *Eclogae* is devoted to the historical books of the Old Testament, the second to the Psalms, the third to the remaining poetical books

Digitized by Google

and the other prophets, the fourth to Isaiah. The other books of the Εἰσαγωγή are lost.

If Photius can be trusted, Eusebius also wrote, possibly at this time, two other books of a similar nature, the *Praeparatio Ecclesiastica*, and the *Demonstratio Ecclesiastica*. Both of these have entirely perished, but it is supposed that they dealt with the church in the same way as the *Praeparatio Evangelica* and *Demonstratio Evangelica* dealt with the coming of Christ. Lightfoot thinks that there is an allusion to the *Demonstratio Ecclesiastica* in the *Praeparatio Evangelica*, i. 3. 11, where Eusebius says that he had gathered together in a special work the sayings of Christ relative to the foundation of his church and had compared them with the events. Lightfoot also thinks that it is possible that Book IV. of the *Theophania* may have been adapted from the *Demonstratio Ecclesiastica*, just as other parts of the *Theophania* (for instance Book V.) are adapted from the *Demonstratio Evangelica*.

Before Eusebius had finished writing the *Demonstratio Evangelica* the persecution was ended (or at least seemed to be ended) by the Edict of Toleration in 311, and Eusebius seems to have broken off from his dogmatic writings to write a history of the church on the basis of the facts which he had already collected and in part published in the *Chronicon*.

This *Church History*, translated in the present volumes, passed during the life of Eusebius himself through several stages which may not unfairly be called editions.

1. The first edition consisted of Books I.-VIII. It was planned in 311, for in the preface to the first

Digitized by Google

book Eusebius says that he will describe "the martyrdoms of our own time and the gracious and favouring help of our Saviour in them all," and in Book viii. 16. 1 he says that the Edict of Tolerance in 311 was "the gracious and favouring interposition of God." The similarity of phrase suggests that the same event—the Edict of Tolerance—is intended in both passages. This conclusion may be supported by small differences of plan which show that the ninth book was not part of the original scheme, and that the original text of the eighth book has been somewhat modified in the later editions, to which all the extant MSS. belong. The details can best be found in Schwartz's introduction, page lvi.

2. The second edition added Book IX., which was necessary because the persecution, which seemed to have ceased in 311, was revived by Maximin, and the defeat of Maximin by Licinius appeared the really decisive moment. This second edition was probably produced in 315

3. The third edition added the tenth book in order to close the story with the dedication of the basilica at Tyre. Eusebius says that he did this at the request of Paulinus, bishop of Tyre, "adding at this time the tenth book to those that were already completed of the *Ecclesiastical History*" (*H.E.* x. 1. 2). Schwartz thinks that he also moved a collection of documents from their original position in Book IX. to the end of Book X., and added a paragraph to the eighth book on the death of the four emperors. This edition would belong to the year 317.

4. The fourth edition came after the fall of Licinius in 323, and consisted in the main of the removal of

Digitized by Google

passages inconsistent with the *Damnatio Memoriae* of Licinius. The evidence for this last edition is in the main textual. The group of manuscripts ATER contain a number of passages omitted in BDM, and a large proportion of them seem to be connected with Licinius. It is thought that though all the existing manuscripts represent the fourth edition, from which these passages had been omitted in accordance with the *Damnatio Memoriae* of Licinius, the group ATER had been corrected from a copy of the third edition, which, of course, contained these passages.

This theory of four editions of the *Ecclesiastical History* is taken from E. Schwartz's Prolegomena, pp. xlvii ff. which should be carefully studied, as they supersede all earlier investigations. It should be noted that the evidence for the 3rd and 4th editions is textual, for the 2nd and 3rd internal and logical.

A rival theory has been propounded by H. J. Lawlor in his *Eusebiana*, pp. 243 ff. He thinks that Eusebius had begun to write his Church History somewhat earlier than the date assigned by Schwartz, and in this agrees with the view stated by Harnack in his *Chronologie*, ii. pp. 111 ff. The theory has the advantage that it gives Eusebius rather more time for completing so large a book; and it necessitates the view, by no means improbable in itself, that he wrote the Introduction in Book I. after he had finished the narrative properly so called. He had, according to Lawlor, nearly completed the Seventh Book of the *History*, which brought the story down to his own time, when suddenly the Edict of Toleration was issued by Galerius and his colleagues. This event, which appeared to have ushered in a period of

Digitized by Google

peace to the church after a most cruel persecution, was seized upon by him as the natural end of his story. He therefore wrote a sketch of the history of the persecution as the eighth and last book of his work, and published the whole. A little later he added an abridged form of his *Palestinian Martyrs*, which he had written in the interval as a supplement to the eighth book, and this addition, according to Lawlor, may be regarded as a second edition of the *Church History*. But the persecution was resumed, and when the Edict of Milan once more re-established toleration, Eusebius produced a third edition of the *Historia Ecclesiastica*, revising Book VIII., making a few changes in Book VII. and in the *Palestinian Martyrs*, and adding Book IX., thus bringing the whole to an end with the text of the letter of Licinius dated June the 13th, 313. The date of this edition would therefore be soon after the end of 313. A fourth edition was produced eleven years later, adding the tenth Book, and the whole work in its present form was finished in 324 or a little later.

The weakest spot in this theory seems to be that it attaches too little weight to the statement of Eusebius that he added the tenth book in order to please the bishop of Tyre, which certainly suggests an earlier date than 323, inasmuch as the church at Tyre was dedicated in 317. But Lawlor's suggestion that there was never more than one edition of Book X. is important for textual reasons. It would on the whole tend to give greater value to the ATER group and rather less to the BDM group, which Schwartz on the whole prefers. The opinion of the present editor inclines somewhat to Schwartz's interpretation of the phenomena, but the suggestion that the first

Digitized by Google

edition of the *Historia Ecclesiastica* was begun rather earlier than Schwartz suggests has many advantages.

It is probable that the *Chronicon*, the *Historia Ecclesiastica*, the *Praeparatio Evangelica*, the *Demonstratio Evangelica*, the *Eclogae Propheticae*, and possibly the *Demonstratio* and *Praeparatio Ecclesiastica*, comprise the whole of the original plan of Eusebius. But the exigencies of events which forced him somewhat to change the plan of the *Historia Ecclesiastica* also led to his writing some subsidiary books during this period.

The most important of these is the *Palestinian Martyrs*, which has, like the *Historia Ecclesiastica*, a complicated textual history. It is known in two forms, the longer found only in Syriac, though undoubtedly based on a lost Greek original, and the shorter preserved in the group ATER of the manuscripts of the *Historia Ecclesiastica*, and inserted immediately after Book VIII. The relation of these two forms to each other and to the *Historia Ecclesiastica* affords a problem which will probably never be solved. Lightfoot and Lawlor believe that the longer form is the earlier; Schwartz thinks that the shorter is Eusebius's original draft, but that he lengthened it himself. All agree that it is extremely probable that both forms are due to Eusebius himself. The relation of the shorter form to the *Historia Ecclesiastica* depends somewhat on the view taken of the textual history of the *Historia*. On Schwartz's view of the manuscript evidence it seems almost certain that the *Palestinian Martyrs* was omitted from the last edition of the *Historia Ecclesiastica*, but that it probably belonged to the third which influenced the group of manuscripts ATER. Yet it is scarcely

Digitized by Google

probable that it was not inserted before the third edition. Its position between the eighth and the ninth books suggests that it was added by Eusebius to the first edition which ended with Book VIII., and this addition constitutes Lawlor's " second edition." But there can be, from the nature of the case, no certainty on this point. All that is clear is that the book has every claim of internal evidence to be regarded as a true work of Eusebius, and that when the recension ATER was made the scribe had access to another manuscript, not that which he was actually copying, which contained its text after the end of Book VIII. What that manuscript was must remain uncertain, as there is no evidence whatever on the subject. Similarly, it is not likely that complete certainty will ever be attained as to the relation between the two forms of the text; the evidence is too conflicting.

With regard to the whole complicated series of problems afforded by the composition and text of the *Historia Ecclesiastica* and the *Palestinian Martyrs*, it may be said that the wisest method for a student to pursue is to begin by reading the essay of Lightfoot in the *Dictionary of Christian Biography*, supplementing it by Harnack's treatment in his *Altchristliche Literatur* and in his *Chronologie*, and then, and not till then, to go on to the more detailed, more thorough, but far more difficult books of Schwartz and Lawlor, both of which are quite indispensable to a proper knowledge of the subject.

During the last years of the persecution, Eusebius collaborated with Pamphilus in writing a *Defence of Origen*. When Pamphilus was martyred he finished

Digitized by Google

the work by himself, and also wrote the *Life of Pamphilus*. Both books are unfortunately lost. He also wrote, in two volumes, a work called by Jerome the *De evangeliorum diaphonia*, but in the Greek entitled the Ζητήματα καὶ λύσεις εἰς τὴν γενεαλογίαν τοῦ Σωτῆρος ἡμῶν πρὸς Στέφανον and the Ζητήματα καὶ λύσεις εἰς τὴν ἀνάστασιν τοῦ Σωτῆρος πρὸς Μαρῖνον. These are only extant in the form of an epitome, but large fragments of the original have been found. It is possible, but quite uncertain, that there may be some connexion between this book and the system of "Canons" which Eusebius invented to facilitate the comparative study of the Gospels. These canons divide the paragraphs of the Gospels, quoted by the numbers given by Ammonius,[1] into ten groups, according as the material in them is found in all four Gospels, in only one, or in any of the possible combinations of two or three Gospels. Eusebius published this apparatus with an explanation in a "letter to Carpianus," of whom nothing is known. The earliest manuscript of the New Testament which contains this system is the Codex Sinaiticus which may have been written in Caesarea during the life of Eusebius, but more probably is a little later and came from Alexandria.

After Nicaea Eusebius scarcely produced so many books as he did in the time of the persecution and the days immediately succeeding it. This, no doubt, was due to his elevation to the bishopric of Caesarea. He seems to have busied himself with exegetical writing, and there are large fragments

[1] A scholar of Alexandria who divided the gospels into chapters in order to facilitate their use. These chapters are commonly found in Greek mss. and are known as the "Ammonian sections."

Digitized by Google

extant of a commentary on the Psalms, another on Luke, another on Isaiah, and perhaps another on 1 Corinthians, which probably belong to this period, but none are fully extant and their further recovery depends in the main on the study of catenae.[1]

He also produced four connected works dealing with the geography of the Bible. These comprise a translation into Greek of foreign words found in the Bible, a description of ancient Judaea, a plan of Jerusalem and the temple, and a treatise on the names of the places mentioned in the Bible. The first three have been lost, but the last was translated by Jerome and is still extant. According to him it was written after the *Church History*, and from internal evidence it appears to have been published before the death of Paulinus of Tyre in 328. It is usually quoted as the Τοπικά or sometimes as the *Onomasticon*.

Of doubtful authenticity, but sometimes ascribed to Eusebius and to this period, is a little book on the nomenclature of the book of the Prophets containing a short account of the several prophets and their works.

In the last years of his life Eusebius was busy with two main achievements. He regarded Marcellus of Ancyra with somewhat the same feelings as Athanasius regarded Arius, that is to say as the real leader of the attempts to disturb the peace and unity of the church by essentially one-sided and erroneous teaching. He therefore wrote two treatises against Marcellus, one generally known as the *Contra Marcellum*, the other as the *De ecclesiastica theo-*

[1] That is, commentaries made up of selections from early interpreters linked together into a "chain" of comment.

Digitized by Google

logia. Both of these were published after 335. He also wrote and published a book on the life of Constantine, which was not so much a full biography as a panegyric, important to us because it contains much information about the Council of Nicaea and the further ecclesiastical activities of the Emperor. With this, or closely connected with it, came also the publication of the speech known as the *De laudibus Constantini*, which Eusebius delivered in honour of Constantine on his thirtieth anniversary, and an edition of the speech which Constantine himself made to the Synod. Finally, it is probable that during his last years he was engaged in writing the volume known as the *Theophania*, which is in the main a repetition of the same arguments as those found in the *Demonstratio*, and in the opening chapters of the *Historia Ecclesiastica* with regard to the appearance of the Logos in the world. It was probably his last work; it is extant only in Syriac, and apparently was never finished, but there is still controversy among critics as to its date and relation to the *Demonstratio*.

II. The Manuscripts of the *Historia Ecclesiastica*

The primary MSS. of the *Historia Ecclesiastica* fall into two main groups:

1. The group BDMΣL.

   B, Codex Parisinus, 1431 (vellum, s. xi-xii), formerly Colbert. 621 and Reg. 2280, called E by Burton. In the Bibliothèque Nationale.

Digitized by Google

D, Codex Parisinus 1433 (vellum, s. xi-xii), called F by Heikel. In the Bibliothèque Nationale.

M, Codex Marcianus 338 (vellum, s. xii), called H by Burton. In St. Mark's Library at Venice.

Σ, an ancient Syriac version, probably made early in the fifth century.

L, the translation of Rufinus made in 402.

In this group M most frequently differs from B and D. Generally this seems due to error in M, but sometimes BD have an error in common against M owing to their having been influenced by a later "learned" recension which did not affect M (see p. xxix). The combination MD is usually inferior, so that B is on the whole the best MS. of the group. The decision between B and M can often be made by comparison with the second group of MSS. The Syriac version is far better than Rufinus, who frequently paraphrases and seems to have found Eusebius very difficult to render literally, as, indeed, he is.

2. The group ATER :

A, Codex Parisinus 1430 (vellum, s. xi), formerly in the possession of Cardinal Mazarin. Called C by Burton. In the Bibliothèque Nationale.

T, Codex Laurentianus 70, 7 (vellum, s. x-xi), called I by Burton. In the Laurentian library in Florence.

E, Codex Laurentianus 70, 20 (vellum, s. x), called K by Burton. In the Laurentian library in Florence.

R, Codex Mosquensis 50 (vellum, s. xii), called J by Heikel. In Moscow.

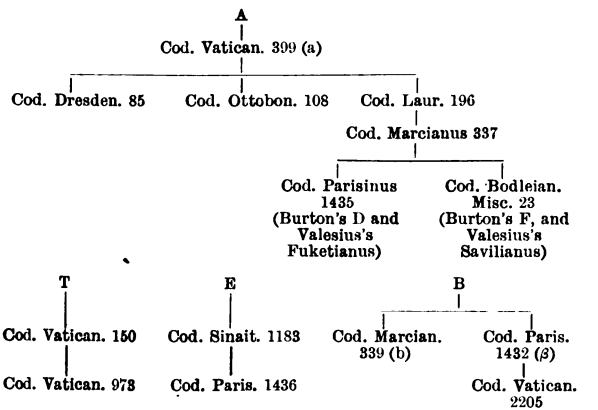
Digitized by Google

In this group A is, generally speaking, the best, though it has many individual errors. TER seem to have a common element, and probably represent a later recension.

Schwartz thinks that BDMΣL represent the text of the 4th edition of Eusebius, with mistakes but no deliberate emendations. ATER represent the same text often corrected by a copy of the third edition. It is, however, often free from the individual errors of BDMΣL, which it serves to correct.

It can also be shown that there was a later "learned" recension which has affected MSS. of both groups, and is now found in ERBD and in some corrections in T, quoted as T^c.

From these primary MSS. are derived the secondary MSS. of the *Historia Ecclesiastica*. Schwartz has investigated the text of all of them, and his results can be shown most clearly in the following scheme.



Digitized by Google

Besides these codices which are unmixed descendants of primary MSS. there are three others in which the text of one of the primary MSS. has been "crossed" with readings found in the others. These are :

(1) Codex Parisinus, 1437 (paper, s. xiv), a descendant of B, crossed with some readings derived from the A-family, probably from Cod. Dresden. 85 (or some similar MS.), rather than A or a. It was the basis of the *editio princeps* of Stephanus (1544), and is quoted by Valesius as Regius, by Burton as A, and by Schwegler as a and q. This double use by Schwegler is due to a curious accident : Burton (following Stroth and Heinichen) referred to this MS. by error as Paris. 1436, but he also possessed a collation of it with the right number, and his posthumous editor, not realizing that this collation referred to Burton's A, published it in an appendix. Schwegler was misled by this, and thus manufactured two MSS. out of two collations of one MS.

(2) Codex Parisinus, 1434 (paper, s. xvi), a descendant of A crossed with B or a descendant of B. It was occasionally used by Stephanus, and is quoted by Valesius as Medicaeus, and by Burton as B.

(3) Codex Arundelianus, 539, in the British Museum (paper, s. xv), a carelessly written descendant of A (not of a) crossed with the B group. Quoted by Burton as G.

III. The Printed Text of the *Historia Ecclesiastica*

The following independent editions of the Greek text of the *Historia Ecclesiastica* have been published.

(1) Stephanus : Paris, 1544. Reprinted several

Digitized by Google

times ; the best of the later editions being at Geneva in 1612. It was based on codd. Paris. 1437 and 1434.

(2) Valesius : Paris, 1659. This was based on four MSS., the two used by Stephanus which Valesius (Henri de Valois) called Regius (cod. Paris. 1437) and Medicaeus (cod. Paris. 1434) and two others at Paris, cod. Paris. 1430 (A), which was then in the possession of Cardinal Mazarin, and cod. Paris. 1435, which he called Fuketianus. To the text he added many valuable notes which still are indispensable.

The edition of Valesius was reprinted at least three times in the seventeenth century, at Mainz in 1672, at Paris in 1677, and at Amsterdam in 1695. An excellent reprint, containing some more notes of Valesius collected from scattered sources, was issued in 1720 by Reading in Cambridge ; this was reprinted in Turin in 1746, and in Migne's *Patrologia Graeca* in Paris in 1857.

(3) Stroth : Halle, 1779. This edition was never completed, nor has it now any value ; but it deserves to be mentioned if only for the pious memory of a man whose aims and vision were greater than his means. F. A. Stroth collected much new information as to MSS., but was unable to afford the expense of obtaining collations, so that his real apparatus remained that of Valesius.

(4) Zimmermann : Frankfort, 1822. E. Zimmerman's edition was in the main little more than a reprint of the text of Valesius and added nothing of importance to the material for reconstructing the text.

(5) Heinichen, ed. 1 : Leipzig, 1827. Heinichen's edition of Eusebius is a good example of the waste of labour incurred by those who edit texts on the basis of inaccurate collations. His first edition was

Digitized by Google

published in 1827. It did not go much beyond the work of Zimmerman, or, in other words, of Valesius. In 1840 he published a *Supplementa notarum ad Eusebii Historiam Ecclesiasticum*, which contained a statement of the variants found in Burton and of cod. Dresden. 185. Finally in 1868 he published a second edition in which he collected all the information which was to be found in previous editions of Eusebius. Some of the collations for this edition he made himself, or had made for him, but they prove to have been in almost every instance far from satisfactory. Nor did he seem to understand perfectly the collations found in other editions. The result is that his book cannot be trusted and was never likely to lead to true results.

(6) Burton: Oxford, 1838. This edition, by Edward Burton, building on and adding to the work of Stroth, was unfortunately also based on imperfect collations. But it contained for the first time the readings of ATEBM and of cod. Arundelianus. It was published, after his death, at Oxford in 1838 and reissued in 1845, and again in 1856; it also served as the text of a partial edition by W. Bright, issued in 1872 and 1881.

(7) Schwegler: Tübingen, 1852. This edition was in method a great improvement on its predecessors; but its material was really that of Burton, and Schwegler's results are nullified by the inaccuracy of the collations.

(8) Laemmer: Schaffhausen, 1859-62. This was a thoroughly bad text, being in the main Schwegler's, changed in many places to agree with cod. Marcianus 338 (M), which Laemmer thought was the best MS.

(9) Dindorf: Leipzig, 1871. This is perhaps the best known of all editions of Eusebius, as it was

Digitized by Google

issued in the convenient "Teubner texts," but it is merely an inaccurate reprint of Schwegler.

(10) Schwartz: Leipzig, 1903. This edition has rendered obsolete all except that of Valesius. It is based on new and probably accurate collations of all the known MSS. Its text is followed in the present volumes. It is possible that some future editor may conceivably reopen the question of the merits of the two groups of primary MSS., but he will have to build on Schwartz's work. It is not a commentary, but much of the material on which a commentary could be based is to be found in the references given in its apparatus.

The fullest statement of the printed editions of Eusebius and the manuscripts upon which they are based is to be found in an article by A. C. Headlam in the *Journal of Theological Studies* for October 1902, pp. 93 ff. It is stated at the beginning of this article that it is a draft of prolegomena for a projected edition, but nothing more has yet appeared of this great undertaking.

One other book remains to be mentioned although it is not an edition of the text. The translation of the *Historia Ecclesiastica* by A. C. M'Giffert in the Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers, Second Series, vol. i., 1904, is provided with historical notes which furnish the only valuable continuous supplement to Valesius: no student of Eusebius can afford to neglect them.

IV. The Plan of Eusebius in the *Historia Ecclesiastica* and the Sources which he used

The general plan of the *Historia Ecclesiastica* is clear and lucid. The chronology adopted is that of

Digitized by Google

the Roman Emperors, and the events are arranged reign by reign. But there is little or no attempt to give any closer dating than this, and the relation between events during the same reign is not indicated. To this there is one exception. The bishops of Rome, Alexandria, Antioch, and Jerusalem are given, and in the case of Rome and Alexandria the exact dates are given. Where did Eusebius obtain this information? The researches of Lipsius, Lightfoot, and Harnack have shown that he used the chronological material collected by Hippolytus and Africanus, and Lightfoot thought that there was a still earlier list compiled by Hegesippus, but to discuss at due length the problems involved would demand more space than is at present available; since Harnack's *Chronologie* the main contributions have been in reviews and periodicals, the chief English writers being H. J. Lawlor, C. H. Turner, and J. K. Fotheringham.

One further observation is necessary. The object of the whole book was to present the Christian "Succession," which did not merely mean, though it certainly included, the apostolic succession of the bishops of the four great "thrones," but rather the whole intellectual, spiritual, and institutional life of the Church. It cannot be too strongly emphasised that Eusebius, like all early church historians, can be understood only if it be recognized that whereas modern writers try to trace the development, growth, and change of doctrines and institutions, their predecessors were trying to prove that nothing of the kind ever happened. According to them the Church had had one and only one teaching from the beginning; it had been preserved by the "Succes-

Digitized by Google

sion " and heresy was the attempt of the Devil to change it.

In tracing " the succession " Eusebius quotes and refers to many writers. To give any complete description of them would be to write a handbook to early Christian literature ; but it seems desirable to give a short account of the chief writings referred to in the books translated in this volume, book by book, and to indicate the points of interest and difficulty which they present.

Book I.—The chief sources drawn on by Eusebius, apart from the New Testament, are Josephus, Africanus, and the Archives of Edessa.

Josephus.—Josephus, the son of Matthias, who took the name of Flavius in honour of the emperors of the Flavian house, was born in A.D. 37 or 38. He belonged to the highest Jewish aristocracy, being descended on his mother's side from Jonathan the Maccabee. After studying all the sects of the Jews he became a Pharisee. He went to Rome when he was twenty-six years old on a political mission, and hereafter he appears to have been quite sincere in his desire, though somewhat shifty in his tactics, to bring about better relations between the Jews and the Romans. During the Jewish war which began in 66 he belonged to the moderate party, and was entrusted with the command of Galilee. His career here was much hindered by the opposition of John of Gischala. He was besieged in Jotatata, and at last was forced to surrender. As he had preferred surrender to death the Jews regarded him as a renegade, and attributed the worst motives to his persistent efforts to secure peace before the inevitable catastrophe which he foresaw. He became friendly

Digitized by Google

with Vespasian and Titus, and when the war ended obtained a grant of lands in Palestine, the privilege of Roman citizenship, and other distinctions. He appears to have lived until after the year 100, as his autobiography was written after the death of Agrippa II., who died in that year.

After the fall of Jerusalem in A.D. 70 he wrote the history of the Jewish war (*Bellum Iudaicum*) in seven books. In this the first two books give an introductory history from the reign of Antiochus Epiphanes to the beginning of the war; Books III.-VI. describe the war down to the capture of Jerusalem; and Book VII. describes the last scenes. This work is said to have been accepted and even revised by Vespasian and Titus. Its main object no doubt was to make the Jews and the Romans understand each other better, but a desire that they should appreciate Josephus's own service to both sides can be clearly seen.

Some years later Josephus supplemented this work by a larger one giving the history of the Jewish people up to the beginning of the war. This was arranged in twenty books and was called the Ἀρχαιολογία Ἰουδαική. This was translated into Latin as the *Antiquitates Iudaeorum*, and it is therefore usually quoted in English as the *Antiquities*. It was probably completed about A.D. 93.

Almost immediately after this Josephus also wrote a work in two books in answer to Apion. This Apion was a famous controversialist who lived in the middle of the first century and wrote a history of Egypt and a book against the Jews. He figures largely in the Clementine homilies. None of his works are extant, but the fragments which remain are collected in

Digitized by Google

Müller, *Fragmenta Hist. Graec.* (See also the article by Lightfoot in the *Dictionary of Christian Biography*.)

Finally in old age he wrote his autobiography, usually quoted as the *Vita*.

Eusebius makes many quotations from Josephus, which are usually accurate. Only in the account of the death of Agrippa the First is there any serious divergence, and this is probably accidental (see pp. 130 f.).

The best text of Josephus is that of Niese, Berlin, 1887. Niese also published in 1888 a smaller edition omitting the apparatus criticus.

The first translation[1] in English was that of Whiston, which has been often reprinted, and was superficially revised by Shilleto in 1889–90. It is not free from inaccuracies, but Josephus is very difficult to render, as his Greek is bad and his style obscure. Explanation as well as a new translation is desirable, and there are few books more needed by scholars at the present time than an historical commentary on the second half of the *Antiquities* and on the *Jewish War*. At present there is on neither any commentary.

Julius Africanus.—Julius Africanus, sometimes, but probably wrongly, called Sextus or Sextus Julius, is stated by Suidas to have been a Libyan who served in the army of Severus in 195, and afterwards settled in Emmaus (Nicopolis) though he probably also spent some time in Alexandria. When his home was ruined he went, in 221 or a little later, on an embassy to the Emperor, either Elagabalus or Alexander Severus, and was made the head of a reparation commission which rebuilt the city under the name of Nicopolis. The exact time of his death

[1] Vol. I. of a new translation by H. St. J. Thackeray has appeared in the Loeb Classical Library, and Vol. II. is in the Press.

Digitized by Google

is unknown, but he was still alive in 240 when he corresponded with Origen. Besides the information given in the *Historia Ecclesiastica* of Eusebius and in Eusebius, *Chron.* ann. 221, some details are found in Sozomen, *Hist. Eccl.* v. 1; in Jerome, *De viris illustribus*, 63; in George Syncellus, who may have used the lost introduction to the *Chronicon* of Eusebius; in Cedrenus, *Hist. Comp.* 207, and in Moses of Chorene, ii. 27.

He was one of the most learned of the writers in the third century. His chief work was a treatise on chronology in five books on which the *Chronicon* of Eusebius was largely based. This began with the creation and went down at least to the year 221. It appears to have consisted, like most chronological books of the period, of two parts, a " Chronology " and a " Canon." The " Chronology " was an essay, or a series of essays, on critical questions; the " Canon " [1] was a series of tables in which a summary of events was arranged in parallel columns showing how the numbers of years in one system, such as the Greek Olympiads, corresponded to another, such as the years after Christ. He appears to have written in order to prove the " chiliastic " view of history rather than in the interests of pure chronology, and on this point Eusebius was controverting rather than copying him. Apart from this, however, his work was doubtless the source of much of the framework of the *Historia Ecclesiastica* (see especially Schwartz, *Prolegomena*, pp. ccxv ff.).

Besides this great book Africanus wrote a letter to Aristides, whose identity is unknown, on the dis-

[1] It should be noted that the word " Chronicon " is properly used of the canon, not of the chronology.

Digitized by Google

crepancies between the genealogies in Matthew and Luke. This is quoted in part by Eusebius, *H.E.* i. 7. And he also wrote a letter to Origen on the authenticity of the book of Susanna. This is referred to by Eusebius, *H.E.* vi. 31, and is preserved in several manuscripts of Origen.

The authenticity of these writings is undoubted. There is also ascribed to him a work called Κεστοί, which means *Girdles*. It apparently consisted of a collection of essays varying in character from Agriculture to the Art of War. A few extracts from this book remain, but not sufficient to prove or disprove its ascription to Africanus.

The most convenient collection of the fragments of Africanus is still that of Routh, *Rel. Sacr.* vol. ii. The most important work on his writing has been done by H. Gelzer, *Sextus Julius Africanus*, 1880 and 1885, but except for detailed study of the points raised by Gelzer, a sufficient account is provided by the article on Africanus in the *Dictionary of Christian Biography*, and by Harnack, *Chronologie*, ii. pp. 89 ff.

The Archives of Edessa.—According to *H.E.* i. 12. 3 ff. Eusebius made use of material in the Archives of Edessa. These appear to have consisted of two divisions. There was an ancient royal archive at Edessa and a later ecclesiastical one which was probably not instituted until the beginning of the fourth century. According to Moses of Chorene Julius Africanus made use of all this material, which was also known to the editor of the *Chronicon Edessenum*. It is not certain whether Eusebius had himself seen this archive or made use of it only at second-hand through the writings of Julius Africanus, but in any case there is no reason to doubt the statement

Digitized by Google

that the apocryphal story of Abgar Uchama was found in the archives at Edessa, which is also the probable source—direct or indirect—for most of the information contained in Eusebius as to the history of Christianity outside the Roman Empire in the region of Mesopotamia and such details as the story of Mani. The rather complicated questions concerning the story of this archive can be studied best in Hallier, *Untersuchungen über die edess. Chronik* (*Texte u. Unters.* ix. 1, 1892).

Book II.—In the second book Josephus is again used, and extracts are made from Philo, Clement of Alexandria and Hegesippus.

Philo.—Philo was probably born about the year 30 B.C., and lived on until the beginning of the second half of the first century A.D. He belonged to a wealthy and distinguished family in Alexandria. His brother, Alexander, was the Alabarch[1] of the city and had close relations with the imperial family in Rome. Philo was essentially a philosopher, and spent his life endeavouring to reconcile the Jewish Law with the Platonic Faith. He was also a voluminous writer and his books were treasured by Origen, and so passed into the library at Caesarea and thence into the general tradition of Christian writings.

The statements about Philo's writings in Book II. of the *Historia Ecclesiastica* are so confused that it is desirable to give the facts about them in somewhat clearer form.

[1] The name of a high local official in Alexandria. From Josephus, *Antiq.* xviii. 8. 1 it appears to be the name of the head of the Jewish colony in Alexandria, but Cicero, *Att.* ii. 17 applies the word to Pompey, apparently with the meaning "tax-collector."

Digitized by Google

Philo wrote three great books on the Pentateuch :

(1) The *Quaestiones et solutiones* (Ζητήματα καὶ λύσεις). How far Philo carried this book, which dealt with the problems of the Pentateuch, is not known, but Eusebius, like ourselves, was unacquainted with any work going beyond Exodus.

(2) The *Legum allegoriae*. This was divided into a number of books of which three are known as *Legum allegoriarum libri* i., ii., and iii., but the others which follow, each with separate titles, were apparently without numbers. The list of these books is *De cherubim et flammeo gladio* (Gen. iii. 24), *De sacrificiis Abelis et Caini* (Gen. iv. 2-4), *Quod deterius potiori insidiari soleat* (Gen. iv. 8-15), *De posteritate Caini sibi visi sapientis et quo pacto sedem mutat* (Gen. iv. 16-25), *De gigantibus* (Gen. vi. 1-4), *De agricultura* (Gen. ix. 20), *De ebrietate* (Gen. ix. 21), *De sobrietate* (Gen. ix. 24-27), *De confusione linguarum* (Gen. xi. 1-9), *De migratione Abrahami* (Gen. xii. 1-6), *Quis rerum divinarum haeres sit* (Gen. xv. 2-8), *De congressu quaerendae eruditionis causa* (Gen. xvi. 1-6), *De profugis* (Gen. xvi. 6-14), *De mutatione nominum* (Gen. xvii. 1-22), *De somniis* liber i. (Gen. xxviii. 12 ff.).

(3) *A Systematic Description of the Mosaic Legislation*. It is divided into three parts : The first deals with the creation of the world ; this is known as the *De mundi opificio*. In the manuscripts and editions of Philo this work has been placed at the beginning of Philo's works, before the first book of the *Legum allegoriae*, but it probably ought to be put back into the position here claimed for it. The second part deals with the biographies of the virtuous men of the Old Testament, and is known as the Νόμοι ἄγραφοι. Of it are extant the *De Abrahamo*, and the *De Iosepho*,

Digitized by Google

also known as *The Statesman* (ὁ Πολιτικός), because Joseph was treated by Philo as illustrating the virtues of civic life. The third part of the *Systematic Description* went on to deal with the consideration of the Mosaic legislation properly so-called, and was divided into two subdivisions, (*a*) the *De Decalogo* and (*b*) the *De specialibus legibus* or the " consideration of the special laws which follow the Ten Commandments and are connected with them." This was contained in four books. To these were added two appendices, one on three virtues, *De fortitudine*, *De caritate*, *De poenitentia*, with the possible addition of a fourth, *De nobilitate*, and one on the treatment of the good and evil under the title of *De praemiis et poenis* and *De execrationibus*.

Besides these three great books on the Pentateuch Philo also wrote various single works: (1) the *Vita Mosis*. (2) *Quod omnis probus liber*, with which went another book now lost, *Quod omnis improbus servus*. (3) A great work which was apparently intended to do something similar to that which Lactantius did afterwards for the Christians in his book *De mortibus persecutorum*, and to show that no one persecuted the Jews without suffering from the punishment of God at the end of his life, while the Jews received the rewards of their virtues. Probably he dealt in this way with the careers of Sejanus, Flaccus, Caligula, and Pilate, but it is only the story of Flaccus which is at all fully preserved in the *Adversus Flaccum* and the *Legatio ad Caium*. It would appear that there were originally five books in this work of which only the two mentioned have been preserved.

Another work published separately is the *De providentia*, only found now in Armenian, which is

Digitized by Google

also the case with the *De Alexandro et quod propriam rationem muta animalia habeant.*

Finally two books, now only partially preserved, appear to have been entitled the Ὑποθετικά and the *Defence of the Jews.* Whether these were two or one seems doubtful. To these most critics add a long book, still extant, *De vita contemplativa*, giving an account of the Therapeutae in Egypt, but there are still a few who think that this is not a genuine work of Philo.

It will be seen by comparing this list of the writings of Philo with the references made in Eusebius ii. 18 that Eusebius has referred to the greater number of writings of Philo which are still extant, but he has confused the order of the books so that if we did not possess other information it would be quite impossible for us to reconstruct the relation of the sub-titles which Eusebius quotes to the great divisions into which Philo's works really fall. The most probable suggestion is that of Dr. Lawlor, who thinks that Eusebius knew Philo only through volumes of tracts which were preserved in the library at Caesarea, and that he copied out the titles without always recognizing the relation of one tract to another, being misled by the accidents of binding (see Lawlor, *Eusebiana*, pp. 138–145).

The fullest and best sources of information on Philo's writings are E. Schürer, *Geschichte des jüdisches Volkes*, ed. 4, vol. iii. pp. 633–716; the prolegomena of Cohn and Wendland's edition, and the article in the *Dictionary of Christian Biography.* The two fullest editions are Mangey, London, 1742, and Cohn and Wendland, Berlin, 1896–1915, which includes everything except the fragments, for which Mangey

Digitized by Google

must still be consulted, and the Armenian texts published by Aucher, *Paralipomena Armena*, 1826. There is also a valuable edition of the *De vita contemplativa* by F. C. Conybeare.

Clement of Alexandria. — Clement of Alexandria was probably born in the middle of the second century. According to Julius Africanus, quoted by Cedrenus, he came into fame in the reign of Commodus (A.D. 180–193) and the *Chronicon* of Eusebius apparently assigns the date 193 to his ordination as presbyter. According to Eusebius, *Praeparatio evangelica*, ii. 2. 64, he was converted to Christianity from heathenism and was not born in the church, and according to Epiphanius his birthplace was claimed by Athens as well as by Alexandria. He travelled much in the east, and towards the end of the second century became head of the catechetical school at Alexandria. He appears to have retired from public life in Alexandria during the persecution under Severus, A.D. 202 ff. According to the letter of Alexander,[1] who was bishop of Jerusalem in 212, and, wrote about 211 from prison to the church at Antioch, Clement had been living in the Cappadocian Caesarea and must have been still alive when he wrote, as he was going to carry Alexander's letter. According to a later letter of the same Alexander to Origen Clement died soon after this, for this second letter, which can hardly be later than 217 and may have been earlier, implies that he was dead.

The list of Clement's writings is given by Eusebius, *H.E.* vi. 13. Of those to which he refers the Προτρεπτικός or *Exhortation to the Greeks*,[2] is completely

[1] Quoted in Eusebius vi. 2. 6.

[2] This and the *Quis dives salvetur* are translated by G. W. Butterworth in the Loeb Classical Library.

Digitized by Google

preserved as is also the Παιδαγωγός, or *Instructor*, which is in three books. These two works seem to have been intended as the first two parts of a connected series. The first, the Προτρεπτικός, deals with the Logos in relation to the conversion of the heathen; the Παιδαγωγός also deals with the Logos but in relation to morality; and the third book was intended to deal with the Logos as the teacher who initiated man into true knowledge. It is possible, but far from certain, that the Στρωματεῖς [1] mentioned by Eusebius and still partially preserved represent this third volume.

Of the other works mentioned by Eusebius only fragments are found except the small treatise known as *Quis dives salvetur*. The loss of the *Hypotyposes* [2] is greatly to be regretted, but in addition to the quotations preserved in Eusebius three other fragments have been thought to have originally belonged to them. These are the *Excerpta Theodoti*,[3] the *Eclogae propheticae*, and the *Adumbrationes in epistolas canonicas*. It has, however, been suggested that the *Excerpta Theodoti* really belong to the eighth book of the Στρωματεῖς. In any case they are very valuable information as to the teaching of Theodotus, for they seem to represent the notes which Clement had made rather than a finished literary production.

The best edition of Clement is that of Stählin, in *Die griechischen christlichen Schriftsteller der ersten drei*

[1] Sometimes called *Stromata*; the word means literally "patchwork" and hence "miscellanies."

[2] This appears to have been a commentary on selected parts of the Bible.

[3] Theodotus was a Gnostic of the Valentinian School, from whose writings Clement made a series of extracts with the intention of refuting them.

Digitized by Google

Jahrhunderte, issued by the Berlin Academy. The three volumes containing the text and introduction of this edition are published; the fourth volume, which has not yet appeared, will contain the index and some additional dissertations, but even as it stands Stählin's edition takes the place of all others. For the study of Clement special reference should be made to the writings of de Faye, especially his *Clément d'Alexandrie*, 1898 (see also the article on Clement of Alexandria in Harnack's *Chronologie* vol. ii. pp. 1 ff.).

Hegesippus. — Hegesippus appears to have been of Hebrew birth (Eusebius, *H.E.* iv. 22), but there is no evidence whether he was born a Christian or converted from Judaism. He certainly visited, and perhaps lived in Rome. If Eusebius means in the passage referred to that he lived until the time of Eleutherus his death must have been between 175 and 189. The book from which Eusebius derived much of his information as to the early church was entitled Πέντε ὑπομνήματα ἐκκλησιαστικῶν πραξέων, *Five Treatises on the Acts of the Church.* Whether this was an ordered history or a collection of miscellaneous observations cannot be proved, but the latter view is more usually held, and the most probable theory is that of Lawlor, who thinks that the ὑπομνήματα were an apologetic work which only contained a few scattered references to history. Some confusion periodically arises from the fact that in a recension of Josephus, of which a Latin version appeared in the fifth century, the name "Josephus" was spelt "Hegesippus."

The extant fragments of the genuine Hegesippus can be found in Routh, *Rel. Sacr.* vol. i. pp. 207-219,

Digitized by Google

but more fully and with more complete reference to the authorities in Lawlor's *Eusebiana*, pp. 98-107, and the problems connected with him may be studied best in that work and in the articles in Smith's *Dictionary of Christian Biography* and in Herzog's *Real-Encyklopädie*.

Book III.—In this book Josephus remains the chief source of information about the Jews, while Hegesippus and Clement are drawn on for the history of the Church; but besides them Papias, Caius, Clement of Rome, and Ignatius are quoted or referred to.

Papias.—Papias according to Eusebius (iii. 36) was bishop of Hierapolis, but we do not know the exact chronology of his life. Irenaeus (*Adv. haer.* v. 33. 4) says that he was a companion of Polycarp, and he is quoted by Eusebius (iii. 39. 9) as claiming to have seen the daughters of Philip the Evangelist, so that he can scarcely have been born later than the end of the first century. In one of the fragments of his work preserved by Philip Sidetes (edited by De Boor in *Texte und Untersuchungen*, v. 2) he refers to the belief that those whom Christ raised from the dead lived "until the time of Hadrian," so that he can hardly have written earlier than 140.[1] On the other hand, as Irenaeus regarded him as belonging to a past generation, he can scarcely have written later than 160. Thus the middle of the second century is probably the period at which he wrote. His work, from which Eusebius quotes, was entitled Λογίων κυριακῶν ἐξήγησις. Unfortunately the book is lost, and no one knows what the title means. Λόγια generally means "oracles," and is frequently used of the Old Testament, but it might be used of

[1] Hadrian reigned from 117 to 137.

Digitized by Google

the teaching of Jesus. The quotation given by Eusebius iii. 39, which may come from the preface of Papias, suggests, but does not prove, that the title should be translated *Oracles of the Lord* rather than *Oracles about the Lord*. Thus it is uncertain whether it was a work on the interpretation of the Old Testament or on the Gospels or on traditions behind the Gospels. There is an enormous literature on the subject, but most of it is in the interests of some theory of the origin of the Synoptic Gospels and is almost worthless. The clearest and best statement of the facts is in Harnack's *Chronologie*, i. pp. 356 ff., and on the interpretation of the quotation in Eusebius, *H.E.* iii. 39, Dom Chapman's *John the Presbyter* (Oxford, 1910), is peculiarly lucid and thorough.

Clement of Rome and Ignatius.—Both these writers have left extant works which are published in the Loeb Classical Library, *The Apostolic Fathers*, vol. i.

Caius.—Nothing is known of him except what Eusebius tells us, but his writings and his relation to the Alogi, who rejected the Gospel of John, have been the subject of an extensive literature, to which the latest and most thorough contribution is made by C. Schmidt in an elaborate appendix to his edition of the "Epistola Apostolorum" published in 1919 as *Gespräche Jesu* in *Texte und Untersuchungen* xliii.

Book IV.—In the fourth book Eusebius deals with the last rebellion of the Jews, referring to Aristo of Pella, with the Apologists of the time of Hadrian, with the Gnostics of the second century, with Justin Martyr, with Polycarp and other martyrs, and with Tatian. In the 21st chapter he gives a list of the chief Christian writers of the time of Marcus Aurelius.

Aristo of Pella.—In *Hist. Eccl.* iv 6 Eusebius

Digitized by Google

describes the last war of the Jews against the Romans in A.D. 132. He refers to the account given by Aristo of Pella. The natural interpretation is that Aristo had written a history of this time. But nothing is known of him except that in the seventh century Maximus the Confessor says that Aristo wrote the Dialogue of Jason and Papiscus, which was mentioned by Clement of Alexandria, who seems to have attributed it to Luke the Evangelist, though the text of this statement may be corrupt. It is therefore possible that Eusebius is merely referring to some reference introduced into this lost Dialogue (see Harnack, *Altchristliche Literatur*, i. pp. 92 ff.).

Quadratus and Aristides.—Eusebius mentions two apologists of the reign of Hadrian—Quadratus and Aristides. The work of Quadratus is lost, but the apology of Aristides has been recently discovered, though in an imperfect condition. A Syriac translation was found by J. Rendel Harris in 1889 on Mount Sinai, and it was then recognized by J. Armitage Robinson as extant in Greek in the speech put into the mouth of the Christian Nachor in the story of Barlaam and Josaphat. The Syriac and the Greek differ widely, and it is disputed which of the two is nearer the original. Both forms are given in Rendel Harris's "The Apology of Aristides" in *Texts and Studies* i. 1. The Syriac, which alone has the title of Apology, suggests that it was addressed to Antoninus Pius rather than to Hadrian, but the text is in any case corrupt and the point is not certain. Harnack's *Altchristliche Literatur* i. pp. 96 ff. and ii. 2. pp. 271 ff. gives the best statement of the facts and references to other books, but to these should be added Geffcken's *Zwei griechische Apologien.*

Digitized by Google

The Gnostic Writers.—In *Hist. Eccl.* iv. 7 and 11 Eusebius mentions the chief Gnostic writers known to him. His information was apparently derived in main from Irenaeus with probably some use of Clement of Alexandria, Hippolytus, and a lost work (the Syntagma) of Justin Martyr. The best modern books introductory to the subject of Gnosticism are those of Lipsius (especially his *Quellen der ältesten Ketzergeschichten* and his articles in the *Dictionary of Christian Biography*), Harnack's *Quellenkritik der Geschichte des Gnosticismus*, and De Faye's *Gnostiques et Gnosticisme*, but it is probably quicker and certainly better to begin by reading Irenaeus, Hippolytus, and —quite especially—the *Excerpta Theodoti* of Clement of Alexandria.

Justin Martyr.—Justin according to his own account (at the beginning of his dialogue with Trypho) was born in Samaria and became in his youth a zealous but unsuccessful student of philosophy. He was converted to Christianity before A.D. 135 (the time to which the Dialogue refers) and died as a martyr under Junius Rusticus, who was praetor under Marcus Aurelius between 163 and 167. The *Chronicon Paschale* fixes the year of his martyrdom as 165, and there is no reason why this should not be correct.

According to Eusebius he wrote at least ten books, of which he gives the list in *Hist. Eccl.* iv. 18. 2-9. Of these two are extant (1) *The Apology to Antoninus Pius*, and (2) *The Dialogue with Trypho*; but there is a curious literary puzzle in connexion with the Apology. The printed texts of Justin (which represent the Paris manuscript, Paris. 450 of the year 1364, of which all other manuscripts are copies) give two apologies of Justin, and Eusebius also states that he

Digitized by Google

wrote two apologies. It would therefore be natural to conclude that we possess the two which Eusebius had. But except in *Hist. Eccl.* iv. 16. 1 ff. which is ambiguous, Eusebius quotes as the first Apology passages from both the printed books. The point has not been completely cleared up, but it seems probable that the printed texts make up the Eusebian first apology and that the second one known to Eusebius has been lost.

Three other works of Justin mentioned by Eusebius purport to be given in the printed texts—the *Oratio contra Graecos*, the *Cohortatio ad Graecos*, and the *De monarchia*—but it is generally held that these texts are spurious, and it is unlikely that they are those to which Eusebius refers.

The best edition of Justin is that of Otto, 3rd edition, 1876. The best statements of the manuscripts and the ecclesiastical tradition are by Harnack in his *Altchristliche literatur* i. pp. 99 ff., and ii. 1 ff., 274 ff., and in the *Texte und Untersuchungen* I. i. 2. The most complete discussion of Justin's teaching is by Goodenough, *Justin Martyr*, 1923, which also contains a very full bibliography.

The Acts of the Martyrs.—Though Eusebius was active in collecting evidence as to the martyrdoms of the earliest Christians, and made a collection of documents describing them (see p. xiv) he has surprisingly little to tell in his history. In the first five books he relates the martyrdom of James and Simeon, the Lord's brothers, but his information is from Hegesippus; he also mentions the martyrdom of Telesphorus, Bishop of Rome, Publius, Bishop of Athens, Ignatius of Antioch, Justin, Ptolemaeus, Lucius, and Sagaris; but he gives no details and

Digitized by Google

seems to have had no documents about them, though the *Acta* of Justin are extant in a probably genuine form. He had the *Acta* of Polycarp, of Pionius, of Carpus, Papylus and Agathonice, and of Apollonius, all of which are still extant, and the account of the martyrs of Lyons and Vienne, which has disappeared except for his extensive quotations at the beginning of the fifth book.

Tatian.—The only work of Tatian which is extant in its original form is the *Oratio ad Graecos*, which was once preserved in the famous Arethas manuscript Paris. 451 of the year A.D. 914. The pages containing Tatian's work are missing, but several later MSS. are direct or indirect copies.

The Diatessaron of Tatian is not wholly lost. There is an Arabic version, in which, however, the text has been accommodated to the later Syrian text of the Gospels; there is some connexion between it and the Harmony found and edited by Victor of Capua about the year 545; and it is possible that some mediaeval Dutch and German harmonies indicate the existence of an Old Latin harmony based on Tatian's works.[1] Besides these, and in many ways more important than these, are a series of quotations in early Syriac writers and the commentary of Ephraim on the Diatessaron, partially preserved in Armenian.

The best edition of the *Oratio ad Graecos* is that of E. Schwartz, and of the Diatessaron that given in the *Ante-Nicene Church Fathers*. See also especially Zahn's *Forschungen* i. and the treatment of Tatian in his *Geschichte des N.T. Kanon*.

[1] See D. Plooij, *A Primitive Text of the Diatessaron*, Leiden, 1923.

Digitized by Google

Writers in the time of Marcus Aurelius.—In *Hist. Eccl.* iv. 20 f. Eusebius gives a list of the writers of the end of the second century: Theophilus of Antioch, Hegesippus, Dionysius of Corinth, Pinytus of Crete, Philip of Gortyna, Apollinarius of Hierapolis, Melito, Musanus, Modestus, and Irenaeus. In the following chapters he gives a short summary of the writings of each of them with the exception of Irenaeus whom he reserves for the next book. None of these writings are extant except a few fragments of Melito in Syriac, and the three books of Theophilus *Ad Autolycum*, published in Otto's *Corpus Apologeticum* and in other collections. The first printed edition was issued at Zürich in 1546. The facts relating to Hegesippus have been dealt with above on p. xlvi.

Book V.—In this book Eusebius deals first with the persecution of the Christians in the time of Marcus Aurelius, illustrating it by long quotations from the letter of the churches of Lyons and Vienne referred to above (p. lii). He then describes the works of Irenaeus, and Rhodo, and then turns to Montanism, the Paschal controversy, and the heresy of Artemon and the two Theodoti.

Irenaeus.—Irenaeus was probably a native of the province of Asia and in his youth saw Florinus and Polycarp, presumably at Smyrna. Polycarp was put to death in 155, so that Irenaeus can hardly have been born much later than 140. Florinus became a Gnostic about 190; he was probably a little older than Irenaeus, who says that as a boy he had admired his splendid position in the Emperor's court. Therefore, unless Florinus was converted when quite old, Irenaeus cannot have been born much earlier than

Digitized by Google

140—ten years seems the extreme of possibility, and every year earlier than 140 becomes less and less likely.

It is unknown how or when he left Asia, but it is certain that in 177, the year of the persecution at Lyons and Vienne, he went to Rome with the report of the churches on the martyrdom of some of their members, and he is described as being at that time a presbyter. Shortly after this he became Bishop of Lyons, and supported the Asiatic side in the Paschal controversy with Victor of Rome in 190. Nothing certain is known of his death. Jerome (but no earlier writer) speaks of him as a martyr, and it has been thought that he was put to death in the persecution of Septimius Severus in 202, but this is merely a guess.

Of his many writings mentioned by Eusebius (see especially *Hist. Eccl.* iv. 11, 20, 26) only two are fully extant and neither in the original language. The Πρὸς Αἱρέσεις or Ἔλεγχος καὶ ἀνατροπὴ τῆς ψευδωνύμου γνώσεως,[1] quoted as the *Adversus Haereses*, is found in Latin; the best edition is that of Harvey (Cambridge, 1857). The Ἀπόδειξις τοῦ ἀποστολικοῦ κηρύγματος[2] or *Apostolic Preaching*, a treatise sent by Irenaeus to his friend Marcianus, is found in Armenian and was published in 1907 in the *Texte und Untersuchungen*, xxxi. 1.

Probably the best description of the theology of Irenaeus is not in any book devoted to him, but in W. Bousset's *Kyrios Christos*.

The anti-Montanist Writers.—In the fifth book, after long extracts from the letter of the Churches of Lyons and Vienne about their martyrs, and some extracts

[1] "Refutation and overthrow of 'knowledge falsely so called.'"

[2] "Demonstration of the Apostolic Preaching."

Digitized by Google

from Irenaeus, Eusebius goes on to describe the work of Clement of Alexandria (see above, pp. xliv-xlv) and of Rhodo, of whom nothing more is known, and then turns to a discussion of Montanism, or the Phrygian heresy. For this he makes use of five sources, of which unfortunately nothing more is known beyond what he tells us himself. These are Apollinarius of Hierapolis, Apollonius, Serapion, an anonymous writer who addressed a letter to Abercius, and either Miltiades or Alcibiades. The Abercius addressed by the anonymous writer is the centre of one of the romances of epigraphy. In the *Acta Sanctorum* for October 22 is given a life of Abercius, which has all the marks of lateness, but it contains an epitaph which Lightfoot and others regarded as genuine. Other scholars doubted this, but in 1883 W. M. Ramsay[1] discovered the epitaph in Hieropolis (not Hierapolis). The fifth document to which he refers presents a curious puzzle as to its authorship, for it is impossible to be sure what was the name of the writer, as in the existing manuscripts Eusebius clearly speaks of Miltiades, but the source which he quotes equally clearly speaks of Alcibiades. One name or the other must be wrong, but there is no sufficient evidence for a choice between them (see *Hist. Eccl.* v. 17). For a discussion of these documents and of other evidence relating to Montanism the best modern book is N. Bonwetsch's *Montanisme.*

The Paschal Controversy.—In *Hist. Eccl.* v. 27 Eusebius gives a short list of writers of the beginning of the third century, but none of them have left extant works. He then goes on to discuss the Paschal controversy. This dispute divided the East

[1] See his *Cities and Bishoprics of Phrygia*, pp. 424 ff.

Digitized by Google

from the West. The East held that the fast before Easter should end on the 14th of Nisan (hence the name " Quartodecimans ") with the feast of the resurrection following at once independently of the day of the week, while the West followed the present custom of observing the feast of the Resurrection on a Sunday independently of the day of the month, and arranged the end of the fast accordingly. Eusebius quotes Polycrates of Ephesus, whose writings are not now extant, and Irenaeus, and mentions various synods whose decrees were known to him but have since been lost. For a discussion of the action of Victor of Rome, and of the whole question see Hefele's *History of the Councils*, preferably in the French translation which has many valuable additional notes.

The Heresy of Artemon.—The last part of the fifth book is largely taken up with an anonymous quotation from a work against the Adoptionist teaching of Artemon and the two Theodoti, whose teaching that Jesus was a man who by the power of God became divine is sometimes described by modern writers as " Dynamic Monarchianism." Theodoret, who also used this writing, says that it was called the " Little Labyrinth," obviously in allusion to the work of Hippolytus against heresy, which is sometimes called " The Labyrinth." Modern scholars generally think that the " Little Labyrinth " was itself the work of Hippolytus but this is by no means certain.

For further information as to these or any other writers mentioned by Eusebius, the best and clearest guides are Harnack's *Geschichte der altchristlichen Litteratur*, Bardenhewer's *Geschichte der altkirchlichen Literatur*, and the *Dictionary of Christian Biography*.

Digitized by Google

THE ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY OF EUSEBIUS

Digitized by Google

Ā

Τάδε ἡ πρώτη περιέχει βίβλος τῆς Ἐκκλησιαστικῆς ἱστορίας

Ā Τίς ἡ τῆς ἐπαγγελίας ὑπόθεσις.

Β̄ Ἐπιτομὴ κεφαλαιώδης περὶ τῆς κατὰ τὸν σωτῆρα καὶ κύριον ἡμῶν τὸν Χριστὸν τοῦ θεοῦ προυπάρξεώς τε καὶ θεολογίας.

Γ̄ Ὡς καὶ τὸ Ἰησοῦ ὄνομα καὶ αὐτὸ δὴ τὸ τοῦ Χριστοῦ ἔγνωστό τε ἀνέκαθεν καὶ τετίμητο παρὰ τοῖς θεσπεσίοις προφήταις.

Δ̄ Ὡς οὐ νεώτερος οὐδὲ ξενίζων ἦν ὁ τρόπος τῆς πρὸς αὐτοῦ καταγγελθείσης πᾶσι τοῖς ἔθνεσιν εὐσεβείας.

Ε̄ Περὶ τῶν χρόνων τῆς ἐπιφανείας αὐτοῦ τῆς εἰς ἀνθρώπους.

Ϛ̄ Ὡς κατὰ τοὺς χρόνους αὐτοῦ ἀκολούθως ταῖς προφητείαις ἐξέλιπον ἄρχοντες οἱ τὸ πρὶν ἐκ προγόνων διαδοχῆς τοῦ Ἰουδαίων ἔθνους ἡγούμενοι πρῶτός τε ἀλλόφυλος βασιλεύει αὐτῶν Ἡρῴδης.

Ζ̄ Περὶ τῆς ἐν τοῖς εὐαγγελίοις νομιζομένης διαφωνίας τῆς περὶ τοῦ Χριστοῦ γενεαλογίας.

Η̄ Περὶ τῆς Ἡρῴδου κατὰ τῶν παίδων ἐπι-

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS OF BOOK I

The first book of the Ecclesiastical History contains the following:

I. What are the presuppositions of the Promise.

II. A summary account of the pre-existence of, and attribution of divinity to, our Saviour and Lord, the Christ of God.

III. How both the name of Jesus and even that of Christ itself were known from the first and honoured by the inspired prophets.

IV. How there was nothing revolutionary or strange in the character of the religion announced by him to all the nations.

V. Concerning the time of his appearance to men.

VI. How in his time in agreement with prophecy the previous line of ancestral rulers of the Jewish nation died out, and Herod, the first foreigner, was their king.

VII. Concerning the supposed discrepancy in the Gospels on the genealogy as to Christ.

VIII. Concerning the plot of Herod against the

Digitized by Google

βουλῆς καὶ οἷα μετῆλθεν αὐτὸν καταστροφὴ βίου.

Θ̄ Περὶ τῶν κατὰ Πιλᾶτον χρόνων.

Ῑ Περὶ τῶν παρὰ Ἰουδαίοις ἀρχιερέων καθ' οὓς ὁ Χριστὸς τὴν διδασκαλίαν ἐποιήσατο.

ΙᾹ Τὰ περὶ Ἰωάννου τοῦ βαπτιστοῦ καὶ τοῦ Χριστοῦ μεμαρτυρημένα.

ΙΒ̄ Περὶ τῶν μαθητῶν τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν.

ΙΓ̄ Ἱστορία περὶ τοῦ τῶν Ἐδεσσηνῶν δυνάστου.[1]

[1] At the end E adds :—ὅρα ὁ ἀναγινώσκων μὴ συναρπαγῇς τῇ αἱρετικῇ ὑπολήψει τοῦ συγγραφέως· εἰ γὰρ καὶ τὰ μάλιστά ἐστιν ὠφελιμωτάτη κατὰ τὴν ἱστορίαν ἡ παροῦσα βίβλος, ἀλλ' ὅμως ὅπου μὲν ἀπολύτως περὶ θεοῦ φαίνεται θεολογῶν, οὐ δοκεῖ τισὶ κακοδοξεῖν, ὅπου δὲ περὶ τοῦ πατρὸς καὶ τοῦ υἱοῦ καὶ τοῦ ἁγίου πνεύματος λέγει τι, πανταχοῦ ὑποβεβηκότα καὶ δεύτερον καὶ ὑπουργὸν τοῦ πατρὸς ἐμφαίνει τὸν υἱόν, Ἀρειανὸς ὢν καὶ τὴν ἑαυτοῦ δόξαν ἐπικεκρυμμένως ἐπιδεικνύων.

Digitized by Google

children and the catastrophe which overtook him in his life.
IX. Concerning the times of Pilate.
X. Concerning the high priests among the Jews in whose time the Christ gave his teaching.
XI. The evidence relating to John the Baptist and the Christ.
XII. Concerning the disciples of our Saviour.
XIII. A narrative concerning the ruler of the Edessenes.[1]

[1] One manuscript adds, " Beware, reader, of being caught by the heretical tendency of the writer, for though his present book is peculiarly valuable as history, nevertheless though in some places he speaks unconditionally concerning God and attributes divinity to him, and here to some his opinions seem sound, yet in others he speaks of the Father and the Son and the Holy Spirit and everywhere represents the Son as subordinate and secondary and the servant of the Father, for he was an Arian and guardedly manifests his opinion."

Digitized by Google

ΕΥΣΗΒΙΟΥ

ΕΚΚΛΗΣΙΑΣΤΙΚΗΣ ΙΣΤΟΡΙΑΣ

Α

I. Τὰς τῶν ἱερῶν ἀποστόλων διαδοχὰς σὺν καὶ 1
τοῖς ἀπὸ τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν καὶ εἰς ἡμᾶς διηνυσμένοις χρόνοις, ὅσα τε καὶ πηλίκα πραγματευθῆναι κατὰ τὴν ἐκκλησιαστικὴν ἱστορίαν λέγεται, καὶ ὅσοι ταύτης διαπρεπῶς ἐν ταῖς μάλιστα ἐπισημοτάταις παροικίαις ἡγήσαντό τε καὶ προέστησαν, ὅσοι τε κατὰ γενεὰν ἑκάστην ἀγράφως ἢ καὶ διὰ συγγραμμάτων τὸν θεῖον ἐπρέσβευσαν λόγον, τίνες τε καὶ ὅσοι καὶ ὁπηνίκα νεωτεροποιίας
I Tim. 6, 20 ἱμέρῳ πλάνης εἰς ἔσχατον ἐλάσαντες, ψευδωνύμου
γνώσεως εἰσηγητὰς ἑαυτοὺς ἀνακεκηρύχασιν,
Acts 20, 29 ἀφειδῶς οἷα λύκοι βαρεῖς τὴν Χριστοῦ ποίμνην ἐπεντρίβοντες, πρὸς ἐπὶ τούτοις καὶ τὰ παραυτίκα 2
τῆς κατὰ τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν ἐπιβουλῆς τὸ πᾶν Ἰουδαίων ἔθνος περιελθόντα, ὅσα τε αὖ καὶ ὁποῖα καθ' οἵους τε χρόνους πρὸς τῶν ἐθνῶν ὁ θεῖος πεπολέμηται λόγος, καὶ πηλίκοι κατὰ καιροὺς τὸν δι' αἵματος καὶ βασάνων ὑπὲρ αὐτοῦ διεξῆλθον ἀγῶνα, τά τ' ἐπὶ τούτοις καὶ καθ' ἡμᾶς

Digitized by Google

THE ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY OF EUSEBIUS

BOOK I

I. I HAVE purposed to record in writing the successions of the sacred apostles, covering the period stretching from our Saviour to ourselves; the number and character of the transactions recorded in the history of the Church; the number of those who were distinguished in her government and leadership in the provinces of greatest fame; the number of those who in each generation were the ambassadors of the word of God either by speech or pen; the names, the number and the age of those who, driven by the desire of innovation to an extremity of error, have heralded themselves as the introducers of Knowledge, falsely so-called, ravaging the flock of Christ unsparingly, like grim wolves. To this I will add the fate which has beset the whole nation of the Jews from the moment of their plot against our Saviour; moreover, the number and nature and times of the wars waged by the heathen against the divine word [1] and the character of those who, for its sake, passed from time to time through the contest of blood and torture; furthermore the

[1] Or possibly "the Divine Logos."

Digitized by Google

αὐτοὺς μαρτύρια καὶ τὴν ἐπὶ πάσιν ἵλεω καὶ εὐμενῆ τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν ἀντίληψιν γραφῇ παραδοῦναι προηρημένος, οὐδ' ἄλλοθεν ἢ ἀπὸ πρώτης ἄρξομαι τῆς κατὰ τὸν σωτῆρα καὶ κύριον ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦν τὸν Χριστὸν τοῦ θεοῦ οἰκονομίας. ἀλλά 3
μοι συγγνώμην εὐγνωμόνων ἐντεῦθεν ὁ λόγος αἰτεῖ, μείζονα ἢ καθ' ἡμετέραν δύναμιν ὁμολογῶν εἶναι τὴν ἐπαγγελίαν ἐντελῆ καὶ ἀπαράλειπτον ὑποσχεῖν, ἐπεὶ καὶ πρῶτοι νῦν τῆς ὑποθέσεως ἐπιβάντες οἱά τινα ἐρήμην καὶ ἀτριβῆ ἰέναι ὁδὸν ἐγχειροῦμεν, θεὸν μὲν ὁδηγὸν καὶ τὴν τοῦ κυρίου συνεργὸν σχήσειν εὐχόμενοι δύναμιν, ἀνθρώπων γε μὴν οὐδαμῶς εὑρεῖν οἷοί τε ὄντες ἴχνη γυμνὰ τὴν αὐτὴν ἡμῖν προωδευκότων, μὴ ὅτι σμικρὰς αὐτὸ μόνον προφάσεις, δι' ὧν ἄλλος ἄλλως ὧν διηνύκασι χρόνων μερικὰς ἡμῖν καταλελοίπασι διηγήσεις, πόρρωθεν ὥσπερ εἰ πυρσοὺς τὰς ἑαυτῶν προανατείνοντες φωνὰς καὶ ἄνωθέν ποθεν ὡς ἐξ ἀπόπτου καὶ ἀπὸ σκοπῆς βοῶντες καὶ διακελευόμενοι, ᾗ χρὴ βαδίζειν καὶ τὴν τοῦ λόγου πορείαν ἁπλανῶς καὶ ἀκινδύνως εὐθύνειν. ὅσα τοίνυν 4
εἰς τὴν προκειμένην ὑπόθεσιν λυσιτελεῖν ἡγούμεθα τῶν αὐτοῖς ἐκείνοις σποράδην μνημονευθέντων, ἀναλεξάμενοι καὶ ὡς ἂν ἐκ λογικῶν λειμώνων τὰς ἐπιτηδείους αὐτῶν τῶν πάλαι συγγραφέων ἀπανθισάμενοι φωνάς, δι' ὑφηγήσεως ἱστορικῆς πειρασόμεθα σωματοποιῆσαι, ἀγαπῶντες, εἰ καὶ μὴ ἁπάντων, τῶν δ' οὖν μάλιστα διαφανεστάτων τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν ἀποστόλων τὰς διαδοχὰς κατὰ τὰς διαπρεπούσας ἔτι καὶ νῦν μνημονευομένας ἐκκλησίας ἀνασωσαίμεθα. ἀναγκαιότατα δέ 5
μοι ποιεῖσθαι τὴν ὑπόθεσιν ἡγοῦμαι, ὅτι μηδένα

Digitized by Google

martyrdoms of our own time, and the gracious and favouring help of our Saviour in them all. My starting-point is therefore no other than the first dispensation of God touching our Saviour and Lord, Jesus the Christ. Even at that point the project at once demands the lenience of the kindly, for confessedly it is beyond our power to fulfil the promise, complete and perfect, since we are the first to enter on the undertaking, as travellers on some desolate and untrodden way. We pray God to give us his guidance, and that we may have the help of the power of the Lord, for nowhere can we find even the bare footsteps of men who have preceded us in the same path, unless it be those slight indications by which in divers ways they have left to us partial accounts of the times through which they have passed, raising their voices as a man holds up a torch from afar, calling to us from on high as from a distant watch-tower, and telling us how we must walk, and how to guide the course of our work without error or danger. We have therefore collected from their scattered memoirs all that we think will be useful for the present subject, and have brought together the utterances of the ancient writers themselves that are appropriate to it, culling, as it were, the flowers of intellectual fields. We shall endeavour to give them unity by historical treatment, rejoicing to rescue the successions, if not of all, at least of the most distinguished of the apostles of our Saviour throughout those churches of which the fame is still remembered. To work at this subject I consider especially necessary, because I am not aware

Digitized by Google

πω εἰς δεῦρο τῶν ἐκκλησιαστικῶν συγγραφέων διέγνων περὶ τοῦτο τῆς γραφῆς σπουδὴν πεποιημένον τὸ μέρος· ἐλπίζω δ' ὅτι καὶ ὠφελιμωτάτη τοῖς φιλοτίμως περὶ τὸ χρηστομαθὲς τῆς ἱστορίας ἔχουσιν ἀναφανήσεται. ἤδη μὲν οὖν τούτων καὶ 6
πρότερον ἐν οἷς διετυπωσάμην χρονικοῖς κανόσιν ἐπιτομὴν κατεστησάμην, πληρεστάτην δ' οὖν ὅμως αὐτῶν ἐπὶ τοῦ παρόντος ὡρμήθην τὴν ἀφήγησιν ποιήσασθαι.

Καὶ ἄρξεταί γέ μοι ὁ λόγος, ὡς ἔφην, ἀπὸ τῆς 7
κατὰ τὸν Χριστὸν ἐπινοουμένης ὑψηλοτέρας καὶ κρείττονος ἢ κατὰ ἄνθρωπον οἰκονομίας τε καὶ θεολογίας. καὶ γὰρ τὸν γραφῇ μέλλοντα τῆς 8
ἐκκλησιαστικῆς[1] ὑφηγήσεως παραδώσειν τὴν ἱστορίαν, ἄνωθεν ἐκ πρώτης τῆς κατ' αὐτὸν τὸν Χριστόν, ὅτιπερ ἐξ αὐτοῦ καὶ τῆς προσωνυμίας ἠξιώθημεν, θειοτέρας ἢ κατὰ τὸ δοκοῦν τοῖς πολλοῖς οἰκονομίας ἀναγκαῖον ἂν εἴη κατάρξασθαι.

II. Διττοῦ δὲ ὄντος τοῦ κατ' αὐτὸν τρόπου, καὶ τοῦ 1
1 Cor. 11, 3 μὲν σώματος ἐοικότος κεφαλῇ, ᾗ θεὸς ἐπινοεῖται, τοῦ δὲ ποσὶ παραβαλλομένου, ᾗ τὸν ἡμῖν ἄνθρωπον ὁμοιοπαθῆ τῆς ἡμῶν αὐτῶν ἕνεκεν ὑπέδυ σωτηρίας, γένοιτ' ἂν ἡμῖν ἐντεῦθεν ἐντελὴς ἡ τῶν ἀκολούθων διήγησις, εἰ τῆς κατ' αὐτὸν ἱστορίας ἁπάσης ἀπὸ τῶν κεφαλαιωδεστάτων καὶ κυριωτάτων τοῦ λόγου τὴν ὑφήγησιν ποιησαίμεθα· ταύτῃ δὲ καὶ τῆς Χριστιανῶν ἀρχαιότητος τὸ παλαιὸν ὁμοῦ καὶ θεοπρεπὲς τοῖς νέαν αὐτὴν καὶ ἐκτετοπισμένην, χθὲς καὶ οὐ πρότερον φανεῖσαν, ὑπολαμβάνουσιν ἀναδειχθήσεται.

[1] Literally, "ecclesiastical"; but the antithesis to the word used is either "heathen" (as here) or "heretical."

Digitized by Google

that any Christian[1] writer has until now paid attention to this kind of writing; and I hope that its high value will be evident to those who are convinced of the importance of a knowledge of the history. I have already summarized the material in the chronological tables which I have drawn up, but nevertheless in the present work I have undertaken to give the narrative in full detail.

I will begin with what, apprehended in relation to Christ, is beyond man in its height and greatness, —the dispensation of God, and the ascription of divinity.[2] For he who plans to hand on in writing the history of Christian origins is forced to begin from the first dispensation concerning the Christ himself, which is more divine than it seems to most, seeing that from him we claim to derive our very name.

II. Now his nature was twofold; on the one hand like the head of the body, in that he is recognized as God, on the other comparable to the feet, in that he put on for the sake of our own salvation, man of like passions with us. Therefore to make our description of what follows complete we should start the whole narrative concerning him by the most capital and dominant points of the discussion. By this means, moreover, the real antiquity and divine character of Christianity will be equally demonstrated to those who suppose that it is recent and foreign, appearing no earlier than yesterday.

[2] *οἰκονομία* and *θεολογία* are semi-technical terms. The *οἰκονομία* or "dispensation" with regard to Christ was the incarnation of the divine Logos; the *θεολογία* was the ascription of divinity to him. Hence this passage might almost be rendered freely as "the divine and human natures of Christ, which pass man's understanding."

Digitized by Google

Γένους μὲν οὖν καὶ ἀξίας αὐτῆς τε οὐσίας τοῦ 2
Χριστοῦ καὶ φύσεως οὔτις ἂν εἰς ἔκφρασιν αὐτάρκης
γένοιτο λόγος, ᾗ καὶ τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ θεῖον ἐν προ-
Is. 53, 8 φητείαις "τὴν γενεὰν αὐτοῦ" φησὶν "τίς διηγή-
Matt. 11, 27 σεται;" ὅτι δὴ οὔτε τὸν πατέρα τις ἔγνω, εἰ μὴ
ὁ υἱός, οὔτ' αὖ τὸν υἱόν τις ἔγνω ποτὲ κατ' ἀξίαν,
εἰ μὴ μόνος ὁ γεννήσας αὐτὸν πατήρ, τό τε φῶς 3
John 1, 9. 10 τὸ προκόσμιον καὶ τὴν πρὸ αἰώνων νοερὰν καὶ
Prov. 8, 23 οὐσιώδη σοφίαν τόν τε ζῶντα καὶ ἐν ἀρχῇ παρὰ
John 1, 4. 2 τῷ πατρὶ τυγχάνοντα θεὸν λόγον τίς ἂν πλὴν τοῦ
Col. 1, 15. 16 πατρὸς καθαρῶς ἐννοήσειεν, πρὸ πάσης κτίσεως καὶ
δημιουργίας ὁρωμένης τε καὶ ἀοράτου τὸ πρῶτον
καὶ μόνον τοῦ θεοῦ γέννημα, τὸν τῆς κατ' οὐρανὸν
Jos. 5, 14 λογικῆς καὶ ἀθανάτου στρατιᾶς ἀρχιστράτηγον,
Is. 9, 6 τὸν τῆς μεγάλης βουλῆς ἄγγελον, τὸν τῆς ἀρρήτου
γνώμης τοῦ πατρὸς ὑπουργόν, τὸν τῶν ἁπάντων
σὺν τῷ πατρὶ δημιουργόν, τὸν δεύτερον μετὰ τὸν
πατέρα τῶν ὅλων αἴτιον, τὸν τοῦ θεοῦ παῖδα
γνήσιον καὶ μονογενῆ, τὸν τῶν γενητῶν ἁπάντων
κύριον καὶ θεὸν καὶ βασιλέα τὸ κῦρος ὁμοῦ καὶ
τὸ κράτος αὐτῇ θεότητι καὶ δυνάμει καὶ τιμῇ
παρὰ τοῦ πατρὸς ὑποδεδεγμένον, ὅτι δὴ κατὰ τὰς
John 1, 1. 3 περὶ αὐτοῦ μυστικὰς τῶν γραφῶν θεολογίας "ἐν
ἀρχῇ ἦν ὁ λόγος, καὶ ὁ λόγος ἦν πρὸς τὸν θεόν,
καὶ θεὸς ἦν ὁ λόγος· πάντα δι' αὐτοῦ ἐγένετο, καὶ
χωρὶς αὐτοῦ ἐγένετο οὐδὲ ἕν." τοῦτό τοι καὶ 4
ὁ μέγας Μωυσῆς, ὡς ἂν προφητῶν ἁπάντων
παλαιότατος, θείῳ πνεύματι τὴν τοῦ παντὸς
οὐσίωσίν τε καὶ διακόσμησιν ὑπογράφων, τὸν
κοσμοποιὸν καὶ δημιουργὸν τῶν ὅλων αὐτῷ δὴ
τῷ Χριστῷ καὶ οὐδὲ ἄλλῳ ἢ τῷ θείῳ δηλαδὴ καὶ

Digitized by Google

No treatise, indeed, could be sufficient for a statement of the origin and dignity, the very being and nature of the Christ: as indeed the divine spirit says in prophecies, "Who will declare his generation?" seeing that neither does any know the Father save the Son, neither did any ever know the Son properly, save only the Father who begat him. And who except the Father would ever clearly conceive the ante-mundane light, and that wisdom which was intellectual and real[1] before the ages, the living Logos who was, in the beginning, God by the side of the Father, the first and only offspring of God, before all creation and fabrication,[2] both visible and invisible, the captain of the spiritual and immortal host of heaven, the angel of great counsel, the minister of the ineffable plan of the Father, the fabricator of all things along with the Father, the true and only begotten child of God, the Lord and God and King of all begotten, who has received lordship and might, together with deity itself, and power and honour from the Father, according to the mysterious ascription of divinity to him in the Scriptures, "In the beginning was the Logos and the Logos was with God and the Logos was God, all things were through him, and without him was no single thing"? This, indeed, is also the teaching of the great Moses, as the most ancient of all prophets, when by divine inspiration he described the coming into being, and the ordering of the universe, that the creator and fabricator of all things gave up to the Christ himself, and to no other than his

[1] Or "substantial"—but not in the sense of "material."

[2] "Creation" and "fabrication" are almost but not quite synonyms. "Creation" means making out of nothing, and "fabrication" making out of existent matter.

Digitized by Google

πρωτογόνῳ ἑαυτοῦ λόγῳ τὴν τῶν ὑποβεβηκότων
ποίησιν παραχωροῦντα διδάσκει αὐτῷ τε κοινο-
Gen. 1, 26 λογούμενον ἐπὶ τῆς ἀνθρωπογονίας· "εἶπεν γὰρ"
φησὶν "ὁ θεός· 'ποιήσωμεν ἄνθρωπον κατ'
εἰκόνα ἡμετέραν καὶ καθ' ὁμοίωσιν.'" ταύτην 5
δὲ ἐγγυᾶται τὴν φωνὴν προφητῶν ἄλλος, ὧδέ πως
Ps. 32, 9; 148, 5 ἐν ὕμνοις θεολογῶν "αὐτὸς εἶπεν, καὶ ἐγενήθησαν·
αὐτὸς ἐνετείλατο, καὶ ἐκτίσθησαν," τὸν μὲν πατέρα
καὶ ποιητὴν εἰσάγων ὡς ἂν πανηγεμόνα βασιλικῷ
νεύματι προστάττοντα, τὸν δὲ τούτῳ δευτερεύοντα
θεῖον λόγον, οὐχ ἕτερον τοῦ πρὸς ἡμῶν κηρυτ-
τομένου, ταῖς πατρικαῖς ἐπιτάξεσιν ὑπουργοῦντα.
τοῦτον καὶ ἀπὸ πρώτης ἀνθρωπογονίας πάντες 6
ὅσοι δὴ δικαιοσύνῃ καὶ θεοσεβείας ἀρετῇ δια-
πρέψαι λέγονται, ἀμφί τε τὸν μέγαν θεράποντα
Μωυσέα καὶ πρό γε αὐτοῦ πρῶτος Ἀβραὰμ
τούτου τε οἱ παῖδες καὶ ὅσοι μετέπειτα δίκαιοι
πεφήνασιν καὶ προφῆται, καθαροῖς διανοίας ὄμμασι
φαντασθέντες ἔγνωσάν τε καὶ οἷα θεοῦ παιδὶ τὸ
προσῆκον ἀπένειμαν σέβας, αὐτός τε, οὐδαμῶς 7
ἀπορραθυμῶν τῆς τοῦ πατρὸς εὐσεβείας, διδάσκαλος
τοῖς πᾶσι τῆς πατρικῆς καθίστατο γνώσεως.
Gen. 18, 1–3 ὤφθαι γοῦν κύριος ὁ θεὸς ἀνείρηται οἷά τις κοινὸς
ἄνθρωπος τῷ Ἀβραὰμ καθημένῳ παρὰ τὴν δρῦν
τὴν Μαμβρῆ· ὁ δ' ὑποπεσὼν αὐτίκα, καίτοι γε
ἄνθρωπον ὀφθαλμοῖς ὁρῶν, προσκυνεῖ μὲν ὡς
θεόν, ἱκετεύει δὲ ὡς κύριον, ὁμολογεῖ τε μὴ
Gen. 18, 25 ἀγνοεῖν ὅστις εἴη, ῥήμασιν αὐτοῖς λέγων "κύριε

---

[1] The point of this quotation is obscured by its shortness. Eusebius is really influenced by Ps. xxxii. 6, "By the word of the Lord were the heavens established." He takes

Digitized by Google

divine and first-born Logos, the making of subordinate things and communed with him concerning the creation of man. "For," he says, "God said, let us make man in our own image and likeness." Another of the prophets confirms this saying, ascribing divinity to him in one place in hymns, "He spake and they were begotten, he commanded and they were created."[1] On the one hand he introduces the Father and Maker as a universal sovereign, commanding by his royal nod, and on the other the divine Logos—no other than him who is proclaimed by us—as secondary to him, and ministering to his Father's commands. Him even from the creation of mankind did all who are said to have been pre-eminent in righteousness and virtuous piety recognize by the contemplation of the pure eyes of the mind, and pay him the reverence due to a child of God; thus did Moses, the great servant, and his fellows, and even before him Abraham, the first, and his children, and all the righteous and prophets who have since appeared; and he himself, never wearying of piety toward the Father, has been a teacher to all men of knowledge of the Father. Thus the Lord God is said to have appeared as an ordinary man to Abraham, while he was seated by the oak of Mamre. But he fell down immediately, even though he saw him as a man with his eyes, worshipped him as God, besought him as Lord, and confessed that he was not ignorant who he was, saying in his own words,

[1] "word" as meaning Logos, and thus connects the "he" of the verse which he actually quotes with the Logos, not the Father. This was a traditional Christian interpretation and was probably so familiar to Eusebius that he overlooked his omission of the connecting link in the argument.

Digitized by Google

ὁ κρίνων πᾶσαν τὴν γῆν, οὐ ποιήσεις κρίσιν;" εἰ 8
γὰρ μηδεὶς ἐπιτρέποι λόγος τὴν ἀγένητον καὶ
ἄτρεπτον οὐσίαν θεοῦ τοῦ παντοκράτορος εἰς
ἀνδρὸς εἶδος μεταβάλλειν μηδ' αὖ γενητοῦ μηθενὸς
φαντασίᾳ τὰς τῶν ὁρώντων ὄψεις ἐξαπατᾶν μηδὲ
μὴν ψευδῶς τὰ τοιαῦτα πλάττεσθαι τὴν γραφήν,
θεὸς καὶ κύριος ὁ κρίνων πᾶσαν τὴν γῆν καὶ ποιῶν
κρίσιν, ἐν ἀνθρώπου ὁρώμενος σχήματι, τίς ἂν
ἕτερος ἀναγορεύοιτο, εἰ μὴ φάναι θέμις τὸ πρῶτον
τῶν ὅλων αἴτιον, ἢ μόνος ὁ προὼν αὐτοῦ λόγος;
Ps. 106, 20 περὶ οὗ καὶ ἐν ψαλμοῖς ἀνείρηται "ἀπέστειλεν
τὸν λόγον αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἰάσατο αὐτούς, καὶ ἐρρύσατο
αὐτοὺς ἐκ τῶν διαφθορῶν αὐτῶν." τοῦτον δεύ- 9
τερον μετὰ τὸν πατέρα κύριον σαφέστατα Μωυσῆς
Gen. 19, 24 ἀναγορεύει λέγων "ἔβρεξε κύριος ἐπὶ Σόδομα
καὶ Γόμορρα θεῖον καὶ πῦρ παρὰ κυρίου·" τοῦτον
καὶ τῷ Ἰακὼβ αὖθις ἐν ἀνδρὸς φανέντα σχήματι,
θεὸν ἡ θεία προσαγορεύει γραφή, φάσκοντα τῷ
Gen. 32, 28 Ἰακὼβ "οὐκέτι κληθήσεται τὸ ὄνομά σου Ἰακώβ,
ἀλλ' Ἰσραὴλ ἔσται τὸ ὄνομά σου, ὅτι ἐνίσχυσας
Gen. 32, 30 μετὰ θεοῦ," ὅτε καὶ "ἐκάλεσεν Ἰακὼβ τὸ ὄνομα
τοῦ τόπου ἐκείνου Εἶδος θεοῦ," λέγων "εἶδον
γὰρ θεὸν πρόσωπον πρὸς πρόσωπον, καὶ ἐσώθη
μου ἡ ψυχή." καὶ μὴν οὐδ' ὑποβεβηκότων ἀγγέλων 10
καὶ λειτουργῶν θεοῦ τὰς ἀναγραφείσας θεοφανείας
ὑπονοεῖν θέμις, ἐπειδὴ καὶ τούτων ὅτε τις ἀνθρώποις
παραφαίνεται, οὐκ ἐπικρύπτεται ἡ γραφή, ὀνομαστὶ
οὐ θεὸν οὐδὲ μὴν κύριον, ἀλλ' ἀγγέλους χρηματίσαι
λέγουσα, ὡς διὰ μυρίων μαρτυριῶν πιστώσασθαι
ῥᾴδιον. τοῦτον καὶ ὁ Μωυσέως διάδοχος Ἰησοῦς, 11

Digitized by Google

"O Lord, that judgest all the earth, wilt thou not do judgement?" For inasmuch as no reason would allow that the uncreated and unchangeable substance of the Almighty was converted into the form of man, or deceived the eyes of the beholders by the phantasm of anything created, or that the Scripture has falsely invented such a story, who other could be described as God, and as the Lord who judges all the earth and does judgement, appearing in the form of man (seeing that it is improper to call him the first cause of the universe), than his pre-existent Logos alone? And concerning him it was said in the Psalms, "He sent forth his Logos and healed them, and he rescued them from their corruptions." Of him, too, Moses clearly speaks as a second Lord, after the Father, when he says, "The Lord rained on Sodom and Gomorrah brimstone and fire from the Lord." Him the divine Scripture also calls God when he appears in human form to Jacob, saying to Jacob, "Thy name shall no more be called Jacob, but Israel shall be thy name because thou hadst power with God." Then, too, "Jacob called the name of the place 'the Vision of God,' saying, 'For I saw God face to face and my life was saved.'" [1] And it cannot be right to suppose that the Theophanies described were the appearances of subordinate angels and ministers of God, for whenever one of these appears to men the Scripture does not conceal it, but says definitely that they are called angels, not God or Lord, as it is easy to prove from countless passages. Him, too, Joshua, the successor of Moses, calls the chief captain of the host of the Lord, as if he were the

[1] The allusion is to the Septuagint text of Gen. xxxii. 30.

Digitized by Google

ὡς ἂν τῶν οὐρανίων ἀγγέλων καὶ ἀρχαγγέλων τῶν
τε ὑπερκοσμίων δυνάμεων ἡγούμενον καὶ ὡς ἂν
I Cor. 1, 24 εἰ τοῦ πατρὸς ὑπάρχοντα δύναμιν καὶ σοφίαν καὶ
τὰ δευτερεῖα τῆς κατὰ πάντων βασιλείας τε καὶ
ἀρχῆς ἐμπεπιστευμένον, ἀρχιστράτηγον δυνάμεως
κυρίου ὀνομάζει, οὐκ ἄλλως αὐτὸν ἢ αὖθις ἐν
ἀνθρώπου μορφῇ καὶ σχήματι θεωρήσας. γέ- 12
Jos. 5, 13–15 γραπται γοῦν "καὶ ἐγενήθη, ὡς ἦν Ἰησοῦς ἐν
Ἰεριχώ, καὶ ἀναβλέψας ὁρᾷ ἄνθρωπον ἑστηκότα
κατέναντι αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἡ ῥομφαία ἐσπασμένη ἐν
τῇ χειρὶ αὐτοῦ, καὶ προσελθὼν Ἰησοῦς εἶπεν,
'ἡμέτερος εἶ ἢ τῶν ὑπεναντίων;' καὶ εἶπεν αὐτῷ,
'ἐγὼ ἀρχιστράτηγος δυνάμεως κυρίου· νυνὶ παρα-
γέγονα.' καὶ Ἰησοῦς ἔπεσεν ἐπὶ πρόσωπον ἐπὶ
τὴν γῆν καὶ εἶπεν αὐτῷ, 'δέσποτα, τί προστάσσεις
τῷ σῷ οἰκέτῃ;' καὶ εἶπεν ὁ ἀρχιστράτηγος κυρίου
πρὸς Ἰησοῦν, 'λῦσαι τὸ ὑπόδημα ἐκ τῶν ποδῶν
σου· ὁ γὰρ τόπος, ἐν ᾧ σὺ ἕστηκας, τόπος ἅγιός
ἐστιν.'" ἔνθα καὶ ἐπιστήσεις ἀπὸ τῶν αὐτῶν 13
ῥημάτων ὅτι μὴ ἕτερος οὗτος εἴη τοῦ καὶ Μωυσεῖ
κεχρηματικότος, ὅτι δὴ αὐτοῖς ῥήμασι καὶ ἐπὶ
Exod. 3, 4–6 τῷδέ φησιν ἡ γραφή "ὡς δὲ εἶδεν κύριος ὅτι
προσάγει ἰδεῖν, ἐκάλεσεν αὐτὸν κύριος ἐκ τοῦ
βάτου λέγων, 'Μωυσῆ Μωυσῆ'· ὁ δὲ εἶπεν,
'τί ἐστιν;' καὶ εἶπεν, 'μὴ ἐγγίσῃς ὧδε· λῦσαι
τὸ ὑπόδημα ἐκ τῶν ποδῶν σου· ὁ γὰρ τόπος, ἐν
ᾧ σὺ ἕστηκας ἐπ' αὐτοῦ, γῆ ἁγία ἐστίν.' καὶ
εἶπεν αὐτῷ, 'ἐγώ εἰμι ὁ θεὸς τοῦ πατρός σου,
θεὸς Ἀβραὰμ καὶ θεὸς Ἰσαὰκ καὶ θεὸς Ἰακώβ.'"
καὶ ὅτι γέ ἐστιν οὐσία τις προκόσμιος ζῶσα καὶ 14
ὑφεστῶσα, ἡ τῷ πατρὶ καὶ θεῷ τῶν ὅλων εἰς τὴν
τῶν γενητῶν ἁπάντων δημιουργίαν ὑπηρετησαμένη,

Digitized by Google

leader of the heavenly angels and archangels, and the supernal powers, and as if he were of the power and wisdom of the Father, entrusted with the second rank in his universal kingdom and rule, though Joshua, too, saw him in none but human form and shape. It is written at least, "And it came to pass, while Joshua was in Jericho that he looked up and saw a man standing over against him, and his sword was drawn in his hand, and Joshua went to him and said, Art thou for us or for our adversaries? And he said to him, As chief captain of the host of the Lord am I now come. And Joshua fell on his face on the earth, and said to him, Lord, what dost thou command thy servant? And the chief captain of the Lord said to Joshua, Loose thy shoe from off thy feet, for the place whereon thou standest is a holy place." Here, too, you will perceive from the words themselves that this is none other than he who spoke also to Moses, for of him also the Scripture uses the same words, "And when the Lord saw that he drew nigh to see, the Lord called him out of the bush saying, Moses, Moses. And he said, What is it? And he said, Do not draw near here. Loose thy shoe from off thy feet, for the place whereon thou standest is holy ground. And he said to him, I am the God of thy Father, the God of Abraham, and God of Isaac and God of Jacob." And that there really is a certain being living and existent before the world, who ministered to the Father and God of the universe for the fabrication of all created things, called

Digitized by Google

λόγος θεοῦ καὶ σοφία χρηματίζουσα, πρὸς ταῖς τεθειμέναις ἀποδείξεσιν ἔτι καὶ αὐτῆς ἐξ ἰδίου προσώπου τῆς σοφίας ἐπακοῦσαι πάρεστιν, διὰ Σολομῶνος λευκότατα ὧδέ πως τὰ περὶ αὐτῆς
Prov. 8, 12. 15. 16 μυσταγωγούσης "ἐγὼ ἡ σοφία κατεσκήνωσα βουλήν, καὶ γνῶσιν καὶ ἔννοιαν ἐγὼ ἐπεκαλεσάμην. δι' ἐμοῦ βασιλεῖς βασιλεύουσιν, καὶ οἱ δυνάσται γράφουσι δικαιοσύνην· δι' ἐμοῦ μεγιστᾶνες μεγαλύνονται, καὶ τύραννοι δι' ἐμοῦ κρατοῦσι γῆς·"
Prov. 8. 22–25. 27. 28. 30. 31 οἷς ἐπιλέγει "κύριος ἔκτισέν με ἀρχὴν ὁδῶν αὐτοῦ εἰς ἔργα αὐτοῦ, πρὸ τοῦ αἰῶνος ἐθεμελίωσέν με· ἐν ἀρχῇ πρὸ τοῦ τὴν γῆν ποιῆσαι, πρὸ τοῦ προελθεῖν τὰς πηγὰς τῶν ὑδάτων, πρὸ τοῦ ὄρη ἑδρασθῆναι, πρὸ δὲ πάντων βουνῶν γεννᾷ με. ἡνίκα ἡτοίμαζεν τὸν οὐρανόν, συμπαρήμην αὐτῷ, καὶ ὡς ἀσφαλεῖς ἐτίθει πηγὰς τῆς ὑπ' οὐρανόν, ἤμην σὺν αὐτῷ ἁρμόζουσα. ἐγὼ ἤμην ᾗ προσέχαιρεν καθ' ἡμέραν, εὐφραινόμην δὲ ἐνώπιον αὐτοῦ ἐν παντὶ καιρῷ, ὅτε εὐφραίνετο τὴν οἰκουμένην συντελέσας." ὅτι μὲν οὖν προῆν καὶ τισὶν, εἰ καὶ μὴ τοῖς πᾶσιν, ὁ θεῖος λόγος ἐπεφαίνετο, ταῦθ' ἡμῖν ὡς ἐν βραχέσιν εἰρήσθω.

Τί δὴ οὖν οὐχὶ καθάπερ τὰ νῦν, καὶ πάλαι πρότερον εἰς πάντας ἀνθρώπους καὶ πᾶσιν ἔθνεσιν ἐκηρύττετο, ὧδε ἂν γένοιτο πρόδηλον. οὐκ ἦν πω χωρεῖν οἷός τε τὴν τοῦ Χριστοῦ πάνσοφον καὶ πανάρετον διδασκαλίαν ὁ πάλαι τῶν ἀνθρώπων βίος. εὐθὺς μέν γε ἐν ἀρχῇ μετὰ τὴν πρώτην ἐν μακαρίοις ζωὴν ὁ πρῶτος ἄνθρωπος ἧττον τῆς θείας ἐντολῆς φροντίσας, εἰς τουτονὶ τὸν θνητὸν καὶ ἐπίκηρον βίον καταπέπτωκεν καὶ τὴν ἐπάρατον ταυτηνὶ γῆν τῆς πάλαι ἐνθέου τρυφῆς ἀντικατηλλά-

Digitized by Google

the Logos and Wisdom of God, can be learned from the actual person of Wisdom herself, in addition to the preceding proofs, for in one place she tells her own secret very clearly through Solomon, "I, Wisdom, made Counsel my habitation and I invoked Knowledge and Thought; through me kings reign, and the mighty inscribe justice; by me great men are magnified, and sovereigns rule the earth through me." And to this she adds, "The Lord created me as the beginning of his ways for his works; he established me before the world; in the beginning, before the making of the earth, before the springs of water came forth, before the mountains were founded, and before all hills, he begat me. When he prepared the heaven, I was present with him, and when he made safe the springs which are under heaven, I was with him giving them order. I was she in whom he rejoiced daily and I exulted before him at all times, when he exulted that he had completed the world." Thus let this be our short proof that the divine Logos pre-existed, and appeared to some, if not to all, men.

It must now be demonstrated why this announcement was not formerly made, long ago, to all men and all nations, as it is now. The life of men in the past was not capable of receiving the complete wisdom and virtue of the teaching of Christ. For at the beginning, after the first life in blessedness, the first man, despising the command of God, fell at once to this mortal and perishable life, and exchanged the former divine delights for this earth

Digitized by Google

ξατο, οἵ τε ἀπὸ τούτου τὴν καθ' ἡμᾶς σύμπασαν πληρώσαντες πολὺ χείρους ἀναφανέντες ἐκτὸς ἑνός που καὶ δευτέρου, θηριώδη τινὰ τρόπον καὶ βίον ἀβίωτον ἐπανῄρηντο· ἀλλὰ καὶ οὔτε πόλιν 19
οὔτε πολιτείαν, οὐ τέχνας, οὐκ ἐπιστήμας ἐπὶ νοῦν ἐβάλλοντο, νόμων τε καὶ δικαιωμάτων καὶ προσέτι ἀρετῆς καὶ φιλοσοφίας οὐδὲ ὀνόματος μετεῖχον, νομάδες δὲ ἐπ' ἐρημίας οἷά τινες ἄγριοι καὶ ἀπηνεῖς διῆγον, τοὺς μὲν ἐκ φύσεως προσήκοντας λογισμοὺς τά τε λογικὰ καὶ ἥμερα τῆς ἀνθρώπων ψυχῆς σπέρματα αὐτοπροαιρέτου κακίας ὑπερβολῇ διαφθείροντες, ἀνοσιουργίαις δὲ πάσαις ὅλους σφᾶς ἐκδεδωκότες, ὡς τοτὲ μὲν ἀλληλοφθορεῖν, τοτὲ δὲ ἀλληλοκτονεῖν, ἄλλοτε δὲ ἀνθρωποβορεῖν, θεομαχίας τε καὶ τὰς παρὰ τοῖς πᾶσιν βωμένας γιγαντομαχίας ἐπιτολμᾶν, καὶ γῆν μὲν ἐπιτειχίζειν οὐρανῷ διανοεῖσθαι, μανίᾳ δὲ φρονήματος ἐκτόπου αὐτὸν τὸν ἐπὶ πᾶσιν πολεμεῖν παρασκευάζεσθαι· ἐφ' οἷς τοῦτον ἑαυτοῖς εἰσάγουσι τὸν τρόπον 20
κατακλυσμοῖς αὐτοὺς καὶ πυρπολήσεσιν ὥσπερ ἀγρίαν ὕλην κατὰ πάσης τῆς γῆς κεχυμένην θεὸς ὁ πάντων ἔφορος μετῄει, λιμοῖς τε συνεχέσι καὶ λοιμοῖς πολέμοις τε αὖ καὶ κεραυνῶν βολαῖς ἄνωθεν αὐτοὺς ὑπετέμνετο, ὥσπερ τινὰ δεινὴν καὶ χαλεπωτάτην νόσον ψυχῶν πικροτέροις ἀνέχων τοῖς κολαστηρίοις. τότε μὲν οὖν, ὅτε δὴ καὶ 21
πολὺς ἦν ἐπικεχυμένος ὀλίγου δεῖν κατὰ πάντων ὁ τῆς κακίας κάρος, οἷα μέθης δεινῆς, τὰς ἁπάντων σχεδὸν ἀνθρώπων ἐπισκιαζούσης καὶ ἐπισκο-
Col. 1, 15; Prov. 8, 22; John 1, 1 τούσης ψυχάς, ἡ πρωτόγονος καὶ πρωτόκτιστος τοῦ θεοῦ σοφία καὶ αὐτὸς ὁ προὼν λόγος φιλανθρωπίας ὑπερβολῇ τοτὲ μὲν δι' ὀπτασίας ἀγγέλων 22

Digitized by Google

with its curse; and after him those who filled all our world were manifestly much worse, with the exception of one or two, and chose some brutal habit of life, unworthy of the name. They gave no thought to city or state, to art or knowledge, they had not even the name of laws and decrees or virtue and philosophy, but they lived as nomads in the wildernesses like savage and unbridled beings; they destroyed by their excess of self-chosen wickedness the natural reasonings, and the germs of thought and gentleness in the human soul; they gave themselves up completely to all iniquity so that at one time they corrupted one another, at another they murdered one another, at another they were cannibals; they ventured on conflicts with God and on the battles of the giants famous among all men; they thought to wall up the earth to heaven, and in the madness of a perverted mind prepared for war against the supreme God himself. While they were leading this life, God, the guardian of all, pursued them with floods and conflagrations, as though they had been a wild forest scattered throughout the whole earth; he cut them off with perpetual famines and plagues, by wars and by thunderbolts from on high, as if he were restraining by bitter chastisement some terrible and grievous disease of their souls. Then, indeed, when the great flood of evil had come nigh overwhelming all men, like a terrible intoxication overshadowing and darkening the souls of almost all, the first-begotten and first-created Wisdom of God, the pre-existent Logos himself, in his exceeding kindness appeared to his subjects, at one time by a vision of angels, at another

Digitized by Google

τοῖς ὑποβεβηκόσι, τοτὲ δὲ καὶ δι' ἑαυτοῦ οἷα θεοῦ
I Cor. 1, 24 δύναμις σωτήριος ἑνί που καὶ δευτέρῳ τῶν πάλαι
θεοφιλῶν ἀνδρῶν οὐκ ἄλλως ἢ δι' ἀνθρώπου μορφῆς,
ὅτι μηδ' ἑτέρως ἦν δυνατὸν αὐτοῖς, ὑπεφαίνετο.

'Ως δ' ἤδη διὰ τούτων τὰ θεοσεβείας σπέρ- 22
ματα εἰς πλῆθος ἀνδρῶν καταβέβλητο ὅλον τε
ἔθνος ἐπὶ γῆς θεοσεβείᾳ προσανέχον ἐκ τῶν
ἀνέκαθεν Ἑβραίων ὑπέστη, τούτοις μέν, ὡς ἂν
εἰ πλήθεσιν ἔτι ταῖς παλαιαῖς ἀγωγαῖς ἐκδεδιητη-
μένοις, διὰ τοῦ προφήτου Μωυσέως εἰκόνας καὶ
σύμβολα σαββάτου τινὸς μυστικοῦ καὶ περιτομῆς
ἑτέρων τε νοητῶν θεωρημάτων εἰσαγωγάς, ἀλλ'
οὐκ αὐτὰς ἐναργεῖς παρεδίδου μυσταγωγίας· ὡς 23
δὲ τῆς παρὰ τούτοις νομοθεσίας βωμένης καὶ
πνοῆς δίκην εὐώδους εἰς ἅπαντας ἀνθρώπους
διαδιδομένης, ἤδη τότε ἐξ αὐτῶν καὶ τοῖς πλείοσιν
τῶν ἐθνῶν διὰ τῶν πανταχόσε νομοθετῶν τε καὶ
φιλοσόφων ἡμέρωτο τὰ φρονήματα, τῆς ἀγρίας
καὶ ἀπηνοῦς θηριωδίας ἐπὶ τὸ πρᾶον μεταβεβλη-
μένης, ὡς καὶ εἰρήνην βαθεῖαν φιλίας τε καὶ
ἐπιμιξίας πρὸς ἀλλήλους ἔχειν, τηνικαῦτα πᾶσι
δὴ λοιπὸν ἀνθρώποις καὶ τοῖς ἀνὰ τὴν οἰκουμένην
ἔθνεσιν ὡς ἂν προωφελημένοις καὶ ἤδη τυγ-
χάνουσιν ἐπιτηδείοις πρὸς παραδοχὴν τῆς τοῦ
πατρὸς γνώσεως, ὁ αὐτὸς δὴ πάλιν ἐκεῖνος ὁ τῶν
ἀρετῶν διδάσκαλος, ὁ ἐν πᾶσιν ἀγαθοῖς τοῦ
πατρὸς ὑπουργός, ὁ θεῖος καὶ οὐράνιος τοῦ θεοῦ
λόγος, δι' ἀνθρώπου κατὰ μηδὲν σώματος οὐσίᾳ
τὴν ἡμετέραν φύσιν διαλλάττοντος ἀρχομένης τῆς
Ῥωμαίων βασιλείας ἐπιφανείς, τοιαῦτα ἔδρασέν
τε καὶ πέπονθεν, οἷα ταῖς προφητείαις ἀκόλουθα
ἦν, ἄνθρωπον ὁμοῦ καὶ θεὸν ἐπιδημήσειν τῷ βίῳ

Digitized by Google

personally to one or two of the God-fearing men of old, as a saving power of God, yet in no other form than human, for they could not receive him otherwise.

But when the seeds of true religion had been strewn by them among a multitude of men, and a whole nation, sprung from the Hebrews, existed on earth, cleaving to true religion, he handed on to them, through the prophet Moses, images and symbols of a certain mysterious sabbath and of circumcision and instruction in other spiritual principles, but not unveiled initiation itself, for many of them had still been brought up in the old practices. Their Law became famous and spread among all men like a fragrant breeze. Beginning with them the minds of most of the heathen were softened by the law givers and philosophers who arose everywhere. Savage and unbridled brutality was changed to mildness, so that deep peace, friendship, and mutual intercourse obtained. Then, at last, when all men, even the heathen throughout the world, were now fitted for the benefits prepared for them beforehand, for the reception of knowledge of the Father, then again that same divine and heavenly Logos of God, the teacher of virtues, the minister of the Father in all good things, appeared at the beginning of the Roman Empire through man. In nothing did he change our nature as touching bodily substance; his acts and sufferings were such as were consistent with the prophecies which foretell that man and God shall live together to do marvellous

Digitized by Google

παραδόξων ἔργωι ποιητὴν καὶ τοῖς πᾶσιν ἔθνεσιν διδάσκαλον τῆς τοῦ πατρὸς εὐσεβείας ἀναδειχθήσεσθαι τό τε παράδοξον αὐτοῦ τῆς γενέσεως καὶ τὴν καινὴν διδασκαλίαν καὶ τῶν ἔργων τὰ θαύματα ἐπί τε τούτοις τοῦ θανάτου τὸν τρόπον τήν τε ἐκ νεκρῶν ἀνάστασιν καὶ ἐπὶ πᾶσιν τὴν εἰς οὐρανοὺς ἔνθεον ἀποκατάστασιν αὐτοῦ προκηρυττούσαις. τὴν γοῦν ἐπὶ τέλει βασιλείαν αὐτοῦ 24
Δανιὴλ ὁ προφήτης θείῳ πνεύματι συνορῶν, ὧδέ πῃ ἐθεοφορεῖτο, ἀνθρωπινώτερον τὴν θεοπτίαν
Dan. 7, 9. 10 ὑπογράφων· "ἐθεώρουν γὰρ" φησίν "ἕως οὗ θρόνοι ἐτέθησαν, καὶ παλαιὸς ἡμερῶν ἐκάθητο. καὶ τὸ ἔνδυμα αὐτοῦ ὡς εἰ χιὼν λευκόν, καὶ ἡ θρὶξ τῆς κεφαλῆς αὐτοῦ ὡς εἰ ἔριον καθαρόν· ὁ θρόνος αὐτοῦ φλὸξ πυρός, οἱ τροχοὶ αὐτοῦ πῦρ φλέγον· ποταμὸς πυρὸς εἵλκεν ἔμπροσθεν αὐτοῦ. χίλιαι χιλιάδες ἐλειτούργουν αὐτῷ, καὶ μύριαι μυριάδες παρειστήκεισαν ἔμπροσθεν αὐτοῦ. κριτήριον ἐκάθισεν, καὶ βίβλοι ἠνεῴχθησαν." καὶ ἑξῆς 25
Dan. 7, 13. 14 "ἐθεώρουν," φησίν "καὶ ἰδοὺ μετὰ τῶν νεφελῶν τοῦ οὐρανοῦ ὡς εἰ υἱὸς ἀνθρώπου ἐρχόμενος, καὶ ἕως τοῦ παλαιοῦ τῶν ἡμερῶν ἔφθασεν, καὶ ἐνώπιον αὐτοῦ προσηνέχθη· καὶ αὐτῷ ἐδόθη ἡ ἀρχὴ καὶ ἡ τιμὴ καὶ ἡ βασιλεία, καὶ πάντες οἱ λαοὶ φυλαὶ γλῶσσαι αὐτῷ δουλεύσουσιν. ἡ ἐξουσία αὐτοῦ ἐξουσία αἰώνιος, ἥτις οὐ παρελεύσεται· καὶ ἡ βασιλεία αὐτοῦ οὐ διαφθαρήσεται." ταῦτα δὲ 26
σαφῶς οὐδ' ἐφ' ἕτερον, ἀλλ' ἐπὶ τὸν ἡμέτερον
John 1, 1 σωτῆρα, τὸν ἐν ἀρχῇ πρὸς τὸν θεὸν θεὸν λόγον, ἀναφέροιτο ἄν, υἱὸν ἀνθρώπου διὰ τὴν ὑστάτην ἐνανθρώπησιν αὐτοῦ χρηματίζοντα. ἀλλὰ γὰρ ἐν 27
οἰκείοις ὑπομνήμασιν τὰς περὶ τοῦ σωτῆρος

Digitized by Google

deeds, and to teach to all Gentiles the worship of the Father, and that the marvel of his birth and his new teaching and the wonder of his deeds will be made manifest together with the manner of his death and resurrection from the dead, and, above all, his divine restoration to Heaven. Daniel the prophet, in a moment of inspiration, saw by the divine spirit his final sovereignty, and describes the vision of God in human wise: "For I beheld," he said, "until thrones were set and an Ancient of Days did sit. And his garment was white like snow and the hair of his head was like pure wool; his throne was a flame of fire, his wheels were flaming fire, a river of fire ran before him, thousand thousands ministered unto him and ten thousand times ten thousand stood before him, the judgement sat, and books were opened." And he goes on to say, "I beheld, and lo, one like to a son of man coming with the clouds of Heaven, and he came to the Ancient of Days and was brought before him. And to him was given the sovereignty and honour and kingdom, and all the people, tribes, and tongues shall serve him. His power is an everlasting power, which shall not pass away, and his kingdom shall not be destroyed." Clearly this would apply to none but our Saviour, the God-Logos who was in the beginning with God, called "son of man" because of his ultimate incarnation. However, since we have collected in special treatises the

Digitized by Google

ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ προφητικὰς ἐκλογὰς συναγαγόντες ἀποδεικτικώτερόν τε τὰ περὶ αὐτοῦ δηλούμενα ἐν ἑτέροις συστήσαντες, τοῖς εἰρημένοις ἐπὶ τοῦ παρόντος ἀρκεσθησόμεθα.

III. Ὅτι δὲ καὶ αὐτὸ τοὔνομα τοῦ τε Ἰησοῦ καὶ δὴ καὶ τοῦ Χριστοῦ παρ' αὐτοῖς τοῖς πάλαι θεοφιλέσιν προφήταις τετίμητο, ἤδη καιρὸς ἀποδεικνύναι. σεπτὸν ὡς ἔνι μάλιστα καὶ ἔνδοξον τὸ Χριστοῦ ὄνομα πρῶτος αὐτὸς γνωρίσας Μωυσῆς τύπους οὐρανίων καὶ σύμβολα μυστηριώδεις τε εἰκόνας ἀκολούθως χρησμῷ φήσαντι αὐτῷ "ὅρα, ποιήσεις πάντα κατὰ τὸν τύπον τὸν δειχθέντα σοι ἐν τῷ ὄρει" παραδούς, ἀρχιερέα θεοῦ, ὡς ἐνῆν μάλιστα δυνατὸν ἄνθρωπον, ἐπιφημίσας, τοῦτον Χριστὸν ἀναγορεύει, καὶ ταύτῃ γε τῇ κατὰ τὴν ἀρχιερωσύνην ἀξίᾳ, πᾶσαν ὑπερβαλλούσῃ παρ' αὐτῷ τὴν ἐν ἀνθρώποις προεδρίαν, ἐπὶ τιμῇ καὶ δόξῃ τὸ τοῦ Χριστοῦ περιτίθησιν ὄνομα· οὕτως ἄρα τὸν Χριστὸν θεῖόν τι χρῆμα ἠπίστατο. ὁ δ' αὐτὸς καὶ τὴν τοῦ Ἰησοῦ προσηγορίαν εὖ μάλα πνεύματι θείῳ προϊδὼν πάλιν τινὸς ἐξαιρέτου προνομίας καὶ ταύτην ἀξιοῖ. οὔποτε γοῦν πρότερον ἐκφωνηθὲν εἰς ἀνθρώπους, πρὶν ἢ Μωυσεῖ γνωσθῆναι, τὸ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ πρόσρημα τούτῳ Μωυσῆς πρώτῳ καὶ μόνῳ περιτίθησιν, ὃν κατὰ τύπον αὖθις καὶ σύμβολον ἔγνω μετὰ τὴν αὐτοῦ τελευτὴν διαδεξόμενον τὴν κατὰ πάντων ἀρχήν. οὐ πρότερον γοῦν τὸν αὐτοῦ διάδοχον, τῇ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ κεχρημένον προσηγορίᾳ, ὀνόματι δὲ ἑτέρῳ τῷ Αὐσῇ, ὅπερ οἱ γεννήσαντες αὐτῷ τέθεινται, καλούμενον, Ἰησοῦν αὐτὸς ἀναγορεύει, γέρας ὥσπερ τίμιον, παντὸς πολὺ μεῖζον βασιλικοῦ διαδήματος,

1 2 3 4

Heb. 8, 5 (Exod. 25, 40)

Lev. 4, 5. 16; 6, 22

Num. 13, 17

Digitized by Google

prophetic utterances concerning our Saviour Jesus Christ, and in others have given a fuller demonstration of our statements concerning him, we will rest content in the present work with what has now been said.

III. It is now time to demonstrate that the very names "Jesus," and especially "Christ," were held in honour by the ancient God-loving prophets themselves. Moses was himself the first to recognize how peculiarly august and glorious is the name of Christ, when he delivered the tradition of the types and symbols of heavenly things, and the mysterious images, in accordance with the oracle which said to him, "See thou shalt make all things according to the type which was shown thee in the mount"; for in describing the High Priest of God as a man of supreme power, he calls him Christ, and, as a mark of honour and glory, surrounds with the name of Christ this rank of the High Priesthood, which with him surpassed all pre-eminence among men. Thus then he knew the divine character of "Christ." He himself also was inspired very clearly to foresee the title "Jesus," and it again he endued with special privilege. Though before it was made known to Moses it had never been previously pronounced to men, Moses gave the title, Jesus, to him first, and to him alone, who, once more typically and symbolically, he knew would receive the rule over all after his death. His successor, at any rate, had not previously used the title "Jesus," but was called by another name, "Auses," which his parents had given him, and Moses calls him Jesus, as a precious privilege greater than any royal crown, giving to

Digitized by Google

τοὔνομα αὐτῷ δωρούμενος, ὅτι δὴ καὶ αὐτὸς ὁ τοῦ Ναυῆ Ἰησοῦς τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν τὴν εἰκόνα ἔφερεν, τοῦ μόνου μετὰ Μωυσέα καὶ τὸ συμπέρασμα τῆς δι' ἐκείνου παραδοθείσης συμβολικῆς λατρείας, τῆς ἀληθοῦς καὶ καθαρωτάτης εὐσεβείας τὴν ἀρχὴν διαδεξαμένου. καὶ Μωυσῆς μὲν ταύτῃ πῃ 5
δυσὶ τοῖς κατ' αὐτὸν ἀρετῇ καὶ δόξῃ παρὰ πάντα τὸν λαὸν προφέρουσιν ἀνθρώποις, τῷ μὲν ἀρχιερεῖ, τῷ δὲ μετ' αὐτὸν ἡγησομένῳ, τὴν τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ προσηγορίαν ἐπὶ τιμῇ τῇ μεγίστῃ περιτέθειται· σαφῶς δὲ καὶ οἱ μετὰ 6
ταῦτα προφῆται ὀνομαστὶ τὸν Χριστὸν προανεφώνουν, ὁμοῦ τὴν μέλλουσαν ἔσεσθαι κατ' αὐτοῦ συσκευὴν τοῦ Ἰουδαίων λαοῦ, ὁμοῦ δὲ καὶ τὴν τῶν ἐθνῶν δι' αὐτοῦ κλῆσιν προμαρτυρόμενοι,
Lam. 4, 20 τοτὲ μὲν ὧδέ πως Ἱερεμίας λέγων "πνεῦμα προσώπου ἡμῶν Χριστὸς κύριος συνελήφθη ἐν ταῖς διαφθοραῖς αὐτῶν, οὗ εἴπομεν 'ἐν τῇ σκιᾷ αὐτοῦ ζησόμεθα ἐν τοῖς ἔθνεσιν,'" τοτὲ δὲ ἀμηχανῶν
Ps. 2, 1. 2 Δαυὶδ διὰ τούτων "ἵνα τί ἐφρύαξαν ἔθνη καὶ λαοὶ ἐμελέτησαν κενά; παρέστησαν οἱ βασιλεῖς τῆς γῆς, καὶ οἱ ἄρχοντες συνήχθησαν ἐπὶ τὸ αὐτό, κατὰ τοῦ κυρίου καὶ κατὰ τοῦ Χριστοῦ αὐτοῦ"· οἷς ἐξῆς ἐπιλέγει ἐξ αὐτοῦ δὴ προσώπου τοῦ
Ps. 2, 7. 8 Χριστοῦ "κύριος εἶπεν πρός με 'υἱός μου εἶ σύ, ἐγὼ σήμερον γεγέννηκά σε. αἴτησαι παρ' ἐμοῦ, καὶ δώσω σοι ἔθνη τὴν κληρονομίαν σου, καὶ τὴν κατάσχεσίν σου τὰ πέρατα τῆς γῆς.'" οὐ μόνους 7
δὲ ἄρα τοὺς ἀρχιερωσύνῃ τετιμημένους, ἐλαίῳ σκευαστῷ τοῦ συμβόλου χριομένους ἕνεκα, τὸ τοῦ Χριστοῦ κατεκόσμει παρ' Ἑβραίοις ὄνομα, ἀλλὰ

[1] In the LXX. of Numb. xiii. 17 (which relates the chang-

Digitized by Google

him the name because Jesus the son of Nave[1] himself bore the image of our Saviour who alone, after Moses and the completion of the symbolic worship[2] delivered by Moses, did receive the rule of the true and pure religion. In this way Moses as a mark of the greatest honour surrounds with the name of our Saviour Jesus Christ the two men who in his day excelled all the people in virtue and glory —the High Priest and him who should rule after him. Clearly, too, did the later prophets foretell the Christ by name, giving their testimony beforehand alike to the future intrigue of the people of the Jews against him, and to the calling of the Gentiles through him. At one time Jeremiah says, "The spirit of our face, Christ the Lord was taken in their corruptions, and we said we will live in his shadow among the Gentiles." At another time David in perplexity says as follows, "Wherefore did the heathen rage, and the peoples imagine vain things? The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers were gathered together, against the Lord and against his Christ." In the following verses he goes on to speak in the person of Christ himself, "The Lord said to me, Thou art my son, to-day have I begotten thee. Ask of me and I will give thee the heathen for thine inheritance and the uttermost parts of the earth for thy possession." However it was not only those that were honoured with the High Priesthood, and anointed for the sake of the symbol with prepared oil, that were decorated among the Hebrews with the name "Christ"; but

ing of the name of Hoshea, son of Nun, to Joshua) the name Hoshea is spelt Auses, Joshua is spelt Jesus, and Nun is spelt Nave.

[2] *i.e.* the Jewish worship symbolized the future Christianity.

Digitized by Google

καὶ τοὺς βασιλέας, οὓς καὶ αὐτοὺς νεύματι θείῳ προφῆται χρίοντες εἰκονικούς τινας Χριστοὺς ἀπειργάζοντο, ὅτι δὴ καὶ αὐτοὶ τῆς τοῦ μόνου καὶ ἀληθοῦς Χριστοῦ, τοῦ κατὰ πάντων βασιλεύοντος θείου λόγου, βασιλικῆς καὶ ἀρχικῆς ἐξουσίας τοὺς τύπους δι' ἑαυτῶν ἔφερον. ἤδη δὲ 8
καὶ αὐτῶν τῶν προφητῶν τινὰς διὰ χρίσματος Χριστοὺς ἐν τύπῳ γεγονέναι παρειλήφαμεν, ὡς τούτους ἅπαντας τὴν ἐπὶ τὸν ἀληθῆ Χριστόν, τὸν ἔνθεον καὶ οὐράνιον λόγον, ἀναφορὰν ἔχειν, μόνον ἀρχιέρεα τῶν ὅλων καὶ μόνον ἁπάσης κτίσεως βασιλέα καὶ μόνον προφητῶν ἀρχιπροφήτην τοῦ πατρὸς τυγχάνοντα. τούτου δ' ἀπόδειξις τὸ μηδένα 9
πω τῶν πάλαι διὰ τοῦ συμβόλου κεχρισμένων, μήτε ἱερέων μήτε βασιλέων μήτε μὴν προφητῶν, τοσαύτην ἀρετῆς ἐνθέου δύναμιν κτήσασθαι, ὅσην ὁ σωτὴρ καὶ κύριος ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦς ὁ μόνος καὶ ἀληθινὸς Χριστὸς ἐπιδέδεικται. οὐδείς γέ τοι 10
ἐκείνων, καίπερ ἀξιώματι καὶ τιμῇ ἐπὶ πλείσταις ὅσαις γενεαῖς παρὰ τοῖς οἰκείοις διαλαμψάντων, τοὺς ὑπηκόους πώποτε ἐκ τῆς περὶ αὐτοὺς εἰκονικῆς τοῦ Χριστοῦ προσρήσεως Χριστιανοὺς ἐπεφήμισεν· ἀλλ' οὐδὲ σεβάσμιός τινι τούτων πρὸς τῶν ὑπηκόων ὑπῆρξε τιμή· ἀλλ' οὐδὲ μετὰ τὴν τελευτὴν τοσαύτη διάθεσις, ὡς καὶ ὑπεραποθνήσκειν ἑτοίμως ἔχειν τοῦ τιμωμένου· ἀλλ' οὐδὲ πάντων τῶν ἀνὰ τὴν οἰκουμένην ἐθνῶν περί τινα τῶν τότε τοσαύτη γέγονε κίνησις, ἐπεὶ μηδὲ τοσοῦτον ἐν ἐκείνοις ἡ τοῦ συμβόλου δύναμις οἵα τε ἦν ἐνεργεῖν, ὅσον ἡ τῆς ἀληθείας παράστασις διὰ τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν ἐνδεικνυμένη· ὃς οὔτε 11
σύμβολα καὶ τύπους ἀρχιερωσύνης παρά του λαβών,

Digitized by Google

also the kings, for they also, at the bidding of God, were made Christs in a certain symbolism by the prophets who anointed them, inasmuch as they also bore in themselves the types of the royal and sovereign power of the only true Christ, the divine Logos who reigns over all. We have also received the tradition that some of the prophets themselves had by anointing already become Christs in type, seeing that they all refer to the true Christ, the divine and heavenly Logos, of the world the only High Priest, of all creation the only king, of the prophets the only archprophet of the Father. The proof of this is that no one of those symbolically anointed of old, whether priests or kings or prophets, obtained such power of divine virtue as our Saviour and Lord, Jesus, the only real Christ, has exhibited. None indeed of them, though renowned in rank and honour for so many generations among their own people, ever gave the name of Christian to their subjects from the symbolical application to themselves of the name of Christ. The honour of worship was not paid to any of them by their subjects, nor did they hold them in such affection after their death as to be ready to die for him whom they honoured. For none of the men of those days was there such disturbance of all the nations throughout all the world, since the power of the symbol was incapable of producing such an effect among them as the presence of the reality manifested by our Saviour; for he received from none the symbol and types of the High Priesthood, nor did he trace his

Digitized by Google

ἀλλ' οὐδὲ γένος τὸ περὶ σῶμα ἐξ ἱερωμένων
κατάγων, οὐδ' ἀνδρῶν δορυφορίαις ἐπὶ βασιλείαν
προαχθεὶς οὐδὲ μὴν προφήτης ὁμοίως τοῖς πάλαι
γενόμενος, οὐδ' ἀξίας ὅλως ἤ τινος παρὰ Ἰουδαίοις
τυχὼν προεδρίας, ὅμως τοῖς πᾶσιν, εἰ καὶ μὴ
τοῖς συμβόλοις, ἀλλ' αὐτῇ γε τῇ ἀληθείᾳ παρὰ
τοῦ πατρὸς κεκόσμητο, οὐχ ὁμοίων δ' οὖν οἷς 12
προειρήκαμεν, τυχών, πάντων ἐκείνων καὶ Χριστὸς
μᾶλλον ἀνηγόρευται, καὶ ὡς ἂν μόνος καὶ ἀληθὴς
αὐτὸς ὢν ὁ Χριστὸς τοῦ θεοῦ, Χριστιανῶν τὸν
πάντα κόσμον, τῆς ὄντως σεμνῆς καὶ ἱερᾶς αὐτοῦ
προσηγορίας, κατέπλησεν, οὐκέτι τύπους οὐδὲ
εἰκόνας, ἀλλ' αὐτὰς γυμνὰς ἀρετὰς καὶ βίον
οὐράνιον αὐτοῖς ἀληθείας δόγμασιν τοῖς θιασώταις
παραδούς, τό τε χρῖσμα, οὐ τὸ διὰ σωμάτων 13
σκευαστόν, ἀλλ' αὐτὸ δὴ πνεύματι θείῳ τὸ θεο-
πρεπές, μετοχῇ τῆς ἀγεννήτου καὶ πατρικῆς θεότητος
ἀπειλήφει· ὃ καὶ αὐτὸ πάλιν Ἡσαΐας διδάσκει,
ὡς ἂν ἐξ αὐτοῦ ὧδέ πως ἀναβοῶν τοῦ Χριστοῦ
Luke 4, 18. 19 Is. (61, 1) "πνεῦμα κυρίου ἐπ' ἐμέ, οὗ εἵνεκεν ἔχρισέν με·
εὐαγγελίσασθαι πτωχοῖς ἀπέσταλκέν με, κηρῦξαι
αἰχμαλώτοις ἄφεσιν καὶ τυφλοῖς ἀνάβλεψιν." καὶ 14
οὐ μόνος γε Ἡσαΐας, ἀλλὰ καὶ Δαυὶδ εἰς τὸ αὐτοῦ
Ps. 44, 7. 8 πρόσωπον ἀναφωνεῖ λέγων "ὁ θρόνος σου, ὁ θεός,
εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα τοῦ αἰῶνος· ῥάβδος εὐθύτητος ἡ
ῥάβδος τῆς βασιλείας σου. ἠγάπησας δικαιοσύνην
καὶ ἐμίσησας ἀνομίαν· διὰ τοῦτο ἔχρισέν σε ὁ
θεός, ὁ θεός σου ἔλαιον ἀγαλλιάσεως παρὰ τοὺς
μετόχους σου"· ἐν οἷς ὁ λόγος ἐν μὲν τῷ πρώτῳ
στίχῳ θεὸν αὐτὸν ἐπιφημίζει, ἐν δὲ τῷ δευτέρῳ
σκήπτρῳ βασιλικῷ τιμᾷ, εἶθ' ἑξῆς ὑποβὰς μετὰ 15

Digitized by Google

physical descent from the race of priests, nor was he promoted to a kingdom by the armed force of men, nor did he become a prophet in the same way as those of old, nor did he hold any rank at all or precedence among the Jews, yet with all these he had been adorned, not in symbols, but in actual reality by the Father. Though he did not obtain the honours of which we have spoken before, he is called Christ more than any of them, and inasmuch as he is himself the only true Christ of God, he filled the whole world with Christians—his truly reverend and sacred name. He no longer gave to his initiates types or images but the uncovered virtues themselves and the heavenly life, in the actual doctrines of truth, and he has received the chrism, not that which is prepared materially [1] but the divine anointing itself with the spirit of God, by sharing in the unbegotten divinity of the Father. Again, Isaiah teaches this very point, for in one place he exclaims as if from Christ himself, "The spirit of the Lord was upon me, wherefore he anointed me: he sent me to preach the gospel to the poor, to announce release to prisoners, and sight to the blind." [2] And not only Isaiah but also David speaks with reference to him and says, "Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever, a rod of uprightness is the rod of thy kingdom. Thou didst love righteousness and didst hate iniquity. For this cause God, even thy God, anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows." In this the text calls him God in the first verse, and in the second honours him with the royal sceptre, and then goes on, after royal and

[1] Or, if ἀρωμάτων be read, "with spices."

[2] The punctuation of this passage is based on Eusebius's *Ecl. Proph.* 229. 13.

Digitized by Google

τὴν ἔνθεον καὶ βασιλικὴν δύναμιν τρίτῃ τάξει Χριστὸν αὐτὸν γεγονότα, ἐλαίῳ οὐ τῷ ἐξ ὕλης σωμάτων, ἀλλὰ τῷ ἐνθέῳ τῆς ἀγαλλιάσεως ἠλειμμένον, παρίστησιν· παρ' ὃ καὶ τὸ ἐξαίρετον αὐτοῦ καὶ πολὺ κρεῖττον καὶ διάφορον τῶν πάλαι διὰ τῶν εἰκόνων σωματικώτερον κεχρισμένων ὑποσημαίνει. καὶ ἀλλαχοῦ δὲ ὁ αὐτὸς ὧδέ πως 16
Ps. 109, 1 τὰ περὶ αὐτοῦ δηλοῖ λέγων "εἶπεν ὁ κύριος τῷ κυρίῳ μου· 'κάθου ἐκ δεξιῶν μου, ἕως ἂν θῶ τοὺς
Ps. 109, 3, 4 Heb. 7, 11–25 ἐχθρούς σου ὑποπόδιον τῶν ποδῶν σου,'" καὶ "ἐκ γαστρὸς πρὸ ἑωσφόρου ἐγέννησά σε. ὤμοσεν κύριος καὶ οὐ μεταμεληθήσεται· σὺ εἶ ἱερεὺς εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα κατὰ τὴν τάξιν Μελχισεδέκ." οὗτος δὲ εἰσ- 17
ἄγεται ἐν τοῖς ἱεροῖς λόγοις ὁ Μελχισεδὲκ ἱερεὺς τοῦ θεοῦ τοῦ ὑψίστου, οὐκ ἐν σκευαστῷ τινι χρίσματι ἀναδεδειγμένος, ἀλλ' οὐδὲ διαδοχῇ γένους προσήκων τῇ καθ' Ἑβραίους ἱερωσύνῃ· δι' ὃ κατὰ τὴν αὐτοῦ τάξιν, ἀλλ' οὐ κατὰ τὴν τῶν ἄλλων σύμβολα καὶ τύπους ἀνειληφότων Χριστὸς καὶ ἱερεὺς μεθ' ὅρκου παραλήψεως ὁ σωτὴρ ἡμῶν ἀνηγόρευται· ὅθεν οὐδὲ σωματικῶς παρὰ Ἰου- 18
δαίοις χρισθέντα αὐτὸν ἡ ἱστορία παραδίδωσιν, ἀλλ' οὐδ' ἐκ φυλῆς τῶν ἱερωμένων γενόμενον, ἐξ αὐτοῦ δὲ θεοῦ πρὸ ἑωσφόρου μέν, τοῦτ' ἐστὶν πρὸ τῆς τοῦ κόσμου συστάσεως, οὐσιωμένον, ἀθάνατον δὲ καὶ ἀγήρω τὴν ἱερωσύνην εἰς τὸν ἄπειρον αἰῶνα διακατέχοντα. τῆς δ' εἰς αὐτὸν 19
γενομένης ἀσωμάτου καὶ ἐνθέου χρίσεως μέγα καὶ ἐναργὲς τεκμήριον τὸ μόνον αὐτὸν ἐξ ἁπάντων τῶν πώποτε εἰς ἔτι καὶ νῦν παρὰ πᾶσιν ἀνθρώποις

[1] Eusebius means that this is the significance of "above thy fellows."

Digitized by Google

divine power, to present him in the third place as having become Christ, anointed not with oil made of material substances but with the divine "oil of gladness." And in addition to this he indicates his peculiar distinction and superiority to those who in the past had been more materially anointed as types.[1] And in another place too the same David explains his position as follows: "The Lord said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, until I make thine enemies the footstool of thy feet." And, "Before the day-star I begat thee from the womb. The Lord sware and will not repent, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedek." Now this Melchisedek is introduced in the sacred books as priest of the most high God, without having been so marked out by any material unction, or even as belonging by racial descent to the priesthood of the Hebrews. For this reason our Saviour has been called Christ and priest, on the authority of an oath, according to his order and not according to that of the others who received symbols and types. For this reason, too, the narrative does not relate that he was anointed physically by the Jews or even that he was of the tribe of those who hold the priesthood, but that he received his being from God himself before the day-star, that is to say, before the construction of the world, and holds his priesthood to boundless eternity, ageless and immortal. A weighty and clear proof of the immaterial[2] and divine anointing effected on him is that he alone, out of all who have ever yet been

[2] Gk. ἀσώματος. The use of this word as a technical term meaning "immaterial" has a long history, but it was popularized in Christian metaphysics, especially by Origen.

Digitized by Google

καθ' ὅλου τοῦ κόσμου Χριστὸν ἐπιφημίζεσθαι ὁμολογεῖσθαί τε καὶ μαρτυρεῖσθαι πρὸς ἁπάντων ἐπὶ τῇ προσηγορίᾳ παρά τε Ἕλλησι καὶ βαρβάροις μνημονεύεσθαι, καὶ εἰς ἔτι νῦν παρὰ τοῖς ἀνὰ τὴν οἰκουμένην αὐτοῦ θιασώταις τιμᾶσθαι μὲν ὡς βασιλέα, θαυμάζεσθαι δὲ ὑπὲρ προφήτην, δοξάζεσθαί τε ὡς ἀληθῆ καὶ μόνον θεοῦ ἀρχιερέα, καὶ ἐπὶ πᾶσι τούτοις, οἷα θεοῦ λόγον προόντα καὶ πρὸ αἰώνων ἁπάντων οὐσιωμένον τήν τε σεβάσμιον τιμὴν παρὰ τοῦ πατρὸς ὑπειληφότα, καὶ προσκυνεῖσθαι ὡς θεόν· τό γε μὴν πάντων παραδοξότατον, 20
ὅτι μὴ φωναῖς αὐτὸ μόνον καὶ ῥημάτων ψόφοις αὐτὸν γεραίρομεν οἱ καθωσιωμένοι αὐτῷ, ἀλλὰ καὶ πάσῃ διαθέσει ψυχῆς, ὡς καὶ αὐτῆς προτιμᾶν τῆς ἑαυτῶν ζωῆς τὴν εἰς αὐτὸν μαρτυρίαν.

IV. Ταῦτα μὲν οὖν ἀναγκαίως πρὸ τῆς ἱστορίας 1
ἐνταῦθά μοι κείσθω, ὡς ἂν μὴ νεώτερόν τις εἶναι νομίσειεν τὸν σωτῆρα καὶ κύριον ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦν τὸν Χριστὸν διὰ τοὺς τῆς ἐνσάρκου πολιτείας αὐτοῦ χρόνους. ἵνα δὲ μηδὲ τὴν διδασκαλίαν αὐτοῦ νέαν εἶναι καὶ ξένην, ὡς ἂν ὑπὸ νέου καὶ μηδὲν τοὺς λοιποὺς διαφέροντος ἀνθρώπους συστᾶσαν, ὑπονοήσειέν τις, φέρε, βραχέα καὶ περὶ τούτου διαλάβωμεν. τῆς 2
μὲν γὰρ τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ παρουσίας νεωστὶ πᾶσιν ἀνθρώποις ἐπιλαμψάσης, νέον ὁμολογουμένως ἔθνος, οὐ μικρὸν οὐδ' ἀσθενὲς οὐδ' ἐπὶ γωνίας ποι γῆς ἱδρυμένον, ἀλλὰ καὶ πάντων τῶν ἐθνῶν πολυανθρωπότατόν τε καὶ θεοσεβέστατον ταύτῃ τε ἀνώλεθρον καὶ ἀήττητον, ᾗ καὶ εἰς ἀεὶ τῆς παρὰ θεοῦ βοηθείας τυγχάνει, χρόνων προθεσμίαις ἀῤῥήτοις ἀθρόως οὕτως ἀναπέφηνεν, τὸ παρὰ τοῖς πᾶσι τῇ τοῦ Χριστοῦ

Digitized by Google

until now, is called Christ among all men throughout the whole world; that under this title he is confessed and borne witness to by all, and is mentioned thus by Jews, Greeks, and barbarians; that until this present day he is honoured by his worshippers throughout the world as king, wondered at more than a prophet, and glorified as the true and only High Priest of God, and, above all, as the Logos of God, pre-existent, having his being before all ages, and having received the right of reverence from the Father, and that he is worshipped as God. Strangest of all, we, who have been consecrated to him, honour him not only with our voices and with the sound of words, but with the whole disposition of our soul, so as to value testimony to him more than our very life itself.

IV. Let these observations suffice me, as needed before beginning the history, that no one might think of our Saviour and Lord, Jesus Christ, as a novelty because of the date of his ministry in the flesh. But that no one may suppose that his teaching either was new and strange, inasmuch as it was put together by a youth no better than the rest of men, come, let us discuss this point briefly. For when the advent of our Saviour, Jesus Christ, recently shone forth on all men, it was confessedly a new race which has thus appeared in such numbers, in accordance with the ineffable prophecies of the date, and is honoured by all by the name of Christ, but it is not little nor weak, nor founded in some obscure corner of the earth, but the most populous of all nations, and most pious towards God, alike innocent and invincible in that it ever finds help from God.

Digitized by Google

προσηγορίᾳ τετιμημένον. τοῦτο καὶ προφητῶν 3
κατεπλάγη τις, θείου πνεύματος ὀφθαλμῷ τὸ
μέλλον ἔσεσθαι προθεωρήσας, ὡς καὶ τάδε ἀνα-
Is. 66, 8 φθέγξασθαι "τίς ἤκουσεν τοιαῦτα, καὶ τις ἐλάλησεν
οὕτως; εἰ ὤδινεν γῆ ἐν μιᾷ ἡμέρᾳ, καὶ εἰ ἐτέχθη
ἔθνος εἰς ἅπαξ." ὑποσημαίνει δέ πως καὶ τὴν
Is. 65, 15. 16 μέλλουσαν ὁ αὐτὸς προσηγορίαν, λέγων "τοῖς
δὲ δουλεύουσίν μοι κληθήσεται ὄνομα καινόν, ὃ
εὐλογηθήσεται ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς." ἀλλ' εἰ καὶ νέοι 4
σαφῶς ἡμεῖς καὶ τοῦτο καινὸν ὄντως ὄνομα τὸ
Χριστιανῶν ἀρτίως παρὰ πᾶσιν ἔθνεσιν γνωρίζεται,
ὁ βίος δ' οὖν ὅμως καὶ τῆς ἀγωγῆς ὁ τρόπος
αὐτοῖς εὐσεβείας δόγμασιν ὅτι μὴ ἔναγχος ὑφ'
ἡμῶν ἐπιπέπλασται, ἐκ πρώτης δ' ὡς εἰπεῖν ἀν-
θρωπογονίας φυσικαῖς ἐννοίαις τῶν πάλαι θεο-
φιλῶν ἀνδρῶν κατωρθοῦτο, ὧδέ πως ἐπιδείξομεν.
οὐ νέον, ἀλλὰ καὶ παρὰ πᾶσιν ἀνθρώποις ἀρχαιότητι 5
τετιμημένον ἔθνος, τοῖς πᾶσι καὶ αὐτὸ γνώριμον,
τὸ Ἑβραίων τυγχάνει. λόγοι δὴ παρὰ τούτῳ
καὶ γράμματα παλαιοὺς ἄνδρας περιέχουσιν,
σπανίους μὲν καὶ ἀριθμῷ βραχεῖς, ἀλλ' ὅμως
εὐσεβείᾳ καὶ δικαιοσύνῃ καὶ πάσῃ τῇ λοιπῇ
διενεγκόντας ἀρετῇ, πρὸ μέν γε τοῦ κατακλυσμοῦ
διαφόρους, μετὰ δὲ καὶ τοῦτον ἑτέρους, τῶν τε
τοῦ Νῶε παίδων καὶ ἀπογόνων ἀτὰρ καὶ τὸν
Ἀβραάμ, ὃν ἀρχηγὸν καὶ προπάτορα σφῶν αὐτῶν
παῖδες Ἑβραίων αὐχοῦσι. πάντας δὴ ἐκείνους 6
ἐπὶ δικαιοσύνῃ μεμαρτυρημένους, ἐξ αὐτοῦ Ἀβραὰμ
ἐπὶ τὸν πρῶτον ἀνιοῦσιν ἄνθρωπον, ἔργῳ Χρι-

Digitized by Google

It was at this that one of the prophets was amazed when, by the eye of the divine spirit, he foresaw the future which was to be, so that he exclaimed, "Who heard these things and who spoke thus? Did the earth travail in one day, and was a nation born at once?" And the same writer also indicates in one place its future title, saying, "And a new name shall be called on those who serve me, which shall be blessed on the earth." But even if we are clearly new, and this really fresh name of Christians is recently known among all nations, nevertheless our life and method of conduct, in accordance with the precepts of religion, has not been recently invented by us, but from the first creation of man, so to speak, has been upheld by the natural concepts of the men of old who were the friends of God, as we will here demonstrate. The race of the Hebrews is not new but is honoured among all men for its antiquity and is itself well known to all. Now, stories and documents belonging to it concern ancient men, few and scarce in number, yet remarkable for piety and righteousness and for all other virtues. Divers of them, indeed, were before the flood, and after it were others, and, (to say nothing of the children and descendants of Noah), especially Abraham, whom the children of the Hebrews boast as their own originator and ancestor. If the line be traced back from Abraham to the first man, anyone who should describe those who have obtained a good testimony for righteousness, as Christians in fact,

Digitized by Google

στιανούς, εἰ καὶ μὴ ὀνόματι, προσειπών τις οὐκ ἂν ἐκτὸς βάλοι τῆς ἀληθείας. ὃ γάρ τοι δηλοῦν 7
ἐθέλοι τοὔνομα, τὸν Χριστιανὸν ἄνδρα διὰ τῆς τοῦ
Χριστοῦ γνώσεως καὶ διδασκαλίας σωφροσύνῃ
καὶ δικαιοσύνῃ καρτερίᾳ τε βίου καὶ ἀρετῆς
ἀνδρείᾳ εὐσεβείας τε ὁμολογίᾳ ἑνὸς καὶ μόνου
τοῦ ἐπὶ πάντων θεοῦ διαπρέπειν, τοῦτο πᾶν ἐκείνοις
οὐ χεῖρον ἡμῶν ἐσπουδάζετο. οὔτ' οὖν σώματος 8
αὐτοῖς περιτομῆς ἔμελεν, ὅτι μηδὲ ἡμῖν, οὐ
σαββάτων ἐπιτηρήσεως, ὅτι μηδὲ ἡμῖν, ἀλλ' οὐδὲ
τῶν τοιῶνδε τροφῶν παραφυλακῆς οὐδὲ τῶν
ἄλλων διαστολῆς, ὅσα τοῖς μετέπειτα πρῶτος
ἁπάντων Μωυσῆς ἀρξάμενος ἐν συμβόλοις τελεῖσθαι
παραδέδωκεν, ὅτι μηδὲ νῦν Χριστιανῶν τὰ τοιαῦτα·
ἀλλὰ καὶ σαφῶς αὐτὸν ᾔδεσαν τὸν Χριστὸν τοῦ
Gen. 18, 1. 26, 2. 35, 1 θεοῦ, εἴ γε ὤφθαι μὲν τῷ Ἀβραάμ, χρηματίσαι
δὲ τῷ Ἰσαάκ, λελαληκέναι δὲ τῷ Ἰσραήλ, Μωυσεῖ
τε καὶ τοῖς μετὰ ταῦτα προφήταις ὡμιληκέναι
προδέδεικται· ἔνθεν αὐτοὺς δὴ τοὺς θεοφιλεῖς 9
ἐκείνους εὕροις ἂν καὶ τῆς τοῦ Χριστοῦ κατ-
ηξιωμένους ἐπωνυμίας, κατὰ τὴν φάσκουσαν περὶ
Ps. 104, 15 αὐτῶν φωνήν " μὴ ἅψησθε τῶν Χριστῶν μου,
καὶ ἐν τοῖς προφήταις μου μὴ πονηρεύεσθε ". 10
ὥστε σαφῶς πρώτην ἡγεῖσθαι δεῖν καὶ πάντων
παλαιοτάτην τε καὶ ἀρχαιοτάτην θεοσεβείας εὕρεσιν
αὐτῶν ἐκείνων τῶν ἀμφὶ τὸν Ἀβραὰμ θεοφιλῶν
ἀνδρῶν τὴν ἀρτίως διὰ τῆς τοῦ Χριστοῦ διδα-
σκαλίας πᾶσιν ἔθνεσιν κατηγγελμένην. εἰ δὲ δὴ 11
μακρῷ ποθ' ὕστερον περιτομῆς φασι τὸν Ἀβραὰμ
ἐντολὴν εἰληφέναι, ἀλλὰ πρό γε ταύτης δικαιοσύνην
διὰ πίστεως μαρτυρηθεὶς ἀνείρηται, ὧδέ πως τοῦ
Gen. 15, 6 θείου φάσκοντος λόγου " ἐπίστευσεν δὲ Ἀβραὰμ

Digitized by Google

if not in name, would not shoot wide of the truth. For the name signifies that through the knowledge of Christ and his teaching the Christian man excels in sobriety and righteousness, in control of life and courageous virtue, and in the confession that God over all is but one; and for zeal in all this they were not inferior to us. They had no care for bodily circumcision any more than we, nor for the keeping of Sabbaths any more than we, nor for abstinence [1] from certain foods nor the distinction between others (such as Moses afterwards first began to hand down to their successors) nor for symbolic ceremony any more than Christians care for such things now, but they clearly knew him as the Christ of God, seeing that it has already been demonstrated that he appeared to Abraham, addressed Isaac, spoke to Israel, and conversed with Moses and the later prophets. Whence you would find that those God-loving men obtained even the name of Christ according to the word spoken concerning them, "Touch not my Christs and act not wickedly among my prophets." So that it must clearly be held that the announcement to all the Gentiles, recently made through the teaching of Christ, is the very first and most ancient and antique discovery of true religion by Abraham and those lovers of God who followed him. And even if they say that Abraham received the command of circumcision long afterwards, it has been related that, before this command, he received a good testimony for righteousness through faith, as the divine word says, "And Abraham be-

[1] Literally "observation," *i.e.* in order to avoid.

Digitized by Google

Rom. 4, 3 τῷ θεῷ, καὶ ἐλογίσθη αὐτῷ εἰς δικαιοσύνην." καὶ 12
δὴ τοιούτῳ πρὸ τῆς περιτομῆς γεγονότι χρησμὸς
ὑπὸ τοῦ φήναντος ἑαυτὸν αὐτῷ θεοῦ (οὗτος δ'
ἦν αὐτὸς ὁ Χριστός, ὁ τοῦ θεοῦ λόγος) περὶ τῶν
ἐν τοῖς μετέπειτα χρόνοις τὸν ὅμοιον αὐτῷ δι-
καιοῦσθαι τρόπον μελλόντων ῥήμασιν αὐτοῖς προ-
Gen. 12, 3 επήγγελται λέγων " καὶ ἐνευλογηθήσονται ἐν σοὶ
Gen. 18, 18 πᾶσαι αἱ φυλαὶ τῆς γῆς," καὶ ὡς ὅτι " ἔσται εἰς
ἔθνος μέγα καὶ πολύ, καὶ ἐνευλογηθήσονται ἐν
αὐτῷ πάντα τὰ ἔθνη τῆς γῆς." τούτῳ δὲ καὶ 13
ἐπιστῆσαι εἰς ἡμᾶς ἐκπεπληρωμένῳ πάρεστιν.
πίστει μὲν γὰρ ἐκεῖνος τῇ εἰς τὸν ὀφθέντα αὐτῷ
τοῦ θεοῦ λόγον τὸν Χριστὸν δεδικαίωτο, πατρῴας
Gen. 12, 1 μὲν ἀποστὰς δεισιδαιμονίας καὶ πλάνης βίου
προτέρας, ἕνα δὲ τὸν ἐπὶ πάντων ὁμολογήσας θεὸν
καὶ τοῦτον ἔργοις ἀρετῆς οὐχὶ δὲ θρησκείᾳ νόμου
τοῦ μετὰ ταῦτα Μωυσέως θεραπεύσας, τοιούτῳ τε
ὄντι εἴρητο ὅτι δὴ πᾶσαι αἱ φυλαὶ τῆς γῆς καὶ
πάντα τὰ ἔθνη ἐν αὐτῷ εὐλογηθήσεται· ἔργοις 14
δὲ λόγων ἐναργεστέροις ἐπὶ τοῦ παρόντος παρὰ
μόνοις Χριστιανοῖς καθ' ὅλης τῆς οἰκουμένης ἀσκού-
μενος αὐτὸς ἐκεῖνος ὁ τῆς θεοσεβείας τοῦ Ἀβραὰμ
ἀναπέφηνε τρόπος. τί δὴ οὖν λοιπὸν ἐμποδὼν 15
ἂν εἴη, μὴ οὐχὶ ἕνα καὶ τὸν αὐτὸν βίον τε καὶ
τρόπον εὐσεβείας ἡμῖν τε τοῖς ἀπὸ Χριστοῦ καὶ
τοῖς πρόπαλαι θεοφιλέσιν ὁμολογεῖν; ὥστε μὴ νέαν
καὶ ξένην, ἀλλ' εἰ δεῖ φάναι ἀληθεύοντα, πρώτην
ὑπάρχειν καὶ μόνην καὶ ἀληθῆ κατόρθωσιν εὐσεβείας
τὴν διὰ τῆς τοῦ Χριστοῦ διδασκαλίας παραδοθεῖσαν
ἡμῖν ἀποδείκνυσθαι. καὶ ταῦτα μὲν ὧδε ἐχέτω.

[1] As usual, it is impossible to represent in English the fact that in Christian Greek the same word means " nations "

Digitized by Google

lieved God and it was reckoned to him for righteousness." And to him, just as he was, before circumcision, was the oracle given by the God who showed himself to him (and this was the Christ himself, the word of God), concerning those who in time to come would be justified in the same manner as himself, in the following promise, " And in thee shall all the tribes of the earth be blessed," and, " It shall be a great and numerous nation, and all the nations of the earth shall be blessed in it." Now this is obviously intelligible as fulfilled in us; for it was by faith towards the Logos of God, the Christ who had appeared to him, that he was justified, and gave up the superstition of his fathers, and his former erroneous life, and confessed the God who is over all to be one; and him he served by virtuous deeds, not by the worship of the law of Moses, who came later. To him, just as he was then, was it said that all the tribes of the earth and all the nations [1] will be blessed in him; and more clearly than any words do facts show that at the present moment it is only among Christians throughout the whole world that the manner of religion which was Abraham's can actually be found in practice. What objection then can there be to admitting that the life and pious conduct of us, who belong to Christ, and of the God-loving men of old is one and the same? Thus we have demonstrated that the practice of piety handed down by the teaching of Christ is not new or strange, but, if one must speak truthfully, is primitive, unique, and true. And let this suffice.

or " heathen." The Church took over from Hellenistic Judaism the usage of calling itself " the people " (ὁ λαός) as distinguished from " the nations " (τὰ ἔθνη).

Digitized by Google

V. Φέρε δὲ ἤδη, μετὰ τὴν δέουσαν προκατασκευὴν 1
τῆς προτεθείσης ἡμῖν ἐκκλησιαστικῆς ἱστορίας ἤδη
λοιπὸν ἀπὸ τῆς ἐνσάρκου τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν
ἐπιφανείας οἷά τινος ὁδοιπορίας ἐφαψώμεθα, τὸν
τοῦ λόγου πατέρα θεὸν καὶ τὸν δηλούμενον αὐτὸν
Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν τὸν σωτῆρα καὶ κύριον ἡμῶν, τὸν
οὐράνιον τοῦ θεοῦ λόγον, βοηθὸν ἡμῖν καὶ συνεργὸν
τῆς κατὰ τὴν διήγησιν ἀληθείας ἐπικαλεσάμενοι.
ἦν δὴ οὖν τοῦτο δεύτερον καὶ τεσσαρακοστὸν ἔτος 2
τῆς Αὐγούστου βασιλείας, Αἰγύπτου δ' ὑποταγῆς
καὶ τελευτῆς Ἀντωνίου καὶ Κλεοπάτρας, εἰς ἣν
ὑστάτην ἡ κατ' Αἴγυπτον τῶν Πτολεμαίων κατέ-
ληξε δυναστεία, ὄγδοον ἔτος καὶ εἰκοστόν, ὁπηνίκα
Luke 2, 2 ὁ σωτὴρ καὶ κύριος ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦς ὁ Χριστὸς ἐπὶ
τῆς τότε πρώτης ἀπογραφῆς, ἡγεμονεύοντος
Κυρινίου τῆς Συρίας, ἀκολούθως ταῖς περὶ αὐτοῦ
Mich. 5, 2 προφητείαις ἐν Βηθλεὲμ γεννᾶται τῆς Ἰουδαίας.
ταύτης δὲ τῆς κατὰ Κυρίνιον ἀπογραφῆς καὶ ὁ 3
τῶν παρ' Ἑβραίοις ἐπισημότατος ἱστορικῶν Φλα-
ούιος Ἰώσηπος μνημονεύει, καὶ ἄλλην ἐπισυνάπτων
ἱστορίαν περὶ τῆς τῶν Γαλιλαίων κατὰ τοὺς
αὐτοὺς ἐπιφυείσης χρόνους αἱρέσεως, ἧς καὶ παρ'
ἡμῖν ὁ Λουκᾶς ἐν ταῖς Πράξεσιν μνήμην ὧδέ πως
Acts 5, 37 λέγων πεποίηται "μετὰ τοῦτον ἀνέστη Ἰούδας

---

[1] That is, 1 B.C., the next year being the *annus Domini*. The same date is given by Clement of Alexandria, *Strom.* 1, but Irenaeus and Tertullian place the nativity one year earlier. Neither date can be reconciled with the statement of Matthew ii. 1 that Jesus was born in the reign of Herod the Great, who died in 4 B.C.

[2] Eusebius assumes that the census mentioned by Josephus, which led to a revolt, is the same as that referred to in Luke and in Acts. If he be right Luke and Matthew

Digitized by Google

V. So then, after the necessary preliminaries to the history of the Church proposed by us, let us begin, as if starting a journey, with the appearance of our Saviour in the flesh, after invoking God, the Father of the Logos, and Jesus Christ himself, our Saviour and Lord, the heavenly Logos of God, to give us help and assistance to truth in the narrative. It was, then, the forty-second year of the reign of Augustus,[1] and the twenty-eighth year after the submission of Egypt and the death of Antony and Cleopatra (and with her the Egyptian dynasty of the Ptolemies came to an end), when our Saviour and Lord Jesus Christ, in accordance with the prophecies concerning him, was born in Bethlehem of Judaea at the time of the census which then first took place, while Quirinius was Governor of Syria. This census in the time of Quirinius,[2] Flavius Josephus, the most famous of the historians among the Hebrews, also mentions, and joins to the narrative another concerning the sect of the Galileans which arose at the same time. Our own Luke has also mentioned this in one place in the Acts, saying "After this man arose Judas the Galilean, in the

cannot be reconciled, for the census of Quirinius referred to by Josephus and also in Acts v. 37 was in A.D. 6. Sir W. M. Ramsay thinks that there may have been an earlier census in the reign of Herod during a former governorship of Quirinius in Syria, which did not then include the domain of Herod. There is good evidence for the former governorship of Quirinius, but none for a census in Judaea during his governorship by (or for) Herod. See Eusebius, *Ecl. proph.* 158 ff.

Digitized by Google

ὁ Γαλιλαῖος ἐν ταῖς ἡμέραις τῆς ἀπογραφῆς, καὶ ἀπέστησε λαὸν ὀπίσω αὐτοῦ· κἀκεῖνος ἀπώλετο, καὶ πάντες ὅσοι ἐπείσθησαν αὐτῷ, διεσκορπίσθησαν." τούτοις δ' οὖν καὶ ὁ δεδηλωμένος ἐν 4
ὀκτωκαιδεκάτῳ τῆς Ἀρχαιολογίας συνάδων ταῦτα
Joseph. *A.I.* 18, 1 παρατίθεται κατὰ λέξιν· "Κυρίνιος δὲ τῶν εἰς τὴν βουλὴν συναγομένων, ἀνὴρ τάς τε ἄλλας ἀρχὰς ἐπιτετελεκὼς καὶ διὰ πασῶν ὁδεύσας ὕπατος γενέσθαι τά τε ἄλλα ἀξιώματι μέγας, σὺν ὀλίγοις ἐπὶ Συρίας παρῆν, ὑπὸ Καίσαρος δικαιοδότης τοῦ ἔθνους ἀπεσταλμένος καὶ τιμητὴς τῶν οὐσιῶν γενησόμενος." καὶ μετὰ βραχέα φησίν· "Ἰούδας 5
Joseph. *A.I.* 18, 4 δέ, Γαυλανίτης ἀνὴρ ἐκ πόλεως ὄνομα Γαμαλά, Σάδδοκον Φαρισαῖον προσλαβόμενος, ἠπείγετο ἐπὶ ἀποστάσει, τήν τε ἀποτίμησιν οὐδὲν ἄλλο ἢ ἄντικρυς δουλείαν ἐπιφέρειν λέγοντες καὶ τῆς ἐλευθερίας ἐπ' ἀντιλήψει παρακαλοῦντες τὸ ἔθνος." καὶ ἐν τῇ 6
Joseph. *B.I.* 2, 118 δευτέρᾳ δὲ τῶν ἱστοριῶν τοῦ Ἰουδαϊκοῦ πολέμου περὶ τοῦ αὐτοῦ ταῦτα γράφει· "ἐπὶ τούτου τις ἀνὴρ Γαλιλαῖος Ἰούδας ὄνομα εἰς ἀποστασίαν ἐνῆγε τοὺς ἐπιχωρίους, κακίζων εἰ φόρον τε Ῥωμαίοις τελεῖν ὑπομενοῦσιν καὶ μετὰ τὸν θεὸν οἵσουσι θνητοὺς δεσπότας." ταῦτα ὁ Ἰώσηπος.

VI. Τηνικαῦτα δὲ καὶ τοῦ Ἰουδαίων ἔθνους Ἡρῴ- 1
δου πρώτου τὸ γένος ἀλλοφύλου διειληφότος τὴν βασιλείαν ἡ διὰ Μωυσέως περιγραφὴν ἐλάμβανεν
Gen. 49, 10 προφητεία "οὐκ ἐκλείψειν ἄρχοντα ἐξ Ἰούδα οὐδὲ ἡγούμενον ἐκ τῶν μηρῶν αὐτοῦ" φήσασα, "ἕως ἂν ἔλθῃ ᾧ ἀπόκειται," ὃν καὶ ἀποφαίνει προσδοκίαν ἔσεσθαι ἐθνῶν. ἀτελῆ γέ τοι τὰ τῆς προρ- 2

Digitized by Google

days of the census, and led away the people after him and he perished and all who obeyed him were scattered." In agreement with this, in the eighteenth book of the *Antiquities* the writer referred to also gives the following details: "And Quirinius, one of those called to the Senate, who had filled the other offices and passed through all of them to become Consul, and was otherwise of high rank, reached Syria with a small staff, having been sent by Caesar to administer the people and to make a valuation of their property." And a little later he says, "And Judas, the Gaulonite, of the city called Gamala, took with him Zadok, a Pharisee, and instigated a revolt, for they said that the valuation led to nothing but plain slavery, and they called on the people to rally for liberty." And in the second book of the *History of the Jewish War* he writes concerning the same man, "At this time a Galilean called Judas incited the inhabitants to revolt, calling them cowards to suffer the payment of tribute to the Romans, and after serving God to endure mortal masters." So far Josephus.

VI. Now at this time, when Herod was the first foreigner to hold the sovereignty of the Jewish nation, the prophecy made through Moses that "A ruler shall not fail from Judah nor a leader from his loins until he come for whom it is reserved"[1] began to be fulfilled. Moses also shows that this one will be the "expectation of the Gentiles." Obviously the terms of the prediction were unfulfilled so long

[1] The Hebrew text of this passage is, accurately rendered, "until Shiloh come," but has no discoverable meaning. The text of the LXX. varies between "until there come him for whom it is reserved" and "until there come the things reserved for him."

Digitized by Google

ῥήσεως ἣν καθ' ὃν ὑπὸ τοῖς οἰκείοις τοῦ ἔθνους ἄρχουσι διάγειν αὐτοῖς ἐξῆν χρόνον, ἄνωθεν ἐξ αὐτοῦ Μωυσέως καταρξαμένοις καὶ εἰς τὴν Αὐγούστου βασιλείαν διαρκέσασιν, καθ' ὃν πρῶτος ἀλλόφυλος Ἡρῴδης τὴν κατὰ Ἰουδαίων ἐπιτρέπεται ὑπὸ Ῥωμαίων ἀρχήν, ὡς μὲν Ἰώσηπος παραδίδωσιν, Ἰδουμαῖος ὢν κατὰ πατέρα τὸ γένος Ἀράβιος δὲ κατὰ μητέρα, ὡς δ' Ἀφρικανός (οὐχ ὁ τυχὼν δὲ καὶ οὗτος γέγονε συγγραφεύς), φασὶν οἱ τὰ κατ' αὐτὸν ἀκριβοῦντες Ἀντίπατρον (τοῦτον δ' εἶναι αὐτῷ πατέρα) Ἡρῴδου τινὸς Ἀσκαλωνίτου τῶν περὶ τὸν νεὼ τοῦ Ἀπόλλωνος ἱεροδούλων καλουμένων γεγονέναι· ὃς Ἀντίπατρος ὑπὸ 3
Ἰδουμαίων ληστῶν παιδίον αἰχμαλωτισθεὶς σὺν ἐκείνοις ἦν, διὰ τὸ μὴ δύνασθαι τὸν πατέρα πτωχὸν ὄντα καταθέσθαι ὑπὲρ αὐτοῦ, ἐντραφεὶς δὲ τοῖς ἐκείνων ἔθεσιν ὕστερον Ὑρκανῷ τῷ Ἰουδαίων ἀρχιερεῖ φιλοῦται. τούτου γίνεται ὁ ἐπὶ τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν Ἡρῴδης. εἰς δὴ οὖν τὸν τοιοῦτον 4
τῆς Ἰουδαίων περιελθούσης βασιλείας, ἐπὶ θύραις ἤδη καὶ ἡ τῶν ἐθνῶν ἀκολούθως τῇ προφητείᾳ προσδοκία παρῆν, ἅτε διαλελοιπότων ἐξ ἐκείνου τῶν παρ' αὐτοῖς ἐξ αὐτοῦ Μωυσέως κατὰ διαδοχὴν ἀρξάντων τε καὶ ἡγησαμένων. πρὸ μέν γε τῆς 5
αἰχμαλωσίας αὐτῶν καὶ τῆς εἰς Βαβυλῶνα μεταναστάσεως ἐβασιλεύοντο, ἀπὸ Σαοὺλ πρώτου καὶ Δαυὶδ ἀρξάμενοι· πρὸ δὲ τῶν βασιλέων ἄρχοντες αὐτοὺς διεῖπον, οἱ προσαγορευόμενοι κριταί, ἄρξαντες καὶ αὐτοὶ μετὰ Μωυσέα καὶ τὸν τούτου διάδοχον Ἰησοῦν· μετὰ δὲ τὴν ἀπὸ Βαβυλῶνος ἐπάνοδον 6
οὐ διέλιπον πολιτείᾳ χρώμενοι ἀριστοκρατικῇ μετὰ ὀλιγαρχίας (οἱ γὰρ ἱερεῖς προεστήκεσαν τῶν

Joseph, *A.I.* 14, 8. 121; *B.I.* 1, 123. 181

Joseph. *A.I.* 11, 112. 111

Digitized by Google

as it was possible for the Jews to live under the native rulers of the nation, beginning with Moses himself and lasting down to the reign of Augustus; but in his time the first foreigner, Herod, was entrusted by the Romans with the government of the Jews. He was, as Josephus relates, an Idumaean on his father's side and an Arab on his mother's, but according to Africanus (nor was he any ordinary historian) those who give accurate information concerning Herod say that Antipater (he was his father) was the son of a certain Herod of Ascalon, and one of those called *hierodouloi*[1] in the temple of Apollo. This Antipater was captured as a child by Idumaean brigands, and stayed with them because his father was unable on account of poverty to pay ransom for him. He was brought up in their customs and later on was befriended by Hyrcanus the high priest of the Jews. His child was the Herod of our Saviour's time. When therefore the kingdom of the Jews came to such a man as this the expectation of the Gentiles, in accordance with the prophecy, was already at the door, inasmuch as the succession from Moses of rulers and governors ceased with him. Before their captivity and removal to Babylon, kings had ruled them, beginning with Saul, the first king, and David; and before the kings, rulers called judges administered them and these began after Moses and his successor, Joshua. After the return from Babylon a constitution of oligarchic aristocracy was continuous (for the

[1] That is "temple servants": their functions were various.

Digitized by Google

πραγμάτων), ἄχρι οὗ Πομπήιος Ῥωμαίων στρατηγὸς ἐπιστὰς τὴν μὲν Ἱερουσαλὴμ πολιορκεῖ κατὰ κράτος μιαίνει τε τὰ ἅγια μέχρι τῶν ἀδύτων τοῦ ἱεροῦ προελθών, τὸν δ' ἐκ προγόνων διαδοχῆς εἰς ἐκεῖνο τοῦ καιροῦ διαρκέσαντα βασιλέα τε ὁμοῦ καὶ ἀρχιερέα, Ἀριστόβουλος ὄνομα ἦν αὐτῷ, δέσμιον ἐπὶ Ῥώμης ἅμα τέκνοις ἐκπέμψας, Ὑρκανῷ μὲν τῷ τούτου ἀδελφῷ τὴν ἀρχιερωσύνην παραδίδωσιν, τὸ δὲ πᾶν Ἰουδαίων ἔθνος ἐξ ἐκείνου Ῥωμαίοις ὑπόφορον κατεστήσατο. αὐτίκα γοῦν καὶ 7
Ὑρκανοῦ, εἰς ὃν ὕστατον τὰ τῆς τῶν ἀρχιερέων περιέστη διαδοχῆς, ὑπὸ Πάρθων αἰχμαλώτου ληφθέντος, πρῶτος, ὡς γοῦν ἔφην, ἀλλόφυλος Ἡρῴδης ὑπὸ τῆς συγκλήτου Ῥωμαίων Αὐγούστου τε βασιλέως τὸ Ἰουδαίων ἔθνος ἐγχειρίζεται, καθ' 8
ὃν ἐναργῶς τῆς τοῦ Χριστοῦ παρουσίας ἐνστάσης, καὶ τῶν ἐθνῶν ἡ προσδοκωμένη σωτηρία τε καὶ κλῆσις ἀκολούθως τῇ προφητείᾳ παρηκολούθησεν· ἐξ οὗ δὴ χρόνου τῶν ἀπὸ Ἰούδα ἀρχόντων τε καὶ ἡγουμένων, λέγω δὲ τῶν ἐκ τοῦ Ἰουδαίων ἔθνους, διαλελοιπότων, εἰκότως αὐτοῖς καὶ τὰ τῆς ἐκ προγόνων εὐσταθῶς ἐπὶ τοὺς ἔγγιστα διαδόχους κατὰ γενεὰν προϊούσης ἀρχιερωσύνης παραχρῆμα
Joseph. *A.I.* 20, 247. 249 συγχεῖται. ἔχεις καὶ τούτων ἀξιόχρεων τὸν 9
Ἰώσηπον μάρτυρα, δηλοῦντα ὡς τὴν βασιλείαν παρὰ Ῥωμαίων ἐπιτραπεὶς Ἡρῴδης οὐκέτι τοὺς ἐξ ἀρχαίου γένους καθίστησιν ἀρχιερεῖς, ἀλλά τισιν ἀσήμοις τὴν τιμὴν ἀπένεμεν· τὰ ὅμοια δὲ πρᾶξαι τῷ Ἡρῴδῃ περὶ τῆς καταστάσεως τῶν ἱερέων Ἀρχέλαόν τε τὸν παῖδα αὐτοῦ καὶ μετὰ τοῦτον Ῥωμαίους, τὴν ἀρχὴν τῶν Ἰουδαίων παρειληφότας. ὁ δ' αὐτὸς δηλοῖ ὡς ἄρα καὶ τὴν 10

Digitized by Google

priests were at the head of affairs), until Pompey, a Roman general, attacked Jerusalem, besieged it in force, and defiled the holy places by intruding into the secret parts of the temple. He sent to Rome as a prisoner with his children the king and high priest, Aristobulus by name, who had continued the succession of his ancestors until then. To Hyrcanus, the brother of Aristobulus, he handed over the high-priesthood, but made the whole nation of the Jews from that time tributary to the Romans. As soon as Hyrcanus, the last to whom belonged the high-priestly succession, was taken prisoner by the Parthians, Herod, the first foreigner, as I just said, was entrusted with the nation of the Jews by the Senate of the Romans and the Emperor Augustus. The advent of the Christ clearly came in his time, and thus the expected salvation and calling of the Gentiles followed consistently with the prophecy; moreover, from the time when the rulers and governors from Judah, that is to say those of the Jewish race, had ceased, immediate confusion naturally ensued in the affairs of the priesthood which passed steadily to the nearest heirs from generation to generation from the ancestors. Of this, too, you have Josephus as a valuable witness, for he explains how Herod, when he was entrusted with the kingdom by the Romans, no longer appointed high priests of the ancient race but assigned the honour to certain obscure persons; and that Herod's policy with regard to the appointment of the priests was followed by his son Archelaus, and after him by the Romans, when they took over the government of the Jews. The same writer explains how Herod

Digitized by Google

ἱερὰν στολὴν τοῦ ἀρχιερέως πρῶτος Ἡρῴδης ἀποκλείσας ὑπὸ ἰδίαν σφραγῖδα πεποίηται, μηκέτ' αὐτὴν τοῖς ἀρχιερεῦσιν ἔχειν ὑφ' ἑαυτοὺς ἐπιτρέψας· ταὐτὸν δὲ καὶ τὸν μετ' αὐτὸν Ἀρχέλαον καὶ μετὰ τοῦτον Ῥωμαίους διαπράξασθαι. καὶ ταῦτα δ' 11
ἡμῖν εἰρήσθω εἰς ἑτέρας ἀπόδειξιν προφητείας κατὰ τὴν ἐπιφάνειαν τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ πεπερασμένης. σαφέστατα γοῦν ἐν τῷ
Dan. 9, 24–27 Δανιὴλ ἑβδομάδων τινῶν ἀριθμὸν ὀνομαστὶ ἕως Χριστοῦ ἡγουμένου περιλαβὼν ὁ λόγος, περὶ ὧν ἐν ἑτέροις διειλήφαμεν, μετὰ τὸ τούτων συμπέρασμα ἐξολοθρευθήσεσθαι τὸ παρὰ Ἰουδαίοις χρῖσμα προφητεύει· καὶ τοῦτο δὲ σαφῶς κατὰ τὸν καιρὸν τῆς τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ γενέσεως ἀποδείκνυται συμπεπληρωμένον. ταῦτα δ' ἡμῖν ἀναγκαίως εἰς παράστασιν τῆς τῶν χρόνων ἀληθείας προτετηρήσθω.

VII. Ἐπειδὴ δὲ τὴν περὶ τοῦ Χριστοῦ γενεαλογίαν 1
διαφόρως ἡμῖν ὅ τε Ματθαῖος καὶ ὁ Λουκᾶς εὐαγγελιζόμενοι παραδεδώκασι διαφωνεῖν τε νομίζονται τοῖς πολλοῖς τῶν τε πιστῶν ἕκαστος ἀγνοίᾳ τἀληθοῦς εὑρησιλογεῖν εἰς τοὺς τόπους πεφιλοτίμηται, φέρε, καὶ τὴν περὶ τούτων κατελθοῦσαν εἰς ἡμᾶς ἱστορίαν παραθώμεθα, ἣν δι' ἐπιστολῆς Ἀριστείδη γράφων περὶ συμφωνίας τῆς ἐν τοῖς εὐαγγελίοις γενεαλογίας ὁ μικρῷ πρόσθεν ἡμῖν δηλωθεὶς Ἀφρικανὸς ἐμνημόνευσεν, τὰς μὲν δὴ τῶν λοιπῶν δόξας ὡς ἂν βιαίους καὶ διεψευσμένας ἀπελέγξας, ἣν δ' αὐτὸς παρείληφεν ἱστορίαν τούτοις αὐτοῖς ἐκτιθέμενος τοῖς ῥήμασιν·

" Ἐπειδὴ γὰρ τὰ ὀνόματα τῶν γενῶν ἐν Ἰσραὴλ 2
ἠριθμεῖτο ἢ φύσει ἢ νόμῳ, φύσει μέν, γνησίου

Digitized by Google

was the first to lock up and keep under his own seal the sacred robe of the high priest, for he no longer allowed the high priests to keep it in their own charge, and his successor, Archelaus, and after him the Romans, pursued the same policy. These facts may also serve us as proof of the fulfilment of another prophecy on the manifestation of our Saviour Jesus Christ. It is quite obvious that in Daniel the text defines the number of certain weeks, which I have treated of elsewhere, in so many words as "until Christ the ruler," and prophesies that after the accomplishment of these weeks the anointing among the Jews shall be destroyed. The fulfilment of this at the time of the birth of our Saviour Jesus Christ is clearly demonstrated. These points must suffice as preliminary observations necessary to establish the truth of the date.

VII. Since Matthew and Luke, having given us different traditions in their gospels concerning the genealogy of Christ, are considered by many to disagree; and since each of the faithful in ignorance of the truth has been zealous in making guesses on these passages, come, let us set out the story that has reached us concerning them, which the Africanus mentioned by us a short time ago narrated in a letter which he wrote to Aristides on the harmony of the genealogies in the Gospels, confuting the opinions of others as forced and fictitious and setting out his own traditions in the following words: "Since the names of the families in Israel were numbered either by nature or by law;

Digitized by Google

σπέρματος διαδοχῇ, νόμῳ δέ, ἑτέρου παιδοποιουμένου εἰς ὄνομα τελευτήσαντος ἀδελφοῦ ἀτέκνου (ὅτι γὰρ οὐδέπω δέδοτο ἐλπὶς ἀναστάσεως σαφής, τὴν μέλλουσαν ἐπαγγελίαν ἀναστάσει ἐμιμοῦντο θνητῇ, ἵνα ἀνέκλειπτον τὸ ὄνομα μείνῃ τοῦ μεταλλαχότος)· ἐπεὶ οὖν οἱ τῇ γενεαλογίᾳ ταύτῃ 3
ἐμφερόμενοι, οἱ μὲν διεδέξαντο παῖς πατέρα γνησίως, οἱ δὲ ἑτέροις μὲν ἐγεννήθησαν, ἑτέροις δὲ προσετέθησαν κλήσει, ἀμφοτέρων γέγονεν ἡ μνήμη, καὶ τῶν γεγεννηκότων καὶ τῶν ὡς γεγεννηκότων. οὕτως οὐδέτερον τῶν εὐαγγελίων ψεύδεται, καὶ φύσιν ἀριθμοῦν καὶ νόμον. ἐπεπλάκη 4
γὰρ ἀλλήλοις τὰ γένη, τό τε ἀπὸ τοῦ Σολομῶνος καὶ τὸ ἀπὸ τοῦ Ναθάν, ἀναστάσεσιν ἀτέκνων καὶ δευτερογαμίαις καὶ ἀναστάσει σπερμάτων, ὡς δικαίως τοὺς αὐτοὺς ἄλλοτε ἄλλων νομίζεσθαι, τῶν μὲν δοκούντων πατέρων, τῶν δὲ ὑπαρχόντων· ὡς ἀμφοτέρας τὰς διηγήσεις κυρίως ἀληθεῖς οὔσας ἐπὶ τὸν Ἰωσὴφ πολυπλόκως μέν, ἀλλ' ἀκριβῶς κατελθεῖν. ἵνα δὲ σαφὲς ᾖ τὸ λεγό- 5
μενον, τὴν ἐναλλαγὴν τῶν γενῶν διηγήσομαι. ἀπὸ τοῦ Δαυὶδ διὰ Σολομῶνος τὰς γενεὰς καταρι-

---

[1] This is the only possible translation of the Greek; but it appears to be a mistake in copying on the part of Eusebius, and according to cod. *q* of the *Quaestiones ad Stephanum* (Mai, *Nova patrum bibl.* iv. 231 f.) Africanus wrote "the deaths of the childless."

[2] The point of this obscure argument is that among the Jews if a man died childless his brother was charged with the duty of begetting children by the widow, who was still reckoned as the wife of the deceased. Such children were legally regarded as the sons of the dead brother, though known to be actually the children of the living one. This

Digitized by Google

by nature, in the succession of legitimate birth; by law, when a man begat children in the name of a brother who had died childless; for because no certain hope of resurrection had as yet been given they portrayed the future promise by a mortal resurrection, in order that the name of him who had passed away might not fail to remain. Since then by following this kind of genealogy some succeeded in the legitimate order of father and son, but others were reckoned in name to one father though the children of another, the memory of both was retained, both of the actual and of the fictitious parents. Thus neither of the Gospels misstates, reckoning both nature and law. For the two families, the one descended from Solomon and the other from Nathan, were connected with each other by the 'resurrections'[1] of the childless and second marriages and the raising up of seed, so that the same persons could be correctly regarded as the children of different persons at different times, either of their fictitious or of their real fathers. Thus both accounts are strictly true in coming down to Joseph in a manner complicated but accurate. In order that what has been said may be clear I will explain the relation of the families.[2] Reckoning the generations from David through Solomon the third from

happened in the case of Joseph. He was legally the son of Eli, physically of Jacob. A further complication was that Eli and Jacob were only half brothers. They were the sons of the same mother, Estha, but Eli was the son of her second husband, Melchi, descended from Nathan the son of David, and Jacob was the son of her first husband Matthan, descended from Solomon the son of David. Thus Matthew giving the physical descent of Jesus traces it through Jacob to Solomon, but Luke (who avoids the word "begat") giving the legal descent traces it through Eli to Nathan.

Digitized by Google

Matt. 1,15.16 θμουμένοις τρίτος ἀπὸ τέλους εὑρίσκεται Ματθάν,
ὃς ἐγέννησε τὸν Ἰακώβ, τοῦ Ἰωσὴφ τὸν πατέρα·
Luke 3,23.24 ἀπὸ δὲ Ναθὰν τοῦ Δαυὶδ κατὰ Λουκᾶν ὁμοίως
τρίτος ἀπὸ τέλους Μελχί· Ἰωσὴφ γὰρ υἱὸς Ἡλι
τοῦ Μελχί. σκοποῦ τοίνυν ἡμῖν κειμένου τοῦ 6
Ἰωσήφ, ἀποδεικτέον πῶς ἑκάτερος αὐτοῦ πατὴρ
ἱστορεῖται, ὅ τε Ἰακὼβ ὁ ἀπὸ Σολομῶνος καὶ Ἡλὶ
ὁ ἀπὸ τοῦ Ναθὰν ἑκάτερος κατάγοντες γένος,
ὅπως τε πρότερον οὗτοι δή, ὅ τε Ἰακὼβ καὶ ὁ
Ἡλί, δύο ἀδελφοί, καὶ πρό γε, πῶς οἱ τούτων
πατέρες, Ματθὰν καὶ Μελχί, διαφόρων ὄντες γενῶν,
τοῦ Ἰωσὴφ ἀναφαίνονται πάπποι. καὶ δὴ οὖν 7
ὅ τε Ματθὰν καὶ ὁ Μελχί, ἐν μέρει τὴν αὐτὴν
ἀγαγόμενοι γυναῖκα, ὁμομητρίους ἀδελφοὺς ἐπαιδο-
ποιήσαντο, τοῦ νόμου μὴ κωλύοντος χηρεύουσαν,
ἤτοι ἀπολελυμένην ἢ καὶ τελευτήσαντος τοῦ
ἀνδρός, ἄλλῳ γαμεῖσθαι· ἐκ δὴ τῆς Ἐσθὰ (τοῦτο 8
γὰρ καλεῖσθαι τὴν γυναῖκα παραδέδοται) πρῶτος
Ματθάν, ὁ ἀπὸ τοῦ Σολομῶνος τὸ γένος κατάγων,
τὸν Ἰακὼβ γεννᾷ, καὶ τελευτήσαντος τοῦ Ματθὰν
Μελχί, ὁ ἐπὶ τὸν Ναθὰν κατὰ γένος ἀναφερόμενος,
χηρεύουσαν, ἐκ μὲν τῆς αὐτῆς φυλῆς, ἐξ ἄλλου
δὲ γένους ὤν, ὡς προεῖπον, ἀγαγόμενος αὐτήν,
ἔσχεν υἱὸν τὸν Ἡλί. οὕτω δὴ διαφόρων δύο 9
γενῶν εὑρήσομεν τόν τε Ἰακὼβ καὶ τὸν Ἡλὶ
ὁμομητρίους ἀδελφούς, ὧν ὁ ἕτερος, Ἰακώβ,
ἀτέκνου τοῦ ἀδελφοῦ τελευτήσαντος Ἡλί, τὴν
γυναῖκα παραλαβών, ἐγέννησεν ἐξ αὐτῆς τρίτον
τὸν Ἰωσήφ, κατὰ φύσιν μὲν ἑαυτῷ (καὶ κατὰ
Matt. 1, 16 λόγον, δι' ὃ γέγραπται ' Ἰακὼβ δὲ ἐγέννησεν
τὸν Ἰωσήφ '), κατὰ νόμον δὲ τοῦ Ἡλὶ υἱὸς ἦν·
ἐκείνῳ γὰρ ὁ Ἰακώβ, ἀδελφὸς ὤν, ἀνέστησεν

Digitized by Google

the end is found to be Matthan who begat Jacob the father of Joseph; but from Nathan, the son of David, according to Luke, the corresponding third from the end is Melchi; for Joseph was a son of Eli the son of Melchi. So then fixing our attention on Joseph, it must be demonstrated how each is called his father, Jacob tracing his family from Solomon and Eli from Nathan, and how first they, that is Jacob and Eli, were two brothers, and, still earlier, how their fathers, Matthan and Melchi, belonging to different families, are represented as the grandfathers of Joseph. Now Matthan and Melchi, inasmuch as they took the same wife, were the fathers of step-brothers, for the law does not prevent a woman who has lost her husband either by her own divorce or by his death from being married to another. Now from Estha, for this is the traditional name of the woman, first Matthan, who reckoned his descent from Solomon, begat Jacob and when Matthan was dead, Melchi, who traced himself by family to Nathan, took his widow, for he was of the same tribe though of another family, as I said before, and had a son, Eli. Thus we shall find that though the two families were different Jacob and Eli were step-brothers of the same mother, and the first of them, Jacob, when his brother Eli died without children, took his wife, and begat of her the third,[1] Joseph, according to nature, for himself (and so also according to reason, for which cause it is written, 'And Jacob begat Joseph'), but according to law he was the son of Eli, for to him Jacob, being his brother, raised up

[1] That is, the third from Estha.

Digitized by Google

σπέρμα. δι' ὅπερ οὐκ ἀκυρωθήσεται καὶ ἡ κατ' αὐτὸν γενεαλογία· ἦν Ματθαῖος μὲν ὁ εὐαγγελιστὴς ἐξαριθμούμενος 'Ἰακὼβ δέ' φησίν 'ἐγέννησεν τὸν Ἰωσήφ,' ὁ δὲ Λουκᾶς ἀνάπαλιν 'ὃς ἦν, ὡς ἐνομίζετο (καὶ γὰρ καὶ τοῦτο προστίθησιν) τοῦ Ἰωσὴφ τοῦ Ἡλὶ τοῦ Μελχί.' τὴν γὰρ κατὰ νόμον γένεσιν ἐπισημότερον οὐκ ἦν ἐξειπεῖν, καὶ τὸ 'ἐγέννησεν' ἐπὶ τῆς τοιᾶσδε παιδοποιίας ἄχρι τέλους ἐσιώπησεν, τὴν ἀναφορὰν ποιησάμενος ἕως 'τοῦ Ἀδὰμ τοῦ θεοῦ' κατ' ἀνάλυσιν. οὐδὲ μὴν ἀναπόδεικτον ἢ ἐσχεδιασμένον ἐστὶν τοῦτο. τοῦ γοῦν σωτῆρος οἱ κατὰ σάρκα συγγενεῖς, εἶτ' οὖν φανητιῶντες εἴθ' ἁπλῶς ἐκδιδάσκοντες, πάντως δὲ ἀληθεύοντες, παρέδοσαν καὶ ταῦτα· ὡς Ἰδουμαῖοι λῃσταὶ Ἀσκάλωνι πόλει τῆς Παλαιστίνης ἐπελθόντες, ἐξ εἰδωλείου Ἀπόλλωνος, ὃ πρὸς τοῖς τείχεσιν ἵδρυτο, Ἀντίπατρον Ἡρῴδου τινὸς ἱεροδούλου παῖδα πρὸς τοὺς ἄλλοις σύλοις αἰχμάλωτον ἀπῆγον, τῷ δὲ λύτρα ὑπὲρ τοῦ υἱοῦ καταθέσθαι μὴ δύνασθαι τὸν ἱερέα ὁ Ἀντίπατρος τοῖς τῶν Ἰδουμαίων ἔθεσιν ἐντραφείς, ὕστερον Ὑρκανῷ φιλοῦται τῷ τῆς Ἰουδαίας ἀρχιερεῖ· πρεσβεύσας δὲ πρὸς Πομπήιον ὑπὲρ τοῦ Ὑρκανοῦ καὶ τὴν βασιλείαν ἐλευθερώσας αὐτῷ ὑπὸ Ἀριστοβούλου τοῦ ἀδελφοῦ περικοπτομένην, αὐτὸς ηὐτύχησεν, ἐπιμελητὴς τῆς Παλαιστίνης χρηματίσας· διαδέχεται δὲ τὸν Ἀντίπατρον, φθόνῳ τῆς πολλῆς εὐτυχίας δολοφονηθέντα, υἱὸς Ἡρῴδης, ὃς ὕστερον ὑπ' Ἀντωνίου καὶ τοῦ σεβαστοῦ συγκλήτου δόγματι τῶν Ἰουδαίων ἐκρίθη βασιλεύειν· οὗ παῖδες Ἡρῴδης οἵ τ' ἄλλοι τετράρχαι. ταῦτα

Luke 3, 23. 24

Luke 3, 38

10

11

12

[1] *i.e.* Herod the Great.

Digitized by Google

seed. Wherefore the genealogy concerning him will not be inaccurate. Matthew, the evangelist, reckoned it in this way, saying, 'And Jacob begat Joseph,' but Luke, on the other hand, said, 'Who was, as it was supposed' (for he adds this also), 'the son of Joseph, the son of Eli, the son of Melchi,' for it was impossible to express legal descent more pointedly, and up to the end he suppressed the word 'begat' concerning such raising of children, for he traces the list back to its source with 'Adam the son of God.' This is neither devoid of proof, nor is it conjecture, for the human relatives of the Saviour have handed on this tradition, either from family pride, or merely to give information, but in any case speaking the truth. When Idumaean brigands attacked the city of Ascalon in Palestine among their other spoils they took away captive from the temple of Apollo, which was built on the walls, Antipater the child of a certain Herod, a *hierodoulos*, and since the priest was unable to pay ransom for his son, Antipater was brought up in the customs of the Idumaeans and later was befriended by Hyrcanus the high priest of Judaea. When sent on a mission to Pompey on behalf of Hyrcanus he won for him the freedom of the kingdom which had been taken away by his brother Aristobulus, and so was himself fortunate enough to gain the title of overseer of Palestine. Antipater was assassinated from envy of his great good fortune, and succeeded by a son Herod,[1] who later was appointed by Antony and by decree of the august Senate to be king of the Jews. His children were Herod[2] and the other tetrarchs. So much is shared

[1] *i.e.* Herod Antipas and his brothers.

Digitized by Google

μὲν δὴ κοινὰ καὶ ταῖς Ἑλλήνων ἱστορίαις· ἀνα- 13
γράπτων δὲ εἰς τότε ἐν τοῖς ἀρχείοις ὄντων τῶν
Judith 14, 10 Ἑβραϊκῶν γενῶν καὶ τῶν ἄχρι προσηλύτων
Exod. 12, 38 Deut. 23, 8 ἀναφερομένων, ὡς Ἀχιὼρ τοῦ Ἀμμανίτου καὶ
Ῥουὴθ τῆς Μωαβίτιδος, τῶν τε ἀπ' Αἰγύπτου
συνεκπεσόντων ἐπιμίκτων, ὁ Ἡρῴδης, οὐδέν τι
συμβαλλομένου τοῦ τῶν Ἰσραηλιτῶν γένους αὐτῷ
καὶ τῷ συνειδότι τῆς δυσγενείας κρουόμενος,
ἐνέπρησεν αὐτῶν τὰς ἀναγραφὰς τῶν γενῶν,
οἰόμενος εὐγενὴς ἀναφανεῖσθαι τῷ μηδ' ἄλλον
ἔχειν ἐκ δημοσίου συγγραφῆς τὸ γένος ἀνάγειν
ἐπὶ τοὺς πατριάρχας ἢ προσηλύτους τούς τε
καλουμένους γειώρας, τοὺς ἐπιμίκτους. ὀλίγοι δὴ 14
τῶν ἐπιμελῶν, ἰδιωτικὰς ἑαυτοῖς ἀπογραφὰς ἢ
μνημονεύσαντες τῶν ὀνομάτων ἢ ἄλλως ἔχοντες
ἐξ ἀντιγράφων, ἐναβρύνονται σῳζομένῃ τῇ μνήμῃ
τῆς εὐγενείας· ὧν ἐτύγχανον οἱ προειρημένοι,
δεσπόσυνοι καλούμενοι διὰ τὴν πρὸς τὸ σωτήριον
γένος συνάφειαν ἀπό τε Ναζάρων καὶ Κωχαβα
κωμῶν Ἰουδαϊκῶν τῇ λοιπῇ γῇ ἐπιφοιτήσαντες
καὶ τὴν προκειμένην γενεαλογίαν ἔκ τε τῆς Βίβλου
τῶν ἡμερῶν, ἐς ὅσον ἐξικνοῦντο, ἐξηγησάμενοι.
εἴτ' οὖν οὕτως εἴτ' ἄλλως ἔχοι, σαφεστέραν 15
ἐξήγησιν οὐκ ἂν ἔχοι τις ἄλλος ἐξευρεῖν, ὡς
ἔγωγε νομίζω πᾶς τε ὃς εὐγνώμων τυγχάνει, καὶ
ἡμῖν αὕτη μελέτω, εἰ καὶ ἁμάρτυρός ἐστιν,
τῷ μὴ κρείττονα ἢ ἀληθεστέραν ἔχειν εἰπεῖν·
τό γέ τοι εὐαγγέλιον πάντως ἀληθεύει." καὶ 16
ἐπὶ τέλει δὲ τῆς αὐτῆς ἐπιστολῆς προστίθησι
ταῦτα· "Ματθὰν ὁ ἀπὸ Σολομῶνος ἐγέννησε τὸν

Digitized by Google

with the histories of the Greeks also. But since the Hebrew families and those traceable to proselytes, such as Achior the Ammonite, and Ruth the Moabitess, and the mixed families which had come out of Egypt, had until then been enrolled in the archives, Herod, because the family of the Israelites contributed nothing to him, and because he was goaded by his own consciousness of his base birth, burned the records of their families, thinking to appear noble if no one else was able by public documents to trace his family to the patriarchs or proselytes, or to the so-called *gers* [1] of mixed descent. Now a few who were careful, having private records for themselves, either remembering the names or otherwise deriving them from copies, gloried in the preservation of the memory of their good birth; among these were those mentioned above, called *desposyni*, because of their relation to the family of the Saviour,[2] and from the Jewish villages of Nazareth and Cochaba they traversed the rest of the land and expounded the preceding genealogy of their descent, and from the book of Chronicles so far as they went.[3] Whether this be so or not no one could give a clearer account, in my opinion and in that of all well-disposed persons, and it may suffice us even though it is not corroborated, since we have nothing better or truer to say: in any case the gospel speaks the truth." And at the end of the same letter Africanus adds this: "Matthan of the line of Solomon begat Jacob.[4] On

[1] A Hellenized form of the Hebrew word translated "stranger" in the phrase the "stranger within the gates."
[2] Because he is the Lord or "Despot."
[3] Literally "the book of days"—from the Hebrew.
[4] *Cf.* Eusebius, *Quaest. ad Steph.* pp. 232 and 224.

Digitized by Google

Ἰακώβ. Ματθὰν ἀποθανόντος, Μελχὶ ὁ ἀπὸ Ναθὰν ἐκ τῆς αὐτῆς γυναικὸς ἐγέννησε τὸν Ἡλί. ὁμομήτριοι ἄρα ἀδελφοὶ Ἡλὶ καὶ Ἰακώβ. Ἡλὶ ἀτέκνου ἀποθανόντος ὁ Ἰακὼβ ἀνέστησεν αὐτῷ σπέρμα, γεννήσας τὸν Ἰωσήφ, κατὰ φύσιν μὲν ἑαυτῷ, κατὰ νόμον δὲ τῷ Ἡλί. οὕτως ἀμφοτέρων ἦν υἱὸς ὁ Ἰωσήφ."

Τοσαῦτα ὁ Ἀφρικανός. καὶ δὴ τοῦ Ἰωσὴφ 17
ὧδέ πως γενεαλογουμένου, δυνάμει καὶ ἡ Μαρία σὺν αὐτῷ πέφηνεν ἐκ τῆς αὐτῆς οὖσα φυλῆς, εἴ γε κατὰ τὸν Μωυσέως νόμον οὐκ ἐξῆν ἑτέραις
Num. 36, 8. 9 ἐπιμίγνυσθαι φυλαῖς· ἑνὶ γὰρ τῶν ἐκ τοῦ αὐτοῦ δήμου καὶ πατριᾶς τῆς αὐτῆς ζεύγνυσθαι πρὸς γάμον παρακελεύεται, ὡς ἂν μὴ περιστρέφοιτο τοῦ γένους ὁ κλῆρος ἀπὸ φυλῆς ἐπὶ φυλήν. ὠδὶ μὲν οὖν καὶ ταῦτα ἐχέτω.

VIII. Ἀλλὰ γὰρ τοῦ Χριστοῦ γεννηθέντος ταῖς 1
προφητείαις ἀκολούθως ἐν Βηθλεὲμ τῆς Ἰουδαίας κατὰ τοὺς δεδηλωμένους χρόνους, Ἡρῴδης ἐπὶ τῇ τῶν ἐξ ἀνατολῆς μάγων ἀνερωτήσει ὅπῃ εἴη διαπυνθανομένων ὁ τεχθεὶς βασιλεὺς τῶν Ἰουδαίων, ἑορακέναι γὰρ αὐτοῦ τὸν ἀστέρα καὶ τῆς τοσῆσδε πορείας τοῦτ' αἴτιον αὐτοῖς γεγονέναι, οἷα θεῷ προσκυνῆσαι τῷ τεχθέντι διὰ σπουδῆς πεποιημένοις, οὐ σμικρῶς ἐπὶ τῷ πράγματι, ἅτε κινδυνευούσης, ὥς γε δὴ ᾤετο, αὐτῷ τῆς ἀρχῆς, διακινηθείς, πυθόμενος τῶν παρὰ τῷ ἔθνει νομοδιδασκάλων ποῦ τὸν Χριστὸν γεννηθήσεσθαι προσ-
Mich. 5, 2 δοκῷεν, ὡς ἔγνω τὴν Μιχαίου προφητείαν ἐν Βηθλεὲμ προαναφωνοῦσαν, ἑνὶ προστάγματι τοὺς ὑπομαζίους ἔν τε τῇ Βηθλεὲμ καὶ πᾶσι τοῖς ὁρίοις αὐτῆς ἀπὸ διετοῦς καὶ κατωτέρω παῖδας, κατὰ

Digitized by Google

the death of Matthan, Melchi of the line of Nathan begat Eli from the same woman. Thus Eli and Jacob were step-brothers with the same mother. When Eli died without children, Jacob raised up seed for him, begetting Joseph as his own natural son but the legal son of Eli. Thus Joseph was son of both." Thus far Africanus. Now since this was the nature of the genealogy of Joseph, it is potential proof that Mary belonged to the same tribe as he, seeing that according to the law of Moses, it was not lawful for the different tribes to mix, for the command is given to join in marriage with one of the same people and same family, in order that the inheritance of the race might not be changed from tribe to tribe. Thus let this suffice on this point.

VIII. Now when Christ was born, in accordance with the prophecy, at Bethlehem of Judaea at the time mentioned, Herod was asked by the Magi from the East where might he be who was born king of the Jews, for they had seen his star, and this had been the cause of their long journey in their zeal to worship the infant as God. The request caused him to be not a little disturbed at the situation for, as he thought, his sovereignty was in danger. He therefore inquired from the teachers of the Law among the people where they expected the Christ to be born, and when he learnt the prophecy of Micah, foretelling that it should be in Bethlehem, he gave a comprehensive order to put to death all the infants which were being nursed in Bethlehem and the whole neighbourhood, of two years old and less, according to the time indicated

Digitized by Google

τὸν ἀπηκριβωμένον αὐτῷ χρόνον παρὰ τῶν μάγων, ἀναιρεθῆναι προστάττει, πάντως που καὶ τὸν Ἰησοῦν, ὥς γε ἦν εἰκός, τῆς αὐτῆς τοῖς ὁμήλιξι συναπολαῦσαι συμφορᾶς οἰόμενος. φθάνει γε μὴν 2
τὴν ἐπιβουλὴν εἰς Αἴγυπτον διακομισθεὶς ὁ παῖς,
διʼ ἐπιφανείας ἀγγέλου τὸ μέλλον promemathēkótōn
Matt. 2, 1–7 ff. αὐτοῦ τῶν γονέων. ταῦτα μὲν οὖν καὶ ἡ ἱερὰ
τοῦ εὐαγγελίου διδάσκει γραφή· ἄξιον δʼ ἐπὶ 3
τούτοις συνιδεῖν τὰπίχειρα τῆς Ἡρῴδου κατὰ
τοῦ Χριστοῦ καὶ τῶν ὁμηλίκων αὐτῷ τόλμης, ὡς
παραυτίκα, μηδὲ σμικρᾶς ἀναβολῆς γεγενημένης, ἡ
θεία δίκη περιόντα ἔτʼ αὐτὸν τῷ βίῳ μετελήλυθεν,
τὰ τῶν μετὰ τὴν ἐνθένδε ἀπαλλαγὴν διαδεξομένων
αὐτὸν ἐπιδεικνῦσα προοίμια. ὡς μὲν οὖν τὰς 4
κατὰ τὴν βασιλείαν αὐτῷ νομισθείσας εὐπραγίας
ταῖς κατὰ τὸν οἶκον ἐπαλλήλοις ἠμαύρωσεν
συμφοραῖς, γυναικὸς καὶ τέκνων καὶ τῶν λοιπῶν
τῶν μάλιστα πρὸς γένους ἀναγκαιοτάτων τε καὶ
φιλτάτων μιαιφονίαις, οὐδὲ οἷόν τε νῦν καταλέγειν,
τραγικὴν ἅπασαν δραματουργίαν ἐπισκιαζούσης
τῆς περὶ τούτων ὑποθέσεως, ἣν εἰς πλάτος ἐν ταῖς
κατʼ αὐτὸν ἱστορίαις ὁ Ἰώσηπος διελήλυθεν· ὡς 5
δʼ ἅμα τῇ κατὰ τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν καὶ τῶν ἄλλων
νηπίων ἐπιβουλῇ θεήλατος αὐτὸν καταλαβοῦσα
μάστιξ εἰς θάνατον συνήλασεν, οὐ χεῖρον καὶ τῶν
φωνῶν τοῦ συγγραφέως ἐπακοῦσαι, κατὰ λέξιν
ἐν ἑπτακαιδεκάτῳ τῆς Ἰουδαϊκῆς Ἀρχαιολογίας τὴν
καταστροφὴν τοῦ κατʼ αὐτὸν βίου τοῦτον γράφοντος
Joseph. *A.I.* 17, 168–170 τὸν τρόπον· “Ἡρῴδῃ δὲ μειζόνως ἡ νόσος ἐνεπι-
κραίνετο, δίκην ὧν παρηνόμησεν ἐκπρασσομένου τοῦ
θεοῦ. πῦρ μὲν γὰρ μαλακὸν ἦν, οὐχ ὧδε πολλὴν 6
ἀποσημαῖνον τοῖς ἐπαφωμένοις τὴν φλόγωσιν, ὅσην

Digitized by Google

to him by the Magi, supposing, as was natural, that Jesus also would enjoy the same fate as the children of his age. However the child forestalled the plot by being taken to Egypt, as by the manifestation of an angel his parents had learned beforehand what was to happen. This is also taught by the sacred scripture of the Gospel, but it is worth noticing in this connexion the result of the crime of Herod against the Christ and the children of his age; for immediately, without even a short delay, the justice of God overtook him while he was still in life, showing the prelude of what awaited him when he had passed hence. It is not now possible even to give a summary list of the ways by which he darkened what were reckoned the glories of his reign, by the successive misfortunes of his house, by the foul murder of wife and children and of the rest who were closest to him in family and in affection; for the shadows in their story, which Josephus has narrated at length in the history of Herod, are darker than any in tragic drama. But it is well to hear from the words of that writer how, from the moment of the plot against our Saviour and the other innocents, a scourge sent from God seized him and drove him to death. In the seventeenth book of the *Jewish Antiquities* he writes of the catastrophe of Herod's life in this way: "But in Herod disease kept growing ever more cruel as God exacted punishment for his crimes. For there was a slow fire which did not give much indication to those who touched him of the

Digitized by Google

τοῖς ἐντὸς προσετίθει τὴν κάκωσιν, ἐπιθυμία δὲ δεινὴ τοῦ δέξασθαί τι, οὐδὲ ἦν μὴ οὐχ ὑπουργεῖν, καὶ ἕλκωσις τῶν τε ἐντέρων καὶ μάλιστα τοῦ κόλου δειναὶ ἀλγηδόνες καὶ φλέγμα ὑγρὸν περὶ τοὺς πόδας καὶ διαυγές· παραπλησία δὲ καὶ περὶ 7
τὸ ἧτρον κάκωσις ἦν, ναὶ μὴν καὶ τοῦ αἰδοίου σῆψις, σκώληκας ἐμποιοῦσα, πνεύματός τε ὀρθία ἔντασις, καὶ αὐτὴ λίαν ἀηδὴς ἀχθηδόνι τε τῆς ἀποφορᾶς καὶ τῷ πυκνῷ τοῦ ἄσθματος, ἐσπασμένος τε περὶ πᾶν ἦν μέρος, ἰσχὺν οὐχ ὑπομενητὴν προστιθέμενος. ἐλέγετο γοῦν ὑπὸ τῶν θειαζόντων καὶ οἷς ταῦτα 8
προαποφθέγγεσθαι σοφία πρόκειται, ποινὴν τοῦ πολλοῦ καὶ δυσσεβοῦς ταύτην ὁ θεὸς εἰσπράττεσθαι παρὰ τοῦ βασιλέως."

Ταῦτα μὲν ἐν τῇ δηλωθείσῃ γραφῇ παρασημαίνεται ὁ προειρημένος· καὶ ἐν τῇ δευτέρᾳ 9
δὲ τῶν Ἱστοριῶν τὰ παραπλήσια περὶ τοῦ αὐτοῦ παραδίδωσιν, ὧδέ πως γράφων·

B.I. 1, 656–660

"Ἔνθεν αὐτοῦ τὸ σῶμα πᾶν ἡ νόσος διαλαβοῦσα ποικίλοις πάθεσιν ἐμέριζεν. πυρετὸς μὲν γὰρ ἦν χλιαρός, κνησμὸς δ' ἀφόρητος τῆς ἐπιφανείας ὅλης καὶ κόλου συνεχεῖς ἀλγηδόνες περί τε τοὺς πόδας ὡς ὑδρωπιῶντος οἰδήματα τοῦ τε ἥτρου φλεγμονὴ καὶ δι' αἰδοίου σηπεδὼν σκώληκα γεννῶσα, πρὸς τούτοις ὀρθόπνοια καὶ δύσπνοια καὶ σπασμοὶ πάντων τῶν μελῶν, ὥστε τοὺς ἐπιθειάζοντας ποινὴν εἶναι τὰ νοσήματα λέγειν. ὁ δὲ παλαίων τοσούτοις πάθεσιν ὅμως τοῦ ζῆν 10
ἀντείχετο, σωτηρίαν τε ἤλπιζεν, καὶ θεραπείας ἐπενόει. διαβὰς γοῦν τὸν Ἰορδάνην τοῖς κατὰ Καλλιρόην θερμοῖς ἐχρῆτο· ταῦτα δὲ ἔξεισιν μὲν εἰς τὴν Ἀσφαλτῖτιν λίμνην, ὑπὸ γλυκύτητος

Digitized by Google

burning which within was increasing his evil plight, and an awful desire for nourishment, which could not be ministered to, and ulceration of the intestines, and especially awful pain in the colon, and a moist and transparent dropsy in his feet; similar too was an inflammation of the bladder, and even mortification of the genitals breeding worms. There was also a shrill acceleration of his breathing, and this was very offensive from the nature of the discharge and rapidity of his breath. He was convulsed in every part with intolerable severity.[1] Thus it was said by those who looked on, and had the wisdom to pronounce on these things, that God was exacting this penalty from the king for his many impieties."

The writer mentioned above gives this account in the treatise quoted, and in the second book of the *Jewish Wars* he gives a similar tradition, writing as follows:

"Then the disease spread through his whole body, and attacked each part with divers sufferings. The fever rose, there was intolerable itching of the whole surface, incessant pain in the colon, his feet were swollen as though with dropsy, there was inflammation of the bladder, and gangrene of the genitals, breeding worms. In addition to this, his breathing was difficult and impossible if he lay down, and there were spasms in every limb, so that the divines said that his illness was a punishment. Yet though he was struggling with such great suffering he still clung to life, hoping for health and thinking of cure. So he crossed the Jordan and took the warm baths at Callirhoë which flow out into the Dead

[1] The Greek of Eusebius seems impossible, but the text of Josephus is plainer, "Convulsion was in every limb, adding intolerable severity."

Digitized by Google

δέ ἐστι καὶ πότιμα. δόξαν ἐνταῦθα τοῖς ἰατροῖς 11
ἐλαίῳ θερμῷ πᾶν ἀναθάλψαι τὸ σῶμα χαλασθὲν
εἰς ἐλαίου πλήρη πύελον, ἐκλύει καὶ τοὺς ὀφθαλμοὺς
ὡς ἐκλυθεὶς ἀνέστρεψεν. θορύβου δὲ τῶν θερα-
πόντων γενομένου, πρὸς μὲν τὴν πληγὴν ἀνήνεγκεν,
εἰς δὲ τὸ λοιπὸν ἀπογνοὺς τὴν σωτηρίαν, τοῖς τε
στρατιώταις ἀνὰ δραχμὰς πεντήκοντα ἐκέλευσεν
διανεῖμαι καὶ πολλὰ χρήματα τοῖς ἡγεμόσι καὶ
τοῖς φίλοις. αὐτὸς δ' ὑποστρέφων εἰς Ἱεριχοῦντα 12
παραγίνεται, μελαγχολῶν ἤδη καὶ μόνον οὐκ
ἀπειλῶν αὐτῷ τι τῷ θανάτῳ· προέκοψεν δ' εἰς
ἐπιβουλὴν ἀθεμίτου πράξεως. τοὺς γὰρ ἀφ'
ἑκάστης κώμης ἐπισήμους ἄνδρας ἐξ ὅλης Ἰουδαίας
συναγαγὼν εἰς τὸν καλούμενον ἱππόδρομον ἐκέ-
λευσεν συγκλεῖσαι, προσκαλεσάμενος δὲ Σαλώμην 13
τὴν ἀδελφὴν καὶ τὸν ἄνδρα ταύτης Ἀλεξᾶν
'οἶδα' ἔφη ''Ιουδαίους τὸν ἐμὸν ἑορτάσοντας
θάνατον, δύναμαι δὲ πενθεῖσθαι δι' ἑτέρων καὶ
λαμπρὸν ἐπιτάφιον σχεῖν, ἂν ὑμεῖς θελήσητε
ταῖς ἐμαῖς ἐντολαῖς ὑπουργῆσαι. τούσδε τοὺς
φρουρουμένους ἄνδρας, ἐπειδὰν ἐκπνεύσω, τάχιστα
κτείνατε περιστήσαντες τοὺς στρατιώτας, ἵνα
πᾶσα Ἰουδαία καὶ πᾶς οἶκος καὶ ἄκων ἐπ' ἐμοὶ
Joseph. *B.I.* 1, 662 δακρύσῃ.'" καὶ μετὰ βραχέα φησίν "αὖθις 14
δέ, καὶ γὰρ ἐνδείᾳ τροφῆς καὶ βηχὶ σπα-
σμώδει διετείνετο, τῶν ἀλγηδόνων ἡσθεὶς φθά-
σαι τὴν εἱμαρμένην ἐπεβάλλετο· λαβὼν δὲ μῆλον,
ᾔτησε καὶ μαχαίριον· εἰώθει γὰρ ἀποτέμνων
ἐσθίειν· ἔπειτα περιαθρήσας μή τις ὁ κωλύσων
αὐτὸν εἴη, ἐπῆρεν τὴν δεξιὰν ὡς πλήξων ἑαυτόν."
Joseph. *A.I.* 17, 187. 191 ἐπὶ δὲ τούτοις ὁ αὐτὸς ἱστορεῖ συγγραφεὺς 15
ἕτερον αὐτοῦ γνήσιον παῖδα πρὸ τῆς ἐσχάτης

Digitized by Google

Sea but are sweet and drinkable. There it was decided by his physicians to warm up his whole body with hot oil by letting it down into a tub full of oil, but he collapsed and turned up his eyes as though dying. Disturbance arose among the attendants and he came back to his sufferings, but for the future gave up hope of cure and ordered fifty drachmas each to be distributed to the soldiers and much money to the governors and his friends. He then returned and reached Jericho, full of melancholy and scarcely refraining from the threat of suicide. But he gained strength enough to plan one more execrable crime; for he brought together the notables from every village from all Judaea and commanded them to be shut up in the so-called Hippodrome. He then summoned Salome, his sister, and her husband, Alexas, and said, 'I know that the Jews will celebrate my death with festivity, but I can be mourned by others and have a splendid funeral if you are willing to administer my commands. Station soldiers around these men who are shut up, and as soon as I expire kill them with all speed, that all Judaea and every house may weep over me even against its will.'" After a little Josephus says: "Later on, racked by lack of food and a convulsive cough, the pains he felt urged him to anticipate fate. He took an apple and asked for a knife, for it was his custom to peel it and eat it. Then, having turned round, lest there should be any to prevent him, he raised his right hand as if he were going to stab himself." Moreover, the same historian relates that he ordered the murder of another legitimate son before the end of his life,

Digitized by Google

B.I. 1, 664. 665 τοῦ βίου τελευτῆς, τρίτον ἐπὶ δυσὶν ἤδη προ-
ανῃρημένοις, δι' ἐπιτάξεως ἀνελόντα, παραχρῆμα
τὴν ζωὴν οὐ μετὰ σμικρῶν ἀλγηδόνων ἀπορρῆξαι.
καὶ τοιοῦτο μὲν τὸ πέρας τῆς Ἡρῴδου γέγονεν 16
τελευτῆς, ποινὴν δικαίαν ἐκτίσαντος ὧν ἀμφὶ
τὴν Βηθλεὲμ ἀνεῖλεν παίδων τῆς τοῦ σωτῆρος
Matt. 2, 19. 20 ἡμῶν ἐπιβουλῆς ἕνεκα· μεθ' ἣν ἄγγελος ὄναρ ἐπι-
στὰς ἐν Αἰγύπτῳ διατρίβοντι τῷ Ἰωσὴφ ἀπᾶραι
ἅμα τῷ παιδὶ καὶ τῇ τούτου μητρὶ ἐπὶ τὴν Ἰου-
δαίαν παρακελεύεται, τεθνηκέναι δηλῶν τοὺς ἀνα-
ζητοῦντας τὴν ψυχὴν τοῦ παιδίου. τούτοις δ' ὁ
Matt. 2, 22 εὐαγγελιστὴς ἐπιφέρει λέγων "ἀκούσας δὲ ὅτι
Ἀρχέλαος βασιλεύει ἀντὶ Ἡρῴδου τοῦ πατρὸς
αὐτοῦ ἐφοβήθη ἐκεῖ ἀπελθεῖν· χρηματισθεὶς δὲ
κατ' ὄναρ ἀνεχώρησεν εἰς τὰ μέρη τῆς Γαλιλαίας."

IX. Τῇ δ' ἐπὶ τὴν ἀρχὴν μετὰ τὸν Ἡρῴδην τοῦ 1
Ἀρχελάου καταστάσει συνάδει καὶ ὁ προειρημένος
ἱστορικός, τόν τε τρόπον ἀναγράφων, καθ' ὃν ἐκ
διαθηκῶν Ἡρῴδου τοῦ πατρὸς ἐπικρίσεώς τε
Καίσαρος Αὐγούστου τὴν κατὰ Ἰουδαίων βασιλείαν
διεδέξατο, καὶ ὡς τῆς ἀρχῆς μετὰ δεκαέτη χρόνον
Luke 3, 1 ἀποπεσόντος οἱ ἀδελφοὶ Φίλιππός τε καὶ ὁ νέος
Ἡρῴδης ἅμα Λυσανίᾳ τὰς ἑαυτῶν διεῖπον τε-
τραρχίας.

Joseph. *A.I.* 18, 32. 33. 35. 89 Ὁ δ' αὐτὸς ἐν ὀκτωκαιδεκάτῳ τῆς Ἀρχαιο- 2
λογίας κατὰ τὸ δωδέκατον ἔτος τῆς Τιβερίου
βασιλείας (τοῦτον γὰρ τὴν καθ' ὅλων ἀρχὴν
διαδέξασθαι ἑπτὰ ἐπὶ πεντήκοντα ἔτεσιν τὴν
ἡγεμονίαν ἐπικρατήσαντος Αὐγούστου) Πόντιον
Πιλᾶτον τὴν Ἰουδαίαν ἐπιτραπῆναι δηλοῖ, ἐνταῦθα
δὲ ἐφ' ὅλοις ἔτεσιν δέκα σχεδὸν εἰς αὐτὴν παρα-
μεῖναι τὴν Τιβερίου τελευτήν. οὐκοῦν σαφῶς 3

Digitized by Google

making the third in addition to the two others already put to death, and immediately gave up his life, torn by great agony. Such was the end of Herod: he paid a just penalty for the children that he murdered at Bethlehem for the sake of his plot against our Saviour. After this an angel appeared in a dream to Joseph, who was staying in Egypt, and commanded him to return to Judaea with the child and his mother, and announced that those who sought the life of the little child were dead. The evangelist continues by saying, "Now when he heard that Archelaus was king in the room of Herod his father, he was afraid to depart there, and, being warned in a dream, retired to the districts of Galilee."

IX. The historian already mentioned corroborates the accession to power of Archelaus after Herod, describing both the way in which he succeeded to the kingdom of the Jews by the testaments of Herod his father and the decision of Caesar Augustus, and how, when he fell from power after ten years, his brothers Philip and the younger Herod, together with Lysanias, administered their own tetrarchies.

In the eighteenth book of the *Antiquities* the same Josephus explains how Pontius Pilate was given the administration of Judaea in the twelfth year of Tiberius (for he had succeeded to universal sovereignty after Augustus had held the government for fifty-seven years), and for ten whole years he remained in office, almost until the death of Tiberius.

Digitized by Google

ἀπελήλεγκται τὸ πλάσμα τῶν κατὰ τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν ὑπομνήματα χθὲς καὶ πρῴην διαδεδωκότων, ἐν οἷς πρῶτος αὐτὸς ὁ τῆς παρασημειώσεως χρόνος τῶν πεπλακότων ἀπελέγχει τὸ ψεῦδος. ἐπὶ τῆς τετάρτης δ' οὖν ὑπατείας Τιβερίου, ἢ 4
γέγονεν ἔτους ἑβδόμου τῆς βασιλείας αὐτοῦ, τὰ περὶ τὸ σωτήριον πάθος αὐτοῖς τολμηθέντα περιέχει, καθ' ὃν δείκνυται χρόνον μηδ' ἐπιστάς πω τῇ Ἰουδαίᾳ Πιλᾶτος, εἴ γε τῷ Ἰωσήπῳ μάρτυρι χρήσασθαι δέον, σαφῶς οὕτως σημαίνοντι κατὰ τὴν δηλωθεῖσαν αὐτοῦ γραφὴν ὅτι δὴ δωδεκάτῳ ἐνιαυτῷ τῆς Τιβερίου βασιλείας ἐπίτροπος τῆς Ἰουδαίας ὑπὸ Τιβερίου καθίσταται Πιλᾶτος.

Luke 3, 1 X. Ἐπὶ τούτων δὴ οὖν, κατὰ τὸν εὐαγγελιστὴν 1
ἔτος πεντεκαιδέκατον Τιβερίου Καίσαρος ἄγοντος τέταρτον δὲ τῆς ἡγεμονίας Ποντίου Πιλάτου, τῆς τε λοιπῆς Ἰουδαίας τετραρχούντων Ἡρῴδου καὶ Λυσανίου καὶ Φιλίππου, ὁ σωτὴρ καὶ κύριος
Luke 3, 23 ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦς ὁ Χριστὸς τοῦ θεοῦ, ἀρχόμενος ὡς εἰ ἐτῶν τριάκοντα, ἐπὶ τὸ Ἰωάννου βάπτισμα παραγίνεται, καταρχήν τε ποιεῖται τηνικαῦτα τοῦ κατὰ τὸ εὐαγγέλιον κηρύγματος.

Luke, 3, 2 Φησὶν δὲ αὐτὸν ἡ θεία γραφὴ τὸν πάντα τῆς 2
διδασκαλίας διατελέσαι χρόνον ἐπὶ ἀρχιερέως Ἄννα καὶ Καϊάφα, δηλοῦσα ὅτι δὴ ἐν τοῖς μεταξὺ

[1] The word translated "reports" is used of official documents, such as the *Acta Pilati* claimed to be; the Latin is *commentarii*—well known from its use by Caesar. The *Acta Pilati* now extant are Christian forgeries of uncertain date. Those to which Eusebius refers were heathen forgeries introduced in the time of the great persecution under Maximin.

[2] Eusebius reckons the baptism of Christ as taking place

Digitized by Google

So that there is clear proof of the forgery of those who recently or formerly have issued a series of Pilate's Reports[1] about our Saviour; for in them the dates mentioned convict the forgers of untruth. They relate that the crime of the Saviour's death fell in the fourth consulship of Tiberius, which was the seventh year of his reign, but at that time it has been shown that Pilate was not yet in charge of Judaea, if Josephus may be used as a witness, for he clearly shows, in the writing quoted from him above, that it was actually in the twelfth year of the reign of Tiberius that Pilate was appointed procurator of Judaea by Tiberius.

X. In the time of these rulers then, according to the evangelist, when Tiberius Caesar was in the fifteenth year of his reign and Pontius Pilate the fourth of his governorship, and Herod, Lysanias, and Philip were tetrarchs of the rest of Judaea, our Saviour and Lord, Jesus the Christ of God, "beginning to be about thirty years old," came to the baptism of John and there began the proclamation of the gospel.[2]

The divine Scripture says that he completed the whole time of his teaching while Annas and Caiaphas were high priest,[3] showing that the

in the fifteenth year of Tiberius, dating his accession from the death of Augustus. As he was then in his thirtieth year he was born in the forty-second year of Augustus, fourteen years before his death. This is the reckoning of time known as the Christian era (see p. 46).

[3] The singular "high priest" is somewhat harsher in English than in Greek, but represents the fact that according to Jewish custom there was never more than one high priest at the same time. Luke's statement seems to contradict this fact, and Eusebius tries to explain it by interpreting the difficult phrase as meaning the period between the high priesthoods of Annas and Caiaphas.

Digitized by Google

τῆς τούτων ἔτεσιν λειτουργίας ὁ πᾶς τῆς διδασκαλίας αὐτῷ συνεπεράνθη χρόνος. ἀρξαμένου μὲν οὖν κατὰ τὴν τοῦ Ἄννα ἀρχιερωσύνην, μέχρι δὲ τῆς ἀρχῆς τοῦ Καϊάφα παραμείναντος οὐδ' ὅλος ὁ μεταξὺ τετραέτης παρίσταται χρόνος. τῶν γάρ τοι κατὰ τὸν νόμον ἤδη πως καθαιρου- 3
μένων ἐξ ἐκείνου θεσμῶν, λέλυτο μὲν ᾧ διὰ βίου καὶ ἐκ προγόνων διαδοχῆς τὰ τῆς τοῦ θεοῦ θεραπείας προσήκοντα ἦν, ὑπὸ δὲ τῶν Ῥωμαϊκῶν ἡγεμόνων ἄλλοτε ἄλλοι τὴν ἀρχιερωσύνην ἐπιτρεπόμενοι, οὐ πλεῖον ἔτους ἑνὸς ἐπὶ ταύτης 4
διετέλουν. ἱστορεῖ δ' οὖν ὁ Ἰώσηπος τέσσαρας κατὰ διαδοχὴν ἐπὶ Καϊάφαν ἀρχιερεῖς μετὰ τὸν Ἄνναν διαγενέσθαι, κατὰ τὴν αὐτὴν τῆς Ἀρχαιο-
Joseph. *A.I.* 18, 34. 35 λογίας γραφὴν ὧδέ πως λέγων "Οὐαλέριος Γρᾶτος, παύσας ἱεράρχαι Ἄνανον, Ἰσμάηλον ἀρχιερέα ἀποφαίνει τὸν τοῦ Φαβι, καὶ τοῦτον δὲ μετ' οὐ πολὺ μεταστήσας, Ἐλεάζαρον τὸν Ἀνάνου τοῦ ἀρχιερέως υἱὸν ἀποδείκνυσιν ἀρχιερέα. ἐνιαυτοῦ δὲ διαγενομένου καὶ τόνδε παύσας, Σίμωνι τῷ Καμίθου τὴν ἀρχιερωσύνην 5
παραδίδωσιν. οὐ πλέον δὲ καὶ τῷδε ἐνιαυτοῦ τὴν τιμὴν ἔχοντι διεγένετο χρόνος, καὶ Ἰώσηπος, ὁ καὶ Καϊάφας, διάδοχος ἦν αὐτῷ." οὐκοῦν 6
ὁ σύμπας οὐδ' ὅλος τετραέτης ἀποδείκνυται τῆς τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν διδασκαλίας χρόνος, τεσσάρων ἐπὶ τέσσαρσιν ἔτεσιν ἀρχιερέων ἀπὸ τοῦ Ἄννα καὶ ἐπὶ τὴν τοῦ Καϊάφα κατάστασιν ἐνιαύσιον λειτουργίαν ἐκτετελεκότων. τόν
Matt. 26, 3. 51 John 11, 49 John 18, 13. 24. 28 γέ τοι Καϊάφαν ἀρχιερέα εἰκότως τοῦ ἐνιαυτοῦ, καθ' ὃν τὰ τοῦ σωτηρίου πάθους ἐπετελεῖτο, ἡ τοῦ εὐαγγελίου παρεσημήνατο γραφή, ἐξ ἧς καὶ

Digitized by Google

whole time of his teaching was bounded by the years which cover their administration. Since, then, he began in the high priesthood of Annas and continued to the reign of Caiaphas the intervening time does not extend to a full four years. For since the regulations of the law were at that time already in process of destruction the rule had been relaxed by which the duties of the service of God were held for life and by inherited succession, and the Roman governors entrusted the high priesthood at different times to different men, who did not hold this office for more than one year. Moreover Josephus relates that four high priests intervened in succession between Annas and Caiaphas, and speaks as follows in the text of the *Antiquities*:

"Valerius Gratus, having deprived Ananus of the priesthood, appoints as high priest Ishmael the son of Phabi. Him, too, he removes shortly and nominates as high priest Eliezer the son of Ananus the high priest. But when a year was past he removes him also and hands over the high priesthood to Simon the son of Kamithus. But neither did his tenure of office last for more than a year, and Josephus, who is also called Caiaphas, was his successor." Thus the whole time of the teaching of our Saviour is shown to be not even a full four years; since from Annas to the appointment of Caiaphas in four years four high priests held the yearly office. Naturally, then, the scripture of the gospel has indicated Caiaphas as high priest of the year in which the Saviour's passion was completed, and from this also the time of the teaching of Christ is shown to be not

Digitized by Google

αὐτῆς οὐκ ἀπάδων τῆς προκειμένης ἐπιτηρήσεως
ὁ τῆς τοῦ Χριστοῦ διδασκαλίας ἀποδείκνυται
Matt. 10, 1 ff. χρόνος. ἀλλὰ γὰρ ὁ σωτὴρ καὶ κύριος ἡμῶν 7
Mark 3, 14 ff. οὐ μετὰ πλεῖστον τῆς καταρχῆς τοῦ κηρύγματος
Luke 6, 13. 9, 1 ff. τοὺς δώδεκα ἀποστόλους ἀνακαλεῖται, οὓς καὶ
μόνους τῶν λοιπῶν αὐτοῦ μαθητῶν κατά τι γέρας
ἐξαίρετον ἀποστόλους ὠνόμασεν, καὶ αὖθις ἀνα-
Luke 10, 1 δείκνυσιν ἑτέρους ἑβδομήκοντα, οὓς καὶ αὐτοὺς
ἀπέστειλεν ἀνὰ δύο δύο πρὸ προσώπου αὐτοῦ εἰς
πάντα τόπον καὶ πόλιν οὗ ἤμελλεν αὐτὸς ἔρχεσθαι.

Matt. 14, 1-12 Mark 6, 14-29 Luke 3, 19. 20. 9, 7-9 Joseph. *A.I.* 18, 109-114 XI. Οὐκ εἰς μακρὸν δὲ τοῦ βαπτιστοῦ Ἰωάννου 1
ὑπὸ τοῦ νέου Ἡρῴδου τὴν κεφαλὴν ἀποτμηθέντος
μνημονεύει μὲν καὶ ἡ θεία τῶν εὐαγγελίων γραφή,
συνιστορεῖ γε μὴν καὶ ὁ Ἰώσηπος, ὀνομαστὶ τῆς
τε Ἡρῳδιάος μνήμην πεποιημένος καὶ ὡς ἀδελφοῦ
γυναῖκα οὖσαν αὐτὴν ἠγάγετο πρὸς γάμον Ἡρῴδης,
ἀθετήσας μὲν τὴν προτέραν αὐτῷ κατὰ νόμους
γεγαμημένην (Ἀρέτα δὲ ἦν αὕτη τοῦ Πετραίων
βασιλέως θυγάτηρ), τὴν δὲ Ἡρῳδιάδα ζῶντος
διαστήσας τοῦ ἀνδρός· δι' ἣν καὶ τὸν Ἰωάννην
ἀνελὼν πόλεμον αἴρεται πρὸς τὸν Ἀρέταν, ὡς
ἂν ἠτιμασμένης αὐτῷ τῆς θυγατρός, ἐν ᾧ πολέμῳ 2
μάχης γενομένης πάντα φησὶν τὸν Ἡρῴδου
στρατὸν διαφθαρῆναι καὶ ταῦτα πεπονθέναι τῆς
ἐπιβουλῆς ἕνεκεν τῆς κατὰ τοῦ Ἰωάννου γεγενη-
Joseph. *A.I.* 18, 117. 18, 240-255 μένης. ὁ δ' αὐτὸς Ἰώσηπος ἐν τοῖς μάλιστα 3
δικαιότατον καὶ βαπτιστὴν ὁμολογῶν γεγονέναι
τὸν Ἰωάννην, τοῖς περὶ αὐτοῦ κατὰ τὴν τῶν
εὐαγγελίων γραφὴν ἀναγεγραμμένοις συμμαρτυρεῖ,
ἱστορεῖ δὲ καὶ τὸν Ἡρῴδην τῆς βασιλείας ἀπο-
πεπτωκέναι διὰ τὴν αὐτὴν Ἡρῳδιάδα, μεθ' ἧς
αὐτὸν καὶ εἰς τὴν ὑπερορίαν ἀπεληλάσθαι, Βίενναν

Digitized by Google

discordant with the preceding observation. However, our Lord and Saviour called the twelve apostles not long after the beginning of his preaching, and to them alone of all his disciples did he give the name of apostles as a special privilege. Afterwards he appointed seventy others, and them also he sent[1] out in advance of him, two by two, to every place and city where he was to come himself.

XI. The divine scripture of the gospels relates that not long afterwards John the Baptist was beheaded by Herod the younger, and Josephus confirms the narrative, mentioning Herodias by name, and telling how, though she was his brother's wife, Herod took her in marriage, by putting aside her who had formerly been legally married to him (and she was the daughter of Aretas the king of the Petraeans) and separating Herodias from her husband who was alive. For her sake, too, after killing John, he waged war with Aretas for the dishonour done his daughter; and Josephus says that in a battle in this war the whole army of Herod was destroyed, and that he suffered this because of the plot against John. The same Josephus admits that John was peculiarly righteous, and a baptist, confirming the testimony recorded in the text of the gospels concerning him. He also relates that Herod was deprived of his kingdom for the sake of the same Herodias, and was exiled with

[1] It is impossible in English to bring out the fact that the word "sent" is the same as that implied by the word "apostle."

Digitized by Google

τῆς Γαλλίας πόλιν οἰκεῖν καταδικασθέντα. καὶ 4
ταῦτά γε αὐτῷ ἐν ὀκτωκαιδεκάτῳ τῆς Ἀρχαιολογίας δεδήλωται, ἔνθα συλλαβαῖς αὐταῖς περὶ τοῦ Ἰωάννου ταῦτα γράφει

Joseph. *A. I.* 18, 116-119

"Τισὶ δὲ τῶν Ἰουδαίων ἐδόκει ὀλωλέναι τὸν Ἡρῴδου στρατὸν ὑπὸ τοῦ θεοῦ, καὶ μάλα δικαίως τιννυμένου κατὰ ποινὴν Ἰωάννου τοῦ καλουμένου βαπτιστοῦ. κτείνει γὰρ τοῦτον Ἡρῴδης, 5
ἀγαθὸν ἄνδρα καὶ τοῖς Ἰουδαίοις κελεύοντα ἀρετὴν ἐπασκοῦσιν καὶ τὰ πρὸς ἀλλήλους δικαιοσύνῃ καὶ πρὸς τὸν θεὸν εὐσεβείᾳ χρωμένους βαπτισμῷ συνιέναι· οὕτω γὰρ δὴ καὶ τὴν βάπτισιν ἀποδεκτὴν αὐτῷ φανεῖσθαι, μὴ ἐπί τινων ἁμαρτάδων παραιτήσει χρωμένων, ἀλλ' ἐφ' ἁγνείᾳ τοῦ σώματος, ἅτε δὴ καὶ τῆς ψυχῆς δικαιοσύνῃ προεκκεκαθαρμένης. καὶ τῶν ἄλλων συστρεφομένων (καὶ γὰρ 6
ἥρθησαν ἐπὶ πλεῖστον τῇ ἀκροάσει τῶν λόγων), δείσας Ἡρῴδης τὸ ἐπὶ τοσόνδε πιθανὸν αὐτοῦ τοῖς ἀνθρώποις, μὴ ἐπὶ ἀποστάσει τινὶ φέροι (πάντα γὰρ ἐοίκεσαν συμβουλῇ τῇ ἐκείνου πράξοντες), πολὺ κρεῖττον ἡγεῖται, πρίν τι νεώτερον ὑπ' αὐτοῦ γενέσθαι, προλαβὼν ἀναιρεῖν, ἢ μεταβολῆς γενομένης εἰς πράγματα ἐμπεσὼν μετανοεῖν. καὶ ὁ μὲν ὑποψίᾳ τῇ Ἡρῴδου δέσμιος εἰς τὸν Μαχαιροῦντα πεμφθείς, τὸ προειρημένον φρούριον, ταύτῃ κτίννυται."

Ταῦτα περὶ τοῦ Ἰωάννου διελθών, καὶ τοῦ 7

[1] Eusebius has slightly altered the text of Josephus. This ran: "For Herod killed him, a good man and one who commanded the Jews training themselves in virtue and practising righteousness towards one another and piety towards God to come together for baptism." It would seem to mean that John was preaching to ascetics and suggested

Digitized by Google

her, being condemned to live in Vienne, a city of Gaul. The account of these things is given in the eighteenth book of the *Antiquities*, where he writes concerning John exactly as follows :

" Now to some of the Jews it seemed that the army of Herod had been destroyed by God and that he was paying a very just penalty for John who was called the Baptist. For Herod killed him, a good man and one who commanded the Jews, training themselves in virtue, to practise righteousness towards one another and piety towards God, and to come together for baptism. For he said that baptism would prove acceptable to him only in those who used it not to escape from any sins but for bodily purity, on condition that the soul also had been previously cleansed thoroughly by righteousness. And when the rest collected, for they were greatly excited at hearing his words, Herod feared his great persuasiveness with men lest it should lead to some rising, for they appeared ready to do everything under his advice. He therefore considered it much better, before a revolt should spring from John, to put him to death in anticipation, rather than be involved in difficulties through the actual revolution and then regret it. And John, through Herod's suspicion, was sent a prisoner to Macherus, the prison mentioned already, and was there put to death." [1]

After narrating these things about John in the

baptism as a final act of perfection. This explains the reference to " when the rest collected." So long as John preached to ascetics Herod did not mind but was disturbed when the rest of the public manifested interest. Whiston's translation of Josephus and an unnecessary emendation in the text of Niese's edition of Josephus have conspired to obscure these facts.

Digitized by Google

σωτῆρος ἡμῶν κατὰ τὴν αὐτὴν τοῦ συγγράμματος ἱστορίαν ὧδέ πως μέμνηται

Joseph. *A.I.* 18, 63. 64

"Γίνεται δὲ κατὰ τοῦτον τὸν χρόνον Ἰησοῦς, σοφὸς ἀνήρ, εἴ γε ἄνδρα αὐτὸν λέγειν χρή. ἦν γὰρ παραδόξων ἔργων ποιητής, διδάσκαλος ἀνθρώπων τῶν ἡδονῇ τἀληθῆ δεχομένων, καὶ πολλοὺς μὲν τῶν Ἰουδαίων, πολλοὺς δὲ καὶ ἀπὸ τοῦ Ἑλληνικοῦ ἐπηγάγετο. ὁ Χριστὸς οὗτος ἦν, καὶ 8 αὐτὸν ἐνδείξει τῶν πρώτων ἀνδρῶν παρ' ἡμῖν σταυρῷ ἐπιτετιμηκότος Πιλάτου, οὐκ ἐπαύσαντο οἱ τὸ πρῶτον ἀγαπήσαντες· ἐφάνη γὰρ αὐτοῖς τρίτην ἔχων ἡμέραν πάλιν ζῶν, τῶν θείων προφητῶν ταῦτά τε καὶ ἄλλα μυρία περὶ αὐτοῦ θαυμάσια εἰρηκότων. εἰς ἔτι τε νῦν τῶν Χριστιανῶν ἀπὸ τοῦδε ὠνομασμένων οὐκ ἐπέλιπε τὸ φῦλον."

Ταῦτα τοῦ ἐξ αὐτῶν Ἑβραίων συγγραφέως 9 ἀνέκαθεν τῇ ἑαυτοῦ γραφῇ περί τε τοῦ βαπτιστοῦ Ἰωάννου καὶ τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν παραδεδωκότος, τίς ἂν ἔτι λείποιτο ἀποφυγὴ τοῦ μὴ ἀναισχύντους ἀπελέγχεσθαι τοὺς τὰ κατ' αὐτῶν πλασαμένους ὑπομνήματα; ἀλλὰ ταῦτα μὲν ἐχέτω ταύτῃ.

XII. Τῶν γε μὴν τοῦ σωτῆρος ἀποστόλων παντί 1 τῳ σαφὴς ἐκ τῶν εὐαγγελίων ἡ πρόσρησις· τῶν δὲ ἑβδομήκοντα μαθητῶν κατάλογος μὲν οὐδεὶς οὐδαμῇ φέρεται, λέγεταί γε μὴν εἷς αὐτῶν Βαρναβᾶς γεγονέναι, οὗ διαφόρως μὲν καὶ αἱ Πράξεις τῶν ἀποστόλων ἐμνημόνευσαν, οὐχ ἥκιστα δὲ καὶ

Gal. 2, 1. 9. 13 Παῦλος Γαλάταις γράφων. τούτων δ' εἶναί φασι

1 Cor. 1, 1 καὶ Σωσθένην τὸν ἅμα Παύλῳ Κορινθίοις ἐπιστείλαντα· ἡ δ' ἱστορία παρὰ Κλήμεντι κατὰ τὴν 2 πέμπτην τῶν Ὑποτυπώσεων· ἐν ᾗ καὶ Κηφᾶν,

Gal. 2, 11 περὶ οὗ φησιν ὁ Παῦλος "ὅτε δὲ ἦλθεν Κηφᾶς

Digitized by Google

same historical work he speaks as follows concerning our Saviour:

"At this time arose Jesus, a wise man, if indeed he must be called a man, for he was a doer of marvellous deeds, a teacher of men who received the truth with pleasure, and he led after him many of the Jews and many also of the Gentile population. This was the Christ; and when Pilate had condemned him to the cross at the instigation of the leading men among us, those who had first loved him did not cease to do so, for he appeared to them when three days dead restored to life, and the divine prophets had told these and ten thousand other wonders concerning him. And up till now the tribe of Christians which are named after him has not died out."

When a writer sprung from the Hebrews themselves handed on in his own writing these details concerning John the Baptist and our Saviour, what alternative is there but to convict of shamelessness those who have concocted the Reports about them?[1] But let this suffice.

XII. Now the names of the apostles of our Saviour are plain to everyone from the gospels, but no list of the Seventy is anywhere extant. It is said, however, that one of them was Barnabas, and of him the Acts of the Apostles has also made special mention, and so also has Paul when writing to the Galatians. And they say that Sosthenes too, who wrote with Paul to the Corinthians, was one of them. And there is the story in Clement, in the fifth book of the *Hypotyposes*, in which he says that Cephas, concerning whom Paul says "and when Cephas

[1] The reference is again to the heathen Acts of Pilate.

Digitized by Google

εἰς Ἀντιόχειαν, κατὰ πρόσωπον αὐτῷ ἀντέστην," ἕνα φησὶ γεγονέναι τῶν ἑβδομήκοντα μαθητῶν, ὁμώνυμον Πέτρῳ τυγχάνοντα τῷ ἀποστόλῳ. καὶ 3
Acts 1, 23–26 Ματθίαν δὲ τὸν ἀντὶ Ἰούδα τοῖς ἀποστόλοις συγκαταλεγέντα τόν τε σὺν αὐτῷ τῇ ὁμοίᾳ ψήφῳ τιμηθέντα τῆς αὐτῆς τῶν ἑβδομήκοντα κλήσεως ἠξιῶσθαι κατέχει λόγος. καὶ Θαδδαῖον δὲ ἕνα τῶν αὐτῶν εἶναί φασι, περὶ οὗ καὶ ἱστορίαν ἐλθοῦσαν εἰς ἡμᾶς αὐτίκα μάλα ἐκθήσομαι. καὶ 4
τῶν ἑβδομήκοντα δὲ πλείους τοῦ σωτῆρος πεφηνέναι μαθητὰς εὗροις ἂν ἐπιτηρήσας, μάρτυρι
1 Cor. 15, 5-7 χρώμενος τῷ Παύλῳ, μετὰ τὴν ἐκ νεκρῶν ἔγερσιν ὤφθαι αὐτὸν φήσαντι πρῶτον μὲν Κηφᾷ, ἔπειτα τοῖς δώδεκα, καὶ μετὰ τούτους ἐπάνω πεντακοσίοις ἀδελφοῖς ἐφάπαξ, ὧν τινὰς μὲν ἔφασκεν κεκοιμῆσθαι, τοὺς πλείους δ' ἔτι τῷ βίῳ, καθ' ὃν καιρὸν αὐτῷ ταῦτα συνετάττετο, περιμένειν· ἔπειτα δ' ὤφθαι αὐτὸν Ἰακώβῳ φησίν· εἷς δὲ 5
καὶ οὗτος τῶν φερομένων τοῦ σωτῆρος ἀδελφῶν ἦν· εἶθ' ὡς παρὰ τούτους κατὰ μίμησιν τῶν δώδεκα πλείστων ὅσων ὑπαρξάντων ἀποστόλων, οἷος καὶ αὐτὸς ὁ Παῦλος ἦν, προστίθησι λέγων "ἔπειτα ὤφθη τοῖς ἀποστόλοις πᾶσιν." ταῦτα μὲν οὖν περὶ τῶνδε.

XIII. Τῆς δὲ περὶ τὸν Θαδδαῖον ἱστορίας τοιοῦ- 1
τος γέγονεν ὁ τρόπος. ἡ τοῦ κυρίου καὶ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ θειότης, εἰς πάντας ἀνθρώπους τῆς παραδοξοποιοῦ δυνάμεως ἕνεκεν βοωμένη, μυρίους ὅσους καὶ τῶν ἐπ' ἀλλοδαπῆς πορρωτάτω ὄντων τῆς Ἰουδαίας νόσων καὶ παντοίων παθῶν ἐλπίδι θεραπείας ἐπήγετο. ταύτῃ τοι βασιλεὺς 2
Ἄβγαρος, τῶν ὑπὲρ Εὐφράτην ἐθνῶν ἐπισηη-

Digitized by Google

came to Antioch I withstood him to the face," was one of the seventy disciples, who had the same name as the apostle Peter. Tradition also relates that Matthias, who was reckoned with the apostles in the place of Judas, and he who was honoured with him at the same casting of lots had been called among the Seventy. They also say that Thaddaeus was one of them, and I will shortly recount a narrative which has reached us concerning him. And consideration would show you that there were more disciples of the Saviour than the Seventy, if you used Paul as a witness, for he says that after the resurrection from the dead Jesus was seen first by Cephas, afterwards by the twelve, and after these by above five hundred brethren at once; of whom he says that some had fallen asleep, but the majority remained alive at the time that he composed this account. He says that he was then seen by James, who was one of the alleged brethren of the Saviour, and then, as though in addition to these there had been numberless apostles, on the model of the twelve, like Paul himself, he goes on to say " then he was seen by all the apostles." This then suffices for them.

XIII. The manner of the narrative concerning Thaddaeus is as follows. The divinity of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ became famous among all men because of his wonder-working power, and led to him myriads even of those who in foreign lands were far remote from Judaea, in the hope of healing from diseases and from all kinds of sufferings. In this way King Abgar, the celebrated monarch of the

Digitized by Google

μότατα δυναστεύων, πάθει τὸ σῶμα δεινῷ καὶ οὐ θεραπευτῷ ὅσον ἐπ' ἀνθρωπείᾳ δυνάμει καταφθειρόμενος, ὡς καὶ τοὔνομα τοῦ Ἰησοῦ πολὺ καὶ τὰς δυνάμεις συμφώνως πρὸς ἁπάντων μαρτυρουμένας ἐπύθετο, ἱκέτης αὐτοῦ πέμψας δι' ἐπιστοληφόρου γίνεται, τῆς νόσου τυχεῖν ἀπαλλαγῆς ἀξιῶν. ὁ δὲ μὴ τότε καλοῦντι ὑπακούσας, ἐπι- 3
στολῆς γοῦν αὐτὸν ἰδίας καταξιοῖ, ἕνα τῶν αὐτοῦ μαθητῶν ἀποστέλλειν ἐπὶ θεραπείᾳ τῆς νόσου ὁμοῦ τε αὐτοῦ σωτηρίᾳ καὶ τῶν προσηκόντων ἁπάντων ὑπισχνούμενος. οὐκ εἰς μακρὸν δὲ ἄρα 4
αὐτῷ ἐπληροῦτο τὰ τῆς ἐπαγγελίας. μετὰ γοῦν τὴν ἐκ νεκρῶν ἀνάστασιν αὐτοῦ καὶ τὴν εἰς οὐρανοὺς ἄνοδον Θωμᾶς, τῶν ἀποστόλων εἷς τῶν δώδεκα, Θαδδαῖον, ἐν ἀριθμῷ καὶ αὐτὸν τῶν ἑβδομήκοντα τοῦ Χριστοῦ μαθητῶν κατειλεγμένον, κινήσει θειοτέρᾳ ἐπὶ τὰ Ἔδεσσα κήρυκα καὶ εὐαγγελιστὴν τῆς περὶ τοῦ Χριστοῦ διδασκαλίας ἐκπέμπει, πάντα τε δι' αὐτοῦ τὰ τῆς τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν τέλος ἐλάμβανεν ἐπαγγελίας. ἔχεις καὶ τούτων 5
ἀνάγραπτον τὴν μαρτυρίαν, ἐκ τῶν κατὰ Ἔδεσσαν τὸ τηνικάδε βασιλευομένην πόλιν γραμματοφυλακείων ληφθεῖσαν· ἐν γοῦν τοῖς αὐτόθι δημοσίοις χάρταις, τοῖς τὰ παλαιὰ καὶ τὰ ἀμφὶ τὸν Ἄβγαρον πραχθέντα περιέχουσι, καὶ ταῦτα εἰς ἔτι νῦν ἐξ ἐκείνου πεφυλαγμένα εὕρηται, οὐδὲν δὲ οἷον καὶ αὐτῶν ἐπακοῦσαι τῶν ἐπιστολῶν, ἀπὸ τῶν ἀρχείων ἡμῖν ἀναληφθεισῶν καὶ τόνδε αὐτοῖς ῥήμασιν ἐκ τῆς Σύρων φωνῆς μεταβληθεισῶν τὸν τρόπον·

Digitized by Google

nations beyond the Euphrates, perishing from terrible suffering in his body, beyond human power to heal, when he heard much of the name of Jesus and of the miracles attested unanimously by all men, became his suppliant and sent to him by the bearer of a letter, asking to find relief from his disease. Jesus did not give heed to his request at the time, yet vouchsafed him a letter of his own, promising to send one of his disciples for the cure of his disease, and for the salvation alike of himself and of all his relations. Nor were the terms of his promise long in being fulfilled. After his resurrection from the dead and return into heaven, Thomas, one of the twelve apostles, was divinely moved to send to Edessa Thaddaeus, who was himself reckoned among the number of the Seventy disciples, as herald and evangelist of the teaching about Christ, and through him all the terms of our Saviour's promise received fulfilment. There is also documentary evidence of these things taken from the archives at Edessa which was at that time a capital city. At least, in the public documents there, which contain the things done in antiquity and at the time of Abgar, these things too are found preserved from that time to this; but there is nothing equal to hearing the letters themselves, which we have extracted from the archives, and when translated from the Syriac they are verbally as follows:

Digitized by Google

ΑΝΤΙΓΡΑΦΟΝ ΕΠΙΣΤΟΛΗΣ ΓΡΑΦΕΙΣΗΣ ΥΠΟ ΑΒΓΑΡΟΥ ΤΟΠΑΡΧΟΥ ΤΩΙ ΙΗΣΟΥ ΚΑΙ ΠΕΜΦΘΕΙΣΗΣ ΑΥΤΩΙ ΔΙ' ΑΝΑΝΙΟΥ ΤΑΧΥΔΡΟΜΟΥ ΕΙΣ ΙΕΡΟΣΟΛΥΜΑ

"Αβγαρος Οὐχαμα τοπάρχης Ἰησοῦ σωτῆρι 6
ἀγαθῷ ἀναφανέντι ἐν τόπῳ Ἱεροσολύμων χαίρειν.
ἤκουσταί μοι τὰ περὶ σοῦ καὶ τῶν σῶν ἰαμάτων,
ὡς ἄνευ φαρμάκων καὶ βοτανῶν ὑπὸ σοῦ γινο-
Matt. 11, 5 μένων. ὡς γὰρ λόγος, τυφλοὺς ἀναβλέπειν ποιεῖς,
Luke 7, 22 χωλοὺς περιπατεῖν, καὶ λεπροὺς καθαρίζεις, καὶ
ἀκάθαρτα πνεύματα καὶ δαίμονας ἐκβάλλεις, καὶ
τοὺς ἐν μακρονοσίᾳ βασανιζομένους θεραπεύεις,
καὶ νεκροὺς ἐγείρεις. καὶ ταῦτα πάντα ἀκούσας 7
περὶ σοῦ, κατὰ νοῦν ἐθέμην τὸ ἕτερον τῶν δύο,
ἢ ὅτι σὺ εἶ ὁ θεὸς καὶ καταβὰς ἀπὸ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ
ποιεῖς ταῦτα, ἢ υἱὸς εἶ τοῦ θεοῦ ποιῶν ταῦτα.
διὰ τοῦτο τοίνυν γράψας ἐδεήθην σου σκυλῆναι 8
πρός με καὶ τὸ πάθος, ὃ ἔχω, θεραπεῦσαι. καὶ
γὰρ ἤκουσα ὅτι καὶ Ἰουδαῖοι καταγογγύζουσί σου
Eccl. 9, 14 καὶ βούλονται κακῶσαί σε. πόλις δὲ μικροτάτη 9
μοί ἐστι καὶ σεμνή, ἥτις ἐξαρκεῖ ἀμφοτέροις.[1]"

ΤΑ ΑΝΤΙΓΡΑΦΕΝΤΑ ΥΠΟ ΙΗΣΟΥ ΔΙΑ ΑΝΑΝΙΟΥ ΤΑΧΥΔΡΟΜΟΥ ΤΟΠΑΡΧΗΙ ΑΒΓΑΡΩΙ

John 20, 29 "Μακάριος εἶ πιστεύσας ἐν ἐμοί, μὴ ἑορακώς 10
Is. 6, 9 ff. με. γέγραπται γὰρ περὶ ἐμοῦ τοὺς ἑορακότας
Matt. 13, 14 ff. με μὴ πιστεύσειν ἐν ἐμοί, καὶ ἵνα οἱ μὴ ἑορακότες
John 12, 39 ff. με αὐτοὶ πιστεύσωσι καὶ ζήσονται. περὶ δὲ οὗ

[1] ἀμφοτέροις ΑΤΜΣΛ : ἀμφοτέροισ· καὶ ταῦτα μὲν οὕτοσ [οὕτωσ B] ἔγραψεν [ἔγραψε R] τῆσ θείασ αὐτὸν τέωσ μικρὸν αὐγασάσησ ἐλλάμψεωσ· ἄξιον δὲ καὶ τῆσ πρὸσ τοῦ ΙΥ αὐτῷ διὰ τοῦ αὐτοῦ γραμματοκομιστοῦ ἀποσταλείσησ ἐπακοῦσαι ὀλιγοστίχου μὲν πολυδυνάμου δὲ ἐπιστολῆσ τοῦτον ἐχούσησ καὶ αὐτῆσ τὸν τρόπον ERBD.

Digitized by Google

A copy of a letter written by Abgar the Toparch to Jesus and sent to him to Jerusalem by the courier Ananias.

"Abgar Uchama, the Toparch, to Jesus the good Saviour who has appeared in the district of Jerusalem, greeting. I have heard concerning you and your cures, how they are accomplished by you without drugs and herbs. For, as the story goes, you make the blind recover their sight, the lame walk, and you cleanse lepers, and cast out unclean spirits and demons, and you cure those who are tortured by long disease and you raise dead men. And when I heard all these things concerning you I decided that it is one of the two, either that you are God, and came down from heaven to do these things, or are a Son of God for doing these things. For this reason I write to beg you to hasten to me and to heal the suffering which I have. Moreover I heard that the Jews are mocking you, and wish to ill-treat you. Now I have a city very small and venerable which is enough for both." [1]

The reply from Jesus to Abgar, the Toparch, by the courier Ananias.

"Blessed art thou who didst believe in me not having seen me, for it is written concerning me that those who have seen me will not believe on me, and that those who have not seen me will believe and live. Now concerning what you wrote to me,

[1] In some manuscripts the following is added: "9. And he wrote thus when the divine illumination had but a little shined on him. But it is also worth while to hear the letter sent to him by Jesus by the same bearer of the letter; it has only a few lines but great power, and runs as follows."

Digitized by Google

ἔγραψάς μοι ἐλθεῖν πρὸς σέ, δέον ἐστὶ πάντα δι' ἃ ἀπεστάλην ἐνταῦθα, πληρῶσαι καὶ μετὰ τὸ πληρῶσαι οὕτως ἀναληφθῆναι πρὸς τὸν ἀποστείλαντά με. καὶ ἐπειδὰν ἀναληφθῶ, ἀποστελῶ σοί τινα τῶν μαθητῶν μου, ἵνα ἰάσηταί σου τὸ πάθος καὶ ζωήν σοι καὶ τοῖς σὺν σοὶ παράσχηται."

Ταύταις δὲ ταῖς ἐπιστολαῖς ἔτι καὶ ταῦτα 11
συνῆπτο τῇ Σύρων φωνῇ·

"Μετὰ δὲ τὸ ἀναληφθῆναι τὸν Ἰησοῦν ἀπέστειλεν αὐτῷ Ἰούδας, ὁ καὶ Θωμᾶς, Θαδδαῖον ἀπόστολον, ἕνα τῶν ἑβδομήκοντα· ὃς ἐλθὼν κατέμενεν πρὸς Τωβίαν τὸν τοῦ Τωβία. ὡς δὲ ἠκούσθη περὶ αὐτοῦ,[1] ἐμηνύθη τῷ Ἀβγάρῳ ὅτι ἐλήλυθεν ἀπόστολος ἐνταῦθα τοῦ Ἰησοῦ, καθὰ
Matt. 4, 23. 9, 35. 10, 1 ἐπέστειλέν σοι. ἤρξατο οὖν ὁ Θαδδαῖος ἐν δυνάμει 12
θεοῦ θεραπεύειν πᾶσαν νόσον καὶ μαλακίαν, ὥστε πάντας θαυμάζειν· ὡς δὲ ἤκουσεν ὁ Ἄβγαρος τὰ μεγαλεῖα καὶ τὰ θαυμάσια ἃ ἐποίει, καὶ ὡς ἐθεράπευεν, ἐν ὑπονοίᾳ γέγονεν ὡς ὅτι αὐτός ἐστιν περὶ οὗ ὁ Ἰησοῦς ἐπέστειλεν λέγων 'ἐπειδὰν ἀναληφθῶ, ἀποστελῶ σοί τινα τῶν μαθητῶν μου, ὃς τὸ πάθος σου ἰάσεται.' μετακαλεσάμενος οὖν τὸν Τωβίαν, 13
παρ' ᾧ κατέμενεν, εἶπεν 'ἤκουσα ὅτι ἀνήρ τις δυνάστης ἐλθὼν κατέμεινεν ἐν τῇ σῇ οἰκίᾳ· ἀνάγαγε αὐτὸν πρός με.'[2] ἐλθὼν δὲ ὁ Τωβίας παρὰ Θαδδαίῳ, εἶπεν αὐτῷ 'ὁ τοπάρχης Ἄβγαρος μετακαλεσάμενός με εἶπεν ἀναγαγεῖν σε παρ' αὐτῷ, ἵνα θεραπεύσῃς αὐτόν.' καὶ ὁ Θαδδαῖος,

[1] αὐτοῦ ATᵐ¹ΜΣΛ : αὐτοῦ καὶ δῆλος γένονε [γέγονεν D] διὰ τῶν ἐπιτελουμένων παρ' αὐτοῦ θαυμασίων TeERBD.

[2] ἀνάγαγε αὐτὸν πρός με ATΜΣΛ : καὶ πολλὰς ἰάσεις ἐπ' ὀνόματι ιῡ ἐργάζεται· ὁ δὲ εἶπεν [εἶπε R] ναὶ κ̄ε̄ ξένος τις ἐλθὼν ἐνώκησεν

Digitized by Google

to come to you, I must first complete here all for which I was sent, and after thus completing it be taken up to him who sent me, and when I have been taken up, I will send to you one of my disciples to heal your suffering, and give life to you and those with you."

To these letters the following is further appended in the Syriac:

"Now after the ascension of Jesus, Judas, who is also Thomas, sent Thaddaeus to him as an apostle, being one of the Seventy, and he came and stayed with Tobias, the son of Tobias. Now when news of him was heard,[1] it was reported to Abgar that an Apostle of Jesus has come here, as he wrote to you. So Thaddaeus began in the power of God to heal every disease and weakness so that all marvelled And when Abgar heard the great and wonderful deeds which he was doing, and how he was working cures, he began to suspect that this was he of whom Jesus had written saying, 'When I have been taken up, I will send you one of my disciples who will heal your suffering.' So he summoned Tobias, with whom Thaddaeus was staying, and said, 'I hear that a certain man of power has come and is staying in your house. Bring him to me.'[2] And Tobias came to Thaddaeus and said to him, 'The Toparch, Abgar, summoned me and bade me bring you to him in order to heal him.' And Thad-

[1] Some manuscripts add: "And he had become manifest by the wonders wrought by him."

[2] Some manuscripts continue: "'And he is working many cures in the name of Jesus.' And he said, 'Yes, Lord. A certain stranger came and is living with me, and is working many wonders.' And Abgar said, 'Bring him to me.'"

[ἐνώκησε R, ἐνοίκησεν ED] παρ' ἐμοὶ καὶ πολλὰ θαύματα ἐπιτελεῖ· ὁ δὲ ἀνάγαγε αὐτὸν ἔφη πρός με ERBD.

Digitized by Google

'ἀναβαίνω,' ἔφη, 'ἐπειδήπερ δυνάμει παρ' αὐτῷ
ἀπέσταλμα.' ὀρθρίσας οὖν ὁ Τωβίας τῇ ἑξῆς καὶ 14
παραλαβὼν τὸν Θαδδαῖον ἦλθεν πρὸς τὸν Ἄβγαρον.
ὡς δὲ ἀνέβη, παρόντων καὶ ἑστώτων τῶν μεγι-
στάνων αὐτοῦ, παραχρῆμα ἐν τῷ εἰσιέναι αὐτὸν
ὅραμα μέγα ἐφάνη τῷ Ἀβγάρῳ ἐν τῷ προσώπῳ
τοῦ ἀποστόλου Θαδδαίου· ὅπερ ἰδὼν Ἄβγαρος
προσεκύνησεν τῷ Θαδδαίῳ, θαῦμά τε ἔσχεν
πάντας τοὺς περιεστῶτας· αὐτοὶ γὰρ οὐχ ἑοράκασι
τὸ ὅραμα, ὃ μόνῳ τῷ Ἀβγάρῳ ἐφάνη· ὃς καὶ 15
τὸν Θαδδαῖον ἤρετο εἰ 'ἐπ' ἀληθείας μαθητὴς
εἶ Ἰησοῦ τοῦ υἱοῦ τοῦ θεοῦ, ὃς εἰρήκει πρός με
'' ἀποστελῶ σοί τινα τῶν μαθητῶν μου, ὅστις
ἰάσεταί σε καὶ ζωήν σοι παρέξει.'' ' καὶ ὁ Θαδ-
δαῖος ἔφη 'ἐπεὶ μεγάλως πεπίστευκας εἰς τὸν
ἀποστείλαντά με, διὰ τοῦτο ἀπεστάλην πρὸς σέ.
καὶ πάλιν, ἐὰν πιστεύσῃς ἐν αὐτῷ, ὡς ἂν πιστεύ-
σῃς ἔσται σοι τὰ αἰτήματα τῆς καρδίας σου.'
καὶ ὁ Ἄβγαρος πρὸς αὐτόν 'οὕτως ἐπίστευσα,' 16
φησίν, 'ἐν αὐτῷ, ὡς καὶ τοὺς Ἰουδαίους τοὺς
σταυρώσαντας αὐτὸν βουληθῆναι δύναμιν παρα-
λαβὼν κατακόψαι, εἰ μὴ διὰ τὴν βασιλείαν τὴν
Ῥωμαίων ἀνεκόπην τούτου.' καὶ ὁ Θαδδαῖος
εἶπεν 'ὁ κύριος ἡμῶν τὸ θέλημα τοῦ πατρὸς
αὐτοῦ πεπλήρωκεν καὶ πληρώσας ἀνελήφθη πρὸς
τὸν πατέρα.' λέγει αὐτῷ Ἄβγαρος 'κἀγὼ πε- 17
πίστευκα εἰς αὐτὸν καὶ εἰς τὸν πατέρα αὐτοῦ.'
καὶ ὁ Θαδδαῖος 'διὰ τοῦτο,' φησί, 'τίθημι τὴν
χεῖρά μου ἐπὶ σὲ ἐν ὀνόματι αὐτοῦ.' καὶ τοῦτο
πράξαντος, παραχρῆμα ἐθεραπεύθη τῆς νόσου καὶ
τοῦ πάθους οὗ εἶχεν. ἐθαύμασέν τε ὁ Ἄβγαρος 18
ὅτι καθὼς ἤκουσται αὐτῷ περὶ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ, οὕτως

Digitized by Google

daeus said, 'I will go up since I have been miraculously sent to him.' So Tobias rose up early the next day and taking Thaddaeus came to Abgar. Now as he went up, while the king's magnates were standing present, as soon as he entered a great vision appeared to Abgar on the face of the Apostle Thaddaeus. And when Abgar saw this, he did reverence to Thaddaeus, and wonder held all who were standing by, for they had not seen the vision, which appeared only to Abgar. And he asked Thaddaeus, 'Are you of a truth a disciple of Jesus, the Son of God, who said to me, "I will send you one of my disciples who will heal you and give you life"?' And Thaddaeus said, 'Since you have had great faith in him who sent me, I was sent to you for this reason. And again, if you believe in him, the request of your heart shall be to you as you believe.' And Abgar said to him, 'I have such belief in him as to have wished to take force and destroy the Jews who crucified him, had I not been prevented from this by the Roman Empire.' And Thaddaeus said, 'Our Lord has fulfilled the will of his Father, and after fulfilling it has been taken up to the Father.' And Abgar said to him, 'I too have believed on him and on his Father.' And Thaddaeus said, 'For this cause I put my hand on you in his name.' And when he did this immediately he was healed from the disease and the sufferings he had. And Abgar wondered that just as he had heard concerning Jesus

Digitized by Google

τοῖς ἔργοις παρέλαβεν διὰ τοῦ μαθητοῦ αὐτοῦ Θαδδαίου, ὃς αὐτὸν ἄνευ φαρμακείας καὶ βοτανῶν ἐθεράπευσεν, καὶ οὐ μόνον, ἀλλὰ καὶ Ἄβδον τὸν τοῦ Ἄβδου, ποδάγραν ἔχοντα· ὃς καὶ αὐτὸς προσελθὼν ὑπὸ τοὺς πόδας αὐτοῦ ἔπεσεν, εὐχάς τε διὰ χειρὸς λαβὼν ἐθεραπεύθη, πολλούς τε ἄλλους συμπολίτας αὐτῶν ὁ αὐτὸς ἰάσατο, θαυμαστὰ καὶ μεγάλα ποιῶν καὶ κηρύσσων τὸν λόγον τοῦ θεοῦ. μετὰ δὲ ταῦτα ὁ Ἄβγαρος 'σὺ Θαδ- 19
δαῖε,' ἔφη, 'σὺν δυνάμει τοῦ θεοῦ ταῦτα ποιεῖς καὶ ἡμεῖς αὐτοὶ ἐθαυμάσαμεν· ἀλλ' ἐπὶ τούτοις δέομαί σου, διήγησαί μοι περὶ τῆς ἐλεύσεως τοῦ Ἰησοῦ πῶς ἐγένετο, καὶ περὶ τῆς δυνάμεως αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἐν ποίᾳ δυνάμει ταῦτα ἐποίει ἅτινα ἤκουσταί μοι.' καὶ ὁ Θαδδαῖος 'νῦν μὲν σιωπήσομαι,' 20
ἔφη, 'ἐπεὶ δὲ κηρῦξαι τὸν λόγον ἀπεστάλην, αὔριον ἐκκλησιάσόν μοι τοὺς πολίτας σου πάντας, καὶ ἐπ' αὐτῶν κηρύξω καὶ σπερῶ ἐν αὐτοῖς τὸν λόγον τῆς ζωῆς, περί τε τῆς ἐλεύσεως τοῦ Ἰησοῦ καθὼς ἐγένετο, καὶ περὶ τῆς ἀποστολῆς αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἕνεκα τίνος ἀπεστάλη ὑπὸ τοῦ πατρός, καὶ περὶ τῆς δυνάμεως καὶ τῶν ἔργων αὐτοῦ καὶ μυστηρίων ὧν ἐλάλησεν ἐν κόσμῳ, καὶ ποίᾳ δυνάμει ταῦτα ἐποίει, καὶ περὶ τῆς καινῆς αὐτοῦ κηρύξεως, καὶ περὶ τῆς μικρότητος καὶ περὶ τῆς
Phil. 2, 8 ταπεινώσεως, καὶ πῶς ἐταπείνωσεν ἑαυτὸν καὶ ἀπέθετο καὶ ἐσμίκρυνεν αὐτοῦ τὴν θεότητα, καὶ ἐσταυρώθη, καὶ κατέβη εἰς τὸν Ἅιδην, καὶ διέσχισε φραγμὸν τὸν ἐξ αἰῶνος μὴ σχισθέντα, καὶ ἀνήγειρεν νεκροὺς καὶ κατέβη μόνος, ἀνέβη δὲ μετὰ πολλοῦ ὄχλου πρὸς τὸν πατέρα αὐτοῦ.[1]' ἐκέλευσεν 21

Digitized by Google

so he had in fact received through his disciple Thaddaeus, who cured him without drugs and herbs, and not only him but also Abdus the son of Abdus who had the gout; for he too came and fell at his feet, and received his prayer at his hands, and was healed. And the same Thaddaeus healed many others of their fellow-citizens, performing many wonderful deeds and preaching the word of God. And after this Abgar said, 'O Thaddaeus, it is by the power of God that you do these things, and we ourselves have wondered. But in addition to this I beg you, explain to me concerning the coming of Jesus, how it happened, and concerning his power, and by what power he did these things of which I have heard.' And Thaddaeus said, 'I will now be silent, but since I was sent to preach the word, summon for me to-morrow an assembly of all your citizens, and I will preach before them, and sow in them the word of life, both concerning the coming of Jesus, how it happened, and concerning his mission, and for what reason he was sent by the Father, and concerning his power, and his deeds, and the mysteries which he spoke in the world, and by what power he did these things, and concerning his new preaching, and concerning his lowliness and humiliation, and how he humbled himself, and put aside and made little his divinity, and was crucified, and descended into Hades, and rent the partition which had not been rent from the beginning of the world, and raised the dead, and he went down alone, but with a great multitude did he go up to his

[1] αὐτοῦ ATMΣΛ: αὐτοῦ καὶ πῶσ κάθηται ἐν δεξιᾷ τοῦ θυ καὶ πρσ μετὰ δόξησ ἐν τοῖσ οὐνοισ καὶ πῶσ ἐλεύσεσθαι μέλλει πάλιν μετὰ δυνάμεωσ κρῖναι ζῶντασ καὶ νεκρούσ ERBD.

Digitized by Google

οὖν ὁ Ἄβγαρος τῇ ἔωθεν συνάξαι τοὺς πολίτας αὐτοῦ καὶ ἀκοῦσαι τὴν κήρυξιν Θαδδαίου, καὶ μετὰ ταῦτα προσέταξεν δοθῆναι αὐτῷ χρυσὸν καὶ ἄσημον. ὁ δὲ οὐκ ἐδέξατο, εἰπών 'εἰ τὰ ἡμέτερα καταλελοίπαμεν, πῶς τὰ ἀλλότρια ληψόμεθα;' ἐπράχθη ταῦτα τεσσαρακοστῷ καὶ τριακοσιοστῷ ἔτει.'' 22

Ἃ καὶ οὐκ εἰς ἄχρηστον πρὸς λέξιν ἐκ τῆς Σύρων μεταβληθέντα φωνῆς ἐνταῦθά μοι κατὰ καιρὸν κείσθω.

---

[1] Some manuscripts add: "And how he is seated on the right hand of God and the Father with glory in the Heavens, and how he will come again with power to judge the living and the dead."

Digitized by Google

Father.'[1] So Abgar commanded his citizens to assemble in the morning and to hear the preaching of Thaddaeus, and after this he ordered him to be given gold and plate, but he did not receive it, saying, 'If we have left our own things, how shall we take those of others?' These things were done in the 340th year."[2]

Let this valuable and literal translation from the Syriac suffice me for the present.

[2] The three hundredth and fortieth year of the Edessene era, which began 310 B.C., would be A.D. 30, which agrees with the date of the crucifixion given by Tertullian but is one year earlier than the date given in Jerome's version of the Chronicle of Eusebius and two years earlier than that given in the Armenian version of the same book.

Digitized by Google

Β̄

Τάδε καὶ ἡ Β̄ περιέχει βίβλος τῆς Ἐκκλησιαστικῆς ἱστορίας

Ᾱ Περὶ τῆς μετὰ τὴν ἀνάληψιν τοῦ Χριστοῦ διαγωγῆς τῶν ἀποστόλων.

Β̄ Ὅπως Τιβέριος ὑπὸ Πιλάτου τὰ περὶ τοῦ Χριστοῦ διδαχθεὶς ἐκινήθη.

Γ̄ Ὅπως εἰς πάντα τὸν κόσμον ἐν βραχεῖ χρόνῳ διέδραμεν ὁ περὶ τοῦ Χριστοῦ λόγος.

Δ̄ Ὡς μετὰ Τιβέριον Γάϊος Ἰουδαίων βασιλέα καθίστησιν Ἀγρίππαν, τὸν Ἡρῴδην ἀϊδίῳ ζημιώσας φυγῇ.

Ε̄ Ὡς Φίλων ὑπὲρ Ἰουδαίων πρεσβείαν ἐστείλατο πρὸς Γάϊον.

Ϛ̄ Ὅσα Ἰουδαίοις συνερρύη κακὰ μετὰ τὴν κατὰ τοῦ Χριστοῦ τόλμαν.

Ζ̄ Ὡς καὶ Πιλᾶτος ἑαυτὸν διεχρήσατο.

Η̄ Περὶ τοῦ κατὰ Κλαύδιον λιμοῦ.

Θ̄ Μαρτύριον Ἰακώβου τοῦ ἀποστόλου.

Ῑ Ὡς Ἀγρίππας ὁ καὶ Ἡρῴδης τοὺς ἀποστόλους διώξας τῆς θείας παραυτίκα δίκης ἤσθετο.

ΙᾹ Περὶ Θευδᾶ τοῦ γόητος.

ΙΒ̄ Περὶ Ἑλένης τῆς τῶν Ἀδιαβηνῶν βασιλίδος.

ΙΓ̄ Περὶ Σίμωνος τοῦ μάγου.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS OF BOOK II

The contents of the second book of the History of the Church is as follows :

I. On the life of the Apostles after the Ascension of Christ.
II. On the emotion of Tiberius at learning from Pilate the story of Christ.
III. How in a short time the message concerning Christ ran through the whole world.
IV. How after Tiberius Caius appointed Agrippa as King of the Jews and punished Herod with perpetual banishment.
V. How Philo was sent on an embassy to Caius on behalf of the Jews.
VI. All the evils which accumulated on the Jews after their crime against Christ.
VII. How Pilate, too, committed suicide.
VIII. Concerning the famine in the time of Claudius.
IX. The martyrdom of James the Apostle.
X. How Agrippa, who was also called Herod, persecuted the Apostles and at once felt the punishment of God.
XI. On Theudas the magician.
XII. On Helena the Queen of the Adiabeni.
XIII. On Simon Magus.

Digitized by Google

ΙΔ Περὶ τοῦ κατὰ Ῥώμην κηρύγματος Πέτρου τοῦ ἀποστόλου.
ΙΕ Περὶ τοῦ κατὰ Μάρκον εὐαγγελίου.
ΙϚ Ὡς πρῶτος Μάρκος τοῖς κατ' Αἴγυπτον τὴν εἰς τὸν Χριστὸν γνῶσιν ἐκήρυξεν.
ΙΖ Οἷα περὶ τῶν κατ' Αἴγυπτον ἀσκητῶν ὁ Φίλων ἱστορεῖ.
ΙΗ Ὅσα τοῦ Φίλωνος εἰς ἡμᾶς περιῆλθεν συγγράμματα.
ΙΘ Οἷα τοὺς ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις Ἰουδαίους συμφορὰ μετῆλθεν ἐν τῇ τοῦ πάσχα ἡμέρᾳ.
Κ Οἷα καὶ κατὰ Νέρωνα ἐν τοῖς Ἱεροσολύμοις ἐπράχθη.
ΚΑ Περὶ τοῦ Αἰγυπτίου, οὗ καὶ τῶν ἀποστόλων αἱ Πράξεις ἐμνημόνευσαν.
ΚΒ Ὡς ἐκ τῆς Ἰουδαίας εἰς τὴν Ῥώμην δέσμιος ἀναπεμφθεὶς Παῦλος ἀπολογησάμενος πάσης ἀπελύθη αἰτίας.
ΚΓ Ὡς ἐμαρτύρησεν Ἰάκωβος ὁ τοῦ κυρίου χρηματίσας ἀδελφός.
ΚΔ Ὡς μετὰ Μάρκον πρῶτος ἐπίσκοπος τῆς Ἀλεξανδρέων ἐκκλησίας Ἀννιανὸς κατέστη.
ΚΕ Περὶ τοῦ κατὰ Νέρωνα διωγμοῦ, καθ' ὃν ἐπὶ Ῥώμης Παῦλος καὶ Πέτρος τοῖς ὑπὲρ εὐσεβείας μαρτυρίοις κατεκοσμήθησαν.
ϚΖ Ὡς μυρίοις κακοῖς περιηλάθησαν Ἰουδαῖοι, καὶ ὡς τὸν ὕστατον πρὸς Ῥωμαίους ἤραντο πόλεμον.

Συνῆκται ἡμῖν ἡ βίβλος ἀπὸ τῶν Κλήμεντος Τερτυλλιανοῦ Ἰωσήπου Φίλωνος.

Digitized by Google

XIV. On the preaching of Peter the Apostle at Rome.
XV. On the Gospel according to Mark.
XVI. How Mark was the first to preach the knowledge of Christ to those in Egypt.
XVII. The narrative of Philo on the Ascetics in Egypt.
XVIII. The treatises of Philo which have come down to us.
XIX. The misfortunes which overtook the Jews in Jerusalem on the day of the Passover.
XX. What was done at Jerusalem under Nero.
XXI. On the Egyptian whom the Acts of the Apostles also mentioned.
XXII. How Paul was sent a prisoner to Rome from Judaea and after defending himself was acquitted of all guilt.
XXIII. How James who was called the brother of the Lord suffered martyrdom.
XXIV. How after Mark Annianus was the first to be appointed bishop of the church of the Alexandrians.
XXV. On the persecution under Nero in which Paul and Peter at Rome were adorned with martyrdom for religion's sake.
XXVI. How the Jews were pursued by countless evils and how they began the final war against the Romans.

Our book was compiled from those of Clement, Tertullian, Josephus, and Philo.

Digitized by Google

II

Ὅσα μὲν τῆς ἐκκλησιαστικῆς ἱστορίας ἐχρῆν 1
ὡς ἐν προοιμίῳ διαστείλασθαι τῆς τε θεολογίας
πέρι τοῦ σωτηρίου λόγου καὶ τῆς ἀρχαιολογίας
τῶν τῆς ἡμετέρας διδασκαλίας δογμάτων ἀρ-
χαιότητός τε τῆς κατὰ Χριστιανοὺς εὐαγγελικῆς
πολιτείας, οὐ μὴν ἀλλὰ καὶ ὅσα περὶ τῆς γενο-
μένης ἔναγχος ἐπιφανείας αὐτοῦ, τά τε πρὸ τοῦ
πάθους καὶ τὰ περὶ τῆς τῶν ἀποστόλων ἐκλογῆς,
ἐν τῷ πρὸ τούτου, συντεμόντες τὰς ἀποδείξεις,
διειλήφαμεν· φέρε δ', ἐπὶ τοῦ παρόντος ἤδη καὶ 2
τὰ μετὰ τὴν ἀνάληψιν αὐτοῦ διασκεψώμεθα, τὰ
μὲν ἐκ τῶν θείων παρασημαινόμενοι γραμμάτων,
τὰ δ' ἔξωθεν προσιστοροῦντες ἐξ ὧν κατὰ καιρὸν
μνημονεύσομεν ὑπομνημάτων.

Ι. Πρῶτος τοιγαροῦν εἰς τὴν ἀποστολὴν ἀντὶ 1
τοῦ προδότου Ἰούδα κληροῦται Ματθίας, εἷς καὶ
αὐτός, ὡς δεδήλωται, τῶν τοῦ κυρίου γενόμενος
μαθητῶν. καθίστανται δὲ δι' εὐχῆς καὶ χειρῶν
Acts 6, 1-6 ἐπιθέσεως τῶν ἀποστόλων εἰς διακονίαν ὑπηρεσίας
ἕνεκα τοῦ κοινοῦ ἄνδρες δεδοκιμασμένοι, τὸν
ἀριθμὸν ἑπτά, οἱ ἀμφὶ τὸν Στέφανον. ὃς καὶ
Acts 7, 58. 59 πρῶτος μετὰ τὸν κύριον ἅμα τῇ χειροτονίᾳ,
ὥσπερ εἰς αὐτὸ τοῦτο προαχθείς, λίθοις εἰς θάνατον
πρὸς τῶν κυριοκτόνων βάλλεται, καὶ ταύτῃ πρῶ-

Digitized by Google

BOOK II

ALL that needed stating by way of preface in the history of the Church—the proof of the divinity of the saving Logos, the ancient history of our teaching, and the antiquity of the dogmas of the Christian life according to the Gospel, particularly all the points concerning his recently fulfilled advent, the events before his Passion, and the story of the choice of the Apostles—all this we traced in the preceding book, summarizing the demonstration. Let us now consider in the present book what followed his Ascension, noting some things from the divine writings, and adding what is taken from other sources from treatises which we will quote from time to time.

I. Matthias was the first to be chosen to the Apostolate instead of the traitor Judas. As has been shown, he had himself been one of the Lord's disciples, For the administration of the common fund tried men, seven in number, led by Stephen, were appointed to the ministry by prayer and the laying on of the Apostles' hands. And Stephen was first after his Lord not only in ordination, but, as though he had been put forward for this very purpose, also in that he was stoned to death by the Lord's murderers, and so was the first to carry off the crown,

Digitized by Google

τος τὸν αὐτῷ φερώνυμον τῶν ἀξιονίκων τοῦ Χριστοῦ μαρτύρων ἀποφέρεται στέφανον.

Τότε δῆτα καὶ Ἰάκωβον, τὸν τοῦ κυρίου λεγό- 2
μενον ἀδελφόν, ὅτι δὴ καὶ οὗτος τοῦ Ἰωσὴφ ὠνό-
μαστο παῖς, τοῦ δὲ Χριστοῦ πατὴρ ὁ Ἰωσήφ,
ᾧ μνηστευθεῖσα ἡ παρθένος, πρὶν ἢ συνελθεῖν
Matt. 1, 18 αὐτούς, εὑρέθη ἐν γαστρὶ ἔχουσα ἐκ πνεύματος
ἁγίου, ὡς ἡ ἱερὰ τῶν εὐαγγελίων διδάσκει γραφή·
τοῦτον δὴ οὖν αὐτὸν Ἰάκωβον, ὃν καὶ δίκαιον
ἐπίκλην οἱ πάλαι δι' ἀρετῆς ἐκάλουν προτερήματα,
πρῶτον ἱστοροῦσιν τῆς ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις ἐκκλη-
σίας τὸν τῆς ἐπισκοπῆς ἐγχειρισθῆναι θρόνον·
Κλήμης ἐν ἕκτῳ τῶν Ὑποτυπώσεων γράφων 3
ὧδε παρίστησιν "Πέτρον γάρ φησιν καὶ Ἰάκωβον
καὶ Ἰωάννην μετὰ τὴν ἀνάληψιν τοῦ σωτῆρος, ὡς
ἂν καὶ ὑπὸ τοῦ σωτῆρος προτετιμημένους, μὴ
ἐπιδικάζεσθαι δόξης, ἀλλὰ Ἰάκωβον τὸν δίκαιον
ἐπίσκοπον τῶν Ἱεροσολύμων ἐλέσθαι." ὁ δ' αὐτὸς 4
ἐν ἑβδόμῳ τῆς αὐτῆς ὑποθέσεως ἔτι καὶ ταῦτα
περὶ αὐτοῦ φησιν "Ἰακώβῳ τῷ δικαίῳ καὶ
Ἰωάννῃ καὶ Πέτρῳ μετὰ τὴν ἀνάστασιν παρ-
έδωκεν τὴν γνῶσιν ὁ κύριος, οὗτοι τοῖς λοιποῖς
ἀποστόλοις παρέδωκαν, οἱ δὲ λοιποὶ ἀπόστολοι
τοῖς ἑβδομήκοντα· ὧν εἷς ἦν καὶ Βαρναβᾶς. δύο 5
δὲ γεγόνασιν Ἰάκωβοι, εἷς ὁ δίκαιος, ὁ κατὰ τοῦ
πτερυγίου βληθεὶς καὶ ὑπὸ γναφέως ξύλῳ πληγεὶς
εἰς θάνατον, ἕτερος δὲ ὁ καρατομηθείς."

Αὐτοῦ δὴ τοῦ δικαίου καὶ ὁ Παῦλος μνημονεύει
Gal. 1, 19 γράφων "ἕτερον δὲ τῶν ἀποστόλων οὐκ εἶδον,
εἰ μὴ Ἰάκωβον τὸν ἀδελφὸν τοῦ κυρίου."

Ἐν τούτοις καὶ τὰ τῆς τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν πρὸς 6
τὸν τῶν Ὀσροηνῶν βασιλέα τέλος ἐλάμβανεν

Digitized by Google

implied by his name,[1] which was gained by the martyrs of Christ found worthy of victory.

At that same time also James, who was called the brother of the Lord, inasmuch as the latter too was styled the child of Joseph, and Joseph was called the father of Christ, for the Virgin was betrothed to him when, before they came together, she was discovered to have conceived by the Holy Spirit, as the sacred writing of the Gospels teaches—this same James, to whom the men of old had also given the surname of Just for his excellence of virtue, is narrated to have been the first elected to the throne of the bishopric of the Church in Jerusalem. Clement in the sixth book of the *Hypotyposes* adduces the following: "For," he says, "Peter and James and John after the Ascension of the Saviour did not struggle for glory, because they had previously been given honour by the Saviour, but chose James the Just as bishop of Jerusalem." The same writer in the seventh book of the same work says in addition this about him, "After the Resurrection the Lord gave the tradition of knowledge to James the Just and John and Peter, these gave it to the other Apostles and the other Apostles to the seventy, of whom Barnabas also was one. Now there were two Jameses, one James the Just, who was thrown down from the pinnacle of the temple and beaten to death with a fuller's club, and the other he who was beheaded." Paul also mentions the same James the Just when he writes, "And I saw none other of the Apostles save James the brother of the Lord."

At this time too the terms of our Saviour's promise[2] to the king of the Osrhoenes were receiving fulfil-

[1] Stephen in Greek means *crown*.

[2] See pp. 84 ff.

Digitized by Google

ὑποσχέσεως. ὁ γοῦν Θωμᾶς τὸν Θαδδαῖον κινήσει θειοτέρᾳ ἐπὶ τὰ Ἔδεσσα κήρυκα καὶ εὐαγγελιστὴν τῆς περὶ τοῦ Χριστοῦ διδασκαλίας ἐκπέμπει, ὡς ἀπὸ τῆς εὐρεθείσης αὐτόθι γραφῆς μικρῷ πρόσθεν ἐδηλώσαμεν· ὁ δὲ τοῖς τόποις ἐπιστάς, 7
τόν τε Ἄβγαρον ἰᾶται τῷ Χριστοῦ λόγῳ καὶ τοὺς αὐτόθι πάντας τοῖς τῶν θαυμάτων παραδόξοις ἐκπλήττει, ἱκανῶς τε αὐτοὺς τοῖς ἔργοις διαθεὶς καὶ ἐπὶ σέβας ἀγαγὼν τῆς τοῦ Χριστοῦ δυνάμεως, μαθητὰς τῆς σωτηρίου διδασκαλίας κατεστήσατο, εἰς ἔτι τε νῦν ἐξ ἐκείνου ἡ πᾶσα τῶν Ἐδεσσηνῶν πόλις τῇ Χριστοῦ προσανάκειται προσηγορίᾳ, οὐ τὸ τυχὸν ἐπιφερομένη δεῖγμα τῆς τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν καὶ εἰς αὐτοὺς εὐεργεσίας. καὶ ταῦτα δ' 8
ὡς ἐξ ἀρχαίων ἱστορίας εἰρήσθω· μετίωμεν δ' αὖθις ἐπὶ τὴν θείαν γραφήν.

Acts 8, 1 Γενομένου δῆτα ἐπὶ τῇ τοῦ Στεφάνου μαρτυρίᾳ πρώτου καὶ μεγίστου πρὸς αὐτῶν Ἰουδαίων κατὰ τῆς ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις ἐκκλησίας διωγμοῦ πάντων τε τῶν μαθητῶν πλὴν ὅτι μόνων τῶν δώδεκα ἀνὰ τὴν Ἰουδαίαν τε καὶ Σαμάρειαν
Acts 11, 19 διασπαρέντων, τινὲς, ᾗ φησιν ἡ θεία γραφή, διελθόντες ἕως Φοινίκης καὶ Κύπρου καὶ Ἀντιοχείας οὔπω μὲν ἔθνεσιν οἷοί τε ἦσαν τοῦ τῆς πίστεως μεταδιδόναι λόγου τολμᾶν, μόνοις δὲ τοῦτον
Acts 8, 3 Ἰουδαίοις κατήγγελλον. τηνικαῦτα καὶ Παῦλος 9
ἐλυμαίνετο εἰς ἔτι τότε τὴν ἐκκλησίαν, κατ' οἴκους τῶν πιστῶν εἰσπορευόμενος σύρων τε ἄνδρας καὶ γυναῖκας καὶ εἰς φυλακὴν παραδιδούς.
Acts 6, 5 ἀλλὰ καὶ Φίλιππος, εἷς τῶν ἅμα Στεφάνῳ προ- 10
Acts 8, 5–13 χειρισθέντων εἰς τὴν διακονίαν, ἐν τοῖς διασπαρεῖσιν γενόμενος, κάτεισιν εἰς τὴν Σαμάρειαν,

Digitized by Google

ment. Thomas was divinely moved to send Thaddaeus to Edessa as herald and evangelist of the teaching concerning Christ, as we have shown just previously from the writing preserved there. When he reached the place Thaddaeus healed Abgar by the word of Christ, and amazed all the inhabitants by his strange miracles. By the mighty influence of his deeds he brought them to reverence the power of Christ, and made them disciples of the saving teaching. From that day to this the whole city of the Edessenes has been dedicated[1] to the name of Christ, thus displaying no common proof of the beneficence of our Saviour to them. Let this suffice from the history of the ancients and let us pass again to the divine Scripture.

On the martyrdom of Stephen there arose the first and greatest persecution of the Church in Jerusalem by the Jews. All the disciples, with the single exception of the Twelve, were scattered throughout Judaea and Samaria; some, as the divine Scripture says, traversed as far as Phoenice, Cyprus and Antioch, but they were not yet in a position to venture to transmit the word of faith to Gentiles, and announced it only to Jews. At that time Paul also was still ravaging the Church, entering into the houses of the faithful, dragging out men and women, and handing them over to prison. Philip, however, one of those who with Stephen had been already ordained to the diaconate, was among those who were scattered abroad, and went down to Samaria, where, filled with divine

[1] This seems merely to mean "became converted to Christianity."

Digitized by Google

θείας τε ἔμπλεως δυνάμεως κηρύττει πρῶτος
τοῖς αὐτόθι τὸν λόγον, τοσαύτη δ' αὐτῷ θεία
συνήργει χάρις, ὡς καὶ Σίμωνα τὸν μάγον μετὰ
πλείστων ὅσων τοῖς αὐτοῦ λόγοις ἑλχθῆναι. ἐπὶ 11
τοσοῦτον δ' ὁ Σίμων βεβοημένος κατ' ἐκεῖνο
καιροῦ τῶν ἠπατημένων ἐκράτει γοητείᾳ, ὡς
τὴν μεγάλην αὐτὸν ἡγεῖσθαι εἶναι δύναμιν τοῦ
θεοῦ. τότε δ' οὖν καὶ οὗτος τὰς ὑπὸ τοῦ Φιλίπ-
που δυνάμει θείᾳ τελουμένας καταπλαγεὶς παρα-
δοξοποιίας, ὑποδύεται καὶ μέχρι λουτροῦ τὴν
εἰς Χριστὸν πίστιν καθυποκρίνεται· ὃ καὶ θαυμά- 12
ζειν ἄξιον εἰς δεῦρο γινόμενον πρὸς τῶν ἔτι καὶ
νῦν τὴν ἀπ' ἐκείνου μιαρωτάτην μετιόντων αἵρεσιν,
οἳ τῇ τοῦ σφῶν προπάτορος μεθόδῳ τὴν ἐκκλη-
σίαν λοιμώδους καὶ ψωραλέας νόσου δίκην ὑπο-
δυόμενοι, τὰ μέγιστα λυμαίνονται τοὺς οἷς ἐν-
απομάξασθαι οἷοί τε ἂν εἶεν τὸν ἐν αὐτοῖς ἀπο-
κεκρυμμένον δυσαλθῆ καὶ χαλεπὸν ἰόν. ἤδη γέ
τοι πλείους τούτων ἀπεώσθησαν, ὁποῖοί τινες
εἶεν τὴν μοχθηρίαν ἁλόντες, ὥσπερ οὖν καὶ ὁ
Acts 8, 18–23 Σίμων αὐτὸς πρὸς τοῦ Πέτρου καταφωραθεὶς
ὃς ἦν, τὴν προσήκουσαν ἔτισεν τιμωρίαν. ἀλλὰ 13
γὰρ εἰς αὖξην ὁσημέραι προϊόντος τοῦ σωτηρίου
Acts 8, 26–38 κηρύγματος, οἰκονομία τις ἦγεν ἀπὸ τῆς Αἰθιόπων
γῆς τῆς αὐτόθι βασιλίδος, κατά τι πάτριον ἔθος
ὑπὸ γυναικὸς τοῦ ἔθνους εἰς ἔτι νῦν βασιλευο-
μένου, δυνάστην· ὃν πρῶτον ἐξ ἐθνῶν πρὸς τοῦ
Φιλίππου δι' ἐπιφανείας τὰ τοῦ θείου λόγου ὄργια
μετασχόντα τῶν τε ἀνὰ τὴν οἰκουμένην πιστῶν
ἀπαρχὴν γενόμενον, πρῶτον κατέχει λόγος ἐπὶ
τὴν πάτριον παλινοστήσαντα γῆν εὐαγγελίσασθαι
τὴν τοῦ τῶν ὅλων θεοῦ γνῶσιν καὶ τὴν ζωοποιὸν

Digitized by Google

power, he was the first to preach the word to those there. So great was the grace of God, which worked with him, that even Simon Magus, with countless others, was captivated by his words. At that time Simon had obtained such fame by his magical power over his victims that he was held to be the Great Power of God; but even he was then so overwhelmed by the marvels wrought by Philip by divine power, that he submitted, and feigned faith in Christ even to the point of baptism. It is worthy of wonder that this is still done by those who continue his most unclean heresy to the present day, for following the method of their progenitor they attach themselves to the Church like a pestilential and scurfy disease, and ravage to the utmost all whom they are able to inoculate with the deadly and terrible poison hidden in them. Most of these, however, have already been driven out, as many as have been detected in their wickedness, just as Simon himself, when his real nature was detected by Peter, paid the proper punishment. While the saving preaching was daily progressing and growing, some providence brought from the land of the Ethiopians an officer of the queen of that land, for the nation, following ancestral customs, is still ruled by a woman. Tradition says that he, who was the first of the Gentiles to receive from Philip by revelation the mysteries of the divine word, and was the first-fruits of the faithful throughout the world, was also the first to return to his native land and preach the Gospel of the knowledge of the God of the universe and the sojourn of our

Digitized by Google

εἰς ἀνθρώπους τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν ἐπιδημίαν,
Psalm 67, 32 ἔργῳ πληρωθείσης δι' αὐτοῦ τῆς "Αἰθιοπία προφθάσει χεῖρα αὐτῆς τῷ θεῷ" περιεχούσης
Acts 9, 15 προφητείας. ἐπὶ τούτοις Παῦλος, τὸ τῆς ἐκλογῆς 14
σκεῦος, οὐκ ἐξ ἀνθρώπων οὐδὲ δι' ἀνθρώπων,
Gal. 1, 1 δι' ἀποκαλύψεως δ' αὐτοῦ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ καὶ
θεοῦ πατρὸς τοῦ ἐγείραντος αὐτὸν ἐκ νεκρῶν,
Acts 9, 3–6 ἀπόστολος ἀναδείκνυται, δι' ὀπτασίας καὶ τῆς
κατὰ τὴν ἀποκάλυψιν οὐρανίου φωνῆς ἀξιωθεὶς
τῆς κλήσεως.

II. Καὶ δὴ τῆς παραδόξου τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν 1
ἀναστάσεώς τε καὶ εἰς οὐρανοὺς ἀναλήψεως τοῖς
πλείστοις ἤδη περιβοήτου καθεστώσης, παλαιοῦ
κεκρατηκότος ἔθους τοῖς τῶν ἐθνῶν ἄρχουσι τὰ
παρὰ σφίσιν καινοτομούμενα τῷ τὴν βασίλειον
ἀρχὴν ἐπικρατοῦντι σημαίνειν, ὡς ἂν μηδὲν αὐτὸν
Tert. *Apol.* 21 διαδιδράσκοι τῶν γινομένων, τὰ περὶ τῆς ἐκ
νεκρῶν ἀναστάσεως τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ
εἰς πάντας ἤδη καθ' ὅλης Παλαιστίνης βεβοη-
μένα Πιλᾶτος Τιβερίῳ βασιλεῖ κοινοῦται, τάς 2
τε ἄλλας αὐτοῦ πυθόμενος τεραστίας καὶ ὡς ὅτι
μετὰ θάνατον ἐκ νεκρῶν ἀναστὰς ἤδη θεὸς εἶναι
παρὰ τοῖς πολλοῖς πεπίστευτο. τὸν δὲ Τιβέριον
ἀνενεγκεῖν ἐπὶ τὴν σύγκλητον ἐκείνην τ' ἀπώσα-
σθαί φασι τὸν λόγον, τῷ μὲν δοκεῖν, ὅτι μὴ πρό-
τερον αὐτὴ τοῦτο δοκιμάσασα ἦν, παλαιοῦ νόμου
κεκρατηκότος μὴ ἄλλως τινὰ παρὰ Ῥωμαίοις
θεοποιεῖσθαι μὴ οὐχὶ ψήφῳ καὶ δόγματι συγ-
κλήτου, τῇ δ' ἀληθείᾳ, ὅτι μηδὲ τῆς ἐξ ἀνθρώπων
ἐπικρίσεώς τε καὶ συστάσεως ἡ σωτήριος τοῦ
θείου κηρύγματος ἐδεῖτο διδασκαλία· ταύτῃ δ' 3
οὖν ἀπωσαμένης τὸν προσαγγελθέντα περὶ τοῦ

Digitized by Google

Saviour which gives life to men, so that by him was actually fulfilled the prophecy which says, "Ethiopia shall stretch out her hand to God." In addition to these Paul, the chosen vessel neither of men nor through men but through revelation of Jesus Christ himself and God the Father who raised him from the dead, was appointed an Apostle, being vouchsafed this calling by a vision and the heavenly voice of revelation.

II. The wonderful resurrection and ascension into heaven of our Saviour was now already generally famous, and in accordance with an ancient custom that those who were ruling over the nations should report to him who held the imperial office any new movement among them, in order that no event might escape his notice, Pilate communicated to the Emperor Tiberius the story of the resurrection from the dead of our Saviour Jesus as already famous among all throughout all Palestine, together with the information he had gained of his other wonders and how he was already believed by many to be a God, in that after death he had risen from the dead.[1] They say that Tiberius referred the report to the Senate, which rejected it ostensibly because it had not previously tested the matter, for an ancient law prevailed that no one should be held as a God by the Romans except by a vote and decree of the Senate, but in truth because the saving teaching of the divine message needed no ratification and commendation from men. In this way the council of

[1] Several versions of Pilate's report are extant, all obviously fictitious. See Tischendorf, *Evangelia apocrypha*, and the article of Lipsius on Apocryphal Gospels in the *Dictionary of Christian Biography*, vol. ii. pp. 707 ff.

Digitized by Google

σωτῆρος ἡμῶν λόγον τῆς Ῥωμαίων βουλῆς, τὸν Τιβέριον ἣν καὶ πρότερον εἶχεν γνώμην τηρήσαντα, μηδὲν ἄτοπον κατὰ τῆς τοῦ Χριστοῦ διδασκαλίας ἐπινοῆσαι.

Ταῦτα Τερτυλλιανὸς τοὺς Ῥωμαίων νόμους ἠκρι- 4
βωκώς, ἀνὴρ τά τε ἄλλα ἔνδοξος καὶ τῶν μάλιστα ἐπὶ Ῥώμης λαμπρῶν, ἐν τῇ γραφείσῃ μὲν αὐτῷ Ῥωμαίων φωνῇ, μεταβληθείσῃ δ' ἐπὶ τὴν Ἑλλάδα γλῶτταν ὑπὲρ Χριστιανῶν ἀπολογίᾳ τίθησιν, κατὰ λέξιν τοῦτον ἱστορῶν τὸν τρόπον

Tert. *Apol.* 5

" ἵνα δὲ καὶ ἐκ τῆς γενέσεως διαλεχθῶμεν τῶν 5
τοιούτων νόμων, παλαιὸν ἦν δόγμα μηδένα θεὸν ὑπὸ βασιλέως καθιεροῦσθαι, πρὶν ὑπὸ τῆς συγκλήτου δοκιμασθῆναι. Μάρκος Αἰμίλιος οὕτως περί τινος εἰδώλου πεποίηκεν Ἀλβούρνου. καὶ τοῦτο ὑπὲρ τοῦ ἡμῶν λόγου πεποίηται, ὅτι παρ' ὑμῖν ἀνθρωπεία δοκιμῇ ἡ θεότης δίδοται. ἐὰν μὴ ἀνθρώπῳ θεὸς ἀρέσῃ, θεὸς οὐ γίνεται· οὕτως κατά γε τοῦτο ἄνθρωπον θεῷ ἴλεω εἶναι προσῆκεν. Τιβέριος οὖν, ἐφ' οὗ τὸ τῶν Χριστιανῶν 6
ὄνομα εἰς τὸν κόσμον εἰσελήλυθεν, ἀγγελθέντος αὐτῷ ἐκ Παλαιστίνης τοῦ δόγματος τούτου, ἔνθα πρῶτον ἤρξατο, τῇ συγκλήτῳ ἀνεκοινώσατο, δῆλος ὢν ἐκείνοις ὡς τῷ δόγματι ἀρέσκεται. ἡ δὲ σύγκλητος, ἐπεὶ οὐκ αὐτὴ δεδοκιμάκει, ἀπώσατο· ὁ δὲ ἐν τῇ αὐτοῦ ἀποφάσει ἔμεινεν, ἀπειλήσας θάνατον τοῖς τῶν Χριστιανῶν κατηγόροις."

Τῆς οὐρανίου προνοίας κατ' οἰκονομίαν τοῦτ' αὐτῷ πρὸς νοῦν βαλλομένης, ὡς ἂν ἀπαραποδίστως ἀρχὰς ἔχων ὁ τοῦ εὐαγγελίου λόγος παντοχόσε γῆς διαδράμοι.

III. Οὕτω δῆτα οὐρανίῳ δυνάμει καὶ συνεργίᾳ 1

Digitized by Google

the Romans rejected the report sent to it concerning our Saviour, but Tiberius kept the opinion which he had formerly held and made no wicked plans against the teaching of Christ.

Tertullian, who had an accurate knowledge of Roman law, a man especially famous among those most distinguished in Rome, has noted this in the Apology for the Christians which was written by him in Latin but translated into the Greek language; he tells the story as follows: "But, in order that we may discuss such laws from their origin, there was an ancient decree that none should be consecrated as a god by an Emperor before being approved by the Senate. Marcus Aemilius has acted thus concerning a certain idol Alburnus. And this supports our argument that among you godship has been given by human approval. If a god does not please man, he does not become god, so that, according to this, man must be gracious to God. Tiberius, therefore, in whose time the name of Christian came into the world, when this doctrine was reported to him from Palestine, where it first began, communicated it to the Senate, and made it plain to them that he favoured the doctrine, but the Senate, because it had not itself tested it, rejected it; but he continued in his own opinion and threatened death to the accusers of the Christians."[1] For heavenly providence had designed putting this in his mind in order that the word of the Gospel might have an unimpeded beginning, and traverse the earth in all directions.

III. Thus by the power and assistance of Heaven

[1] Eusebius seems to imply that the following sentence is part of Tertullian. This is not so in the Latin manuscripts.

Digitized by Google

ἀθρόως οἷά τις ἡλίου βολὴ τὴν σύμπασαν οἰκουμένην ὁ σωτήριος κατηύγαζε λόγος. αὐτίκα ταῖς θείαις ἑπομένως γραφαῖς ἐπὶ "πᾶσαν" προῄει
Psalm 18, 5 "τὴν γῆν ὁ φθόγγος" τῶν θεσπεσίων εὐαγγελιστῶν αὐτοῦ καὶ ἀποστόλων, "καὶ εἰς τὰ πέρατα τῆς οἰκουμένης τὰ ῥήματα αὐτῶν." καὶ δῆτα 2
ἀνὰ πάσας πόλεις τε καὶ κώμας, πληθυούσης
Matt. 3, 12 ἄλωνος δίκην, μυρίανδροι καὶ παμπληθεῖς ἀθρόως
Luke 3, 17 ἐκκλησίαι συνεστήκεσαν, οἵ τε ἐκ προγόνων διαδοχῆς καὶ τῆς ἀνέκαθεν πλάνης παλαιᾷ νόσῳ δεισιδαιμονίας εἰδώλων τὰς ψυχὰς πεπεδημένοι, πρὸς τῆς τοῦ Χριστοῦ δυνάμεως διὰ τῆς τῶν φοιτητῶν αὐτοῦ διδασκαλίας τε ὁμοῦ καὶ παραδοξοποιίας ὥσπερ δεινῶν δεσποτῶν ἀπηλλαγμένοι εἱργμῶν τε χαλεπωτάτων λύσιν εὑράμενοι, πάσης μὲν δαιμονικῆς κατέπτυον πολυθεΐας, ἕνα δὲ μόνον εἶναι θεὸν ὡμολόγουν, τὸν τῶν συμπάντων δημιουργόν, τοῦτόν τε αὐτὸν θεσμοῖς ἀληθοῦς εὐσεβείας δι' ἐνθέου καὶ σώφρονος θρησκείας τῆς ὑπὸ τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν τῷ τῶν ἀνθρώπων βίῳ κατασπαρείσης ἐγέραιρον. ἀλλὰ γὰρ τῆς 3
χάριτος ἤδη τῆς θείας καὶ ἐπὶ τὰ λοιπὰ χεομένης ἔθνη καὶ πρώτου μὲν κατὰ τὴν Παλαιστίνων
Acts 10 Καισάρειαν Κορνηλίου σὺν ὅλῳ τῷ οἴκῳ δι' ἐπιφανείας θειοτέρας ὑπουργίας τε Πέτρου τὴν εἰς Χριστὸν πίστιν καταδεξαμένου πλείστων τε
Acts 11, 20–30 καὶ ἄλλων ἐπ' Ἀντιοχείας Ἑλλήνων, οἷς οἱ κατὰ τὸν Στεφάνου διωγμὸν διασπαρέντες ἐκήρυξαν, ἀνθούσης ἄρτι καὶ πληθυούσης τῆς κατὰ Ἀντιόχειαν ἐκκλησίας ἐν ταὐτῷ τε ἐπιπαρόντων πλείστων ὅσων τῶν τε ἀπὸ Ἱεροσολύμων προφητῶν καὶ σὺν αὐτοῖς Βαρναβᾶ καὶ Παύλου ἑτέρου τε

Digitized by Google

the saving word began to flood the whole world with light like the rays of the sun. At once, in accordance with the divine Scriptures, the voice of its inspired evangelists and Apostles "went forth to the whole earth and their words to the end of the world." In every city and village arose churches crowded with thousands of men, like a teeming threshing-floor. Those who by hereditary succession and original error had their souls bound by the ancient disease of the superstition of idols were set free as if from fierce masters and found release from fearful bondage by the power of Christ through the teaching of his followers and their wonderful deeds. They rejected all the polytheism of the demons, and confessed that there is only one God, the Creator of the universe. Him they honoured with the rites of true piety by the divine and rational worship which was implanted by our Saviour in the life of men. But indeed it was when the grace of God was already being poured out even on the other nations—when faith in Christ had been received, first by Cornelius with all his house in Palestinian Caesarea through divine manifestation and the ministration of Peter, and also by many other Greeks in Antioch, to whom those preached who had been scattered in the persecution about Stephen, and the Church in Antioch was already flourishing and multiplying—it was at that moment and in that place, when so many of the prophets from Jerusalem were also present, and with them Barnabas and Paul, and a number of the other

Digitized by Google

πλήθους ἐπὶ τούτοις ἀδελφῶν, ἡ Χριστιανῶν προσηγορία τότε πρῶτον αὐτόθι ὥσπερ ἀπ' εὐθαλοῦς καὶ γονίμου πηγῆς ἀναδίδοται. καὶ Ἄγαβος μέν, εἷς τῶν συνόντων αὐτοῖς προφητῶν, περὶ τοῦ μέλλειν ἔσεσθαι λιμὸν προθεσπίζει, Παῦλος δὲ καὶ Βαρναβᾶς ἐξυπηρετησόμενοι τῇ τῶν ἀδελφῶν παραπέμπονται διακονίᾳ. 4

Joseph. *A.I.* 18, 224; *B.I.* 2, 180

IV. Τιβέριος μὲν οὖν ἀμφὶ τὰ δύο καὶ εἴκοσι βασιλεύσας ἔτη τελευτᾷ, μετὰ δὲ τοῦτον Γάϊος τὴν ἡγεμονίαν παραλαβών, αὐτίκα τῆς Ἰουδαίων ἀρχῆς Ἀγρίππᾳ τὸ διάδημα περιτίθησιν, βασιλέα καταστήσας αὐτὸν τῆς τε Φιλίππου καὶ τῆς Λυσανίου τετραρχίας, πρὸς αἷς μετ' οὐ πολὺν αὐτῷ χρόνον καὶ τὴν Ἡρῴδου τετραρχίαν παραδίδωσιν, ἀϊδίῳ φυγῇ τὸν Ἡρῴδην (οὗτος δ' ἦν ὁ κατὰ τὸ πάθος τοῦ σωτῆρος) σὺν καὶ τῇ γυναικὶ Ἡρῳδιάδι πλείστων ἕνεκα ζημιώσας αἰτιῶν. μάρτυς Ἰώσηπος καὶ τούτων. 1

Joseph. *A.I* 18, 237. 252. 255

Κατὰ δὴ τοῦτον Φίλων ἐγνωρίζετο πλείστοις, ἀνὴρ οὐ μόνον τῶν ἡμετέρων, ἀλλὰ καὶ τῶν ἀπὸ τῆς ἔξωθεν ὁρμωμένων παιδείας ἐπισημότατος. τὸ μὲν οὖν γένος ἀνέκαθεν Ἑβραῖος ἦν, τῶν δ' ἐπ' Ἀλεξανδρείας ἐν τέλει διαφανῶν οὐδενὸς χείρων, περὶ δὲ τὰ θεῖα καὶ πάτρια μαθήματα ὅσον τε καὶ ὁπηλίκον εἰσενήνεκται πόνον, ἔργῳ πᾶσι δῆλος, καὶ περὶ τὰ φιλόσοφα δὲ καὶ ἐλευθέρια τῆς ἔξωθεν παιδείας οἷός τις ἦν, οὐδὲν δεῖ λέγειν, ὅτε μάλιστα τὴν κατὰ Πλάτωνα καὶ Πυθαγόραν ἐζηλωκὼς ἀγωγήν, διενεγκεῖν ἅπαντας τοὺς καθ' ἑαυτὸν ἱστορεῖται. 2

V. καὶ δὴ τὰ κατὰ Γάϊον οὗτος Ἰουδαίοις συμβάντα πέντε βιβλίοις παραδίδωσιν, ὁμοῦ τὴν Γαΐου διεξιὼν 1 3

Digitized by Google

brethren besides them, that the name of Christian was first given, as from a fresh and life-giving fountain. Agabus also, one of the prophets with them, made predictions that there was to be a famine, and Paul and Barnabas were sent to give assistance to the ministry of the brethren.

IV. Tiberius died after reigning about twenty-two years.[1] After him Caius received the sovereignty and at once gave to Agrippa[2] the crown of the rule of the Jews. He made him king of the tetrarchies of Philip and Lysanias, and after a short time added to them the tetrarchy of Herod, sentencing Herod (he was the Herod of the Passion of the Saviour) for many offences to perpetual banishment, together with his wife Herodias. Of this too Josephus is witness.

In his reign Philo became generally known as a man of the greatest distinction, not only among our own people but also among those of heathen education. He was a Hebrew by racial descent but inferior to none of the magnates in authority in Alexandria. The extent and quality of the labour he bestowed on the theological learning of his race is in fact patent to all, and it is not necessary to say anything of his position in philosophy and the liberal studies of the heathen world since he is related to have surpassed all his contemporaries, especially in his zeal for the study of Plato and Pythagoras. V. Now this writer has narrated in five books what happened to the Jews in the time of Caius; he has in this work combined the stories of the insanity of Caius,

[1] He died March 16, A.D. 37.

[2] See Introduction for the family of the Herod. This is Agrippa I., son of Aristobulus and grandson of Herod the Great. The Herod mentioned in the next sentence is Herod Antipas, Agrippa's uncle.

Digitized by Google

φρενοβλάβειαν, ὡς θεὸν ἑαυτὸν ἀναγορεύσαντος καὶ μυρία περὶ τὴν ἀρχὴν ἐνυβρικότος, τάς τε κατ' αὐτὸν Ἰουδαίων ταλαιπωρίας καὶ ἣν αὐτὸς στειλάμενος ἐπὶ τῆς Ῥωμαίων πόλεως ὑπὲρ τῶν κατὰ τὴν Ἀλεξάνδρειαν ὁμοεθνῶν ἐποιήσατο πρεσβείαν, ὅπως τε ἐπὶ τοῦ Γαΐου καταστὰς ὑπὲρ τῶν πατρίων νόμων, οὐδέν τι πλέον γέλωτος καὶ διασυρμῶν ἀπηνέγκατο, μικροῦ δεῖν καὶ τὸν περὶ τῆς ζωῆς ἀνατλὰς κίνδυνον.

Μέμνηται καὶ τούτων ὁ Ἰώσηπος, ἐν ὀκτω- 2
καιδεκάτῳ τῆς Ἀρχαιολογίας κατὰ λέξιν ταῦτα
Joseph. *A.I.* 18, 257–260 γράφων " καὶ δὴ στάσεως ἐν Ἀλεξανδρείᾳ γενομένης Ἰουδαίων τε οἳ ἐνοικοῦσι, καὶ Ἑλλήνων, τρεῖς ἀφ' ἑκατέρας τῆς στάσεως πρεσβευταὶ αἱρεθέντες παρῆσαν πρὸς τὸν Γάϊον. καὶ ἦν γὰρ τῶν Ἀλε- 3
ξανδρέων πρέσβεων εἷς Ἀπίων, ὃς πολλὰ εἰς τοὺς Ἰουδαίους ἐβλασφήμησεν, ἄλλα τε λέγων καὶ ὡς τῶν Καίσαρος τιμῶν περιορῷεν· πάντων γοῦν, ὅσοι τῇ Ῥωμαίων ἀρχῇ ὑποτελεῖς εἶεν, βωμοὺς τῷ Γαΐῳ καὶ ναοὺς ἱδρυμένων τά τε ἄλλα ἐν πᾶσιν αὐτὸν ὥσπερ τοὺς θεοὺς δεχομένων, μόνους τούσδε ἄδοξον ἡγεῖσθαι ἀνδριᾶσι τιμᾶν καὶ ὅρκιον αὐτοῦ τὸ ὄνομα ποιεῖσθαι· πολλὰ δὲ καὶ χαλεπὰ Ἀπίωνος εἰρηκότος, ὑφ' 4
ὧν ἀρθῆναι ἤλπιζεν τὸν Γάϊον καὶ εἰκὸς ἦν, Φίλων ὁ προεστὼς τῶν Ἰουδαίων τῆς πρεσβείας, ἀνὴρ τὰ πάντα ἔνδοξος Ἀλεξάνδρου τε τοῦ ἀλαβάρχου ἀδελφὸς ὢν καὶ φιλοσοφίας οὐκ ἄπειρος, οἷός τε ἦν ἐπ' ἀπολογίᾳ χωρεῖν τῶν κατηγορημένων, διακλείει δ' αὐτὸν Γάϊος, κελεύσας ἐκποδὼν ἀπ- 5
ελθεῖν, περιοργής τε ὢν φανερὸς ἦν ἐργασόμενός τι δεινὸν αὐτούς. ὁ δὲ Φίλων ἔξεισι περι-

Digitized by Google

how he announced himself as a god and perpetrated innumerable acts of insolence during his reign, of the misery of the Jews in his time, of the mission which he was himself entrusted to make to the city of the Romans on behalf of those of his own race in Alexandria, and of how, when he appeared before Caius on behalf of his ancestral laws, he received nothing but laughter and ridicule, and narrowly escaped risking his life.

Josephus also relates these facts and writes as follows in the eighteenth book of the *Antiquities*: "Now when a disturbance took place in Alexandria between the Jews who lived there and the Greeks, three of each side were chosen to go as representatives to Caius. One of the Alexandrian representatives was Apion, who uttered many calumnies against the Jews, saying especially that they neglected to give honour to Caesar, and that while all who are subject to the rule of the Romans build altars and temples to Caius, and in all other respects receive him as they do the gods, these men alone think it improper to honour him with statues or to swear by his name. Now though Apion had made many serious charges by which he naturally hoped that Caius would be roused, Philo, the chief of the embassy of the Jews, a man of high reputation in every respect, for he was the brother of Alexander the Alabarch and a philosopher of no little skill, was able in his reply to deal with the accusations, but Caius cut him short, bade him get out of the way, and was so enraged that he clearly was on the point of serious measures against them. So Philo went

Digitized by Google

ὑβρισμένος, καί φησιν πρὸς τοὺς Ἰουδαίους οἳ περὶ αὐτὸν ἦσαν, ὡς χρὴ θαρρεῖν, Γαΐου μὲν αὐτοῖς ὠργισμένου, ἔργῳ δὲ ἤδη τὸν θεὸν ἀντιπαρεξάγοντος."

Philo, *Leg. ad Gai.* 24. 38

Ταῦτα ὁ Ἰώσηπος. καὶ αὐτὸς δὲ ὁ Φίλων 6 ἐν ᾗ συνέγραψεν Πρεσβείᾳ τὰ κατὰ μέρος ἀκριβῶς τῶν τότε πραχθέντων αὐτῷ δηλοῖ, ὧν τὰ πλεῖστα παρείς, ἐκεῖνα μόνα παραθήσομαι, δι' ὧν τοῖς ἐντυγχάνουσι προφανὴς γενήσεται δήλωσις τῶν ἅμα τε καὶ οὐκ εἰς μακρὸν τῶν κατὰ τοῦ Χριστοῦ τετολμημένων ἕνεκεν Ἰουδαίοις συμβεβηκότων. πρῶτον δὴ οὖν κατὰ Τιβέριον ἐπὶ μὲν τῆς Ῥω- 7 μαίων πόλεως ἱστορεῖ Σηιανόν, τῶν τότε παρὰ βασιλεῖ πολλὰ δυνάμενον, ἄρδην τὸ πᾶν ἔθνος ἀπολέσθαι σπουδὴν εἰσαγηοχέναι, ἐπὶ δὲ τῆς Ἰουδαίας Πιλᾶτον, καθ' ὃν τὰ περὶ τὸν σωτῆρα τετόλμητο, περὶ τὸ ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις ἔτι τότε συνεστὸς ἱερὸν ἐπιχειρήσαντά τι παρὰ τὸ Ἰουδαίοις ἐξόν, τὰ μέγιστα αὐτοὺς ἀναταράξαι, VI. μετὰ δὲ τὴν Τιβερίου τελευτὴν Γάϊον τὴν ἀρχὴν 1 παρειληφότα, πολλὰ μὲν εἰς πολλοὺς καὶ ἄλλα ἐνυβρίσαι, πάντων δὲ μάλιστα τὸ πᾶν Ἰουδαίων ἔθνος οὐ σμικρὰ καταβλάψαι· ἃ καὶ ἐν βραχεῖ πάρεστιν διὰ τῶν αὐτοῦ καταμαθεῖν φωνῶν, ἐν αἷς κατὰ λέξιν ταῦτα γράφει

Philo, *Leg. ad Gai.* 43

"Τοσαύτη μὲν οὖν τις ἡ τοῦ Γαΐου περὶ τὸ 2 ἦθος ἦν ἀνωμαλία πρὸς ἅπαντας, διαφερόντως δὲ πρὸς τὸ Ἰουδαίων γένος, ᾧ χαλεπῶς ἀπεχθανόμενος τὰς μὲν ἐν ταῖς ἄλλαις πόλεσιν προσευχάς, ἀπὸ τῶν κατ' Ἀλεξάνδρειαν ἀρξάμενος, σφετερίζεται, καταπλήσας εἰκόνων καὶ ἀνδριάντων τῆς ἰδίας μορφῆς (ὁ γὰρ ἑτέρων ἀνατιθέντων

Digitized by Google

out, deeply insulted, and told the Jews who were with him that they must keep up their courage, for though Caius was enraged against them he was in fact already fighting against God."

So far Josephus. Philo himself in the *Embassy* which he wrote gives an accurate and detailed account of what he did at the time. I shall pass over the greater part and cite only those points which plainly demonstrate to students the misfortunes which came upon the Jews, all at once and after a short time, in consequence of their crimes against Christ. In the first place he relates that, in the time of Tiberius, in the city of the Romans, Sejanus, the most influential of the Emperor's court at the time, took measures completely to destroy the whole race, and in Judaea Pilate, under whom the crime against the Saviour was perpetrated, made an attempt on the temple, still standing in Jerusalem, contrary to the privileges granted to the Jews, and harassed them to the utmost, (VI.) while after the death of Tiberius Caius received the sovereignty and inflicted many injuries on many, but more than all did the greatest harm to the whole nation of the Jews. This may be learned shortly from his own words, in which he writes exactly as follows: "Now the character of Caius was extremely capricious towards all, but particularly towards the race of Jews. He hated them bitterly; in other cities, beginning with Alexandria, he seized the synagogues and filled them with images and statues of his own form (for by giving permission to

Digitized by Google

ἐφιείς, αὐτὸς ἱδρύετο δυνάμει), τὸν δ' ἐν τῇ ἱεροπόλει νεών, ὃς λοιπὸς ἦν ἄψαυστος, ἀσυλίας ἠξιωμένος τῆς πάσης, μεθηρμόζετο καὶ μετεσχημάτιζεν εἰς οἰκεῖον ἱερόν, ἵνα Διὸς Ἐπιφανοῦς Νέου χρηματίζῃ Γαΐου."

Μυρία μὲν οὖν ἄλλα δεινὰ καὶ πέρα πάσης 3
διηγήσεως ὁ αὐτὸς κατὰ τὴν Ἀλεξάνδρειαν
συμβεβηκότα Ἰουδαίοις ἐπὶ τοῦ δηλουμένου ἐν
δευτέρῳ συγγράμματι ᾧ[1] ἐπέγραψεν "Περὶ
ἀρετῶν" ἱστορεῖ· συνᾴδει δ' αὐτῷ καὶ ὁ Ἰώ-
σηπος, ὁμοίως ἀπὸ τῶν Πιλάτου χρόνων καὶ
τῶν κατὰ τοῦ σωτῆρος τετολμημένων τὰς κατὰ
παντὸς τοῦ ἔθνους ἐνάρξασθαι σημαίνων συμ-
φοράς. ἄκουε δ' οὖν οἷα καὶ οὗτος ἐν δευτέρῳ 4
τοῦ Ἰουδαϊκοῦ πολέμου αὐταῖς συλλαβαῖς δηλοῖ
λέγων

Joseph. *B.I.* 2, 169. 170 "Πεμφθεὶς δὲ εἰς Ἰουδαίαν ἐπίτροπος ὑπὸ
Τιβερίου Πιλᾶτος νύκτωρ κεκαλυμμένας εἰς Ἱερο-
σόλυμα παρεισκομίζει τὰς Καίσαρος εἰκόνας· ση-
μαῖαι καλοῦνται. τοῦτο μεθ' ἡμέραν μεγίστην
ταραχὴν ἤγειρεν τοῖς Ἰουδαίοις. οἵ τε γὰρ
ἐγγὺς πρὸς τὴν ὄψιν ἐξεπλάγησαν, ὡς πεπατη-
μένων αὐτοῖς τῶν νόμων· οὐδὲν γὰρ ἀξιοῦσιν
ἐν τῇ πόλει δείκηλον τίθεσθαι."

Ταῦτα δὲ συγκρίνας τῇ τῶν εὐαγγελίων γραφῇ, 5
εἴσῃ ὡς οὐκ εἰς μακρὸν αὐτοὺς μετῆλθεν ἣν
ἔρρηξαν ἐπ' αὐτοῦ Πιλάτου φωνήν, δι' ἧς οὐκ
John 19, 15 ἄλλον ἢ μόνον ἔχειν ἐπεβόων Καίσαρα βασιλέα.

[1] Schwartz prefers the reading of BD, ὧν ἐπέγραψεν, but to make sense this would require the article τῷ before δευτέρῳ. It is possible that the τῷ slipped out by a primitive error, in which case ὧν would be the better reading.

Digitized by Google

others to install them he did in fact put them there), and in Jerusalem the temple, which had hitherto been untouched and held worthy of preservation from all violation, he tried to change and transform to a shrine of his own to be called that of 'Caius the new Zeus manifest.'"

The same writer narrates in a second treatise entitled *On the Virtues*[1] innumerable other atrocities, beyond all description, perpetrated on Jews in Alexandria in the same reign, and Josephus confirms him, showing in the same way that the universal misfortunes of the nation began with the time of Pilate and the crimes against the Saviour. Listen then to the actual words of his statement in the second book of the *Jewish War*. "Now Pilate, sent as procurator to Judaea by Tiberius, brought into Jerusalem at night and covered up the images of Caesar which are called ensigns. When day came this roused the greatest commotion among the Jews, for they were horrified at what they saw close by since their laws had been trampled on, for they do not permit any image to be set up in the city."

Now comparing this with the writing of the Gospels you will see that it was not long before they were overtaken by the cry which they uttered in the presence of Pilate himself, with which they shouted out that they had no other king than Caesar only. The same writer

[1] This is the only possible translation of the Greek as it stands. Yet there is little doubt but that *On the Virtues* is an alternative title of the *Embassy*. Either Eusebius made a slip, or there is a primitive error in the text, which should be emended and translated in agreement with the rendering of Rufinus, "In the second of the books which he entitled *On the Virtues*."

Digitized by Google

εἶτα δὲ καὶ ἄλλην ἑξῆς ὁ αὐτὸς συγγραφεὺς 6
ἱστορεῖ μετελθεῖν αὐτοὺς συμφορὰν ἐν τούτοις
Joseph. *B.I.* 2, 175–177 "μετὰ δὲ ταῦτα ταραχὴν ἑτέραν ἐκίνει, τὸν ἱερὸν θησαυρόν, καλεῖται δὲ κορβανας, εἰς καταγωγὴν ὑδάτων ἐξαναλίσκων· κατῆει δὲ ἀπὸ τριακοσίων σταδίων. πρὸς τοῦτο τοῦ πλήθους ἀγανάκτησις ἦν, καὶ τοῦ Πιλάτου παρόντος εἰς Ἱεροσόλυμα, περιστάντες ἅμα κατεβόων. ὁ δὲ 7
προῄδει γὰρ αὐτῶν τὴν ταραχὴν καὶ τῷ πλήθει τοὺς στρατιώτας ἐνόπλους, ἐσθήσεσιν ἰδιωτικαῖς κεκαλυμμένους, ἐγκαταμίξας καὶ ξίφει μὲν χρήσασθαι κωλύσας, ξύλοις δὲ παίειν τοὺς κεκραγότας ἐγκελευσάμενος, σύνθημα δίδωσιν ἀπὸ τοῦ βήματος. τυπτόμενοι δὲ οἱ Ἰουδαῖοι πολλοὶ μὲν ὑπὸ τῶν πληγῶν, πολλοὶ δὲ ὑπὸ σφῶν αὐτῶν ἐν τῇ φυγῇ καταπατηθέντες ἀπώλοντο, πρὸς δὲ τὴν συμφορὰν τῶν ἀνῃρημένων καταπλαγὲν τὸ πλῆθος ἐσιώπησεν."

Ἐπὶ τούτοις μυρίας ἄλλας ἐν αὐτοῖς Ἱεροσο- 8
λύμοις κεκινῆσθαι νεωτεροποιίας ὁ αὐτὸς ἐμφαίνει, παριστὰς ὡς οὐδαμῶς ἐξ ἐκείνου διέλιπον τήν τε πόλιν καὶ τὴν Ἰουδαίαν ἅπασαν στάσεις καὶ πόλεμοι καὶ κακῶν ἐπάλληλοι μηχαναί, εἰς ὅτε τὸ πανύστατον ἡ κατὰ Οὐεσπασιανὸν αὐτοὺς μετῆλθεν πολιορκία. Ἰουδαίους μὲν οὖν ὧν κατὰ τοῦ Χριστοῦ τετολμήκασιν, ταύτῃ πῃ τὰ ἐκ τῆς θείας μετῄει δίκης.

VII. Οὐκ ἀγνοεῖν δὲ ἄξιον ὡς καὶ αὐτὸν ἐκεῖνον 1
τὸν ἐπὶ τοῦ σωτῆρος Πιλᾶτον κατὰ Γάϊον, οὗ τοὺς χρόνους διέξιμεν, τοσαύταις περιπεσεῖν κατέχει λόγος συμφοραῖς, ὡς ἐξ ἀνάγκης αὐτοφονευτὴν ἑαυτοῦ καὶ τιμωρὸν αὐτόχειρα γενέσθαι, τῆς θείας, ὡς

Digitized by Google

then goes on to relate another misfortune which overtook them, as follows: "And after this he roused another commotion by expending the sacred treasure, called Corban, for an aqueduct which he brought from a distance of three hundred stadia. Popular indignation was aroused at this, and when Pilate came to Jerusalem the people stood round with howls of execration; but he had foreseen their disturbance and had mixed with the crowd armed soldiers disguised in civilian clothes, with orders not to use their swords but to club those who had shouted. He gave the signal for this from his judgement-seat; and as the Jews were smitten many perished from the blows, many from being trampled upon by their fellows in their flight, and the mob, overcome at the calamity of those who perished, was silent."

The same writer shows that besides this innumerable other revolts were started in Jerusalem itself, affirming that from that time risings and war and the mutual contrivance of evil never ceased in the city and throughout Judaea, until the time when the siege under Vespasian came upon them as the last scene of all. Thus the penalty of God pursued the Jews for their crimes against Christ.

VII. It is also worthy of notice that tradition relates that that same Pilate, he of the Saviour's time, in the days of Caius, whose period we have described, fell into such great calamity that he was forced to become his own slayer and to punish himself with his own hand, for the penalty of God, as it seems,

Digitized by Google

ἔοικεν, δίκης οὐκ εἰς μακρὸν αὐτὸν μετελθούσης. ἱστοροῦσιν Ἑλλήνων οἱ τὰς Ὀλυμπιάδας ἅμα τοῖς κατὰ χρόνους πεπραγμένοις ἀναγράψαντες.

Joseph. *A.I.* 19, 201; *B.I.* 2, 204 Acts 11, 28

VIII. Ἀλλὰ γὰρ Γάϊον οὐδ' ὅλοις τέτταρσιν ἔτε- 1
σιν τὴν ἀρχὴν κατασχόντα Κλαύδιος αὐτοκράτωρ διαδέχεται· καθ' ὃν λιμοῦ τὴν οἰκουμένην πιέσαντος (τοῦτο δὲ καὶ οἱ πόρρω τοῦ καθ' ἡμᾶς λόγου συγγραφεῖς ταῖς αὐτῶν ἱστορίαις παρέδοσαν), ἡ κατὰ τὰς Πράξεις τῶν ἀποστόλων Ἀγάβου προφήτου περὶ τοῦ μέλλειν ἔσεσθαι λιμὸν ἐφ' ὅλην τὴν οἰκουμένην πέρας ἐλάμβανεν πρόρρησις. τὸν δὲ κατὰ Κλαύδιον λιμὸν ἐπι- 2
σημηνάμενος ἐν ταῖς Πράξεσιν ὁ Λουκᾶς ἱστο-

Acts 11, 29. 30

ρήσας τε ὡς ἄρα διὰ Παύλου καὶ Βαρναβᾶ οἱ κατὰ Ἀντιόχειαν ἀδελφοὶ τοῖς κατὰ τὴν Ἰουδαίαν ἐξ ὧν ἕκαστος ηὐπόρει διαπεμψάμενοι

Acts 12, 1. 2

εἴησαν, ἐπιφέρει λέγων· (IX.) "κατ' ἐκεῖνον δὲ τὸν 1
καιρόν, δῆλον δ' ὅτι τὸν ἐπὶ Κλαυδίου, ἐπέβαλεν Ἡρῴδης ὁ βασιλεὺς τὰς χεῖρας κακῶσαί τινας τῶν ἀπὸ τῆς ἐκκλησίας, ἀνεῖλεν δὲ Ἰάκωβον τὸν ἀδελφὸν Ἰωάννου μαχαίρᾳ." περὶ τούτου 2
δ' ὁ Κλήμης τοῦ Ἰακώβου καὶ ἱστορίαν μνήμης ἀξίαν ἐν τῇ τῶν Ὑποτυπώσεων ἑβδόμῃ παρατίθεται ὡς ἂν ἐκ παραδόσεως τῶν πρὸ αὐτοῦ φάσκων ὅτι δὴ ὁ εἰσαγαγὼν αὐτὸν εἰς δικαστήριον, μαρτυρήσαντα αὐτὸν ἰδὼν κινηθείς, ὡμολόγησεν εἶναι καὶ αὐτὸς ἑαυτὸν Χριστιανόν. "συναπήχθησαν 3
οὖν ἄμφω," φησίν, "καὶ κατὰ τὴν ὁδὸν ἠξίωσεν ἀφεθῆναι αὐτῷ ὑπὸ τοῦ Ἰακώβου· ὁ δὲ ὀλίγον σκεψάμενος, 'εἰρήνη σοι' εἶπεν καὶ κατεφίλησεν αὐτόν. καὶ οὕτως ἀμφότεροι ὁμοῦ ἐκαρατομήθησαν."[1]

[1] *Cf.* George Syncellus 633, 11-18.

Digitized by Google

followed hard after him. Those who record the Olympiads of the Greeks with the annals of events relate this.[1]

VIII. Caius had not completed four years of sovereignty when Claudius succeeded him as Emperor.[2] In his time famine seized the world (and this also writers[3] with a purpose quite other than ours have recorded in their histories), and so what the prophet Agabus had foretold, according to the Acts of the Apostles, that a famine would be over the whole world, received fulfilment. Luke in the Acts describes the famine in the time of Claudius and narrates how the Christians at Antioch sent to those in Judaea, each according to his ability, by Paul and Barnabas, and he goes on to say, (IX.) "Now at that time,"—obviously that of Claudius,—"Herod the king put forth his hand to vex certain of the church and killed James the brother of John with the sword." Concerning this James, Clement adds in the seventh book of the *Hypotyposes* a story worth mentioning, apparently from the tradition of his predecessors, to the effect that he who brought him to the court was so moved at seeing him testify as to confess that he also was himself a Christian. "So they were both led away together," he says, "and on the way he asked for forgiveness for himself from James. And James looked at him for a moment and said, 'Peace be to you,' and kissed him. So both were beheaded at the same time."

[1] No extant records confirm this statement.

[2] Jan. 24, A.D. 41.

[3] *Cf.* Tacitus, *Ann.* xii. 13, and Dio Cassius lx. 11. But Eusebius, influenced by Acts xi. 28, exaggerates the universal character of the famine.

Digitized by Google

Acts 12, 3–17 Τότε δῆτα, ὥς φησιν ἡ θεία γραφή, ἰδὼν Ἡρῴδης 4
ἐπὶ τῇ τοῦ Ἰακώβου ἀναιρέσει πρὸς ἡδονῆς
γεγονὸς τὸ πραχθὲν τοῖς Ἰουδαίοις, ἐπιτίθεται
καὶ Πέτρῳ, δεσμοῖς τε αὐτὸν παραδούς, ὅσον
οὔπω καὶ τὸν κατ' αὐτοῦ φόνον ἐνήργησεν ἄν,
εἰ μὴ διὰ θείας ἐπιφανείας, ἐπιστάντος αὐτῷ
νύκτωρ ἀγγέλου, παραδόξως τῶν εἱργμῶν ἀπαλ-
λαγείς, ἐπὶ τὴν τοῦ κηρύγματος ἀφεῖται διακονίαν.
καὶ τὰ μὲν κατὰ Πέτρον οὕτως εἶχεν οἰκονομίας.

X. Τὰ δέ γε τῆς κατὰ τῶν ἀποστόλων ἐγχειρή- 1
σεως τοῦ βασιλέως οὐκέτ' ἀναβολῆς εἶχετο, ἅμα γέ
τοι αὐτὸν ὁ τῆς θείας δίκης τιμωρὸς διάκονος
μετῄει, παραυτίκα μετὰ τὴν τῶν ἀποστόλων
Acts 12, 19. 21–23 ἐπιβουλήν, ὡς ἡ τῶν Πράξεων ἱστορεῖ γραφή,
ὁρμήσαντα μὲν ἐπὶ τὴν Καισάρειαν, ἐν ἐπισήμῳ
δ' ἐνταῦθα ἑορτῆς ἡμέρᾳ λαμπρᾷ καὶ βασιλικῇ
κοσμησάμενον ἐσθῆτι ὑψηλόν τε πρὸ βήματος
δημηγορήσαντα· τοῦ γάρ τοι δήμου παντὸς ἐπ-
ευφημήσαντος ἐπὶ τῇ δημηγορίᾳ ὡς ἐπὶ θεοῦ
φωνῇ καὶ οὐκ ἀνθρώπου, παραχρῆμα τὸ λόγιον
πατάξαι αὐτὸν ἄγγελον κυρίου ἱστορεῖ, γενό-
μενόν τε σκωληκόβρωτον ἐκψῦξαι. θαυμάσαι δ' 2
ἄξιον τῆς περὶ τὴν θείαν γραφὴν καὶ ἐν τῷδε τῷ
παραδόξῳ συμφωνίας τὴν τοῦ Ἰωσήπου ἱστορίαν,
καθ' ἣν ἐπιμαρτυρῶν τῇ ἀληθείᾳ δῆλός ἐστιν,
ἐν τόμῳ τῆς Ἀρχαιολογίας ἐννεακαιδεκάτῳ, ἔνθα
αὐτοῖς γράμμασιν ὧδέ πως τὸ θαῦμα διηγεῖται.

Joseph. *A.I.* 19, 343–351 "Τρίτον δ' ἔτος αὐτῷ βασιλεύοντι τῆς ὅλης 3
Ἰουδαίας πεπλήρωτο, καὶ παρῆν εἰς πόλιν Και-
σάρειαν, ἣ τὸ πρότερον Στράτωνος πύργος ἐκα-

[1] The feast was probably that *Pro salute Caesaris* which was celebrated every four years (see E. Schwartz, "Zur

Digitized by Google

At that time, as the divine Scripture says, Herod, seeing that his action in the murder of James had given pleasure to the Jews, turned to Peter also, put him in prison, and would have perpetrated his murder also had it not been for Divine intervention at the last moment, for an angel appeared to him by night and he was miraculously released from his bonds and set free for the ministry of preaching. Such was the dispensation of heaven for Peter.

X. As to the king's attempt on the Apostles there was no more delay, but the avenging minister of the sentence of God overtook him at once, immediately after his plot against the Apostles, as the Scripture relates in the Acts. He had gone to Caesarea, and there on the set day of the feast,[1] adorned with splendid and royal robes, he addressed the people, standing on high before his judgement-seat. The whole people applauded his address, as though at the voice of a god and not of a man, and the story[2] relates that an angel of the Lord smote him at once, and he was eaten of worms and expired. It is worthy of wonder how in this marvel also the narrative of Josephus agrees with the divine Scripture. He clearly testifies to the truth in the nineteenth book of the *Antiquities*, where the wonder is related in the following words: "Now the third year of his reign over all Judaea had been finished when he came to the city of Caesarea, which was formerly called the

Chronologie des Paulus," *Gött. Nachr.* 1907), and was due in A.D. 44 when Herod probably died.

[2] Note that Eusebius uses the word λόγιον of the Acts; in view of the fact that the word, literally "oracle," is generally used of the Old Testament it might almost be rendered by "Scripture."

Digitized by Google

λεῖτο. συνετέλει δ' ἐνταῦθα θεωρίας εἰς τὴν Καίσαρος τιμήν, ὑπὲρ τῆς ἐκείνου σωτηρίας ἑορτήν τινα ταύτην ἐπιστάμενος, καὶ παρ' αὐτὴν ἤθροιστο τῶν κατὰ τὴν ἐπαρχίαν ἐν τέλει καὶ προβεβηκότων εἰς ἀξίαν πλῆθος. δευτέρᾳ δὲ τῶν 4
θεωριῶν ἡμέρᾳ στολὴν ἐνδυσάμενος ἐξ ἀργύρου πεποιημένην πᾶσαν, ὡς θαυμάσιον ὑφὴν εἶναι, παρῆλθεν εἰς τὸ θέατρον ἀρχομένης ἡμέρας. ἔνθα ταῖς πρώταις τῶν ἡλιακῶν ἀκτίνων ἐπιβολαῖς ὁ ἄργυρος καταυγασθείς, θαυμασίως ἀπέστιλβεν, μαρμαίρων τι φοβερὸν καὶ τοῖς εἰς αὐτὸν ἀτενίζουσι φρικῶδες. εὐθὺς δὲ οἱ κόλακες τὰς οὐδὲν 5
ἐκείνῳ πρὸς ἀγαθοῦ ἄλλος ἄλλοθεν φωνὰς ἀνεβόων, θεὸν προσαγορεύοντες 'εὐμενῆς' τε 'εἶης' ἐπιλέγοντες, 'εἰ καὶ μέχρι νῦν ὡς ἄνθρωπον ἐφοβήθημεν, ἀλλὰ τοὐντεῦθεν κρείττονά σε θνητῆς φύσεως ὁμολογοῦμεν.' οὐκ ἐπέπληξεν τούτοις ὁ βασιλεὺς οὐδὲ τὴν κολακείαν ἀσεβοῦσαν ἀπε- 6
τρίψατο. ἀνακύψας δὲ μετ' ὀλίγον, τῆς ἑαυτοῦ κεφαλῆς ὑπερκαθεζόμενον εἶδεν ἄγγελον. τοῦτον
Joseph. *A.I.* 18, 195 εὐθὺς ἐνόησεν κακῶν εἶναι αἴτιον, τὸν καί ποτε τῶν ἀγαθῶν γενόμενον, καὶ διακάρδιον ἔσχεν ὀδύνην, ἄθρουν δ' αὐτῷ τῆς κοιλίας προσέφυσεν ἄλγημα, μετὰ σφοδρότητος ἀρξάμενον. ἀναθεω- 7
ρῶν οὖν πρὸς τοὺς φίλους, 'ὁ θεὸς ὑμῖν ἐγώ,' φησίν, 'ἤδη καταστρέφειν ἐπιτάττομαι τὸν βίον, παραχρῆμα τῆς εἱμαρμένης τὰς ἄρτι μου κατεψευσμένας φωνὰς ἐλεγχούσης. ὁ κληθεὶς ἀθάνατος ὑφ' ὑμῶν, ἤδη θανεῖν ἀπάγομαι. δεκτέον δὲ τὴν πεπρωμένην, ᾗ θεὸς βεβούληται. καὶ

[1] Eusebius is usually very accurate in his quotations, but here he varies from the text of Josephus, who says "he saw

Digitized by Google

tower of Strato. There he was celebrating games in honour of Caesar, because he knew that this was a kind of feast for his safety, and at it was assembled a multitude of those in office and of high rank in the province. On the second day of the games he put on a robe made entirely of silver, so that it was a wonderful fabric, and proceeded to the theatre at the beginning of the day. Then when the silver was refulgent with the first glint of the rays of the sun it gleamed marvellously with a peculiar sheen, fearful and terrifying to those who gazed at it. At once the flatterers raised their voices from various quarters —but no good did it do him—and addressed him as a god, saying, 'Be thou propitious! even if until now we feared thee as man, yet from henceforth we confess thee as of more than mortal nature.' The king was not dismayed at these words, nor did he reject the impious flattery.

But after a little looking up he saw an angel seated above his head.[1] This he at once perceived to be the harbinger of evil, as it had formerly been of good;[1] he had pain in his heart, and agony rapidly beginning spread increasingly through his stomach. So he looked up to his friends and said, 'I, who am your god, am now commanded to give up my life, for fate has immediately reproved the lying words just uttered about me. I, whom you called immortal, am now being taken off to die. Fate must be accepted as God has willed, yet I have

[1] an owl sitting on a certain rope over his head, and at once understood that it was a messenger (ἄγγελος) of evil, as it had formerly been of good." The allusion is to the story that when Agrippa, at the lowest ebb of his misfortunes, was in prison in Rome he saw an owl and regarded it as a harbinger of better days, which did indeed soon come (Josephus, *Ant.* xviii. 6. 7).

Digitized by Google

γὰρ βεβιώκαμεν οὐδαμῇ φαύλως, ἀλλ' ἐπὶ τῆς μακαριζομένης μακρότητος.' ταῦτα δὲ λέγων ἐπιτάσει τῆς ὀδύνης κατεπονεῖτο· μετὰ σπουδῆς οὖν εἰς τὸ βασίλειον ἐκομίσθη, καὶ διῆξε λόγος 8 εἰς πάντας ὡς ἔχοι τοῦ τεθνάναι παντάπασι μετ' ὀλίγον. ἡ πληθὺς δ' αὐτίκα σὺν γυναιξὶ καὶ παισὶν ἐπὶ σάκκον καθεσθεῖσα τῷ πατρίῳ νόμῳ τὸν θεὸν ἱκέτευον ὑπὲρ τοῦ βασιλέως, οἰμωγῆς τε πάντ' ἦν ἀνάπλεα καὶ θρήνων. ἐν ὑψηλῷ δ' ὁ βασιλεὺς δωματίῳ κατακείμενος καὶ κάτω βλέπων αὐτοὺς πρηνεῖς προπίπτοντας, ἄδακρυς οὐδ' αὐτὸς ἔμενεν. συνεχεῖς δ' ἐφ' ἡμέρας πέντε τῷ τῆς γαστρὸς ἀλγήματι διεργασθείς, τὸν βίον 9 κατέστρεψεν, ἀπὸ γενέσεως ἄγων πεντηκοστὸν ἔτος καὶ τέταρτον, τῆς δὲ βασιλείας ἕβδομον. τέσσαρας μὲν οὖν ἐπὶ Γαΐου Καίσαρος ἐβασίλευσεν ἐνιαυτούς, τῆς Φιλίππου μὲν τετραρχίας εἰς τριετίαν ἄρξας, τῷ τετάρτῳ δὲ καὶ τὴν Ἡρῴδου προσειληφώς, τρεῖς δ' ἐπιλαβὼν τῆς Κλαυδίου Καίσαρος αὐτοκρατορίας.'' ταῦτα τὸν Ἰώσηπον 10 μετὰ τῶν ἄλλων ταῖς θείαις συναληθεύοντα γραφαῖς ἀποθαυμάζω· εἰ δὲ περὶ τὴν τοῦ βασιλέως προσηγορίαν δόξειέν τισιν διαφωνεῖν, ἀλλ' ὅ γε χρόνος καὶ ἡ πρᾶξις τὸν αὐτὸν ὄντα δείκνυσιν, ἤτοι κατά τι σφάλμα γραφικὸν ἐνηλλαγμένου τοῦ ὀνόματος ἢ καὶ διωνυμίας περὶ τὸν αὐτόν, οἷα καὶ περὶ πολλούς, γεγενημένης.

Acts 5, 34–36 XI. Ἐπεὶ δὲ πάλιν ὁ Λουκᾶς ἐν ταῖς Πράξεσιν 1 εἰσάγει τὸν Γαμαλιὴλ ἐν τῇ περὶ τῶν ἀποστόλων σκέψει λέγοντα ὡς ἄρα κατὰ τὸν δηλούμενον χρόνον ἀνέστη Θευδᾶς λέγων ἑαυτὸν εἶναί τινά, ὃς κατελύθη, καὶ πάντες ὅσοι ἐπείσθησαν αὐτῷ,

Digitized by Google

lived no mean life, but in the spaciousness which men deem happy.' While he was saying this, he began to be overwhelmed by the intensity of his pain; he was therefore carried hastily into the palace, and the report was spread among all that he would certainly die shortly. But the multitude seated on sackcloth with their wives and children, according to the law of their fathers, at once began to beseech God for the king and the whole place was filled with wailing and lamentations. The king lying in a room on high, and looking down on them as they fell prostrate, did not remain without tears himself. After being racked by pain in the stomach for five successive days he passed from life in the fifty-fourth year of his age and the seventh of his reign.[1] He had reigned four years in the time of Caius Caesar. For three years he possessed the tetrarchy of Philip, but in the fourth received also that of Herod, and he continued for three more years in the reign of Claudius Caesar." I am surprised how in this and other points Josephus confirms the truth of the divine Scriptures. Even if he seem to some to differ as to the name of the king, nevertheless the date and the events show that he is the same, and either that the name has been changed by some clerical error or that there were two names for the same man, as has happened with many.

XI. Since Luke in the Acts introduces Gamaliel as saying at the inquiry about the Apostles that at the time indicated Theudas arose, saying that he was somebody, and that he was destroyed and all who

[1] This would be A.D. 44, which fits in well with all the other data, except the fact that there are coins of Agrippa referring to his eighth and ninth years; they are usually thought to be spurious, but the point is obscure.

Digitized by Google

διελύθησαν· φέρε, καὶ τὴν περὶ τούτου παραθώμεθα τοῦ Ἰωσήπου γραφήν. ἱστορεῖ τοίνυν αὖθις κατὰ τὸν ἀρτίως δεδηλωμένον αὐτοῦ λόγον αὐτὰ
Joseph. *A.I.* 20, 97. 98 δὴ ταῦτα κατὰ λέξιν, "Φάδου δὲ τῆς Ἰουδαίας 2 ἐπιτροπεύοντος, γόης τις ἀνήρ, Θευδᾶς ὀνόματι, πείθει τὸν πλεῖστον ὄχλον ἀναλαβόντα τὰς κτήσεις ἕπεσθαι πρὸς τὸν Ἰορδάνην ποταμὸν αὐτῷ· προφήτης γὰρ ἔλεγεν εἶναι, καὶ προστάγματι τὸν ποταμὸν σχίσας δίοδον ἔφη παρέξειν αὐτοῖς ῥᾳδίαν, καὶ ταῦτα λέγων πολλοὺς ἠπάτησεν. οὐ 3 μὴν εἴασεν αὐτοὺς τῆς ἀφροσύνης ὀνάσθαι Φάδος, ἀλλ' ἐξέπεμψεν ἴλην ἱππέων ἐπ' αὐτούς, ἥτις ἐπιπεσοῦσα ἀπροσδοκήτως αὐτοῖς, πολλοὺς μὲν ἀνεῖλεν, πολλοὺς δὲ ζῶντας ἔλαβεν, αὐτόν τε τὸν Θευδᾶν ζωγρήσαντες ἀποτέμνουσιν τὴν κεφαλὴν καὶ κομίζουσιν εἰς Ἱεροσόλυμα."

Τούτοις ἑξῆς καὶ τοῦ κατὰ Κλαύδιον γενομένου
Joseph. *A.I.* 20, 101 λιμοῦ μνημονεύει ὧδέ πως· XII. "ἐπὶ τούτοις 1 γε καὶ τὸν μέγαν λιμὸν κατὰ τὴν Ἰουδαίαν συνέβη γενέσθαι, καθ' ὃν καὶ ἡ βασίλισσα Ἑλένη πολλῶν χρημάτων ὠνησαμένη σῖτον ἀπὸ τῆς Αἰγύπτου, διένειμεν τοῖς ἀπορουμένοις." σύμφωνα δ' ἂν 2
Acts 11, 29. 30 εὕροις καὶ ταῦτα τῇ τῶν Πράξεων τῶν ἀποστόλων γραφῇ, περιεχούσῃ ὡς ἄρα τῶν κατ' Ἀντιόχειαν μαθητῶν καθὼς ηὐπορεῖτό τις, ὥρισαν ἕκαστος εἰς διακονίαν ἀποστεῖλαι τοῖς κατοικοῦσιν ἐν τῇ Ἰουδαίᾳ· ὃ καὶ ἐποίησαν, ἀποστείλαντες πρὸς τοὺς πρεσβυτέρους διὰ χειρὸς Βαρναβᾶ καὶ Παύλου. τῆς γέ τοι Ἑλένης, ἧς δὴ 3 καὶ ὁ συγγραφεὺς ἐποιήσατο μνήμην, εἰς ἔτι νῦν

[1] It is remarkable that Eusebius did not notice that this

Digitized by Google

obeyed him were scattered; come, let us compare the writing of Josephus with regard to him.[1] In his work lately mentioned he gives the following narrative. "Now when Fadus was procurator of Judaea a certain impostor named Theudas persuaded a great multitude to take their possessions and follow him to the river Jordan, for he said that he was a prophet and undertook to divide the river by his commands and provide an easy crossing for them. By saying this he deceived many; Fadus, however, did not allow them to enjoy their delusion, but sent a squadron of cavalry against them which attacked them unexpectedly, killed many and took many alive, captured Theudas himself, cut off his head, and brought it to Jerusalem."

After this he also mentions as follows the famine which took place in the time of Claudius: XII. "At the same time it happened that the great famine took place in Judaea, in which Queen Helena bought corn from Egypt at great expense and distributed it to those who were in need." You would find that this too agrees with the writing of the Acts of the Apostles, which records how the disciples in Antioch, each according to his several ability, determined to send to the relief of the dwellers in Judaea, which they did, sending it to the elders by the hand of Barnabas and Paul. Splendid monuments of the Helena whom the historian has commemorated are

[1] Theudas cannot really have been referred to by Gamaliel, who was speaking many years before the time of Fadus. Most modern writers on Acts think that nevertheless the Theudas of Acts is the Theudas of Josephus and explain the speech as literary fiction. Some think that "Luke" was misled by Josephus, who happens to mention Theudas in the same context as Judas of Galilee.

Digitized by Google

στῆλαι διαφανεῖς ἐν προαστείοις δείκνυνται τῆς νῦν Αἰλίας· τοῦ δὲ Ἀδιαβηνῶν ἔθνους αὕτη βασιλεῦσαι ἐλέγετο.

XIII. Ἀλλὰ γὰρ τῆς εἰς τὸν σωτῆρα καὶ κύριον 1
ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν εἰς πάντας ἀνθρώπους ἤδη διαδιδομένης πίστεως, ὁ τῆς ἀνθρώπων πολέμιος σωτηρίας τὴν βασιλεύουσαν προαρπάσασθαι πόλιν μηχανώμενος, ἐνταῦθα Σίμωνα τὸν πρόσθεν δεδηλωμένον ἄγει, καὶ δὴ ταῖς ἐντέχνοις τἀνδρὸς συναιρόμενος γοητείαις πλείους τῶν τὴν Ῥώμην οἰκούντων ἐπὶ τὴν πλάνην σφετερίζεται. δηλοῖ δὲ τοῦθ' ὁ μετ' οὐ πολὺ τῶν ἀποστόλων ἐν 2
τῷ καθ' ἡμᾶς διαπρέψας λόγῳ Ἰουστῖνος, περὶ οὗ τὰ προσήκοντα κατὰ καιρὸν παραθήσομαι· ὃς δὴ ἐν τῇ προτέρᾳ πρὸς Ἀντωνῖνον ὑπὲρ τοῦ καθ' ἡμᾶς δόγματος ἀπολογίᾳ γράφων ὧδέ φησιν·

Justin, *Apol.* 1 26

"Καὶ μετὰ τὴν ἀνάληψιν τοῦ κυρίου εἰς οὐρανὸν 3
προεβάλλοντο οἱ δαίμονες ἀνθρώπους τινὰς λέγοντας ἑαυτοὺς εἶναι θεούς, οἳ οὐ μόνον οὐκ ἐδιώχθησαν ὑφ' ὑμῶν, ἀλλὰ καὶ τιμῶν ἠξιώθησαν· Σίμωνα μέν τινα Σαμαρέα, τὸν ἀπὸ κώμης λεγομένης Γίτθων, ὃς ἐπὶ Κλαυδίου Καίσαρος διὰ τῆς τῶν ἐνεργούντων δαιμόνων τέχνης δυνάμεις μαγικὰς ποιήσας ἐν τῇ πόλει ὑμῶν τῇ βασιλίδι Ῥώμῃ θεὸς ἐνομίσθη καὶ ἀνδριάντι παρ' ὑμῶν ὡς θεὸς τετίμηται ἐν τῷ Τίβερι ποταμῷ μεταξὺ τῶν δύο γεφυρῶν, ἔχων ἐπιγραφὴν Ῥωμαϊκὴν ταύτην· SIMONI DEO SANCTO," ὅπερ ἐστὶν Σίμωνι θεῷ ἁγίῳ.[1]
"καὶ σχεδὸν μὲν πάντες Σαμαρεῖς, ὀλίγοι δε καὶ 4
ἐν ἄλλοις ἔθνεσιν ὡς τὸν πρῶτον θεὸν ἐκεῖνον

[1] *Cf.* George Syncellus 630, 15–631, 8 and Zonaras 11. 11, 36, 27–37, ed. Dindorf.

Digitized by Google

still shown in the suburbs of the present Aelia[1]; she was said to be queen of the nation of Adiabene.

XIII. Seeing that the faith in our Saviour and Lord Jesus Christ was already being given to all men, the enemy of men's salvation planned to capture the capital in advance, and sent there Simon, who was mentioned above, and by aiding the fellow's tricky sorcery won over to error many of the inhabitants of Rome. This is told by Justin, who was an ornament of our faith not long after the Apostles, and I will set out the necessary information about him in due course. In his first *Apology* to Antoninus for our opinions he writes as follows: "And after the ascension of the Lord into heaven the demons put forward men who said that they were gods, and they not only escaped persecution by you but were even vouchsafed honours. There was a certain Simon, a Samaritan, from a village called Gittho, who in the time of Claudius Caesar worked miracles by magic through the art of the demons possessing him; he was reckoned as a god in Rome, your capital city, and honoured as a god among you by a statue on the river Tiber between the two bridges, with this inscription in Latin—SIMONI DEO SANCTO,[2]" that is, to Simon a holy god, "and almost all Samaritans and a few in other nations as well, recognize him as the chief god and worship him, and

[1] The name given to Jerusalem by Hadrian.

[2] In 1574 a statue was found on the island of St. Sebastian to which Justin probably referred. Unfortunately for him it bears the inscription SEMONI SANCO DEO, that is to say, TO THE GOD SEMO SANCUS, thus explaining but not confirming Justin's improbable story. Semo Sancus was an old Sabine deity, not a Samaritan sorcerer.

Digitized by Google

ὁμολογοῦντες προσκυνοῦσιν. καὶ Ἑλένην τινά, τὴν συμπερινοστήσασαν αὐτῷ κατ' ἐκεῖνο τοῦ καιροῦ, πρότερον ἐπὶ τέγους σταθεῖσαν" ἐν Τύρῳ τῆς
Iren. 1, 23, 2 Φοινίκης, "τὴν ἀπ' αὐτοῦ πρώτην ἔννοιαν λέγουσιν."

Ταῦτα μὲν οὗτος· συνάδει δ' αὐτῷ καὶ Εἰρη-
Iren. 1, 23, 1-4 ναῖος, ἐν πρώτῳ τῶν πρὸς τὰς αἱρέσεις ὁμοῦ τὰ 5
περὶ τὸν ἄνδρα καὶ τὴν ἀνοσίαν καὶ μιαρὰν αὐτοῦ διδασκαλίαν ὑπογράφων, ἣν ἐπὶ τοῦ παρόντος περιττὸν ἂν εἴη καταλέγειν, παρὸν τοῖς βουλομένοις καὶ τῶν μετ' αὐτὸν κατὰ μέρος αἱρεσιαρχῶν τὰς ἀρχὰς καὶ τοὺς βίους καὶ τῶν ψευδῶν δογμάτων τὰς ὑποθέσεις τά τε πᾶσιν αὐτοῖς ἐπιτετηδευμένα διαγνῶναι, οὐ κατὰ πάρεργον τῇ δεδηλωμένῃ τοῦ Εἰρηναίου παραδεδομένα βίβλῳ. πάσης μὲν οὖν ἀρχηγὸν αἱρέσεως πρῶτον γενέσθαι τὸν Σίμωνα παρειλήφαμεν· ἐξ οὗ καὶ εἰς δεῦρο 6
οἱ τὴν κατ' αὐτὸν μετιόντες αἵρεσιν τὴν σώφρονα καὶ διὰ καθαρότητα βίου παρὰ τοῖς πᾶσιν βεβοημένην Χριστιανῶν φιλοσοφίαν ὑποκρινόμενοι, ἧς μὲν ἔδοξαν ἀπαλλάττεσθαι περὶ τὰ εἴδωλα δεισιδαιμονίας οὐδὲν ἧττον αὖθις ἐπιλαμβάνονται, καταπίπτοντες ἐπὶ γραφὰς καὶ εἰκόνας αὐτοῦ τε τοῦ Σίμωνος καὶ τῆς σὺν αὐτῷ δηλωθείσης Ἑλένης θυμιάμασίν τε καὶ θυσίαις καὶ σπονδαῖς τούτους θρῃσκεύειν ἐγχειροῦντες, τὰ δὲ τούτων αὐτοῖς ἀπορρητότερα, ὧν φασι τὸν πρῶτον ἐπακούσαντα 7
ἐκπλαγήσεσθαι καὶ κατά τι παρ' αὐτοῖς λόγιον ἔγγραφον θαμβωθήσεσθαι, θάμβους ὡς ἀληθῶς καὶ φρενῶν ἐκστάσεως καὶ μανίας ἔμπλεα τυγχάνει, τοιαῦτα ὄντα, ὡς μὴ μόνον μὴ δυνατὰ εἶναι

[1] In the curious mixture of philosophical language with

Digitized by Google

they say that a certain Helena, who travelled about with him at that time but had formerly lived in a house of ill-fame" in Tyre of Phoenicia, "was the first Idea[1] from him."

This is what Justin says, and Irenaeus agrees with him in the first book against heresies where he collects the stories about Simon and his unholy and foul teaching. It would be superfluous to relate this in the present work since those who desire it can study in detail the origin and life and the false doctrinal principles of the heresiarchs who followed him and the customs introduced by them all, for they are carefully preserved in the above-mentioned book of Irenaeus. Thus we have received the tradition that Simon was the first author of all heresy. From him, and down to the present time, those who have followed, feigning the Christian philosophy, with its sobriety and universal fame for purity of life, have in no way improved on the idolatrous superstition from which they thought to be set free, for they prostrate themselves before pictures and images of Simon himself and of Helena, who was mentioned with him, and undertake to worship them with incense and sacrifices and libations. Their more secret rites, at which they say that he who first hears them will be astonished, and according to a scripture current among them will be "thrown into marvel," truly are full of marvel and frenzy and madness; for they are of such a kind that they not merely

[1] mythological concepts which characterized the theology of the Graeco-Roman world of the first four centuries after Christ, the word here translated "idea" was one of those used of the various beings proceeding from the original godhead, and bridging as it were the gap between God and Creation.

Digitized by Google

παραδοθῆναι γραφῇ, ἀλλ' οὐδὲ χείλεσιν αὐτὸ μόνον δι' ὑπερβολὴν αἰσχρουργίας τε καὶ ἀρρητοποιίας ἀνδράσι σώφροσι λαληθῆναι. ὅ τι ποτὲ γὰρ ἂν ἐπινοηθείη παντὸς αἰσχροῦ μιαρώτερον, τοῦτο πᾶν ὑπερηκόντισεν ἡ τῶνδε μυσαρωτάτη αἵρεσις, ταῖς ἀθλίαις καὶ παντοίων ὡς ἀληθῶς
2 Tim. 3, 6 κακῶν σεσωρευμέναις γυναιξὶν ἐγκαταπαιζόντων.
XIV. τοιούτων κακῶν πατέρα καὶ δημιουργὸν τὸν Σίμωνα κατ' ἐκεῖνο καιροῦ ὥσπερ εἰ μέγαν καὶ μεγάλων ἀντίπαλον τῶν θεσπεσίων τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν ἀποστόλων ἡ μισόκαλος καὶ τῆς ἀνθρώπων ἐπίβουλος σωτηρίας πονηρὰ δύναμις προυστήσατο. ὅμως δ' οὖν ἡ θεία καὶ ὑπερουράνιος χάρις τοῖς αὐτῆς συναιρομένη διακόνοις, δι' ἐπιφανείας αὐτῶν καὶ παρουσίας ἀναπτομένην τοῦ πονηροῦ τὴν
2 Cor. 10, 5 φλόγα ᾗ τάχος ἐσβέννυ, ταπεινοῦσα δι' αὐτῶν καὶ καθαιροῦσα πᾶν ὕψωμα ἐπαιρόμενον κατὰ τῆς γνώσεως τοῦ θεοῦ. διὸ δὴ οὔτε Σίμωνος οὔτ' ἄλλου του τῶν τότε φυέντων συγκρότημά τι κατ' αὐτοὺς ἐκείνους τοὺς ἀποστολικοὺς ὑπέστη χρόνους. ὑπερενίκα γάρ τοι καὶ ὑπερίσχυεν ἅπαντα τὸ τῆς ἀληθείας φέγγος ὅ τε λόγος αὐτὸς ὁ θεῖος ἄρτι θεόθεν ἀνθρώποις ἐπιλάμψας ἐπὶ γῆς τε ἀκμάζων καὶ τοῖς ἰδίοις ἀποστόλοις ἐμπολιτευόμενος. αὐ-
Acts 8, 18–23 τίκα ὁ δηλωθεὶς γόης ὥσπερ ὑπὸ θείας καὶ παραδόξου μαρμαρυγῆς τὰ τῆς διανοίας πληγεὶς ὄμματα ὅτε πρότερον ἐπὶ τῆς Ἰουδαίας ἐφ' οἷς ἐπονηρεύσατο πρὸς τοῦ ἀποστόλου Πέτρου κατεφωράθη, μεγίστην καὶ ὑπερπόντιον ἀπάρας πορείαν τὴν ἀπ' ἀνατολῶν ἐπὶ δυσμὰς ᾤχετο φεύγων, μόνως ταύτῃ βιωτὸν αὐτῷ κατὰ γνώμην εἶναι οἰόμενος· ἐπιβὰς δὲ τῆς Ῥωμαίων πόλεως, συν-

Digitized by Google

cannot be related in writing, but are so full of baseness and unspeakable conduct that they cannot even be mentioned by the lips of decent men. For whatever foulness might be conceived beyond all that is base, it is surpassed by the utter foulness of the heresy of these men, who make a mocking sport of wretched women, "weighed down," as is truly said, by every kind of evil. XIV. Of such evil was Simon the father and fabricator, and the Evil Power, which hates that which is good and plots against the salvation of men, raised him up at that time as a great antagonist for the great and inspired Apostles of our Saviour. Nevertheless the grace of God which is from heaven helped its ministers and quickly extinguished the flames of the Evil One by their advent and presence, and through them humbled and cast down "every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God." Wherefore no conspiracy, either of Simon, or of any other of those who arose at that time, succeeded in those Apostolic days; for the light of the truth and the divine Logos himself, which had shone from God upon men by growing up on the earth and dwelling among his own Apostles, was overcoming all things in the might of victory. The aforesaid sorcerer, as though the eyes of his mind had been smitten by the marvellous effulgence of God when he had formerly been detected in his crimes in Judaea by the Apostle Peter, at once undertook a great journey across the sea, and went off in flight from east to west, thinking that only in this way could he live as he wished. He came to the city of the Romans,

Digitized by Google

αιρομένης αὐτῷ τὰ μεγάλα τῆς ἐφεδρευούσης ἐνταῦθα δυνάμεως, ἐν ὀλίγῳ τοσοῦτον τὰ τῆς ἐπιχειρήσεως ἤνυστο, ὡς καὶ ἀνδριάντος ἀναθέσει πρὸς τῶν τῇδε οἷα θεὸν τιμηθῆναι. οὐ μὴν εἰς μακρὸν αὐτῷ ταῦτα προυχώρει. παρὰ πόδας 6
γοῦν ἐπὶ τῆς αὐτῆς Κλαυδίου βασιλείας ἡ παν-
άγαθος καὶ φιλανθρωποτάτη τῶν ὅλων πρόνοια τὸν
καρτερὸν καὶ μέγαν τῶν ἀποστόλων, τὸν ἀρετῆς
ἕνεκα τῶν λοιπῶν ἁπάντων προήγορον, Πέτρον,
ἐπὶ τὴν Ῥώμην ὡς ἐπὶ τηλικοῦτον λυμεῶνα βίου
Eph. 6, 14–17 χειραγωγεῖ· ὃς οἷά τις γενναῖος θεοῦ στρατηγὸς
1 Thess. 5, 8 τοῖς θείοις ὅπλοις φραξάμενος, τὴν πολυτίμητον
ἐμπορίαν τοῦ νοητοῦ φωτὸς ἐξ ἀνατολῶν τοῖς
John 1, 9 κατὰ δύσιν ἐκόμιζεν, φῶς αὐτὸ καὶ λόγον ψυχῶν
σωτήριον, τὸ κήρυγμα τῆς τῶν οὐρανῶν βασι-
λείας, εὐαγγελιζόμενος. XV. οὕτω δὴ οὖν ἐπιδημή- 1
σαντος αὐτοῖς τοῦ θείου λόγου, ἡ μὲν τοῦ Σίμωνος
ἀπέσβη καὶ παραχρῆμα σὺν καὶ τῷ ἀνδρὶ κατα-
λέλυτο δύναμις.

Τοσοῦτον δ' ἐπέλαμψεν ταῖς τῶν ἀκροατῶν τοῦ Πέτρου διανοίαις εὐσεβείας φέγγος, ὡς μὴ τῇ εἰς ἅπαξ ἱκανῶς ἔχειν ἀρκεῖσθαι ἀκοῇ μηδὲ τῇ ἀγράφῳ τοῦ θείου κηρύγματος διδασκαλίᾳ, παρακλήσεσιν δὲ παντοίαις Μάρκον, οὗ τὸ εὐαγγέλιον φέρεται, ἀκόλουθον ὄντα Πέτρου, λιπαρῆσαι ὡς ἂν καὶ διὰ γραφῆς ὑπόμνημα τῆς διὰ λόγου παραδοθείσης αὐτοῖς καταλείψοι διδασκαλίας, μὴ πρότερόν τε ἀνεῖναι ἢ κατεργάσαθαι τὸν ἄνδρα, καὶ ταύτῃ αἰτίους γενέσθαι τῆς τοῦ λεγομένου κατὰ Μάρκον εὐαγγελίου γραφῆς. γνόντα δὲ τὸ πραχθέν φασι 2
τὸν ἀπόστολον ἀποκαλύψαντος αὐτῷ τοῦ πνεύ-
ματος, ἡσθῆναι τῇ τῶν ἀνδρῶν προθυμίᾳ κυρῶσαί

Digitized by Google

where the power which obsessed him wrought with him greatly, so that in a short time he achieved such success that he was honoured as a god by the erection of a statue by those who were there. But he did not prosper long. Close after him in the same reign of Claudius the Providence of the universe in its great goodness and love towards men guided to Rome, as against a gigantic pest on life, the great and mighty Peter, who for his virtues was the leader of all the other Apostles. Like a noble captain of God, clad in divine armour, he brought the costly merchandise of the spiritual light from the east to the dwellers in the west, preaching the Gospel of the light itself and the word which saves souls, the proclamation of the Kingdom of Heaven. XV. Thus when the divine word made its home among them the power of Simon was extinguished and perished immediately, together with the fellow himself.

But a great light of religion shone on the minds of the hearers of Peter, so that they were not satisfied with a single hearing or with the unwritten teaching of the divine proclamation, but with every kind of exhortation besought Mark, whose Gospel is extant, seeing that he was Peter's follower, to leave them a written statement of the teaching given them verbally, nor did they cease until they had persuaded him, and so became the cause of the Scripture called the Gospel according to Mark. And they say that the Apostle, knowing by the revelation of the spirit to him what had been done, was pleased at their

Digitized by Google

τε τὴν γραφὴν εἰς ἔντευξιν ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις. Κλήμης ἐν ἕκτῳ τῶν Ὑποτυπώσεων παρατέθειται τὴν ἱστορίαν, συνεπιμαρτυρεῖ δὲ αὐτῷ καὶ ὁ Ἱεραπολίτης ἐπίσκοπος ὀνόματι Παπίας, τοῦ δὲ Μάρκου μνημονεύειν τὸν Πέτρον ἐν τῇ προτέρᾳ ἐπιστολῇ· ἣν καὶ συντάξαι φασὶν ἐπ' αὐτῆς Ῥώμης, σημαίνειν τε τοῦτ' αὐτόν, τὴν πόλιν τροπικώτερον Βαβυλῶνα προσειπόντα διὰ
1 Peter 5, 13 τούτων " ἀσπάζεται ὑμᾶς ἡ ἐν Βαβυλῶνι συνεκλεκτὴ καὶ Μάρκος ὁ υἱός μου."

XVI. Τοῦτον δὲ [Μάρκον] πρῶτόν φασιν ἐπὶ τῆς 1
Αἰγύπτου στειλάμενον, τὸ εὐαγγέλιον, ὃ δὴ καὶ συνεγράψατο, κηρῦξαι, ἐκκλησίας τε πρῶτον ἐπ' αὐτῆς Ἀλεξανδρείας συστήσασθαι. τοσαύτη δ' 2
ἄρα τῶν αὐτόθι πεπιστευκότων πληθὺς ἀνδρῶν τε καὶ γυναικῶν ἐκ πρώτης ἐπιβολῆς συνέστη δι' ἀσκήσεως φιλοσοφωτάτης τε καὶ σφοδροτάτης, ὡς καὶ γραφῆς αὐτῶν ἀξιῶσαι τὰς διατριβὰς καὶ τὰς συνηλύσεις τά τε συμπόσια καὶ πᾶσαν τὴν ἄλλην τοῦ βίου ἀγωγὴν τὸν Φίλωνα· XVII. ὃν καὶ λόγος 1
ἔχει κατὰ Κλαύδιον ἐπὶ τῆς Ῥώμης εἰς ὁμιλίαν ἐλθεῖν Πέτρῳ, τοῖς ἐκεῖσε τότε κηρύττοντι. καὶ οὐκ ἀπεικὸς ἂν εἴη τοῦτό γε, ἐπεὶ καὶ ὅ φαμεν αὐτὸ σύγγραμμα, εἰς ὕστερον καὶ μετὰ χρόνους αὐτῷ πεπονημένον, σαφῶς τοὺς εἰς ἔτι νῦν καὶ εἰς ἡμᾶς πεφυλαγμένους τῆς ἐκκλησίας περιέχει κανόνας· ἀλλὰ καὶ τὸν βίον τῶν παρ' ἡμῖν ἀσκητῶν 2
ὡς ἔνι μάλιστα ἀκριβέστατα ἱστορῶν, γένοιτ' ἂν ἔκδηλος οὐκ εἰδὼς μόνον, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἀποδεχόμενος ἐκθειάζων τε καὶ σεμνύνων τοὺς κατ' αὐτὸν ἀποστολικοὺς ἄνδρας, ἐξ Ἑβραίων, ὡς ἔοικε, γεγονότας ταύτῃ τε ἰουδαϊκώτερον τῶν παλαιῶν

Digitized by Google

zeal, and ratified the scripture for study in the churches. Clement quotes the story in the sixth book of the *Hypotyposes*, and the bishop of Hierapolis, named Papias, confirms him. He also says that Peter mentions Mark in his first Epistle, and that he composed this in Rome itself, which they say that he himself indicates, referring to the city metaphorically as Babylon, in the words, "the elect one in Babylon greets you, and Marcus my son."

XVI. They say that this Mark was the first to be sent to preach in Egypt the Gospel which he had also put into writing, and was the first to establish churches in Alexandria itself. The number of men and women who were there converted at the first attempt was so great, and their asceticism was so extraordinarily philosophic, that Philo thought it right to describe their conduct and assemblies and meals and all the rest of their manner of life. XVII. Tradition says that he came to Rome in the time of Claudius to speak to Peter, who was at that time preaching to those there. This would, indeed, be not improbable since the treatise to which we refer, composed by him many years later, obviously contains the rules of the Church which are still observed in our own time. Moreover, from his very accurate description of the life of our ascetics it will be plain that he not only knew but welcomed, reverenced, and recognized the divine mission of the apostolic men of his day, who were, it appears, of Hebrew origin, and thus still preserved most of the ancient

Digitized by Google

ἔτι τὰ πλεῖστα διατηροῦντας ἐθῶν. πρῶτόν γέ 3
τοι τὸ μηθὲν πέρα τῆς ἀληθείας οἰκοθεν καὶ ἐξ
Philo, p. 471, 6. 7 ἑαυτοῦ προσθήσειν οἷς ἱστορήσειν ἔμελλεν, ἀπ-
Philo, p. 471, 15–472, 3 ισχυρισάμενος ἐν ᾧ ἐπέγραψεν λόγῳ Περὶ βίου
θεωρητικοῦ ἢ ἱκετῶν, θεραπευτὰς αὐτοὺς καὶ τὰς
σὺν αὐτοῖς γυναῖκας θεραπευτρίδας ἀποκαλεῖσθαί
φησιν, τὰς αἰτίας ἐπειπὼν τῆς τοιᾶσδε προσ-
ρήσεως, ἤτοι παρὰ τὸ τὰς ψυχὰς τῶν προσιόντων
αὐτοῖς τῶν ἀπὸ κακίας παθῶν ἰατρῶν δίκην
ἀπαλλάττοντας ἀκεῖσθαι καὶ θεραπεύειν, ἢ τῆς
περὶ τὸ θεῖον καθαρᾶς καὶ εἰλικρινοῦς θεραπείας
τε καὶ θρησκείας ἕνεκα. εἶτ' οὖν ἐξ ἑαυτοῦ 4
ταύτην αὐτοῖς ἐπιτέθειται τὴν προσηγορίαν, οἰ-
κείως ἐπιγράψας τῷ τρόπῳ τῶν ἀνδρῶν τοὔνομα,
εἴτε καὶ ὄντως τοῦτ' αὐτοὺς ἐκάλουν κατ' ἀρχὰς
οἱ πρῶτοι, μηδαμῶς τῆς Χριστιανῶν πω προσ-
Philo, p. 478, 18–22 ρήσεως ἀνὰ πάντα τόπον ἐπιπεφημισμένης, οὔ
τί πω διατείνεσθαι ἀναγκαῖον· ὅμως δ' οὖν ἐν 5
πρώτοις τὴν ἀπόταξιν αὐτοῖς τῆς οὐσίας μαρτυρεῖ,
Philo, p. 474, 17–34 φάσκων ἀρχομένους φιλοσοφεῖν ἐξίστασθαι τοῖς
προσήκουσι τῶν ὑπαρχόντων, ἔπειτα πάσαις ἀπο-
ταξαμένους ταῖς τοῦ βίου φροντίσιν, ἔξω τειχῶν
προελθόντας, ἐν μοναγρίοις καὶ κήποις τὰς δια-
τριβὰς ποιεῖσθαι, τὰς ἐκ τῶν ἀνομοίων ἐπιμιξίας
ἀλυσιτελεῖς καὶ βλαβερὰς εὖ εἰδότας, τῶν κατ'
ἐκεῖνο καιροῦ τοῦθ', ὡς εἰκός, ἐπιτελούντων,
ἐκθύμῳ καὶ θερμοτάτῃ πίστει τὸν προφητικὸν
ζηλοῦν ἀσκούντων βίον. καὶ γὰρ οὖν κἂν ταῖς 6
Acts 2, 45 ὁμολογουμέναις τῶν ἀποστόλων Πράξεσιν ἐμ-
φέρεται ὅτι δὴ πάντες οἱ τῶν ἀποστόλων γνώριμοι

[1] The ambiguity is due to the fact that the Greek word may mean "service" or "healing."

Digitized by Google

customs in a strictly Jewish manner. In the first place he promises not to go beyond the truth in any detail or to add anything of his own invention to what he was going to relate in the treatise which he entitled *On the Contemplative Life or Suppliants*. He then says that they and the women with them were called Therapeutae and Therapeutrides, and enters upon the reason for such a name. It was given either because, like physicians, they relieve from the passions of evil the souls of those who come to them and so cure and heal them, or because of their pure and sincere service [1] and worship of the Divine. Thus it is not necessary to discuss at length whether he gave them this description of himself, naturally adapting the name to their manner of life, or whether the first ones really called themselves this from the beginning, since the title of Christian had not yet become well known everywhere. At any rate he bears witness especially to their abandonment of property, and states that when they begin to follow philosophy they give up their possessions to their relations, and then, having bade farewell to all the cares of life, go outside the walls to make their dwellings in deserts and oases,[2] for they are well aware that intercourse with those of another way is unprofitable and harmful, and it was the practice at that time, so it seems, of those who were thus initiated to emulate the life of the prophets in zealous and warm faith. For even in the canonical Acts of the Apostles it is related that all the acquaintances of the Apostles

[2] Literally "gardens."

Digitized by Google

τὰ κτήματα καὶ τὰς ὑπάρξεις διαπιπράσκοντες
Acts 4, 34–35 ἐμέριζον ἅπασιν καθ' ὃ ἄν τις χρείαν εἶχεν, ὡς
μηδὲ εἶναί τινα ἐνδεῆ παρ' αὐτοῖς· ὅσοι γοῦν
κτήτορες χωρίων ἢ οἰκιῶν ὑπῆρχον, ὡς ὁ λόγος
φησίν, πωλοῦντες ἔφερον τὰς τιμὰς τῶν πιπρα-
σκομένων, ἐτίθεσάν τε παρὰ τοὺς πόδας τῶν
ἀποστόλων, ὥστε διαδίδοσθαι ἑκάστῳ καθ' ὅτι ἄν
τις χρείαν εἶχεν.

Τὰ παραπλήσια δὲ τούτοις μαρτυρήσας τοῖς 7
δηλουμένοις ὁ Φίλων συλλαβαῖς αὐταῖς ἐπιφέρει
Philo, p. 474, 35–44 λέγων· "πολλαχοῦ μὲν οὖν τῆς οἰκουμένης ἐστὶν
τὸ γένος· ἔδει γὰρ ἀγαθοῦ τελείου μετασχεῖν καὶ
τὴν Ἑλλάδα καὶ τὴν βάρβαρον· πλεονάζει δ' ἐν
Αἰγύπτῳ καθ' ἕκαστον τῶν ἐπικαλουμένων
νομῶν καὶ μάλιστα περὶ τὴν Ἀλεξάνδρειαν. οἱ δὲ 8
πανταχόθεν ἄριστοι, καθάπερ εἰς πατρίδα θερα-
πευτῶν, ἀποικίαν στέλλονται πρός τι χωρίον
ἐπιτηδειότατον, ὅπερ ἐστὶν ὑπὲρ λίμνης Μαρείας
κείμενον ἐπὶ γεωλόφου χθαμαλωτέρου, σφόδρα
εὐκαίρως ἀσφαλείας τε ἕνεκα καὶ ἀέρος εὐκρασίας."
εἶθ' ἑξῆς τὰς οἰκήσεις αὐτῶν ὁποῖαί τινες ἦσαν 9
διαγράψας, περὶ τῶν κατὰ χώραν ἐκκλησιῶν ταῦτά
Philo, p. 475, 14–22 φησιν· "ἐν ἑκάστῃ δὲ οἰκίᾳ ἐστὶν οἴκημα ἱερὸν
ὃ καλεῖται σεμνεῖον καὶ μοναστήριον, ἐν ᾧ μο-
νούμενοι τὰ τοῦ σεμνοῦ βίου μυστήρια τελοῦνται,
μηδὲν εἰσκομίζοντες, μὴ ποτόν, μὴ σιτίον, μηδέ
τι τῶν ἄλλων ὅσα πρὸς τὰς τοῦ σώματος χρείας
ἀναγκαῖα, ἀλλὰ νόμους καὶ λόγια θεσπισθέντα διὰ
προφητῶν καὶ ὕμνους καὶ τἄλλα οἷς ἐπιστήμη καὶ
εὐσέβεια συναύξονται καὶ τελειοῦνται."

Καὶ μεθ' ἕτερά φησιν·

Philo, p. 475, 34–476, 2 "Τὸ δ' ἐξ ἑωθινοῦ μέχρις ἑσπέρας διάστημα 10

Digitized by Google

sold their goods and possessions and divided them to all according as anyone had need so that none was in want among them; and as many as were possessors of lands or houses, so the story says, sold them and brought the price of what had been sold and laid it at the feet of the Apostles, so that it might be divided to each according as any had need.

To practices like those which have been related Philo bears witness and continues in the following words: "The race is found in many places in the world, for it was right that both Greece and barbarism should share in perfect good, but it abounds in Egypt in each of the so-called nomes and especially around Alexandria. The noblest from every region send a colony to a district well suited for their purpose, as though it were the land of the Therapeutae. This district is situated above Lake Mareia[1] on a low hill, very convenient for its safety and the temperateness of the climate." He then goes on to describe the nature of their dwellings, and says this about the churches in various districts: "In each house there is a sacred dwelling which is called 'a sanctuary and monastery,' in which they celebrate in seclusion the mysteries of the sacred life, and bring nothing into it, either drink or food or any of the other things necessary for bodily needs, but law and inspired oracles given by the prophets and hymns and other things by which knowledge and religion are increased and perfected." And further on he says: "The whole period from dawn

[1] More often known as Lake Mareotis, a little south of Alexandria.

Digitized by Google

σύμπαν αὐτοῖς ἐστιν ἄσκησις. ἐντυγχάνοντες γὰρ τοῖς ἱεροῖς γράμμασιν φιλοσοφοῦσιν τὴν πάτριον φιλοσοφίαν ἀλληγοροῦντες, ἐπειδὴ σύμβολα τὰ τῆς ῥητῆς ἑρμηνείας νομίζουσιν ἀποκεκρυμμένης φύσεως, ἐν ὑπονοίαις δηλουμένης. ἔστι δ' αὐτοῖς 11
καὶ συγγράμματα παλαιῶν ἀνδρῶν, οἳ τῆς αἱρέσεως αὐτῶν ἀρχηγέται γενόμενοι, πολλὰ μνημεῖα τῆς ἐν τοῖς ἀλληγορουμένοις ἰδέας ἀπέλιπον, οἷς καθάπερ τισὶν ἀρχετύποις χρώμενοι μιμοῦνται τῆς προαιρέσεως τὸν τρόπον."

Ταῦτα μὲν οὖν ἔοικεν εἰρῆσθαι τῷ ἀνδρὶ τὰς 12
ἱερὰς ἐξηγουμένων αὐτῶν ἐπακροασαμένῳ γραφάς, τάχα δ' εἰκός, ἃ φησιν ἀρχαίων παρ' αὐτοῖς εἶναι συγγράμματα, εὐαγγέλια καὶ τὰς τῶν ἀποστόλων γραφὰς διηγήσεις τέ τινας κατὰ τὸ εἰκὸς τῶν πάλαι προφητῶν ἑρμηνευτικάς, ὁποίας ἥ τε πρὸς Ἑβραίους καὶ ἄλλαι πλείους τοῦ Παύλου περιέχουσιν ἐπιστολαί, ταῦτ' εἶναι. εἶτα πάλιν ἑξῆς 13
περὶ τοῦ νέους αὐτοὺς ποιεῖσθαι ψαλμοὺς οὕτως
Philo, p. 476, 2-5 γράφει· "ὥστ' οὐ θεωροῦσι μόνον, ἀλλὰ καὶ ποιοῦσιν ᾄσματα καὶ ὕμνους εἰς τὸν θεὸν διὰ παντοίων μέτρων καὶ μελῶν ἀριθμοῖς σεμνοτέροις ἀναγκαίως χαράσσοντες."

Πολλὰ μὲν οὖν καὶ ἄλλα περὶ ὧν ὁ λόγος, ἐν 14
ταὐτῷ διέξεισιν, ἐκεῖνα δ' ἀναγκαῖον ἐφάνη δεῖν ἀναλέξασθαι, δι' ὧν τὰ χαρακτηριστικὰ τῆς ἐκκλησιαστικῆς ἀγωγῆς ὑποτίθεται. εἰ δέ τῳ 15
μὴ δοκεῖ τὰ εἰρημένα ἴδια εἶναι τῆς κατὰ τὸ εὐαγγέλιον πολιτείας, δύνασθαι δὲ καὶ ἄλλοις παρὰ τοὺς δεδηλωμένους ἁρμόττειν, πειθέσθω κἂν ἀπὸ τῶν ἑξῆς αὐτοῦ φωνῶν, ἐν αἷς ἀναμφήριστον, εἰ εὐγνωμονοίη, κομίσεται τὴν περὶ τοῦδε

Digitized by Google

to eve is for them a religious exercise; they study the sacred scriptures and expound their national philosophy by allegory, for they regard the literal interpretation as symbolic of a concealed reality indicated in what is beneath the surface. They have also some writings of men of old, who were the founders of their sect, who left many memorials of the meaning allegorically expounded, which they use as models and copy their method of treatment.

This seems to have been said by a man who had listened to their expositions of the sacred scriptures, and it is perhaps probable that the writings of men of old, which he says were found among them, were the Gospels, the writings of the Apostles, and some expositions of prophets after the manner of the ancients, such as are in the Epistle to the Hebrews and many other of the epistles of Paul. He then goes on to write thus about their composition of new psalms: "So that they not only contemplate but make songs and hymns to God in all kinds of metres and melodies, though they perforce arrange them in the more sacred measures."

He discusses many other points as well in the same book, but it seemed necessary to enumerate those by which the characteristics of the life of the Church are exhibited; but if anyone doubt that what has been said is peculiar to life according to the Gospel, and think that it can be applied to others besides those indicated, let him be persuaded by the following words of Philo in which he will find, if he be fair, indisputable testimony on this point. He

Digitized by Google

Philo, p. 476, 36-39 μαρτυρίαν. γράφει γὰρ ὧδε· "ἐγκράτειαν δ' 16
ὥσπερ τινὰ θεμέλιον προκαταβαλλόμενοι τῇ
ψυχῇ, τὰς ἄλλας ἐποικοδομοῦσιν ἀρετάς. σιτίον
ἢ ποτὸν οὐδεὶς ἂν αὐτῶν προσενέγκαιτο πρὸ
ἡλίου δύσεως, ἐπεὶ τὸ μὲν φιλοσοφεῖν ἄξιον
φωτὸς κρίνουσιν εἶναι, σκότους δὲ τὰς τοῦ
σώματος ἀνάγκας· ὅθεν τῷ μὲν ἡμέραν, ταῖς δὲ
νυκτὸς βραχύ τι μέρος ἔνειμαν. ἔνιοι δὲ καὶ διὰ 17
τριῶν ἡμερῶν ὑπομιμνήσκονται τροφῆς, οἷς πλείων
ὁ πόθος ἐπιστήμης ἐνίδρυται, τινὲς δὲ οὕτως
ἐνευφραίνονται καὶ τρυφῶσιν ὑπὸ σοφίας ἐστιώ-
μενοι πλουσίως καὶ ἀφθόνως τὰ δόγματα χορη-
γούσης, ὡς καὶ πρὸς διπλασίονα χρόνον ἀντέχειν
καὶ μόγις δι' ἓξ ἡμερῶν ἀπογεύεσθαι τροφῆς
ἀναγκαίας, ἐθισθέντες."

Ταύτας τοῦ Φίλωνος σαφεῖς καὶ ἀναντιρρήτους 18
περὶ τῶν καθ' ἡμᾶς ὑπάρχειν ἡγούμεθα λέξεις.
εἰ δ' ἐπὶ τούτοις ἀντιλέγων τις ἔτι σκληρύνοιτο,
καὶ οὗτος ἀπαλλαττέσθω τῆς δυσπιστίας, ἐναργε-
στέραις πειθαρχῶν ἀποδείξεσιν, ἃς οὐ παρά τισιν
ἢ μόνῃ τῇ Χριστιανῶν εὑρεῖν ἔνεστιν κατὰ τὸ
Philo, p. 482, 3-11 εὐαγγέλιον θρησκείᾳ. φησὶν γὰρ τοῖς περὶ ὧν ὁ 19
λόγος καὶ γυναῖκας συνεῖναι, ὧν αἱ πλεῖσται γηρα-
λέαι παρθένοι τυγχάνουσιν, τὴν ἀγνείαν οὐκ
ἀνάγκῃ, καθάπερ ἔνιαι τῶν παρ' Ἕλλησιν ἱερειῶν,
φυλάξασαι μᾶλλον ἢ καθ' ἑκούσιον γνώμην, διὰ
ζῆλον καὶ πόθον σοφίας, ᾗ συμβιοῦν σπουδά-
σασαι τῶν περὶ τὸ σῶμα ἡδονῶν ἠλόγησαν, οὐ
θνητῶν ἐκγόνων, ἀλλ' ἀθανάτων ὀρεχθεῖσαι, ἃ
μόνη τίκτειν ἀφ' ἑαυτῆς οἷα τέ ἐστιν ἡ θεοφιλὴς
ψυχή. εἶθ' ὑποκαταβάς, ἐμφαντικώτερον ἐκτίθε- 20
Philo, p. 483, 42-484, 1 ται ταῦτα· "αἱ δ' ἐξηγήσεις τῶν ἱερῶν γραμμάτων

Digitized by Google

writes thus: "Having laid down for the soul continence as a foundation they build the other virtues on it. None of them would take food or drink before sunset, for they think that philosophy deserves the daylight and the necessities of the body darkness; for this reason they allot the day to the one, and a small part of the night to the others. Some of them neglect food for three days for the great love of knowledge dwelling in them, and some so delight and luxuriate in the banquet of doctrine, so richly and ungrudgingly presided over by wisdom, that they abstain for twice that time, and are accustomed scarcely to taste necessary food every six days."

We think that these words of Philo are clear and indisputably refer to our communion. But if after this anyone obstinately deny it let him be converted from his scepticism and be persuaded by clearer indications which cannot be found among any, save only in the worship of Christians according to the Gospel. For Philo says that women belong also to those under discussion and that most of them are aged virgins who kept their chastity from no compulsion, like some of the priestesses among the Greeks, but rather from voluntary opinion, from zeal and yearning for wisdom, with which they desired to live, and paid no attention to bodily pleasures, longing not for mortal but for immortal children, which only the soul that loves God is capable of bearing of itself. He then proceeds to expound this more clearly. "But the interpretations of the

Digitized by Google

γίνονται αὐτοῖς δι' ὑπονοιῶν ἐν ἀλληγορίαις. ἅπασα γὰρ ἡ νομοθεσία δοκεῖ τοῖς ἀνδράσι τούτοις ἐοικέναι ζῴῳ καὶ σῶμα μὲν ἔχειν τὰς ῥητὰς διατάξεις, ψυχὴν δὲ τὸν ἐναποκείμενον ταῖς λέξεσιν ἀόρατον νοῦν, ὃν ἤρξατο διαφερόντως ἡ οἰκία αὕτη θεωρεῖν, ὡς διὰ κατόπτρου τῶν ὀνομάτων ἐξαίσια κάλλη νοημάτων ἐμφαινόμενα κατιδοῦσα."

Philo, p. 476, 23–34

Τί δεῖ τούτοις ἐπιλέγειν τὰς ἐπὶ ταὐτὸν συν- 21
όδους καὶ τὰς ἰδίᾳ μὲν ἀνδρῶν, ἰδίᾳ δὲ γυναικῶν ἐν ταὐτῷ διατριβὰς καὶ τὰς ἐξ ἔθους ἔτι καὶ

Philo, p. 481 22–24

νῦν πρὸς ἡμῶν ἐπιτελουμένας ἀσκήσεις, ἃς διαφερόντως κατὰ τὴν τοῦ σωτηρίου πάθους ἑορτὴν ἐν ἀσιτίαις καὶ διανυκτερεύσεσιν προσοχαῖς τε τῶν θείων λόγων ἐκτελεῖν εἰώθαμεν, ἅπερ ἐπ' 22
ἀκριβέστερον αὐτὸν ὃν καὶ εἰς δεῦρο τετήρηται

Philo, p. 484, 33–34

παρὰ μόνοις ἡμῖν τρόπον ἐπισημηνάμενος ὁ δηλωθεὶς ἀνὴρ τῇ ἰδίᾳ παρέδωκεν γραφῇ, τὰς τῆς μεγάλης ἑορτῆς παννυχίδας καὶ τὰς ἐν ταύ-

Philo, p. 484, 10–21

ταις ἀσκήσεις τούς τε λέγεσθαι εἰωθότας πρὸς ἡμῶν ὕμνους ἱστορῶν, καὶ ὡς ἑνὸς μετὰ ῥυθμοῦ κοσμίως ἐπιψάλλοντος οἱ λοιποὶ καθ' ἡσυχίαν ἀκροώμενοι τῶν ὕμνων τὰ ἀκροτελεύτια συνεξ-

Philo, p. 482, 18–21; p. 483, 4–10

ηχοῦσιν, ὅπως τε κατὰ τὰς δεδηλωμένας ἡμέρας ἐπὶ στιβάδων χαμευνοῦντες οἴνου μὲν τὸ παράπαν, ὡς αὐτοῖς ῥήμασιν ἀνέγραψεν, οὐδ' ἀπογεύονται, ἀλλ' οὐδὲ τῶν ἐναίμων τινός, ὕδωρ δὲ μόνον αὐτοῖς ἐστι ποτόν, καὶ προσόψημα μετ'

Philo, p. 481, 32–34. 42; p. 482, 3. 24. 25; p. 483, 17; p. 484, 6

ἄρτου ἅλες καὶ ὕσσωπον. πρὸς τούτοις γράφει 23
τὸν τῆς προστασίας τρόπον τῶν τὰς ἐκκλησιαστικὰς λειτουργίας ἐγκεχειρισμένων διακονίας τε καὶ τὰς ἐπὶ πᾶσιν ἀνωτάτω τῆς ἐπισκοπῆς προ-

Digitized by Google

sacred scriptures are given them figuratively in allegories, for the whole law seems to these men to be like a living being; for a body it has the spoken precepts, but for a soul the invisible mind underlying the words; and it is this which this sect has begun especially to contemplate, so that in the mirror of the words it sees manifested surpassing beauty of thought."

What need is there to add to this a description of their meetings, and of how the men live separately and the women separately in the same place, and of the customary exercises which are still celebrated among us, particularly those which we are accustomed to celebrate at the feast of the Passion of the Saviour by abstinence from food and vigils and attention to the word of God? The writer referred to has given in his own writing a description of this, which exactly agrees with the manner which is still observed by us and by us alone; he relates the vigils for the entire night of the great feast, and the exercises during them, and the hymns which we are accustomed to recite, and how while one sings regularly with cadence, the rest listen in silence and join in singing only the refrain of the hymns, and how on stated days they sleep on the ground on straw, how they completely refrain from wine, as he expressly states, and from all kinds of flesh, drinking only water and using salt and hyssop to season their bread. In addition to this he writes of the order of precedence of those who have been appointed to the service of the Church, both to the diaconate and to the supremacy of the episcopate

Digitized by Google

εδρίας. τούτων δ' ὅτῳ πόθος ἔνεστι τῆς ἀκριβοῦς ἐπιστάσεως, μάθοι ἂν ἐκ τῆς δηλωθείσης τοῦ ἀνδρὸς ἱστορίας· ὅτι δὲ τοὺς πρώτους κήρυκας 24
τῆς κατὰ τὸ εὐαγγέλιον διδασκαλίας τά τε ἀρχῆθεν πρὸς τῶν ἀποστόλων ἔθη παραδεδομένα καταλαβὼν ὁ Φίλων ταῦτ' ἔγραφεν, παντί τῳ δῆλον.

XVIII. Πολύς γε μὴν τῷ λόγῳ καὶ πλατὺς ταῖς 1
διανοίαις, ὑψηλός τε ὢν καὶ μετέωρος ἐν ταῖς εἰς τὰς θείας γραφὰς θεωρίαις γεγενημένος, ποικίλην καὶ πολύτροπον τῶν ἱερῶν λόγων πεποίηται τὴν ὑφήγησιν, τοῦτο μὲν εἱρμῷ καὶ ἀκολουθίᾳ τὴν τῶν εἰς τὴν Γένεσιν διεξελθὼν πραγματείαν ἐν οἷς ἐπέγραψεν Νόμων ἱερῶν ἀλληγορίας, τοῦτο δὲ κατὰ μέρος διαστολὰς κεφαλαίων τῶν ἐν ταῖς γραφαῖς ζητουμένων ἐπιστάσεις τε καὶ διαλύσεις πεποιημένος ἐν οἷς καὶ αὐτοῖς καταλλήλως Τῶν ἐν Γενέσει καὶ τῶν ἐν Ἐξαγωγῇ ζητημάτων καὶ λύσεων τέθειται τὴν ἐπιγραφήν. ἔστι δ' αὐτῷ 2
παρὰ ταῦτα προβλημάτων τινῶν ἰδίως πεπονημένα σπουδάσματα, οἷά ἐστι τὰ Περὶ γεωργίας δύο, καὶ τὰ Περὶ μέθης τοσαῦτα, καὶ ἄλλα ἄττα διαφόρου καὶ οἰκείας ἐπιγραφῆς ἠξιωμένα, οἷος ὁ Περὶ ὧν νήψας ὁ νοῦς εὔχεται καὶ καταρᾶται καὶ Περὶ συγχύσεως τῶν διαλέκτων, καὶ ὁ Περὶ φυγῆς καὶ εὑρέσεως, καὶ ὁ Περὶ τῆς πρὸς τὰ παιδεύματα συνόδου, Περί τε τοῦ τίς ὁ τῶν θείων ἐστὶ κληρονόμος ἢ Περὶ τῆς εἰς τὰ ἴσα καὶ ἐναντία τομῆς, καὶ ἔτι τὸ Περὶ τῶν τριῶν ἀρετῶν ἃς σὺν ἄλλαις ἀνέγραψεν Μωυσῆς, πρὸς τούτοις ὁ Περὶ 3
τῶν μετονομαζομένων καὶ ὧν ἕνεκα μετονομάζονται, ἐν ᾧ φησι συντεταχέναι καὶ Περὶ διαθηκῶν α' β'· ἔστιν δ' αὐτοῦ καὶ Περὶ ἀποικίας 4

Philo, *De mut. nom.* 53

Digitized by Google

at the head over all. Anyone who has a love of accurate knowledge of these things can learn from the narrative of the author quoted already, and it is plain to everyone that Philo perceived and described the first heralds of teaching according to the Gospel and the customs handed down from the beginning by the Apostles.

XVIII. Philo was rich in language and broad in thought, sublime and elevated in his views of the divine writings, and had made various and diverse his exposition of the sacred words. He first went through the subject of the events in Genesis in connected sequence, in the books which he entitled "The Allegories of the Sacred Laws." He then made detailed arrangement into chapters of the difficulties in the Scriptures and gave their statement and solution in the books to which he gave the suitable title of "The Problems and Solutions in Genesis and in Exodus." There are, besides this, some specially elaborated treatises of his on certain problems, such as the two books "On Agriculture," and as many "On Drunkenness," and others with various appropriate titles, such as "The Things which the Sober Mind desires and execrates," "On the Confusion of Tongues," "On Flight and Discovery," "On Assembly for Instruction," and "On the Question who is Heir of the Divine Things," or "On the Distinction between Odd and Even," and further "On the three Virtues which Moses describes with others," in addition to this, "On those whose names have been changed and why they were," in which he says that he has also composed Books I. and II. "On the Covenants." There is also a book of his "On Migration and the wise life of the Man

Digitized by Google

καὶ βίου σοφοῦ τοῦ κατὰ δικαιοσύνην τελειωθέντος ἢ νόμων ἀγράφων, καὶ ἔτι Περὶ γιγάντων ἢ περὶ τοῦ μὴ τρέπεσθαι τὸ θεῖον, Περί τε τοῦ κατὰ Μωυσέα θεοπέμπτους εἶναι τοὺς ὀνείρους α′ β′ γ′ δ′ ε′. καὶ ταῦτα μὲν τὰ εἰς ἡμᾶς ἐλθόντα τῶν εἰς τὴν Γένεσιν, εἰς δὲ τὴν Ἔξοδον ἔγνωμεν 5
αὐτοῦ Ζητημάτων καὶ λύσεων α′ β′ γ′ δ′ ε′, καὶ τὸ Περὶ τῆς σκηνῆς, τό τε Περὶ τῶν δέκα λογίων, καὶ τὰ Περὶ τῶν ἀναφερομένων ἐν εἴδει νόμων εἰς τὰ συντείνοντα κεφάλαια τῶν δέκα λόγων α′ β′ γ′ δ′, καὶ τὸ Περὶ τῶν εἰς τὰς ἱερουργίας ζῴων καὶ τίνα τὰ τῶν θυσιῶν εἴδη, καὶ τὸ Περὶ τῶν προκειμένων ἐν τῷ νόμῳ τοῖς μὲν ἀγαθοῖς ἄθλων, τοῖς δὲ πονηροῖς ἐπιτιμίων καὶ ἀρῶν. πρὸς 6
τούτοις ἅπασιν καὶ μονόβιβλα αὐτοῦ φέρεται ὡς τὸ Περὶ προνοίας, καὶ ὁ Περὶ Ἰουδαίων αὐτῷ συνταχθεὶς λόγος, καὶ ὁ Πολιτικός, ἔτι τε ὁ Ἀλέξανδρος ἢ περὶ τοῦ λόγον ἔχειν τὰ ἄλογα ζῷα, ἐπὶ τούτοις ὁ Περὶ τοῦ δοῦλον εἶναι πάντα φαῦλον, ᾧ ἐξῆς ἐστιν ὁ Περὶ τοῦ πάντα σπουδαῖον ἐλεύθερον εἶναι· μεθ' οὓς συντέτακται αὐτῷ ὁ Περὶ 7
βίου θεωρητικοῦ ἢ ἱκετῶν, ἐξ οὗ τὰ περὶ τοῦ βίου τῶν ἀποστολικῶν ἀνδρῶν διεληλύθαμεν, καὶ τῶν ἐν νόμῳ δὲ καὶ προφήταις Ἑβραϊκῶν ὀνομάτων αἱ ἑρμηνεῖαι τοῦ αὐτοῦ σπουδὴ εἶναι λέγονται. οὗτος μὲν οὖν κατὰ Γάϊον ἐπὶ τῆς Ῥώμης ἀφ- 8
ικόμενος, τὰ περὶ τῆς Γαΐου θεοστυγίας αὐτῷ γραφέντα, ἃ μετὰ ἤθους καὶ εἰρωνείας Περὶ ἀρετῶν ἐπέγραψεν, ἐπὶ πάσης λέγεται τῆς Ῥωμαίων συγκλήτου κατὰ Κλαύδιον διελθεῖν, ὡς καὶ τῆς ἐν βιβλιοθήκαις ἀναθέσεως θαυμασθέντας αὐτοῦ καταξιωθῆναι τοὺς λόγους.

Digitized by Google

initiated into Righteousness, or Unwritten Laws," and also "On Giants or the Immutability of God," and Books I., II., III., IV., V., "On the Divine Origin of Dreams according to Moses." These are the books which have come down to us dealing with Genesis. On Exodus we know Books I., II., III., IV., V. of his "Problems and Solutions," the book "On the Tabernacle," and that "On the Ten Commandments," and Books I., II., III., IV., "On the Laws specially referring to the principal divisions of the Ten Commandments," and the book "On Animals for Sacrifice and the Varieties of Sacrifice," and "On the Rewards fixed in the Law for the Good and the Penalties and Curses for the Wicked." In addition to all this there are also some single volumes of his, such as the book "On Providence," and the treatise composed by him "On the Jews," and "The Statesman," moreover "Alexander, or that irrational animals have reason." In addition to this the "That every wicked man is a slave," to which is appended the "That every good man is free." After these he composed the book "On the Contemplative Life, or Suppliants," from which we have quoted the passages dealing with the life of the men of the Apostolic age, and the interpretations of the Hebrew names in the Law and the Prophets are said to be his work. He came to Rome in the time of Caius, and in the reign of Claudius is said to have read before the whole Senate of the Romans his description of the impiety of Caius, which he entitled, with fitting irony, "Concerning Virtues," and his words were so much admired as to be granted pa lace in libraries.

Digitized by Google

Rom. 15, 19 Κατὰ δὲ τούσδε τοὺς χρόνους Παύλου τὴν ἀπὸ 9
Ἱερουσαλὴμ καὶ κύκλῳ πορείαν μέχρι τοῦ Ἰλλυ-
Acts 18, 2. ρικοῦ διανύοντος, Ἰουδαίους Ῥώμης ἀπελαύνει
18. 19. 23 Κλαύδιος, ὅ τε Ἀκύλας καὶ Πρίσκιλλα μετὰ
τῶν ἄλλων Ἰουδαίων τῆς Ῥώμης ἀπαλλαγέντες
ἐπὶ τὴν Ἀσίαν καταίρουσιν, ἐνταῦθά τε Παύλῳ
τῷ ἀποστόλῳ συνδιατρίβουσιν, τοὺς αὐτόθι τῶν
ἐκκλησιῶν ἄρτι πρὸς αὐτοῦ καταβληθέντας θεμε-
λίους ἐπιστηρίζοντι. διδάσκαλος καὶ τούτων ἡ
ἱερὰ τῶν Πράξεων γραφή.

Joseph. *B.I.* 2 227 XIX. Ἔτι δὲ Κλαυδίου τὰ τῆς βασιλείας διέπον- 1
τος, κατὰ τὴν τοῦ πάσχα ἑορτὴν τοσαύτην ἐπὶ τῶν
Ἱεροσολύμων στάσιν καὶ ταραχὴν ἐγγενέσθαι
συνέβη, ὡς μόνων τῶν περὶ τὰς ἐξόδους τοῦ
ἱεροῦ βίᾳ συνωθουμένων τρεῖς μυριάδας Ἰουδαίων
ἀποθανεῖν πρὸς ἀλλήλων καταπατηθέντων, γενέσθαι
τε τὴν ἑορτὴν πένθος μὲν ὅλῳ τῷ ἔθνει, θρῆνον
δὲ καθ' ἑκάστην οἰκίαν. καὶ ταῦτα δὲ κατὰ
Joseph. *B.I.* 2, 247. 248 λέξιν ὁ Ἰώσηπος. Κλαύδιος δὲ Ἀγρίππαν, Ἀγρίπ- 2
που παῖδα, Ἰουδαίων καθίστησι βασιλέα, Φήλικα
τῆς χώρας ἁπάσης Σαμαρείας τε καὶ Γαλιλαίας
καὶ προσέτι τῆς ἐπικαλουμένης Περαίας ἐπίτρο-
πον ἐκπέμψας, διοικήσας δὲ αὐτὸς τὴν ἡγεμονίαν
ἔτεσιν τρισὶν καὶ δέκα πρὸς μησὶν ὀκτώ, Νέρωνα
τῆς ἀρχῆς διάδοχον καταλιπών, τελευτᾷ.

XX. Κατὰ δὲ Νέρωνα, Φήλικος τῆς Ἰουδαίας 1
ἐπιτροπεύοντος, αὐτοῖς ῥήμασιν αὖθις ὁ Ἰώσηπος
τὴν εἰς ἀλλήλους τῶν ἱερέων στάσιν ὧδέ πως
ἐν εἰκοστῷ τῆς Ἀρχαιολογίας γράφει·

Joseph. *A.I.* 20, 180. 181 "Ἐξάπτεται δὲ καὶ τοῖς ἀρχιερεῦσι στάσις 2
πρὸς τοὺς ἱερεῖς καὶ τοὺς πρώτους τοῦ πλήθους
τῶν Ἱεροσολύμων, ἕκαστός τε αὐτῶν στῖφος

Digitized by Google

At this time, while Paul was finishing his journey from Jerusalem and round about unto Illyricum, Claudius banished the Jews from Rome, and Aquila and Priscilla, with the other Jews, left Rome and came into Asia, and lived there with Paul the Apostle, while he was strengthening the foundations of the churches there which had recently been laid by him. The sacred Scripture of the Acts teaches this also.

XIX. Now while Claudius was still administering the Empire there was a riot and confusion in Jerusalem at the feast of the Passover so great that, merely among those who were violently crowded together at the ways leading out of the temple, thirty thousand Jews perished by trampling on each other, and the feast was turned into mourning for the whole nation and into lamentation in each house. This too Josephus relates in so many words. Claudius appointed Agrippa, the child of Agrippa, as king of the Jews, and sent out Felix as Procurator of the whole district of Samaria and Galilee, together with that called Peraea. He had administered the government for thirteen years and eight months when he died and left Nero his successor in the sovereignty.

XX. In the time of Nero, while Felix was Procurator of Judaea, Josephus again relates the quarrel of the priests with one another in the following words in a passage in the twentieth book of the *Antiquities*: "Now a quarrel arose between the High Priests and the priests and leaders of the people of Jerusalem.

Digitized by Google

ἀνθρώπων τῶν θρασυτάτων καὶ νεωτεριστῶν ἑαυτῷ ποιήσας, ἡγεμὼν ἦν, καὶ συρράσσοντες ἐκακολόγουν τε ἀλλήλους καὶ λίθοις ἔβαλλον· ὁ δ' ἐπιπλήξων ἦν οὐδὲ εἷς, ἀλλ' ὡς ἐν ἀπροστατήτῳ πόλει ταῦτ' ἐπράσσετο μετ' ἐξουσίας. τοσαύτη 3 δὲ τοὺς ἀρχιερεῖς κατέλαβεν ἀναίδεια καὶ τόλμα, ὥστε ἐκπέμπειν δούλους ἐτόλμων ἐπὶ τὰς ἅλωνας τοὺς ληψομένους τὰς τοῖς ἱερεῦσιν ὀφειλομένας δεκάτας. καὶ συνέβαινε τοὺς ἀπορουμένους τῶν ἱερέων ὑπ' ἐνδείας ἀπολλυμένους θεωρεῖν· οὕτως ἐκράτει τοῦ δικαίου παντὸς ἡ τῶν στασιαζόντων βία."

Joseph. *B.I.* 2, 254–256

Πάλιν δὲ ὁ αὐτὸς συγγραφεὺς κατὰ τοὺς αὐτοὺς 4 χρόνους ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις ὑποφυῆναι λῃστῶν τι εἶδος ἱστορεῖ, οἳ μεθ' ἡμέραν, ὥς φησιν, καὶ ἐν μέσῃ τῇ πόλει ἐφόνευον τοὺς συναντῶντας. μάλιστα γὰρ ἐν ταῖς ἑορταῖς μιγνυμένους τῷ 5 πλήθει καὶ ταῖς ἐσθήσεσιν ὑποκρύπτοντας μικρὰ ξιφίδια, τούτοις νύττειν τοὺς διαφόρους· ἔπειτα πεσόντων, μέρος γίνεσθαι τῶν ἐπαγανακτούντων αὐτοὺς τοὺς πεφονευκότας· διὸ καὶ παντάπασιν ὑπ' ἀξιοπιστίας ἀνευρέτους γενέσθαι. πρῶτον μὲν 6 οὖν ὑπ' αὐτῶν Ἰωνάθην τὸν ἀρχιερέα κατασφαγῆναι, μετὰ δ' αὐτὸν καθ' ἡμέραν ἀναιρεῖσθαι πολλούς, καὶ τῶν συμφορῶν τὸν φόβον εἶναι χαλεπώτερον, ἑκάστου καθάπερ ἐν πολέμῳ καθ' ὥραν τὸν θάνατον προσδεχομένου.

XXI. Ἐξῆς δὲ τούτοις ἐπιφέρει μεθ' ἕτερα λέγων· 1

Joseph. *B.I.* 2, 261–263

" μείζονι δὲ τούτων πληγῇ Ἰουδαίους ἐκάκωσεν ὁ Αἰγύπτιος ψευδοπροφήτης. παραγενόμενος γὰρ εἰς τὴν χώραν ἄνθρωπος γόης καὶ προφήτου πίστιν ἐπιθεὶς ἑαυτῷ, περὶ τρισμυρίους μὲν ἀθροίζει

Digitized by Google

Each of them made for himself a band of the boldest revolutionaries, of which he was the leader, and when they met they used to abuse each other and throw stones. There was not a single one to rebuke this, but it was done with licence as though in a city without government. Such shamelessness and audacity seized the High Priests that they ventured to send slaves to the threshing-floors to take the tithes owed to the priests, and it was a common occurrence to see destitute priests perishing of want. Thus the violence of the factions conquered all justice."

The same writer again relates that at the same time a certain kind of bandits arose in Jerusalem, who, as he says, murdered daily those whom they met, even in the midst of the city. In particular at the feasts they used to mingle with the crowd and concealing short daggers in their clothes used to stab distinguished people with them; then, when they had fallen, the murderers themselves shared in the indignation. In this way they evaded discovery through the confidence generally placed in them. Jonathan the High Priest was the first to be slain by them, but after him many were murdered daily, and fear was worse than the disasters, for as if in war every man was hourly expecting death.

XXI. He continues his narrative after other details as follows: "The Egyptian false prophet afflicted the Jews with a worse scourge than this, for this man appeared in the country as a sorcerer and secured for himself the faith due to a prophet. He assembled about thirty thousand who had been deceived and

Digitized by Google

τῶν ἠπατημένων, περιαγαγὼν δ' αὐτοὺς ἐκ τῆς ἐρημίας εἰς τὸ Ἐλαιῶν καλούμενον ὄρος, ἐκεῖθεν οἷός τε ἦν εἰς Ἱεροσόλυμα παρελθεῖν βιάζεσθαι καὶ κρατήσας τῆς τε Ῥωμαϊκῆς φρουρᾶς καὶ τοῦ δήμου τυραννικῶς χρώμενος τοῖς συνεισπεσοῦσιν δορυφόροις. φθάνει δ' αὐτοῦ τὴν ὁρμὴν 2
Φῆλιξ, ὑπαντιάσας μετὰ τῶν Ῥωμαϊκῶν ὁπλιτῶν, καὶ πᾶς ὁ δῆμος συνεφήψατο τῆς ἀμύνης, ὥστε συμβολῆς γενομένης τὸν μὲν Αἰγύπτιον φυγεῖν μετ' ὀλίγων, διαφθαρῆναι δὲ καὶ ζωγρηθῆναι πλείστους τῶν σὺν αὐτῷ."

Ταῦτα ἐν τῇ δευτέρᾳ τῶν Ἱστοριῶν ὁ Ἰώσηπος· 3
ἐπιστῆσαι δὲ ἄξιον τοῖς ἐνταῦθα κατὰ τὸν Αἰγύπτιον δεδηλωμένοις καὶ τοῖς ἐν ταῖς Πράξεσι τῶν ἀποστόλων, ἔνθα κατὰ Φήλικα πρὸς τοῦ ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις χιλιάρχου εἴρηται τῷ Παύλῳ, ὁπηνίκα κατεστασίαζεν αὐτοῦ τὸ τῶν Ἰουδαίων
Acts 21, 38 πλῆθος· "οὐκ ἄρα σὺ εἶ ὁ Αἰγύπτιος ὁ πρὸ τούτων τῶν ἡμερῶν ἀναστατώσας καὶ ἐξαγαγὼν ἐν τῇ ἐρήμῳ τοὺς τετρακισχιλίους ἄνδρας τῶν σικαρίων;" ἀλλὰ τὰ μὲν κατὰ Φήλικα τοιαῦτα.

Acts 25, 8–12; 27. 1 XXII. Τούτου δὲ Φῆστος ὑπὸ Νέρωνος διάδοχος 1
πέμπεται, καθ' ὃν δικαιολογησάμενος ὁ Παῦλος δέσμιος ἐπὶ Ῥώμης ἄγεται· Ἀρίσταρχος αὐτῷ
Col. 4, 10 συνῆν, ὃν καὶ εἰκότως συναιχμάλωτόν που τῶν ἐπιστολῶν ἀποκαλεῖ. καὶ Λουκᾶς, ὁ καὶ τὰς
Acts 28, 30. 31 πράξεις τῶν ἀποστόλων γραφῇ παραδούς, ἐν τούτοις κατέλυσε τὴν ἱστορίαν, διετίαν ὅλην ἐπὶ τῆς Ῥώμης τὸν Παῦλον ἄνετον διατρῖψαι καὶ τὸν τοῦ θεοῦ λόγον ἀκωλύτως κηρῦξαι ἐπισημηνάμενος. τότε μὲν οὖν ἀπολογησάμενον, αὖθις 2
ἐπὶ τὴν τοῦ κηρύγματος διακονίαν λόγος ἔχει

Digitized by Google

led them round from the wilderness to the mount called Olivet, where he was in a position to force an entry into Jerusalem and overpower the Roman garrison and the people by a despotic use of the soldiers who had joined him. But Felix, anticipating his attack, met him with the Roman forces, and all the people agreed in the defence, so that when battle was joined the Egyptian fled with a few men and the greater part of those with him were destroyed or captured."

Josephus relates this in the second book of the *Wars*, but it is worth noting what is said about the Egyptian there and in the Acts of the Apostles, where, in the time of Felix, the centurion at Jerusalem said to Paul, when the mob of the Jews was rioting against him, "Art thou not that Egyptian who before these days made an uproar and led out in the wilderness four thousand men of the Sicarii[1]?" Such was the course of events under Felix.

XXII. Festus was sent as his successor by Nero, and Paul was tried before him and taken as a prisoner to Rome; Aristarchus was with him, and he naturally called him his fellow-prisoner in a passage in the Epistles. Luke also, who committed the Acts of the Apostles to writing, finished his narrative at this point by the statement that Paul spent two whole years in Rome in freedom, and preached the word of God without hindrance. Tradition has it that after defending himself the Apostle was again sent

[1] The Sicarii were the special group of revolutionaries in Jerusalem who practised the assassination of their opponents by means of a short dagger or *sica* which could be conveniently concealed in the sleeve, see p. 163.

Digitized by Google

στείλασθαι τὸν ἀπόστολον, δεύτερον δ' ἐπιβάντα τῇ αὐτῇ πόλει τῷ κατ' αὐτὸν τελειωθῆναι μαρτυρίῳ· ἐν ᾧ δεσμοῖς ἐχόμενος, τὴν πρὸς Τιμόθεον δευτέραν ἐπιστολὴν συντάττει, ὁμοῦ σημαίνων τήν τε προτέραν αὐτῷ γενομένην ἀπολογίαν καὶ τὴν παρὰ πόδας τελείωσιν. δέχου δὴ καὶ 3
2 Tim. 4, 16. 17 τούτων τὰς αὐτοῦ μαρτυρίας· "ἐν τῇ πρώτῃ μου," φησίν, "ἀπολογίᾳ οὐδείς μοι παρεγένετο, ἀλλὰ πάντες με ἐγκατέλιπον (μὴ αὐτοῖς λογισθείη), ὁ δὲ κύριός μοι παρέστη καὶ ἐνεδυνάμωσέν με, ἵνα δι' ἐμοῦ τὸ κήρυγμα πληροφορηθῇ καὶ ἀκούσωσι πάντα τὰ ἔθνη, καὶ ἐρρύσθην ἐκ στόματος λέοντος." σαφῶς δὴ παρίστησιν διὰ τούτων 4 ὅτι δὴ τὸ πρότερον, ὡς ἂν τὸ κήρυγμα τὸ δι' αὐτοῦ πληρωθείη, ἐρρύσθη ἐκ στόματος λέοντος, τὸν Νέρωνα ταύτῃ, ὡς ἔοικεν, διὰ τὸ ὠμόθυμον προσειπών. οὔκουν ἐξῆς προστέθεικεν παραπλήσιόν τι τῷ "ῥύσεταί με ἐκ στόματος λέοντος·" ἑώρα γὰρ τῷ πνεύματι τὴν ὅσον οὔπω μέλλουσαν αὐτοῦ τελευτήν, δι' ὃ φησιν ἐπι- 5
2 Tim. 4, 18 λέγων τῷ "καὶ ἐρρύσθην ἐκ στόματος λέοντος" τὸ "ῥύσεταί με ὁ κύριος ἀπὸ παντὸς ἔργου πονηροῦ καὶ σώσει εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν αὐτοῦ τὴν ἐπουράνιον," σημαίνων τὸ παραυτίκα μαρτύριον· ὃ
2 Tim. 4, 6 καὶ σαφέστερον ἐν τῇ αὐτῇ προλέγει γραφῇ, φάσκων "ἐγὼ γὰρ ἤδη σπένδομαι, καὶ ὁ καιρὸς
2 Tim. 4, 11. 16 τῆς ἐμῆς ἀναλύσεως ἐφέστηκεν."[1] νῦν μὲν οὖν 6 ἐπὶ τῆς δευτέρας ἐπιστολῆς τῶν πρὸς Τιμόθεον τὸν Λουκᾶν μόνον γράφοντι αὐτῷ συνεῖναι δηλοῖ, κατὰ δὲ τὴν προτέραν ἀπολογίαν οὐδὲ τοῦτον· ὅθεν εἰκότως τὰς τῶν ἀποστόλων Πράξεις ἐπ'

[1] *Cf.* George Syncellus 634, 13–635, 21.

Digitized by Google

on the ministry of preaching, and coming a second time to the same city suffered martyrdom under Nero. During this imprisonment he wrote the second Epistle to Timothy, indicating at the same time that his first defence had taken place and that his martyrdom was at hand. Notice his testimony on this point: "At my first defence," he says, "no man was with me, but all deserted me (may it not be laid to their charge), but the Lord stood by me and strengthened me that the preaching might be fulfilled by me and all the Gentiles might hear, and I was delivered from the lion's mouth." He clearly proves by this that on the first occasion, in order that the preaching which took place through him might be fulfilled, he was delivered from the lion's mouth, apparently referring to Nero thus for his ferocity. He does not go on to add any such words as "he will deliver me from the lion's mouth," for he saw in the spirit that his death was all but at hand, wherefore after the words "And I was delivered from the lion's mouth," he goes on to say, "The Lord will deliver me from all evil and save me for his heavenly kingdom," indicating his impending martyrdom. And this he foretells even more clearly in the same writing, saying, "For I am already offered up and the time of my release is at hand." Now in the second Epistle of those to Timothy, he states that only Luke was with him as he wrote, and at his first defence not even he; wherefore Luke probably wrote the Acts of the Apostles at that time, carrying

Digitized by Google

ἐκεῖνον ὁ Λουκᾶς περιέγραψε τὸν χρόνον, τὴν μέχρις ὅτε τῷ Παύλῳ συνῆν ἱστορίαν ὑφηγησάμενος. ταῦτα δ' ἡμῖν εἴρηται παρισταμένοις ὅτι 7
μὴ καθ' ἣν ὁ Λουκᾶς ἀνέγραψεν ἐπὶ τῆς Ῥώμης ἐπιδημίαν τοῦ Παύλου τὸ μαρτύριον αὐτῷ συνεπεράνθη· εἰκός γέ τοι κατὰ μὲν ἀρχὰς ἠπιώτερον 8
τοῦ Νέρωνος διακειμένου, ῥᾷον τὴν ὑπὲρ τοῦ δόγματος τοῦ Παύλου καταδεχθῆναι ἀπολογίαν, προελθόντος δ' εἰς ἀθεμίτους τόλμας, μετὰ τῶν ἄλλων καὶ τὰ κατὰ τῶν ἀποστόλων ἐγχειρηθῆναι.

Acts 25, 11. 12; 27, 1

XXIII. Ἰουδαῖοί γε μὴν τοῦ Παύλου Καίσαρα 1
ἐπικαλεσαμένου ἐπί τε τὴν Ῥωμαίων πόλιν ὑπὸ

Acts 28, 13-15; 25, 8

Φήστου παραπεμφθέντος, τῆς ἐλπίδος καθ' ἣν ἐξήρτυον αὐτῷ τὴν ἐπιβουλήν, ἀποπεσόντες, ἐπὶ Ἰάκωβον τὸν τοῦ κυρίου τρέπονται ἀδελφόν, ᾧ πρὸς τῶν ἀποστόλων ὁ τῆς ἐπισκοπῆς τῆς ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις ἐγκεχείριστο θρόνος. τοιαῦτα δὲ αὐτοῖς καὶ τὰ κατὰ τούτου τολμᾶται. εἰς μέσον αὐτὸν ἀγα- 2
γόντες ἄρνησιν τῆς εἰς τὸν Χριστὸν πίστεως ἐπὶ παντὸς ἐξήτουν τοῦ λαοῦ· τοῦ δὲ παρὰ τὴν ἁπάντων γνώμην ἐλευθέρᾳ φωνῇ καὶ μᾶλλον ἢ προσεδόκησαν ἐπὶ τῆς πληθύος ἁπάσης παρρησιασαμένου καὶ ὁμολογήσαντος υἱὸν εἶναι θεοῦ τὸν σωτῆρα καὶ κύριον ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦν, μηκέθ' οἱοί τε τὴν τοῦ ἀνδρὸς μαρτυρίαν φέρειν τῷ καὶ δικαιότατον αὐτὸν παρὰ τοῖς πᾶσιν δι' ἀκρότητα ἧς μετῄει κατὰ τὸν βίον φιλοσοφίας τε καὶ θεοσεβείας πιστεύεσθαι, κτείνουσι, καιρὸν εἰς ἐξουσίαν λαβόντες τὴν ἀναρχίαν, ὅτι δὴ τοῦ Φήστου κατ' αὐτὸ τοῦ καιροῦ ἐπὶ τῆς Ἰουδαίας τελευτήσαντος, ἄναρχα καὶ ἀνεπιτρόπευτα τὰ τῆς αὐτόθι διοικήσεως καθειστήκει. τὸν δὲ τῆς τοῦ Ἰακώ- 3

Digitized by Google

down his narrative until the time when he was with Paul. We have said this to show that Paul's martyrdom was not accomplished during the sojourn in Rome which Luke describes. Probably at the beginning Nero's disposition was gentler and it was easier for Paul's defence on behalf of his views to be received, but as he advanced towards reckless crime the Apostles were attacked along with the rest.

XXIII. When Paul appealed to Caesar and was sent over to Rome by Festus the Jews were disappointed of the hope in which they had laid their plot against him and turned against James, the brother of the Lord, to whom the throne of the bishopric in Jerusalem had been allotted by the Apostles. The crime which they committed was as follows. They brought him into the midst and demanded a denial of the faith in Christ before all the people, but when he, contrary to the expectation of all of them, with a loud voice and with more courage than they had expected, confessed before all the people that our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ is the son of God, they could no longer endure his testimony, since he was by all men believed to be most righteous because of the height which he had reached in a life of philosophy and religion, and killed him, using anarchy as an opportunity for power since at that moment Festus had died in Judaea, leaving the district without government or procurator. The manner of

Digitized by Google

βου τελευτῆς τρόπον ἤδη μὲν πρότερον αἱ παρατεθεῖσαι τοῦ Κλήμεντος φωναὶ δεδηλώκασιν, ἀπὸ τοῦ πτερυγίου βεβλῆσθαι ξύλῳ τε τὴν πρὸς θάνατον πεπλῆχθαι αὐτὸν ἱστορηκότος· ἀκριβέστατά γε μὴν τὰ κατ' αὐτὸν ὁ Ἡγήσιππος, ἐπὶ τῆς πρώτης τῶν ἀποστόλων γενόμενος διαδοχῆς, ἐν τῷ πέμπτῳ αὐτοῦ ὑπομνήματι τοῦτον λέγων ἱστορεῖ τὸν τρόπον·

"Διαδέχεται τὴν ἐκκλησίαν μετὰ τῶν ἀποστόλων 4
ὁ ἀδελφὸς τοῦ κυρίου Ἰάκωβος, ὁ ὀνομασθεὶς
ὑπὸ πάντων δίκαιος ἀπὸ τῶν τοῦ κυρίου χρόνων
μέχρι καὶ ἡμῶν, ἐπεὶ πολλοὶ Ἰάκωβοι ἐκαλοῦντο,
Lev. 10, 9 / Num. 6, 3 / Luke 1, 15 οὗτος δὲ ἐκ κοιλίας μητρὸς αὐτοῦ ἅγιος ἦν, οἶνον 5
καὶ σίκερα οὐκ ἔπιεν οὐδὲ ἔμψυχον ἔφαγεν, ξυρὸν
Num. 6, 5 ἐπὶ τὴν κεφαλὴν αὐτοῦ οὐκ ἀνέβη, ἔλαιον οὐκ
ἠλείψατο, καὶ βαλανείῳ οὐκ ἐχρήσατο. τούτῳ 6
μόνῳ ἐξῆν εἰς τὰ ἅγια εἰσιέναι· οὐδὲ γὰρ ἐρεοῦν
ἐφόρει, ἀλλὰ σινδόνας. καὶ μόνος εἰσήρχετο εἰς
τὸν ναὸν ηὑρίσκετό τε κείμενος ἐπὶ τοῖς γόνασιν
καὶ αἰτούμενος ὑπὲρ τοῦ λαοῦ ἄφεσιν, ὡς ἀπε-
σκληκέναι τὰ γόνατα αὐτοῦ δίκην καμήλου, διὰ
τὸ ἀεὶ κάμπτειν ἐπὶ γόνυ προσκυνοῦντα τῷ θεῷ
καὶ αἰτεῖσθαι ἄφεσιν τῷ λαῷ. διά γέ τοι τὴν 7
ὑπερβολὴν τῆς δικαιοσύνης αὐτοῦ ἐκαλεῖτο ὁ
δίκαιος καὶ ὠβλίας, ὅ ἐστιν Ἑλληνιστὶ περιοχὴ
Is. 3, 10? τοῦ λαοῦ, καὶ δικαιοσύνη, ὡς οἱ προφῆται δηλοῦσιν
περὶ αὐτοῦ. τινὲς οὖν τῶν ἑπτὰ αἱρέσεων τῶν 8
ἐν τῷ λαῷ, τῶν προγεγραμμένων μοι (ἐν τοῖς
Cf. Eus. iv. 22. 7 Ὑπομνήμασιν), ἐπυνθάνοντο αὐτοῦ τίς ἡ θύρα
John 10, 9 τοῦ Ἰησοῦ, καὶ ἔλεγεν τοῦτον εἶναι τὸν σωτῆρα· 9
ἐξ ὧν τινες ἐπίστευσαν ὅτι Ἰησοῦς ἐστιν ὁ Χρι-
στός. αἱ δὲ αἱρέσεις αἱ προειρημέναι οὐκ ἐπί-
στευον οὔτε ἀνάστασιν οὔτε ἐρχόμενον ἀποδοῦναι

Digitized by Google

James's death has been shown by the words of Clement already quoted, narrating that he was thrown from the battlement and beaten to death with a club, but Hegesippus, who belongs to the generation after the Apostles, gives the most accurate account of him speaking as follows in his fifth book: "The charge of the Church passed to James the brother of the Lord, together with the Apostles. He was called the 'Just' by all men from the Lord's time to ours, since many are called James, but he was holy from his mother's womb. He drank no wine or strong drink, nor did he eat flesh; no razor went upon his head; he did not anoint himself with oil, and he did not go to the baths. He alone was allowed to enter into the sanctuary, for he did not wear wool but linen, and he used to enter alone into the temple and be found kneeling and praying for forgiveness for the people, so that his knees grew hard like a camel's because of his constant worship of God, kneeling and asking forgiveness for the people. So from his excessive righteousness he was called the Just and Oblias, that is in Greek, 'Rampart of the people and righteousness,' as the prophets declare concerning him. Thus some of the seven sects among the people, who were described before by me (in the Commentaries), inquired of him what was the 'gate of Jesus,' and he said that he was the Saviour. Owing to this some believed that Jesus was the Christ. The sects mentioned above did not believe either in resurrection or in one who shall

Digitized by Google

ἑκάστῳ κατὰ τὰ ἔργα αὐτοῦ· ὅσοι δὲ καὶ ἐπίστευσαν, διὰ Ἰάκωβον. πολλῶν οὖν καὶ τῶν 10
ἀρχόντων πιστευόντων, ἦν θόρυβος τῶν Ἰουδαίων καὶ γραμματέων καὶ Φαρισαίων λεγόντων ὅτι κινδυνεύει πᾶς ὁ λαὸς Ἰησοῦν τὸν Χριστὸν προσδοκᾶν. ἔλεγον οὖν συνελθόντες τῷ Ἰακώβῳ· 'παρακαλοῦμέν σε, ἐπίσχες τὸν λαόν, ἐπεὶ ἐπλανήθη εἰς Ἰησοῦν, ὡς αὐτοῦ ὄντος τοῦ Χριστοῦ. παρακαλοῦμέν σε πεῖσαι πάντας τοὺς ἐλθόντας εἰς τὴν ἡμέραν τοῦ πάσχα περὶ Ἰησοῦ· σοὶ γὰρ πάντες πειθόμεθα. ἡμεῖς γὰρ μαρτυροῦμέν σοι
Luke 20, 21 καὶ πᾶς ὁ λαὸς ὅτι δίκαιος εἶ καὶ ὅτι πρόσωπον οὐ λαμβάνεις. πεῖσον οὖν σὺ τὸν ὄχλον περὶ 11
Ἰησοῦ μὴ πλανᾶσθαι· καὶ γὰρ πᾶς ὁ λαὸς καὶ πάντες πειθόμεθά σοι. στῆθι οὖν ἐπὶ τὸ πτερύγιον τοῦ ἱεροῦ, ἵνα ἄνωθεν ἧς ἐπιφανὴς καὶ ἡ εὐάκουστά σου τὰ ῥήματα παντὶ τῷ λαῷ. διὰ γὰρ τὸ πάσχα συνεληλύθασι πᾶσαι αἱ φυλαὶ μετὰ καὶ τῶν ἐθνῶν.' ἔστησαν οὖν οἱ προ- 12
εἰρημένοι γραμματεῖς καὶ Φαρισαῖοι τὸν Ἰάκωβον ἐπὶ τὸ πτερύγιον τοῦ ναοῦ, καὶ ἔκραξαν αὐτῷ καὶ εἶπαν 'δίκαιε, ᾧ πάντες πείθεσθαι ὀφείλομεν, ἐπεὶ ὁ λαὸς πλανᾶται ὀπίσω Ἰησοῦ τοῦ σταυρωθέντος, ἀπάγγειλον ἡμῖν τίς ἡ θύρα τοῦ Ἰησοῦ.'
Matt. 26, 64 καὶ ἀπεκρίνατο φωνῇ μεγάλῃ 'τί με ἐπερωτᾶτε 13
Mark 14, 62 περὶ τοῦ υἱοῦ τοῦ ἀνθρώπου, καὶ αὐτὸς κάθηται ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ ἐκ δεξιῶν τῆς μεγάλης δυνάμεως, καὶ μέλλει ἔρχεσθαι ἐπὶ τῶν νεφελῶν τοῦ οὐρανοῦ;' καὶ πολλῶν πληροφορηθέντων καὶ δο- 14
ξαζόντων ἐπὶ τῇ μαρτυρίᾳ τοῦ Ἰακώβου καὶ

---

[1] The tradition is obviously confused. Oblias may be an

Digitized by Google

come to reward each according to his deeds, but as many as believed did so because of James. Now, since many even of the rulers believed, there was a tumult of the Jews and the Scribes and Pharisees saying that the whole people was in danger of looking for Jesus as the Christ. So they assembled and said to James, 'We beseech you to restrain the people since they are straying after Jesus as though he were the Messiah. We beseech you to persuade concerning Jesus all who come for the day of the Passover, for all obey you. For we and the whole people testify to you that you are righteous and do not respect persons. So do you persuade the crowd not to err concerning Jesus, for the whole people and we all obey you. Therefore stand on the battlement of the temple that you may be clearly visible on high, and that your words may be audible to all the people, for because of the Passover all the tribes, with the Gentiles also, have come together.' So the Scribes and Pharisees mentioned before made James stand on the battlement of the temple, and they cried out to him and said, 'Oh, just one, to whom we all owe obedience, since the people are straying after Jesus who was crucified, tell us what is the gate of Jesus?[1]' And he answered with a loud voice, 'Why do you ask me concerning the Son of Man? He is sitting in heaven on the right hand of the great power, and he will come on the clouds of heaven.' And many were convinced and confessed[2] at the testimony of

inaccurate transliteration of the Hebrew for "Rampart of the People," but the reference to the prophets defies explanation. The "Gate" of Jesus is also a puzzle, but it may be connected with the early Christians' name for themselves of "the Way."

[2] Literally "glorified." *Cf.* Jo. ix. 24.

Digitized by Google

λεγόντων 'ὡσαννὰ τῷ υἱῷ Δαυίδ,' τότε πάλιν
οἱ αὐτοὶ γραμματεῖς καὶ Φαρισαῖοι πρὸς ἀλλή-
λους ἔλεγον 'κακῶς ἐποιήσαμεν τοιαύτην μαρ-
τυρίαν παρασχόντες τῷ Ἰησοῦ· ἀλλὰ ἀναβάντες
καταβάλωμεν αὐτόν, ἵνα φοβηθέντες μὴ πιστεύ-
σωσιν αὐτῷ.' καὶ ἔκραξαν λέγοντες 'ὦ ὤ,' 15
καὶ ὁ δίκαιος ἐπλανήθη,' καὶ ἐπλήρωσαν τὴν
Is. 3, 10 γραφὴν τὴν ἐν τῷ Ἡσαΐᾳ γεγραμμένην 'ἄρωμεν
τὸν δίκαιον, ὅτι δύσχρηστος ἡμῖν ἐστιν· τοίνυν 16
τὰ γενήματα τῶν ἔργων αὐτῶν φάγονται.' ἀνα-
βάντες οὖν κατέβαλον τὸν δίκαιον. καὶ ἔλεγον
ἀλλήλοις 'λιθάσωμεν Ἰάκωβον τὸν δίκαιον,'
καὶ ἤρξαντο λιθάζειν αὐτόν, ἐπεὶ καταβληθεὶς
οὐκ ἀπέθανεν· ἀλλὰ στραφεὶς ἔθηκε τὰ γόνατα
λέγων 'παρακαλῶ, κύριε θεὲ πάτερ, ἄφες αὐτοῖς·
Luke 23, 34 οὐ γὰρ οἴδασιν τί ποιοῦσιν.' οὕτως δὲ κατα- 17
λιθοβολούντων αὐτόν, εἷς τῶν ἱερέων τῶν υἱῶν
Ῥηχὰβ υἱοῦ Ῥαχαβείμ, τῶν μαρτυρουμένων ὑπὸ
Jer. 42 Ἱερεμίου τοῦ προφήτου, ἔκραζεν λέγων 'παύ-
σασθε· τί ποιεῖτε; εὔχεται ὑπὲρ ὑμῶν ὁ δίκαιος.'
καὶ λαβών τις ἀπ' αὐτῶν, εἷς τῶν γναφέων, τὸ 18
ξύλον, ἐν ᾧ ἀποπιέζει τὰ ἱμάτια, ἤνεγκεν κατὰ
τῆς κεφαλῆς τοῦ δικαίου, καὶ οὕτως ἐμαρτύρη-
σεν. καὶ ἔθαψαν αὐτὸν ἐπὶ τῷ τόπῳ παρὰ τῷ
ναῷ, καὶ ἔτι αὐτοῦ ἡ στήλη μένει παρὰ τῷ ναῷ.
μάρτυς οὗτος ἀληθὴς Ἰουδαίοις τε καὶ Ἕλλησιν
γεγένηται ὅτι Ἰησοῦς ὁ Χριστός ἐστιν. καὶ
εὐθὺς Οὐεσπασιανὸς πολιορκεῖ αὐτούς.'' [1]

[1] *Cf.* George Syncellus 638, 3–641, 2.

[1] The first part of the quotation is from the Wisdom of Solomon, not Isaiah.

[2] This story is confused and improbable. The text of

Digitized by Google

James and said, 'Hosanna to the Son of David.' Then again the same Scribes and Pharisees said to one another, 'We did wrong to provide Jesus with such testimony, but let us go up and throw him down that they may be afraid and not believe him.' And they cried out saying, 'Oh, oh, even the just one erred.' And they fulfilled the Scripture written in Isaiah,[1] 'Let us take the just man for he is unprofitable to us. Yet they shall eat the fruit of their works.' So they went up and threw down the Just, and they said to one another, 'Let us stone James the Just,' and they began to stone him since the fall had not killed him, but he turned and knelt saying, 'I beseech thee, O Lord, God and Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do.' And while they were thus stoning him one of the priests of the sons of Rechab, the son of Rechabim,[2] to whom Jeremiah the prophet bore witness, cried out saying, 'Stop! what are you doing? The Just is praying for you.' And a certain man among them, one of the laundrymen, took the club with which he used to beat out the clothes, and hit the Just on the head, and so he suffered martyrdom. And they buried him on the spot by the temple, and his gravestone still remains by the temple. He became a true witness both to Jews and to Greeks that Jesus is the Christ, and at once Vespasian began to besiege them."

Hegesippus must be corrupt, for Rechabim is only the Hebrew plural and merely repeats the previous phrase. Moreover the Rechabites were a tribe of Kenites who were adopted into Israel (*cf.* 1 Chron. ii. 55 and Jer. xxxv. 19). There is no evidence that a Rechabite was ever counted as a Levite, or that the name was that of a sect to which a priest or Levite could have belonged. Epiphanius (*Haer.* lxxviii. 14) replaces this mysterious Rechabite by Simeon the son of Clopas.

Digitized by Google

Ταῦτα διὰ πλάτους, συνῳδά γέ τοι τῷ Κλή- 19
μεντι καὶ ὁ Ἡγήσιππος. οὕτω δὲ ἄρα θαυμάσιός
τις ἦν καὶ παρὰ τοῖς ἄλλοις ἅπασιν ἐπὶ δικαιο-
σύνῃ βεβόητο ὁ Ἰάκωβος, ὡς καὶ τοὺς Ἰουδαίων
ἐμφρονας δοξάζειν ταύτην εἶναι τὴν αἰτίαν τῆς
παραχρῆμα μετὰ τὸ μαρτύριον αὐτοῦ πολιορκίας
τῆς Ἱερουσαλήμ, ἣν δι' οὐδὲν ἕτερον αὐτοῖς
συμβῆναι ἢ διὰ τὸ κατ' αὐτοῦ τολμηθὲν ἄγος.

Ἀμέλει γέ τοι ὁ Ἰώσηπος οὐκ ἀπώκνησεν καὶ 20
τοῦτ' ἐγγράφως ἐπιμαρτύρασθαι δι' ὧν φησιν
λέξεων "ταῦτα δὲ συμβέβηκεν Ἰουδαίοις κατ'
ἐκδίκησιν Ἰακώβου τοῦ δικαίου, ὃς ἦν ἀδελφὸς
Ἰησοῦ τοῦ λεγομένου Χριστοῦ, ἐπειδήπερ δικαιό-
τατον αὐτὸν ὄντα οἱ Ἰουδαῖοι ἀπέκτειναν."

Ὁ δ' αὐτὸς καὶ τὸν θάνατον αὐτοῦ ἐν εἰκοστῷ 21
τῆς Ἀρχαιολογίας δηλοῖ διὰ τούτων· "πέμπει
δὲ Καῖσαρ Ἀλβῖνον εἰς τὴν Ἰουδαίαν ἔπαρχον,
Φήστου τὴν τελευτὴν πυθόμενος. ὁ δὲ νεώτερος
Ἄνανος, ὃν τὴν ἀρχιερωσύνην εἵπαμεν παρ-
ειληφέναι, θρασὺς ἦν τὸν τρόπον καὶ τολμητὴς
διαφερόντως, αἵρεσιν δὲ μετῄει τὴν Σαδδουκαίων,
οἵπερ εἰσὶ περὶ τὰς κρίσεις ὠμοὶ παρὰ πάντας
τοὺς Ἰουδαίους, καθὼς ἤδη δεδηλώκαμεν. ἅτε 22
δὴ οὖν τοιοῦτος ὢν ὁ Ἄνανος, νομίσας ἔχειν
καιρὸν ἐπιτήδειον διὰ τὸ τεθνάναι μὲν Φῆστον,
Ἀλβῖνον δ' ἔτι κατὰ τὴν ὁδὸν ὑπάρχειν, καθίζει
συνέδριον κριτῶν, καὶ παραγαγὼν εἰς αὐτὸ τὸν
ἀδελφὸν Ἰησοῦ, τοῦ Χριστοῦ λεγομένου, Ἰάκωβος
ὄνομα αὐτῷ, καί τινας ἑτέρους, ὡς παρανομη-
σάντων κατηγορίαν ποιησάμενος, παρέδωκεν λευ-
σθησομένους. ὅσοι δὲ ἐδόκουν ἐπιεικέστατοι τῶν 23
κατὰ τὴν πόλιν εἶναι καὶ τὰ περὶ τοὺς νόμους

Joseph. *A.I.* 20, 197. 199–203
Joseph. *A.I.* 20, 197
Joseph. *B.I.* 2, 166

Digitized by Google

This account is given at length by Hegesippus, but in agreement with Clement. Thus it seems that James was indeed a remarkable man and famous among all for righteousness, so that the wise even of the Jews thought that this was the cause of the siege of Jerusalem immediately after his martyrdom, and that it happened for no other reason than the crime which they had committed against him.

Of course Josephus did not shrink from giving written testimony to this, as follows: "And these things happened to the Jews to avenge James the Just, who was the brother of Jesus the so-called Christ, for the Jews killed him in spite of his great righteousness."[1] The same writer also narrates his death in the twentieth book of the *Antiquities* as follows: "Now when Caesar heard of the death of Festus he sent Albinus as governor to Judaea, but the younger Ananus, who, as we said, had received the High Priesthood, was bold in temperament and remarkably daring. He followed the sect of the Sadducees, who are cruel in their judgements beyond all the Jews, as we have already explained. Thus his character led Ananus to think that he had a suitable opportunity through the fact that Festus was dead and Albinus still on his way. He summoned a council of judges, brought before it the brother of Jesus, the so-called Christ, whose name was James, and some others, on the accusation of breaking the law and delivered them to be stoned. But all who were reputed the most reasonable of the citizens and strict observers of the law were

[1] This passage is not in the traditional text of Josephus.

Digitized by Google

ἀκριβεῖς, βαρέως ἤνεγκαν ἐπὶ τούτῳ, καὶ πέμπουσι πρὸς τὸν βασιλέα κρύφα, παρακαλοῦντες αὐτὸν ἐπιστεῖλαι τῷ Ἀνάνῳ μηκέτι τοιαῦτα πράσσειν· μηδὲ γὰρ τὸ πρῶτον ὀρθῶς αὐτὸν πεποιηκέναι. τινὲς δ' αὐτῶν καὶ τὸν Ἄλβινον ὑπαντιάζουσιν ἀπὸ τῆς Ἀλεξανδρείας ὁδοιποροῦντα, καὶ διδάσκουσιν ὡς οὐκ ἐξὸν ἦν Ἀνάνῳ χωρὶς αὐτοῦ γνώμης καθίσαι συνέδριον. Ἄλβινος 24
δὲ πεισθεὶς τοῖς λεγομένοις, γράφει μετ' ὀργῆς τῷ Ἀνάνῳ, λήψεσθαι παρ' αὐτοῦ δίκας ἀπειλῶν, καὶ ὁ βασιλεὺς Ἀγρίππας διὰ τοῦτο τὴν ἀρχιερωσύνην ἀφελόμενος αὐτοῦ ἄρξαντος μῆνας τρεῖς, Ἰησοῦν τὸν τοῦ Δαμμαίου κατέστησεν."[1]

Τοιαῦτα καὶ τὰ κατὰ Ἰάκωβον, οὗ ἡ πρώτη τῶν ὀνομαζομένων καθολικῶν ἐπιστολῶν εἶναι λέγεται· ἰστέον δὲ ὡς νοθεύεται μέν, οὐ πολλοὶ 25
γοῦν τῶν παλαιῶν αὐτῆς ἐμνημόνευσαν, ὡς οὐδὲ τῆς λεγομένης Ἰούδα, μιᾶς καὶ αὐτῆς οὔσης τῶν ἑπτὰ λεγομένων καθολικῶν· ὅμως δ' ἴσμεν καὶ ταύτας μετὰ τῶν λοιπῶν ἐν πλείσταις δεδημοσιευμένας ἐκκλησίαις.

XXIV. Νέρωνος δὲ ὄγδοον ἄγοντος τῆς βασι- 1
λείας ἔτος, πρῶτος μετὰ Μάρκον τὸν εὐαγγελιστὴν τῆς ἐν Ἀλεξανδρείᾳ παροικίας Ἀννιανὸς τὴν λειτουργίαν διαδέχεται.

XXV. Κραταιουμένης δ' ἤδη τῷ Νέρωνι τῆς 1
ἀρχῆς, εἰς ἀνοσίους ὀκείλας ἐπιτηδεύσεις, κατ' αὐτῆς ὡπλίζετο τῆς εἰς τὸν τῶν ὅλων θεὸν εὐσεβείας. γράφειν μὲν οὖν οἷός τις οὗτος γεγένηται τὴν μοχθηρίαν, οὐ τῆς παρούσης γένοιτ' ἂν σχολῆς· πολλῶν γε μὴν τὰ κατ' αὐτὸν ἀκριβεστάταις 2
παραδεδωκότων διηγήσεσιν, πάρεστιν ὅτῳ φί-

Digitized by Google

angered at this and sent secretly to the Emperor,[1] begging him to write to Ananus to give up doing such things, for they said that he had not acted rightly from the very beginning. And some of them also went to meet Albinus as he journeyed from Alexandria, and explained that it was illegal for Ananus to assemble the council without his permission. Albinus was influenced by what was said and wrote angrily to Ananus threatening him with penalties, and for this reason King Agrippa deprived him of the High Priesthood when he had held it for three months, and appointed Jesus the son of Dammaeus." Such is the story of James, whose is said to be the first of the Epistles called Catholic. It is to be observed that its authenticity is denied, since few of the ancients quote it, as is also the case with the Epistle called Jude's, which is itself one of the seven called Catholic; nevertheless we know that these letters have been used publicly with the rest in most churches.

XXIV. In the eighth year of the reign of Nero Annianus was the first after Mark the Evangelist to receive charge of the diocese[2] of Alexandria.

XXV. When the rule of Nero was now gathering strength for unholy objects he began to take up arms against the worship of the God of the universe. It is not part of the present work to describe his depravity: many indeed have related his story in accurate narrative, and from them he who wishes can study

[1] Or, possibly, to King Agrippa.
[2] Literally, colony or province.

[1] *Cf.* George Syncellus 641, 7–642, 9.

Digitized by Google

λον, ἐξ αὐτῶν τὴν σκαιότητα τῆς τἀνδρὸς ἐκτόπου καταθεωρῆσαι μανίας, καθ' ἣν οὐ μετὰ λογισμοῦ μυρίων ὅσων ἀπωλείας διεξελθών, ἐπὶ τοσαύτην ἤλασε μιαιφονίαν, ὡς μηδὲ τῶν οἰκειοτάτων τε καὶ φιλτάτων ἐπισχεῖν, μητέρα δὲ ὁμοίως καὶ ἀδελφοὺς καὶ γυναῖκα σὺν καὶ ἄλλοις μυρίοις τῷ γένει προσήκουσιν τρόπον ἐχθρῶν καὶ πολεμίων ποικίλαις θανάτων ἰδέαις διαχρήσασθαι. ἐνέδει δ' ἄρα τοῖς πᾶσι καὶ τοῦτ' ἐπιγραφῆναι 3 αὐτῷ, ὡς ἂν πρῶτος αὐτοκρατόρων τῆς εἰς τὸ θεῖον εὐσεβείας πολέμιος ἀναδειχθείη. τούτου 4 πάλιν ὁ Ῥωμαῖος Τερτυλλιανὸς ὧδέ πως λέγων
Tert. *Apol.* 5 μνημονεύει "ἐντύχετε τοῖς ὑπομνήμασιν ὑμῶν, ἐκεῖ εὑρήσετε πρῶτον Νέρωνα τοῦτο τὸ δόγμα, ἡνίκα μάλιστα ἐν Ῥώμῃ, τὴν ἀνατολὴν πᾶσαν ὑποτάξας, ὠμὸς ἦν εἰς πάντας, διώξαντα. τοιούτῳ τῆς κολάσεως ἡμῶν ἀρχηγῷ καυχώμεθα. ὁ γὰρ εἰδὼς ἐκεῖνον νοῆσαι δύναται ὡς οὐκ ἄν, εἰ μὴ μέγα τι ἀγαθὸν ἦν, ὑπὸ Νέρωνος κατακριθῆναι."

Ταύτῃ γοῦν οὗτος, θεομάχος ἐν τοῖς μάλιστα 5 πρῶτος ἀνακηρυχθείς, ἐπὶ τὰς κατὰ τῶν ἀποστόλων ἐπήρθη σφαγάς. Παῦλος δὴ οὖν ἐπ' αὐτῆς Ῥώμης τὴν κεφαλὴν ἀποτμηθῆναι καὶ Πέτρος ὡσαύτως ἀνασκολοπισθῆναι κατ' αὐτὸν ἱστοροῦνται, καὶ πιστοῦταί γε τὴν ἱστορίαν ἡ Πέτρου καὶ Παύλου εἰς δεῦρο κρατήσασα ἐπὶ τῶν αὐτόθι κοιμητηρίων πρόσρησις, οὐδὲν δὲ 6 ἧττον καὶ ἐκκλησιαστικὸς ἀνήρ, Γάϊος ὄνομα, κατὰ Ζεφυρῖνον Ῥωμαίων γεγονὼς ἐπίσκοπον· ὃς δὴ Πρόκλῳ τῆς κατὰ Φρύγας προϊσταμένῳ

[1] The Greek is scarcely translatable and is clearly a bad

Digitized by Google

the perversity of his degenerate madness, which made him compass the unreasonable destruction of so many thousands, until he reached that final guilt of sparing neither his nearest nor dearest, so that in various ways he did to death alike his mother, brothers, and wife, with thousands of others attached to his family, as though they were enemies and foes. But with all this there was still lacking to him this—that it should be attributed to him that he was the first of the emperors to be pointed out as a foe of divine religion. This again the Latin writer Tertullian mentions in one place as follows: "Look at your records: there you will find that Nero was the first to persecute this belief when, having overcome the whole East, he was specially cruel in Rome against all.[1] We boast that such a man was the author of our chastisement; for he who knows him can understand that nothing would have been condemned by Nero had it not been great and good."

In this way then was he the first to be heralded as above all a fighter against God, and raised up to slaughter against the Apostles. It is related that in his time Paul was beheaded in Rome itself, and that Peter likewise was crucified, and the title of "Peter and Paul," which is still given to the cemeteries there, confirms the story, no less than does a writer of the Church named Caius, who lived when Zefyrinus was bishop of Rome. Caius in a written discussion

[1] rendering of Tertullian: "Consulite commentarios uestros, illic reperietis primum Neronem in hanc sectam cum maxime Romae orientem Caesariano gladio ferocisse" ("Consult your records: you will find that Nero was the first to let the imperial sword rage against this sect when it was just springing up in Rome").

Digitized by Google

γνώμης ἐγγράφως διαλεχθείς, αὐτὰ δὴ ταῦτα περὶ τῶν τόπων, ἔνθα τῶν εἰρημένων ἀποστόλων τὰ ἱερὰ σκηνώματα κατατέθειται, φησίν· "ἐγὼ 7 δὲ τὰ τρόπαια τῶν ἀποστόλων ἔχω δεῖξαι. ἐὰν γὰρ θελήσῃς ἀπελθεῖν ἐπὶ τὸν Βασικανὸν ἢ ἐπὶ τὴν ὁδὸν τὴν Ὠστίαν, εὑρήσεις τὰ τρόπαια τῶν ταύτην ἱδρυσαμένων τὴν ἐκκλησίαν."

Ὡς δὲ κατὰ τὸν αὐτὸν ἄμφω καιρὸν ἐμαρτύ- 8 ρησαν, Κορινθίων ἐπίσκοπος Διονύσιος ἐγγράφως Ῥωμαίοις ὁμιλῶν, ὧδε παρίστησιν "ταῦτα καὶ ὑμεῖς διὰ τῆς τοσαύτης νουθεσίας τὴν ἀπὸ Πέτρου καὶ Παύλου φυτείαν γενηθεῖσαν Ῥωμαίων τε καὶ Κορινθίων συνεκεράσατε. καὶ γὰρ ἄμφω καὶ εἰς τὴν ἡμετέραν Κόρινθον φυτεύσαντες ἡμᾶς ὁμοίως ἐδίδαξαν, ὁμοίως δὲ καὶ εἰς τὴν Ἰταλίαν ὁμόσε διδάξαντες ἐμαρτύρησαν κατὰ τὸν αὐτὸν καιρόν."[1] καὶ ταῦτα δέ, ὡς ἂν ἔτι μᾶλλον πιστωθείη τὰ τῆς ἱστορίας.

Joseph. *B.I.* 2, 306–308

XXVI. Αὖθις δ' ὁ Ἰώσηπος πλεῖστα ὅσα περὶ 1 τῆς τὸ πᾶν Ἰουδαίων ἔθνος καταλαβούσης διελθὼν συμφορᾶς, δηλοῖ κατὰ λέξιν ἐπὶ πλείστοις ἄλλοις μυρίους ὅσους τῶν παρὰ Ἰουδαίοις τετιμημένων μάστιξιν αἰκισθέντας ἐν αὐτῇ τῇ Ἱερουσαλὴμ

Joseph. *B.I.* 2, 284; *A.I.* 20, 257

ἀνασταυρωθῆναι ὑπὸ Φλώρου· τοῦτον δὲ εἶναι τῆς Ἰουδαίας ἐπίτροπον, ὁπηνίκα τὴν ἀρχὴν ἀναρριπισθῆναι τοῦ πολέμου, ἔτους δωδεκάτου

Joseph. *B.I.* 2, 462. 465

τῆς Νέρωνος ἡγεμονίας, συνέβη. εἶτα δὲ καὶ 2 καθ' ὅλην τὴν Συρίαν ἐπὶ τῇ τῶν Ἰουδαίων ἀποστάσει δεινήν φησι κατειληφέναι ταραχήν, παντα-

[1] *Cf.* George Syncellus 644, 8–645, 9.

Digitized by Google

with Proclus, the leader of the Montanists,[1] speaks as follows of the places where the sacred relics of the Apostles in question are deposited: "But I can point out the trophies of the Apostles, for if you will go to the Vatican or to the Ostian Way you will find the trophies of those who founded this Church."[2] And that they both were martyred at the same time Dionysius, bishop of Corinth, affirms in this passage of his correspondence with the Romans: "By so great an admonition you bound together the foundations of the Romans and Corinthians by Peter and Paul, for both of them taught together in our Corinth and were our founders, and together also taught in Italy in the same place and were martyred at the same time." And this may serve to confirm still further the facts narrated.

XXVI. Josephus in the course of his extremely detailed description of the catastrophe which overcame the whole Jewish race, in addition to many other things explains exactly how many thousand Jews of high rank in Jerusalem itself were outraged, scourged, and crucified by Florus, and that he was procurator of Judaea when it happened that the beginning of the war blazed up in the twelfth year of the reign of Nero. He next says that throughout Syria terrible disturbances followed the revolt of the Jews. Everywhere the Gentiles mercilessly attacked

[1] Literally, "the opinion among the Phrygians." Montanus was of Phrygian origin. His story is told by Eusebius in *Hist. Eccl.* v. 14-18. Proclus was one of his successors.

[2] According to the tradition that Peter was crucified on the Vatican (the exact spot is variously indicated), and Paul beheaded on the Via Ostia at Tre Fontane.

Digitized by Google

ἐνοίκων ὡς ἂν πολεμίων ἀνηλεῶς πορθουμένων, ὥστε ὁρᾶν τὰς πόλεις μεστὰς ἀτάφων σωμάτων καὶ νεκροὺς ἅμα νηπίοις γέροντας ἐρριμμένους γύναιά τε μηδὲ τῆς ἐπ' αἰδῷ σκέπης μετειληφότα, καὶ πᾶσαν μὲν τὴν ἐπαρχίαν μεστὴν ἀδιηγήτων συμφορῶν, μείζονα δὲ τῶν ἑκάστοτε τολμωμένων τὴν ἐπὶ τοῖς ἀπειλουμένοις ἀνάτασιν. ταῦτα κατὰ λέξιν ὁ Ἰώσηπος. καὶ τὰ μὲν κατὰ Ἰουδαίους ἐν τούτοις ἦν.

Digitized by Google

the Jews in the cities as though they were foes, so that the cities could be seen full of unburied bodies, thrown out dead, old men and children, and women without covering for their nakedness; the whole province was full of indescribable misery and the strain of the threats for the future was worse than the crimes of the present. This Josephus narrates, and such was the condition of the Jews.

Digitized by Google

Γ

Τάδε καὶ ἡ γ̄ περιέχει βίβλος τῆς Ἐκκλησιαστικῆς ἱστορίας

Ᾱ Ὅποι γῆς ἐκήρυξαν τὸν Χριστὸν οἱ ἀπόστολοι.
Β̄ Τίς πρῶτος τῆς Ῥωμαίων ἐκκλησίας προέστη.
Γ̄ Περὶ τῶν ἐπιστολῶν τῶν ἀποστόλων.
Δ̄ Περὶ τῆς πρώτης τῶν ἀποστόλων διαδοχῆς.
Ε̄ Περὶ τῆς μετὰ τὸν Χριστὸν ὑστάτης Ἰουδαίων πολιορκίας.
Ϛ̄ Περὶ τοῦ πιέσαντος αὐτοὺς λιμοῦ.
Ζ̄ Περὶ τῶν τοῦ Χριστοῦ προρρήσεων.
Η̄ Περὶ τῶν πρὸ τοῦ πολέμου σημείων.
Θ̄ Περὶ Ἰωσήπου καὶ ὧν κατέλιπεν συγγραμμάτων.
Ῑ Ὅπως τῶν θείων μνημονεύει βιβλίων.
ΙᾹ Ὡς μετὰ Ἰάκωβον ἡγεῖται Συμεὼν τῆς ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις ἐκκλησίας.
ΙΒ̄ Ὡς Οὐεσπασιανὸς τοὺς ἐκ Δαυὶδ ἀναζητεῖσθαι προστάττει.
ΙΓ̄ Ὡς δεύτερος Ἀλεξανδρέων ἡγεῖται Ἀβίλιος.
ΙΔ̄ Ὡς καὶ Ῥωμαίων δεύτερος Ἀνέγκλητος ἐπισκοπεῖ.
ΙΕ̄ Ὡς τρίτος μετ' αὐτὸν Κλήμης.
ΙϚ̄ Περὶ τῆς Κλήμεντος ἐπιστολῆς.
ΙΖ̄ Περὶ τοῦ κατὰ Δομετιανὸν διωγμοῦ.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS OF BOOK III

The contents of the third book of the History of the Church is as follows :

I. The parts of the world in which the apostles preached Christ.
II. Who was the first ruler of the church of the Romans.
III. On the letters of the apostles.
IV. On the first successors of the apostles.
V. On the last siege of the Jews after Christ.
VI. On the famine that oppressed them.
VII. On the prophecies of Christ.
VIII. On the signs before the war.
IX. On Josephus and the writings which he left.
X. How he quotes the sacred books.
XI. How after James Simeon ruled the church at Jerusalem.
XII. How Vespasian ordered the family of David to be sought out.
XIII. How Abilius was the second ruler of the Alexandrians.
XIV. How Anencletus was the second bishop of the Romans.
XV. How, after him, Clement was the third.
XVI. On the epistle of Clement.
XVII. On the persecution under Domitian.

Digitized by Google

ΙΗ Περὶ Ἰωάννου τοῦ ἀποστόλου καὶ τῆς Ἀποκαλύψεως.
ΙΘ Ὡς Δομετιανὸς τοὺς ἀπὸ γένους Δαυὶδ ἀναιρεῖσθαι προστάττει.
Κ Περὶ τῶν πρὸς γένους τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν.
ΚΑ Ὡς τῆς Ἀλεξανδρέων ἐκκλησίας τρίτος ἡγεῖται Κέρδων.
ΚΒ Ὡς τῆς Ἀντιοχέων δεύτερος Ἰγνάτιος.
ΚΓ Ἱστορία περὶ Ἰωάννου τοῦ ἀποστόλου.
ΚΔ Περὶ τῆς τάξεως τῶν εὐαγγελίων.
ΚΕ Περὶ τῶν ὁμολογουμένων θείων γραφῶν καὶ τῶν μὴ τοιούτων.
ΚϚ Περὶ Μενάνδρου τοῦ γόητος.
ΚΖ Περὶ τῆς τῶν Ἐβιωναίων αἱρέσεως.
ΚΗ Περὶ Κηρίνθου αἱρεσιάρχου.
ΚΘ Περὶ Νικολάου καὶ τῶν ἐξ αὐτοῦ κεκλημένων.
Λ Περὶ τῶν ἐν συζυγίαις ἐξετασθέντων ἀποστόλων.
ΛΑ Περὶ τῆς Ἰωάννου καὶ Φιλίππου τελευτῆς.
ΛΒ Ὅπως Συμεὼν ὁ ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις ἐπίσκοπος ἐμαρτύρησεν.
ΛΓ Ὅπως Τραϊανὸς ζητεῖσθαι Χριστιανοὺς ἐκώλυσεν.
ΛΔ Ὡς τῆς Ῥωμαίων ἐκκλησίας τέταρτος Εὐάρεστος ἡγεῖται.
ΛΕ Ὡς τρίτος τῆς ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις Ἰοῦστος.
ΛϚ Περὶ Ἰγνατίου καὶ τῶν ἐπιστολῶν αὐτοῦ.
ΛΖ Περὶ τῶν εἰς ἔτι τότε διαπρεπόντων εὐαγγελιστῶν.
ΛΗ Περὶ τῆς Κλήμεντος ἐπιστολῆς καὶ τῶν ψευδῶς εἰς αὐτὸν ἀναφερομένων.
ΛΘ Περὶ τῶν Παπία συγγραμμάτων.

Digitized by Google

XVIII. On John the Apostle and the Apocalypse.
XIX. How Domitian commanded the family of David to be destroyed.
XX. On the family of our Saviour.
XXI. How Cerdo was the third to rule the church of the Alexandrians.
XXII. How Ignatius was the second of the Antiochians.
XXIII. A narrative about John the Apostle.
XXIV. On the order of the Gospels.
XXV. On the writings acknowledged as sacred and on those which are not.
XXVI. On Menander the Sorcerer.
XXVII. On the heresy of the Ebionites.
XXVIII. On Cerinthus the Heresiarch.
XXIX. On Nicholas and those called after him.
XXX. On the apostles who were tested by marriage.
XXXI. On the death of John and Philip.
XXXII. How Simeon, the bishop in Jerusalem, was martyred.
XXXIII. How Trajan forbade the Christians to be sought out.
XXXIV. How Evarestus was the fourth to rule the church of the Romans.
XXXV. How Justus was the third ruler of the church in Jerusalem.
XXXVI. On Ignatius and his letters.
XXXVII. On the evangelists who were still flourishing.
XXXVIII. On the letter of Clement and the writings falsely attributed to him.
XXXIX. On the writings of Papias.

Digitized by Google

III

I. Τὰ μὲν δὴ κατὰ Ἰουδαίους ἐν τούτοις ἦν· 1
τῶν δὲ ἱερῶν τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν ἀποστόλων τε
καὶ μαθητῶν ἐφ' ἅπασαν κατασπαρέντων τὴν
οἰκουμένην, Θωμᾶς μέν, ὡς ἡ παράδοσις περιέχει,
τὴν Παρθίαν εἴληχεν, Ἀνδρέας δὲ τὴν Σκυθίαν,
Ἰωάννης τὴν Ἀσίαν, πρὸς οὓς καὶ διατρίψας ἐν
1 Pet. 1, 1 Ἐφέσῳ τελευτᾷ, Πέτρος δ' ἐν Πόντῳ καὶ Γαλατίᾳ 2
καὶ Βιθυνίᾳ Καππαδοκίᾳ τε καὶ Ἀσίᾳ κεκηρυχέναι
τοῖς [ἐκ] διασπορᾶς Ἰουδαίοις ἔοικεν· ὃς καὶ ἐπὶ
τέλει ἐν Ῥώμῃ γενόμενος, ἀνεσκολοπίσθη κατὰ
κεφαλῆς, οὕτως αὐτὸς ἀξιώσας παθεῖν. τί δεῖ 3
Rom. 15, 19 περὶ Παύλου λέγειν, ἀπὸ Ἰερουσαλὴμ μέχρι τοῦ
Ἰλλυρικοῦ πεπληρωκότος τὸ εὐαγγέλιον τοῦ Χρι-
στοῦ καὶ ὕστερον ἐν τῇ Ῥώμῃ ἐπὶ Νέρωνος με-
μαρτυρηκότος; ταῦτα Ὠριγένει κατὰ λέξιν ἐν
τρίτῳ τόμῳ τῶν εἰς τὴν Γένεσιν ἐξηγητικῶν
εἴρηται.

II. Τῆς δὲ Ῥωμαίων ἐκκλησίας μετὰ τὴν 1
Παύλου καὶ Πέτρου μαρτυρίαν πρῶτος κληροῦται
2 Tim. 4, 21 τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν Λίνος. μνημονεύει τούτου Τιμο-
θέῳ γράφων ἀπὸ Ῥώμης ὁ Παῦλος κατὰ τὴν ἐπὶ
τέλει τῆς ἐπιστολῆς πρόσρησιν.

III. Πέτρου μὲν οὖν ἐπιστολὴ μία, ἡ λεγομένη 1
αὐτοῦ προτέρα, ἀνωμολόγηται, ταύτῃ δὲ καὶ οἱ

Digitized by Google

BOOK III

I. Such was the condition of things among the Jews, but the holy Apostles and disciples of our Saviour were scattered throughout the whole world. Thomas, as tradition relates, obtained by lot Parthia, Andrew Scythia, John Asia (and he stayed there and died in Ephesus), but Peter seems to have preached to the Jews of the Dispersion in Pontus and Galatia and Bithynia, Cappadocia, and Asia, and at the end he came to Rome and was crucified head downwards, for so he had demanded to suffer. What need be said of Paul, who fulfilled the gospel of Christ from Jerusalem to Illyria and afterward was martyred in Rome under Nero? This is stated exactly by Origen in the third volume of his commentary on Genesis.

II. After the martyrdom of Paul and Peter, Linus was the first appointed to the bishopric of the church of Rome. Paul mentions him when writing from Rome to Timothy in the salutation at the end of the Epistle.

III. Of Peter, one epistle, that which is called his first, is admitted, and the ancient presbyters used

Digitized by Google

πάλαι πρεσβύτεροι ὡς ἀναμφιλέκτῳ ἐν τοῖς σφῶν αὐτῶν κατακέχρηνται συγγράμμασιν· τὴν δὲ φερομένην δευτέραν οὐκ ἐνδιάθηκον μὲν εἶναι παρειλήφαμεν, ὅμως δὲ πολλοῖς χρήσιμος φανεῖσα, μετὰ τῶν ἄλλων ἐσπουδάσθη γραφῶν. τό γε μὴν τῶν 2
ἐπικεκλημένων αὐτοῦ Πράξεων καὶ τὸ κατ' αὐτὸν ὠνομασμένον εὐαγγέλιον τό τε λεγόμενον αὐτοῦ Κήρυγμα καὶ τὴν καλουμένην Ἀποκάλυψιν οὐδ' ὅλως ἐν καθολικοῖς ἴσμεν παραδεδομένα, ὅτι μήτε ἀρχαίων μήτε μὴν καθ' ἡμᾶς τις ἐκκλησιαστικὸς συγγραφεὺς ταῖς ἐξ αὐτῶν συνεχρήσατο μαρτυρίαις. προϊούσης δὲ τῆς ἱστορίας προύργου ποιή- 3
σομαι σὺν ταῖς διαδοχαῖς ὑποσημήνασθαι τίνες τῶν κατὰ χρόνους ἐκκλησιαστικῶν συγγραφέων ὁποίαις κέχρηνται τῶν ἀντιλεγομένων, τίνα τε περὶ τῶν ἐνδιαθήκων καὶ ὁμολογουμένων γραφῶν καὶ ὅσα περὶ τῶν μὴ τοιούτων αὐτοῖς εἴρηται. ἀλλὰ τὰ 4
μὲν ὀνομαζόμενα Πέτρου, ὧν μόνην μίαν γνησίαν ἔγνων ἐπιστολὴν καὶ παρὰ τοῖς πάλαι πρεσβυτέροις ὁμολογουμένην, τοσαῦτα· τοῦ δὲ Παύλου πρόδηλοι καὶ σαφεῖς αἱ δεκατέσσαρες· ὅτι γε μήν 5
τινες ἠθετήκασι τὴν πρὸς Ἑβραίους, πρὸς τῆς Ῥωμαίων ἐκκλησίας ὡς μὴ Παύλου οὖσαν αὐτὴν ἀντιλέγεσθαι φήσαντες, οὐ δίκαιον ἀγνοεῖν· καὶ τὰ περὶ ταύτης δὲ τοῖς πρὸ ἡμῶν εἰρημένα κατὰ καιρὸν παραθήσομαι. οὐδὲ μὴν τὰς λεγομένας
Rom. 16, 14 αὐτοῦ Πράξεις ἐν ἀναμφιλέκτοις παρείληφα. ἐπεὶ 6
δ' ὁ αὐτὸς ἀπόστολος ἐν ταῖς ἐπὶ τέλει προσρήσεσιν τῆς πρὸς Ῥωμαίους μνήμην πεποίηται μετὰ τῶν ἄλλων καὶ Ἑρμᾶ, οὗ φασιν ὑπάρχειν τὸ τοῦ Ποιμένος βιβλίον, ἰστέον ὡς καὶ τοῦτο πρὸς μέν τινων ἀντιλέλεκται, δι' οὓς οὐκ ἂν ἐν ὁμολογου-

Digitized by Google

this in their own writings as unquestioned, but the so-called second Epistle we have not received as canonical, but nevertheless it has appeared useful to many, and has been studied with other Scriptures. On the other hand, of the Acts bearing his name, and the Gospel named according to him and Preaching called his and the so-called Revelation, we have no knowledge at all in Catholic tradition, for no orthodox[1] writer of the ancient time or of our own has used their testimonies. As the narrative proceeds I will take pains to indicate successively which of the orthodox writers in each period used any of the doubtful books, and what they said about the canonical and accepted Scriptures and what about those which are not such. Now the above are the books bearing the name of Peter, of which I recognize only one as genuine and admitted by the presbyters of old. And the fourteen letters of Paul are obvious and plain, yet it is not right to ignore that some dispute the Epistle to the Hebrews, saying that it was rejected by the church of Rome as not being by Paul, and I will expound at the proper time what was said about it by our predecessors. Nor have I received his so-called Acts among undisputed books. But since the same Apostle in the salutations at the end of Romans has mentioned among others Hermas, whose, they say, is the Book of the Shepherd, it should be known that this also is rejected by some, and for their sake should not be placed among

[1] Gk. "ecclesiastic," that is, belonging to or recognized by the Church, as opposed to heretics, Jews, or heathen.

Digitized by Google

μένοις τεθείη, ὑφ' ἑτέρων δὲ ἀναγκαιότατον οἷς μάλιστα δεῖ στοιχειώσεως εἰσαγωγικῆς, κέκριται· ὅθεν ἤδη καὶ ἐν ἐκκλησίαις ἴσμεν αὐτὸ δεδημοσιευμένον, καὶ τῶν παλαιτάτων δὲ συγγραφέων κεχρημένους τινὰς αὐτῷ κατείληφα. ταῦτα εἰς 7
παράστασιν τῶν τε ἀναντιρρήτων καὶ τῶν μὴ παρὰ πᾶσιν ὁμολογουμένων θείων γραμμάτων εἰρήσθω.

Rom. 15, 19 IV. Ὅτι μὲν οὖν τοῖς ἐξ ἐθνῶν κηρύσσων ὁ 1
Παῦλος τοὺς ἀπὸ Ἱερουσαλὴμ καὶ κύκλῳ μέχρι τοῦ Ἰλλυρικοῦ τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν καταβέβληντο θεμελίους, δῆλον ἐκ τῶν αὐτοῦ γένοιτ' ἂν φωνῶν καὶ ἀφ' ὧν ὁ Λουκᾶς ἐν ταῖς Πράξεσιν ἱστόρησεν· καὶ 2
ἐκ τῶν Πέτρου δὲ λέξεων ἐν ὁπόσαις καὶ οὗτος ἐπαρχίαις τοὺς ἐκ περιτομῆς τὸν Χριστὸν εὐαγγελιζόμενος τὸν τῆς καινῆς διαθήκης παρεδίδου
1 Pet. 1, 1 λόγον, σαφὲς ἂν εἴη ἀφ' ἧς εἰρήκαμεν ὁμολογουμένης αὐτοῦ ἐπιστολῆς, ἐν ᾗ τοῖς ἐξ Ἑβραίων οὖσιν ἐν διασπορᾷ Πόντου καὶ Γαλατίας Καππαδοκίας τε καὶ Ἀσίας καὶ Βιθυνίας γράφει. ὅσοι 3
δὲ τούτων καὶ τίνες γνήσιοι ζηλωταὶ γεγονότες τὰς πρὸς αὐτῶν ἱδρυθείσας ἱκανοὶ ποιμαίνειν ἐδοκιμάσθησαν ἐκκλησίας, οὐ ῥᾴδιον εἰπεῖν, μὴ ὅτι γε ὅσους ἄν τις ἐκ τῶν Παύλου φωνῶν ἀναλέξοιτο· τούτου γὰρ οὖν μυρίοι συνεργοὶ καί, ὡς 4
αὐτὸς ὠνόμασεν, συστρατιῶται γεγόνασιν, ὧν οἱ
Phil. 2, 25 πλείους ἀλήστου πρὸς αὐτοῦ μνήμης ἠξίωνται,
Philem. 2 διηνεκῆ τὴν περὶ αὐτῶν μαρτυρίαν ταῖς ἰδίαις ἐπιστολαῖς ἐγκαταλέξαντος, οὐ μὴν ἀλλὰ καὶ ὁ Λουκᾶς ἐν ταῖς Πράξεσιν τοὺς γνωρίμους αὐτοῦ καταλέγων ἐξ ὀνόματος αὐτῶν μνημονεύει. Τιμό- 5
1 Tim. 1, 3 Tit. 1, 5 θεός γε μὴν τῆς ἐν Ἐφέσῳ παροικίας ἱστορεῖται πρῶτος τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν εἰληχέναι, ὡς καὶ Τίτος

Digitized by Google

accepted books, but by others it has been judged most valuable, especially to those who need elementary instruction. For this reason we know that it has been used in public in churches, and I have found it quoted by some of the most ancient writers. Let this suffice for the establishment of the divine writings which are undisputed, and of those which are not received by all.

IV. Now it would be clear from Paul's own words and from the narrative of Luke in the Acts that Paul, in his preaching to the Gentiles, laid the foundations of the churches from Jerusalem round about unto Illyricum. And from the Epistle which we have spoken of as indisputably Peter's, in which he writes to those of the Hebrews in the Dispersion of Pontus and Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia, it would be clear from his own words in how many provinces he delivered the word of the New Testament by preaching the Gospel of Christ to those of the circumcision. But it is not easy to say how many of these and which of them were genuinely zealous and proved their ability to be the pastors of the churches founded by the Apostles, except by making a list of those mentioned by Paul. For there were many thousands of his fellow-workers and, as he called them himself, fellow-soldiers, of whom the most were granted by him memorial past forgetting, for he recounts his testimony to them unceasingly in his own letters, and, moreover, Luke also in the Acts gives a list of those known to him and mentions them by name. Thus Timothy is related to have been the first appointed bishop of the diocese of Ephesus, as

Digitized by Google

τῶν ἐπὶ Κρήτης ἐκκλησιῶν. Λουκᾶς δὲ τὸ μὲν 6
γένος ὢν τῶν ἀπ' Ἀντιοχείας, τὴν ἐπιστήμην δὲ
ἰατρός, τὰ πλεῖστα συγγεγονὼς τῷ Παύλῳ, καὶ
τοῖς λοιποῖς δὲ οὐ παρέργως τῶν ἀποστόλων
ὡμιληκώς, ἧς ἀπὸ τούτων προσεκτήσατο ψυχῶν
θεραπευτικῆς ἐν δυσὶν ἡμῖν ὑποδείγματα θεο-
πνεύστοις κατέλιπεν βιβλίοις, τῷ τε εὐαγγελίῳ, ὃ
Luke 1, 2. 3 καὶ χαράξαι μαρτύρεται καθ' ἃ παρέδοσαν αὐτῷ
οἱ ἀπ' ἀρχῆς αὐτόπται καὶ ὑπηρέται γενόμενοι τοῦ
λόγου, οἷς καί φησιν ἔτ' ἄνωθεν ἅπασι παρηκο-
λουθηκέναι, καὶ ταῖς τῶν ἀποστόλων Πράξεσιν,
ἃς οὐκέτι δι' ἀκοῆς, ὀφθαλμοῖς δὲ παραλαβὼν συν-
ετάξατο. φασὶν δ' ὡς ἄρα τοῦ κατ' αὐτὸν εὐαγ- 7
γελίου μνημονεύειν ὁ Παῦλος εἴωθεν, ὁπηνίκα ὡς
περὶ ἰδίου τινὸς εὐαγγελίου γράφων ἔλεγεν "κατὰ
Rom. 2, 16 τὸ εὐαγγέλιόν μου." τῶν δὲ λοιπῶν ἀκολούθων 8
2 Tim. 2, 8
2 Tim. 4, 10 τοῦ Παύλου Κρήσκης μὲν ἐπὶ τὰς Γαλλίας στειλά-
2 Tim. 4, 21 μενος ὑπ' αὐτοῦ μαρτυρεῖται, Λίνος δέ, οὗ μέμνηται
συνόντος ἐπὶ Ῥώμης αὐτῷ κατὰ τὴν δευτέραν
πρὸς Τιμόθεον ἐπιστολήν, πρῶτος μετὰ Πέτρον
τῆς Ῥωμαίων ἐκκλησίας τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν ἤδη πρό-
Phil. 4, 3 τερον κληρωθεὶς δεδήλωται· ἀλλὰ καὶ ὁ Κλήμης, 9
τῆς Ῥωμαίων καὶ αὐτὸς ἐκκλησίας τρίτος ἐπί-
σκοπος καταστάς, Παύλου συνεργὸς καὶ συναθλη-
τὴς γεγονέναι πρὸς αὐτοῦ μαρτυρεῖται. ἐπὶ τού- 10
τοις καὶ τὸν Ἀρεοπαγίτην ἐκεῖνον, Διονύσιος
Acts 17, 34 ὄνομα αὐτῷ, ὃν ἐν ταῖς Πράξεσι μετὰ τὴν ἐν
Ἀρείῳ πάγῳ πρὸς Ἀθηναίους Παύλου δημη-
γορίαν πρῶτον πιστεῦσαι ἀνέγραψεν ὁ Λουκᾶς,
τῆς ἐν Ἀθήναις ἐκκλησίας πρῶτον ἐπίσκοπον
ἀρχαίων τις ἕτερος Διονύσιος, τῆς Κορινθίων παρ-
οικίας ποιμήν, γεγονέναι ἱστορεῖ. ἀλλὰ γὰρ ὀδῷ 11

Digitized by Google

was Titus of the churches in Crete. Luke, who was by race an Antiochian and a physician by profession, was long a companion of Paul, and had careful conversation with the other Apostles, and in two books left us examples of the medicine for souls which he had gained from them—the Gospel, which he testifies that he had planned according to the tradition received by him by those who were from the beginning eyewitnesses and ministers of the word, all of whom he says,[1] moreover, he had followed from the beginning, and the Acts of the Apostles which he composed no longer on the evidence of hearing but of his own eyes. And they say that Paul was actually accustomed to quote from Luke's Gospel since when writing of some Gospel as his own he used to say, " According to my Gospel." Of the other followers of Paul there is evidence that Crescens was sent by him to Gaul, and Linus, who is mentioned in the second Epistle to Timothy as present with him in Rome has already been declared to have been the first after Peter to be appointed to the bishopric of the Church in Rome. Of Clement too, who was himself made the third bishop of the church of Rome, it is testified by Paul that he worked and strove in company with him. In addition to these Dionysius, one of the ancients, the pastor of the diocese of the Corinthians, relates that the first bishop of the Church at Athens was that member of the Areopagus, the other Dionysius, whose original conversion after Paul's speech to the Athenians in the Areopagus Luke described in the Acts. Now

[1] The translation obscures the difficulty of the Greek. Is it the tradition or the eyewitnesses which Luke (in the opinion of Eusebius) claims to have followed? The Greek is quite ambiguous.

Digitized by Google

προβαίνουσιν, ἐπὶ καιροῦ τὰ τῆς κατὰ χρόνους τῶν ἀποστόλων διαδοχῆς ἡμῖν εἰρήσεται· νῦν δ' ἐπὶ τὰ ἑξῆς ἴωμεν τῆς ἱστορίας.

Joseph. *B.I.* 4, 491

V. Μετὰ Νέρωνα δέκα πρὸς τρισὶν ἔτεσιν τὴν[1] ἀρχὴν ἐπικρατήσαντα τῶν ἀμφὶ Γάλβαν καὶ Ὄθωνα ἐνιαυτὸν ἐπὶ μησὶν ἓξ διαγενομένων, Οὐεσπασιανός, ταῖς κατὰ Ἰουδαίων παρατάξεσιν λαμπρυνόμενος, βασιλεὺς ἐπ' αὐτῆς ἀναδείκνυται τῆς

Joseph. *B.I.* 4, 658

Ἰουδαίας, αὐτοκράτωρ πρὸς τῶν αὐτόθι στρατοπέδων ἀναγορευθείς. τὴν ἐπὶ Ῥώμης οὖν αὐτίκα στειλάμενος, Τίτῳ τῷ παιδὶ τὸν κατὰ Ἰουδαίων ἐγχειρίζει πόλεμον. μετά γε μὴν τὴν τοῦ σωτῆρος[2] ἡμῶν ἀνάληψιν Ἰουδαίων πρὸς τῷ κατ' αὐτοῦ τολμήματι ἤδη καὶ κατὰ τῶν ἀποστόλων αὐτοῦ πλείστας ὅσας ἐπιβουλὰς μεμηχανημένων, πρώτου τε Στεφάνου λίθοις ὑπ' αὐτῶν ἀνῃρημένου, εἶτα δὲ μετ' αὐτὸν Ἰακώβου, ὃς ἦν Ζεβεδαίου μὲν παῖς, ἀδελφὸς δὲ Ἰωάννου, τὴν κεφαλὴν ἀποτμηθέντος, ἐπὶ πᾶσί τε Ἰακώβου, τοῦ τὸν αὐτόθι τῆς ἐπισκοπῆς θρόνον πρώτου μετὰ τὴν τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν ἀνάληψιν κεκληρωμένου, τὸν προδηλωθέντα τρόπον μεταλλάξαντος, τῶν τε λοιπῶν ἀποστόλων μυρία εἰς θάνατον ἐπιβεβουλευμένων καὶ τῆς μὲν Ἰουδαίας γῆς ἀπεληλαμένων, ἐπὶ δὲ τῇ τοῦ κηρύγματος διδασκαλίᾳ τὴν εἰς σύμπαντα τὰ ἔθνη στειλαμένων πορείαν σὺν δυνάμει τοῦ

Matt. 28, 19

Χριστοῦ, φήσαντος αὐτοῖς "πορευθέντες μαθητεύσατε πάντα τὰ ἔθνη ἐν τῷ ὀνόματί μου," οὐ[3]

[1] Nero died June 9, A.D. 68.

[2] Eusebius accidentally omits Vitellius. Galba's reign was June 9, 68 to Jan. 15, 69. Otho's was Jan. 15 to April 20, 69. Vitellius was not killed until Dec. 20, 69, but Vespasian was proclaimed Emperor at Alexandria

Digitized by Google

as we go on our way the chronological details of the succession of the Apostles will be related, but at present let us go on to the next stage of the narrative.

V. After Nero had held the sovereignty for thirteen years [1] the affairs of Galba and Otho [2] occupied a year and six months, and then Vespasian, who had distinguished himself in the operations against the Jews, was proclaimed Imperator by the army there and appointed Emperor in Judaea itself. He at once set off for Rome and entrusted the war against the Jews to his son Titus. Now after the ascension of our Saviour in addition to their crime against him the Jews at once contrived numberless plots against his disciples. Stephen was first stoned to death by them and next after him James, the son of Zebedee and brother of John, was beheaded.[3] In addition to all, James, who was the first after the ascension of our Saviour to be appointed to the throne of the bishopric in Jerusalem, passed away in the manner described above and the other Apostles were driven from the land of Judaea by thousands of deadly plots. They went on their way to all the heathen teaching their message in the power of Christ for he had said to them, "Go and make disciples of all the heathen in my name." [4] On the other hand, the

July 1, 69; he was recognized by the Senate as soon as his soldiers had defeated Vitellius.

[3] *Cf.* Acts vi. 8 ff. and xii. 2.

[4] This is the form in which Eusebius usually quotes Matt. xxviii. 19, omitting the reference to baptism. It cannot be accidental, but there are no MSS. of the N.T. with this text. Some think that the Eusebian text is an earlier form, some that Eusebius wished to keep secret the formula of baptism.

Digitized by Google

μὴν ἀλλὰ καὶ τοῦ λαοῦ τῆς ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις ἐκκλησίας κατά τινα χρησμὸν τοῖς αὐτόθι δοκίμοις δι' ἀποκαλύψεως ἐκδοθέντα πρὸ τοῦ πολέμου μεταναστῆναι τῆς πόλεως καί τινα τῆς Περαίας πόλιν οἰκεῖν κεκελευσμένου, Πέλλαν αὐτὴν ὀνομάζουσιν, [ἐν ᾗ] τῶν εἰς Χριστὸν πεπιστευκότων ἀπὸ τῆς Ἱερουσαλὴμ μετῳκισμένων, ὡς ἂν παντελῶς ἐπιλελοιπότων ἁγίων ἀνδρῶν αὐτήν τε τὴν Ἰουδαίων βασιλικὴν μητρόπολιν καὶ σύμπασαν τὴν Ἰουδαίαν γῆν, ἡ ἐκ θεοῦ δίκη λοιπὸν αὐτοὺς ἅτε τοσαῦτα εἴς τε τὸν Χριστὸν καὶ τοὺς ἀποστόλους αὐτοῦ παρηνομηκότας μετῄει, τῶν ἀσεβῶν ἄρδην τὴν γενεὰν αὐτὴν ἐκείνην ἐξ ἀνθρώπων ἀφανίζουσα. ὅσα μὲν οὖν τηνικάδε κατὰ πάντα τόπον ὅλῳ τῷ ἔθνει συνερρύη κακά, ὅπως τε μάλιστα οἱ τῆς Ἰουδαίας οἰκήτορες εἰς ἔσχατα περιηλάθησαν συμφορῶν, ὁπόσαι τε μυριάδες ἠβηδὸν γυναιξὶν ἅμα καὶ παισὶ ξίφει καὶ λιμῷ καὶ μυρίοις ἄλλοις εἴδεσι περιπεπτώκασιν θανάτου, πόλεών τε Ἰουδαϊκῶν ὅσαι τε καὶ οἷαι γεγόνασιν πολιορκίαι, ἀλλὰ καὶ ὁπόσα οἱ ἐπ' αὐτὴν Ἱερουσαλὴμ ὡς ἂν ἐπὶ μητρόπολιν ὀχυρωτάτην καταπεφευγότες δεινὰ καὶ πέρα δεινῶν ἑοράκασι, τοῦ τε παντὸς πολέμου τὸν τρόπον καὶ τῶν ἐν τούτῳ γεγενημένων ἐν μέρει ἕκαστα, καὶ ὡς ἐπὶ τέλει τὸ πρὸς τῶν προφητῶν ἀνηγορευμένον βδέλυγμα τῆς ἐρημώσεως ἐν αὐτῷ κατέστη τῷ πάλαι τοῦ θεοῦ περιβοήτῳ νεῷ, παντελῆ φθορὰν καὶ ἀφανισμὸν ἔσχατον τὸν διὰ πυρὸς ὑπομείναντι, πάρεστιν ὅτῳ φίλον, ἐπ' ἀκριβὲς ἐκ τῆς τῷ Ἰωσήπῳ γραφείσης ἀναλέξασθαι ἱστορίας· ὡς δὲ ὁ αὐτὸς οὗτος τῶν ἀθροισθέντων ἀπὸ τῆς Ἰουδαίας ἁπάσης ἐν ἡμέραις τῆς

Dan. 9, 27; 12, 11
Matt. 24, 15
Mark 13, 14
Joseph. *B.I.* 6, 425–428

Digitized by Google

people of the church in Jerusalem were commanded by an oracle given by revelation before the war to those in the city who were worthy of it to depart and dwell in one of the cities of Perea which they called Pella. To it those who believed on Christ migrated from Jerusalem, that when holy men had altogether deserted the royal capital of the Jews and the whole land of Judaea, the judgement of God might at last overtake them for all their crimes against the Christ and his Apostles, and all that generation of the wicked be utterly blotted out from among men. Those who wish can retrace accurately from the history written by Josephus how many evils at that time overwhelmed the whole nation in every place and especially how the inhabitants of Judaea were driven to the last point of suffering, how many thousands of youths, women, and children perished by the sword, by famine, and by countless other forms of death; they can read how many and what famous Jewish cities were besieged, and finally how terrors and worse than terrors were seen by those who fled to Jerusalem as if to a mighty capital; they can study the nature of the whole war, all the details of what happened in it, and how at the end the abomination of desolation spoken of by the prophets was set up in the very temple of God, for all its ancient fame, and it perished utterly and passed away in flames. But it is necessary to point out how the same writer estimates at three millions the

Digitized by Google

τοῦ πάσχα ἑορτῆς ὥσπερ ἐν εἱρκτῇ ῥήμασιν αὐτοῖς ἀποκλεισθῆναι εἰς τὰ Ἱεροσόλυμα ἀμφὶ τριακοσίας μυριάδας τὸ πλῆθος ἱστορεῖ, ἀναγκαῖον ὑποσημήνασθαι. χρὴν δ' οὖν ἐν αἷς ἡμέραις 6
τὸν πάντων σωτῆρα καὶ εὐεργέτην Χριστόν τε τοῦ θεοῦ τὰ κατὰ τὸ πάθος διατέθεινται, ταῖς αὐταῖς ὥσπερ ἐν εἱρκτῇ κατακλεισθέντας τὸν μετελθόντα αὐτοὺς ὄλεθρον πρὸς τῆς θείας δίκης καταδέξασθαι.

Παρελθὼν δὴ τὰ τῶν ἐν μέρει συμβεβηκότων 7
αὐτοῖς ὅσα διὰ ξίφους καὶ ἄλλῳ τρόπῳ κατ' αὐτῶν ἐγκεχείρηται, μόνας τὰς διὰ τοῦ λιμοῦ ἀναγκαῖον ἡγοῦμαι συμφορὰς παραθέσθαι, ὡς ἂν ἐκ μέρους ἔχοιεν οἱ τῇδε τῇ γραφῇ ἐντυγχάνοντες εἰδέναι ὅπως αὐτοὺς τῆς εἰς τὸν Χριστὸν τοῦ θεοῦ παρανομίας οὐκ εἰς μακρὸν ἡ ἐκ θεοῦ μετῆλθεν τιμωρία. VI. φέρε δὴ οὖν, τῶν Ἰστο- 1
ριῶν τὴν πέμπτην τοῦ Ἰωσήπου μετὰ χεῖρας αὖθις ἀναλαβών, τῶν τότε πραχθέντων δίελθε
Joseph. *B.I.* 5, 424–438 τὴν τραγῳδίαν· "τοῖς γε μὴν εὐπόροις" φησί "καὶ τὸ μένειν πρὸς ἀπωλείας ἴσον ἦν· προφάσει γὰρ αὐτομολίας ἀνῃρεῖτό τις διὰ τὴν οὐσίαν. τῷ λιμῷ δ' ἡ ἀπόνοια τῶν στασιαστῶν συνήκμαζεν, καὶ καθ' ἡμέραν ἀμφότερα προσεξεκάετο τὰ δεινά. φανερὸς μέν γε οὐδαμοῦ σῖτος ἦν, ἐπ- 2
εισπηδῶντες δὲ διηρεύνων τὰς οἰκίας, ἔπειθ' εὑρόντες μὲν ὡς ἀρνησαμένους ᾐκίζοντο, μὴ εὑρόντες δὲ ὡς ἐπιμελέστερον κρύψαντας ἐβασάνιζον. τεκμήριον δὲ τοῦ τ' ἔχειν καὶ μή, τὰ σώματα τῶν ἀθλίων· ὧν οἱ μὲν ἔτι συνεστῶτες εὐπορεῖν τροφῆς ἐδόκουν, οἱ τηκόμενοι δὲ ἤδη παρωδεύοντο, καὶ κτείνειν ἄλογον ἐδόκει τοὺς ὑπ' ἐνδείας

Digitized by Google

number of those who in the days of the Feast of the Passover thronged Jerusalem from all Judaea and, to use his own words, were shut up as if in prison. It was indeed right that on the same day on which they had perpetrated the passion of the Saviour and benefactor of all men and the Christ of God they should be, as it were, shut up in prison and receive the destruction which pursued them from the sentence of God.

Omitting then the details of their misfortunes from the sword and otherwise, I think it necessary to adduce only their sufferings from famine in order that those who study this work may have some partial knowledge of how the punishment of God followed close after them for their crime against the Christ of God. VI. Come, then, take up again the fifth book of the history of Josephus and go through the tragedy of what was then done. "For the rich," he says, "to remain was equal to destruction, since for the sake of their property they were murdered on the charge of intended desertion. But the madness of the rebels grew with the famine, and the terror of both blazed more fiercely day by day. No corn was visible anywhere, but they burst into houses and searched them. Then, if they found any, they tormented the inmates for their denying; if not, they tortured them for having hidden it too carefully. The bodies of the miserable creatures were evidence whether they had it or not. Those who were still in health seemed to be provided with food, while those who were already wasted away were passed by, and it seemed unreasonable to kill

Digitized by Google

τεθνηξομένους αὐτίκα. πολλοὶ δὲ λάθρα τὰς 3
κτήσεις ἑνὸς ἀντικατηλλάξαντο μέτρου, πυρῶν
μέν, εἰ πλουσιώτεροι τυγχάνοιεν ὄντες, οἱ δὲ
πενέστεροι κριθῆς· ἔπειτα κατακλείοντες ἑαυτοὺς
εἰς τὰ μυχαίτατα τῶν οἰκιῶν, τινὲς μὲν ὑπ' ἄκρας
ἐνδείας ἀνέργαστον τὸν σῖτον ἤσθιον, οἳ δ' ἔπεσσον
ὡς ἤ τε ἀνάγκη καὶ τὸ δέος παρῄνει, καὶ τράπεζα 4
μὲν οὐδαμοῦ παρετίθετο, τοῦ δὲ πυρὸς ὑφέλκοντες
ἔτ' ὠμὰ τὰ σιτία διήρπαζον. ἐλεεινὴ δ' ἦν ἡ
τροφὴ καὶ δακρύων ἄξιος ἡ θέα, τῶν μὲν δυνα-
τωτέρων πλεονεκτούντων, τῶν δὲ ἀσθενῶν ὀδυ-
ρομένων. πάντων μὲν δὴ παθῶν ὑπερίσταται 5
λιμός, οὐδὲν δ' οὕτως ἀπόλλυσιν ὡς αἰδῶ[1]· τὸ
γὰρ ἄλλως ἐντροπῆς ἄξιον ἐν τούτῳ καταφρο-
νεῖται. γυναῖκες γοῦν ἀνδρῶν καὶ παῖδες πατέ-
ρων καί, τὸ οἰκτρότατον, μητέρες νηπίων ἐξ-
ήρπαζον ἐξ αὐτῶν τῶν στομάτων τὰς τροφάς,
καὶ τῶν φιλτάτων ἐν χερσὶ μαραινομένων οὐκ
ἦν φειδὼ τοὺς τοῦ ζῆν ἀφελέσθαι σταλαγμούς.
τοιαῦτα δ' ἐσθίοντες, ὅμως οὐ διελάνθανον, παντα- 6
χοῦ δ' ἐφίσταντο οἱ στασιασταὶ καὶ τούτων ταῖς
ἁρπαγαῖς. ὁπότε γὰρ κατίδοιεν ἀποκεκλεισμένην
οἰκίαν, σημεῖον ἦν τοῦτο τοῦ ἐδεσθαι προσφέρεσθαι
τροφήν, εὐθέως δ' ἐξαράξαντες τὰς θύρας εἰσ-
επήδων, καὶ μόνον οὐκ ἐκ τῶν φαρύγγων ἀνα-
θλίβοντες τὰς ἀκόλους ἀνέφερον. ἐτύπτοντο δὲ 7
γέροντες ἀντεχόμενοι τῶν σιτίων, καὶ κόμης
ἐσπαράσσοντο γυναῖκες συγκαλύπτουσαι τὰ ἐν
χερσίν, οὐδέ τις ἦν οἶκτος πολιᾶς ἢ νηπίων,
ἀλλὰ συνεπαίροντες τὰ παιδία τῶν ψωμῶν ἐκ-
κρεμάμενα κατέσειον εἰς ἔδαφος. τοῖς δὲ φθάσασι

[1] The mss. read *αἰδώς*, but *αἰδῶ* is necessary to the sense.

Digitized by Google

those who would soon die of need. Many secretly exchanged their property for a single measure of wheat, if they were richer, of barley, if they were poorer. Then, shutting themselves up in the inmost recesses of their houses, some, in the extremity of their want, would eat the grain unprepared, others would cook it as necessity and fear dictated. No table was set anywhere, but snatching it from the fire they tore in pieces the still uncooked food. Their living was pitiable, and their appearance worthy of tears; the strong plundered and the weak wailed. Famine truly surpasses all sufferings, but it destroys nothing so much as shame [1]; for what is at other times worthy of respect is despised in famine; women took the food from the very mouths of their husbands, children from their fathers, and, most piteous of all, mothers from their children, and while their dearest were wasting away before them there was no scruple in taking away the last drop of life. Yet they did not escape detection when they thus ate, but everywhere the rioters arose to rob them even of this; for whenever they saw a house shut up it was a sign that those within had obtained food and at once they tore down the doors, rushed in, and seized the morsels, almost squeezing them out of their throats. Old men were beaten for withholding food, and women were dragged by the hair for concealing it in their hands. There was no pity for grey-headed age or for little children, but they picked up babies clinging to crusts and dashed them on the floor.

[1] The Greek means rather more than this: it is almost a "sense of decency."

Digitized by Google

τὴν εἰσδρομὴν αὐτῶν καὶ προκαταπιοῦσιν τὸ ἁρπαγησόμενον ὡς ἀδικηθέντες ἦσαν ὠμότεροι, δεινὰς δὲ βασάνων ὁδοὺς ἐπενόουν πρὸς ἔρευναν 8 τροφῆς, ὀρόβοις μὲν ἐμφράττοντες τοῖς ἀθλίοις τοὺς τῶν αἰδοίων πόρους, ῥάβδοις δ' ὀξείαις ἀναπείροντες τὰς ἕδρας· τὰ φρικτὰ δὲ καὶ ἀκοαῖς ἔπασχέ τις εἰς ἐξομολόγησιν ἑνὸς ἄρτου καὶ ἵνα μηνύσῃ δράκα μίαν κεκρυμμένων ἀλφίτων. οἱ βασανισταὶ δ' οὐδ' ἐπείνων (καὶ γὰρ ἧττον 9 ἂν ὠμὸν ἦν τὸ μετὰ ἀνάγκης), γυμνάζοντες δὲ τὴν ἀπόνοιαν καὶ προπαρασκευάζοντες ἑαυτοῖς εἰς τὰς ἑξῆς ἡμέρας ἐφόδια. τοῖς δ' ἐπὶ τὴν 10 Ῥωμαίων φρουρὰν νύκτωρ ἐξερπύσασιν ἐπὶ λαχάνων συλλογὴν ἀγρίων καὶ πόας ὑπαντῶντες, ὅτ' ἤδη διαπεφευγέναι τοὺς πολεμίους ἐδόκουν, ἀφήρπαζον τὰ κομισθέντα, καὶ πολλάκις ἱκετευόντων καὶ τὸ φρικτότατον ἐπικαλουμένων ὄνομα τοῦ θεοῦ μεταδοῦναί τι μέρος αὐτοῖς ὧν κινδυνεύσαντες ἤνεγκαν, οὐδ' ὁτιοῦν μετέδοσαν, ἀγαπητὸν δ' ἦν τὸ μὴ καὶ προσαπολέσθαι σεσυλημένον."

Joseph. *B.I.* 5, 512–519

Τούτοις μεθ' ἕτερα ἐπιφέρει λέγων· "Ἰουδαίοις 11 δὲ μετὰ τῶν ἐξόδων ἀπεκόπη πᾶσα σωτηρίας ἐλπίς, καὶ βαθύνας ἑαυτὸν ὁ λιμὸς κατ' οἴκους καὶ γενεὰς τὸν δῆμον ἐπεβόσκετο, καὶ τὰ μὲν τέγη πεπλήρωτο γυναικῶν καὶ βρεφῶν λελυμένων, οἱ στενωποὶ δὲ γερόντων νεκρῶν, παῖδες 12 δὲ καὶ νεανίαι διοιδοῦντες ὥσπερ εἴδωλα κατὰ τὰς ἀγορὰς ἀνειλοῦντο καὶ κατέπιπτον ὅπῃ τινὰ τὸ πάθος καταλαμβάνοι. θάπτειν δὲ τοὺς προσήκοντας οὔτε ἴσχυον οἱ κάμνοντες καὶ τὸ διευ-

[1] The MSS. read "swelling up," which is characteristic of

Digitized by Google

To those who had anticipated their entry, and had gulped down their expected prey, they were the more cruel, as though they had been injured by them. For the discovery of food they sought for terrible methods of torture, sewing up their victims and impaling them on sharp stakes. Men suffered things terrible even to hear to secure the confession of a single loaf, and to disclose a single pint of hidden barley. But the torturers suffered no hunger (and indeed their cruelty would have been less had it been from necessity) but there was method in their madness and they provided sustenance for themselves for days to come. When some crept out by night as far as the Roman lines to gather wild herbs and grass, they intercepted them when they thought that they had at last escaped the enemy, plundered them of what they were carrying, and for all their many entreaties and invocations of the awful name of God to give them some share of what they had brought at their own risk, they gave them nothing whatever, and he who was robbed was lucky not to be murdered too."

After some other details he continues: "Now when all hope of safety was cut off from the Jews by the closing of the exits from the city and famine deepening from house to house and family to family was eating up the people, the rooms were filled with dead women and children and the alley-ways with the corpses of old men. Boys and young men, wandering[1] like ghosts through the market-place, were seized by death and lay each where the blow had stricken him. The sick had no strength to bury

[1] sufferers from famine, not of ghosts (and the text seems corrupt). Or it may be "swollen yet ghost-like"?

Digitized by Google

τονοῦν ὤκνει διά τε τὸ πλῆθος τῶν νεκρῶν καὶ τὸ κατὰ σφᾶς ἄδηλον· πολλοὶ γοῦν τοῖς ὑπ' αὐτῶν θαπτομένοις ἐπαπέθνῃσκον, πολλοὶ δ' ἐπὶ τὰς θήκας, πρὶν ἐπιστῆναι τὸ χρεών, προῆλθον. οὔτε δὲ θρῆνος ἐν ταῖς συμφοραῖς οὔτε ὀλο- 13
φυρμὸς ἦν, ἀλλ' ὁ λιμὸς ἤλεγχε τὰ πάθη, ξηροῖς δὲ τοῖς ὄμμασιν οἱ δυσθανατοῦντες ἐθεώρουν τοὺς φθάσαντας ἀναπαύσασθαι, βαθεῖα δὲ τὴν πόλιν περιεῖχεν σιγὴ καὶ νὺξ θανάτου γέμουσα. καὶ 14
τούτων οἱ λῃσταὶ χαλεπώτεροι. τυμβωρυχοῦντες γοῦν τὰς οἰκίας, ἐσύλων τοὺς νεκρούς, καὶ τὰ καλύμματα τῶν σωμάτων περισπῶντες, μετὰ γέλωτος ἐξῄεσαν, τάς τε ἀκμὰς τῶν ξιφῶν ἐδοκίμαζον ἐν τοῖς πτώμασιν, καί τινας τῶν ἐρριμμένων ἔτι ζῶντας διήλαυνον ἐπὶ πείρᾳ τοῦ σιδήρου, τοὺς δ' ἱκετεύοντας χρῆσαι σφίσιν δεξιὰν καὶ ξίφος, τῷ λιμῷ κατέλιπον ὑπερηφανοῦντες, καὶ τῶν ἐκπνεόντων ἕκαστος ἀτενὲς εἰς τὸν ναὸν ἀφεώρα, τοὺς στασιαστὰς ζῶντας ἀπολιπών. οἱ 15
δὲ τὸ μὲν πρῶτον ἐκ τοῦ δημοσίου θησαυροῦ τοὺς νεκροὺς θάπτειν ἐκέλευον, τὴν ὀσμὴν οὐ φέροντες· ἔπειθ' ὡς οὐ διήρκουν, ἀπὸ τῶν τειχῶν ἐρρίπτουν εἰς τὰς φάραγγας. περιιὼν δὲ ταύτας ὁ Τίτος ὡς ἐθεάσατο πεπλησμένας τῶν νεκρῶν καὶ βαθὺν ἰχῶρα μυδώντων τὸν ὑπορρέοντα τῶν σωμάτων, ἐστέναξέν τε καὶ τὰς χεῖρας ἀνατείνας κατεμαρτύρατο τὸν θεόν, ὡς οὐκ εἴη τὸ ἔργον αὐτοῦ."

Joseph. *B.I.* 5, 566

Τούτοις ἐπειπών τινα μεταξὺ ἐπιφέρει λέγων· 16
"οὐκ ἂν ὑποστειλαίμην εἰπεῖν ἃ μοι κελεύει τὸ πάθος· οἶμαι Ῥωμαίων βραδυνάντων ἐπὶ τοὺς ἀλιτηρίους, ἢ καταποθῆναι ἂν ὑπὸ χάσματος ἢ κατακλυσθῆναι τὴν πόλιν ἢ τοὺς τῆς Σοδομηνῆς

Digitized by Google

their families and the strong hesitated for the number of the dead and their own doubtful fate. Many indeed fell in death on those whom they were burying and many went to their graves before the necessity arose. There was no lamentation or wailing at losses, but famine overcame emotion and those who were dying in misery looked with dry eyes on those who had found rest before them. Deep silence and night pregnant with death encompassed the city. Worse than these were the robbers. Breaking into houses like body-snatchers they robbed the dead, tearing the garments from their bodies, and went out with laughter. They tried the edge of their swords on the corpses, and to prove the steel ran through some of the fallen who were still alive, but those who begged for the kindliness of a mortal blow they left in contempt to the famine. These all died with eyes fixed on the temple and left the rebels to life. At first orders were given to bury the dead at the public expense because of the unbearable stench ; then afterwards when this was impracticable they were thrown from the walls into the trenches. When Titus, going round the trenches, saw them full of the dead and the thick gore oozing from the rotting bodies, he groaned, and raising his hands called God to witness that this was not his doing."

After a little more he goes on : " I cannot refrain from stating what emotion bids me. I think that had the Romans delayed their attack on the scoundrels the city would have been engulfed by the earth opening or overwhelmed by a flood or shared the

Digitized by Google

μεταλαβεῖν κεραυνούς· πολὺ γὰρ τῶν ταῦτα παθόντων ἤνεγκεν γενεὰν ἀθεωτέραν· τῇ γοῦν τούτων ἀπονοίᾳ πᾶς ὁ λαὸς συναπώλετο."

Joseph. *B.I.* 6, 193–213

Καὶ ἐν τῷ ἕκτῳ δὲ βιβλίῳ οὕτως γράφει. "τῶν 17 δ' ὑπὸ τοῦ λιμοῦ φθειρομένων κατὰ τὴν πόλιν ἄπειρον μὲν ἔπιπτε τὸ πλῆθος, ἀδιήγητα δὲ συνέβαινεν τὰ πάθη. καθ' ἑκάστην γὰρ οἰκίαν, εἴ που τροφῆς παραφανείη σκιά, πόλεμος ἦν, καὶ διὰ χειρῶν ἐχώρουν οἱ φίλτατοι πρὸς ἀλλήλους, ἐξαρπάζοντες τὰ ταλαίπωρα τῆς ψυχῆς ἐφόδια, πίστις δ' ἀπορίας οὐδὲ τοῖς θνῄσκουσιν ἦν, ἀλλὰ 18 καὶ τοὺς ἐμπνέοντας οἱ λῃσταὶ διηρεύνων, μή τις ὑπὸ κόλπον ἔχων τροφήν, σκήπτοιτο τὸν θάνατον αὐτῷ. οἱ δ' ὑπ' ἐνδείας κεχηνότες ὥσπερ λυσσῶντες κύνες ἐσφάλλοντο καὶ παρεφέροντο ταῖς τε θύραις ἐνσειόμενοι μεθυόντων τρόπον καὶ ὑπ' ἀμηχανίας τοὺς αὐτοὺς οἴκους εἰσεπήδων δὶς ἢ τρὶς ὥρᾳ μιᾷ. πάντα δ' ὑπ' ὀδόντας ἦγεν ἡ 19 ἀνάγκη, καὶ τὰ μηδὲ τοῖς ῥυπαρωτάτοις τῶν ἀλόγων ζῴων πρόσφορα συλλέγοντες ἐσθίειν ὑπέφερον. ζωστήρων γοῦν καὶ ὑποδημάτων τὸ τελευταῖον οὐκ ἀπέσχοντο καὶ τὰ δέρματα τῶν θυρεῶν ἀποδέροντες ἐμασῶντο, τροφὴ δ' ἦν καὶ χόρτου τισὶν παλαιοῦ σπαράγματα· τὰς γὰρ ἴνας ἔνιοι συλλέγοντες, ἐλάχιστον σταθμὸν ἐπώλουν Ἀττικῶν τεσσάρων.

"Καὶ τί δεῖ τὴν ἐπ' ἀψύχοις ἀναίδειαν τοῦ λιμοῦ 20 λέγειν; εἶμι γὰρ αὐτοῦ δηλώσων ἔργον ὁποῖον μήτε παρ' Ἕλλησιν μήτε παρὰ βαρβάροις ἱστόρηται, φρικτὸν μὲν εἰπεῖν, ἄπιστον δ' ἀκοῦσαι. καὶ ἔγωγε, μὴ δόξαιμι τερατεύεσθαι τοῖς αὖθις ἀνθρώποις, κἂν παρέλιπον τὴν συμφορὰν ἡδέως,

Digitized by Google

thunderbolts of Sodom, for it had brought forth a generation far more ungodly than those who thus suffered. It was by their madness that the whole people perished."

In the sixth book he writes thus: "Of those who perished in the city from the famine the number which fell was countless and their sufferings indescribable. For in each house if there appeared the very shadow of food there was fighting, and the dearest friends wrestled together for it, snatching the miserable sustenance of life. Nor were even the dying believed to be destitute, but while they were still breathing the robbers searched them, lest any should feign death while having food on his person. Others, gaping from lack of food, stumbled and hurried along like mad dogs, beating at the doors like drunken men, and rushing two or three times in a single hour into the same houses from sheer incompetence. Necessity brought all things to men's teeth and they endured eating a collection of scraps unfit for the filthiest of brute beasts. At the last they abstained not even from belts and shoes and gnawed the hides stripped off their shields. Some fed on wisps of old straw, others collected stubble and sold a tiny portion for four Attic drachmae.[1]

"But what need is there to speak of the shamelessness of the famine towards inanimate things? I purpose to relate a consequence of it such as has been narrated neither by the Greeks nor by the barbarians, horrible to tell, incredible to hear. I myself would have gladly omitted the tragedy to avoid

[1] About half a crown or sixty cents.

Digitized by Google

εἰ μὴ τῶν κατ' ἐμαυτὸν εἶχον ἀπείρους μάρτυρας· ἄλλως τε καὶ ψυχρὰν ἂν καταθείμην τῇ πατρίδι χάριν, καθυφέμενος τὸν λόγον ὧν πέπονθε τὰ ἔργα. γυνὴ τῶν ὑπὲρ Ἰορδάνην κατοικούντων, 21
Μαρία τοὔνομα, πατρὸς Ἐλεαζάρου, κώμης Βαθεζώρ (σημαίνει δὲ τοῦτο οἶκος ὑσσώπου), διὰ γένος καὶ πλοῦτον ἐπίσημος, μετὰ τοῦ λοιποῦ πλήθους εἰς τὰ Ἱεροσόλυμα καταφυγοῦσα συνεπολιορκεῖτο. ταύτης τὴν μὲν ἄλλην κτῆσιν οἱ 22
τύραννοι διήρπασαν, ὅσην ἐκ τῆς Περαίας ἀνασκευασαμένη μετήνεγκεν εἰς τὴν πόλιν, τὰ δὲ λείψανα τῶν κειμηλίων καὶ[1] εἴ τι τροφῆς ἐπινοηθείη καθ' ἡμέραν εἰσπηδῶντες ἥρπαζον οἱ δορυφόροι. δεινὴ δὲ τὸ γύναιον ἀγανάκτησις εἰσῄει, καὶ πολλάκις λοιδοροῦσα καὶ καταρωμένη τοὺς ἅρπαγας ἐφ' ἑαυτὴν ἠρέθιζεν. ὡς δ' οὔτε παρ- 23
οξυνόμενός τις οὔτ' ἐλεῶν αὐτὴν ἀνῄρει καὶ τὸ μὲν εὑρεῖν τι σιτίον ἄλλοις ἐκοπία, πανταχόθεν δ' ἄπορον ἦν ἤδη καὶ τὸ εὑρεῖν, ὁ λιμὸς δὲ διὰ σπλάγχνων καὶ μυελῶν ἐχώρει καὶ τοῦ λιμοῦ μᾶλλον ἐξέκαιον οἱ θυμοί, σύμβουλον λαβοῦσα τὴν ὀργὴν μετὰ τῆς ἀνάγκης, ἐπὶ τὴν φύσιν ἐχώρει, καὶ τὸ τέκνον, ἦν δ' αὐτῇ παῖς ὑπομάστιος, ἁρπασαμένη, 'βρέφος,' εἶπεν, 'ἄθλιον, ἐν πολέμῳ καὶ 24
λιμῷ καὶ στάσει, τίνι σε τηρῶ; τὰ μὲν παρὰ Ῥωμαίοις δουλεία κἂν ζήσωμεν ἐπ' αὐτούς, φθάνει δὲ καὶ δουλείαν ὁ λιμός, οἱ στασιασταὶ δὲ ἀμφοτέρων χαλεπώτεροι. ἴθι, γενοῦ μοι τροφὴ καὶ τοῖς στασιασταῖς ἐρινὺς καὶ τῷ βίῳ μῦθος, ὁ μόνος ἐλλείπων ταῖς Ἰουδαίων συμφοραῖς.' καὶ ταῦθ' ἅμα λέγουσα κτείνει τὸν υἱόν, ἔπειτ' 25
ὀπτήσασα, τὸ μὲν ἥμισυ κατεσθίει, τὸ δὲ λοιπὸν

Digitized by Google

appearing to posterity to fabricate legend had I not had countless witnesses to it in my own generation. Certainly I should render cold comfort to my country were I to compromise the account of her sufferings. There was a woman among those who lived beyond Jordan named Mary whose father was Eliezer of the village Bathezor (which means "House of Hyssop"). She was famous for her family and wealth, and having fled with the rest of the population to Jerusalem was caught in the siege. The tyrants seized all her other possessions which she had brought from Peraea and carried into the city, and the guards rushed in daily and seized the remnants of her property and any food which they perceived. Fierce indignation seized the woman and by her frequent abuses and curses she tried to irritate the robbers against herself. But when no one killed her either in anger or pity and she wearied of finding food for others, and indeed it was now impossible to do so anywhere, famine entered into her heart and marrow, and rage burnt more fiercely than famine. Anger and necessity were her councillors: she turned against nature and seized her child, a boy whom she was suckling. 'Miserable infant,' she said, 'amid war, famine, and rebellion for what[1] am I keeping you? Slavery among the Romans faces us if they give us our lives; famine is overtaking slavery; the rebels are worse than both. Come, be food for me, an avenging fury to the rebels, and the one story still lacking to the sufferings of the Jews to be told to the world.' With these words she killed her son, and then cooked him, ate half, and covered

[1] Or possibly "for whom."

[1] ἀᾧ in most MSS. and in Josephus, but it seems impossible.

Digitized by Google

κατακαλύψασα ἐφύλαττεν. εὐθέως δ' οἱ στασιασταὶ παρῆσαν καὶ τῆς ἀθεμίτου κνίσης σπάσαντες, ἠπείλουν, εἰ μὴ δείξειεν τὸ παρασκευασθέν, ἀποσφάξειν αὐτὴν εὐθέως· ἣ δὲ καὶ μοῖραν αὐτοῖς εἰποῦσα καλὴν τετηρηκέναι, τὰ λείψανα τοῦ τέκνου διεκάλυψεν. τοὺς δ' εὐθέως φρίκη καὶ 26
φρενῶν ἔκστασις ἦρει, καὶ παρὰ τὴν ὄψιν ἐπεπήγεσαν. ἣ δ', 'ἐμόν,' ἔφη, 'τοῦτο τὸ τέκνον γνήσιον, καὶ τὸ ἔργον ἐμόν. φάγετε, καὶ γὰρ ἐγὼ βέβρωκα· μὴ γένησθε μήτε μαλακώτεροι γυναικὸς μήτε συμπαθέστεροι μητρός. εἰ δ' ὑμεῖς εὐσεβεῖς καὶ τὴν ἐμὴν ἀποστρέφεσθε θυσίαν, ἐγὼ μὲν ὑμῖν βέβρωκα, καὶ τὸ λοιπὸν δ' ἐμοὶ μεινάτω.' μετὰ ταῦθ' οἱ μὲν τρέμοντες ἐξῄεσαν, 27
πρὸς ἓν τοῦτο δειλοὶ καὶ μόλις ταύτης τῆς τροφῆς τῇ μητρὶ παραχωρήσαντες, ἀνεπλήσθη δ' εὐθέως ὅλη τοῦ μύσους ἡ πόλις, καὶ πρὸ ὀμμάτων ἕκαστος τὸ πάθος λαμβάνων ὡς παρ' αὐτῷ τολμηθέν, ἔφριττεν. σπουδὴ δὲ τῶν λιμωττόντων ἐπὶ τὸν 28
θάνατον ἦν καὶ μακαρισμὸς τῶν φθασάντων πρὶν ἀκοῦσαι καὶ θεάσασθαι κακὰ τηλικαῦτα."

VII. Τοιαῦτα τῆς Ἰουδαίων εἰς τὸν Χριστὸν 1
τοῦ θεοῦ παρανομίας τε καὶ δυσσεβείας τἀπίχειρα, παραθεῖναι δ' αὐτοῖς ἄξιον καὶ τὴν ἀψευδῆ τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν πρόρρησιν, δι' ἧς αὐτὰ ταῦτα
Matt. 24, 19–21 δηλοῖ ὧδέ πως προφητεύων "οὐαὶ δὲ ταῖς ἐν γαστρὶ ἐχούσαις καὶ ταῖς θηλαζούσαις ἐν ἐκείναις ταῖς ἡμέραις· προσεύχεσθε δὲ ἵνα μὴ γένηται ὑμῶν ἡ φυγὴ χειμῶνος μηδὲ σαββάτῳ. ἔσται γὰρ τότε θλῖψις μεγάλη, οἵα οὐκ ἐγένετο ἀπ'
Joseph. *B.I.* 6, 420. 417. 418. 420, 435 ἀρχῆς κόσμου ἕως τοῦ νῦν, οὐδὲ μὴ γένηται." συναγαγὼν δὲ πάντα τὸν τῶν ἀνῃρημένων ἀριθμὸν 2

Digitized by Google

up and kept the rest. At that moment the rebels came and smelling the horrible savour, threatened to kill her at once if they were not given what she had made ready. She told them that she had kept a good helping for them and uncovered the remains of the child. As for them, horror and amazement seized them at once, and they stood transfixed at the sight, but she said, 'This was my own child and the deed is mine. Eat, for I myself have eaten. Do not be more squeamish than a woman, or compassionate than a mother. But if you have scruples, and turn away from my sacrifice, what I have eaten was your share, let the rest remain for me.' At this they went out trembling, for only this made them cowards, and they scarcely yielded even this food to the mother; but the whole city was at once filled with the horror, and each, holding the tragedy before his eyes, shuddered as if it had been his own crime. And the sufferers from the famine sought for death and pronounced those blessed whom it had reached before they heard or saw such awful evils."

VII. Such was the reward of the iniquity of the Jews and of their impiety against the Christ of God, but it is worth appending to it the infallible forecast of our Saviour in which he prophetically expounded these very things,—"Woe unto them that are with child and give suck in those days, but pray that your flight be not in the winter nor on a Sabbath day, for there shall then be great affliction such as was not from the beginning of the world until now, nor shall be." And the historian, estimating the whole number

Digitized by Google

ὁ συγγραφεὺς λιμῷ καὶ ξίφει μυριάδας ἑκατὸν καὶ δέκα διαφθαρῆναί φησιν, τοὺς δὲ λοιποὺς στασιώδεις καὶ λῃστρικούς, ὑπ' ἀλλήλων μετὰ τὴν ἅλωσιν ἐνδεικνυμένους, ἀνῃρῆσθαι, τῶν δὲ νέων τοὺς ὑψηλοτάτους καὶ κάλλει σώματος διαφέροντας τετηρῆσθαι θριάμβῳ, τοῦ δὲ λοιποῦ πλήθους τοὺς ὑπὲρ ἑπτακαίδεκα ἔτη δεσμίους εἰς τὰ κατ' Αἴγυπτον ἔργα παραπεμφθῆναι, πλείους δὲ εἰς τὰς ἐπαρχίας διανενεμῆσθαι φθαρησομένους ἐν τοῖς θεάτροις σιδήρῳ καὶ θηρίοις, τοὺς δ' ἐντὸς ἑπτακαίδεκα ἐτῶν αἰχμαλώτους ἀχθέντας διαπεπρᾶσθαι, τούτων δὲ μόνων τὸν ἀριθμὸν εἰς ἐννέα μυριάδας ἀνδρῶν συναχθῆναι.

Ταῦτα δὲ τοῦτον ἐπράχθη τὸν τρόπον δευτέρῳ 3
τῆς Οὐεσπασιανοῦ βασιλείας ἔτει ἀκολούθως ταῖς προγνωστικαῖς τοῦ κυρίου καὶ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ προρρήσεσιν, θείᾳ δυνάμει ὥσπερ ἤδη παρόντα προεορακότος αὐτὰ ἐπιδακρύσαντός τε καὶ ἀποκλαυσαμένου κατὰ τὴν τῶν ἱερῶν εὐαγγελιστῶν γραφήν, οἳ καὶ αὐτὰς αὐτοῦ παρατέθεινται τὰς λέξεις, τοτὲ μὲν φήσαντος ὡς πρὸς
Luke 19, 42–44 αὐτὴν τὴν Ἱερουσαλήμ "εἰ ἔγνως καί γε σὺ ἐν τῇ 4
ἡμέρᾳ ταύτῃ τὰ πρὸς εἰρήνην σου· νῦν δὲ ἐκρύβη ἀπὸ ὀφθαλμῶν σου· ὅτι ἥξουσιν ἡμέραι ἐπὶ σέ, καὶ περιβαλοῦσίν σοι οἱ ἐχθροί σου χάρακα, καὶ περικυκλώσουσίν σε, καὶ συνέξουσίν σε πάντοθεν, καὶ ἐδαφιοῦσίν σε καὶ τὰ τέκνα σου," τοτὲ δὲ 5
Luke 21, 23–24 ὡς περὶ τοῦ λαοῦ "ἔσται γὰρ ἀνάγκη μεγάλη ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς, καὶ ὀργὴ τῷ λαῷ τούτῳ· καὶ πεσοῦνται ἐν στόματι μαχαίρας καὶ αἰχμαλωτισθήσονται εἰς πάντα τὰ ἔθνη· καὶ Ἱερουσαλὴμ ἔσται πατουμένη ὑπὸ ἐθνῶν, ἄχρις οὗ πληρωθῶσιν καιροὶ

Digitized by Google

of those who were destroyed, says that 1,100,000 perished by famine and the sword, and that the rest of the rebels and bandits were pointed out by one another after the capture of the city and killed. The tallest of the youths, and those distinguished for physical beauty, were kept for a triumph, and of the remaining population those above seventeen years old were sent as prisoners to hard labour in Egypt, but more were distributed throughout the provinces to be destroyed in the theatres by the sword and by wild beasts. Those below seventeen years old were sold into slavery and these alone were 90,000.

These things happened in this way in the second year of the reign of Vespasian in accordance with the prophetic utterances of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, who foreseeing them by divine power as though already present, shed tears at them and mourned according to the writing of the sacred evangelist, who appends his actual words. For once he said to Jerusalem herself, " If thou hadst known, even thou, in this day the things which belong to thy peace: but now they are hid from thine eyes, for the days will come upon thee when thine enemy shall cast a trench around thee and compass thee round and keep thee in on every side, and shall lay thee and thy children even with the ground." And at another time, as if concerning the people, " For there shall be great distress on the earth and wrath upon this people, and they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and be sold into slavery to all the Gentiles, and Jerusalem shall be trodden down by the Gentiles until the times of the Gentiles

Digitized by Google

Luke 21, 20 ἐθνῶν." καὶ πάλιν "ὅταν δὲ ἴδητε κυκλουμένην ὑπὸ στρατοπέδων τὴν Ἱερουσαλήμ, τότε γνῶτε ὅτι ἤγγικεν ἡ ἐρήμωσις αὐτῆς." συγκρίνας δέ 6
τις τὰς τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν λέξεις ταῖς λοιπαῖς τοῦ συγγραφέως ἱστορίαις ταῖς περὶ τοῦ παντὸς πολέμου, πῶς οὐκ ἂν ἀποθαυμάσειεν, θείαν ὡς ἀληθῶς καὶ ὑπερφυῶς παράδοξον τὴν πρόγνωσιν ὁμοῦ καὶ πρόρρησιν τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν ὁμολογήσας;

Περὶ μὲν οὖν τῶν μετὰ τὸ σωτήριον πάθος καὶ 7
Luke 23, 18. τὰς φωνὰς ἐκείνας ἐν αἷς ἡ τῶν Ἰουδαίων πληθὺς
19 John 18, 40 τὸν μὲν λῃστὴν καὶ φονέα τοῦ θανάτου παρήτηται,
Acts 3, 14 τὸν δ' ἀρχηγὸν τῆς ζωῆς ἐξ αὐτῶν ἐκέτευσεν ἀρθῆναι, τῷ παντὶ συμβεβηκότων ἔθνει, οὐδὲν ἂν δέοι ταῖς ἱστορίαις ἐπιλέγειν, ταῦτα δ' ἂν εἴη δίκαιον ἐπιθεῖναι, ἃ γένοιτ' ἂν παραστατικὰ 8
φιλανθρωπίας τῆς παναγάθου προνοίας, τεσσαράκοντα ἐφ' ὅλοις ἔτεσιν μετὰ τὴν κατὰ τοῦ Χριστοῦ τόλμαν τὸν κατ' αὐτῶν ὄλεθρον ὑπερθεμένης, ἐν ὅσοις τῶν ἀποστόλων καὶ τῶν μαθητῶν πλείους Ἰάκωβός τε αὐτὸς ὁ τῇδε πρῶτος ἐπίσκοπος, τοῦ κυρίου χρηματίζων ἀδελφός, ἔτι τῷ βίῳ περιόντες καὶ ἐπ' αὐτῆς τῆς Ἱεροσολύμων πόλεως τὰς διατριβὰς ποιούμενοι, ἔρκος ὥσπερ ὀχυρώτατον παρέμενον τῷ τόπῳ, τῆς θείας ἐπισκοπῆς εἰς 9
ἔτι τότε μακροθυμούσης, εἰ ἄρα ποτὲ δυνηθεῖεν ἐφ' οἷς ἔδρασαν, μετανοήσαντες συγγνώμης καὶ σωτηρίας τυχεῖν, καὶ πρὸς τῇ τοσαύτῃ μακροθυμίᾳ παραδόξους θεοσημείας τῶν μελλόντων αὐτοῖς μὴ μετανοήσασι συμβήσεσθαι παρασχομένης· ἃ καὶ αὐτὰ μνήμης ἠξιωμένα πρὸς τοῦ δεδηλωμένου συγγραφέως οὐδὲν οἷον τοῖς τῇδε προσιοῦσιν τῇ γραφῇ παραθεῖναι.

Digitized by Google

be fulfilled." And again, "And when ye see Jerusalem surrounded by armies then know that her desolation is at hand." If anyone compare the words of our Saviour with the other narratives of the historian concerning the whole war, how can he avoid surprise and a confession of the truly divine and supernaturally wonderful character both of the foreknowledge and of the foretelling of our Saviour?

There is no necessity to add to the narratives of what happened to the whole nation after the passion of the Saviour and those words in which the multitude of the Jews begged off from death the robber and murderer and besought that the author of Life should be taken from them; but it would be right to add a possible confirmation of the kindliness of beneficent Providence. For forty whole years it suspended their destruction, after their crime against the Christ, and during all of them many of the apostles and disciples, and James himself, who is called the Lord's brother, the first bishop of the city, still survived in this world. By their dwelling in Jerusalem, they afforded, as it were, a strong protection to the place; for the government of God had still patience, if haply they might at last by repenting of their deeds, be able to obtain pardon and salvation; and in addition to such great long-suffering it sent wonderful tokens from God of what would happen to them if they did not repent. These things have been thought worthy of mention by the historian already quoted, and there is nothing better than to append them for the readers of this work.

Digitized by Google

VIII. Καὶ δὴ λαβὼν ἀνάγνωθι τὰ κατὰ τὴν ἕκτην 1
τῶν Ἱστοριῶν αὐτῷ δεδηλωμένα ἐν τούτοις.

Joseph. *B.I.* 6, 288–304

"Τὸν γοῦν ἄθλιον δῆμον οἱ μὲν ἀπατεῶνες καὶ καταψευδόμενοι τοῦ θεοῦ τηνικαῦτα παρέπειθον, τοῖς δ' ἐναργέσι καὶ προσημαίνουσι τὴν μέλλουσαν ἐρημίαν τέρασιν οὔτε προσεῖχον οὔτ' ἐπίστευον, ἀλλ' ὡς ἐμβεβροντημένοι καὶ μήτε ὄμματα μήτε ψυχὴν ἔχοντες τῶν τοῦ θεοῦ κηρυγμάτων παρήκουον, τοῦτο μὲν ὅθ' ὑπὲρ τὴν 2
πόλιν ἄστρον ἕστη ῥομφαίᾳ παραπλήσιον καὶ παρατείνας ἐπ' ἐνιαυτὸν κομήτης, τοῦτο δ' ἡνίκα πρὸ τῆς ἀποστάσεως καὶ τοῦ πρὸς τὸν πόλεμον κινήματος, ἀθροιζομένου τοῦ λαοῦ πρὸς τὴν τῶν ἀζύμων ἑορτήν, ὀγδόῃ Ξανθικοῦ μηνὸς κατὰ νυκτὸς ἐνάτην ὥραν, τοσοῦτον φῶς περιέλαμψεν τὸν βωμὸν καὶ τὸν ναόν, ὡς δοκεῖν ἡμέραν εἶναι λαμπράν, καὶ τοῦτο παρέτεινεν ἐφ' ἡμίσειαν ὥραν· ὃ τοῖς μὲν ἀπείροις ἀγαθὸν ἐδόκει εἶναι, τοῖς δὲ ἱερογραμματεῦσι πρὸ τῶν ἀποβεβηκότων εὐθέως ἐκρίθη. καὶ κατὰ τὴν αὐτὴν ἑορτὴν 3
βοῦς μὲν ἀχθεῖσα ὑπὸ τοῦ ἀρχιερέως πρὸς τὴν θυσίαν ἔτεκεν ἄρνα ἐν τῷ ἱερῷ μέσῳ· ἡ δ' ἀνα- 4
τολικὴ πύλη τοῦ ἐνδοτέρω χαλκῆ μὲν οὖσα καὶ στιβαρωτάτη, κλειομένη δὲ περὶ δείλην μόλις ὑπ' ἀνθρώπων εἴκοσι, καὶ μοχλοῖς μὲν ἐπερειδομένη σιδηροδέτοις, καταπῆγας δ' ἔχουσα βαθυτάτους, ὤφθη κατὰ νυκτὸς ὥραν ἕκτην αὐτομάτως ἠνοιγμένη. μετὰ δὲ τὴν ἑορτὴν ἡμέραις 5
οὐ πολλαῖς ὕστερον, μιᾷ καὶ εἰκάδι Ἀρτεμισίου μηνός, φάσμα τι δαιμόνιον ὤφθη μεῖζον πίστεως, τέρας δ' ἂν ἔδοξεν εἶναι τὸ ῥηθησόμενον, εἰ μὴ καὶ παρὰ τοῖς θεασαμένοις ἱστόρητο καὶ τὰ

Digitized by Google

VIII. Take, then, and read what is related in the sixth book of the *Jewish War*. "Now at that time impostors and lying prophets perverted the miserable people, but they gave neither attention nor credence to the clear marvels which foretold approaching desolation, but as though they had been thunderstruck and had neither eyes nor soul, they neglected the declarations of God. At one time a star stood over the city like a sword, and a comet which lasted for a year. At another time, before the insurrection, and the disturbance which led to the war, when the people were assembled for the Feast of Unleavened Bread, on the eighth of April, at the ninth hour of the night, a light shone on the altar and on the temple so brightly that it seemed to be full day, and this lasted for half an hour. To the inexperienced this seemed a good sign, but was at once interpreted by the scribes before the events which actually followed. And at the same feast a cow, which had been led by the high-priest for the sacrifice, gave birth to a lamb in the middle of the temple. And the eastern gate of the inner building, which was of bronze and very massive and was closed at evening time with difficulty by twenty men, and rested on beams bound with iron and had bars sunk deep, was seen at night at the sixth hour to have opened of itself. And after the feast, not many days later, on the twenty-first of May, a demonic phantom appeared of incredible size, and what will be related would have seemed a fairy-tale had it not been told by those who saw it, and been attended by suffering

Digitized by Google

ἐπακολουθήσαντα πάθη τῶν σημείων ἦν ἄξια· πρὸ γὰρ ἡλίου δύσεως ὤφθη μετέωρα περὶ πᾶσαν τὴν χώραν ἅρματα καὶ φάλαγγες ἔνοπλοι διάττουσαι τῶν νεφῶν καὶ κυκλούμεναι τὰς πόλεις. κατὰ δὲ τὴν ἑορτήν, ἣ πεντηκοστὴ καλεῖται, 6 νύκτωρ οἱ ἱερεῖς παρελθόντες εἰς τὸ ἱερόν, ὥσπερ αὐτοῖς ἔθος ἦν, πρὸς τὰς λειτουργίας, πρῶτον μὲν κινήσεως ἔφασαν ἀντιλαμβάνεσθαι καὶ κτύπου, μετὰ δὲ ταῦτα φωνῆς ἀθρόας ‘μεταβαίνομεν ἐντεῦθεν.’[1] τὸ δὲ τούτων φοβερώτερον, Ἰησοῦς 7 γάρ τις ὄνομα, υἱὸς Ἀνανίου, τῶν ἰδιωτῶν, ἄγροικος, πρὸ τεσσάρων ἐτῶν τοῦ πολέμου, τὰ μάλιστα τῆς πόλεως εἰρηνευομένης καὶ εὐθηνούσης, ἐλθὼν ἐπὶ τὴν ἑορτήν, ἐπεὶ σκηνοποιεῖσθαι πάντας ἔθος ἦν τῷ θεῷ, κατὰ τὸ ἱερὸν ἐξαπίνης ἀναβοᾶν ἤρξατο ‘φωνὴ ἀπ’ ἀνατολῆς, φωνὴ ἀπὸ δύσεως, φωνὴ ἀπὸ τῶν τεσσάρων ἀνέμων, φωνὴ ἐπὶ Ἱεροσόλυμα καὶ τὸν ναόν, φωνὴ ἐπὶ νυμφίους καὶ νύμφας, φωνὴ ἐπὶ πάντα τὸν λαόν.’ τοῦτο μεθ’ ἡμέραν καὶ νύκτωρ κατὰ πάντας τοὺς στενωποὺς περιῄει κεκραγώς. τῶν δ’ ἐπισήμων 8 τινὲς δημοτῶν ἀγανακτήσαντες πρὸς τὸ κακόφημον, συλλαμβάνουσι τὸν ἄνθρωπον καὶ πολλαῖς αἰκίζονται πληγαῖς· ὃ δ’ οὔθ’ ὑπὲρ ἑαυτοῦ φθεγξάμενος οὔτε ἰδίᾳ πρὸς τοὺς παρόντας, ἃς καὶ πρότερον φωνὰς βοῶν διετέλει. νομίσαντες δ’ 9 οἱ ἄρχοντες, ὅπερ ἦν, δαιμονιώτερον εἶναι τὸ κίνημα τἀνδρός, ἀνάγουσιν αὐτὸν ἐπὶ τὸν παρὰ Ῥωμαίοις ἔπαρχον· ἔνθα μάστιξιν μέχρις ὀστέων ξαινόμενος οὔθ’ ἱκέτευσεν οὔτ’ ἐδάκρυσεν, ἀλλ’

[1] *Cf.* Eus. *Dem. evangel.* viii. 2. 121 and *Eccl. proph.* 164. 2–6.

Digitized by Google

worthy of the portent. For before sunset there appeared in the air over the whole country chariots and armed troops coursing through the clouds and surrounding the cities. And at the feast called Pentecost the priests passed into the temple at night, as was their custom, for their services, and said that they first perceived movement and noise and after that a sudden cry, 'We go hence.' But what was more terrible a man of the people named Jesus, the son of Ananias, a countryman, four years before the war, when the city was in complete peace and prosperity, came to the feast when it was the custom for all to make booths for God, and began suddenly to cry out opposite the temple, 'A voice from the east, a voice from the west, a voice from the four winds, a voice against Jerusalem and the temple, a voice against bridegrooms and brides, a voice against all the people.' With this cry night and day he passed through all the narrow streets. But some of the notables of the people were annoyed at the ill omen, seized the man and abused him with many stripes. But he uttered no word in his own behalf, nor in private to those present, but went on with the same cry as before. But the rulers thought that the man's action was inspired by some demon, as it indeed was, and brought him to the Roman governor[1]; there, though he was flayed to the bone with scourges, he uttered no plea and shed no tear, but raising his

[1] That is, Albinus who was procurator from 61 to 64.

Digitized by Google

ὡς ἐνῆν μάλιστα τὴν φωνὴν ὀλοφυρτικῶς παρεγκλίνων, πρὸς ἑκάστην ἀπεκρίνατο πληγήν ‘αἲ αἲ Ἱεροσολύμοις.[1]’”

Joseph. *B.I.* 6, 312. 318

Ἕτερον δ’ ἔτι τούτου παραδοξότερον ὁ αὐτὸς ἱστορεῖ, χρησμόν τινα φάσκων ἐν ἱεροῖς γράμμασιν εὑρῆσθαι περιέχοντα ὡς κατὰ τὸν καιρὸν ἐκεῖνον ἀπὸ τῆς χώρας τις αὐτῶν ἄρξει τῆς οἰκουμένης, ὃν αὐτὸς μὲν ἐπὶ Οὐεσπασιανὸν πεπληρῶσθαι ἐξείληφεν· ἀλλ’ οὐχ ἁπάσης γε οὗτος ἀλλ’ ἢ μόνης ἦρξεν τῆς ὑπὸ Ῥωμαίους· δικαιότερον δ’ ἂν ἐπὶ τὸν Χριστὸν ἀναχθείη, πρὸς ὃν εἴρητο ὑπὸ

Ps. 2, 8

τοῦ πατρὸς “αἴτησαι παρ’ ἐμοῦ, καὶ δώσω σοι ἔθνη τὴν κληρονομίαν σου, καὶ τὴν κατάσχεσίν σου τὰ πέρατα τῆς γῆς,” οὗ δὴ κατ’ αὐτὸ δὴ

Ps. 18, 5

ἐκεῖνο τοῦ καιροῦ “εἰς πᾶσαν τὴν γῆν ἐξῆλθεν ὁ φθόγγος” τῶν ἱερῶν ἀποστόλων “καὶ εἰς τὰ πέρατα τῆς οἰκουμένης τὰ ῥήματα αὐτῶν.”

IX. Ἐπὶ τούτοις ἅπασιν ἄξιον μηδ’ αὐτὸν

[1] After Ἱεροσολύμοις the text of Josephus adds τοῦ δὲ ἀλβίνου διερωτῶντος· οὗτος γὰρ ἔπαρχος ἦν· τίς εἴη καὶ πόθεν καὶ διατί ταῦτα φθέγγοιτο· πρὸς ταῦτα μὲν οὐδ’ ὅτι οὖν ἀπεκρίνατο· τὸν δὲ ἐπὶ τῇ πόλει θρῆνον εἴρων οὐ διέλιπεν μέχρι καταγνοὺς μανίαν ὁ ἀλβῖνος ἀπέλυσεν αὐτόν· ὁ δὲ τὸν μέχρι τοῦ πολέμου χρόνον· οὔτε προσήει τινὶ τῶν πολιτῶν οὔτε ὤφθη λαλῶν· ἀλλὰ καθημέραν ὥσπερ εὐχὴν μεμελετηκὼς· αἲ αἲ ἱεροσολύμοις ἐθρήνει· οὔτε δέ τινι τῶν τυπτόντων αὐτὸν ὀσήμεραι κατηρᾶτο οὔτε τοὺς τροφῆς μεταδιδόντας εὐλόγει. μία δὲ πρὸς πάντας ἦν ἡ σκυθρωπὴ κληδών ἀπόκρισις. μάλιστα δὲ ἐν ταῖς ἑορταῖς ἐκεκράγει· καὶ τοῦτο ἑφεπτὰ ἔτη καὶ μήνας πέντε εἴρων. οὔτε ἠμβλύνθη τὴν φωνὴν οὔτε ἔκαμεν μέχρις οὗ κατὰ τὴν πολιορκίαν ἔργοι τὰς κληδόνας ἰδὼν ἀνεπαύσατο. περιϊὼν γὰρ ἐπὶ τοῦ τείχους αἲ αἲ πάλιν τῇ πόλει καὶ τῷ λαῷ καὶ τῷ ναῷ διαπρύσιον ἐβόα. ὡς δὲ τελευταῖον προσέθηκεν αἲ αἲ καμοὶ λίθος ἐκ τοῦ πετροβόλου σχασθεὶς καὶ πλήξας αὐτὸν, παραχρῆμα κτείνει. φθεγγομένην δὲ ἔτι τὰς κληδόνας ἐκείνας τὴν ψυχὴν ἀφῆκεν. This is also found in two late MSS. (ER) of Eusebius.

Digitized by Google

voice with all his power, answered to every blow, 'Woe, woe to Jerusalem.'"[1]

The same writer has a still more remarkable account in which he alleges that an oracle was found in "sacred script" to the effect that at that time one from their country should rule the world and he himself considered that this was fulfilled by Vespasian. Yet he did not reign over the whole world, but only such part as was subject to the Romans, and it would be more justly referred to Christ, to whom it was said by the Father, "Ask of me and I will give thee the heathen for thine inheritance and the ends of the earth for thy possession." And it was of his holy apostles at that very time that "the sound went forth into all the earth and their words unto the end of the earth."

IX. In addition to all this, it is right not to ignore

[1] Two late manuscripts make the following additions from Josephus. "And when Albinus, for he was governor, asked him who he was and whence he came and why he said these things, he made no answer but did not cease raising his lamentation against the city until Albinus considered him mad and let him go. Until the time of the war he neither approached any of the citizens nor was he seen talking, but daily, as though reciting a prayer, he wailed 'Woe, woe to Jerusalem.' He never cursed those who struck him daily, nor did he bless those who gave him food, but all received the same melancholy wail as an answer. He howled with especial vigour on feast days, and this he kept up for seven years and five months, nor did his voice fail or grow weary until at the siege he rested, seeing his lamentations fulfilled. For he went round on the wall with the piercing cry, 'Woe, woe to the people, to the city, and to the temple,' and as at last he added 'Woe, woe to me also,' a stone flew out from a catapult and hit him; he died at once, and gave up his soul still uttering those lamentations."

Digitized by Google

τὸν Ἰώσηπον, τοσαῦτα τῇ μετὰ χεῖρας συμβεβλημένον ἱστορίᾳ, ὁπόθεν τε καὶ ἀφ' οἵου γένους ὡρμᾶτο, ἀγνοεῖν. δηλοῖ δὲ πάλιν αὐτὸς καὶ τοῦτο, λέγων ὧδε "Ἰώσηπος Ματθίου παῖς, ἐξ Ἱεροσολύμων ἱερεύς, αὐτός τε Ῥωμαίους πολεμήσας τὰ πρῶτα καὶ τοῖς ὕστερον παρατυχὼν ἐξ ἀνάγκης." μάλιστα δὲ τῶν κατ' ἐκεῖνο καιροῦ 2
Joseph. *B.I.* 1, 3

Ἰουδαίων οὐ παρὰ μόνοις τοῖς ὁμοεθνέσιν, ἀλλὰ καὶ παρὰ Ῥωμαίοις γέγονεν ἀνὴρ ἐπιδοξότατος, ὡς αὐτὸν μὲν ἀναθέσει ἀνδριάντος ἐπὶ τῆς Ῥωμαίων τιμηθῆναι πόλεως, τοὺς δὲ σπουδασθέντας αὐτῷ λόγους βιβλιοθήκης ἀξιωθῆναι. οὗτος δὴ 3
πᾶσαν τὴν Ἰουδαϊκὴν ἀρχαιολογίαν ἐν ὅλοις εἴκοσι κατατέθειται συγγράμμασιν, τὴν δ' ἱστορίαν τοῦ κατ' αὐτὸν Ῥωμαϊκοῦ πολέμου ἐν ἑπτά,
Joseph. *B.I.* 1, 8

ἃ καὶ οὐ μόνον τῇ Ἑλλήνων, ἀλλὰ καὶ τῇ πατρίῳ φωνῇ παραδοῦναι αὐτὸς ἑαυτῷ μαρτυρεῖ, ἄξιός γε ὢν διὰ τὰ λοιπὰ πιστεύεσθαι· καὶ ἕτερα δ' 4
αὐτοῦ φέρεται σπουδῆς ἄξια δύο, τὰ Περὶ τῆς Ἰουδαίων ἀρχαιότητος, ἐν οἷς καὶ ἀντιρρήσεις πρὸς Ἀπίωνα τὸν γραμματικόν, κατὰ Ἰουδαίων τηνικάδε συντάξαντα λόγον, πεποίηται καὶ πρὸς ἄλλους, οἳ διαβάλλειν καὶ αὐτοὶ τὰ πάτρια τοῦ Ἰουδαίων ἔθνους ἐπειράθησαν. τούτων ἐν τῷ 5
προτέρῳ τὸν ἀριθμὸν τῆς λεγομένης παλαιᾶς τῶν ἐνδιαθήκων γραφῶν τίθησι, τίνα τὰ παρ' Ἑβραίοις ἀναντίρρητα, ὡς ἂν ἐξ ἀρχαίας παραδόσεως αὐτοῖς ῥήμασι διὰ τούτων διδάσκων.

Joseph. *C. Apion.* 1, 38–42

X. "Οὐ μυριάδες οὖν βιβλίων εἰσὶ παρ' ἡμῖν 1
ἀσυμφώνων καὶ μαχομένων, δύο δὲ μόνα πρὸς τοῖς εἴκοσι βιβλία, τοῦ παντὸς ἔχοντα χρόνου τὴν ἀναγραφήν, τὰ δικαίως θεῖα πεπιστευμένα.

Digitized by Google

the date and origin of the Josephus who collected so much material in the work just dealt with. He himself gives this information and says, "Josephus was a son of Matthias, a priest of Jerusalem, and at the beginning he fought against the Romans and was forced to take part in the later events." He was the most famous Jew of that time, not only among his fellow countrymen but also among the Romans, so that he was honoured by the erection of a statue in the city of Rome, and the inclusion of the works composed by him in its library He compiled the whole ancient history of the Jews in twenty volumes,[1] and the history of the Roman War[2] in his own time in seven; he testifies that he committed this not only to Greek but also to his native language, and he is for other reasons worthy of credence. Two other books of his, worthy of notice, are extant, entitled *On the ancientness of the Jews*,[3] in which he controverts Apion the Scribe, who had composed a treatise against the Jews, and others who had tried to calumniate the ancestral customs of the Jewish nation. In the first of these he gives the number of the canonical scriptures of the so-called Old Testament, and showed as follows which are undisputed among the Hebrews as belonging to ancient tradition.

X. "We have no myriads of discordant and contradictory books, but only two and twenty, containing the narrative of all time, which have been justly believed to be divine. Of these five are those of

[1] Usually quoted as "Antiquities," from the Latin rendering of ἀρχαιολογία by *antiquitates*.

[2] Usually known as the "Wars" or the "Jewish war" and often quoted as *B.I.* (*bellum iudaicum*).

[3] Usually known as *Contra Apionem*.

Digitized by Google

καὶ τούτων πέντε μέν ἐστιν Μωυσέως, ἃ τούς 2
τε νόμους περιέχει καὶ τὴν τῆς ἀνθρωπογονίας
παράδοσιν μέχρι τῆς αὐτοῦ τελευτῆς· οὗτος ὁ
χρόνος ἀπολείπει τρισχιλίων ὀλίγον ἐτῶν· ἀπὸ 3
δὲ τῆς Μωυσέως τελευτῆς μέχρι τῆς Ἀρταξέρξου
τοῦ μετὰ Ξέρξην Περσῶν βασιλέως οἱ μετὰ
Μωυσῆν προφῆται τὰ κατ' αὐτοὺς πραχθέντα
συνέγραψαν ἐν τρισὶν καὶ δέκα βιβλίοις· αἱ δὲ
λοιπαὶ τέσσαρες ὕμνους εἰς τὸν θεὸν καὶ τοῖς
ἀνθρώποις ὑποθήκας τοῦ βίου περιέχουσιν. ἀπὸ 4
δὲ Ἀρταξέρξου μέχρι τοῦ καθ' ἡμᾶς χρόνου
γέγραπται μὲν ἕκαστα, πίστεως δ' οὐχ ὁμοίας
ἠξίωται τοῖς πρὸ αὐτῶν διὰ τὸ μὴ γενέσθαι τὴν
τῶν προφητῶν ἀκριβῆ διαδοχήν. δῆλον δ' ἐστὶν 5
ἔργῳ πῶς ἡμεῖς πρόσιμεν τοῖς ἰδίοις γράμμασιν·
τοσούτου γὰρ αἰῶνος ἤδη παρῳχηκότος οὔτε
προσθεῖναί τις οὔτε ἀφελεῖν ἀπ' αὐτῶν οὔτε
μεταθεῖναι τετόλμηκεν, πᾶσι δὲ σύμφυτόν ἐστιν
εὐθὺς ἐκ πρώτης γενέσεως Ἰουδαίοις τὸ νομίζειν
αὐτὰ θεοῦ δόγματα καὶ τούτοις ἐπιμένειν καὶ
ὑπὲρ αὐτῶν, εἰ δέοι, θνήσκειν ἡδέως." καὶ 6
ταῦτα δὲ τοῦ συγγραφέως χρησίμως ὧδε παρα-
τεθείσθω. πεπόνηται δὲ καὶ ἄλλο οὐκ ἀγεννὲς
σπούδασμα τῷ ἀνδρί, Περὶ αὐτοκράτορος λογι-
σμοῦ, ὅ τινες Μακκαβαϊκὸν ἐπέγραψαν τῷ τοὺς
ἀγῶνας τῶν ἐν τοῖς οὕτω καλουμένοις Μακκα-
βαϊκοῖς συγγράμμαοιν ὑπὲρ τῆς εἰς τὸ θεῖον
εὐσεβείας ἀνδρισαμένων Ἑβραίων περιέχειν, καὶ 7
Joseph. *A.I.* 20, 268 πρὸς τῷ τέλει δὲ τῆς εἰκοστῆς Ἀρχαιολογίας
ἐπισημαίνεται ὁ αὐτὸς ὡς ἂν προῃρημένος ἐν
τέτταρσιν συγγράψαι βιβλίοις κατὰ τὰς πατρίους
δόξας τῶν Ἰουδαίων περὶ θεοῦ καὶ τῆς οὐσίας

Digitized by Google

Moses and contain the Law and the tradition of human history until his death. This period covers almost three thousand years. From the death of Moses to Artaxerxes who succeeded Xerxes, king of the Persians, the prophets after Moses wrote the account of the events contemporary with them in thirteen books.[1] The remaining four books contain hymns to God and precepts for the life of men. From the time of Artaxerxes to our own the details have been written,[2] but are not considered worthy of equal credence with the rest because there has not been an accurate succession of prophets. And facts show plainly how we approach our own literature, for though so long a time has elapsed no one has dared to make additions, omissions, or changes, but it is innate in Jews from their very birth to regard them as the decrees of God, to abide in them and, if it need be, to die for them gladly." This quotation from the author may be usefully appended.

Another work which is not without merit was produced by him on *The Supremacy of Reason*, which some entitled *Maccabees*[3] because it contains the conflicts of those Hebrews mentioned in the so-called books of the Maccabees, who strove valiantly for the worship of God. At the end of the twentieth book of the *Antiquities* the same writer announces that he had planned to compose four books on the ancestral belief of the Jews concerning God and his nature and

[1] Josephus does not state which these are. Probably he means Joshua, Judges and Ruth, 1 and 2 Sam., 1 and 2 Kings, 1 and 2 Chron., Ezra and Neh., Esther, Isaiah, Jer. and Lam., Ezek., Dan., the minor prophets, Job. The "remaining four books" would be Pss., Prov., Eccl., and the Song of Songs.

[2] He means 1 Maccabees and perhaps 2 Maccabees.

[3] 4 Maccabees.

Digitized by Google

αὐτοῦ καὶ περὶ τῶν νόμων, διὰ τί κατ' αὐτοὺς τὰ μὲν ἔξεστι πράττειν, τὰ δὲ κεκώλυται, καὶ
Joseph. *A.I.* 1, 25. 29; 3, 94. 143; 4, 198; *B.I.* 5, 237. 247; *A.I.* 20, 267
ἄλλα δὲ αὐτῷ σπουδασθῆναι ὁ αὐτὸς ἐν τοῖς ἰδίοις αὐτοῦ μνημονεύει λόγοις. πρὸς τούτοις 8
εὔλογον καταλέξαι καὶ ἃς ἐπ' αὐτοῦ τῆς
Joseph. *A.I.* 20, 267
Ἀρχαιολογίας τοῦ τέλους φωνὰς παρατέθειται, εἰς πίστωσιν τῆς τῶν ἐξ αὐτοῦ παραληφθέντων ἡμῖν μαρτυρίας. διαβάλλων δῆτα Ἰοῦστον Τιβεριέα, ὁμοίως αὐτῷ τὰ κατὰ τοὺς αὐτοὺς ἱστορῆσαι χρόνους πεπειραμένον, ὡς μὴ τἀληθῆ συγγεγραφότα, πολλάς τε ἄλλας εὐθύνας ἐπαγαγὼν τῷ ἀνδρί, ταῦτα αὐτοῖς ῥήμασιν ἐπιλέγει "οὐ 9
Joseph. *De vita sua*, 361–364
μὴν ἐγώ σοι τὸν αὐτὸν τρόπον περὶ τῆς ἐμαυτοῦ γραφῆς ἔδεισα, ἀλλ' αὐτοῖς ἐπέδωκα τοῖς αὐτοκράτορσι τὰ βιβλία, μόνον οὐ τῶν ἔργων ἤδη βλεπομένων· συνῄδειν γὰρ ἐμαυτῷ τετηρηκότι τὴν τῆς ἀληθείας παράδοσιν, ἐφ' ᾗ μαρτυρίας τεύξεσθαι προσδοκήσας οὐ διήμαρτον. καὶ ἄλλοις δὲ πολλοῖς 10
ἐπέδωκα τὴν ἱστορίαν, ὧν ἔνιοι καὶ παρατετεύχεσαν τῷ πολέμῳ, καθάπερ βασιλεὺς Ἀγρίππας καί τινες αὐτοῦ τῶν συγγενῶν. ὁ μὲν γὰρ αὐτοκράτωρ 11
Τίτος οὕτως ἐκ μόνων αὐτῶν ἐβουλήθη τὴν γνῶσιν τοῖς ἀνθρώποις παραδοῦναι τῶν πράξεων, ὥστε χαράξας τῇ αὐτοῦ χειρὶ τὰ βιβλία δημοσιῶσαι προσέταξεν, ὁ δὲ βασιλεὺς Ἀγρίππας ξβ ἔγραψεν ἐπιστολάς, τῇ τῆς ἀληθείας παραδόσει μαρτυρῶν."
Ἀφ' ὧν καὶ δύο παρατίθησιν. ἀλλὰ τὰ μὲν κατὰ τοῦτον ταύτῃ πῃ δεδηλώσθω.

XI. Ἴωμεν δ' ἐπὶ τὰ ἑξῆς. μετὰ τὴν Ἰακώβου 1
μαρτυρίαν καὶ τὴν αὐτίκα γενομένην ἅλωσιν τῆς Ἱερουσαλὴμ λόγος κατέχει τῶν ἀποστόλων καὶ τῶν τοῦ κυρίου μαθητῶν τοὺς εἰς ἔτι τῷ βίῳ λειπομένους

Digitized by Google

concerning the Laws, why they allow some actions and forbid others. He also mentions in his own treatises that he had produced other works. Moreover, it is right to mention the words which he appends to the end of the *Antiquities* to confirm our quotation of the passages taken from him. Accusing of false statements Justus of Tiberias, who had undertaken to write a similar account of the same period, and bringing many other charges against him, he continues as follows: "I had no such fear as you with regard to my own writing, but I gave the books to the Emperors themselves while the events were still almost before their eyes. For I was conscious of having kept the tradition of the truth and I did not fail in my expectation of obtaining their testimony to that effect. I also gave the narrative to many others, of whom some had actually taken part in the war, such as King Agrippa and some of his relations. For the Emperor Titus was pleased that from these books alone should information be given the public as to the events, and, writing with his own hand, he ordered the books to be published, and King Agrippa wrote sixty-two letters testifying that they were handing on the truth." Of these letters he appends two, but let this suffice on the subject of Josephus and let us proceed.

XI. After the martyrdom of James and the capture of Jerusalem which immediately followed, the story goes that those of the Apostles and of the disciples of the Lord who were still alive came together from

Digitized by Google

ἐπὶ ταὐτὸν πανταχόθεν συνελθεῖν ἅμα τοῖς πρὸς γένους κατὰ σάρκα τοῦ κυρίου (πλείους γὰρ καὶ τούτων περιῆσαν εἰς ἔτι τότε τῷ βίῳ), βουλήν τε ὁμοῦ τοὺς πάντας περὶ τοῦ τίνα χρὴ τῆς Ἰακώβου διαδοχῆς ἐπικρῖναι ἄξιον, ποιήσασθαι, καὶ δὴ ἀπὸ
Luke 24, 18 μιᾶς γνώμης τοὺς πάντας Συμεῶνα τὸν τοῦ Κλωπᾶ,
John 19, 25 οὗ καὶ ἡ τοῦ εὐαγγελίου μνημονεύει γραφή, τοῦ τῆς αὐτόθι παροικίας θρόνου ἄξιον εἶναι δοκιμάσαι, ἀνεψιόν, ὥς γέ φασι, γεγονότα τοῦ σωτῆρος, τὸν γὰρ οὖν Κλωπᾶν ἀδελφὸν τοῦ Ἰωσὴφ ὑπάρχειν Ἡγήσιππος ἱστορεῖ, XII. καὶ ἐπὶ τούτοις Οὐεσπα- 1
σιανον μετὰ τὴν τῶν Ἱεροσολύμων ἅλωσιν πάντας τοὺς ἀπὸ γένους Δαυίδ, ὡς μὴ περιλειφθείη τις παρὰ Ἰουδαίοις τῶν ἀπὸ τῆς βασιλικῆς φυλῆς, ἀναζητεῖσθαι προστάξαι, μέγιστόν τε Ἰουδαίοις αὖθις ἐκ ταύτης διωγμὸν ἐπαρτηθῆναι τῆς αἰτίας.

XIII. Ἐπὶ δέκα δὲ τὸν Οὐεσπασιανὸν ἔτεσιν 1
βασιλεύσαντα αὐτοκράτωρ Τίτος ὁ παῖς διαδέχεται· οὗ κατὰ δεύτερον ἔτος τῆς βασιλείας Λίνος ἐπίσκοπος τῆς Ῥωμαίων ἐκκλησίας δυοκαίδεκα τὴν λειτουργίαν ἐνιαυτοῖς κατασχών, Ἀνεγκλήτῳ ταύτην παραδίδωσιν.

Τίτον δὲ Δομετιανὸς ἀδελφὸς διαδέχεται, δύο ἔτεσι καὶ μησὶ τοῖς ἴσοις βασιλεύσαντα. XIV. 1
τετάρτῳ μὲν οὖν ἔτει Δομετιανοῦ τῆς κατ' Ἀλεξάνδρειαν παροικίας ὁ πρῶτος Ἀννιανὸς δύο πρὸς τοῖς εἴκοσι ἀποπλήσας ἔτη, τελευτᾷ, διαδέχεται δ' αὐτὸν δεύτερος Ἀβίλιος. XV. δωδεκάτῳ δὲ ἔτει τῆς 1
αὐτῆς ἡγεμονίας τῆς Ῥωμαίων ἐκκλησίας Ἀνέγκλητον ἔτεσιν ἐπισκοπεύσαντα δεκαδύο διαδέχεται Κλήμης, ὃν συνεργὸν ἑαυτοῦ γενέσθαι Φιλιππησίοις
Phil. 4, 3 ἐπιστέλλων ὁ ἀπόστολος διδάσκει, λέγων "μετὰ

Digitized by Google

every place with those who were, humanly speaking, of the family of the Lord, for many of them were then still alive, and they all took counsel together as to whom they ought to adjudge worthy to succeed James, and all unanimously decided that Simeon the son of Clopas, whom the scripture of the Gospel also mentions, was worthy of the throne of the diocese there. He was, so it is said, a cousin of the Saviour, for Hegesippus relates that Clopas was the brother of Joseph, (XII.) and in addition that Vespasian, after the capture of Jerusalem, ordered a search to be made for all who were of the family of David, that there might be left among the Jews no one of the royal family and, for this reason, a very great persecution was again inflicted on the Jews.

XIII. When Vespasian had reigned for ten years, his son Titus succeeded him as emperor,[1] and in the second year of his reign, Linus, bishop of the church of the Romans, after holding his office for twelve years, handed it on to Anencletus. After Titus had reigned for two years and as many months Domitian, his brother, succeeded him.[2] XIV. Now in the fourth year of Domitian, Annianus, the first of the see of Alexandria, died after completing twenty-two years, and Abilius succeeded him as the second. XV. And in the twelfth year of the same reign, Clement succeeded Anencletus after he had been bishop of the church of the Romans for twelve years. The apostle states that he had been his fellow-worker in his epistle to the Philippians saying, " With Clement and

[1] June 24, A.D. 79.
[2] Dec. 13, A.D. 81.

Digitized by Google

καὶ Κλήμεντος καὶ τῶν λοιπῶν συνεργῶν μου, ὧν τὰ ὀνόματα ἐν βίβλῳ ζωῆς."

XVI. Τούτου δὴ οὖν ὁμολογουμένη μία ἐπιστολὴ 1
φέρεται, μεγάλη τε καὶ θαυμασία, ἣν ὡς ἀπὸ τῆς Ῥωμαίων ἐκκλησίας τῇ Κορινθίων διετυπώσατο, στάσεως τηνικάδε κατὰ τὴν Κόρινθον γενομένης. ταύτην δὲ καὶ ἐν πλείσταις ἐκκλησίαις ἐπὶ τοῦ κοινοῦ δεδημοσιευμένην πάλαι τε καὶ καθ' ἡμᾶς αὐτοὺς ἔγνωμεν. καὶ ὅτι γε κατὰ τὸν δηλούμενον τὰ τῆς Κορινθίων κεκίνητο στάσεως, ἀξιόχρεως μάρτυς ὁ Ἡγήσιππος.

XVII. Πολλήν γε μὴν εἰς πολλοὺς ἐπιδειξάμενος ὁ 1
Δομετιανὸς ὠμότητα οὐκ ὀλίγον τε τῶν ἐπὶ Ῥώμης εὐπατριδῶν τε καὶ ἐπισήμων ἀνδρῶν πλῆθος οὐ μετ' εὐλόγου κρίσεως κτείνας μυρίους τε ἄλλους ἐπιφανεῖς ἄνδρας ταῖς ὑπὲρ τὴν ἐνορίαν ζημιώσας φυγαῖς καὶ ταῖς τῶν οὐσιῶν ἀποβολαῖς ἀναιτίως, τελευτῶν τῆς Νέρωνος θεοεχθρίας τε καὶ θεομαχίας διάδοχον ἑαυτὸν κατεστήσατο. δεύτερος δῆτα τὸν καθ' ἡμῶν ἀνεκίνει διωγμόν, καίπερ τοῦ πατρὸς αὐτῷ Οὐεσπασιανοῦ μηδὲν καθ' ἡμῶν ἄτοπον ἐπινοήσαντος.

XVIII. Ἐν τούτῳ κατέχει λόγος τὸν ἀπόστολον 1
ἅμα καὶ εὐαγγελιστὴν Ἰωάννην ἔτι τῷ βίῳ ἐνδιατρίβοντα, τῆς εἰς τὸν θεῖον λόγον ἕνεκεν μαρτυρίας Πάτμον οἰκεῖν καταδικασθῆναι τὴν νῆσον. γράφων 2
γέ τοι ὁ Εἰρηναῖος περὶ τῆς ψήφου τῆς κατὰ τὸν ἀντίχριστον προσηγορίας φερομένης ἐν τῇ Ἰωάννου
Rev. 13, 18 λεγομένῃ Ἀποκαλύψει, αὐταῖς συλλαβαῖς ἐν πέμπτῳ τῶν πρὸς τὰς αἱρέσεις ταῦτα περὶ τοῦ Ἰωάννου
Iren. 5, 30. 3 φησίν "εἰ δὲ ἔδει ἀναφανδὸν ἐν τῷ νῦν καιρῷ 3
κηρύττεσθαι τοὔνομα αὐτοῦ, δι' ἐκείνου ἂν ἐρρέθη

Digitized by Google

my other fellow-workers whose names are in the book of Life."

XVI. There is one recognized epistle of Clement, long and wonderful, which he drew up for the church of the Corinthians in the name of the church of the Romans when there had been dissension in Corinth. We have ascertained that this letter was publicly read in the common assembly in many churches both in the days of old and in our own time; and that the affairs of Corinth were disturbed by dissension in his day is adequately testified to by Hegesippus.

XVII. When Domitian had given many proofs of his great cruelty and had put to death without any reasonable trial no small number of men distinguished at Rome by family and career, and had punished without a cause myriads of other notable men by banishment and confiscation of their property, he finally showed himself the successor of Nero's campaign of hostility to God. He was the second to promote persecution against us, though his father, Vespasian, had planned no evil against us.

XVIII. At this time, the story goes, the Apostle and Evangelist John was still alive, and was condemned to live in the island of Patmos for his witness to the divine word. At any rate Irenaeus, writing about the number of the name ascribed to the anti-Christ in the so-called Apocalypse of John, states this about John in so many words in the fifth book against Heresies. "But if it had been necessary to announce his name plainly at the present time, it would have

Digitized by Google

τοῦ καὶ τὴν ἀποκάλυψιν ἑορακότος. οὐδὲ γὰρ πρὸ πολλοῦ χρόνου ἑωράθη, ἀλλὰ σχεδὸν ἐπὶ τῆς ἡμετέρας γενεᾶς, πρὸς τῷ τέλει τῆς Δομετιανοῦ ἀρχῆς."

Εἰς τοσοῦτον δὲ ἄρα κατὰ τοὺς δηλουμένους ἡ τῆς 4
ἡμετέρας πίστεως διέλαμπεν διδασκαλία, ὡς καὶ τοὺς ἄποθεν τοῦ καθ' ἡμᾶς λόγου συγγραφεῖς μὴ ἀποκνῆσαι ταῖς αὐτῶν ἱστορίαις τόν τε δωγμὸν καὶ τὰ ἐν αὐτῷ μαρτύρια παραδοῦναι, οἵ γε καὶ τὸν καιρὸν ἐπ' ἀκριβὲς ἐπεσημήναντο, ἐν ἔτει πεντεκαιδεκάτῳ Δομετιανοῦ μετὰ πλείστων ἑτέρων καὶ Φλαυίαν Δομέτιλλαν ἱστορήσαντες, ἐξ ἀδελφῆς γεγονυῖαν Φλαυίου Κλήμεντος, ἑνὸς τῶν τηνικάδε ἐπὶ Ῥώμης ὑπάτων, τῆς εἰς Χριστὸν μαρτυρίας ἕνεκεν εἰς νῆσον Ποντίαν κατὰ τιμωρίαν δεδόσθαι.

XIX. Τοῦ δ' αὐτοῦ Δομετιανοῦ τοὺς ἀπὸ γένους 1
Δαυὶδ ἀναιρεῖσθαι προστάξαντος, παλαιὸς κατέχει λόγος τῶν αἱρετικῶν τινας κατηγορῆσαι τῶν ἀπογόνων Ἰούδα (τοῦτον δ' εἶναι ἀδελφὸν κατὰ σάρκα τοῦ σωτῆρος) ὡς ἀπὸ γένους τυγχανόντων Δαυὶδ καὶ ὡς αὐτοῦ συγγένειαν τοῦ Χριστοῦ φερόντων. ταῦτα δὲ δηλοῖ κατὰ λέξιν ὧδέ πως λέγων ὁ
Matt. 13, 55 Mark 6, 3 Ἡγήσιππος. XX. "ἔτι δὲ περιῆσαν οἱ ἀπὸ γένους 1
τοῦ κυρίου υἱωνοὶ Ἰούδα τοῦ κατὰ σάρκα λεγομένου αὐτοῦ ἀδελφοῦ· οὓς ἐδηλατόρευσαν[1] ὡς ἐκ γένους ὄντας Δαυίδ. τούτους ὁ ἠουοκᾶτος ἤγαγεν πρὸς Δομετιανὸν Καίσαρα. ἐφοβεῖτο γὰρ τὴν παρουσίαν τοῦ Χριστοῦ ὡς καὶ Ἡρῴδης. καὶ ἐπηρώ- 2
τησεν αὐτοὺς εἰ ἐκ Δαυίδ εἰσιν, καὶ ὡμολόγησαν. τότε ἠρώτησεν αὐτοὺς πόσας κτήσεις ἔχουσιν ἢ

[1] A Latinism made out of *delatus*.

[1] A.D. 96. *Cf.* Suetonius, *Dom.* 15, who however says that Domitilla was the wife of Clemens. Some think that

Digitized by Google

been spoken by him who saw the apocalypse. For it was not seen long ago but almost in our own time, at the end of the reign of Domitian."

The teaching of our faith shone so brilliantly in the days described that even writers foreign to our belief did not hesitate to commit to their narratives the persecutions and the martyrdoms in it, and they even indicated the time accurately, relating that in the fifteenth year[1] of Domitian, Flavia Domitilla, who was the niece of Flavius Clemens, one of the consuls at Rome at that time, was banished with many others to the island of Pontia as testimony to Christ.

XIX. The same Domitian gave orders for the execution of those of the family of David and an ancient story goes that some heretics accused the grandsons of Judas (who is said to have been the brother, according to the flesh, of the Saviour) saying that they were of the family of David and related to the Christ himself. Hegesippus relates this exactly as follows. XX. "Now there still survived of the family of the Lord grandsons of Judas, who was said to have been his brother according to the flesh, and they were delated as being of the family of David. These the officer[2] brought to Domitian Caesar, for, like Herod, he was afraid of the coming of the Christ. He asked them if they were of the house of David and they admitted it. Then he asked them how much property they had, or how

there were two Domitillas. Suetonius does not mention that she was a Christian.

[2] The Greek represents the Latin *evocatus*, apparently the name of an official, but even Rufinus did not fully understand it and made out of it a proper name *Revocatus quidam*.

Digitized by Google

πόσων χρημάτων κυριεύουσιν. οἱ δὲ εἶπαν ἀμφοτέροις ἐννακισχίλια δηνάρια ὑπάρχειν αὐτοῖς μόνα, ἑκάστῳ αὐτῶν ἀνήκοντος τοῦ ἡμίσεος, καὶ ταῦτα οὐκ ἐν ἀργυρίοις ἔφασκον ἔχειν, ἀλλ' ἐν διατιμήσει γῆς πλέθρων λθ' μόνων, ἐξ ὧν καὶ τοὺς φόρους ἀναφέρειν καὶ αὐτοὺς αὐτουργοῦντας διατρέφεσθαι."[1] εἶτα δὲ καὶ τὰς χεῖρας τὰς ἑαυτῶν ἐπιδεικνύναι, μαρτύριον τῆς αὐτουργίας τὴν τοῦ σώματος σκληρίαν καὶ τοὺς ἀπὸ τῆς συνεχοῦς ἐργασίας ἐναποτυπωθέντας ἐπὶ τῶν ἰδίων χειρῶν τύλους παριστάντας. ἐρωτηθέντας δὲ περὶ τοῦ Χριστοῦ καὶ τῆς βασιλείας αὐτοῦ ὁποία τις εἴη καὶ ποῖ καὶ πότε φανησομένη, λόγον δοῦναι ὡς οὐ κοσμικὴ μὲν οὐδ' ἐπίγειος, ἐπουράνιος δὲ καὶ ἀγγελικὴ τυγχάνοι, ἐπὶ συντελείᾳ τοῦ αἰῶνος γενησομένη, ὁπηνίκα ἐλθὼν ἐν δόξῃ κρινεῖ ζῶντας καὶ νεκροὺς καὶ ἀποδώσει ἑκάστῳ κατὰ τὰ ἐπιτηδεύματα αὐτοῦ· ἐφ' οἷς μηδὲν αὐτῶν κατεγνωκότα τὸν Δομετιανόν, ἀλλὰ καὶ ὡς εὐτελῶν καταφρονήσαντα, ἐλευθέρους μὲν αὐτοὺς ἀνεῖναι, καταπαῦσαι δὲ διὰ προστάγματος τὸν κατὰ τῆς ἐκκλησίας διωγμόν.[2] τοὺς δὲ ἀπολυθέντας ἡγήσασθαι τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν, ὡς ἂν δὴ μάρτυρας ὁμοῦ καὶ ἀπὸ γένους ὄντας τοῦ κυρίου, γενομένης τε εἰρήνης μέχρι Τραϊανοῦ παραμεῖναι αὐτοὺς τῷ βίῳ. ταῦτα μὲν ὁ Ἡγήσιππος· οὐ μὴν ἀλλὰ καὶ ὁ Τερτυλλιανὸς τοῦ Δομετιανοῦ τοιαύτην πεποίηται μνήμην "πεπειράκει ποτὲ καὶ Δομετιανὸς ταὐτὸ ποιεῖν ἐκείνῳ, μέρος ὢν τῆς Νέρωνος ὠμότητος. ἀλλ', οἶμαι, ἅτε ἔχων τι συνέσεως, τάχιστα ἐπαύσατο, ἀνακαλεσάμενος καὶ οὓς ἐξηλάκει."

Matt. 16, 27
Acts 10, 42
Rom. 2, 6
2 Tim. 4, 1

Tert. *Apol.* 5

[1] *Cf.* George Syncellus 652. 5-14.
[2] *Cf.* Zonaras 362. 2-20.

Digitized by Google

much money they controlled, and they said that all they possessed was nine thousand denarii[1] between them, the half belonging to each, and they stated that they did not possess this in money but that it was the valuation of only thirty-nine plethra[2] of ground on which they paid taxes and lived on it by their own work." They then showed him their hands, adducing as testimony of their labour the hardness of their bodies, and the tough skin which had been embossed on their hands from their incessant work. They were asked concerning the Christ and his kingdom, its nature, origin, and time of appearance, and explained that it was neither of the world nor earthly, but heavenly and angelic, and it would be at the end of the world, when he would come in glory to judge the living and the dead and to reward every man according to his deeds. At this Domitian did not condemn them at all, but despised them as simple folk, released them, and decreed an end to the persecution against the church. But when they were released they were the leaders of the churches, both for their testimony and for their relation to the Lord, and remained alive in the peace which ensued until Trajan. Hegesippus tells this; moreover, Tertullian also has made similar mention of Domitian. "Domitian also once tried to do the same as he, for he was a Nero in cruelty, but, I believe, inasmuch as he had some sense, he stopped at once and recalled those whom he had banished."

[1] About £35.

[2] The Greek plethron is not quite a quarter of an acre, but is used to represent the Latin *iugerum* = more than half an acre.

Digitized by Google

Μετὰ δὲ τὸν Δομετιανὸν πεντεκαίδεκα ἔτεσιν 8
κρατήσαντα Νερούα τὴν ἀρχὴν διαδεξαμένου,
καθαιρεθῆναι μὲν τὰς Δομετιανοῦ τιμάς, ἐπανελθεῖν
δ' ἐπὶ τὰ οἰκεῖα μετὰ τοῦ καὶ τὰς οὐσίας ἀπολαβεῖν
τοὺς ἀδίκως ἐξεληλαμένους ἡ Ῥωμαίων σύγκλητος
βουλὴ ψηφίζεται· ἱστοροῦσιν οἱ γραφῇ τὰ κατὰ
τοὺς χρόνους παραδόντες. τότε δὴ οὖν καὶ τὸν 9
ἀπόστολον Ἰωάννην ἀπὸ τῆς κατὰ τὴν νῆσον φυγῆς
τὴν ἐπὶ τῆς Ἐφέσου διατριβὴν ἀπειληφέναι ὁ τῶν
παρ' ἡμῖν ἀρχαίων παραδίδωσι λόγος.

XXI. Μικρῷ δὲ πλέον ἐνιαυτοῦ βασιλεύσαντα 1
Νερούαν διαδέχεται Τραϊανός· οὗ δὴ πρῶτον ἔτος ἦν
ἐν ᾧ τῆς κατ' Ἀλεξάνδρειαν παροικίας Ἀβίλιον δέκα
πρὸς τρισὶν ἔτεσιν ἡγησάμενον διαδέχεται Κέρδων·
τρίτος οὗτος τῶν αὐτόθι μετὰ τὸν πρῶτον Ἀννιανὸν
προέστη. ἐν τούτῳ δὲ Ῥωμαίων εἰς ἔτι Κλήμης
ἡγεῖτο, τρίτον καὶ αὐτὸς ἐπέχων τῶν τῇδε μετὰ
Παῦλόν τε καὶ Πέτρον ἐπισκοπευσάντων βαθμόν·
Λίνος δὲ ὁ πρῶτος ἦν καὶ μετ' αὐτὸν Ἀνέγκλητος.

XXII. ἀλλὰ καὶ τῶν ἐπ' Ἀντιοχείας Εὐοδίου πρώ- 1
του καταστάντος δεύτερος ἐν τοῖς δηλουμένοις Ἰγνά-
τιος ἐγνωρίζετο. Συμεὼν ὁμοίως δεύτερος μετὰ τὸν
τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν ἀδελφὸν τῆς ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις
ἐκκλησίας κατὰ τούτους τὴν λειτουργίαν εἶχεν.

XXIII. Ἐπὶ τούτοις κατὰ τὴν Ἀσίαν ἔτι τῷ βίῳ 1
περιλειπόμενος αὐτὸς ἐκεῖνος ὃν ἠγάπα ὁ Ἰησοῦς,
John 13, 23; 19, 26; 21, 7. 20. ἀπόστολος ὁμοῦ καὶ εὐαγγελιστὴς Ἰωάννης τὰς
αὐτόθι διεῖπεν ἐκκλησίας, ἀπὸ τῆς κατὰ τὴν νῆσον
μετὰ τὴν Δομετιανοῦ τελευτὴν ἐπανελθὼν φυγῆς.
ὅτι δὲ εἰς τούτους τῷ βίῳ περιῆν, ἀπόχρη διὰ δύο 2
πιστώσασθαι τὸν λόγον μαρτύρων, πιστοὶ δ' ἂν εἶεν
οὗτοι, τῆς ἐκκλησιαστικῆς πρεσβεύσαντες ὀρθο-

Digitized by Google

After Domitian had reigned fifteen years, Nerva succeeded.[1] The sentences of Domitian were annulled, and the Roman Senate decreed the return of those who had been unjustly banished and the restoration of their property. Those who committed the story of those times to writing relate it. At that time, too, the story of the ancient Christians relates that the Apostle John, after his banishment to the island, took up his abode at Ephesus.

XXI. After Nerva had reigned a little more than a year he was succeeded by Trajan,[2] in whose first year Abilius, after leading the diocese of Alexandria for thirteen years, was succeeded by Cerdo; he was the third in charge of that see after the first, Annianus. At this time Clement was still governing the Romans and he, also, occupied the third place in the list of bishops in Rome after Paul and Peter; Linus was the first and after him Anencletus. XXII. Moreover, at the time mentioned, Ignatius was famous as the second bishop at Antioch where Evodius had been the first. Likewise at this time, Simeon was second after the brother of our Saviour to hold the ministry of the church in Jerusalem.

XXIII. At this time that very disciple whom Jesus loved, John, at once Apostle and Evangelist, still remained alive in Asia and administered the churches there, for after the death of Domitian, he had returned from his banishment on the island. And that he remained alive until this time may fully be confirmed by two witnesses, and these ought to be trustworthy for they represent the orthodoxy of the

[1] Sept. 18, A.D. 96. [2] Jan. 27, A.D. 98.

Digitized by Google

δοξίας, εἰ δὴ τοιοῦτοι Εἰρηναῖος καὶ Κλήμης ὁ
'Αλεξανδρεύς· ὧν ὁ μὲν πρότερος ἐν δευτέρῳ τῶν 3
Iren. 2, 22. 5 πρὸς τὰς αἱρέσεις ὧδέ πως γράφει κατὰ λέξιν· "καὶ
πάντες οἱ πρεσβύτεροι μαρτυροῦσιν οἱ κατὰ τὴν
'Ασίαν 'Ιωάννῃ τῷ τοῦ κυρίου μαθητῇ συμβεβλη-
κότες παραδεδωκέναι τὸν 'Ιωάννην. παρέμεινεν
γὰρ αὐτοῖς μέχρι τῶν Τραϊανοῦ χρόνων."[1] καὶ ἐν 4
τρίτῳ δὲ τῆς αὐτῆς ὑποθέσεως ταὐτὸ τοῦτο δηλοῖ
Iren. 3, 3. 4 διὰ τούτων· "ἀλλὰ καὶ ἡ ἐν 'Εφέσῳ ἐκκλησία ὑπὸ
Παύλου μὲν τεθεμελιωμένη, 'Ιωάννου δὲ παραμεί-
ναντος αὐτοῖς μέχρι τῶν Τραϊανοῦ χρόνων, μάρτυς
ἀληθὴς ἐστιν τῆς τῶν ἀποστόλων παραδόσεως."

'Ο δὲ Κλήμης ὁμοῦ τὸν χρόνον ἐπισημηνάμενος, 5
καὶ ἱστορίαν ἀναγκαιοτάτην οἷς τὰ καλὰ καὶ
ἐπωφελῆ φίλον ἀκούειν, προστίθησιν ἐν ᾧ "Τίς ὁ
σῳζόμενος πλούσιος" ἐπέγραψεν αὐτοῦ συγγράμ-
ματι· λαβὼν δὲ ἀνάγνωθι ὧδέ πως ἔχουσαν καὶ
Clem. *De divite serv.* 42 αὐτοῦ τὴν γραφήν· "ἄκουσον μῦθον οὐ μῦθον ἀλλὰ 6
ὄντα λόγον περὶ 'Ιωάννου τοῦ ἀποστόλου παραδεδο-
μένον καὶ μνήμῃ πεφυλαγμένον. ἐπειδὴ γὰρ τοῦ
τυράννου τελευτήσαντος ἀπὸ τῆς Πάτμου τῆς νήσου
μετῆλθεν ἐπὶ τὴν Ἔφεσον, ἀπῄει παρακαλούμενος
καὶ ἐπὶ τὰ πλησιόχωρα τῶν ἐθνῶν, ὅπου μὲν
ἐπισκόπους καταστήσων, ὅπου δὲ ὅλας ἐκκλησίας
ἁρμόσων, ὅπου δὲ κλῆρον ἕνα γέ τινα κληρώσων τῶν
ὑπὸ τοῦ πνεύματος σημαινομένων. ἐλθὼν οὖν καὶ 7
ἐπί τινα τῶν οὐ μακρὰν πόλεων,[2] ἧς καὶ τοὔνομα
λέγουσιν ἔνιοι, καὶ τἄλλα ἀναπαύσας τοὺς ἀδελφούς,
ἐπὶ πᾶσι τῷ καθεστῶτι προσβλέψας ἐπισκόπῳ,
νεανίσκον ἱκανὸν τῷ σώματι καὶ τὴν ὄψιν ἀστεῖον
καὶ θερμὸν τὴν ψυχὴν ἰδών, 'τοῦτον' ἔφη 'σοὶ

[1] *Cf.* George Syncellus 653. 9-11. [2] *Cf. Chron. Pasc.* 470. 9.

Digitized by Google

church, no less persons than Irenaeus and Clement of Alexandria. The former of these writes in one place in the second of his books *Against the Heresies*, as follows: "And all the presbyters who had been associated in Asia with John, the disciple of the Lord, bear witness to his tradition, for he remained with them until the times of Trajan." And in the third book of the same work he makes the same statement as follows: "Now the church at Ephesus was founded by Paul, but John stayed there until the times of Trajan, and it is a true witness of the tradition of the Apostles."

Clement indicates the same time, and in the treatise to which he gave the title *Who is the rich man that is saved*, adds a narrative most acceptable to those who enjoy hearing what is fine and edifying. Take and read here what he wrote. "Listen to a story which is not a story but a true tradition of John the Apostle preserved in memory. For after the death of the tyrant he passed from the island of Patmos to Ephesus, and used also to go, when he was asked, to the neighbouring districts of the heathen,[1] in some places to appoint bishops, in others to reconcile whole churches, and in others to ordain some one of those pointed out by the Spirit. He came to one of the cities which were near by (and some tell even its name),[2] and gave rest in general to the brethren; then, while looking before them all at the bishop who had been appointed, he saw a young man of strong body, beautiful appearance, and warm heart. 'I commend this man,' he said,

[1] ἐθνῶν possibly means "country-people" as opposed to "town-folk."

[2] According to the *Chronicon Paschale* it was Smyrna.

Digitized by Google

παρακατατίθεμαι μετὰ πάσης σπουδῆς ἐπὶ τῆς ἐκκλησίας καὶ τοῦ Χριστοῦ μάρτυρος.' τοῦ δὲ δεχομένου καὶ πάνθ' ὑπισχνουμένου, καὶ πάλιν τὰ αὐτὰ διελέγετο καὶ διεμαρτύρετο. εἶτα ὁ μὲν ἀπ- 8
ἦρεν ἐπὶ τὴν Ἔφεσον, ὁ δὲ πρεσβύτερος ἀναλαβὼν οἰκαδε τὸν παραδοθέντα νεανίσκον ἔτρεφεν, συνεῖχεν, ἔθαλπεν, τὸ τελευταῖον ἐφώτισεν. καὶ μετὰ τοῦτο ὑφῆκεν τῆς πλείονος ἐπιμελείας καὶ παραφυλακῆς, ὡς τὸ τέλειον αὐτῷ φυλακτήριον ἐπιστήσας τὴν σφραγῖδα κυρίου. τῷ δὲ ἀνέσεως πρὸ ὥρας 9
λαβομένῳ προσφθείρονταί τινες ἥλικες ἀργοὶ καὶ ἀπερρωγότες, ἐθάδες κακῶν, καὶ πρῶτον μὲν δι' ἑστιάσεων πολυτελῶν αὐτὸν ἐπάγονται, εἶτά που καὶ νύκτωρ ἐπὶ λωποδυσίαν ἐξιόντες συνεπάγονται, εἶτά τι καὶ μεῖζον συμπράττειν ἠξίουν· ὃ δὲ κατ' 10
ὀλίγον προσειθίζετο, καὶ διὰ μέγεθος φύσεως ἐκστὰς ὥσπερ ἄστομος καὶ εὔρωστος ἵππος ὀρθῆς ὁδοῦ καὶ τὸν χαλινὸν ἐνδακών, μειζόνως κατὰ τῶν βαράθρων ἐφέρετο, ἀπογνοὺς δὲ τελέως τὴν ἐν θεῷ 11
σωτηρίαν, οὐδὲν ἔτι μικρὸν διενοεῖτο, ἀλλὰ μέγα τι πράξας, ἐπειδήπερ ἅπαξ ἀπολώλει, ἴσα τοῖς ἄλλοις παθεῖν ἠξίου. αὐτοὺς δὴ τούτους ἀναλαβὼν καὶ λῃστήριον συγκροτήσας, ἕτοιμος λῃσταρχος ἦν, βιαιότατος μιαφονώτατος χαλεπώτατος. χρόνος 12
ἐν μέσῳ, καί τινος ἐπιπεσούσης χρείας ἀνακαλοῦσι τὸν Ἰωάννην. ὃ δὲ ἐπεὶ τὰ ἄλλα ὧν χάριν ἦκεν κατεστήσατο, 'ἄγε δή' ἔφη 'ὦ ἐπίσκοπε, τὴν παραθήκην ἀπόδος ἡμῖν, ἣν ἐγώ τε καὶ ὁ Χριστός σοι παρακατεθέμεθα ἐπὶ τῆς ἐκκλησίας, ἧς προ-
καθέζῃ, μάρτυρος.' ὃ δὲ τὸ μὲν πρῶτον ἐξεπλάγη, 13
χρήματα οἰόμενος, ἅπερ οὐκ ἔλαβεν, συκοφαντεῖσθαι, καὶ οὔτε πιστεύειν εἶχεν ὑπὲρ ὧν οὐκ εἶχεν,

Digitized by Google

' to you with all diligence in the face of the church, and with Christ as my witness.' The bishop received him, and promised everything, and the same conversations and protestations were used. John then returned to Ephesus and the presbyter[1] took to his house the young man entrusted to him, brought him up, looked after him, and finally baptized him. After this he relaxed his great care and watchfulness, because he had set upon him the seal of the Lord as the perfect safeguard. But some idle and dissolute youths, familiar with evil, corrupted him in his premature freedom. First they led him on by expensive feasts, then they started out at night for robbery and took him with them, then they urged him to greater crimes. He gradually became accustomed to this, and like an unbroken and powerful horse starting from the straight way and tearing at the bit, rushed all the more to the precipice because of his natural vigour. Finally he renounced salvation from God; and now he planned nothing small, but, having perpetrated some great crime, since he was ruined once for all, accepted the same lot as the others. He collected them and formed a band of brigands and was himself a born chief, excelling in violence, in murder, and in cruelty. Time went on and some necessity arose to summon John. When he had arranged the rest of his mission John said, ' Come now, bishop, pay me back the deposit which Christ and I left with you, with the church, over which you preside, as witness.' The bishop was at first amazed, thinking that he was being blackmailed for money which he had not received. He could neither show his faithfulness in

[1] Immediately above he is called a bishop.

Digitized by Google

οὔτε ἀπιστεῖν Ἰωάννῃ· ὡς δέ 'τὸν νεανίσκον' εἶπεν 'ἀπαιτῶ καὶ τὴν ψυχὴν τοῦ ἀδελφοῦ,' στενάξας κάτωθεν ὁ πρεσβύτης καί τι καὶ ἐπιδακρύσας, 'ἐκεῖνος' ἔφη 'τέθνηκεν.' 'πῶς καὶ τίνα θάνατον;' 'θεῷ τέθνηκεν' εἶπεν· 'ἀπέβη γὰρ πονηρὸς καὶ ἐξώλης καί, τὸ κεφάλαιον, λῃστής, καὶ νῦν ἀντὶ τῆς ἐκκλησίας τὸ ὄρος κατείληφεν μεθ' ὁμοίου στρατιωτικοῦ.' καταρρηξάμενος τὴν ἐσθῆτα ὁ ἀπόστολος καὶ μετὰ μεγάλης οἰμωγῆς πληξάμενος τὴν κεφαλήν, 'καλόν γε' ἔφη 'φύλακα τῆς ταδελφοῦ ψυχῆς κατέλιπον. ἀλλ' ἵππος ἤδη μοι παρέστω, καὶ ἡγεμὼν γενέσθω μοί τις τῆς ὁδοῦ.' ἤλαυνεν, ὥσπερ εἶχεν, αὐτόθεν ἀπὸ τῆς ἐκκλησίας. ἐλθὼν δὲ εἰς τὸ χωρίον, ὑπὸ τῆς προφυλακῆς τῶν λῃστῶν ἁλίσκεται, μήτε φεύγων μήτε παραιτούμενος, ἀλλὰ βοῶν 'ἐπὶ τοῦτ' ἐλήλυθα, ἐπὶ τὸν ἄρχοντα ὑμῶν ἀγάγετέ με·' ὃς τέως, ὥσπερ ὤπλιστο, ἀνέμενεν, ὡς δὲ προσιόντα ἐγνώρισε τὸν Ἰωάννην, εἰς φυγὴν αἰδεσθεὶς ἐτράπετο. ὁ δὲ ἐδίωκεν ἀνὰ κράτος, ἐπιλαθόμενος τῆς ἡλικίας τῆς ἑαυτοῦ, κεκραγώς 'τί με φεύγεις, τέκνον, τὸν σαυτοῦ πατέρα, τὸν γυμνόν, τὸν γέροντα; ἐλέησόν με, τέκνον, μὴ φοβοῦ· ἔχεις ἔτι ζωῆς ἐλπίδας. ἐγὼ Χριστῷ λόγον δώσω ὑπὲρ σοῦ· ἂν δέῃ, τὸν σὸν θάνατον ἑκὼν ὑπομενῶ, ὡς ὁ κύριος τὸν ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν· ὑπὲρ σοῦ τὴν ψυχὴν ἀντιδώσω τὴν ἐμήν. στῆθι, πίστευσον· Χριστός με ἀπέστειλεν.' ὃ δὲ ἀκούσας, πρῶτον ἔστη μὲν κάτω βλέπων, εἶτα ἔρριψεν τὰ ὅπλα, εἶτα τρέμων ἔκλαιεν πικρῶς· προσελθόντα δὲ τὸν γέροντα περιέλαβεν, ἀπολογούμενος ταῖς οἰμωγαῖς ὡς ἐδύνατο καὶ τοῖς δάκρυσι βαπτιζόμενος ἐκ δευτέρου, μόνην ἀποκρύπτων τὴν 14 15 16 17 18

Digitized by Google

what he had never had, nor could he fail John. But when John said, 'I ask back the young man and the soul of the brother,' the old man groaned deeply and shedding tears, said, 'He has died.' 'How and with what death?' 'He has died to God,' he said, 'for he turned out wicked and abandoned and finally a brigand, and now instead of the church he has taken to the mountains with an armed band of men like himself.' Then the apostle rent his garments and beat his head with great lamentation. 'Well,' he said, 'it was a fine guardian whom I left for the soul of our brother. But let me have a horse and some one to show me the way.' So he rode, just as he was, straight from the church. When he came to the place he was seized by the sentinel of the brigands and neither fled nor made excuses, but called out, 'This is why I am come; take me to your leader.' The leader waited for him, armed as he was, but when he recognized John on his approach, he turned and fled in shame. But John pursued with all his might, forgetting his age and calling out, 'Why do you run away from me, child, your own father, unarmed and old? Pity me, child, do not fear me! You have still hope of life. I will account to Christ for you. If it must be, I will willingly suffer your death, as the Lord suffered for us; for your life, I will give my own. Stay, believe; Christ sent me.' When he heard this he first stood looking down, then he tore off his weapons, then he began to tremble and to weep bitterly. He embraced the old man when he came up, pleading for himself with lamentations as best he could, baptized a second time in his tears, but his right

Digitized by Google

δεξιάν· ὃ δ' ἐγγυώμενος, ἐπομνύμενος ὡς ἄφεσιν 19
αὐτῷ παρὰ τοῦ σωτῆρος ηὕρηται, δεόμενος, γονυπετῶν, αὐτὴν τὴν δεξιὰν ὡς ὑπὸ τῆς μετανοίας κεκαθαρμένην καταφιλῶν, ἐπὶ τὴν ἐκκλησίαν ἐπανήγαγεν, καὶ δαψιλέσι μὲν εὐχαῖς ἐξαιτούμενος, συνεχέσι δὲ νηστείαις συναγωνιζόμενος, ποικίλαις δὲ σειρῆσι λόγων κατεπᾴδων αὐτοῦ τὴν γνώμην, οὐ πρότερον ἀπῆλθεν, ὥς φασιν, πρὶν αὐτὸν ἐπιστῆσαι τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ, διδοὺς μέγα παράδειγμα μετανοίας ἀληθινῆς καὶ μέγα γνώρισμα παλιγγενεσίας, τρόπαιον ἀναστάσεως βλεπομένης."[1] ταῦτα τοῦ Κλήμεντος, ἱστορίας ὁμοῦ καὶ ὠφελείας τῆς τῶν ἐντευξομένων ἕνεκεν, ἐνταῦθά μοι κείσθω.

XXIV. Φέρε δέ, καὶ τοῦδε τοῦ ἀποστόλου τὰς 1
ἀναντιρρήτους ἐπισημηνώμεθα γραφάς. καὶ δὴ 2
τὸ κατ' αὐτὸν εὐαγγέλιον ταῖς ὑπὸ τὸν οὐρανὸν διεγνωσμένον ἐκκλησίαις, πρῶτον ἀνωμολογήσθω· ὅτι γε μὴν εὐλόγως πρὸς τῶν ἀρχαίων ἐν τετάρτῃ μοίρᾳ τῶν ἄλλων τριῶν κατείλεκται, ταύτῃ ἂν γένοιτο δῆλον. οἱ θεσπέσιοι καὶ ὡς ἀληθῶς 3
θεοπρεπεῖς, φημὶ δὲ τοῦ Χριστοῦ τοὺς ἀποστόλους, τὸν βίον ἄκρως κεκαθαρμένοι καὶ ἀρετῇ πάσῃ τὰς
Acts 4, 13 2 Cor. 11 ψυχὰς κεκοσμημένοι, τὴν δὲ γλῶτταν ἰδιωτεύοντες, τῇ γε μὴν πρὸς τοῦ σωτῆρος αὐτοῖς δεδωρημένῃ θείᾳ καὶ παραδοξοποιῷ δυνάμει θαρσοῦντες, τὸ μὲν
1 Cor. 2, 4 ἐν πειθοῖ καὶ τέχνῃ λόγων τὰ τοῦ διδασκάλου μαθήματα πρεσβεύειν οὔτε ᾔδεσαν οὔτε ἐνεχείρουν, τῇ δὲ τοῦ θείου πνεύματος τοῦ συνεργοῦντος αὐτοῖς ἀποδείξει καὶ τῇ δι' αὐτῶν συντελουμένῃ θαυματουργῷ τοῦ Χριστοῦ δυνάμει μόνῃ χρώμενοι, τῆς τῶν οὐρανῶν βασιλείας τὴν γνῶσιν ἐπὶ πᾶσαν

[1] *Cf.* George Syncellus 653. 12-654. 16.

Digitized by Google

hand he kept back. But John assured him by pledges and protestations that he had found forgiveness for him with the Saviour, led him back, prayed and kneeled and kissed that right hand as though cleansed by his repentance. He brought him to the church, he prayed with many supplications, he joined with him in the struggle of continuous fasting, he worked on his mind by varied addresses and did not leave him, so they say, until he had restored him to the church, and thus gave a great example of true repentance and a great testimony of regeneration, the trophy of a visible resurrection." These remarks of Clement may be quoted both for the sake of the narrative and the edification of those who shall read them.

XXIV. But come, let us indicate the undoubted writings of this Apostle.[1] Let the Gospel according to him be first recognized, for it is read in all the churches under heaven. Moreover, that it was reasonable for the ancients to reckon it in the fourth place after the other three may be explained thus. Those inspired and venerable ancients, I mean Christ's Apostles, had completely purified their life and adorned their souls with every virtue, yet were but simple men in speech. Though they were indeed bold in the divine and wonder-working power given them by the Saviour, they had neither the knowledge nor the desire to represent the teachings of the Master in persuasive or artistic language, but they used only the proof of the Spirit of God which worked with them, and the wonder-working power of Christ which was consummated through them. Thus they announced the knowledge of the Kingdom of Heaven

[1] John.

Digitized by Google

κατήγγελλον τὴν οἰκουμένην, σπουδῆς τῆς περὶ τὸ λογογραφεῖν μικρὰν ποιούμενοι φροντίδα. καὶ 4
τοῦτ' ἔπραττον ἄτε μείζονι καὶ ὑπὲρ ἄνθρωπον ἐξυπηρετούμενοι διακονίᾳ. ὁ γοῦν Παῦλος πάντων ἐν παρασκευῇ λόγων δυνατώτατος νοήμασίν τε ἱκανώτατος γεγονώς, οὐ πλέον τῶν βραχυτάτων ἐπιστολῶν γραφῇ παραδέδωκεν, καίτοι μυρία γε καὶ
2 Cor. 12, 2–4 ἀπόρρητα λέγειν ἔχων, ἄτε τῶν μέχρις οὐρανοῦ τρίτου θεωρημάτων ἐπιψαύσας ἐπ' αὐτόν τε τὸν θεοπρεπῆ παράδεισον ἁναρπασθεὶς καὶ τῶν ἐκεῖσε ῥημάτων ἀρρήτων ἀξιωθεὶς ἐπακοῦσαι. οὐκ 5
ἄπειροι μὲν οὖν ὑπῆρχον τῶν αὐτῶν καὶ οἱ λοιποὶ τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν φοιτηταί, δώδεκα μὲν ἀπόστολοι, ἑβδομήκοντα δὲ μαθηταί, ἄλλοι τε ἐπὶ τούτοις μυρίοι· ὅμως δ' οὖν ἐξ ἁπάντων τῶν τοῦ κυρίου διατριβῶν ὑπομνήματα Ματθαῖος ἡμῖν καὶ Ἰωάννης μόνοι καταλελοίπασιν· οὓς καὶ ἐπάναγκες ἐπὶ τὴν γραφὴν ἐλθεῖν κατέχει λόγος. Ματθαῖός τε 6
γὰρ πρότερον Ἑβραίοις κηρύξας, ὡς ἤμελλεν καὶ ἐφ' ἑτέρους ἰέναι, πατρίῳ γλώττῃ γραφῇ παραδοὺς τὸ κατ' αὐτὸν εὐαγγέλιον, τὸ λεῖπον τῇ αὐτοῦ παρουσίᾳ τούτοις ἀφ' ὧν ἐστέλλετο, διὰ τῆς γραφῆς ἀπεπλήρου· ἤδη δὲ Μάρκου καὶ Λουκᾶ τῶν κατ' αὐτοὺς 7
εὐαγγελίων τὴν ἔκδοσιν πεποιημένων, Ἰωάννην φασὶ τὸν πάντα χρόνον ἀγράφῳ κεχρημένον κηρύγματι, τέλος καὶ ἐπὶ τὴν γραφὴν ἐλθεῖν τοιᾶσδε χάριν αἰτίας. τῶν προαναγραφέντων τριῶν εἰς πάντας ἤδη καὶ εἰς αὐτὸν διαδεδομένων, ἀποδέξασθαι μέν φασιν, ἀλήθειαν αὐτοῖς ἐπιμαρτυρήσαντα, μόνην δὲ ἄρα λείπεσθαι τῇ γραφῇ τὴν περὶ τῶν ἐν πρώτοις καὶ κατ' ἀρχὴν τοῦ κηρύγματος ὑπὸ τοῦ Χριστοῦ πεπραγμένων διήγησιν. καὶ ἀληθής γε ὁ λόγος. 8

Digitized by Google

to all the world and cared but little for attention to their style. And this they did inasmuch as they were serving a greater, superhuman ministry. Thus Paul, the most powerful of all in the preparation of argument and the strongest thinker, committed to writing no more than short epistles, though he had ten thousand ineffable things to say, seeing that he had touched the vision of the third heaven, had been caught up to the divine paradise itself, and was there granted the hearing of ineffable words. Nor were the other pupils of our Saviour without experience of the same things,—the twelve Apostles and the seventy disciples and ten thousand others in addition to them. Yet nevertheless of all those who had been with the Lord only Matthew and John have left us their recollections, and tradition says that they took to writing perforce. Matthew had first preached to Hebrews, and when he was on the point of going to others he transmitted in writing in his native language the Gospel according to himself, and thus supplied by writing the lack of his own presence to those from whom he was sent, and Mark and Luke had already published the Gospels according to them, but John, it is said, used all the time a message which was not written down, and at last took to writing for the following cause. The three gospels which had been written down before were distributed to all including himself; it is said that he welcomed them and testified to their truth but said that there was only lacking to the narrative the account of what was done by Christ at first and at the beginning of the preaching. The story is

Digitized by Google

τοὺς τρεῖς γοῦν εὐαγγελιστὰς συνιδεῖν πάρεστιν μόνα τὰ μετὰ τὴν ἐν τῷ δεσμωτηρίῳ Ἰωάννου τοῦ βαπτιστοῦ κάθειρξιν ἐφ' ἕνα ἐνιαυτὸν πεπραγμένα τῷ σωτῆρι συγγεγραφότας αὐτό τε τοῦτ' ἐπισημηναμένους κατ' ἀρχὰς τῆς αὐτῶν ἱστορίας· μετὰ 9
γοῦν τὴν τεσσαρακονταήμερον νηστείαν καὶ τὸν ἐπὶ ταύτῃ πειρασμὸν τὸν χρόνον τῆς ἰδίας γραφῆς ὁ μὲν
Matt. 4, 12 Ματθαῖος δηλοῖ λέγων "ἀκούσας δὲ ὅτι Ἰωάννης παρεδόθη, ἀνεχώρησεν" ἀπὸ τῆς Ἰουδαίας "εἰς
Mark 1, 14 τὴν Γαλιλαίαν," ὁ δὲ Μάρκος ὡσαύτως "μετὰ δὲ 10
τὸ παραδοθῆναι" φησίν "Ἰωάννην ἦλθεν Ἰησοῦς
Luke 3, 19. 20 εἰς τὴν Γαλιλαίαν," καὶ ὁ Λουκᾶς δὲ πρὶν ἄρξασθαι τῶν τοῦ Ἰησοῦ πράξεων, παραπλησίως ἐπιτηρεῖ, φάσκων ὡς ἄρα προσθεὶς Ἡρῴδης οἷς διεπράξατο πονηροῖς, "κατέκλεισε τὸν Ἰωάννην ἐν φυλακῇ." παρακληθέντα δὴ οὖν τούτων ἕνεκά φασι τὸν 11
ἀπόστολον Ἰωάννην τὸν ὑπὸ τῶν προτέρων εὐαγγελιστῶν παρασιωπηθέντα χρόνον καὶ τὰ κατὰ τοῦτον πεπραγμένα τῷ σωτῆρι (ταῦτα δ' ἦν τὰ πρὸ τῆς τοῦ βαπτιστοῦ καθείρξεως) τῷ κατ' αὐτὸν εὐαγγελίῳ παραδοῦναι, αὐτό τε τοῦτ' ἐπισηJohn 2, 11 μήνασθαι, τοτὲ μὲν φήσαντα "ταύτην ἀρχὴν
John 3, 23. 24 ἐποίησεν τῶν παραδόξων ὁ Ἰησοῦς," τοτὲ δὲ μνημονεύσαντα τοῦ βαπτιστοῦ μεταξὺ τῶν Ἰησοῦ πράξεων ὡς ἔτι τότε βαπτίζοντος ἐν Αἰνὼν ἐγγὺς τοῦ Σαλείμ, σαφῶς τε τοῦτο δηλοῦν ἐν τῷ λέγειν "οὔπω γὰρ ἦν Ἰωάννης βεβλημένος εἰς φυλακήν," οὐκοῦν ὁ μὲν Ἰωάννης τῇ τοῦ κατ' αὐτὸν εὐαγ- 12
γελίου γραφῇ τὰ μηδέπω τοῦ βαπτιστοῦ εἰς φυλακὴν βεβλημένου πρὸς τοῦ Χριστοῦ πραχθέντα παραδίδωσιν, οἱ δὲ λοιποὶ τρεῖς εὐαγγελισταὶ τὰ μετὰ τὴν εἰς τὸ δεσμωτήριον κάθειρξιν τοῦ βαπτιστοῦ

Digitized by Google

surely true. It is at least possible to see that the three evangelists related only what the Saviour did during one year after John the Baptist had been put in prison and that they stated this at the beginning of their narrative. At any rate, after the forty days' fast, and the temptation which followed Matthew fixes the time described in his own writing by saying that "hearing that John had been betrayed, he retreated" from Judaea "into Galilee." Similarly Mark says, "and after John was betrayed Jesus came into Galilee." And Luke, too, makes a similar observation before beginning the acts of Jesus saying that Herod added to the evil deeds which he had done by "shutting up John in prison." They say accordingly that for this reason the apostle John was asked to relate in his own gospel the period passed over in silence by the former evangelists and the things done during it by the Saviour (that is to say, the events before the imprisonment of the Baptist), and that he indicated this at one time by saying, "this beginning of miracles did Jesus," at another by mentioning the Baptist in the midst of the acts of Jesus as at that time still baptizing at Aenon near Salem, and that he makes this plain by saying, "for John was not yet cast into prison." Thus John in the course of his gospel relates what Christ did before the Baptist had been thrown into prison, but the other three evangelists narrate the events after the imprisonment of the Baptist. If

Digitized by Google

μνημονεύουσιν· οἷς καὶ ἐπιστήσαντι οὐκέτ' ἂν 13
δόξαι διαφωνεῖν ἀλλήλοις τὰ εὐαγγέλια τῷ τὸ μὲν
κατὰ Ἰωάννην τὰ πρῶτα τῶν τοῦ Χριστοῦ πράξεων
περιέχειν, τὰ δὲ λοιπὰ τὴν ἐπὶ τέλει τοῦ χρόνου
αὐτῷ γεγενημένην ἱστορίαν· εἰκότως δ' οὖν τὴν μὲν
τῆς σαρκὸς τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν γενεαλογίαν ἅτε
Ματθαίῳ καὶ Λουκᾷ προγραφεῖσαν ἀποσιωπῆσαι
τὸν Ἰωάννην, τῆς δὲ θεολογίας ἀπάρξασθαι ὡς ἂν
αὐτῷ πρὸς τοῦ θείου πνεύματος οἷα κρείττονι
παραπεφυλαγμένης.

Ταῦτα μὲν οὖν ἡμῖν περὶ τῆς τοῦ κατὰ Ἰωάννην 14
εὐαγγελίου γραφῆς εἰρήσθω, καὶ τῆς κατὰ Μάρκον
δὲ ἡ γενομένη αἰτία ἐν τοῖς πρόσθεν ἡμῖν δεδήλωται·
ὁ δὲ Λουκᾶς ἀρχόμενος καὶ αὐτὸς τοῦ κατ' αὐτὸν 15
Luke 1, 1–4 συγγράμματος τὴν αἰτίαν προύθηκεν δι' ἣν πεποίηται
τὴν σύνταξιν, δηλῶν ὡς ἄρα πολλῶν καὶ ἄλλων
προπετέστερον ἐπιτετηδευκότων διήγησιν ποιήσα-
σθαι ὧν αὐτὸς πεπληροφόρητο λόγων, ἀναγκαίως
ἀπαλλάττων ἡμᾶς τῆς περὶ τοὺς ἄλλους ἀμφηρίστου
ὑπολήψεως, τὸν ἀσφαλῆ λόγον ὧν αὐτὸς ἱκανῶς τὴν
ἀλήθειαν κατειλήφει ἐκ τῆς ἅμα Παύλῳ συνουσίας
τε καὶ διατριβῆς καὶ τῆς τῶν λοιπῶν ἀποστόλων
ὁμιλίας ὠφελημένος, διὰ τοῦ ἰδίου παρέδωκεν
εὐαγγελίου. καὶ ταῦτα μὲν ἡμεῖς περὶ τούτων· 16
οἰκειότερον δὲ κατὰ καιρὸν διὰ τῆς τῶν ἀρχαίων
παραθέσεως τὰ καὶ τοῖς ἄλλοις περὶ αὐτῶν εἰρημένα
πειρασόμεθα δηλῶσαι.

Τῶν δὲ Ἰωάννου γραμμάτων πρὸς τῷ εὐαγγελίῳ 17
καὶ ἡ προτέρα τῶν ἐπιστολῶν παρά τε τοῖς νῦν καὶ
τοῖς ἔτ' ἀρχαίοις ἀναμφίλεκτος ὡμολόγηται, ἀντιλέ- 18
γονται δὲ αἱ λοιπαὶ δύο, τῆς δ' Ἀποκαλύψεως εἰς

[1] The exact meaning of this word in Luke's preface was

Digitized by Google

this be understood the gospels no longer appear to disagree, because that according to John contains the first of the acts of Christ and the others the narrative of what he did at the end of the period, and it will seem probable that John passed over the genealogy of our Saviour according to the flesh, because it had been already written out by Matthew and Luke, and began with the description of his divinity since this had been reserved for him by the Divine Spirit as for one greater than they.

The above must suffice us concerning the writing of the Gospel according to John, and the cause for that according to Mark has been explained above. Luke himself at the beginning of his treatise prefixed an account of the cause for which he had made his compilation, explaining that while many others had somewhat rashly attempted to make a narrative of the things of which he had himself full knowledge,[1] he felt obliged to release us from the doubtful propositions of the others and related in his own gospel the accurate account of the things of which he had himself firmly learnt the truth from his profitable intercourse and life with Paul and his conversation with the other apostles. This must suffice us for the present, but at the proper time we will endeavour to explain by citation from the ancients what has been said on the point by others.

Of the writings of John in addition to the gospel the first of his epistles has been accepted without controversy by ancients and moderns alike but the other two are disputed, and as to the Revelation there

[1] probably as obscure in the fourth century as it is to us; but the "himself" in the Greek seems to imply that Eusebius thought that Luke was contrasting his own "full" knowledge with the imperfect efforts of his predecessors.

Digitized by Google

ἑκάτερον ἔτι νῦν παρὰ τοῖς πολλοῖς περιέλκεται ἡ δόξα· ὁμοίως γε μὴν ἐκ τῆς τῶν ἀρχαίων μαρτυρίας ἐν οἰκείῳ καιρῷ τὴν ἐπίκρισιν δέξεται καὶ αὐτή.

XXV. Εὔλογον δ' ἐνταῦθα γενομένους ἀνακε- 1
φαλαιώσασθαι τὰς δηλωθείσας τῆς καινῆς διαθήκης γραφάς. καὶ δὴ τακτέον ἐν πρώτοις τὴν ἁγίαν τῶν εὐαγγελίων τετρακτύν, οἷς ἕπεται ἡ τῶν Πράξεων τῶν ἀποστόλων γραφή· μετὰ δὲ ταύτην τὰς Παύλου 2
καταλεκτέον ἐπιστολάς, αἷς ἑξῆς τὴν φερομένην Ἰωάννου προτέραν καὶ ὁμοίως τὴν Πέτρου κυρωτέον ἐπιστολήν· ἐπὶ τούτοις τακτέον, εἴ γε φανείη, τὴν Ἀποκάλυψιν Ἰωάννου, περὶ ἧς τὰ δόξαντα κατὰ καιρὸν ἐκθησόμεθα. καὶ ταῦτα μὲν ἐν ὁμολογου- 3
μένοις· τῶν δ' ἀντιλεγομένων, γνωρίμων δ' οὖν ὅμως τοῖς πολλοῖς, ἡ λεγομένη Ἰακώβου φέρεται καὶ ἡ Ἰούδα ἥ τε Πέτρου δευτέρα ἐπιστολὴ καὶ ἡ ὀνομαζομένη δευτέρα καὶ τρίτη Ἰωάννου, εἴτε τοῦ εὐαγγελιστοῦ τυγχάνουσαι εἴτε καὶ ἑτέρου ὁμωνύμου ἐκείνῳ. ἐν τοῖς νόθοις κατατετάχθω καὶ τῶν 4
Παύλου Πράξεων ἡ γραφὴ ὅ τε λεγόμενος Ποιμὴν καὶ ἡ Ἀποκάλυψις Πέτρου καὶ πρὸς τούτοις ἡ φερομένη Βαρναβᾶ ἐπιστολὴ καὶ τῶν ἀποστόλων αἱ λεγόμεναι Διδαχαὶ ἔτι τε, ὡς ἔφην, ἡ Ἰωάννου Ἀποκάλυψις, εἰ φανείη· ἣν τινες, ὡς ἔφην, ἀθετοῦσιν, ἕτεροι δὲ ἐγκρίνουσιν τοῖς ὁμολογουμένοις. ἤδη δ' ἐν τούτοις τινὲς καὶ τὸ καθ' Ἑβραίους 5
εὐαγγέλιον κατέλεξαν, ᾧ μάλιστα Ἑβραίων οἱ τὸν Χριστὸν παραδεξάμενοι χαίρουσιν. ταῦτα δὲ 6
πάντα τῶν ἀντιλεγομένων ἂν εἴη, ἀναγκαίως δὲ καὶ τούτων ὅμως τὸν κατάλογον πεποιήμεθα, διακρίνοντες τάς τε κατὰ τὴν ἐκκλησιαστικὴν παράδοσιν

Digitized by Google

have been many advocates of either opinion up to the present. This, too, shall be similarly illustrated by quotations from the ancients at the proper time.

XXV. At this point it seems reasonable to summarize the writings of the New Testament which have been quoted. In the first place should be put the holy tetrad of the Gospels. To them follows the writing of the Acts of the Apostles. After this should be reckoned the Epistles of Paul. Following them the Epistle of John called the first, and in the same way should be recognized the Epistle of Peter. In addition to these should be put, if it seem desirable, the Revelation of John, the arguments concerning which we will expound at the proper time. These belong to the Recognized Books. Of the Disputed Books which are nevertheless known to most are the Epistle called of James, that of Jude, the second Epistle of Peter, and the so-called second and third Epistles of John which may be the work of the evangelist or of some other with the same name. Among the books which are not genuine must be reckoned the Acts of Paul, the work entitled the Shepherd, the Apocalypse of Peter, and in addition to them the letter called of Barnabas and the so-called Teachings of the Apostles. And in addition, as I said, the Revelation of John, if this view prevail. For, as I said, some reject it, but others count it among the Recognized Books. Some have also counted the Gospel according to the Hebrews in which those of the Hebrews who have accepted Christ take a special pleasure. These would all belong to the disputed books, but we have nevertheless been obliged to make a list of them, distinguishing between those writings which, according to the tradition of

Digitized by Google

ἀληθεῖς καὶ ἁπλάστους καὶ ἀνωμολογημένας γραφὰς καὶ τὰς ἄλλως παρὰ ταύτας, οὐκ ἐνδιαθήκους μὲν ἀλλὰ καὶ ἀντιλεγομένας, ὅμως δὲ παρὰ πλείστοις τῶν ἐκκλησιαστικῶν γινωσκομένας, ἵν' εἰδέναι ἔχοιμεν αὐτάς τε ταύτας καὶ τὰς ὀνόματι τῶν ἀποστόλων πρὸς τῶν αἱρετικῶν προφερομένας ἤτοι ὡς Πέτρου καὶ Θωμᾶ καὶ Ματθία ἢ καί τινων παρὰ τούτους ἄλλων εὐαγγέλια περιεχούσας ἢ ὡς Ἀνδρέου καὶ Ἰωάννου καὶ τῶν ἄλλων ἀποστόλων πράξεις· ὧν οὐδὲν οὐδαμῶς ἐν συγγράμματι τῶν κατὰ τὰς διαδοχὰς ἐκκλησιαστικῶν τις ἀνὴρ εἰς μνήμην ἀγαγεῖν ἠξίωσεν, πόρρω δέ που καὶ ὁ τῆς 7
φράσεως παρὰ τὸ ἦθος τὸ ἀποστολικὸν ἐναλλάττει χαρακτήρ, ἥ τε γνώμη καὶ ἡ τῶν ἐν αὐτοῖς φερομένων προαίρεσις πλεῖστον ὅσον τῆς ἀληθοῦς ὀρθοδοξίας ἀπᾴδουσα, ὅτι δὴ αἱρετικῶν ἀνδρῶν ἀναπλάσματα τυγχάνει, σαφῶς παρίστησιν· ὅθεν οὐδ' ἐν νόθοις αὐτὰ κατατακτέον, ἀλλ' ὡς ἄτοπα πάντῃ καὶ δυσσεβῆ παραιτητέον.

Iren. 1, 23. 5 XXVI. Ἴωμεν δὴ λοιπὸν καὶ ἐπὶ τὴν ἑξῆς 1
ἱστορίαν. Σίμωνα τὸν μάγον Μένανδρος διαδεξάμενος, ὅπλον δεύτερον οὐ χεῖρον τοῦ προτέρου τῆς διαβολικῆς ἐνεργείας ἀποδείκνυται τὸν τρόπον. ἦν καὶ οὗτος Σαμαρεύς, εἰς ἄκρον δὲ γοητείας οὐκ ἔλαττον τοῦ διδασκάλου προελθών, μείζοσιν ἐπιδαψιλεύεται τερατολογίαις, ἑαυτὸν μὲν ὡς ἄρα εἴη, λέγων, ὁ σωτὴρ ἐπὶ τῇ τῶν ἀνθρώπων ἄνωθέν ποθεν ἐξ ἀοράτων αἰώνων ἀπεσταλμένος σωτηρίᾳ, διδάσκων δὲ μὴ ἄλλως δύνασθαί τινα καὶ αὐτῶν τῶν 2
κοσμοποιῶν ἀγγέλων περιγενήσεσθαι, μὴ πρότερον διὰ τῆς πρὸς αὐτοῦ παραδιδομένης μαγικῆς ἐμπειρίας ἀχθέντα καὶ διὰ τοῦ μεταδιδομένου πρὸς αὐτοῦ

Digitized by Google

the Church, are true, genuine, and recognized, and those which differ from them in that they are not canonical but disputed, yet nevertheless are known to most of the writers of the Church, in order that we might know them and the writings which are put forward by heretics under the name of the apostles containing gospels such as those of Peter, and Thomas, and Matthias, and some others besides, or Acts such as those of Andrew and John and the other apostles. To none of these has any who belonged to the succession of the orthodox ever thought it right to refer in his writings. Moreover, the type of phraseology differs from apostolic style, and the opinion and tendency of their contents is widely dissonant from true orthodoxy and clearly shows that they are the forgeries of heretics. They ought, therefore, to be reckoned not even among spurious books but shunned as altogether wicked and impious.

XXVI. Let us now continue the narrative. Menander succeeded Simon Magus and showed himself as a weapon of the devil's power not inferior to his predecessor. He, too, was a Samaritan, progressed to the highest point of sorcery not less than his master, and abounded in greater wonders. He said of himself that he was the saviour who had been sent from above for the salvation of men from invisible aeons[1] and taught that no one, not even of the angels who made the world, could survive unless they were first rescued through the magic art which was transmitted by him and through the baptism

[1] The Greek word literally means "age," but in ecclesiastical Greek is sometimes used, as here, of the supernatural beings who form part of Gnostic theology.

Digitized by Google

βαπτίσματος, οὗ τοὺς καταξιουμένους ἀθανασίαν
ἀΐδιον ἐν αὐτῷ τούτῳ μεθέξειν τῷ βίῳ, μηκέτι
θνήσκοντας, αὐτοῦ δὲ παραμένοντας εἰς τὸ ἀεὶ
ἀγήρως τινὰς καὶ ἀθανάτους ἐσομένους. ταῦτα
μὲν οὖν καὶ ἐκ τῶν Εἰρηναίου διαγνῶναι ῥᾴδιον·
καὶ ὁ Ἰουστῖνος δὲ κατὰ τὸ αὐτὸ τοῦ Σίμωνος μνη- 3
μονεύσας, καὶ τὴν περὶ τούτου διήγησιν ἐπιφέρει,
Justin, *Apol.* 1, 26 λέγων· "Μένανδρον δέ τινα καὶ αὐτὸν Σαμαρέα,
τὸν ἀπὸ κώμης Καπαρατταίας, γενόμενον μαθητὴν
τοῦ Σίμωνος, οἰστρηθέντα καὶ αὐτὸν ὑπὸ τῶν
δαιμόνων καὶ ἐν Ἀντιοχείᾳ γενόμενον, πολλοὺς
ἐξαπατῆσαι διὰ μαγικῆς τέχνης οἴδαμεν· ὃς καὶ
τοὺς αὐτῷ ἑπομένους ὡς μὴ ἀποθνήσκοιεν, ἔπεισεν,
καὶ νῦν τινές εἰσιν, ἀπ' ἐκείνου τοῦτο ὁμολογοῦντες."

Ἦν δ' ἄρα διαβολικῆς ἐνεργείας διὰ τοιῶνδε 4
γοήτων τὴν Χριστιανῶν προσηγορίαν ὑποδυομένων
τὸ μέγα τῆς θεοσεβείας μυστήριον ἐπὶ μαγείᾳ σπου-
δάσαι διαβαλεῖν διασῦραί τε δι' αὐτῶν τὰ περὶ ψυχῆς
ἀθανασίας καὶ νεκρῶν ἀναστάσεως ἐκκλησιαστικὰ
δόγματα. ἀλλ' οὗτοι μὲν τούτους σωτῆρας ἐπι-
γραψάμενοι τῆς ἀληθοῦς ἀποπεπτώκασιν ἐλπίδος·
XXVII. ἄλλους δ' ὁ πονηρὸς δαίμων, τῆς περὶ τὸν 1
Χριστὸν τοῦ θεοῦ διαθέσεως ἀδυνατῶν ἐκσεῖσαι,
θατεραλήπτους εὑρὼν ἐσφετερίζετο· Ἐβιωναίους
τούτους οἰκείως ἐπεφήμιζον οἱ πρῶτοι, πτωχῶς καὶ
ταπεινῶς τὰ περὶ τοῦ Χριστοῦ δοξάζοντας. λιτὸν 2
μὲν γὰρ αὐτὸν καὶ κοινὸν ἡγοῦντο, κατὰ προκοπὴν
ἤθους αὐτὸ μόνον ἄνθρωπον δεδικαιωμένον ἐξ ἀνδρός
τε κοινωνίας καὶ τῆς Μαρίας γεγεννημένον· δεῖν δὲ
πάντως αὐτοῖς τῆς νομικῆς θρησκείας ὡς μὴ ἂν διὰ
μόνης τῆς εἰς τὸν Χριστὸν πίστεως καὶ τοῦ κατ'
αὐτὴν βίου σωθησομένοις. ἄλλοι δὲ παρὰ τού- 3

Digitized by Google

which he delivered, for those who were vouchsafed it would obtain a share of eternal immortality in this life itself, no longer mortal but remaining here, destined to everlasting and ageless immortality. This point can also be easily studied from the writings of Irenaeus. Justin, too, in the same way after mentioning Simon continues his account of him by saying, "We also know that a certain Menander, who also was a Samaritan from the village of Caparattaea, became a disciple of Simon and being similarly stimulated by the demons appeared in Antioch and deceived many by magical arts. He persuaded those who followed him that they would not die, and there are still some of his followers who believe this."

It was assuredly at the instigation of the devil that the name of Christian was adopted by such sorcerers to calumniate by magic the great mystery of religion and through them to destroy the teaching of the Church on the immortality of the soul and the resurrection of the dead. Those who termed these Saviours fell from the true hope. XXVII. But others the wicked demon, when he could not alienate them from God's plan in Christ, made his own, when he found them by a different snare. The first Christians gave these the suitable name of Ebionites because they had poor and mean opinions concerning Christ. They held him to be a plain and ordinary man who had achieved righteousness merely by the progress of his character and had been born naturally from Mary and her husband. They insisted on the complete observation of the Law, and did not think that they would be saved by faith in Christ alone and by a life in accordance with it. But there were others besides these

Digitized by Google

τους τῆς αὐτῆς ὄντες προσηγορίας, τὴν μὲν τῶν εἰρημένων ἔκτοπον διεδίδρασκον ἀτοπίαν, ἐκ παρθένου καὶ ἁγίου πνεύματος μὴ ἀρνούμενοι γεγονέναι τὸν κύριον, οὐ μὴν ἔθ' ὁμοίως καὶ οὗτοι προϋπάρχειν αὐτὸν θεὸν λόγον ὄντα καὶ σοφίαν ὁμολογοῦντες, τῇ τῶν προτέρων περιετρέποντο δυσσεβείᾳ, μάλιστα ὅτε καὶ τὴν σωματικὴν περὶ τὸν νόμον λατρείαν ὁμοίως ἐκείνοις περιέπειν ἐσπούδαζον. οὗτοι δὲ τοῦ μὲν ἀποστόλου πάμ- 4
παν τὰς ἐπιστολὰς ἀρνητέας ἡγοῦντο εἶναι δεῖν, ἀποστάτην ἀποκαλοῦντες αὐτὸν τοῦ νόμου, εὐαγγελίῳ δὲ μόνῳ τῷ καθ' Ἑβραίους λεγομένῳ χρώμενοι, τῶν λοιπῶν σμικρὸν ἐποιοῦντο λόγον· καὶ τὸ μὲν σάββατον καὶ τὴν ἄλλην Ἰουδαϊκὴν 5
ἀγωγὴν ὁμοίως ἐκείνοις παρεφύλαττον, ταῖς δ' αὖ κυριακαῖς ἡμέραις ἡμῖν τὰ παραπλήσια εἰς μνήμην τῆς σωτηρίου ἀναστάσεως ἐπετέλουν· ὅθεν παρὰ τὴν τοιαύτην ἐγχείρησιν τῆς τοιᾶσδε 6
λελόγχασι προσηγορίας, τοῦ Ἐβιωναίων ὀνόματος τὴν τῆς διανοίας πτωχείαν αὐτῶν ὑποφαίνοντος· ταύτῃ γὰρ ἐπίκλην ὁ πτωχὸς παρ' Ἑβραίοις ὀνομάζεται.

XXVIII. Κατὰ τοὺς δηλουμένους χρόνους ἑτέ- 1
ρας αἱρέσεως ἀρχηγὸν γενέσθαι Κήρινθον παρειλήφαμεν· Γάϊος, οὗ φωνὰς ἤδη πρότερον παρατέθειμαι, ἐν τῇ φερομένῃ αὐτοῦ ζητήσει ταῦτα περὶ αὐτοῦ γράφει·

Rev. 1, 2. 22, 8 Rev. 20, 4–6 Rev. 21, 2. 10. 22, 1. 2. 14. 17 Rev. 20, 3. 6 Rev. 19, 7. 9. 21, 2. 9. 22, 17

"Ἀλλὰ καὶ Κήρινθος ὁ δι' ἀποκαλύψεων ὡς ὑπὸ 2
ἀποστόλου μεγάλου γεγραμμένων τερατολογίας ἡμῖν ὡς δι' ἀγγέλων αὐτῷ δεδειγμένας ψευδόμενος ἐπεισάγει, λέγων μετὰ τὴν ἀνάστασιν ἐπίγειον εἶναι τὸ βασίλειον τοῦ Χριστοῦ καὶ πάλιν ἐπι-

Digitized by Google

who have the same name. These escaped the absurd folly of the first mentioned, and did not deny that the Lord was born of a Virgin and the Holy Spirit, but nevertheless agreed with them in not confessing his pre-existence as God, being the Logos and Wisdom. Thus they shared in the impiety of the former class, especially in that they were equally zealous to insist on the literal observance of the Law. They thought that the letters of the Apostle[1] ought to be wholly rejected and called him an apostate from the Law. They used only the Gospel called according to the Hebrews and made little account of the rest. Like the former they used to observe the sabbath and the rest of the Jewish ceremonial, but on Sundays celebrated rites like ours in commemoration of the Saviour's resurrection. Wherefore from these practices they have obtained their name, for the name of Ebionites indicates the poverty of their intelligence, for this name means "poor" in Hebrew.[2]

XXVIII. We have received the tradition that at the time under discussion Cerinthus founded another heresy. Gaius, whose words I have quoted before, in the inquiry attributed to him writes as follows about Cerinthus. "Moreover, Cerinthus, who through revelations attributed to the writing of a great apostle, lyingly introduces portents to us as though shown him by angels, and says that after the resurrection the kingdom of Christ will be on earth and that

[1] That is, Paul.

[2] The word does mean "poor" in Hebrew; but it is not known why it was applied to the Jewish Christians. One guess is as good as another.

Digitized by Google

θυμίαις καὶ ἡδοναῖς ἐν Ἱερουσαλὴμ τὴν σάρκα πολιτευομένην δουλεύειν. καὶ ἐχθρὸς ὑπάρχων ταῖς γραφαῖς τοῦ θεοῦ, ἀριθμὸν χιλιονταετίας ἐν γάμῳ ἑορτῆς, θέλων πλανᾶν, λέγει γίνεσθαι."

Καὶ Διονύσιος δέ, ὁ τῆς κατὰ Ἀλεξάνδρειαν 3
παροικίας καθ' ἡμᾶς τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν εἰληχώς, ἐν δευτέρῳ τῶν Ἐπαγγελιῶν περὶ τῆς Ἰωάννου Ἀποκαλύψεως εἰπών τινα ὡς ἐκ τῆς ἀνέκαθεν παραδόσεως, τοῦ αὐτοῦ μέμνηται ἀνδρὸς τούτοις τοῖς ῥήμασιν·

" Κήρινθον δέ, τὸν καὶ τὴν ἀπ' ἐκείνου κληθεῖ- 4
σαν Κηρινθιανὴν αἵρεσιν συστησάμενον, ἀξιόπιστον ἐπιφημίσαι θελήσαντα τῷ ἑαυτοῦ πλάσματι ὄνομα. τοῦτο γὰρ εἶναι τῆς διδασκαλίας αὐτοῦ 5
τὸ δόγμα, ἐπίγειον ἔσεσθαι τὴν τοῦ Χριστοῦ βασιλείαν, καὶ ὧν αὐτὸς ὠρέγετο, φιλοσώματος ὢν καὶ πάνυ σαρκικός, ἐν τούτοις ὀνειροπολεῖν ἔσεσθαι, γαστρὸς καὶ τῶν ὑπὸ γαστέρα πλησμοναῖς, τοῦτ' ἐστὶ σιτίοις καὶ πότοις καὶ γάμοις καὶ δι' ὧν εὐφημότερον ταῦτα ᾠήθη ποριεῖσθαι, ἑορταῖς καὶ θυσίαις καὶ ἱερείων σφαγαῖς."

Iren. 1, 26. 1 Ταῦτα Διονύσιος· ὁ δὲ Εἰρηναῖος ἀπορρητοτέ- 6
ρας δή τινας τοῦ αὐτοῦ ψευδοδοξίας ἐν πρώτῳ συγγράμματι τῶν πρὸς τὰς αἱρέσεις προθείς, ἐν τῷ τρίτῳ καὶ ἱστορίαν οὐκ ἀξίαν λήθης τῇ γραφῇ
Iren. 3, 3. 4 παραδέδωκεν, ὡς ἐκ παραδόσεως Πολυκάρπου φάσκων Ἰωάννην τὸν ἀπόστολον εἰσελθεῖν ποτε ἐν βαλανείῳ, ὥστε λούσασθαι, γνόντα δὲ ἔνδον ὄντα τὸν Κήρινθον, ἀποπηδῆσαί τε τοῦ τόπου καὶ ἐκφυγεῖν θύραζε, μηδ' ὑπομείναντα τὴν αὐτὴν αὐτῷ ὑποδῦναι στέγην, ταὐτὸ δὲ τοῦτο καὶ τοῖς σὺν αὐτῷ παραινέσαι, φήσαντα " φύγωμεν, μὴ

Digitized by Google

humanity living in Jerusalem will again be the slave of lust and pleasure. He is the enemy of the scriptures of God and in his desire to deceive says that the marriage feast [1] will last a thousand years." Dionysius, too, who held the bishopric of the diocese of Alexandria in our time, in the second book of his Promises makes some remarks about the Apocalypse of John as though from ancient tradition and refers to the same Cerinthus in these words, " Cerinthus too, who founded the Cerinthian heresy named after him, wished to attach a name worthy of credit to his own invention, for the doctrine of his teaching was this, that the kingdom of Christ would be on earth, and being fond of his body and very carnal he dreamt of a future according to his own desires, given up to the indulgence of the flesh, that is, eating and drinking and marrying, and to those things which seem a euphemism for these things, feasts and sacrifices and the slaughter of victims."

Dionysius said this and Irenaeus in his first book *Against Heresies* quoted some of his more abominable errors, and in the third book has committed to writing a narrative, which deserves not to be forgotten, stating how, according to the tradition of Polycarp, the apostle John once went into a bath-house to wash, but when he knew that Cerinthus was within leapt out of the place and fled from the door, for he did not endure to be even under the same roof with him, and enjoined on those who were with him to do the same, saying, " Let us flee, lest the bath-house

[1] This is the obvious sense of the Greek which is, however, clearly corrupt. It would appear that Gaius thought that Cerinthus was the writer of the Apocalypse.

Digitized by Google

καὶ τὸ βαλανεῖον συμπέσῃ, ἔνδον ὄντος Κηρίνθου τοῦ τῆς ἀληθείας ἐχθροῦ."

XXIX. Ἐπὶ τούτων δῆτα καὶ ἡ λεγομένη τῶν 1
Νικολαϊτῶν αἵρεσις ἐπὶ σμικρότατον συνέστη
Rev. 2, 6. 15 χρόνον, ἧς δὴ καὶ ἡ τοῦ Ἰωάννου Ἀποκάλυψις
Acts 6, 5 μνημονεύει· οὗτοι Νικόλαον ἕνα τῶν ἀμφὶ τὸν Στέφανον διακόνων πρὸς τῶν ἀποστόλων ἐπὶ τῇ τῶν ἐνδεῶν θεραπείᾳ προκεχειρισμένων ἠὔχουν. ὅ γε μὴν Ἀλεξανδρεὺς Κλήμης ἐν τρίτῳ Στρωματεῖ ταῦτα περὶ αὐτοῦ κατὰ λέξιν ἱστορεῖ·

Clem. *Strom.* 3, 25. 26 "Ὡραίαν, φασί, γυναῖκα ἔχων οὗτος, μετὰ τὴν 2
ἀνάληψιν τὴν τοῦ σωτῆρος πρὸς τῶν ἀποστόλων
ὀνειδισθεὶς ζηλοτυπίαν, εἰς μέσον ἀγαγὼν τὴν
γυναῖκα γῆμαι τῷ βουλομένῳ ἐπέτρεψεν. ἀκό-
λουθον γὰρ εἶναί φασι τὴν πρᾶξιν ταύτην ἐκείνῃ
Clem. *Strom.* 2, 118 τῇ φωνῇ τῇ ὅτι 'παραχρᾶσθαι τῇ σαρκὶ δεῖ,'
καὶ δὴ κατακολουθήσαντες τῷ γεγενημένῳ τῷ
τε εἰρημένῳ ἁπλῶς καὶ ἀβασανίστως, ἀνέδην
ἐκπορνεύουσιν οἱ τὴν αἵρεσιν αὐτοῦ μετιόντες.
πυνθάνομαι δ' ἐγὼ τὸν Νικόλαον μηδεμιᾷ ἑτέρᾳ 3
παρ' ἣν ἔγημε κεχρῆσθαι γυναικί, τῶν τε ἐκείνου
τέκνων τὰς μὲν θηλείας καταγηρᾶσαι παρθένους,
ἄφθορον δὲ διαμεῖναι τὸν υἱόν· ὧν οὕτως ἐχόντων
ἀποβολὴ πάθους ἦν ἡ εἰς μέσον τῶν ἀποστόλων
τῆς ζηλοτυπουμένης ἐκκύκλησις γυναικός, καὶ ἡ
ἐγκράτεια τῶν περισπουδάστων ἡδονῶν τὸ 'παρα-
χρᾶσθαι τῇ σαρκὶ' ἐδίδασκεν. οὐ γάρ, οἶμαι,
ἐβούλετο κατὰ τὴν τοῦ σωτῆρος ἐντολὴν 'δυσὶ
κυρίοις δουλεύειν,' ἡδονῇ καὶ κυρίῳ. λέγουσι 4
Matt. 6, 24 δ' οὖν καὶ τὸν Ματθίαν οὕτω διδάξαι, σαρκὶ μὲν
Luke 16, 13 μάχεσθαι καὶ παραχρᾶσθαι μηδὲν αὐτῇ πρὸς
ἡδονὴν ἐνδιδόντα, ψυχὴν δὲ αὔξειν διὰ πίστεως καὶ

Digitized by Google

fall in, for Cerinthus, the enemy of the truth, is within."

XXIX. At this time, too, there existed for a short time the heresy of the Nicolaïtans of which the Apocalypse of John also makes mention. These claimed Nicolas, one of the deacons in the company of Stephen who were appointed by the Apostles for the service of the poor. Clement of Alexandria in the third book of the *Stromata* gives the following account of him. "He had, they say, a beautiful wife; but after the ascension of the Saviour he was accused of jealousy by the apostles, and brought her forward and commanded her to be mated to anyone who wished. They say that this action was in consequence of the injunction 'it is necessary to abuse the flesh,' and that by following up what had been done and said with simplicity and without perversion those who follow his heresy lead a life of unrestrained license. But I have learned that Nicolas had nothing to do with any other woman beside her whom he married, and that of his children the daughters reached old age as virgins, and that the son remained uncorrupted. Since this is the case it is clear that the exposure of the wife of whom he was jealous in the midst of the disciples was the abandonment of passion, and that teaching the abuse of the flesh was continence from the pleasures which he had sought. For I think that according to the command of the Saviour he did not wish to serve two masters —pleasure and the Lord. They also say that this was the teaching of Matthias, to slight the flesh and abuse it, yielding nothing to it for pleasure, but to make the soul grow through faith and knowledge."

Digitized by Google

γνώσεως." ταῦτα μὲν οὖν περὶ τῶν κατὰ τοὺς δηλουμένους χρόνους παραβραβεῦσαι τὴν ἀλήθειαν ἐγκεχειρηκότων, λόγου γε μὴν θᾶττον εἰς τὸ παντελὲς ἀπεσβηκότων εἰρήσθω.

XXX. Ὁ μέντοι Κλήμης, οὗ τὰς φωνὰς ἀρτίως 1
ἀνέγνωμεν, τοῖς προειρημένοις ἐξῆς διὰ τοὺς
ἀθετοῦντας τὸν γάμον τοὺς τῶν ἀποστόλων ἐξ-
Clem. *Strom.* 3, 52. 53 ετασθέντας ἐν συζυγίαις καταλέγει, φάσκων· "ἢ
καὶ τοὺς ἀποστόλους ἀποδοκιμάσουσιν; Πέτρος
μὲν γὰρ καὶ Φίλιππος ἐπαιδοποιήσαντο, Φίλιππος
δὲ καὶ τὰς θυγατέρας ἀνδράσιν ἐξέδωκεν, καὶ ὅ γε
Phil. 4, 3 Παῦλος οὐκ ὀκνεῖ ἔν τινι ἐπιστολῇ τὴν αὐτοῦ
1 Cor. 9, 5. 12 προσαγορεῦσαι σύζυγον, ἣν οὐ περιεκόμιζεν διὰ
τὸ τῆς ὑπηρεσίας εὐσταλές." ἐπεὶ δὲ τούτων 2
ἐμνήσθημεν, οὐ λυπεῖ καὶ ἄλλην ἀξιοδιήγητον
ἱστορίαν τοῦ αὐτοῦ παραθέσθαι, ἣν ἐν τῷ ἑβδόμῳ
Στρωματεῖ τοῦτον ἱστορῶν ἀνέγραψεν τὸν τρόπον·
Clem. *Strom.* 7, 63. 64 "φασὶ γοῦν τὸν μακάριον Πέτρον θεασάμενον τὴν
ἑαυτοῦ γυναῖκα ἀπαγομένην τὴν ἐπὶ θανάτῳ,
ἡσθῆναι μὲν τῆς κλήσεως χάριν καὶ τῆς εἰς οἶκον
ἀνακομιδῆς, ἐπιφωνῆσαι δὲ εὖ μάλα προτρεπτι-
κῶς καὶ παρακλητικῶς, ἐξ ὀνόματος προσειπόντα
'μέμνησο, ὦ αὕτη, τοῦ κυρίου.' τοιοῦτος ἦν
ὁ τῶν μακαρίων γάμος καὶ ἡ τῶν φιλτάτων
τελεία διάθεσις." καὶ ταῦτα δ', οἰκεῖα ὄντα τῇ
μετὰ χεῖρας ὑποθέσει, ἐνταῦθά μοι κατὰ καιρὸν
κείσθω.

XXXI. Παύλου μὲν οὖν καὶ Πέτρου τῆς 1
τελευτῆς ὅ τε χρόνος καὶ ὁ τρόπος καὶ πρὸς ἔτι
τῆς μετὰ τὴν ἀπαλλαγὴν τοῦ βίου τῶν σκηνω-
μάτων αὐτῶν καταθέσεως ὁ χῶρος ἤδη πρότερον
ἡμῖν δεδήλωται· τοῦ δὲ Ἰωάννου τὰ μὲν τοῦ 2

Digitized by Google

Let this suffice concerning the attempts made during this period to triumph against the truth which were, nevertheless, extinguished for ever more quickly than it takes to tell.

XXX. Clement, whose words we cited recently in the context of the previous quotation, enumerates, on account of those who reject marriage, those of the Apostles who were married, saying, "Or will they disapprove even of the Apostles? For Peter and Philip begat children, and Philip even gave his daughters to husbands, while Paul himself does not hesitate in one of his letters to address[1] his wife whom he did not take about with him in order to facilitate his mission." Since we have made these quotations there is no harm in adducing another memorable narrative of Clement which he wrote down in the seventh book of the *Stromata*, and narrates as follows: "They say that the blessed Peter when he saw his own wife led out to death rejoiced at her calling and at her return home, and called out to her in true warning and comfort, addressing her by her name, 'Remember the Lord.' Such was the marriage of the blessed and the perfect disposition of those dearest to them." Let this, cognate to the present subject, suffice for the moment.

XXXI. The time and manner of the death of Paul and of Peter, and the place where their corpses were laid after their departure from this life, have been already described by us. The date of the death of

[1] Philipp. iv. 3 γνήσιε σύζυγε, 'true yoke-fellow' or 'wife.'

Digitized by Google

χρόνου ἤδη πως εἴρηται, τὸ δέ γε τοῦ σκηνώματος αὐτοῦ χωρίον ἐξ ἐπιστολῆς Πολυκράτους (τῆς δ' ἐν Ἐφέσῳ παροικίας ἐπίσκοπος οὗτος ἦν) ἐπιδείκνυται, ἣν Οὐίκτορι Ῥωμαίων ἐπισκόπῳ γράφων, ὁμοῦ τε αὐτοῦ καὶ Φιλίππου μνημονεύει τοῦ ἀποστόλου τῶν τε τούτου θυγατέρων ὧδέ πως· "καὶ γὰρ κατὰ τὴν Ἀσίαν μεγάλα στοιχεῖα 3 κεκοίμηται· ἅτινα ἀναστήσεται τῇ ἐσχάτῃ ἡμέρᾳ τῆς παρουσίας τοῦ κυρίου, ἐν ᾗ ἔρχεται μετὰ δόξης ἐξ οὐρανοῦ καὶ ἀναζητήσει πάντας τοὺς ἁγίους, Φίλιππον τῶν δώδεκα ἀποστόλων, ὃς κεκοίμηται ἐν Ἱεραπόλει καὶ δύο θυγατέρες αὐτοῦ γεγηρακυῖαι παρθένοι καὶ ἡ ἑτέρα αὐτοῦ θυγάτηρ ἐν ἁγίῳ πνεύματι πολιτευσαμένη ἐν
John 13, 25. 21, 20 Ἐφέσῳ ἀναπαύεται· ἔτι δὲ καὶ Ἰωάννης, ὁ ἐπὶ τὸ στῆθος τοῦ κυρίου ἀναπεσών, ὃς ἐγενήθη
Exod. 28, 32–34 Lev. 8, 9 Matt. 18, 18 ἱερεὺς τὸ πέταλον πεφορεκὼς καὶ μάρτυς καὶ διδάσκαλος, οὗτος ἐν Ἐφέσῳ κεκοίμηται." ταῦτα 4 καὶ περὶ τῆς τῶνδε τελευτῆς· καὶ ἐν τῷ Γαΐου δέ, οὗ μικρῷ πρόσθεν ἐμνήσθημεν, διαλόγῳ Πρόκλος, πρὸς ὃν ἐποιεῖτο τὴν ζήτησιν, περὶ τῆς Φιλίππου καὶ τῶν θυγατέρων αὐτοῦ τελευτῆς, συνάδων τοῖς ἐκτεθεῖσιν, οὕτω φησίν· "μετὰ τοῦτον προφήτιδες τέσσαρες αἱ Φιλίππου γεγένηνται ἐν Ἱεραπόλει τῇ κατὰ τὴν Ἀσίαν· ὁ τάφος αὐτῶν ἐστιν ἐκεῖ καὶ ὁ τοῦ πατρὸς αὐτῶν." ταῦτα 5 μὲν οὗτος· ὁ δὲ Λουκᾶς ἐν ταῖς Πράξεσιν τῶν ἀποστόλων τῶν Φιλίππου θυγατέρων ἐν Καισαρείᾳ τῆς Ἰουδαίας ἅμα τῷ πατρὶ τότε διατριβουσῶν προφητικοῦ τε χαρίσματος ἠξιωμένων

[1] Bk. iii. 23. 4, where Irenaeus, *Haer.* ii. 22. 5 is quoted to show that John lived until the reign of Trajan.

Digitized by Google

John has also been already[1] mentioned, and the place of his body is shown by a letter of Polycrates (he was bishop of the diocese of Ephesus) which he wrote to Victor, bishop of Rome. In this he mentions both John, Philip the apostle,[2] and Philip's daughters as follows: "For great luminaries sleep in Asia, and they will rise again at the last day of the advent of the Lord, when he shall come with glory from heaven and call back all the saints, such as was Philip, one of the twelve apostles, who sleeps at Hierapolis with his two daughters who grew old as virgins and his third daughter[3] who lived in the Holy Spirit and rests in Ephesus. And there is also John, who leaned on the Lord's breast, who was a priest wearing the mitre,[4] and martyr and teacher, and he sleeps at Ephesus." So far concerning their deaths. And in the dialogue of Gaius, which we mentioned a little earlier, Proclus, with whom he was disputing, speaks thus about the death of Philip and his daughters and agrees with what has been stated. "After him the four daughters of Philip who were prophetesses were at Hierapolis in Asia. Their grave is there and so is their father's." So he says. And Luke in the Acts of the Apostles mentions the daughters of Philip who were then living with their father at Caesarea in Judaea and were vouchsafed the gift of prophecy. He says as

[1] Possibly Polycrates has confused Philip the Apostle and Philip the Deacon, and Eusebius did not notice it.

[2] This must be the meaning unless the text be corrupt. The Greek word translated "third" ought to mean "the second of two."

[3] The word πέταλον is used in the LXX. of the "plate" or "diadem" of the High Priest (*cf.* Exod. xxviii.), but what it means here has never been discovered.

Digitized by Google

Acts 21, 8. 9 μνημονεύει, κατὰ λέξιν ὧδέ πως λέγων· "ἤλθομεν εἰς Καισάρειαν, καὶ εἰσελθόντες εἰς τὸν οἶκον Φιλίππου τοῦ εὐαγγελιστοῦ, ὄντος ἐκ τῶν ἑπτά, ἐμείναμεν παρ' αὐτῷ. τούτῳ δὲ ἦσαν παρθένοι θυγατέρες τέσσαρες προφητεύουσαι."

Τὰ μὲν οὖν εἰς ἡμετέραν ἐλθόντα γνῶσιν περί 6
τε τῶν ἀποστόλων καὶ τῶν ἀποστολικῶν χρόνων
ὧν τε καταλελοίπασιν ἡμῖν ἱερῶν γραμμάτων
καὶ τῶν ἀντιλεγομένων μέν, ὅμως δ' ἐν πλείσταις
ἐκκλησίαις παρὰ πολλοῖς δεδημοσιευμένων τῶν
τε παντελῶς νόθων καὶ τῆς ἀποστολικῆς ὀρθοδοξίας
ἀλλοτρίων ἐν τούτοις διειληφότες, ἐπὶ τὴν τῶν
ἑξῆς προϊωμεν ἱστορίαν.

XXXII. Μετὰ Νέρωνα καὶ Δομετιανὸν κατὰ 1
τοῦτον οὗ νῦν τοὺς χρόνους ἐξετάζομεν, μερικῶς
καὶ κατὰ πόλεις ἐξ ἐπαναστάσεως δήμων τὸν καθ'
ἡμῶν κατέχει λόγος ἀνακινηθῆναι διωγμόν· ἐν
ᾧ Συμεῶνα τὸν τοῦ Κλωπᾶ, ὃν δεύτερον κατα-
στῆναι τῆς ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις ἐκκλησίας ἐπίσκοπον
ἐδηλώσαμεν, μαρτυρίῳ τὸν βίον ἀναλῦσαι παρ-
ειλήφαμεν. καὶ τούτου μάρτυς αὐτὸς ἐκεῖνος, 2
οὗ διαφόροις ἤδη πρότερον ἐχρησάμεθα φωναῖς,
Ἡγήσιππος· ὃς δὴ περί τινων αἱρετικῶν ἱστορῶν,
ἐπιφέρει δηλῶν ὡς ἄρα ὑπὸ τούτων κατὰ τόνδε
τὸν χρόνον ὑπομείνας κατηγορίαν, πολυτρόπως
ὁ δηλούμενος ὡς ἂν Χριστιανὸς ἐπὶ πλείσταις
αἰκισθεὶς ἡμέραις αὐτόν τε τὸν δικαστὴν καὶ
τοὺς ἀμφ' αὐτὸν εἰς τὰ μέγιστα καταπλήξας, τῷ
τοῦ κυρίου πάθει παραπλήσιον τέλος ἀπηνέγκατο·
οὐδὲν δὲ οἷον καὶ τοῦ συγγραφέως ἐπακοῦσαι, 3
αὐτὰ δὴ ταῦτα κατὰ λέξιν ὧδέ πως ἱστοροῦντος
"ἀπὸ τούτων δηλαδὴ τῶν αἱρετικῶν κατηγοροῦσί

Digitized by Google

follows: "We came to Caesarea and entered into the house of Philip the Evangelist, one of the seven, and remained with him. And he had four daughters who were prophetesses."

We have now described the facts which have come to our knowledge concerning the Apostles and their times, the sacred writings which they have left us, those books which are disputed yet nevertheless are used openly by many in most churches, and those which are altogether fictitious and foreign to our historic orthodoxy. Let us now continue the narrative.

XXXII. After Nero and Domitian tradition says that under the Emperor whose times we are now describing persecution was raised against us sporadically, in some cities, from popular risings. We have learnt that in it Symeon, the son of Clopas, whom we showed to have been the second bishop of the church at Jerusalem, ended his life in martyrdom. The witness for this is that same Hegesippus, of whom we have already quoted several passages. After speaking of certain heretics he goes on to explain how Symeon was at this time accused by them and for many days was tortured in various manners for being a Christian, to the great astonishment of the judge and those with him, until he suffered an end like that of the Lord. But there is nothing better than to listen to the historian who tells these facts as follows. "Some of these (that

Digitized by Google

τινες Σίμωνος τοῦ Κλωπᾶ ὡς ὄντος ἀπὸ Δαυὶδ καὶ Χριστιανοῦ, καὶ οὕτως μαρτυρεῖ ἐτῶν ὢν $\overline{ρκ}$ ἐπὶ Τραϊανοῦ Καίσαρος καὶ ὑπατικοῦ Ἀττικοῦ." φησὶν δὲ ὁ αὐτὸς ὡς ἄρα καὶ τοὺς κατηγόρους 4
αὐτοῦ, ζητουμένων τότε τῶν ἀπὸ τῆς βασιλικῆς Ἰουδαίων φυλῆς, ὡς ἂν ἐξ αὐτῶν ὄντας ἁλῶναι συνέβη. λογισμῷ δ' ἂν καὶ τὸν Συμεῶνα τῶν αὐτοπτῶν καὶ αὐτηκόων εἶποι ἄν τις γεγονέναι τοῦ κυρίου, τεκμηρίῳ τῷ μήκει τοῦ χρόνου τῆς αὐτοῦ ζωῆς χρώμενος καὶ τῷ μνημονεύειν τὴν
John 19. 25 τῶν εὐαγγελίων γραφὴν Μαρίας τῆς τοῦ Κλωπᾶ,
Eus. *H.E.* iii. 11. 1 οὗ γεγονέναι αὐτὸν καὶ πρότερον ὁ λόγος ἐδήλωσεν.

Ὁ δ' αὐτὸς συγγραφεὺς καὶ ἑτέρους ἀπογόνους 5
ἑνὸς τῶν φερομένων ἀδελφῶν τοῦ σωτῆρος, ᾧ ὄνομα Ἰούδας, φησὶν εἰς τὴν αὐτὴν ἐπιβιῶναι βασιλείαν μετὰ τὴν ἤδη πρότερον ἱστορηθεῖσαν αὐτῶν ὑπὲρ τῆς εἰς τὸν Χριστὸν πίστεως ἐπὶ Δομετιανοῦ μαρτυρίαν, γράφει δὲ οὕτως· " ἔρχονται 6
οὖν καὶ προηγοῦνται πάσης ἐκκλησίας ὡς μάρτυρες καὶ ἀπὸ γένους τοῦ κυρίου, καὶ γενομένης εἰρήνης βαθείας ἐν πάσῃ ἐκκλησίᾳ, μένουσι μέχρι Τραϊανοῦ Καίσαρος, μέχρις οὗ ὁ ἐκ θείου τοῦ κυρίου, ὁ προειρημένος Σίμων υἱὸς Κλωπᾶ, συκοφαντηθεὶς ὑπὸ τῶν αἱρέσεων ὡσαύτως κατηγορήθη καὶ αὐτὸς ἐπὶ τῷ αὐτῷ λόγῳ ἐπὶ Ἀττικοῦ τοῦ ὑπατικοῦ. καὶ ἐπὶ πολλαῖς ἡμέραις αἰκιζόμενος ἐμαρτύρησεν, ὡς πάντας ὑπερθαυμάζειν καὶ τὸν ὑπατικὸν πῶς $\overline{ρκ}$ τυγχάνων ἐτῶν ὑπέμεινεν, καὶ ἐκελεύσθη σταυρωθῆναι."

Ἐπὶ τούτοις ὁ αὐτὸς ἀνὴρ διηγούμενος τὰ κατὰ 7

[1] The date of Atticus is unknown, but in the *Chronicon*

Digitized by Google

is to say the heretics) accused Simon the son of Clopas of being descended from David and a Christian and thus he suffered martyrdom, being a hundred and twenty years old, when Trajan was emperor and Atticus was Consular.[1]" The same writer says that his accusers also suffered arrest for being of the royal house of the Jews when search was made at that time for those of that family. And one would reasonably say that Symeon was one of the eyewitnesses and actual hearers of the Lord on the evidence of the length of his life and the reference in the Gospels to Mary the wife of Clopas whose son the narrative has already shown him to be.

The same writer says that other grandsons of one of the so-called brethren of the Saviour named Judas survived to the same reign after they had given in the time of Domitian the testimony already recorded of them in behalf of the faith in Christ. He writes thus: "They came therefore and presided over every church as witnesses belonging to the Lord's family, and when there was complete peace in every church they survived until the reign of the Emperor Trajan, until the time when the son of the Lord's uncle,[2] the aforesaid Simon the son of Clopas, was similarly accused by the sects on the same charge before Atticus the Consular. He was tortured for many days and gave his witness, so that all, even the consular, were extremely surprised how, at the age of one hundred and twenty, he endured, and he was commanded to be crucified." Besides this the same writer, explaining the events

[1] Eusebius dates the martyrdom of Symeon in the ninth or tenth year of Trajan (A.D. 106 or 107).

[2] He was the brother of Joseph; see iii. 11. 1.

Digitized by Google

τοὺς δηλουμένους, ἐπιλέγει ὡς ἄρα μέχρι τῶν τότε χρόνων παρθένος καθαρὰ καὶ ἀδιάφθορος ἔμεινεν ἡ ἐκκλησία, ἐν ἀδήλῳ που σκότει ὡς εἰ φωλευόντων εἰς ἔτι τότε τῶν, εἰ καί τινες ὑπῆρχον, παραφθείρειν ἐπιχειρούντων τὸν ὑγιῆ κανόνα τοῦ σωτηρίου κηρύγματος· ὡς δ' ὁ ἱερὸς τῶν ἀπο- 8
στόλων χορὸς διάφορον εἰλήφει τοῦ βίου τέλος παρεληλύθει τε ἡ γενεὰ ἐκείνη τῶν αὐταῖς ἀκοαῖς τῆς ἐνθέου σοφίας ἐπακοῦσαι κατηξιωμένων, τηνικαῦτα τῆς ἀθέου πλάνης ἀρχὴν ἐλάμβανεν ἡ σύστασις διὰ τῆς τῶν ἑτεροδιδασκάλων ἀπάτης, οἳ καὶ ἅτε μηδενὸς ἔτι τῶν ἀποστόλων λειπο-
1 Tim. 6, 20 μένου, γυμνῇ λοιπὸν ἤδη κεφαλῇ τῷ τῆς ἀληθείας κηρύγματι τὴν ψευδώνυμον γνῶσιν ἀντικηρύττειν ἐπεχείρουν.

XXXIII. Τοσοῦτός γε μὴν ἐν πλείοσι τόποις 1
ὁ καθ' ἡμῶν ἐπετάθη τότε διωγμός, ὡς Πλίνιον Σεκοῦνδον, ἐπισημότατον ἡγεμόνων, ἐπὶ τῷ πλήθει τῶν μαρτύρων κινηθέντα, βασιλεῖ κοινώσασθαι περὶ τοῦ πλήθους τῶν ὑπὲρ τῆς πίστεως ἀναιρουμένων, ἅμα δ' ἐν ταὐτῷ μηνῦσαι μηδὲν ἀνόσιον μηδὲ παρὰ τοὺς νόμους πράττειν αὐτοὺς κατειληφέναι, πλὴν τό γε ἅμα τῇ ἕῳ διεγειρομένους τὸν Χριστὸν θεοῦ δίκην ὑμνεῖν, τὸ δὲ μοιχεύειν καὶ φονεύειν καὶ τὰ συγγενῆ τούτοις ἀθέμιτα πλημμελήματα καὶ αὐτοὺς ἀπαγορεύειν πάντα τε πράττειν ἀκολούθως τοῖς νόμοις· πρὸς ἃ τὸν 2
Τραϊανὸν δόγμα τοιόνδε τεθεικέναι, τὸ Χριστιανῶν φῦλον μὴ ἐκζητεῖσθαι μέν, ἐμπεσὸν δὲ κολάζεσθαι· δι' οὗ ποσῶς μὲν τοῦ διωγμοῦ σβεσθῆναι τὴν ἀπειλὴν σφοδρότατα ἐγκειμένην, οὐ χεῖρόν γε μὴν τοῖς κακουργεῖν περὶ ἡμᾶς ἐθέλουσιν λείπεσθαι

Digitized by Google

of these times, adds that until then the church remained a pure and uncorrupted virgin, for those who attempted to corrupt the healthful rule of the Saviour's preaching, if they existed at all, lurked in obscure darkness. But when the sacred band of the Apostles and the generation of those to whom it had been vouchsafed to hear with their own ears the divine wisdom had reached the several ends of their lives, then the federation of godless error took its beginning through the deceit of false teachers who, seeing that none of the Apostles still remained, barefacedly tried against the preaching of the truth the counter-proclamation of "knowledge falsely so-called."

XXXIII. The persecution which at that time was extended against us in many places was so great that Plinius Secundus, one of the most distinguished governors, was disturbed at the number of the martyrs, and reported to the Emperor the number of those being put to death for the faith, and in the same document mentioned that he understood them to do nothing wicked or illegal except that they rose at dawn to sing to Christ as though a God, and that they themselves forbade adultery, murder and similar terrible crimes, and that they did everything in obedience to the law. In answer to this Trajan issued a decree to the effect that the tribe of Christians should not be sought for but punished when it was met with. By this means the imminent threat of persecution was extinguished to some extent, but none the less opportunities remained to those who wished to harm

Digitized by Google

προφάσεις, ἔσθ' ὅπῃ μὲν τῶν δήμων, ἔσθ' ὅπῃ δὲ καὶ τῶν κατὰ χώρας ἀρχόντων τὰς καθ' ἡμῶν συσκευαζομένων ἐπιβουλάς, ὡς καὶ ἄνευ προφανῶν διωγμῶν μερικοὺς κατ' ἐπαρχίαν ἐξάπτεσθαι πλείους τε τῶν πιστῶν διαφόροις ἐναγωνίζεσθαι μαρτυρίοις. εἴληπται δ' ἡ ἱστορία ἐξ ἧς ἀνώτερον 3
δεδηλώκαμεν τοῦ Τερτυλλιανοῦ Ῥωμαϊκῆς ἀπολογίας, ἧς ἡ ἑρμηνεία τοῦτον ἔχει τὸν τρόπον
Tert. *Apol.* 2 "καίτοι εὑρήκαμεν καὶ τὴν εἰς ἡμᾶς ἐπιζήτησιν κεκωλυμένην. Πλίνιος γὰρ Σεκοῦνδος ἡγούμενος ἐπαρχίου κατακρίνας Χριστιανούς τινας καὶ τῆς ἀξίας ἐκβαλών, ταραχθεὶς τῷ πλήθει, διὸ ἠγνόει
Plin. et Trajan. *Epist.* 96, 7 τί αὐτῷ λοιπὸν εἴη πρακτέον, Τραϊανῷ τῷ βασιλεῖ ἀνεκοινώσατο λέγων ἔξω τοῦ μὴ βούλεσθαι αὐτοὺς εἰδωλολατρεῖν οὐδὲν ἀνόσιον ἐν αὐτοῖς εὑρηκέναι· ἐμήνυεν δὲ καὶ τοῦτο, ἀνίστασθαι ἔωθεν τοὺς Χριστιανοὺς καὶ τὸν Χριστὸν θεοῦ δίκην ὑμνεῖν καὶ πρὸς τὸ τὴν ἐπιστήμην αὐτῶν διαφυλάσσειν κωλύεσθαι φονεύειν, μοιχεύειν, πλεονεκτεῖν, ἀποστερεῖν καὶ τὰ τούτοις ὅμοια. πρὸς ταῦτα
Plin. et Trajan. *Epist.* 97, 2 ἀντέγραψεν Τραϊανὸς τὸ τῶν Χριστιανῶν φῦλον μὴ ἐκζητεῖσθαι μέν, ἐμπεσὸν δὲ κολάζεσθαι." καὶ ταῦτα μὲν ἐν τούτοις ἦν.

XXXIV. Τῶν δ' ἐπὶ Ῥώμης ἐπισκόπων ἔτει 1
τρίτῳ τῆς τοῦ προειρημένου βασιλέως ἀρχῆς Κλήμης Εὐαρέστῳ παραδοὺς τὴν λειτουργίαν ἀναλύει τὸν βίον, τὰ πάντα προστὰς ἔτεσιν ἐννέα τῆς τοῦ θείου λόγου διδασκαλίας.

XXXV. Ἀλλὰ καὶ τοῦ Συμεῶνος τὸν δηλωθέντα 1
τελειωθέντος τρόπον, τῆς ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις ἐπισκοπῆς τὸν θρόνον Ἰουδαῖός τις ὄνομα Ἰοῦστος, μυρίων ὅσων ἐκ περιτομῆς εἰς τὸν Χριστὸν τηνι-

Digitized by Google

us. Sometimes the populace, sometimes even the local authorities contrived plots against us, so that with no open persecution partial attacks broke out in various provinces and many of the faithful endured martyrdom in various ways. The narrative has been taken from the Latin apology of Tertullian mentioned above of which the translation is as follows: "Yet we found that this attempt against us was also prevented, for the governor of the province, Pliny Secundus, after condemning certain Christians and depriving them of their rank, was troubled at their number and, not knowing what to do in the future, communicated with the Emperor Trajan, saying that beyond their unwillingness to offer sacrifice to idols, he had found nothing wicked in them. He also mentioned this, that the Christians arose at dawn and sang a hymn to Christ as a God, and in order to preserve their teaching[1] forbade murder, adultery, covetousness, robbery, and suchlike. To this Trajan sent a rescript that the tribe of Christians should not be sought out but punished if met with." Such were the events at that time.

XXXIV. In the third year of the afore-mentioned emperor, Clement handed over the ministry of the bishops of Rome to Evarestos and departed this life, having been in charge of the teaching of the divine word for nine years.

XXXV. Moreover, when Symeon suffered martyrdom in the manner already described a certain Jew named Justus, who was one of the many thousands of the circumcision who by that time had believed on

[1] The Greek word means *knowledge* which is meaningless and clearly a mistaken translation of the Latin. Tertullian wrote *disciplinam*.

Digitized by Google

καῦτα πεπιστευκότων εἷς καὶ αὐτὸς ὤν, διαδέχεται.

XXXVI. Διέπρεπέν γε μὴν κατὰ τούτους ἐπὶ 1
τῆς Ἀσίας τῶν ἀποστόλων ὁμιλητὴς Πολύκαρπος,
τῆς κατὰ Σμύρναν ἐκκλησίας πρὸς τῶν αὐτοπτῶν
καὶ ὑπηρετῶν τοῦ κυρίου τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν ἐγκε-
χειρισμένος· καθ' ὃν ἐγνωρίζετο Παπίας, τῆς ἐν 2
Ἱεραπόλει παροικίας καὶ αὐτὸς ἐπίσκοπος, ὅ τε
παρὰ πλείστοις εἰς ἔτι νῦν διαβόητος Ἰγνάτιος,
τῆς κατὰ Ἀντιόχειαν Πέτρου διαδοχῆς δεύτερος
τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν κεκληρωμένος. λόγος δ' ἔχει 3
τοῦτον ἀπὸ Συρίας ἐπὶ τὴν Ῥωμαίων πόλιν
ἀναπεμφθέντα, θηρίων γενέσθαι βορὰν τῆς εἰς
Χριστὸν μαρτυρίας ἕνεκεν· καὶ δὴ τὴν δι' Ἀσίας 4
ἀνακομιδὴν μετ' ἐπιμελεστάτης φρουρῶν φυλακῆς
ποιούμενος, τὰς κατὰ πόλιν αἷς ἐπεδήμει, παροικίας
ταῖς διὰ λόγων ὁμιλίαις τε καὶ προτροπαῖς ἐπιρ-
ρωννύς, ἐν πρώτοις μάλιστα προφυλάττεσθαι τὰς
αἱρέσεις ἄρτι τότε πρῶτον ἐπιπολαζούσας παρήνει
προύτρεπέν τε ἀπρὶξ ἔχεσθαι τῆς τῶν ἀποστόλων
παραδόσεως, ἣν ὑπὲρ ἀσφαλείας καὶ ἐγγράφως
ἤδη μαρτυρόμενος διατυποῦσθαι ἀναγκαῖον ἡγεῖτο.
Ign. *Eph.* 21 οὕτω δῆτα ἐν Σμύρνῃ γενόμενος, ἔνθα ὁ Πολύκαρπος 5
Ign. *Eph.* 1. ἦν, μίαν μὲν τῇ κατὰ τὴν Ἔφεσον ἐπιστολὴν
2. 6
Ign. *Magn.* 2. 15 ἐκκλησίᾳ γράφει, ποιμένος αὐτῆς μνημονεύων
Ign. *Trall.* 1. 12 Ὀνησίμου, ἑτέραν δὲ τῇ ἐν Μαγνησίᾳ τῇ πρὸς
Ign. *Rom.* 5 Μαιάνδρῳ, ἔνθα πάλιν ἐπισκόπου Δαμᾶ μνήμην
πεποίηται, καὶ τῇ ἐν Τράλλεσι δὲ ἄλλην, ἧς
ἄρχοντα τότε ὄντα Πολύβιον ἱστορεῖ. πρὸς ταύ- 6
ταις καὶ τῇ Ῥωμαίων ἐκκλησίᾳ γράφει, ᾗ καὶ
παράκλησιν προτείνει ὡς μὴ παραιτησάμενοι τοῦ
μαρτυρίου τῆς ποθουμένης αὐτὸν ἀποστερήσαιεν

Digitized by Google

Christ, succeeded to the throne of the bishopric of Jerusalem.

XXXVI. At this time there flourished in Asia Polycarp, the companion of the Apostles, who had been appointed to the bishopric of the church in Smyrna by the eyewitnesses and ministers of the Lord. Distinguished men at the same time were Papias, who was himself bishop of the diocese of Hierapolis, and Ignatius, still a name of note to most men, the second after Peter to succeed to the bishopric of Antioch. The story goes that he was sent from Syria to Rome to be eaten by beasts in testimony to Christ. He was taken through Asia under most careful guard, and strengthened by his speech and exhortation the diocese of each city in which he stayed. He particularly warned them to be on their guard against the heresies which then for the first time were beginning to obtain, and exhorted them to hold fast to the tradition of the Apostles, to which he thought necessary, for safety's sake, to give the form of written testimony. Thus while he was in Smyrna where Polycarp was, he wrote one letter to the church at Ephesus, mentioning their pastor Onesimus, and another to the church at Magnesia on the Meander (and here, too, he mentioned the bishop Damas), and another to the church in Tralles, of which he relates that Polybius was then the ruler. In addition to these he also wrote to the church at Rome, and to it he extended the request that they should not deprive him of the hope for which he longed by begging him off from his martyrdom. It

Digitized by Google

ἐλπίδος· ἐξ ὧν καὶ βραχύτατα εἰς ἐπίδειξιν τῶν εἰρημένων παραθέσθαι ἄξιον. γράφει δὴ οὖν κατὰ λέξιν· "ἀπὸ Συρίας μέχρι Ῥώμης θηριο- 7
μαχῶ διὰ γῆς καὶ θαλάσσης, νυκτὸς καὶ ἡμέρας, ἐν-
δεδεμένος δέκα λεοπάρδοις, ὅ ἐστιν στρατιωτικὸν
τάγμα, οἳ καὶ εὐεργετούμενοι κείρονες γίνονται,
ἐν δὲ τοῖς ἀδικήμασιν αὐτῶν μᾶλλον μαθητεύομαι·
1 Cor. 4, 4 ἀλλ' οὐ παρὰ τοῦτο δεδικαίωμαι. ὀναίμην τῶν 8
θηρίων τῶν ἐμοὶ ἑτοίμων, ἃ καὶ εὔχομαι σύντομά
μοι εὑρεθῆναι· ἃ καὶ κολακεύσω συντόμως με
καταφαγεῖν, οὐχ ὥσπερ τινῶν δειλαινόμενα οὐχ
ἥψαντο, κἂν αὐτὰ δὲ ἄκοντα μὴ θέλῃ, ἐγὼ προσ-
βιάσομαι. συγγνώμην μοι ἔχετε· τί μοι συμ- 9
φέρει, ἐγὼ γινώσκω, νῦν ἄρχομαι μαθητὴς εἶναι.
μηδέν με ζηλώσαι τῶν ὁρατῶν καὶ ἀοράτων,
ἵνα Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ ἐπιτύχω· πῦρ καὶ σταυρὸς
θηρίων τε συστάσεις, σκορπισμοὶ ὀστέων, συγκοπαὶ
μελῶν, ἀλεσμοὶ ὅλου τοῦ σώματος, κολάσεις τοῦ
διαβόλου εἰς ἐμὲ ἐρχέσθωσαν, μόνον ἵνα Ἰησοῦ
Χριστοῦ ἐπιτύχω."

Καὶ ταῦτα μὲν ἀπὸ τῆς δηλωθείσης πόλεως 10
ταῖς καταλεχθείσαις ἐκκλησίαις διετυπώσατο· ἤδη
δ' ἐπέκεινα τῆς Σμύρνης γενόμενος, ἀπὸ Τρωάδος
Ign. *Philad.* 11 τοῖς τε ἐν Φιλαδελφίᾳ αὖθις διὰ γραφῆς ὁμιλεῖ
Ign. *Smyrn.* 12 καὶ τῇ Σμυρναίων ἐκκλησίᾳ ἰδίως τε τῷ ταύτης
Ign. *To Polycarp* 8 προηγουμένῳ Πολυκάρπῳ· ὃν οἷα δὴ ἀποστολικὸν
Ign. *To Polycarp* 7 ἄνδρα εὖ μάλα γνωρίζων, τὴν κατ' Ἀντιόχειαν
αὐτῷ ποίμνην οἷα γνήσιος καὶ ἀγαθὸς ποιμὴν
παρατίθεται, τὴν περὶ αὐτῆς φροντίδα διὰ σπουδῆς
ἔχειν αὐτὸν ἀξιῶν. ὁ δ' αὐτὸς Σμυρναίοις 11
Ign. *Smyrn.* γράφων, οὐκ οἶδ' ὁπόθεν ῥητοῖς συγκέχρηται,
τοιαῦτά τινα περὶ τοῦ Χριστοῦ διεξιών· "ἐγὼ δὲ

Digitized by Google

is worth while appending a short extract from this in support of what has been said. He writes as follows: "From Syria to Rome I am fighting with wild beasts, by land and sea, by night and day, bound to ten 'leopards' (that is, a company of soldiers), and they become worse for kind treatment. Now I become the more a disciple for their ill deeds, 'but not by this am I justified.' I long for the beasts that are prepared for me; and I pray that they may be found prompt for me; I will even entice them to devour me promptly; not as has happened to some whom they have not touched from fear; even if they be unwilling of themselves, I will force them to it. Grant me this favour. I know what is expedient for me; now I am beginning to be a disciple. May I envy nothing of things seen or unseen that I may attain to Jesus Christ. Let there come on me fire, and cross, and struggles with wild beasts, cutting, and tearing asunder, rackings of bones, mangling of limbs, crushing of my whole body, cruel tortures of the devil, may I but attain to Jesus Christ!"

This he put into words from the city mentioned to the churches named. When he had already passed beyond Smyrna he also again conversed in writing from Troas with those in Philadelphia and with the church of the Smyrnaeans, and especially with Polycarp who was then the head of this church. He knew well that Polycarp was an apostolic man and like a true and good shepherd commends the flock at Antioch to him, asking him to be zealous in his care for it. He also wrote to the Smyrnaeans quoting words from I know not what source and discoursing thus about Christ: "For I know and believe that

Digitized by Google

καὶ μετὰ τὴν ἀνάστασιν ἐν σαρκὶ αὐτὸν οἶδα καὶ πιστεύω ὄντα. καὶ ὅτε πρὸς τοὺς περὶ Πέτρον ἐλήλυθεν, ἔφη αὐτοῖς· 'λάβετε, ψηλαφήσατέ με καὶ ἴδετε ὅτι οὐκ εἰμὶ δαιμόνιον ἀσώματον·' καὶ εὐθὺς αὐτοῦ ἥψαντο καὶ ἐπίστευσαν."

Οἶδεν δὲ αὐτοῦ τὸ μαρτύριον καὶ ὁ Εἰρηναῖος, 12
καὶ τῶν ἐπιστολῶν αὐτοῦ μνημονεύει, λέγων
Iren. 5, 28. 4 οὕτως· "ὡς εἶπέν τις τῶν ἡμετέρων, διὰ τὴν
πρὸς θεὸν μαρτυρίαν κατακριθεὶς πρὸς θηρία,
Ign. *Rom.* 4 ὅτι 'σῖτός εἰμι θεοῦ καὶ δι' ὀδόντων θηρίων
ἀλήθομαι, ἵνα καθαρὸς ἄρτος εὑρεθῶ.'"

Καὶ ὁ Πολύκαρπος δὲ τούτων αὐτῶν μέμνηται 13
ἐν τῇ φερομένῃ αὐτοῦ πρὸς Φιλιππησίους ἐπιστολῇ
Polycarp, *Philipp.* 9 φάσκων αὐτοῖς ῥήμασιν· "παρακαλῶ οὖν πάντας
ὑμᾶς πειθαρχεῖν καὶ ἀσκεῖν πᾶσαν ὑπομονήν,
ἣν εἴδετε κατ' ὀφθαλμοὺς οὐ μόνον ἐν τοῖς μακα-
ρίοις Ἰγνατίῳ καὶ Ῥούφῳ καὶ Ζωσίμῳ, ἀλλὰ καὶ
ἐν ἄλλοις τοῖς ἐξ ὑμῶν καὶ ἐν αὐτῷ Παύλῳ καὶ
τοῖς λοιποῖς ἀποστόλοις, πεπεισμένους ὅτι οὗτοι
Phil. 2, 16 πάντες οὐκ εἰς κενὸν ἔδραμον, ἀλλ' ἐν πίστει καὶ
δικαιοσύνῃ, καὶ ὅτι εἰς τὸν ὀφειλόμενον αὐτοῖς
1 Clem. 5 τόπον εἰσὶν παρὰ κυρίῳ, ᾧ καὶ συνέπαθον. οὐ
2 Tim. 4, 10 γὰρ τὸν νῦν ἠγάπησαν αἰῶνα, ἀλλὰ τὸν ὑπὲρ
ἡμῶν ἀποθανόντα καὶ δι' ἡμᾶς ὑπὸ τοῦ θεοῦ
Polycarp, *Philipp.* 13 ἀναστάντα." καὶ ἑξῆς ἐπιφέρει· "ἐγράψατέ μοι 14
καὶ ὑμεῖς καὶ Ἰγνάτιος, ἵν' ἐάν τις ἀπέρχηται εἰς
Συρίαν, καὶ τὰ παρ' ὑμῶν ἀποκομίσῃ γράμματα·
ὅπερ ποιήσω, ἐὰν λάβω καιρὸν εὔθετον, εἴτε
ἐγὼ εἴτε ὃν πέμπω πρεσβεύσοντα καὶ περὶ ὑμῶν.
τὰς ἐπιστολὰς Ἰγνατίου τὰς πεμφθείσας ἡμῖν 15
ὑπ' αὐτοῦ καὶ ἄλλας ὅσας εἴχομεν παρ' ἡμῖν,
ἐπέμψαμεν ὑμῖν, καθὼς ἐνετείλασθε· αἵτινες ὑπο-

Digitized by Google

he was in the flesh even after the Resurrection. And when he came to those with Peter he said to them: 'Take, handle me and see that I am not a phantom without a body.' And they immediately touched him and believed."

Irenaeus also knew of his martyrdom and quotes his letters saying thus: "As one of the Christians said when he was condemned to the beasts as testimony for God, 'I am the wheat of God and I am ground by the teeth of beasts that I may be found pure bread.'"

Polycarp, too, mentions these same things in the letter to the Philippians bearing his name and says: "Now I beseech you all to obey the word of righteousness, and to practise all the endurance which you also saw before your eyes, not only in the blessed Ignatius, and Zosimus, and Rufus, but also in others among yourselves, and in Paul himself, and in the other Apostles; being persuaded that all of these 'ran not in vain,' but in faith and righteousness, and that they are with the Lord in the 'place which is their due,' with whom they also suffered. For they did not 'love this present world' but him who died on our behalf, and was raised by God for our sakes." And he continues later, "Both you and Ignatius wrote to me that if anyone was going to Syria he should also take your letters I will do this if I have a convenient opportunity, either myself or the man whom I am sending as a representative for you and me. We send you, as you asked, the letters of Ignatius, which were sent to us by him, and others which we had by us. These are subjoined

Digitized by Google

τεταγμέναι εἰσὶν τῇ ἐπιστολῇ ταύτῃ· ἐξ ὧν μεγάλα ὠφεληθῆναι δυνήσεσθε. περιέχουσι γὰρ πίστιν καὶ ὑπομονὴν καὶ πᾶσαν οἰκοδομὴν τὴν εἰς τὸν κύριον ἡμῶν ἀνήκουσαν." καὶ τὰ μὲν περὶ τὸν Ἰγνάτιον τοιαῦτα· διαδέχεται δὲ μετ' αὐτὸν τὴν Ἀντιοχείας ἐπισκοπὴν Ἥρως.

XXXVII. Τῶν δὲ κατὰ τούτους διαλαμψάντων καὶ Κοδρᾶτος ἦν, ὃν ἅμα ταῖς Φιλίππου θυγατράσιν προφητικῷ χαρίσματι λόγος ἔχει διαπρέψαι, καὶ ἄλλοι δ' ἐπὶ τούτοις πλείους ἐγνωρίζοντο κατὰ τούσδε, τὴν πρώτην τάξιν τῆς τῶν ἀποστόλων ἐπέχοντες διαδοχῆς· οἳ καί, ἅτε τηλικῶνδε ὄντες θεοπρεπεῖς μαθηταί, τοὺς κατὰ πάντα τόπον τῶν
1 Cor. 3, 10 ἐκκλησιῶν προκαταβληθέντας ὑπὸ τῶν ἀποστόλων θεμελίους ἐπῳκοδόμουν, αὔξοντες εἰς πλέον τὸ κήρυγμα καὶ τὰ σωτήρια σπέρματα τῆς τῶν οὐρανῶν βασιλείας ἀνὰ πᾶσαν εἰς πλάτος ἐπισπείροντες τὴν οἰκουμένην. καὶ γὰρ δὴ πλεῖστοι τῶν τότε μαθητῶν σφοδροτέρῳ φιλοσοφίας ἔρωτι πρὸς τοῦ θείου λόγου τὴν ψυχὴν πληττόμενοι,
Matt. 10, 9 Mark 6, 8 Luke 9, 3 τὴν σωτήριον πρότερον ἀπεπλήρουν παρακέλευσιν, ἐνδεέσιν νέμοντες τὰς οὐσίας, εἶτα δὲ ἀποδημίας
Rom. 15, 20. 21 στελλόμενοι ἔργον ἐπετέλουν εὐαγγελιστῶν, τοῖς ἔτι πάμπαν ἀνηκόοις τοῦ τῆς πίστεως λόγου κηρύττειν φιλοτιμούμενοι καὶ τὴν τῶν θείων
Eph. 2, 19. 20 εὐαγγελίων παραδιδόναι γραφήν. οὗτοι δὲ θεμελίους τῆς πίστεως ἐπὶ ξένοις τισὶ τόποις αὐτὸ μόνον καταβαλλόμενοι ποιμένας τε καθιστάντες ἑτέρους τούτοις τε αὐτοῖς ἐγχειρίζοντες τὴν τῶν ἀρτίως εἰσαχθέντων γεωργίαν, ἑτέρας αὐτοὶ πάλιν χώρας τε καὶ ἔθνη μετῄεσαν σὺν τῇ ἐκ θεοῦ χάριτι καὶ συνεργίᾳ, ἐπεὶ καὶ τοῦ θείου πνεύματος εἰς

1 2 3

Digitized by Google

to this letter, and you will be able to benefit greatly from them. For they contain faith, patience, and all the edification which pertains to our Lord." Such is the story concerning Ignatius, and Heros succeeded to the bishopric of Antioch after him.

XXXVII. Among those who were famous at this time was also Quadratus, of whom tradition says that he shared with the daughters of Philip the distinction of a prophetic gift. And many others besides them were well known at this time and take the first rank in the Apostolic succession. These pious disciples of great men built in every place on the foundations of the churches laid by the Apostles. They spread the preaching and scattered the saving seeds of the kingdom of Heaven, sowing them broadcast through the whole world. Many of those then disciples, smitten in the soul by the divine Logos with an ardent passion for the love of wisdom,[1] first fulfilled the Saviour's command and distributed their property to the needy, then, starting on their journey, took up the work of evangelists and were zealous to preach to all who had not yet heard the word of the faith, and to transmit the writing of the divine Gospels. As soon as they had no more than laid the foundations of the faith in some strange place, they appointed others as shepherds and committed to them the task of tending those who had been just brought in, but they themselves passed on again to other lands and peoples, helped by the grace and co-operation of God, seeing that

[1] The Greek word is "philosophy"; but Eusebius does not mean metaphysics.

Digitized by Google

ἔτι τότε δι' αὐτῶν πλεῖσται παράδοξοι δυνάμεις ἐνήργουντο,[1] ὥστε ἀπὸ πρώτης ἀκροάσεως ἀθρόως αὔτανδρα πλήθη προθύμως τὴν εἰς τὸν τῶν ὅλων δημιουργὸν εὐσέβειαν ἐν ταῖς αὐτῶν ψυχαῖς καταδέχεσθαι.

'Αδυνάτου δ' ὄντος ἡμῖν ἅπαντας ἐξ ὀνόματος 4
ἀπαριθμεῖσθαι ὅσοι ποτὲ κατὰ τὴν πρώτην τῶν ἀποστόλων διαδοχὴν ἐν ταῖς κατὰ τὴν οἰκουμένην ἐκκλησίαις γεγόνασιν ποιμένες ἢ καὶ εὐαγγελισταί, τούτων εἰκότως ἐξ ὀνόματος γραφῇ μόνων τὴν μνήμην κατατεθείμεθα, ὧν ἔτι καὶ νῦν εἰς ἡμᾶς δι' ὑπομνημάτων τῆς ἀποστολικῆς διδασκαλίας ἡ παράδοσις φέρεται, XXXVIII. ὥσπερ οὖν 1
ἀμέλει τοῦ 'Ιγνατίου ἐν αἷς κατελέξαμεν ἐπι-
1 Clem. 17 [= Heb. 11, 37]. 21 [= Heb. 4, 12]. 27 [= Heb. 10, 23] 36 [= Heb. 2, 17. 18. 4, 14. 15. 8, 3. 1, 3. 4, 7. 5, 13]
στολαῖς, καὶ τοῦ Κλήμεντος ἐν τῇ ἀνωμολογημένῃ παρὰ πᾶσιν, ἣν ἐκ προσώπου τῆς 'Ρωμαίων ἐκκλησίας τῇ Κορινθίων διετυπώσατο· ἐν ᾗ τῆς πρὸς 'Εβραίους πολλὰ νοήματα παραθείς, ἤδη δὲ καὶ αὐτολεξεὶ ῥητοῖς τισιν ἐξ αὐτῆς χρησάμενος, σαφέστατα παρίστησιν ὅτι μὴ νέον ὑπάρχει τὸ 2
σύγγραμμα, ὅθεν δὴ καὶ εἰκότως ἔδοξεν αὐτὸ τοῖς λοιποῖς ἐγκαταλεχθῆναι γράμμασι τοῦ ἀποστόλου. 'Εβραίοις γὰρ διὰ τῆς πατρίου γλώττης ἐγγράφως ὡμιληκότος τοῦ Παύλου, οἱ μὲν τὸν εὐαγγελιστὴν Λουκᾶν, οἱ δὲ τὸν Κλήμεντα τοῦτον αὐτὸν ἑρμηνεῦσαι λέγουσι τὴν γραφήν· ὃ καὶ 3
μᾶλλον ἂν εἴη ἀληθὲς τῷ τὸν ὅμοιον τῆς φράσεως χαρακτῆρα τήν τε τοῦ Κλήμεντος ἐπιστολὴν καὶ τὴν πρὸς 'Εβραίους ἀποσῴζειν καὶ τῷ μὴ πόρρω τὰ ἐν ἑκατέροις τοῖς συγγράμμασι νοήματα καθεστάναι.

'Ιστέον δ' ὡς καὶ δευτέρα τις εἶναι λέγεται τοῦ 4

Digitized by Google

many strange miracles of the divine spirit were at that time still being wrought by them, so that whole crowds of men at the first hearing eagerly received in their souls the religion of the Creator of the universe.

It is impossible for us to give the number and the names of all who first succeeded the Apostles, and were shepherds or evangelists in the churches throughout the world. It was, therefore, natural for us to record by name the memory only of those of whom the tradition still survives to our time by their treatises on the Apostolic teaching. XXXVIII. Such writings, of course, were the letters of Ignatius of which we gave the list, and the Epistle of Clement which is recognized by all, which he wrote in the name of the church of the Romans to that of the Corinthians. In this he has many thoughts parallel to the Epistle to the Hebrews, and actually makes some verbal quotations from it showing clearly that it was not a recent production, and for this reason, too, it has seemed natural to include it among the other writings of the Apostle. For Paul had spoken in writing to the Hebrews in their native language, and some say that the evangelist Luke, others that this same Clement translated the writing. And the truth of this would be supported by the similarity of style preserved by the Epistle of Clement and that to the Hebrews, and by the little difference between the thoughts in both writings.

It must be known that there is also a second

---

[1] So Wendland: the MSS. read *ἐνήργουν*.

Digitized by Google

Κλήμεντος ἐπιστολή, οὐ μὴν ἔθ' ὁμοίως τῇ προτέρᾳ καὶ ταύτην γνώριμον ἐπιστάμεθα, ὅτι μηδὲ τοὺς ἀρχαίους αὐτῇ κεχρημένους ἴσμεν. ἤδη δὲ καὶ ἕτερα πολυεπῆ καὶ μακρὰ συγγράμματα ὡς τοῦ αὐτοῦ χθὲς καὶ πρώην τινὲς προήγαγον, Πέτρου δὴ καὶ Ἀπίωνος διαλόγους περιέχοντα· ὧν οὐδ' ὅλως μνήμη τις παρὰ τοῖς παλαιοῖς φέρεται, οὐδὲ γὰρ καθαρὸν τῆς ἀποστολικῆς ὀρθοδοξίας ἀποσῴζει τὸν χαρακτῆρα.

XXXIX. Ἡ μὲν οὖν τοῦ Κλήμεντος ὁμολογουμένη γραφὴ πρόδηλος, εἴρηται δὲ καὶ τὰ Ἰγνατίου καὶ Πολυκάρπου· τοῦ δὲ Παπία συγγράμματα πέντε τὸν ἀριθμὸν φέρεται, ἃ καὶ ἐπιγέγραπται Λογίων κυριακῶν ἐξηγήσεως. τούτων καὶ Εἰρηναῖος ὡς μόνων αὐτῷ γραφέντων μνημονεύει, Iren. 5, 33, 4 ὧδέ πως λέγων· "ταῦτα δὲ καὶ Παπίας ὁ Ἰωάννου μὲν ἀκουστής, Πολυκάρπου δὲ ἑταῖρος γεγονώς, ἀρχαῖος ἀνήρ, ἐγγράφως ἐπιμαρτυρεῖ ἐν τῇ τετάρτῃ τῶν ἑαυτοῦ βιβλίων. ἔστιν γὰρ αὐτῷ πέντε βιβλία συντεταγμένα." καὶ ὁ μὲν Εἰρηναῖος ταῦτα· αὐτός γε μὴν ὁ Παπίας κατὰ τὸ προοίμιον τῶν αὐτοῦ λόγων ἀκροατὴν μὲν καὶ αὐτόπτην οὐδαμῶς ἑαυτὸν γενέσθαι τῶν ἱερῶν ἀποστόλων ἐμφαίνει, παρειληφέναι δὲ τὰ τῆς πίστεως παρὰ τῶν ἐκείνοις γνωρίμων διδάσκει δι' ὧν φησιν λέξεων· "οὐκ ὀκνήσω δέ σοι καὶ ὅσα ποτὲ παρὰ τῶν πρεσβυτέρων καλῶς ἔμαθον καὶ καλῶς ἐμνημόνευσα, συγκατατάξαι ταῖς ἑρμηνείαις, διαβεβαιούμενος ὑπὲρ αὐτῶν ἀλήθειαν. οὐ γὰρ τοῖς τὰ πολλὰ λέγουσιν ἔχαιρον ὥσπερ οἱ πολλοί, ἀλλὰ τοῖς τἀληθῆ διδάσκουσιν, οὐδὲ τοῖς τὰς

[1] This may refer to the Clementine Homilies.

Digitized by Google

letter ascribed to Clement, but we have not the same knowledge of its recognition as we have of the former, for we do not even know if the primitive writers used it. Some have also quite recently put forward other verbose and long treatises, purporting to be Clement's, containing dialogues with Peter and Apion,[1] but there is absolutely no mention of them among the ancient writers nor do they preserve the pure type of apostolic orthodoxy.

XXXIX. Thus the recognized writing of Clement is well known and the works of Ignatius and Polycarp have been spoken of, and of Papias five treatises are extant which have also the title of "Interpretation of the Oracles of the Lord." These are also mentioned by Irenaeus as though his only writing, for he says in one place, "To these things also Papias, the hearer of John, who was a companion of Polycarp and one of the ancients,[2] bears witness in writing in the fourth of his books, for five books were composed by him." So says Irenaeus. Yet Papias himself, according to the preface of his treatises, makes plain that he had in no way been a hearer and eye-witness of the sacred Apostles, but teaches that he had received the articles of the faith from those who had known them, for he speaks as follows: "And I shall not hesitate to append to the interpretations all that I ever learnt well from the presbyters and remember well, for of their truth I am confident. For unlike most I did not rejoice in them who say much, but in them who teach the truth, nor in

[1] "Primitive" would perhaps be a better rendering for the Greek, which at least sometimes seems to mean a man who belonged to "the beginning," *cf.* the application of the adjective to Mnason (ἀρχαίῳ μαθητῇ) in Acts xxi. 16.

Digitized by Google

ἀλλοτρίας ἐντολὰς μνημονεύουσιν, ἀλλὰ τοῖς τὰς παρὰ τοῦ κυρίου τῇ πίστει δεδομένας καὶ ἀπ' αὐτῆς παραγινομένας τῆς ἀληθείας· εἰ δέ που 4
Luke i. 3 καὶ παρηκολουθηκώς τις τοῖς πρεσβυτέροις ἔλθοι, τοὺς τῶν πρεσβυτέρων ἀνέκρινον λόγους, τί Ἀνδρέας ἢ τί Πέτρος εἶπεν ἢ τί Φίλιππος ἢ τί Θωμᾶς ἢ Ἰάκωβος ἢ τί Ἰωάννης ἢ Ματθαῖος ἤ τις ἕτερος τῶν τοῦ κυρίου μαθητῶν ἅ τε Ἀριστίων καὶ ὁ πρεσβύτερος Ἰωάννης, τοῦ κυρίου μαθηταί, λέγουσιν. οὐ γὰρ τὰ ἐκ τῶν βιβλίων τοσοῦτόν με ὠφελεῖν ὑπελάμβανον ὅσον τὰ παρὰ ζώσης φωνῆς καὶ μενούσης."

Ἔνθα καὶ ἐπιστῆσαι ἄξιον δὶς καθαρθμιοῦντι 5 αὐτῷ τὸ Ἰωάννου ὄνομα, ὧν τὸν μὲν πρότερον Πέτρῳ καὶ Ἰακώβῳ καὶ Ματθαίῳ καὶ τοῖς λοιποῖς ἀποστόλοις συγκαταλέγει, σαφῶς δηλῶν τὸν εὐαγγελιστήν, τὸν δ' ἕτερον Ἰωάννην, διαστείλας τὸν λόγον, ἑτέροις παρὰ τὸν τῶν ἀποστόλων ἀριθμὸν κατατάσσει, προτάξας αὐτοῦ τὸν Ἀριστίωνα, σαφῶς τε αὐτὸν πρεσβύτερον ὀνομάζει·[1] ὡς καὶ διὰ τούτων ἀποδείκνυσθαι τὴν ἱστορίαν 6 ἀληθῆ τῶν δύο κατὰ τὴν Ἀσίαν ὁμωνυμίᾳ κεχρῆσθαι εἰρηκότων δύο τε ἐν Ἐφέσῳ γενέσθαι μνήματα καὶ ἑκάτερον Ἰωάννου ἔτι νῦν λέγεσθαι· οἷς καὶ ἀναγκαῖον προσέχειν τὸν νοῦν, εἰκὸς γὰρ τὸν δεύτερον, εἰ μή τις ἐθέλοι τὸν πρῶτον, τὴν ἐπ' ὀνόματος φερομένην Ἰωάννου ἀποκάλυψιν ἑορακέναι. καὶ ὁ νῦν δὲ ἡμῖν δηλούμενος Παπίας 7 τοὺς μὲν τῶν ἀποστόλων λόγους παρὰ τῶν αὐτοῖς παρηκολουθηκότων ὁμολογεῖ παρειληφέναι, Ἀριστίωνος δὲ καὶ τοῦ πρεσβυτέρου Ἰωάννου αὐτήκοον ἑαυτόν φησι γενέσθαι· ὀνομαστὶ γοῦν πολλάκις

Digitized by Google

them who recount the commandments of others, but in them who repeated those given to the faith by the Lord and derived from truth itself; but if ever anyone came who had followed[1] the presbyters, I inquired into the words of the presbyters, what Andrew or Peter or Philip or Thomas or James or John or Matthew, or any other of the Lord's disciples, had said, and what Aristion and the presbyter John, the Lord's disciples, were saying. For I did not suppose that information from books would help me so much as the word of a living and surviving voice."

It is here worth noting that he twice counts the name of John, and reckons the first John with Peter and James and Matthew and the other Apostles, clearly meaning the evangelist, but by changing his statement places the second with the others outside the number of the Apostles, putting Aristion before him and clearly calling him a presbyter. This confirms the truth of the story of those who have said that there were two of the same name in Asia, and that there are two tombs at Ephesus both still called John's. This calls for attention: for it is probable that the second (unless anyone prefer the former) saw the revelation which passes under the name of John. The Papias whom we are now treating confesses that he had received the words of the Apostles from their followers, but says that he had actually heard Aristion and the presbyter John. He often quotes them by name and gives

[1] The meaning of the Greek is doubtful; see Jackson and Lake, *Beginnings of Christianity*, vol. ii. p. 501.

[1] *Cf.* vii. 25. 16 (excerpt from Dionysios).

Digitized by Google

αὐτῶν μνημονεύσας ἐν τοῖς αὐτοῦ συγγράμμασιν τίθησιν αὐτῶν παραδόσεις. καὶ ταῦτα δ' ἡμῖν 8
οὐκ εἰς τὸ ἄχρηστον εἰρήσθω· ἄξιον δὲ ταῖς ἀποδοθείσαις τοῦ Παπία φωναῖς προσάψαι λέξεις ἑτέρας αὐτοῦ, δι' ὧν παράδοξά τινα ἱστορεῖ καὶ ἄλλα ὡς ἂν ἐκ παραδόσεως εἰς αὐτὸν ἐλθόντα. τὸ μὲν οὖν κατὰ τὴν Ἱεράπολιν Φίλιππον τὸν 9
ἀπόστολον ἅμα ταῖς θυγατράσιν διατρῖψαι διὰ τῶν πρόσθεν δεδήλωται· ὡς δὲ κατὰ τοὺς αὐτοὺς ὁ Παπίας γενόμενος, διήγησιν παρειληφέναι θαυμασίαν ὑπὸ τῶν τοῦ Φιλίππου θυγατέρων μνημονεύει, τὰ νῦν σημειωτέον· νεκροῦ γὰρ ἀνάστασιν κατ' αὐτὸν γεγονυῖαν ἱστορεῖ καὶ αὖ πάλιν ἕτερον παράδοξον περὶ Ἰοῦστον τὸν ἐπικληθέντα Βαρσαβᾶν γεγονός, ὡς δηλητήριον φάρμακον ἐμπιόντος καὶ μηδὲν ἀηδὲς διὰ τὴν τοῦ κυρίου χάριν ὑπομείναντος.[1] τοῦτον δὲ τὸν Ἰοῦστον μετὰ τὴν τοῦ 10
σωτῆρος ἀνάληψιν τοὺς ἱεροὺς ἀποστόλους μετὰ Ματθία στῆσαί τε καὶ ἐπεύξασθαι ἀντὶ τοῦ προδότου Ἰούδα ἐπὶ τὸν κλῆρον τῆς ἀναπληρώσεως τοῦ αὐτῶν ἀριθμοῦ ἣ τῶν Πράξεων ὧδέπως
Acts 1,23.24 ἱστορεῖ γραφή· "καὶ ἔστησαν δύο, Ἰωσὴφ τὸν καλούμενον Βαρσαβᾶν, ὃς ἐπεκλήθη Ἰοῦστος, καὶ Ματθίαν· καὶ προσευξάμενοι εἶπαν." καὶ 11
ἄλλα δὲ ὁ αὐτὸς ὡς ἐκ παραδόσεως ἀγράφου εἰς αὐτὸν ἥκοντα παρατέθειται ξένας τέ τινας παραβολὰς τοῦ σωτῆρος καὶ διδασκαλίας αὐτοῦ καί τινα ἄλλα μυθικώτερα· ἐν οἷς καὶ χιλιάδα τινά 12
φησιν ἐτῶν ἔσεσθαι μετὰ τὴν ἐκ νεκρῶν ἀνάστασιν, σωματικῶς τῆς Χριστοῦ βασιλείας ἐπὶ ταυτησὶ τῆς γῆς ὑποστησομένης· ἃ καὶ ἡγοῦμαι τὰς ἀποστολικὰς παρεκδεξάμενον διηγήσεις ὑπολαβεῖν,

Digitized by Google

their traditions in his writings. Let this suffice to good purpose. But it is worth while to add to the words of Papias already given other sayings of his, in which he tells certain marvels and other details which apparently reached him by tradition. It has already been mentioned that Philip the Apostle lived at Hierapolis with his daughters, but it must now be shown how Papias was with them and received a wonderful story from the daughters of Philip; for he relates the resurrection of a corpse in his time and in another place another miracle connected with Justus surnamed Barsabas, for he drank poison but by the Lord's grace suffered no harm. Of this Justus the Acts relates that the sacred Apostles set him up and prayed over him together with Matthias after the ascension of the Lord for the choice of one to fill up their number in place of the traitor Judas, "and they set forth two, Joseph called Barsabas, who was called Justus, and Matthias; and they prayed and said." The same writer adduces other accounts, as though they came to him from unwritten tradition, and some strange parables and teachings of the Saviour, and some other more mythical accounts. Among them he says that there will be a millennium after the resurrection of the dead, when the kingdom of Christ will be set up in material form on this earth. I suppose that he got these notions by a perverse

[1] *Cf.* C. de Boor's fragments of Papias in *Texte und Untersuchungen*, v. 2. 170.

Digitized by Google

τὰ ἐν ὑποδείγμασι πρὸς αὐτῶν μυστικῶς εἰρημένα μὴ συνεορακότα. σφόδρα γάρ τοι σμικρὸς ὢν 13
τὸν νοῦν, ὡς ἂν ἐκ τῶν αὐτοῦ λόγων τεκμηράμενον εἰπεῖν, φαίνεται, πλὴν καὶ τοῖς μετ' αὐτὸν πλείστοις ὅσοις τῶν ἐκκλησιαστικῶν τῆς ὁμοίας αὐτῷ δόξης παραίτιος γέγονεν τὴν ἀρχαιότητα τἀνδρὸς προβεβλημένοις, ὥσπερ οὖν Εἰρηναίῳ καὶ εἴ τις ἄλλος τὰ ὅμοια φρονῶν ἀναπέφηνεν.

Καὶ ἄλλας δὲ τῇ ἰδίᾳ γραφῇ παραδίδωσιν Ἀρι- 14
στίωνος τοῦ πρόσθεν δεδηλωμένου τῶν τοῦ κυρίου λόγων διηγήσεις καὶ τοῦ πρεσβυτέρου Ἰωάννου παραδόσεις· ἐφ' ἃς τοὺς φιλομαθεῖς ἀναπέμψαντες, ἀναγκαίως νῦν προσθήσομεν ταῖς προεκτεθείσαις αὐτοῦ φωναῖς παράδοσιν ἣν περὶ Μάρκου τοῦ τὸ εὐαγγέλιον γεγραφότος ἐκτέθειται διὰ τούτων· "καὶ τοῦθ' ὁ πρεσβύτερος ἔλεγεν· 15
Μάρκος μὲν ἑρμηνευτὴς Πέτρου γενόμενος, ὅσα ἐμνημόνευσεν, ἀκριβῶς ἔγραψεν, οὐ μέντοι τάξει, τὰ ὑπὸ τοῦ κυρίου ἢ λεχθέντα ἢ πραχθέντα. οὔτε γὰρ ἤκουσεν τοῦ κυρίου οὔτε παρηκολούθησεν αὐτῷ, ὕστερον δέ, ὡς ἔφην, Πέτρῳ· ὃς πρὸς τὰς χρείας ἐποιεῖτο τὰς διδασκαλίας, ἀλλ' οὐχ ὥσπερ σύνταξιν τῶν κυριακῶν ποιούμενος λογίων, ὥστε οὐδὲν ἥμαρτεν Μάρκος οὕτως ἔνια γράψας ὡς ἀπεμνημόνευσεν. ἑνὸς γὰρ ἐποιήσατο πρόνοιαν, τοῦ μηδὲν ὧν ἤκουσεν παραλιπεῖν ἢ ψεύσασθαί τι ἐν αὐτοῖς." ταῦτα μὲν οὖν ἱστόρηται 16
τῷ Παπίᾳ περὶ τοῦ Μάρκου· περὶ δὲ τοῦ Ματθαίου ταῦτ' εἴρηται· "Ματθαῖος μὲν οὖν Ἑβραΐδι διαλέκτῳ τὰ λόγια συνετάξατο, ἡρμήνευσεν δ' αὐτὰ ὡς ἦν δυνατὸς ἕκαστος."

Digitized by Google

reading of the apostolic accounts, not realizing that they had spoken mystically and symbolically. For he was a man of very little intelligence, as is clear from his books. But he is responsible for the fact that so many Christian writers after him held the same opinion, relying on his antiquity, for instance Irenaeus and whoever else appears to have held the same views.

In the same writing he also quotes other interpretations of the words of the Lord given by the Aristion mentioned above and traditions of John the presbyter. To them we may dismiss the studious; but we are now obliged to append to the words already quoted from him a tradition about the Mark who wrote the Gospel, which he expounds as follows. "And the Presbyter used to say this, 'Mark became Peter's interpreter and wrote accurately all that he remembered, not, indeed, in order, of the things said or done by the Lord. For he had not heard the Lord, nor had he followed him, but later on, as I said, followed Peter, who used to give teaching as necessity demanded but not making, as it were, an arrangement of the Lord's oracles, so that Mark did nothing wrong in thus writing down single points as he remembered them. For to one thing he gave attention, to leave out nothing of what he had heard and to make no false statements in them.'" This is related by Papias about Mark, and about Matthew this was said, "Matthew collected the oracles in the Hebrew language, and each interpreted them as best he could."

Digitized by Google

Κέχρηται δ' ὁ αὐτὸς μαρτυρίαις ἀπὸ τῆς Ἰωάννου 17
προτέρας ἐπιστολῆς καὶ ἀπὸ τῆς Πέτρου ὁμοίως,
ἐκτέθειται δὲ καὶ ἄλλην ἱστορίαν περὶ γυναικὸς
ἐπὶ πολλαῖς ἁμαρτίαις διαβληθείσης ἐπὶ τοῦ
κυρίου, ἣν τὸ καθ' Ἑβραίους εὐαγγέλιον περιέχει.
καὶ ταῦτα δ' ἡμῖν ἀναγκαίως πρὸς τοῖς ἐκτεθεῖσιν
ἐπιτετηρήσθω.

Digitized by Google

The same writer used quotations from the first Epistle of John, and likewise also from that of Peter, and has expounded another story about a woman who was accused before the Lord of many sins, which the Gospel according to the Hebrews contains. Let this suffice us in addition to the extracts made.

Digitized by Google

Δ

Τάδε καὶ ἡ τετάρτη περιέχει βίβλος τῆς Ἐκκλησιαστικῆς ἱστορίας

Ā Τίνες ἐπὶ τῆς Τραϊανοῦ βασιλείας Ῥωμαίων γεγόνασι καὶ Ἀλεξανδρέων ἐπίσκοποι.

B̄ Ὁποῖα Ἰουδαῖοι κατ' αὐτὸν πεπόνθασιν.

Γ̄ Οἱ κατὰ Ἀδριανὸν ὑπὲρ τῆς πίστεως ἀπολογησάμενοι.

Δ̄ Οἱ κατ' αὐτὸν Ῥωμαίων καὶ Ἀλεξανδρέων ἐπίσκοποι.

Ē Οἱ ἀνέκαθεν ἀπὸ τοῦ σωτῆρος καὶ ἐπὶ τοὺς δηλουμένους Ἱεροσολύμων ἐπίσκοποι.

Ϛ̄ Ἡ κατὰ Ἀδριανὸν ὑστάτη Ἰουδαίων πολιορκία.

Ζ̄ Τίνες κατ' ἐκεῖνο καιροῦ γεγόνασιν ψευδωνύμου γνώσεως ἀρχηγοί.

Η̄ Τίνες ἐκκλησιαστικοὶ συγγραφεῖς.

Θ̄ Ἐπιστολὴ Ἀδριανοῦ ὑπὲρ τοῦ μὴ δεῖν ἀκρίτως ἡμᾶς ἐλαύνειν.

Ī Τίνες ἐπὶ τῆς Ἀντωνίνου βασιλείας ἐπίσκοποι Ῥωμαίων καὶ Ἀλεξανδρέων γεγόνασιν.

ΙĀ Περὶ τῶν κατ' αὐτοὺς αἱρεσιαρχῶν.

ΙB̄ Περὶ τῆς Ἰουστίνου πρὸς Ἀντωνῖνον ἀπολογίας.

ΙΓ̄ Ἀντωνίνου πρὸς τὸ κοινὸν τῆς Ἀσίας ἐπιστολὴ περὶ τοῦ καθ' ἡμᾶς λόγου.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS OF BOOK IV

The contents of the fourth book of the History of the Church is as follows :

I. Who were the bishops of Rome and Alexandria in the reign of Trajan.

II. What the Jews suffered in his time.

III. The apologists for Christianity in the time of Hadrian.

IV. The bishops of Rome and Alexandria in his time.

V. The bishops of Jerusalem, beginning from the Saviour down to the time mentioned.

VI. The last siege of the Jews under Hadrian.

VII. Who were the leaders of Knowledge, falsely so-called, at that time.

VIII. Who are the writers of the church.

IX. A letter of Hadrian to the effect that we must not be persecuted without being tried.

X. Who were the bishops of Rome and Alexandria in the reign of Antoninus.

XI. On the leaders of heresy in their times.

XII. On the apology of Justin to Antoninus.

XIII. A letter of Antoninus to the Council of Asia on our religion.

Digitized by Google

ΙΔ Τὰ περὶ Πολυκάρπου τοῦ τῶν ἀποστόλων γνωρίμου μνημονευόμενα.
ΙΕ Ὅπως κατὰ Οὐῆρον ὁ Πολύκαρπος ἄμ' ἑτέροις ἐμαρτύρησεν ἐπὶ τῆς Σμυρναίων πόλεως.
ΙϚ Ὅπως Ἰουστῖνος ὁ φιλόσοφος τὸν Χριστοῦ λόγον ἐπὶ τῆς Ῥωμαίων πόλεως πρεσβεύων ἐμαρτύρησεν.
ΙΖ Περὶ ὧν Ἰουστῖνος ἐν ἰδίῳ συγγράμματι μνημονεύει μαρτύρων.
ΙΗ Τίνες εἰς ἡμᾶς ἦλθον τῶν Ἰουστίνου λόγων.
ΙΘ Τίνες ἐπὶ τῆς Οὐήρου βασιλείας τῆς Ῥωμαίων καὶ Ἀλεξανδρέων ἐκκλησίας προέστησαν.
Κ Τίνες οἱ τῆς Ἀντιοχέων.
ΚΑ Περὶ τῶν κατὰ τούτους διαλαμψάντων ἐκκλησιαστικῶν συγγραφέων.
ΚΒ Περὶ Ἡγησίππου καὶ ὧν αὐτὸς μνημονεύει.
ΚΓ Περὶ Διονυσίου Κορινθίων ἐπισκόπου καὶ ὧν ἔγραψεν ἐπιστολῶν.
ΚΔ Περὶ Θεοφίλου Ἀντιοχέων ἐπισκόπου.
ΚΕ Περὶ Φιλίππου καὶ Μοδέστου.
ΚϚ Περὶ Μελίτωνος καὶ ὧν αὐτὸς ἐμνημόνευσεν.
ΚΖ Περὶ Ἀπολιναρίου.
ΚΗ Περὶ Μουσανοῦ.
ΚΘ Περὶ τῆς κατὰ Τατιανὸν αἱρέσεως.
Λ Περὶ Βαρδησάνου τοῦ Σύρου καὶ τῶν φερομένων αὐτοῦ λόγων.

Digitized by Google

XIV. The story of Polycarp who had known the apostles.
XV. How in the time of Verus Polycarp with others was martyred in the city of Smyrna.
XVI. How Justin the philosopher was martyred in the city of Rome as an ambassador for the word of Christ.
XVII. On the martyrs whom Justin mentions in his own writings.
XVIII. What writings of Justin have come down to us.
XIX. Who were the leaders of the churches of Rome and Alexandria in the reign of Verus.
XX. Who were the bishops of Antioch.
XXI. On the ecclesiastical writers who were famous in their time.
XXII. On Hegesippus and what he relates.
XXIII. On Dionysius, the bishop of Corinth, and the letters which he wrote.
XXIV. On Theophilus, bishop of Antioch.
XXV. On Philip and Modestus.
XXVI. On Melito and the statements which he makes.
XXVII. On Apolinarius.
XXVIII. On Musanus.
XXIX. On the heresy of Tatian.
XXX. On Bardesanes the Syrian and his extant books.

Digitized by Google

Δ

I. Ἀμφὶ δὲ τὸ δωδέκατον ἔτος τῆς Τραϊανοῦ 1
βασιλείας ὁ μικρῷ πρόσθεν ἡμῖν τῆς ἐν Ἀλεξανδρείᾳ
παροικίας δηλωθεὶς ἐπίσκοπος τὴν ζωὴν μετ-
αλλάττει, τέταρτος δ' ἀπὸ τῶν ἀποστόλων τὴν τῶν
αὐτόθι λειτουργίαν κληροῦται Πρῖμος. ἐν τούτῳ
καὶ Ἀλέξανδρος ἐπὶ Ῥώμης, ὄγδοον ἔτος ἀπο-
πλήσαντος Εὐαρέστου, πέμπτην ἀπὸ Πέτρου καὶ
Παύλου κατάγων διαδοχήν, τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν ὑπο-
λαμβάνει.

II. Καὶ τὰ μὲν τῆς τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν διδα- 1
σκαλίας τε καὶ ἐκκλησίας ὁσημέραι ἀνθοῦντα ἐπὶ
μεῖζον ἐχώρει προκοπῆς, τὰ δὲ τῆς Ἰουδαίων συμ-
φορᾶς κακοῖς ἐπαλλήλοις ἤκμαζεν. ἤδη γοῦν τοῦ
αὐτοκράτορος εἰς ἐνιαυτὸν ὀκτωκαιδέκατον ἐλαύ-
νοντος, αὖθις Ἰουδαίων κίνησις ἐπαναστᾶσα πάμ-
πολυ πλῆθος αὐτῶν διαφθείρει. ἔν τε γὰρ Ἀλεξ- 2
ανδρείᾳ καὶ τῇ λοιπῇ Αἰγύπτῳ καὶ προσέτι κατὰ
Κυρήνην, ὥσπερ ὑπὸ πνεύματος δεινοῦ τινος καὶ
στασιώδους ἀναρριπισθέντες, ὥρμηντο πρὸς τοὺς
συνοίκους Ἕλληνας στασιάζειν, αὐξήσαντές τε εἰς
μέγα τὴν στάσιν, τῷ ἐπιόντι ἐνιαυτῷ πόλεμον οὐ
σμικρὸν συνῆψαν, ἡγουμένου τηνικαῦτα Λούπου
τῆς ἁπάσης Αἰγύπτου. καὶ δὴ ἐν τῇ πρώτῃ συμ- 3
βολῇ ἐπικρατῆσαι αὐτοὺς συνέβη τῶν Ἑλλήνων·

Digitized by Google

BOOK IV

I. About the twelfth year of the reign of Trajan[1] the bishop[2] of the diocese of Alexandria, whom we mentioned a little earlier, passed away, and Primus, the fourth from the Apostles, received the charge of those in that place. At this time, too, at Rome Alexander, when Evarestus had completed his eighth year, was the fifth to succeed Peter and Paul, and took up the bishopric.

II. While the teaching of our Saviour and the church were flourishing daily and moving on to further progress the tragedy of the Jews was reaching the climax of successive woes. In the course of the eighteenth year[3] of the reign of the Emperor a rebellion of the Jews again broke out and destroyed a great multitude of them. For both in Alexandria and in the rest of Egypt and especially in Cyrene, as though they had been seized by some terrible spirit of rebellion, they rushed into sedition against their Greek fellow citizens, and increasing the scope of the rebellion in the following year started a great war while Lupus was governor of all Egypt.[4] In the first engagement they happened to overcome

[1] A.D. 109. [2] Cerdon, *cf.* iii. 21. [3] A.D. 115.
[4] *Cf.* Dio Cassius, lxviii. 32 and lxix. 12 f.

Digitized by Google

οἳ καὶ καταφυγόντες εἰς τὴν Ἀλεξάνδρειαν τοὺς ἐν τῇ πόλει Ἰουδαίους ἐζώγρησάν τε καὶ ἀπέκτειναν, τῆς δὲ παρὰ τούτων συμμαχίας ἀποτυχόντες οἱ κατὰ Κυρήνην τὴν χώραν τῆς Αἰγύπτου λεηλατοῦντες καὶ τοὺς ἐν αὐτῇ νομοὺς φθείροντες διετέλουν, ἡγουμένου αὐτῶν Λουκούα· ἐφ' οὓς ὁ αὐτοκράτωρ ἔπεμψεν Μάρκιον Τούρβωνα σὺν δυνάμει πεζῇ τε καὶ ναυτικῇ, ἔτι δὲ καὶ ἱππικῇ. ὁ δὲ πολλαῖς μάχαις οὐκ ὀλίγῳ τε χρόνῳ τὸν 4
πρὸς αὐτοὺς διαπονήσας πόλεμον, πολλὰς μυριάδας Ἰουδαίων, οὐ μόνον τῶν ἀπὸ Κυρήνης, ἀλλὰ καὶ τῶν ἀπ' Αἰγύπτου συναιρομένων Λουκούᾳ τῷ βασιλεῖ αὐτῶν, ἀναιρεῖ. ὁ δὲ αὐτοκράτωρ ὑπ- 5
οπτεύσας καὶ τοὺς ἐν Μεσοποταμίᾳ Ἰουδαίους ἐπιθήσεσθαι τοῖς αὐτόθι, Λουσίῳ Κυήτῳ προσέταξεν ἐκκαθᾶραι τῆς ἐπαρχίας αὐτούς· ὃς καὶ παραταξάμενος, πάμπολυ πλῆθος τῶν αὐτόθι φονεύει, ἐφ' ᾧ κατορθώματι Ἰουδαίας ἡγεμὼν ὑπὸ τοῦ αὐτοκράτορος ἀνεδείχθη. ταῦτα καὶ Ἑλλήνων οἱ τὰ κατὰ τοὺς αὐτοὺς χρόνους γραφῇ παραδόντες αὐτοῖς ἱστόρησαν ῥήμασιν.

III. Τραϊανοῦ δὲ ἐφ' ὅλοις ἔτεσιν εἴκοσι τὴν 1
ἀρχὴν μησὶν ἓξ δέουσιν κρατήσαντος, Αἴλιος Ἀδριανὸς διαδέχεται τὴν ἡγεμονίαν. τούτῳ Κοδρᾶτος λόγον προσφωνήσας ἀναδίδωσιν, ἀπολογίαν συντάξας ὑπὲρ τῆς καθ' ἡμᾶς θεοσεβείας, ὅτι δή τινες πονηροὶ ἄνδρες τοὺς ἡμετέρους ἐνοχλεῖν ἐπειρῶντο· εἰς ἔτι δὲ φέρεται παρὰ πλείστοις τῶν ἀδελφῶν, ἀτὰρ καὶ παρ' ἡμῖν τὸ σύγγραμμα· ἐξ οὗ κατιδεῖν ἔστιν λαμπρὰ τεκμήρια τῆς τε τοῦ ἀνδρὸς διανοίας καὶ τῆς ἀποστολικῆς ὀρθοτομίας. ὁ δ' αὐτὸς τὴν 2
καθ' ἑαυτὸν ἀρχαιότητα παραφαίνει δι' ὧν ἱστορεῖ

Digitized by Google

the Greeks, who fled to Alexandria and captured and killed the Jews in the city, but though thus losing the help of the townsmen, the Jews of Cyrene continued to plunder the country of Egypt and to ravage the districts in it under their leader Lucuas. The Emperor sent against them Marcius Turbo with land and sea forces including cavalry. He waged war vigorously against them in many battles for a considerable time and killed many thousands of Jews, not only those of Cyrene but also those of Egypt who had rallied to Lucuas,[1] their king. The Emperor suspected that the Jews in Mesopotamia would also attack the inhabitants and ordered Lusius Quietus to clean them out of the province. He organized a force and murdered a great multitude of the Jews there, and for this reform was appointed governor of Judaea by the Emperor. The Greek authors [2] who chronicle the same period have related this narrative in these very words.

III. When Trajan had reigned for nineteen and a half years Aelius Hadrian succeeded [3] to the sovereignty. To him Quadratus addressed a treatise, composing a defence for our religion because some wicked men were trying to trouble the Christians. It is still extant among many of the brethren and we have a copy ourselves. From it can be seen the clear proof of his intellect and apostolic orthodoxy. He shows his early date by what he says as follows

[1] Dio Cassius (lxviii. 32) gives his name as Andreas.
[2] Except for Dio Cassius these cannot be identified.
[3] A.D. 117.

Digitized by Google

ταῦτα ἰδίαις φωναῖς· "τοῦ δὲ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν τὰ ἔργα ἀεὶ παρῆν ἀληθῆ γὰρ ἦν, οἱ θεραπευθέντες, οἱ ἀναστάντες ἐκ νεκρῶν, οἳ οὐκ ὤφθησαν μόνον θεραπευόμενοι καὶ ἀνιστάμενοι, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἀεὶ παρόντες, οὐδὲ ἐπιδημοῦντος μόνον τοῦ σωτῆρος, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἀπαλλαγέντος ἦσαν ἐπὶ χρόνον ἱκανόν, ὥστε καὶ εἰς τοὺς ἡμετέρους χρόνους τινὲς αὐτῶν ἀφίκοντο."[1] τοιοῦτος μὲν οὗτος· καὶ Ἀριστείδης 3
δέ, πιστὸς ἀνὴρ τῆς καθ' ἡμᾶς ὁρμώμενος εὐσεβείας, τῷ Κοδράτῳ παραπλησίως ὑπὲρ τῆς πίστεως ἀπολογίαν ἐπιφωνήσας Ἀδριανῷ καταλέλοιπεν· σῴζεται δέ γε εἰς δεῦρο παρὰ πλείστοις καὶ ἡ τούτου γραφή.

IV. Ἔτει δὲ τρίτῳ τῆς αὐτῆς ἡγεμονίας Ἀλέξ- 1
ανδρος Ῥωμαίων ἐπίσκοπος τελευτᾷ, δέκατον τῆς οἰκονομίας ἀποπλήσας ἔτος· Ξύστος ἦν τούτῳ διάδοχος. καὶ τῆς Ἀλεξανδρέων δὲ παροικίας ἀμφὶ τὸν αὐτὸν χρόνον Πρῖμον μεταλλάξαντα δωδεκάτῳ τῆς προστασίας ἔτει διαδέχεται Ἰοῦστος.

V. Τῶν γε μὴν ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις ἐπισκόπων τοὺς 1
χρόνους γραφῇ σῳζομένους οὐδαμῶς εὑρών (κομιδῇ γὰρ οὖν βραχυβίους αὐτοὺς λόγος κατέχει γενέσθαι), τοσοῦτον ἐξ ἐγγράφων παρείληφα, ὡς μέχρι τῆς 2
κατὰ Ἀδριανὸν Ἰουδαίων πολιορκίας πεντεκαίδεκα τὸν ἀριθμὸν αὐτόθι γεγόνασιν ἐπισκόπων διαδοχαί, οὓς πάντας Ἑβραίους φασὶν ὄντας ἀνέκαθεν, τὴν γνῶσιν τοῦ Χριστοῦ γνησίως καταδέξασθαι, ὥστ' ἤδη πρὸς τῶν τὰ τοιάδε ἐπικρίνειν δυνατῶν καὶ τῆς τῶν ἐπισκόπων λειτουργίας ἀξίους δοκιμασθῆναι· συνεστάναι γὰρ αὐτοῖς τότε τὴν πᾶσαν ἐκκλησίαν ἐξ Ἑβραίων πιστῶν ἀπὸ τῶν ἀπο-

[1] *Cf.* George Syncellus, 658. 8-13.

Digitized by Google

in his own words: "But the works of our Saviour were always present, for they were true, those who were cured, those who rose from the dead, who not merely appeared as cured and risen, but were constantly present, not only while the Saviour was living, but even for some time after he had gone, so that some of them survived even till our own time." Such was he. Aristides too, a man of faith and devoted to our religion, has, like Quadratus, left behind a defence of the faith addressed to Hadrian. His writing, too, is still preserved by many.[1]

IV. In the third year of the same reign[2] Alexander, the bishop of the Romans, died after completing the tenth year of his ministry; Xystus was his successor. And at the same time, in the diocese of the Alexandrians, Justus succeeded Primus, who died in the twelfth year of his rule.

V. I have not found any written statement of the dates of the bishops in Jerusalem, for tradition says that they were extremely short-lived, but I have gathered from documents this much—that up to the siege of the Jews by Hadrian the successions of bishops were fifteen in number. It is said that they were all Hebrews by origin who had nobly accepted the knowledge of Christ, so that they were counted worthy even of the episcopal ministry by those who had the power to judge such questions. For their whole church at that time consisted of Hebrews who

[1] The Syriac text was discovered by J. Rendel Harris on Mt. Sinai and published by him in *Texts and Studies*, i. 1. See Introduction p. xlix.

[2] A.D. 120.

Digitized by Google

στόλων καὶ εἰς τὴν τότε διαρκεσάντων πολιορκίαν, καθ' ἣν Ἰουδαῖοι Ῥωμαίων αὖθις ἀποστάντες, οὐ μικροῖς πολέμοις ἤλωσαν. διαλελοιπότων δ' οὖν 3 τηνικαῦτα τῶν ἐκ περιτομῆς ἐπισκόπων, τοὺς ἀπὸ πρώτου νῦν ἀναγκαῖον ἂν εἴη καταλέξαι. πρῶτος τοιγαροῦν Ἰάκωβος ὁ τοῦ κυρίου λεγόμενος ἀδελφὸς ἦν· μεθ' ὃν δεύτερος Συμεών· τρίτος Ἰοῦστος· Ζακχαῖος τέταρτος· πέμπτος Τωβίας· ἕκτος Βενιαμίν· Ἰωάννης ἕβδομος· ὄγδοος Ματθίας· ἔνατος Φίλιππος· δέκατος Ζενέκας· ἑνδέκατος Ἰοῦστος· Λευὶς δωδέκατος· Ἐφρῆς τρισκαιδέκατος· τεσσαρεσκαιδέκατος Ἰωσήφ· ἐπὶ πᾶσι πεντεκαιδέκατος Ἰούδας. τοσοῦτοι καὶ οἱ ἐπὶ τῆς 4 Ἱεροσολύμων πόλεως ἐπίσκοποι ἀπὸ τῶν ἀποστόλων εἰς τὸν δηλούμενον διαγενόμενοι χρόνον, οἱ πάντες ἐκ περιτομῆς. ἤδη δὲ δωδέκατον 5 ἐχούσης ἔτος τῆς ἡγεμονίας, Ξύστον δεκαέτη χρόνον ἀποπλήσαντα ἐπὶ τῆς Ῥωμαίων ἐπισκοπῆς ἕβδομος ἀπὸ τῶν ἀποστόλων διαδέχεται Τελεσφόρος· ἐνιαυτοῦ δὲ μεταξὺ καὶ μηνῶν διαγενομένου, τῆς Ἀλεξανδρέων παροικίας τὴν προστασίαν Εὐμένης ἕκτῳ κλήρῳ διαδέχεται, τοῦ πρὸ αὐτοῦ ἔτεσιν ἕνδεκα διαρκέσαντος.

VI. Καὶ δῆτα τῆς Ἰουδαίων ἀποστασίας αὖθις 1 εἰς μέγα καὶ πολὺ προελθούσης, Ῥοῦφος ἐπάρχων τῆς Ἰουδαίας, στρατιωτικῆς αὐτῷ συμμαχίας ὑπὸ βασιλέως πεμφθείσης, ταῖς ἀπονοίαις αὐτῶν ἀφειδῶς χρώμενος ἐπεξῄει, μυριάδας ἀθρόως ἀνδρῶν ὁμοῦ καὶ παίδων καὶ γυναικῶν διαφθείρων πολέμου τε νόμῳ τὰς χώρας αὐτῶν ἐξανδραποδιζόμενος. ἐστρατήγει δὲ τότε Ἰουδαίων Βαρ- 2 χωχεβας ὄνομα, ὃ δὴ ἀστέρα δηλοῖ, τὰ μὲν ἄλλα

Digitized by Google

had continued Christian from the Apostles down to the siege at the time when the Jews again rebelled from the Romans and were beaten in a great war. Since the Jewish bishops then ceased, it is now necessary to give their names from the beginning. The first then was James who was called the Lord's brother, and after him Simeon was the second. The third was Justus, Zacchaeus was the fourth, Tobias the fifth, the sixth Benjamin, the seventh John, the eighth Matthias, the ninth Philip, the tenth Seneca, the eleventh Justus, the twelfth Levi, the thirteenth Ephres, the fourteenth Joseph, and last of all the fifteenth Judas. Such were the bishops in the city of Jerusalem, from the Apostles down to the time mentioned, and they were all Jews. Now during the twelfth year of the reign of Hadrian, Telesphorus, the seventh from the Apostles, succeeded Xystus who had completed ten years in the bishopric of the Romans, and one year and some months later Eumenes succeeded to the government of the diocese of Alexandria as the sixth bishop, when his predecessor had completed eleven years.

VI. The rebellion of the Jews[1] once more progressed in character and extent, and Rufus, the governor of Judaea, when military aid had been sent him by the Emperor, moved out against them, treating their madness without mercy. He destroyed in heaps thousands of men, women, and children, and, under the law of war, enslaved their land. The Jews were at that time led by a certain Bar Chochebas,[2] which means "star," a man who was

[1] *Cf.* Dio Cassius, lxix. 12-14.

[2] Literally "son of a star," with a probable reference to Numbers xxiv. 17. After his defeat the Jews called him Bar Choziba, "son of a lie."

Digitized by Google

φονικὸς καὶ λῃστρικός τις ἀνήρ, ἐπὶ δὲ τῇ προσηγορίᾳ, οἷα ἐπ' ἀνδραπόδων, ὡς δὴ ἐξ οὐρανοῦ φωστὴρ αὐτοῖς κατεληλυθὼς κακουμένοις τε ἐπιλάμψαι τερατευόμενος. ἀκμάσαντος δὲ τοῦ πο- 3
λέμου ἔτους ὀκτωκαιδεκάτου τῆς ἡγεμονίας κατὰ Βηθθηρα (πολίχνη τις ἦν ὀχυρωτάτη, τῶν Ἱεροσολύμων οὐ σφόδρα πόρρω διεστῶσα) τῆς τε ἔξωθεν πολιορκίας χρονίου γενομένης λιμῷ τε καὶ δίψει τῶν νεωτεροποιῶν εἰς ἔσχατον ὀλέθρου περιελαθέντων καὶ τοῦ τῆς ἀπονοίας αὐτοῖς αἰτίου τὴν ἀξίαν ἐκτίσαντος δίκην, τὸ πᾶν ἔθνος ἐξ ἐκείνου καὶ τῆς περὶ τὰ Ἱεροσόλυμα γῆς πάμπαν ἐπιβαίνειν εἴργεται νόμου δόγματι καὶ διατάξεσιν Ἀδριανοῦ, ὡς ἂν μηδ' ἐξ ἀπόπτου θεωροῖεν τὸ πατρῷον ἔδαφος, ἐγκελευσαμένου· Ἀρίστων ὁ Πελλαῖος ἱστορεῖ. οὕτω δὴ τῆς πόλεως εἰς 4
ἐρημίαν τοῦ Ἰουδαίων ἔθνους παντελῆ τε φθορὰν τῶν πάλαι οἰκητόρων ἐλθούσης ἐξ ἀλλοφύλου τε γένους συνοικισθείσης, ἡ μετέπειτα συστᾶσα Ῥωμαϊκὴ πόλις τὴν ἐπωνυμίαν ἀμείψασα, εἰς τὴν τοῦ κρατοῦντος Αἰλίου Ἀδριανοῦ τιμὴν Αἰλία προσαγορεύεται. καὶ δὴ τῆς αὐτόθι ἐκκλησίας ἐξ ἐθνῶν συγκροτηθείσης, πρῶτος μετὰ τοὺς ἐκ περιτομῆς ἐπισκόπους τὴν τῶν ἐκεῖσε λειτουργίαν ἐγχειρίζεται Μάρκος.

VII. Ἤδη δὲ λαμπροτάτων δίκην φωστήρων τῶν 1
ἀνὰ τὴν οἰκουμένην ἀποστιλβουσῶν ἐκκλησιῶν ἀκμαζούσης τε εἰς ἅπαν τὸ τῶν ἀνθρώπων γένος τῆς εἰς τὸν σωτῆρα καὶ κύριον ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν πίστεως, ὁ μισόκαλος δαίμων οἷα τῆς ἀληθείας ἐχθρὸς καὶ τῆς τῶν ἀνθρώπων σωτηρίας ἀεὶ τυγχάνων πολεμιώτατος, πάσας στρέφων κατὰ

Digitized by Google

murderous and a bandit, but relied on his name, as if dealing with slaves, and claimed to be a luminary who had come down to them from heaven and was magically enlightening those who were in misery. The war reached its height in the eighteenth year of the reign of Hadrian in Beththera,[1] which was a strong citadel not very far from Jerusalem; the siege lasted a long time before the rebels were driven to final destruction by famine and thirst and the instigator of their madness paid the penalty he deserved. Hadrian then commanded that by a legal decree and ordinances the whole nation should be absolutely prevented from entering from thenceforth even the district round Jerusalem, so that not even from a distance could it see its ancestral home. Ariston of Pella tells the story.[2] Thus when the city came to be bereft of the nation of the Jews, and its ancient inhabitants had completely perished, it was colonized by foreigners, and the Roman city which afterwards arose changed its name, and in honour of the reigning emperor Aelius Hadrian was called Aelia. The church, too, in it was composed of Gentiles, and after the Jewish bishops the first who was appointed to minister to those there was Marcus.

VII. Like brilliant lamps the churches were now shining throughout the world, and faith in our Saviour and Lord Jesus Christ was flourishing among all mankind, when the devil who hates what is good, as the enemy of truth, ever most hostile to man's salvation, turned all his devices against the church.

[1] It has not been identified.
[2] The book is not extant.

Digitized by Google

τῆς ἐκκλησίας μηχανάς, πάλαι μὲν τοῖς ἔξωθεν διωγμοῖς κατ' αὐτῆς ὡπλίζετο, τότε γε μὴν 2
τούτων ἀποκεκλεισμένος, πονηροῖς καὶ γόησιν
ἀνδράσιν ὥσπερ τισὶν ὀλεθρίοις ψυχῶν ὀργάνοις
διακόνοις τε ἀπωλείας χρώμενος, ἑτέραις κατ-
εστρατήγει μεθόδοις, πάντα πόρον ἐπινοῶν, ὡς
ἂν ὑποδύντες γόητες καὶ ἀπατηλοὶ τὴν αὐτὴν τοῦ
δόγματος ἡμῖν προσηγορίαν, ὁμοῦ μὲν τῶν πιστῶν
τοὺς πρὸς αὐτῶν ἁλισκομένους εἰς βυθὸν ἀπωλείας
ἄγοιεν, ὁμοῦ δὲ τοὺς τῆς πίστεως ἀγνῶτας δι' ὧν
αὐτοὶ δρῶντες ἐπιχειροῖεν, ἀποτρέποιντο τῆς ἐπὶ
τὸν σωτήριον λόγον παρόδου. ἀπὸ γοῦν τοῦ 3
Μενάνδρου, ὃν διάδοχον τοῦ Σίμωνος ἤδη πρότερον
παραδεδώκαμεν, ἀμφίστομος ὥσπερ καὶ δικέφαλος
ὀφιώδης τις προελθοῦσα δύναμις δυεῖν αἱρέσεων
διαφόρων ἀρχηγοὺς κατεστήσατο, Σατορνῖνόν τε
Ἀντιοχέα τὸ γένος καὶ Βασιλείδην Ἀλεξανδρέα·
ὧν ὁ μὲν κατὰ Συρίαν, ὁ δὲ κατ' Αἴγυπτον συν-
εστήσαντο θεομισῶν αἱρέσεων διδασκαλεῖα. τὰ μὲν 4
Iren. 1, 24, 1 οὖν πλεῖστα τὸν Σατορνῖνον τὰ αὐτὰ τῷ Μενάνδρῳ
Iren. 1, 24, 3 ψευδολογῆσαι ὁ Εἰρηναῖος δηλοῖ, προσχήματι δὲ
ἀπορρητοτέρων τὸν Βασιλείδην εἰς τὸ ἄπειρον
τεῖναι τὰς ἐπινοίας, δυσσεβοῦς αἱρέσεως ἑαυτῷ
τερατώδεις ἀναπλάσαντα μυθοποιίας. πλείστων 5
οὖν ἐκκλησιαστικῶν ἀνδρῶν κατ' ἐκεῖνο καιροῦ
τῆς ἀληθείας ὑπεραγωνιζομένων λογικώτερόν τε
τῆς ἀποστολικῆς καὶ ἐκκλησιαστικῆς δόξης ὑπερ-
μαχούντων, ἤδη τινὲς καὶ διὰ συγγραμμάτων τοῖς
μετέπειτα προφυλακτικὰς αὐτῶν δὴ τούτων τῶν
δηλωθεισῶν αἱρέσεων παρεῖχον ἐφόδους· ὧν εἰς 6
ἡμᾶς κατῆλθεν ἐν τοῖς τότε γνωριμωτάτου συγ-
γραφέως Ἀγρίππα Κάστορος ἱκανώτατος κατὰ

Digitized by Google

Formerly he had used persecutions from without as his weapon against her, but now that he was excluded from this he employed wicked men and sorcerers, like baleful weapons and ministers of destruction against the soul, and conducted his campaign by other measures, plotting by every means that sorcerers and deceivers might assume the same name as our religion and at one time lead to the depth of destruction those of the faithful whom they caught, and at others, by the deeds which they undertook, might turn away from the path to the saving word those who were ignorant of the faith. Thus from Menander, whom we have already mentioned as the successor of Simon, there proceeded a certain snake-like power with two mouths and double head, and established the leaders of two heresies, Saturninus, an Antiochian by race, and Basilides of Alexandria. The first established schools of impious heresy in Syria, the latter in Egypt. Irenaeus makes it plain that Saturninus uttered for the most part the same falsehoods as Menander, but Basilides, under the pretext of secret doctrine, stretched fancy infinitely far, fabricating monstrous myths for his impious heresy. Now while most of the orthodox at that time were struggling for the truth, and fighting with great eloquence [1] for the glory of the Apostles and of the Church, some also by their writings provided for their successors methods of defence against the heresies which have been mentioned. Of these a most powerful refutation of Basilides [2] has reached us from Agrippa Castor, a most famous

[1] The Greek might naturally mean "logically," but the antithesis with written defences shows what is intended.

[2] Not extant.

Digitized by Google

Βασιλείδου ἔλεγχος, τὴν δεινότητα τῆς τἀνδρὸς 7
ἀποκαλύπτων γοητείας. ἐκφαίνων δ' οὖν αὐτοῦ
τὰ ἀπόρρητα, φησὶν αὐτὸν εἰς μὲν τὸ εὐαγγέλιον
τέσσαρα πρὸς τοῖς εἴκοσι συντάξαι βιβλία, προ-
φήτας δὲ ἑαυτῷ ὀνομάσαι Βαρκαββαν καὶ Βαρκωφ
καὶ ἄλλους ἀνυπάρκτους τινὰς ἑαυτῷ συστησά-
μενον, βαρβάρους τε αὐτοῖς εἰς κατάπληξιν τῶν
τὰ τοιαῦτα τεθηπότων ἐπιφημίσαι προσηγορίας,
διδάσκειν τε ἀδιαφορεῖν εἰδωλοθύτων ἀπογευο-
μένους καὶ ἐξομνυμένους ἀπαραφυλάκτως τὴν
πίστιν κατὰ τοὺς τῶν διωγμῶν καιρούς, Πυθα-
γορικῶς τε τοῖς προσιοῦσιν αὐτῷ πενταέτη σιωπὴν
παρακελεύεσθαι· καὶ ἕτερα δὲ τούτοις παραπλήσια 8
ἀμφὶ τοῦ Βασιλείδου καταλέξας ὁ εἰρημένος
οὐκ ἀγεννῶς τῆς δηλωθείσης αἱρέσεως εἰς προῦπτον
Iren. 1, 25. 1, 6, 3, 4 ἐφώρασε τὴν πλάνην. γράφει δὲ καὶ Εἰρηναῖος 9
συγχρονίσαι τούτοις Καρποκράτην, ἑτέρας αἱρέσεως
τῆς τῶν Γνωστικῶν ἐπικληθείσης πατέρα· οἳ καὶ
τοῦ Σίμωνος οὐχ ὡς ἐκεῖνος κρύβδην, ἀλλ' ἤδη καὶ
εἰς φανερὸν τὰς μαγείας παραδιδόναι ἠξίουν, ὡς
ἐπὶ μεγάλοις δή, μόνον οὐχὶ καὶ σεμνυνόμενοι τοῖς
κατὰ περιεργίαν πρὸς αὐτῶν ἐπιτελουμένοις φίλ-
τροις ὀνειροπομποῖς τε καὶ παρέδροις τισὶ δαίμοσιν
καὶ ἄλλαις ὁμοιοτρόποις τισὶν ἀγωγαῖς· τούτοις
τε ἀκολούθως πάντα δρᾶν χρῆναι διδάσκειν τὰ
αἰσχρουργότατα τοὺς μέλλοντας εἰς τὸ τέλειον τῆς
κατ' αὐτοὺς μυσταγωγίας ἢ καὶ μᾶλλον μυσαρο-
ποιίας ἐλεύσεσθαι, ὡς μὴ ἂν ἄλλως ἐκφευξομένους
τοὺς κοσμικούς, ὡς ἂν ἐκεῖνοι φαῖεν, ἄρχοντας,
μὴ οὐχὶ πᾶσιν τὰ δι' ἀρρητοποιίας ἀπονείμαντας
χρέα. τούτοις δῆτα συνέβαινεν διακόνοις χρώμενον 10
τὸν ἐπιχαιρεσίκακον δαίμονα τοὺς μὲν πρὸς αὐτῶν

Digitized by Google

writer of that time, revealing the cleverness of the man's deception. In expounding his mysteries he says that he compiled twenty-four books on the gospel, and that he named his own prophets Bar Cabbas and Bar Coph,[1] and that he set up some others for himself who had never existed, but that he invented barbarous names for them to astonish those who were influenced by such things. He taught that there was no harm in eating things offered to idols, or in light-heartedly denying the faith in times of persecution. Like Pythagoras he enjoined those who came to him to keep silence for five years. The same writer tells other similar things about Basilides, and offers a magnificent refutation of the error of the heresy described. Irenaeus also writes that Carpocrates was a contemporary of these, the father of another heresy which was called that of the Gnostics. These did not, like Basilides, desire to transmit the magic of Simon secretly but openly, as though it was some great thing, speaking almost with awe of their magical ceremonies, of love charms, of the bringers of dreams and familiar spirits, and of other similar performances. In accordance with this they teach that those who purpose coming to initiation in their mysteries, or rather in their obscenities, must perform all the shocking deeds because in no other way can they escape the "rulers of the world," as they would say, except by fulfilling to all of them what was necessary through their mysteries. By using these ministers the demon who rejoices in evil accomplished the piteous enslavement

[1] Nothing is known of these persons, but for a suggested connexion of Gnostic prophecy with Zoroastrian writings see Hort's article on Barcabbas in the *Dictionary of Christian Biography*.

Digitized by Google

ἀπατωμένους οἰκτρῶς οὕτως εἰς ἀπώλειαν ἀνδραποδίζεσθαι, τοῖς δ' ἀπίστοις ἔθνεσιν πολλὴν παρέχειν κατὰ τοῦ θείου λόγου δυσφημίας περιουσίαν, τῆς ἐξ αὐτῶν φήμης εἰς τὴν τοῦ παντὸς Χριστιανῶν ἔθνους διαβολὴν καταχεομένης. ταύτῃ 11
δ' οὖν ἐπὶ πλεῖστον συνέβαινεν τὴν περὶ ἡμῶν παρὰ τοῖς τότε ἀπίστοις ὑπόνοιαν δυσσεβῆ καὶ ἀτοπωτάτην διαδίδοσθαι, ὡς δὴ ἀθεμίτοις πρὸς μητέρας καὶ ἀδελφὰς μίξεσιν ἀνοσίαις τε τροφαῖς χρωμένων. οὐκ εἰς μακρόν γε μὴν αὐτῷ ταῦτα 12
προυχώρει, τῆς ἀληθείας αὐτῆς ἑαυτὴν συνιστώσης ἐπὶ μέγα τε φῶς κατὰ τὸν προϊόντα χρόνον διαλαμπούσης. ἔσβεστο μὲν γὰρ αὐτίκα πρὸς αὐτῆς 13
ἐνεργείας ἀπελεγχόμενα τὰ τῶν ἐχθρῶν ἐπιτεχνήματα, ἄλλων ἐπ' ἄλλαις αἱρέσεων καινοτομουμένων ὑπορρεουσῶν ἀεὶ τῶν προτέρων καὶ εἰς πολυτρόπους καὶ πολυμόρφους ἰδέας ἄλλοτε ἄλλως φθειρομένων· προῄει δ' εἰς αὔξην καὶ μέγεθος, ἀεὶ κατὰ τὰ αὐτὰ καὶ ὡσαύτως ἔχουσα, ἡ τῆς καθόλου καὶ μόνης ἀληθοῦς ἐκκλησίας λαμπρότης, τὸ σεμνὸν καὶ εἰλικρινὲς καὶ ἐλευθέριον τό τε σῶφρον καὶ καθαρὸν τῆς ἐνθέου πολιτείας τε καὶ φιλοσοφίας εἰς ἅπαν γένος Ἑλλήνων τε καὶ βαρβάρων ἀποστίλβουσα. συναπέσβη δ' οὖν ἅμα τῷ χρόνῳ καὶ ἡ κατὰ παντὸς 14
τοῦ δόγματος διαβολή, ἔμενεν δὲ ἄρα μόνη παρὰ πᾶσι κρατοῦσα καὶ ὁμολογουμένη τὰ μάλιστα διαπρέπειν ἐπὶ σεμνότητι καὶ σωφροσύνῃ θείοις τε καὶ φιλοσόφοις δόγμασιν ἡ καθ' ἡμᾶς διδασκαλία, ὡς μηδένα τῶν εἰς νῦν αἰσχρὰν ἐπιφέρειν τολμᾶν

[1] The reference is to the story which was at that time told by the heathen of the Christians and has since been told among Christians of the Jews that they kill and eat small children.

Digitized by Google

to perdition of those who were thus deceived by them, and brought much weight of discredit upon the divine word among the unbelieving Gentiles, because the report which started from them was scattered calumniously on the whole race of Christians. It was especially in this way that it came to pass that a blasphemous and wicked suspicion concerning us was spread among the heathen of those days, to the effect that we practised unspeakable incest with mothers and sisters and took part in wicked food.[1] Yet this did not long succeed, for the truth vindicated itself and as time went on shone ever more brightly. For by its power the machinations of its enemies were refuted; though new heresies were invented one after another, the earlier ones flowed into strange multiple and multifarious forms and perished in different ways at different times. But the brightness of the universal and only true church proceeded to increase in greatness, for it ever held to the same points in the same way, and radiated forth to all the race of Greeks and barbarians the reverent, sincere, and free nature, and the sobriety and purity of the divine teaching as to conduct and thought. Thus with the lapse of time the calumnies against the whole teaching were extinguished, and our doctrine remained as the only one which had power among all and was admitted to excel in its godliness and sobriety,[2] and its divine and wise doctrines. So that no one has dared to

[2] These two words are peculiarly difficult to translate. The first means the quality which demands reverence from others. The second is the moderation, self-restraint, and sobriety which are essential to a good life. There is no word in English which adequately translates either.

Digitized by Google

κατὰ τῆς πίστεως ἡμῶν δυσφημίαν μηδέ τινα τοιαύτην διαβολὴν οἷαις πάλαι πρότερον φίλον ἦν χρῆσθαι τοῖς καθ' ἡμῶν ἐπισυνισταμένοις.

Ὅμως δ' οὖν κατὰ τοὺς δηλουμένους αὖθις παρῆγεν εἰς μέσον ἡ ἀλήθεια πλείους ἑαυτῆς ὑπερμάχους, οὐ δι' ἀγράφων αὐτὸ μόνον ἐλέγχων, ἀλλὰ καὶ δι' ἐγγράφων ἀποδείξεων κατὰ τῶν ἀθέων αἱρέσεων στρατευομένους· VIII. ἐν τούτοις 1 ἐγνωρίζετο Ἡγήσιππος, οὗ πλείσταις ἤδη πρότερον κεχρήμεθα φωναῖς, ὡς ἂν ἐκ τῆς αὐτοῦ παραδόσεως τινὰ τῶν κατὰ τοὺς ἀποστόλους παραθέμενοι. ἐν πέντε δ' οὖν συγγράμμασιν οὗτος τὴν ἁπλανῆ 2 παράδοσιν τοῦ ἀποστολικοῦ κηρύγματος ἁπλουστάτῃ συντάξει γραφῆς ὑπομνηματισάμενος, καθ' ὃν ἐγνωρίζετο σημαίνει χρόνον, περὶ τῶν ἀρχῆθεν ἱδρυσάντων τὰ εἴδωλα οὕτω πως γράφων· "οἷς κενοτάφια καὶ ναοὺς ἐποίησαν ὡς μέχρι νῦν· ὧν ἐστιν καὶ Ἀντίνοος, δοῦλος Ἀδριανοῦ Καίσαρος, οὗ καὶ ἀγὼν ἄγεται Ἀντινόειος, ὁ ἐφ' ἡμῶν γενόμενος. καὶ γὰρ πόλιν ἔκτισεν ἐπώνυμον Ἀντινόου καὶ προφήτας." κατ' αὐτὸν δὲ καὶ Ἰου- 3 στῖνος, γνήσιος τῆς ἀληθοῦς φιλοσοφίας ἐραστής, ἔτι τοῖς παρ' Ἕλλησιν ἀσκούμενος ἐνδιέτριβεν λόγοις· σημαίνει δὲ καὶ αὐτὸς τουτονὶ τὸν χρόνον ἐν τῇ πρὸς Ἀντωνῖνον ἀπολογίᾳ ὧδε γράφων·

Justin, *Apol.* 1, 29

"οὐκ ἄτοπον δὲ ἐπιμνησθῆναι ἐν τούτοις ἡγούμεθα καὶ Ἀντινόου τοῦ νῦν γενομένου, ὃν καὶ ἅπαντες ὡς θεὸν διὰ φόβον σέβειν ὥρμηντο, ἐπιστάμενοι τίς τε ἦν καὶ πόθεν ὑπῆρχεν."

[1] The word *ὑπομνήματα*, which was translated in Latin by *commentarii*, means a report made by an official to the emperor or other authority, and so came to be used of an

Digitized by Google

continue the base implications of calumny against our faith, such as those who were opposed to us were formerly accustomed to use.

Nevertheless, at the time spoken of, the truth again brought forward for itself more champions who campaigned against the godless heresies not only by unwritten arguments but also in written demonstrations.

VIII. Among these Hegesippus was famous and of his words we have already made much use, for from his tradition we have quoted details as to the apostolic age. He collected his material [1] in five books, giving in the simplest style of writing the unerring tradition of the apostolic preaching. He indicates the time in which he flourished by writing thus about those who had made idols: "To them they made cenotaphs [2] and shrines until now, and among them is Antinous, a slave of the Emperor Hadrian, in whose honour the Antinoian games are held, though he was our contemporary. For he also built a city called after Antinous, and instituted prophets for him." [3] At the same time too, Justin, a genuine lover of true philosophy, was still continuing to practise the learning of the Greeks. And he also himself indicates this period in his Apology to Antoninus by writing thus, "And we thought it not out of place to mention at this point Antinous of the present day whom all were intimidated to worship as a god, though they knew his nature and origin."

historical work which had not yet been put into literary form. As to Hegesippus see Introduction, pp. xlvi sq.

[2] A cenotaph is a monument in the form of a tomb but with no body in it.

[3] The sentence seems to break off in the middle, but the subject of the verb, though not expressed, is doubtless Hadrian.

Digitized by Google

'Ο δ' αὐτὸς καὶ τοῦ τότε κατὰ 'Ιουδαίων πολέμου 4
Justin, *Apol.* 1, 31 μνημονεύων ταῦτα παρατίθεται· "καὶ γὰρ ἐν τῷ νῦν γενομένῳ 'Ιουδαϊκῷ πολέμῳ Βαρχωχεβας, ὁ τῆς 'Ιουδαίων ἀποστάσεως ἀρχηγέτης, Χριστιανοὺς μόνους εἰς τιμωρίας δεινάς, εἰ μὴ ἀρνοῖντο 'Ιησοῦν τὸν Χριστὸν καὶ βλασφημοῖεν, ἐκέλευεν ἄγεσθαι."

'Εν ταὐτῷ δὲ καὶ τὴν ἀπὸ τῆς 'Ελληνικῆς 5
φιλοσοφίας ἐπὶ τὴν θεοσέβειαν μεταβολὴν αὐτοῦ, ὅτι μὴ ἀλόγως, μετὰ κρίσεως δὲ αὐτῷ γεγόνει,
Justin, *Apol.* 2, 12 δηλῶν, ταῦτα γράφει· "καὶ γὰρ αὐτὸς ἐγώ, τοῖς Πλάτωνος χαίρων διδάγμασι, διαβαλλομένους ἀκούων Χριστιανούς, ὁρῶν δὲ καὶ ἀφόβους πρὸς θάνατον καὶ πάντα τὰ νομιζόμενα φοβερά, ἐνενόουν ἀδύνατον εἶναι ἐν κακίᾳ καὶ φιληδονίᾳ ὑπάρχειν αὐτούς· τίς γὰρ φιλήδονος ἢ ἀκρατὴς καὶ ἀνθρωπείων σαρκῶν βορὰν ἡγούμενος ἀγαθόν, δύναιτ' ἂν θάνατον ἀσπάζεσθαι, ὅπως τῶν ἑαυτοῦ στερηθείη ἐπιθυμιῶν, ἀλλ' οὐκ ἐκ παντὸς ζῆν ἀεὶ τὴν ἐνθάδε βιοτὴν καὶ λανθάνειν τοὺς ἄρχοντας ἐπειρᾶτο, οὐχ ὅτι ἑαυτὸν κατήγγελλεν φονευθησόμενον;"

Ἔτι δ' ὁ αὐτὸς ἱστορεῖ δεξάμενον τὸν 'Αδριανὸν 6
παρὰ Σερεννίου Γρανιανοῦ, λαμπροτάτου ἡγουμένου, γράμματα ὑπὲρ Χριστιανῶν περιέχοντα ὡς οὐ δίκαιον εἴη ἐπὶ μηδενὶ ἐγκλήματι βοαῖς δήμου χαριζομένους ἀκρίτως κτείνειν αὐτούς, ἀντιγράψαι Μινουκίῳ Φουνδανῷ, ἀνθυπάτῳ τῆς 'Ασίας, προστάττοντα μηδένα κρίνειν ἄνευ ἐγκλήματος καὶ εὐλόγου κατηγορίας· καὶ τῆς ἐπιστολῆς δὲ ἀντί- 7
γραφον παρατέθειται, τὴν 'Ρωμαϊκὴν φωνήν, ὡς εἶχεν, διαφυλάξας, προλέγει δ' αὐτῆς ταῦτα· "καὶ

Digitized by Google

The same writer mentions the war of that time against the Jews and makes this observation, "For in the present Jewish war it was only Christians whom Bar Chocheba, the leader of the rebellion of the Jews, commanded to be punished severely, if they did not deny Jesus as the Messiah and blaspheme him."

In the same book he shows that his conversion from Greek philosophy to true religion did not take place irrationally, but as an act of deliberate judgment; for he writes thus: "For I myself, while I was rejoicing in the teaching of Plato, heard the Christians abused. But I saw that they were afraid neither of death, nor of anything usually thought fearful, and I considered it was impossible that they were living in wickedness and libertinism. For what libertine or incontinent person, or one who finds good in the eating of human flesh, could greet death, that it might take away all his lusts, and would not try to prolong by all means his present life and to avoid the notice of the rulers, and not give himself up to be murdered?"

Moreover, the same writer relates that Hadrian received a dispatch in favour of the Christians from Serennius Granianus, a most distinguished governor, to the effect that it was not just to put them to death, without accusation or trial, to appease popular clamour, and that he wrote an answer to Minucius Fundanus, proconsul of Asia, ordering him to try no one without indictment and reasonable accusation, and Justin appends a copy of the letter, preserving the original Latin [1] as he had it, and prefixing these

[1] This is not so in the extant MS. of Justin, which has replaced the Latin by the Greek of Eusebius. The authenticity of the document has been warmly disputed, and there is not yet any agreement on the point among critics.

Digitized by Google

Justin, *Apol.* 1, 68

ἐξ ἐπιστολῆς δὲ τοῦ μεγίστου καὶ ἐπιφανεστάτου Καίσαρος Ἀδριανοῦ τοῦ πατρὸς ὑμῶν ἔχοντες ἀπαιτεῖν ὑμᾶς, καθὰ ἠξιώσαμεν, κελεῦσαι τὰς κρίσεις γίνεσθαι, τοῦτο οὐχ ὡς ὑπὸ Ἀδριανοῦ κελευσθὲν μᾶλλον ἠξιώσαμεν, ἀλλ' ἐκ τοῦ ἐπίστασθαι δικαίαν ἀξιοῦν τὴν προσφώνησιν. ὑπετάξαμεν δὲ καὶ τῆς ἐπιστολῆς Ἀδριανοῦ τὸ ἀντίγραφον, ἵνα καὶ τοῦτο ἀληθεύειν ἡμᾶς γνωρίζητε, καὶ ἔστιν τόδε."

Τούτοις ὁ μὲν δηλωθεὶς ἀνὴρ αὐτὴν παρατέθειται 8
τὴν Ῥωμαϊκὴν ἀντιγραφήν, ἡμεῖς δ' ἐπὶ τὸ
Ἑλληνικὸν κατὰ δύναμιν αὐτὴν μετειλήφαμεν,
ἔχουσαν ὧδε·

Justin, *Apol.* 1, 68

IX. "Μινουκίῳ Φουνδανῷ. ἐπιστολὴν ἐδεξάμην 1
γραφεῖσάν μοι ἀπὸ Σερεννίου Γρανιανοῦ, λαμπροτάτου ἀνδρός, ὅντινα σὺ διεδέξω. οὐ δοκεῖ μοι οὖν τὸ πρᾶγμα ἀζήτητον καταλιπεῖν, ἵνα μήτε οἱ ἄνθρωποι ταράττωνται καὶ τοῖς συκοφάνταις χορηγία κακουργίας παρασχεθῇ. εἰ οὖν σαφῶς 2
εἰς ταύτην τὴν ἀξίωσιν οἱ ἐπαρχιῶται δύνανται διισχυρίζεσθαι κατὰ τῶν Χριστιανῶν, ὡς καὶ πρὸ βήματος ἀποκρίνασθαι, ἐπὶ τοῦτο μόνον τραπῶσιν, ἀλλ' οὐκ ἀξιώσεσιν οὐδὲ μόναις βοαῖς. πολλῷ γὰρ μᾶλλον προσῆκεν, εἴ τις κατηγορεῖν βούλοιτο, τοῦτό σε διαγινώσκειν. εἴ τις οὖν κατηγορεῖ καὶ 3
δείκνυσίν τι παρὰ τοὺς νόμους πράττοντας, οὕτως ὅριζε κατὰ τὴν δύναμιν τοῦ ἁμαρτήματος· ὡς μὰ τὸν Ἡρακλέα εἴ τις συκοφαντίας χάριν τοῦτο προτείνοι, διαλάμβανε ὑπὲρ τῆς δεινότητος καὶ φρόντιζε ὅπως ἂν ἐκδικήσειας." καὶ τὰ μὲν τῆς
Ἀδριανοῦ ἀντιγραφῆς τοιαῦτα.

Digitized by Google

remarks: "Though we might have begged you to order trials to be held, as we desired, on the strength of a letter from the great and glorious Emperor Hadrian, we preferred to rest our request not on the command of Hadrian but on our knowledge that we are making a righteous request. However, we also append a copy of the letter of Hadrian, that you may know that we are speaking the truth on this point, and here it is."

The author quoted then appends the Latin rescript itself, but we have translated it to the best of our power into Greek as follows:

IX. "To Minucius Fundanus. I received a letter written to me from his Excellency Serennius Granianus, your predecessor. I think that the matter ought not to remain without inquiry, to prevent men from being harassed or helping the rascality of informers. If then the provincials can make out a clear case on these lines against the Christians so as to plead it in open court, let them be influenced by this alone and not by opinions or mere outcries. For it is far more correct if anyone wishes to make an accusation for you to examine this point. If then anyone accuses them, and shows that they are acting illegally, decide the point according to the nature of the offence, but by Hercules, if anyone brings the matter forward for the purpose of blackmail, investigate strenuously and be careful to inflict penalties adequate to the crime."[1] Such was the rescript of Hadrian.

[1] The Latin of Rufinus (see Introduction, p. xxviii) may be the original: "in hunc pro sui nequitia suppliciis severioribus vindices".

Digitized by Google

X. Τούτου δὲ τὸ χρεὼν μετὰ πρῶτον καὶ εἰ- 1
κοστὸν ἔτος ἐκτίσαντος, Ἀντωνῖνος ὁ κληθεὶς Εὐ-
σεβὴς τὴν Ῥωμαίων ἀρχὴν διαδέχεται. τούτου δὲ
ἐν ἔτει πρώτῳ Τελεσφόρου τὸν βίον ἐνδεκάτῳ τῆς
λειτουργίας ἐνιαυτῷ μεταλλάξαντος, Ὑγῖνος τὸν
κλῆρον τῆς Ῥωμαίων ἐπισκοπῆς παραλαμβάνει.
Iren. 3, 3, 3 [=Eus. 5, 6, 4] ἱστορεῖ γε μὴν ὁ Εἰρηναῖος τὸν Τελεσφόρον
μαρτυρίῳ τὴν τελευτὴν διαπρέψαι, δηλῶν ἐν
ταὐτῷ κατὰ τὸν δηλούμενον Ῥωμαίων ἐπίσκοπον
Ὑγῖνον Οὐαλεντῖνον ἰδίας αἱρέσεως εἰσηγητὴν καὶ
Κέρδωνα τῆς κατὰ Μαρκίωνα πλάνης ἀρχηγὸν
ἐπὶ τῆς Ῥώμης ἄμφω γνωρίζεσθαι, γράφει δὲ
οὕτως·

Iren. 3, 4, 3 XI. "Οὐαλεντῖνος μὲν γὰρ ἦλθεν εἰς Ῥώμην 1
ἐπὶ Ὑγίνου, ἤκμασεν δὲ ἐπὶ Πίου, καὶ παρέμεινεν
ἕως Ἀνικήτου· Κέρδων δ' ὁ πρὸ Μαρκίωνος καὶ
αὐτὸς ἐπὶ Ὑγίνου, ὃς ἦν ἕνατος ἐπίσκοπος, εἰς
τὴν ἐκκλησίαν ἐλθὼν καὶ ἐξομολογούμενος, οὕτως
διετέλεσεν, ποτὲ μὲν λαθροδιδασκαλῶν, ποτὲ δὲ
πάλιν ἐξομολογούμενος, ποτὲ δὲ ἐλεγχόμενος ἐφ'
οἷς ἐδίδασκεν κακῶς, καὶ ἀφιστάμενος τῆς τῶν
ἀδελφῶν συνοδίας." ταῦτα δέ φησιν ἐν τρίτῳ τῶν 2
πρὸς τὰς αἱρέσεις· ἔν γε μὴν τῷ πρώτῳ αὖθις περὶ
Iren. 1, 27, 1. 2 τοῦ Κέρδωνος ταῦτα διέξεισιν· "Κέρδων δέ τις
ἀπὸ τῶν περὶ τὸν Σίμωνα τὰς ἀφορμὰς λαβὼν
καὶ ἐπιδημήσας ἐν τῇ Ῥώμῃ ἐπὶ Ὑγίνου ἕνατον
κλῆρον τῆς ἐπισκοπικῆς διαδοχῆς ἀπὸ τῶν ἀπο-
στόλων ἔχοντος, ἐδίδαξεν τὸν ὑπὸ τοῦ νόμου καὶ
προφητῶν κεκηρυγμένον θεὸν μὴ εἶναι πατέρα
τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ· τὸν μὲν γὰρ
γνωρίζεσθαι, τὸν δὲ ἀγνῶτα εἶναι, καὶ τὸν μὲν
δίκαιον, τὸν δὲ ἀγαθὸν ὑπάρχειν. διαδεξάμενος

Digitized by Google

X. After twenty-one years Hadrian paid the debt of nature, and Antoninus, called Pius, received the sovereignty of Rome. In his first year Telesphorus passed away in the eleventh year of his ministry, and Hyginus received the lot of the bishopric of the Romans. Irenaeus relates that Telesphorus gained renown in his death by martyrdom, and states in the same place that in the time of Hyginus, the aforementioned bishop of Rome, Valentinus, the founder of a special heresy, and Cerdo, the founder of the Marcionite error, were both famous in Rome. He writes thus :

XI. " Valentinus came to Rome in the time of Hyginus, but he flourished under Pius, and remained until Anicetus, and Cerdo, who before the time of Marcion, in the days of Hyginus, the ninth bishop, had come to the church and confessed, went on in the same way, sometimes teaching heresy, sometimes confessing again, and sometimes convicted by his evil teaching and separated from the assembly of the brethren." This he says in the third book against the heresies. Moreover, in the first book he makes the following statement about Cerdo : " A certain Cerdo had come originally from the circle of Simon and settled in Rome in the time of Hyginus, who held the ninth place in the apostolic succession from the apostles. He taught that the God preached by the Law and the Prophets was not the father of our Lord Jesus Christ, for the one was known, the other unknown, the one was righteous and the other

Digitized by Google

δὲ αὐτὸν Μαρκίων ὁ Ποντικὸς ηὔξησεν τὸ διδασκαλεῖον, ἀπηρυθριασμένως βλασφημῶν."

Iren. 1, 1–9 Ὁ δ' αὐτὸς Εἰρηναῖος τὸν ἄπειρον βυθὸν τῆς 3
Οὐαλεντίνου πολυπλανοῦς ὕλης εὐτονώτατα διαπλώσας, ἑρπετοῦ δίκην φωλεύοντος ἀπόκρυφον οὖσαν αὐτοῦ καὶ λεληθυῖαν ἀπογυμνοῖ τὴν κακίαν·

Iren. 1, 13, 1 πρὸς τούτοις καὶ ἄλλον τινά, Μάρκος αὐτῷ ὄνομα, 4
κατ' αὐτοὺς γενέσθαι λέγει μαγικῆς κυβείας ἐμπειρότατον, γράφει δὲ καὶ τὰς ἀτελέστους αὐτῶν τελετὰς μυσεράς τε μυσταγωγίας ἐκφαίνων

Iren. 1, 21, 3 = Epiphan. 34, 20 αὐτοῖς δὴ τούτοις τοῖς γράμμασιν· "οἳ μὲν γὰρ 5
αὐτῶν νυμφῶνα κατασκευάζουσιν καὶ μυσταγωγίαν ἐπιτελοῦσιν μετ' ἐπιρρήσεών τινων τοῖς τελουμένοις καὶ πνευματικὸν γάμον φάσκουσιν εἶναι τὸ ὑπ' αὐτῶν γινόμενον κατὰ τὴν ὁμοιότητα τῶν ἄνω συζυγιῶν, οἳ δὲ ἄγουσιν ἐφ' ὕδωρ καὶ βαπτίζοντες οὕτως ἐπιλέγουσιν· 'εἰς ὄνομα ἀγνώστου πατρὸς τῶν ὅλων, εἰς ἀλήθειαν μητέρα τῶν πάντων, εἰς τὸν κατελθόντα εἰς τὸν Ἰησοῦν.' ἄλλοι δὲ Ἑβραϊκὰ ὀνόματα ἐπιλέγουσιν πρὸς τὸ μᾶλλον καταπλήξασθαι τοὺς τελουμένους."

Ἀλλὰ γὰρ μετὰ τέταρτον τῆς ἐπισκοπῆς ἔτος 6
Ὑγίνου τελευτήσαντος, Πίος ἐπὶ Ῥώμης ἐγχειρίζεται τὴν λειτουργίαν· κατά γε μὴν τὴν Ἀλεξάνδρειαν Μάρκος ἀναδείκνυται ποιμὴν Εὐμένους ἔτη τὰ πάντα δέκα πρὸς τρισὶν ἐκπλήσαντος, τοῦ τε Μάρκου ἐπὶ δέκα ἔτη τῆς λειτουργίας ἀναπαυσαμένου, Κελαδίων τῆς Ἀλεξανδρέων ἐκκλησίας τὴν λειτουργίαν παραλαμβάνει. καὶ κατὰ 7
τὴν Ῥωμαίων δὲ πόλιν πεντεκαιδεκάτῳ τῆς ἐπισκοπῆς ἐνιαυτῷ Πίου μεταλλάξαντος, Ἀνίκητος τῶν ἐκεῖσε προΐσταται· καθ' ὃν Ἡγήσιππος

Digitized by Google

good. Marcion of Pontus succeeded him and increased the school, blaspheming unblushingly."

The same Irenaeus powerfully exposed the bottomless pit of the system of Valentinus with its many errors, and unbared his secret and latent wickedness while he was lurking like a reptile. Furthermore he says that there was in their time [1] another named Marcus, most experienced in the magic arts, and he writes of his initiations, which could not initiate, and of his foul mysteries,[2] expounding them in these words: "Some of them construct a bride-chamber, and celebrate a mystery with certain invocations on their initiate, and say that what they do is a spiritual marriage, according to the likeness of the unions above; others bring them to water and baptize them with this invocation, 'To the name of the unknown Father of the universe, to Truth, the mother of all things, to him who descended into Jesus,' and others invoke Hebrew words in order more fully to amaze the initiate."

After the fourth year of his episcopate Hyginus died and Pius undertook the ministry of Rome. In Alexandria Marcus was appointed after Eumenes had completed thirteen years, and when Marcus rested from the ministry after ten years, Celadion received the ministry of the church of the Alexandrians. In the city of the Romans Pius passed away in the fifteenth year of his ministry and Anicetus presided over those there. In his time

[1] Apparently "in the time of Valentinus and Cerdo."
[2] The play on the words in the Greek is untranslatable.

Digitized by Google

ἱστορεῖ ἑαυτὸν ἐπιδημῆσαι τῇ Ῥώμῃ παραμεῖναί τε αὐτόθι μέχρι τῆς ἐπισκοπῆς Ἐλευθέρου. μάλιστα δ' ἤκμαζεν ἐπὶ τῶνδε Ἰουστῖνος, ἐν φιλοσόφου σχήματι πρεσβεύων τὸν θεῖον λόγον καὶ τοῖς ὑπὲρ τῆς πίστεως ἐναγωνιζόμενος συγγράμμασιν· ὃς δὴ καὶ γράψας κατὰ Μαρκίωνος σύγγραμμα, μνημονεύει ὡς καθ' ὃν συνέταττε καιρὸν γνωριζομένου τῷ βίῳ τἀνδρός, φησὶν δὲ οὕτως· 8

Justin, *Apol.* 1, 26

"Μαρκίωνα δέ τινα Ποντικόν, ὃς καὶ νῦν ἔτι ἐστὶν διδάσκων τοὺς πειθομένους ἄλλον τινὰ νομίζειν μείζονα τοῦ δημιουργοῦ θεόν· ὃς καὶ κατὰ πᾶν γένος ἀνθρώπων διὰ τῆς τῶν δαιμόνων συλλήψεως πολλοὺς πεποίηκε βλάσφημα λέγειν καὶ ἀρνεῖσθαι τὸν ποιητὴν τοῦδε τοῦ παντὸς πατέρα εἶναι τοῦ Χριστοῦ, ἄλλον δέ τινα ὡς ὄντα μείζονα παρὰ τοῦτον ὁμολογεῖν [πεποιηκέναι]. καὶ πάντες οἱ ἀπὸ τούτων ὡρμημένοι, ὡς ἔφαμεν, Χριστιανοὶ καλοῦνται, ὃν τρόπον καὶ οὐ κοινῶν ὄντων δογμάτων τοῖς φιλοσόφοις τὸ ἐπικαλούμενον ὄνομα τῆς φιλοσοφίας κοινόν ἐστιν." τούτοις 9 10 ἐπιφέρει λέγων "ἔστιν δὲ ἡμῖν καὶ σύνταγμα κατὰ πασῶν τῶν γεγενημένων αἱρέσεων, ᾧ εἰ βούλεσθε ἐντυχεῖν, δώσομεν."

Ὁ δ' αὐτὸς οὗτος Ἰουστῖνος καὶ πρὸς Ἕλληνας ἱκανώτατα πονήσας, καὶ ἑτέρους λόγους ὑπὲρ τῆς ἡμετέρας πίστεως ἀπολογίαν ἔχοντας βασιλεῖ Ἀντωνίνῳ τῷ δὴ ἐπικληθέντι Εὐσεβεῖ καὶ τῇ Ῥωμαίων συγκλήτῳ βουλῇ προσφωνεῖ· καὶ γὰρ ἐπὶ τῆς Ῥώμης τὰς διατριβὰς ἐποιεῖτο. ἐμφαίνει δ' ἑαυτὸν ὅστις καὶ πόθεν ἦν, διὰ τῆς ἀπολογίας ἐν τούτοις· XII. "Αὐτοκράτορι Τίτῳ Αἰλίῳ Ἀδριανῷ 11

Justin, *Apol.* 1, 1

Ἀντωνίνῳ Εὐσεβεῖ Καίσαρι Σεβαστῷ καὶ Οὐη-

Digitized by Google

Hegesippus states that he stayed in Rome and remained there until the episcopate of Eleutherus. In their time Justin was at the height of his fame; in the garb of philosopher he served as ambassador of the word of God and contended in his writings for the faith. He wrote a treatise against Marcion and mentions that at the time he was writing the heretic was alive and notorious. He speaks thus: "And there was a certain Marcion of Pontus who even now is still teaching those who believe him to think that there is another God greater than the creator. Throughout the whole race of men by the instigation of demons he has made many to speak blasphemously and to deny that the Maker of this universe is the Father of Christ, and to confess that there is another greater than He. All those who begin from them, as we said, are called Christians just as the name of philosophy is common to philosophers though their doctrines vary." He goes on to say, "And we have a treatise against all the heresies which have arisen which we will give to any who wish to study it."

The same Justin laboured powerfully against the Gentiles, and addressed other arguments, affording a defence for our faith, to the Emperor Antoninus, called Pius, and to the Senate of the Romans, for he was living in Rome. In his Apology he explains his position and origin as follows: XII. "To the Emperor Titus Aelius Hadrian Antoninus Pius, Caesar Augustus, and to Verissimus, his son the philosopher,

Digitized by Google

ρισσίμῳ υἱῷ φιλοσόφῳ καὶ Λουκίῳ φιλοσόφου Καίσαρος φύσει υἱῷ καὶ Εὐσεβοῦς εἰσποιητῷ, ἐραστῇ παιδείας, ἱερᾷ τε συγκλήτῳ καὶ παντὶ δήμῳ Ῥωμαίων ὑπὲρ τῶν ἐκ παντὸς γένους ἀνθρώπων ἀδίκως μισουμένων καὶ ἐπηρεαζομένων Ἰουστῖνος Πρίσκου τοῦ Βακχείου τῶν ἀπὸ Φλαυίας Νέας πόλεως τῆς Συρίας Παλαιστίνης, εἷς αὐτῶν, τὴν προσφώνησιν καὶ ἔντευξιν πεποίημαι."

Ἐντευχθεὶς δὲ καὶ ὑφ' ἑτέρων ὁ αὐτὸς βασιλεὺς ἐπὶ τῆς Ἀσίας ἀδελφῶν παντοίαις ὕβρεσιν πρὸς τῶν ἐπιχωρίων δήμων καταπονουμένων, τοιαύτης ἠξίωσεν τὸ κοινὸν τῆς Ἀσίας διατάξεως· XIII. 1
"Αὐτοκράτωρ Καῖσαρ Μάρκος Αὐρήλιος Ἀντωνῖνος Σεβαστός, Ἀρμένιος, ἀρχιερεὺς μέγιστος, δημαρχικῆς ἐξουσίας τὸ πέμπτον καὶ τὸ δέκατον, ὕπατος τὸ τρίτον, τῷ κοινῷ τῆς Ἀσίας χαίρειν. ἐγὼ μὲν οἶδ' ὅτι καὶ τοῖς θεοῖς ἐπιμελές ἐστι μὴ 2
λανθάνειν τοὺς τοιούτους· πολὺ γὰρ μᾶλλον ἐκεῖνοι κολάσαιεν ἂν τοὺς μὴ βουλομένους αὐτοῖς προσκυνεῖν ἢ ὑμεῖς. οὓς εἰς ταραχὴν ἐμβάλλετε, βεβαιοῦντες 3
τὴν γνώμην αὐτῶν ἥνπερ ἔχουσιν, ὡς ἀθέων κατηγοροῦντες· εἴη δ' ἂν κἀκείνοις αἱρετὸν τῷ δοκεῖν κατηγορουμένοις τεθνάναι μᾶλλον ἢ ζῆν ὑπὲρ τοῦ οἰκείου θεοῦ· ὅθεν καὶ νικῶσι, προϊέμενοι τὰς ἑαυτῶν ψυχὰς ἥπερ πειθόμενοι οἷς ἀξιοῦτε

[1] The Council of Asia was one of the provincial councils to the emperor. It consisted of deputies from the various states and provinces. Among other things they were responsible for the religious life of the province. The Council of Asia met originally in the temple of the emperor and city of Rome at Pergamon; later on it met in various other centres, Ephesus, Sardis, Smyrna, Laodicaea, Philadelphia and Cyzicus. *Cf.* Guiraud, *Assemblées provinciales dans l'Empire romain.*

Digitized by Google

and to Lucius, the lover of instruction, the son by nature of the philosopher-emperor, and by adoption of Pius, and to the holy Senate and to the whole people of Rome, on behalf of those men of every race who are unjustly hated and abused, I, Justin, the son of Priscus, the son of Baccheius, of Flavia Neapolis in Palestinian Syria, myself a Christian, offer an address and entreaty."

The same Emperor was entreated by other Asiatic Christians who had suffered all manner of injury from the local population and he thought fit to send the following decree to the Council of Asia.[1] XIII. "The Emperor Caesar Marcus Aurelius Antoninus Augustus Armenicus, Pontifex Maximus, Tribune for the fifteenth time, Consul for the third time, to the Council of Asia, greeting.[2] I know that the gods also take care that such men should not escape notice, for they would be far more likely to punish those who are unwilling to worship them than you are. But you drive them into tumult, for you confirm them in the opinion which they hold by accusing them as atheists, and they too when so accused might well prefer apparent[3] death rather than life for the sake of their own God. Wherefore they are also conquerors because they sacrifice their lives rather

[1] The date indicated is between March 7 and December 9, A.D. 161. This rescript is usually regarded as spurious, but Harnack, *Texte und Untersuchungen* xiii. 4, has tried to explain it as a genuine document with Christian interpolations. Schwartz thinks it is a translation of a Latin forgery. It is found in cod. Paris. 450 after the *Apology* of Justin, and is there attributed to Antoninus Pius when tribune for the 24th time, *i.e.* between Dec. 10, A.D. 160 and March 7, A.D. 161.

[2] This translation would better suit τὸ δοκεῖν, but τῷ δοκεῖν may be a phrase qualifying τεθνάναι. It is not improbable that it is a gloss.

Digitized by Google

πράττειν αὐτούς. περὶ δὲ τῶν σεισμῶν τῶν 4
γεγονότων καὶ γινομένων, οὐκ ἄτοπον ὑμᾶς
ὑπομνῆσαι ἀθυμοῦντας μὲν ὅταν περ ὦσιν, παρα-
βάλλοντας δὲ τὰ ἡμέτερα πρὸς τὰ ἐκείνων. οἳ 5
μὲν οὖν εὐπαρρησιαστότεροι γίνονται πρὸς τὸν
θεόν, ὑμεῖς δὲ παρὰ πάντα τὸν χρόνον καθ' ὃν
ἀγνοεῖν δοκεῖτε, τῶν τε θεῶν τῶν ἄλλων ἀμελεῖτε
καὶ τῆς θρησκείας τῆς περὶ τὸν ἀθάνατον· ὃν δὴ
τοὺς Χριστιανοὺς θρησκεύοντας ἐλαύνετε καὶ
διώκετε ἕως θανάτου. ὑπὲρ δὲ τῶν τοιούτων 6
ἤδη καὶ πολλοὶ τῶν περὶ τὰς ἐπαρχίας ἡγεμόνων
καὶ τῷ θειοτάτῳ ἡμῶν ἔγραψαν πατρί, οἷς καὶ
ἀντέγραψεν μηδὲν ἐνοχλεῖν τοῖς τοιούτοις, εἰ μὴ
ἐμφαίνοιντό τι περὶ τὴν Ῥωμαίων ἡγεμονίαν
ἐγχειροῦντες. καὶ ἐμοὶ δὲ περὶ τῶν τοιούτων
πολλοὶ ἐσήμαναν· οἷς δὴ καὶ ἀντέγραψα κατ-
ακολουθῶν τῇ τοῦ πατρὸς γνώμῃ. εἰ δέ τις ἐπιμένοι 7
τινὰ τῶν τοιούτων εἰς πράγματα φέρων ὡς δὴ
τοιοῦτον, ἐκεῖνος ὁ καταφερόμενος ἀπολελύσθω
τοῦ ἐγκλήματος καὶ ἐὰν φαίνηται τοιοῦτος ὤν,
ὁ δὲ καταφέρων ἔνοχος ἔσται δίκης. προετέθη ἐν
Ἐφέσῳ ἐν τῷ κοινῷ τῆς Ἀσίας."

Τούτοις οὕτω χωρήσασιν ἐπιμαρτυρῶν Μελίτων, 8
τῆς ἐν Σάρδεσιν ἐκκλησίας ἐπίσκοπος κατ' αὐτὸ
γνωριζόμενος τοῦ χρόνου, δῆλός ἐστιν ἐκ τῶν
εἰρημένων αὐτῷ ἐν ᾗ πεποίηται πρὸς αὐτοκράτορα
Οὐήρον ὑπὲρ τοῦ καθ' ἡμᾶς δόγματος ἀπολογίᾳ.

XIV. Ἐπὶ δὲ τῶν δηλουμένων, Ἀνικήτου τῆς 1
Ῥωμαίων ἐκκλησίας ἡγουμένου, Πολύκαρπον ἔτι
περιόντα τῷ βίῳ γενέσθαι τε ἐπὶ Ῥώμης καὶ εἰς
ὁμιλίαν τῷ Ἀνικήτῳ ἐλθεῖν διά τι ζήτημα περὶ

Digitized by Google

than obey and do what you command. With regard to the earthquakes which have taken place and are still going on it is not out of place to remind you that when they happen you are depressed, and so set up a comparison between our position and theirs. They obtain increased confidence towards God, but you the whole of the time neglect the other gods and the worship of the immortal.[1] But when the Christians worship him you harry and persecute them to death. And many of the provincial governors wrote formerly on behalf of such men to our divine father, and he replied that they were not to be interfered with unless they appeared to be plotting against the Roman government. And to me also many reported about such men, and to them I too replied consistently with my father's opinion. But if anyone persist in taking action against any one of such persons, on the ground that he is so, let that one who is accused be released from the charge, even if it appear that he is such, but the accuser shall be liable to penalty. Published at Ephesus in the Council of Asia."

Further testimony to these events is given by Melito, the famous bishop of the church in Sardis at that time, as is clear from what he says in the Apology which he made to the Emperor Verus on behalf of our faith.

XIV. During the time of the emperors referred to, while Anicetus was ruling the church of Rome, Irenaeus relates that Polycarp was still alive and came to Rome and conversed with Anicetus about

[1] The text as it stands in the Greek is hopeless. Possibly *καθ' ὃν ἀγνοεῖν δοκεῖτε* have been displaced and refer to the "immortal" or the emendation of *καθ' ὃν* to *καὶ θεὸν* might be accepted.

Digitized by Google

τῆς κατὰ τὸ πάσχα ἡμέρας Εἰρηναῖος ἱστορεῖ. καὶ ἄλλην δὲ ὁ αὐτὸς περὶ τοῦ Πολυκάρπου παρα- 2
δίδωσιν διήγησιν, ἣν ἀναγκαῖον τοῖς περὶ αὐτοῦ δηλουμένοις ἐπισυνάψαι, οὕτως ἔχουσαν·

ΑΠΟ ΤΟΥ ΤΡΙΤΟΥ ΤΩΝ ΠΡΟΣ ΤΑΣ ΑΙΡΕΣΕΙΣ ΕΙΡΗΝΑΙΟΥ

Iren. 3, 3, 4

" Καὶ Πολύκαρπος δὲ οὐ μόνον ὑπὸ ἀποστόλων 3
μαθητευθεὶς καὶ συναναστραφεὶς πολλοῖς τοῖς τὸν κύριον ἑορακόσιν, ἀλλὰ καὶ ὑπὸ ἀποστόλων κατασταθεὶς εἰς τὴν Ἀσίαν ἐν τῇ ἐν Σμύρνῃ ἐκκλησίᾳ ἐπίσκοπος, ὃν καὶ ἡμεῖς ἑοράκαμεν ἐν τῇ πρώτῃ 4
ἡμῶν ἡλικίᾳ (ἐπὶ πολὺ γὰρ παρέμεινεν καὶ πάνυ γηραλέος ἐνδόξως καὶ ἐπιφανέστατα μαρτυρήσας ἐξῆλθεν τοῦ βίου), ταῦτα διδάξας ἀεὶ ἃ καὶ παρὰ τῶν ἀποστόλων ἔμαθεν, ἃ καὶ ἡ ἐκκλησία παραδίδωσιν, ἃ καὶ μόνα ἐστὶν ἀληθῆ. μαρτυροῦσι 5
τούτοις αἱ κατὰ τὴν Ἀσίαν ἐκκλησίαι πᾶσαι καὶ οἱ μέχρι νῦν διαδεδεγμένοι τὸν Πολύκαρπον, πολλῷ ἀξιοπιστότερον καὶ βεβαιότερον ἀληθείας μάρτυρα ὄντα Οὐαλεντίνου καὶ Μαρκίωνος καὶ τῶν λοιπῶν κακογνωμόνων· ὃς καὶ ἐπὶ Ἀνικήτου ἐπιδημήσας τῇ Ῥώμῃ, πολλοὺς ἀπὸ τῶν προειρημένων αἱρετικῶν ἐπέστρεψεν εἰς τὴν ἐκκλησίαν τοῦ θεοῦ, μίαν καὶ μόνην ταύτην ἀλήθειαν κηρύξας ὑπὸ τῶν ἀποστόλων παρειληφέναι τὴν ὑπὸ τῆς ἐκκλησίας παραδεδομένην. καὶ εἰσὶν οἱ ἀκηκοότες 6
αὐτοῦ ὅτι Ἰωάννης ὁ τοῦ κυρίου μαθητὴς ἐν τῇ Ἐφέσῳ πορευθεὶς λούσασθαι καὶ ἰδὼν ἔσω Κήρινθον ἐξήλατο τοῦ βαλανείου μὴ λουσάμενος, ἀλλ' ἐπειπών 'φύγωμεν, μὴ καὶ τὸ βαλανεῖον συμπέσῃ, ἔνδον ὄντος Κηρίνθου τοῦ τῆς ἀληθείας ἐχθροῦ.'

Digitized by Google

some difficulty as to the day of the Passover. The same writer tells another story about Polycarp which it is necessary to add to what has been said about him. It runs as follows :

From the third book of Irenaeus against Heresies

" And Polycarp also was not only instructed by apostles and conversed with many who had seen the Lord, but was also appointed bishop by apostles in Asia in the church in Smyrna. We also saw him in our childhood, for he lived a long time and in extreme old age passed from life, a splendid and glorious martyr. He constantly taught those things which he had learnt from the apostles, which also are the tradition of the church, which alone are true. To these facts all the churches in Asia bear witness, and the present successors of Polycarp, and he is a far more trustworthy and reliable witness of the truth than Valentinus and Marcion and the others who hold wrong opinions. In the time of Anicetus he visited Rome and converted many of the above-mentioned heretics to the church of God, preaching that the one and only truth which he had received from the apostles was that which is the tradition of the church. And there are those who heard him tell that John the disciple of the Lord went in Ephesus to bathe and seeing Cerinthus within, sprang out of the baths without bathing calling out, ' Let us fly lest the baths fall in, since Cerinthus, the enemy of

Digitized by Google

καὶ αὐτὸς δὲ ὁ Πολύκαρπος Μαρκίωνί ποτε εἰς 7
ὄψιν αὐτῷ ἐλθόντι καὶ φήσαντι 'ἐπιγίνωσκε
ἡμᾶς' ἀπεκρίθη 'ἐπιγινώσκω· ἐπιγινώσκω τὸν
πρωτότοκον τοῦ σατανᾶ.' τοσαύτην οἱ ἀπόστολοι
καὶ οἱ μαθηταὶ αὐτῶν ἔσχον εὐλάβειαν πρὸς τὸ
μηδὲ μέχρι λόγου κοινωνεῖν τινὶ τῶν παραχαρασ-
Tit. 3, 10. 11 σόντων τὴν ἀλήθειαν, ὡς καὶ Παῦλος ἔφησεν
'αἱρετικὸν ἄνθρωπον μετὰ μίαν καὶ δευτέραν
νουθεσίαν παραιτοῦ, εἰδὼς ὅτι ἐξέστραπται ὁ
τοιοῦτος καὶ ἁμαρτάνει ὢν αὐτοκατάκριτος.' ἔστιν 8
δὲ καὶ ἐπιστολὴ Πολυκάρπου πρὸς Φιλιππησίους
γεγραμμένη ἱκανωτάτη, ἐξ ἧς καὶ τὸν χαρακτῆρα
τῆς πίστεως αὐτοῦ καὶ τὸ κήρυγμα τῆς ἀληθείας
οἱ βουλόμενοι καὶ φροντίζοντες τῆς ἑαυτῶν σω-
τηρίας δύνανται μαθεῖν." ταῦτα ὁ Εἰρηναῖος· ὁ 9
γέ τοι Πολύκαρπος ἐν τῇ δηλωθείσῃ πρὸς Φιλιπ-
πησίους αὐτοῦ γραφῇ, φερομένῃ εἰς δεῦρο, κέχρηταί
τισιν μαρτυρίαις ἀπὸ τῆς Πέτρου προτέρας ἐπι-
στολῆς.

Ἀντωνῖνον μὲν δὴ τὸν Εὐσεβῆ κληθέντα, εἰκοστὸν 10
καὶ δεύτερον ἔτος τῆς ἀρχῆς διανύσαντα, Μάρκος
Αὐρήλιος Οὐῆρος, ὁ καὶ Ἀντωνῖνος, υἱὸς αὐτοῦ,
σὺν καὶ Λουκίῳ ἀδελφῷ διαδέχεται. XV. ἐν τούτῳ 1
δὲ ὁ Πολύκαρπος μεγίστων τὴν Ἀσίαν ἀναθορυ-
βησάντων διωγμῶν μαρτυρίῳ τελειοῦται, ἀναγ-
καιότατον δ' αὐτοῦ τὸ τέλος ἐγγράφως ἔτι φερό-
μενον ἡγοῦμαι δεῖν μνήμῃ τῇδε τῆς ἱστορίας
καταθέσθαι. ἔστιν δὲ ἡ γραφὴ ἐκ προσώπου ἧς 2
αὐτὸς ἐκκλησίας ἡγεῖτο, ταῖς κατὰ τόπον παροικίαις

Digitized by Google

the truth, is within.' And Polycarp himself when Marcion once met him and said, 'Recognize us,' answered, 'I do, I recognize the first-born of Satan.' Such care did the apostles and their disciples take not even to join in conversation with any of those who mutilate the truth, as Paul also said, 'A man that is heretical after a first and second exhortation, refuse, knowing such a one is perverted and sinneth, being self-condemned.' There is also a most powerful letter of Polycarp's written to the Philippians, from which those who wish and care for their own salvation can learn both the character of his faith and the preaching of the truth." So says Irenaeus. Moreover, Polycarp, in his above-mentioned letter to the Philippians, which is still extant, has made some quotations from the first Epistle of Peter.[1]

Antoninus, called Pius, held the sovereignty for twenty-two years[2] and was succeeded by Marcus Aurelius Verus, also called Antoninus, his son, together with his brother Lucius. XV. At this time[3] Polycarp was consecrated by martyrdom when great persecutions again disturbed Asia, and I think it most necessary to give in this history the account of his end, which is still extant in writing. The document purports to be from the church of which he was the leader, and gives to the neighbouring

[1] The references to 1 Peter in Polycarp's Epistle are: i. 3=1 Pet. i. 8; ii. 1=1 Pet. i. 13, 21; ii. 2=1 Pet. iii. 9; v. 3=1 Pet. ii. 11; vii. 2=1 Pet. iv. 7; viii. 1=1 Pet. ii. 24, 22; x. 2=1 Pet. ii. 12.

[2] Antoninus Pius died March 7, A.D. 161. Marcus Aurelius and Lucius were two adopted sons.

[3] This seems to be a mistake. It is almost certain that the death of Polycarp was in A.D. 156. See *Studia Biblica*, ii. pp. 105 ff.

Digitized by Google

Mart. Polyc. 1 τὰ κατ' αὐτὸν ἀποσημαίνουσα διὰ τούτων· "Ἡ 3
ἐκκλησία τοῦ θεοῦ ἡ παροικοῦσα Σμύρναν τῇ
ἐκκλησίᾳ τοῦ θεοῦ τῇ παροικούσῃ ἐν Φιλομηλίῳ
καὶ πάσαις ταῖς κατὰ πάντα τόπον τῆς ἁγίας
καθολικῆς ἐκκλησίας παροικίαις ἔλεος εἰρήνη καὶ
ἀγάπη θεοῦ πατρὸς καὶ κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ
Χριστοῦ πληθυνθείη. ἐγράψαμεν ὑμῖν, ἀδελφοί,
τὰ κατὰ τοὺς μαρτυρήσαντας καὶ τὸν μακάριον
Πολύκαρπον, ὅστις ὥσπερ ἐπισφραγίσας διὰ τῆς
μαρτυρίας αὐτοῦ κατέπαυσε τὸν διωγμόν."

Mart. Polyc. 2-7 Τούτοις ἐξῆς πρὸ τῆς ἀμφὶ τοῦ Πολυκάρπου 4
διηγήσεως τὰ κατὰ τοὺς λοιποὺς ἀνιστοροῦσι
μάρτυρας, οἵας ἐνστάσεις πρὸς τὰς ἀλγηδόνας
ἐνεδείξαντο, διαγράφοντες. καταπλῆξαι γάρ φασι
τοὺς ἐν κύκλῳ περιεστῶτας, θεωμένους τοτὲ μὲν
μάστιξι μέχρι καὶ τῶν ἐνδοτάτω φλεβῶν καὶ
ἀρτηριῶν καταξαινομένους, ὡς ἤδη καὶ τὰ ἐν μυχοῖς
ἀπόρρητα τοῦ σώματος σπλάγχνα τε αὐτῶν καὶ
μέλη κατοπτεύεσθαι, τοτὲ δὲ τοὺς ἀπὸ θαλάττης
κήρυκας καί τινας ὀξεῖς ὀβελίσκους ὑποστρων-
νυμένους, καὶ διὰ παντὸς εἴδους κολάσεων καὶ
βασάνων προϊόντας καὶ τέλος θηρσὶν εἰς βορὰν
παραδιδομένους. μάλιστα δὲ ἱστοροῦσιν διαπρέψαι 5
τὸν γενναιότατον Γερμανικόν, ὑπορρωννύντα σὺν
θείᾳ χάριτι τὴν ἔμφυτον περὶ τὸν θάνατον τοῦ
σώματος δειλίαν. βουλομένου γέ τοι τοῦ ἀνθυ-
πάτου πείθειν αὐτὸν προβαλλομένου τε τὴν ἡλικίαν
καὶ ἀντιβολοῦντος κομιδῇ νέον ὄντα καὶ ἀκμαῖον

---

[1] Literally "place of sojourn." The word probably embodies the recognition that Christians are those whose citizenship is above. It seems to have been used originally

Digitized by Google

dioceses[1] the following account of what happened to him. "The Church of God which sojourns in Smyrna, to the Church of God which sojourns in Philomelium,[2] and to all the sojournings of the Holy Catholic Church in every place. Mercy, peace, and love of God the Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ be multiplied. We write to you, brethren, the story of the martyrs and of the blessed Polycarp, who put an end to the persecution by his martyrdom as though adding the seal."

They then go on, before the narrative about Polycarp, to give the story of the other martyrs, describing the constancy which they showed against torture, for they say that those who were standing around were amazed when they saw that at one time they were torn by scourges down to deep-seated veins and arteries, so that the hidden contents of the recesses of their bodies, their entrails and organs, were exposed to sight. At another time they were stretched on seashells and on sharp points, were taken through all kinds of punishment and torture, and finally were given to be eaten by wild beasts. They say that the noble Germanicus was especially distinguished, being strengthened by the grace of God to overcome the natural cowardice of the body for death. Even when the proconsul wished to dissuade him, urging his youth and entreating him as he was still just in the flower of his youth

of the district dominated by some great church and corresponds roughly to the modern use of the word diocese, but its meaning was gradually restricted to smaller districts and it is etymologically still current in the word parish.

[2] In Phrygia, not far from Pisidian Antioch. This letter is usually called the *Martyrdom of Polycarp*. It is published in L.C.L., *The Apostolic Fathers*, vol. ii. pp. 309 ff.

Digitized by Google

οἶκτον ἑαυτοῦ λαβεῖν, μὴ μελλῆσαι, προθύμως δ' ἐπισπάσασθαι εἰς ἑαυτὸν τὸ θηρίον, μόνον οὐχὶ βιασάμενον καὶ παροξύναντα, ὡς ἂν τάχιον τοῦ ἀδίκου καὶ ἀνόμου βίου αὐτῶν ἀπαλλαγείη. τούτου 6
δ' ἐπὶ τῷ διαπρεπεῖ θανάτῳ τὸ πᾶν πλῆθος ἀποθαυμάσαν τῆς ἀνδρείας τὸν θεοφιλῆ μάρτυρα καὶ τὴν καθόλου τοῦ γένους τῶν Χριστιανῶν ἀρετήν, ἀθρόως ἐπιβοᾶν ἄρξασθαι "αἶρε τοὺς ἀθέους· ζητείσθω Πολύκαρπος." καὶ δὴ πλείστης ἐπὶ 7
ταῖς βοαῖς γενομένης ταραχῆς, Φρύγα τινὰ τὸ γένος, Κόϊντον τοὔνομα, νεωστὶ ἐκ τῆς Φρυγίας ἐπιστάντα, ἰδόντα τοὺς θῆρας καὶ τὰς ἐπὶ τούτοις ἀπειλάς, καταπτῆξαι τὴν ψυχὴν μαλακισθέντα καὶ τέλος τῆς σωτηρίας ἐνδοῦναι. ἐδήλου δὲ 8
τοῦτον ὁ τῆς προειρημένης γραφῆς λόγος προπετέστερον ἀλλ' οὐ κατ' εὐλάβειαν ἐπιπηδῆσαι τῷ δικαστηρίῳ σὺν ἑτέροις, ἀλόντα δ' οὖν ὅμως καταφανὲς ὑπόδειγμα τοῖς πᾶσιν παρασχεῖν, ὅτι μὴ δέοι τοῖς τοιούτοις ῥιψοκινδύνως καὶ ἀνευλαβῶς ἐπιτολμᾶν. ἀλλὰ ταύτῃ μὲν εἶχεν πέρας τὰ κατὰ τούτους· τόν γε μὴν θαυμασιώτατον Πολύκαρπον 9
τὰ μὲν πρῶτα τούτων ἀκούσαντα ἀτάραχον μεῖναι, εὐσταθὲς τὸ ἦθος καὶ ἀκίνητον φυλάξαντα, βούλεσθαί τε αὐτοῦ κατὰ πόλιν περιμένειν· πεισθέντα γε μὴν ἀντιβολοῦσι τοῖς ἀμφ' αὐτὸν καὶ ὡς ἂν ὑπεξέλθοι παρακαλοῦσι, προελθεῖν εἰς οὐ πόρρω διεστῶτα τῆς πόλεως ἀγρὸν διατρίβειν τε σὺν ὀλίγοις ἐνταῦθα, νύκτωρ καὶ μεθ' ἡμέραν οὔτι ἕτερον πράττοντα ἢ ταῖς πρὸς τὸν κύριον διακαρτεροῦντα εὐχαῖς· δι' ὧν δεῖσθαι καὶ ἱκετεύειν εἰρήνην ἐξαιτούμενον ταῖς ἀνὰ πᾶσαν τὴν οἰκουμένην ἐκκλησίαις, τοῦτο γὰρ καὶ εἶναι ἐκ τοῦ

Digitized by Google

to have pity on himself, he did not hesitate, but took pains to drag the beast to himself, almost forcing him and provoking him in order that he might be the sooner free from an unjust and wicked life. At his glorious death the whole crowd was amazed at the God-loving martyr for his bravery, and at the courage of the whole race of Christians, and began to howl out together, "Kill the atheists! Let Polycarp be sent for." When a great uproar arose at this cry, a certain native of Phrygia named Quintus, lately arrived from Phrygia, seeing the beasts and the other threats, was overcome in his mind and weakened and finally abandoned his salvation. The narrative of the above-mentioned document shows that this man had rushed to the tribunal with the others in a headstrong but irreligious spirit; but that nevertheless when he was convicted he gave manifest proofs to all that such men ought not to make foolhardy ventures which do not spring from religion. Such was the fate of these men. Yet the wonderful Polycarp, when he first heard this, remained undisturbed, keeping his mind steadfast and unmoved, and wished to stay there in the city. But the urgency of his friends and their entreaty that he should go out persuaded him, and he departed to a farm not far from the city where he stayed with a few others, and night and day did nothing but persevere in prayers to the Lord. In them he entreated and supplicated for peace, begging that it be given the churches throughout the world, for this was his invariable custom.

Digitized by Google

παντὸς αὐτῷ σύνηθες. καὶ δὴ εὐχόμενον, ἐν 10
ὀπτασίᾳ τριῶν πρότερον ἡμερῶν τῆς συλλήψεως
νύκτωρ ἰδεῖν τὸ ὑπὸ κεφαλῆς αὐτῷ στρῶμα ἀθρόως
οὕτως ὑπὸ πυρὸς φλεχθὲν δεδαπανῆσθαι, ἔξυπνον
δ' ἐπὶ τούτῳ γενόμενον, εὐθὺς ὑφερμηνεῦσαι τοῖς
παροῦσι τὸ φανέν, μόνον οὐχὶ τὸ μέλλον προ-
θεσπίσαντα σαφῶς τε ἀνειπόντα τοῖς ἀμφ' αὐτὸν
ὅτι δέοι αὐτὸν διὰ Χριστὸν πυρὶ τὴν ζωὴν μεταλ-
λάξαι. ἐπικειμένων δὴ οὖν σὺν πάσῃ σπουδῇ τῶν 11
ἀναζητούντων αὐτόν, αὖθις ὑπὸ τῆς τῶν ἀδελφῶν
διαθέσεως καὶ στοργῆς ἐκβεβιασμένον μεταβῆναί
φασιν ἐφ' ἕτερον ἀγρόν· ἔνθα μετ' οὐ πλεῖστον
τοὺς συνελαύνοντας ἐπελθεῖν, δύο δὲ τῶν αὐτόθι
συλλαβεῖν παίδων· ὧν θάτερον αἰκισαμένους ἐπι-
στῆναι δι' αὐτοῦ τῇ τοῦ Πολυκάρπου καταγωγῇ, 12
ὀψὲ δὲ τῆς ὥρας ἐπελθόντας, αὐτὸν μὲν εὑρεῖν ἐν
ὑπερῴῳ κατακείμενον, ὅθεν δυνατὸν ὂν αὐτῷ ἐφ'
ἑτέραν μεταστῆναι οἰκίαν, μὴ βεβουλῆσθαι, εἰπόντα
Acts 21, 14 "τὸ θέλημα τοῦ θεοῦ γινέσθω." καὶ δὴ μαθὼν 13
παρόντας, ὡς ὁ λόγος φησί, καταβὰς αὐτοῖς
διελέξατο εὖ μάλα φαιδρῷ καὶ πραοτάτῳ προσώπῳ,
ὡς καὶ θαῦμα δοκεῖν ὁρᾶν τοὺς πάλαι τοῦ ἀνδρὸς
ἀγνῶτας, ἐναποβλέποντας τῷ τῆς ἡλικίας αὐτοῦ
παλαιῷ καὶ τῷ σεμνῷ καὶ εὐσταθεῖ τοῦ τρόπου,
καὶ εἰ τοσαύτη γένοιτο σπουδὴ ὑπὲρ τοῦ τοιοῦτον
συλληφθῆναι πρεσβύτην. ὃ δ' οὐ μελλήσας εὐθέως 14
τράπεζαν αὐτοῖς παρατεθῆναι προστάττει, εἶτα
τροφῆς ἀφθόνου μεταλαβεῖν ἀξιοῖ, μίαν τε ὥραν,
ὡς ἂν προσεύξοιτο ἀδεῶς, παρ' αὐτῶν αἰτεῖται·
ἐπιτρεψάντων δὲ ἀναστὰς ηὔχετο, ἔμπλεως τῆς
χάριτος ὢν τοῦ κυρίου, ὡς ἐκπλήττεσθαι τοὺς
παρόντας εὐχομένου αὐτοῦ ἀκροωμένους πολλούς

Digitized by Google

While he was praying, in a vision at night three days before his capture, he saw the pillow under his head suddenly flaming with fire and so destroyed, and when he woke up at this he at once interpreted what he had seen to those present, all but foretelling the future and clearly announcing to his friends that in fire he must give up his life for Christ's sake. While those who were seeking for him were pressing on with great zeal, he was again constrained by the affection and love of the brethren to move to another farm. Shortly after the pursuers came up and arrested two of the slaves there. They tortured one of them and were brought by him to the abode of Polycarp. They entered in the evening and found him lying in an upper chamber. It was possible for him to have moved thence to another house, but he was not willing and said, "The Lord's will be done." When he heard that they had come, so the story says, he went down and conversed with them with a bright and gentle countenance, so that those who did not know him before thought that they saw a marvel when they regarded his old age and his venerable and steadfast behaviour, and they wondered that there should be such activity for the arrest of an old man of such character. He did not delay but immediately ordered a table to be set for them and invited them to partake of plentiful food, asking from them a single hour that he might pray undisturbed. They gave him leave, and he arose and prayed, filled with the grace of the Lord, so that those who were present were astonished when they heard his prayer, and many of them already began

Digitized by Google

τε αὐτῶν μετανοεῖν ἤδη ἐπὶ τῷ τοιοῦτον ἀναιρεῖσθαι μέλλειν σεμνὸν καὶ θεοπρεπῆ πρεσβύτην.

Ἐπὶ τούτοις ἡ περὶ αὐτοῦ γραφὴ κατὰ λέξιν 15
ὧδέ πως τὰ ἑξῆς τῆς ἱστορίας ἔχει· "ἐπεὶ δέ ποτε
Mart. Polyc. 8-19 κατέπαυσε τὴν προσευχὴν μνημονεύσας ἁπάντων καὶ τῶν πώποτε συμβεβληκότων αὐτῷ, μικρῶν τε καὶ μεγάλων, ἐνδόξων τε καὶ ἀδόξων, καὶ πάσης τῆς κατὰ τὴν οἰκουμένην καθολικῆς ἐκκλησίας, τῆς ὥρας ἐλθούσης τοῦ ἐξιέναι, ὄνῳ καθίσαντες αὐτὸν ἤγαγον εἰς τὴν πόλιν, ὄντος σαββάτου μεγάλου. καὶ ὑπήντα αὐτῷ ὁ εἰρήναρχος Ἡρώδης καὶ ὁ πατὴρ αὐτοῦ Νικήτης· οἳ καὶ μεταθέντες αὐτὸν εἰς τὸ ὄχημα, ἔπειθον παρακαθεζόμενοι καὶ λέγοντες 'τί γὰρ κακόν ἐστιν εἰπεῖν, κύριος Καῖσαρ, καὶ θῦσαι καὶ διασῴζεσθαι;' ὁ δὲ τὰ μὲν πρῶτα οὐκ ἀπεκρίνατο, ἐπιμενόντων 16
δὲ αὐτῶν, ἔφη 'οὐ μέλλω πράττειν ὃ συμβουλεύετέ μοι.' οἱ δὲ ἀποτυχόντες τοῦ πεῖσαι αὐτόν, δεινὰ ῥήματα ἔλεγον καὶ μετὰ σπουδῆς καθῄρουν, ὡς κατιόντα ἀπὸ τοῦ ὀχήματος ἀποσῦραι τὸ ἀντικνήμιον· ἀλλὰ γὰρ μὴ ἐπιστραφείς, οἷα μηδὲν πεπονθώς, προθύμως μετὰ σπουδῆς ἐπορεύετο, ἀγόμενος εἰς τὸ στάδιον. θορύβου δὲ τηλικούτου 17
ὄντος ἐν τῷ σταδίῳ, ὡς μηδὲ πολλοῖς ἀκουσθῆναι, τῷ Πολυκάρπῳ εἰσιόντι εἰς τὸ στάδιον φωνὴ ἐξ
Josh. 1, 9 οὐρανοῦ γέγονεν 'ἴσχυε, Πολύκαρπε, καὶ ἀνδρίζου.'
Acts 9, 7 καὶ τὸν μὲν εἰπόντα οὐδεὶς εἶδεν, τὴν δὲ φωνὴν τῶν ἡμετέρων πολλοὶ ἤκουσαν. προσαχθέντος οὖν 18
αὐτοῦ, θόρυβος ἦν μέγας ἀκουσάντων ὅτι Πολύκαρπος συνείληπται. λοιπὸν οὖν προσελθόντα ἀν-

[1] The preceding paragraphs are all based on the *Martyrdom of Polycarp*, but Eusebius has abbreviated it.

Digitized by Google

to repent that so venerable and godlike an old man was going to be killed.

After this the document concerning him continues as follows[1]: "Now when he had at last finished his prayer, after remembering all who had ever even come his way, both small and great, high and low, and the whole Catholic Church throughout the world, the hour came for departure, and they set him on an ass, and led him into the city, on a 'great Sabbath day.'[2] And the police captain Herod and his father Niketas met him and removed him into the wagon, and sat by his side trying to persuade him and saying: 'But what harm is it to say, "Lord Caesar," and to offer sacrifice, and to be saved?' But he at first did not answer them, but when they continued he said: 'I am not going to do what you counsel me.' And they gave up the attempt to persuade him, and began to speak fiercely, and turned him out in such a hurry that in getting down from the wagon he scraped his shin; and without turning round, as though he had suffered nothing, he walked on promptly and quickly, and was taken to the arena, while the uproar in the arena was so great that no one could even be heard. Now when Polycarp entered into the arena there came a voice from heaven: 'Be strong, Polycarp, and play the man.' And no one saw the speaker, but many of our friends who were there heard the voice. And when he was brought forward, there was a great uproar of those who heard that Polycarp had been arrested. Next

[2] The traditional date of Polycarp's martyrdom was Feb. 23. If so, "a great Sabbath" may mean the feast of Purim, or it may mean the Sabbath after the Passover. See C. H. Turner in *Stud. Bib.* ii. pp. 105, and E. Schwartz in *Abhandl. der k. Ges. der Wiss. zu Gött.* viii. (1905) 6, pp. 125 ff.

Digitized by Google

ηρώτα ὁ ἀνθύπατος εἰ αὐτὸς εἴη Πολύκαρπος,
καὶ ὁμολογήσαντος, ἔπειθεν ἀρνεῖσθαι, λέγων
'αἰδέσθητί σου τὴν ἡλικίαν' καὶ ἕτερα τούτοις
ἀκόλουθα, ἃ σύνηθες αὐτοῖς ἐστι λέγειν, 'ὄμοσον
τὴν Καίσαρος τύχην, μετανόησον, εἰπόν, αἶρε τοὺς
ἀθέους.' ὁ δὲ Πολύκαρπος ἐμβριθεῖ τῷ προσώπῳ 19
εἰς πάντα τὸν ὄχλον τὸν ἐν τῷ σταδίῳ ἐμβλέψας,
ἐπισείσας αὐτοῖς τὴν χεῖρα στενάξας τε καὶ
ἀναβλέψας εἰς τὸν οὐρανόν, εἶπεν 'αἶρε τοὺς
ἀθέους.' ἐγκειμένου δὲ τοῦ ἡγουμένου καὶ λέ- 20
γοντος 'ὄμοσον, καὶ ἀπολύσω σε, λοιδόρησον τὸν
Χριστόν,' ἔφη ὁ Πολύκαρπος 'ὀγδοήκοντα καὶ
ἓξ ἔτη δουλεύω αὐτῷ, καὶ οὐδέν με ἠδίκησεν·
καὶ πῶς δύναμαι βλασφημῆσαι τὸν βασιλέα μου,
τὸν σώσαντά με;' ἐπιμένοντος δὲ πάλιν αὐτοῦ 21
καὶ λέγοντος 'ὄμοσον τὴν Καίσαρος τύχην,' ὁ
Πολύκαρπος 'εἰ κενοδοξεῖς,' φησίν, 'ἵνα ὀμόσω
τὴν Καίσαρος τύχην, ὡς λέγεις προσποιούμενος
ἀγνοεῖν ὅστις εἰμί, μετὰ παρρησίας ἄκουε· Χρι-
στιανός εἰμι. εἰ δὲ θέλεις τὸν τοῦ Χριστιανισμοῦ
μαθεῖν λόγον, δὸς ἡμέραν καὶ ἄκουσον.' ἔφη ὁ 22
ἀνθύπατος 'πεῖσον τὸν δῆμον.' Πολύκαρπος ἔφη,
Rom. 13, 1 'σὲ μὲν καὶ λόγου ἠξίωκα, δεδιδάγμεθα γὰρ
ἀρχαῖς καὶ ἐξουσίαις ὑπὸ θεοῦ τεταγμέναις τιμὴν
κατὰ τὸ προσῆκον τὴν μὴ βλάπτουσαν ἡμᾶς
ἀπονέμειν· ἐκείνους δὲ οὐκ ἀξίους ἡγοῦμαι τοῦ
ἀπολογεῖσθαι αὐτοῖς.' ὁ δ' ἀνθύπατος εἶπεν 'θηρία 23
ἔχω· τούτοις σε παραβαλῶ, ἐὰν μὴ μετανοήσῃς.'
ὁ δὲ εἶπεν 'κάλει· ἀμετάθετος γὰρ ἡμῖν ἡ ἀπὸ
τῶν κρειττόνων ἐπὶ τὰ χείρω μετάνοια, καλὸν δὲ
μετατίθεσθαι ἀπὸ τῶν χαλεπῶν ἐπὶ τὰ δίκαια.'
ὁ δὲ πάλιν πρὸς αὐτόν 'πυρί σε ποιήσω δαμασθῆναι, 24

Digitized by Google

when he approached the proconsul asked him if he were Polycarp, and when he admitted it he tried to persuade him to deny, saying: 'Respect your age,' and so forth, as they are accustomed to say: 'Swear by the genius of Caesar, repent, say: "Away with the Atheists"'; but Polycarp, with a stern countenance looked on all the crowd in the arena, and waving his hand at them, he groaned and looked up to heaven and said: 'Away with the Atheists.' But when the Governor pressed him and said: 'Take the oath and I will let you go, revile Christ,' Polycarp said: 'For eighty and six years have I been his servant, and he has done me no wrong, and how can I blaspheme my King who saved me?' But when he persisted again, and said: 'Swear by the genius[1] of Caesar,' he said: 'If you vainly suppose that I will swear by the genius of Caesar, as you say, and pretend that you are ignorant who I am, listen plainly: I am a Christian. And if you wish to learn the doctrine of Christianity fix a day and listen.' The proconsul said: 'Persuade the people.' And Polycarp said: 'You I should have held worthy of discussion, for we have been taught to render honour, as is meet, if it hurt us not, to princes and authorities appointed by God; but as for those, I do not count them worthy that a defence should be made to them.' And the proconsul said: 'I have wild beasts, I will deliver you to them, unless you change your mind.' And he said: 'Call for them, for change of mind from better to worse is a change we may not make; but it is good to change from evil to righteousness.' And he said again to him: 'I

[1] Literally "fortune"; but the Greeks thus translated the Latin oath, "per genium Caesaris," or "per genios Caesarum," which was introduced at the beginning of the Empire.

Digitized by Google

ἐὰν τῶν θηρίων καταφρονῇς, ἐὰν μὴ μετανοήσῃς.'
Πολύκαρπος εἶπεν 'πῦρ ἀπειλεῖς πρὸς ὥραν
καιόμενον καὶ μετ' ὀλίγον σβεννύμενον· ἀγνοεῖς
γὰρ τὸ τῆς μελλούσης κρίσεως καὶ αἰωνίου κολά-
σεως τοῖς ἀσεβέσι τηρούμενον πῦρ. ἀλλὰ τί
βραδύνεις; φέρε ὃ βούλει.' ταῦτα δὲ καὶ ἕτερα 25
πλείονα λέγων, θάρσους καὶ χαρᾶς ἐνεπίμπλατο
καὶ τὸ πρόσωπον αὐτοῦ χάριτος ἐπληροῦτο, ὥστε
μὴ μόνον μὴ συμπεσεῖν ταραχθέντα ὑπὸ τῶν
λεγομένων πρὸς αὐτόν, ἀλλὰ τοὐναντίον τὸν
ἀνθύπατον ἐκστῆναι πέμψαι τε τὸν κήρυκα καὶ
ἐν μέσῳ τῷ σταδίῳ κηρῦξαι 'τρὶς Πολύκαρπος
ὡμολόγησεν ἑαυτὸν Χριστιανὸν εἶναι.' τούτου 26
λεχθέντος ὑπὸ τοῦ κήρυκος, πᾶν τὸ πλῆθος ἐθνῶν
τε καὶ Ἰουδαίων τῶν τὴν Σμύρναν κατοικούντων
ἀκατασχέτῳ θυμῷ καὶ μεγάλῃ φωνῇ ἐβόα 'οὗτός
ἐστιν ὁ τῆς Ἀσίας διδάσκαλος, ὁ πατὴρ τῶν
Χριστιανῶν, ὁ τῶν ἡμετέρων θεῶν καθαιρέτης, ὁ
πολλοὺς διδάσκων μὴ θύειν μηδὲ προσκυνεῖν.'
ταῦτα λέγοντες, ἐπεβόων καὶ ἠρώτων τὸν ἀσιάρχην 27
Φίλιππον ἵνα ἐπαφῇ τῷ Πολυκάρπῳ λέοντα· ὁ δὲ
ἔφη μὴ εἶναι ἐξὸν αὐτῷ ἐπειδὴ πεπληρώκει τὰ
κυνηγέσια. τότε ἔδοξεν αὐτοῖς ὁμοθυμαδὸν ἐπι-
βοῆσαι ὥστε ζῶντα τὸν Πολύκαρπον κατακαῦσαι.
ἔδει γὰρ τὸ τῆς φανερωθείσης αὐτῷ ἐπὶ τοῦ 28
προσκεφαλαίου ὀπτασίας πληρωθῆναι, ὅτε ἰδὼν
αὐτὸ καιόμενον προσευχόμενος, εἶπεν ἐπιστραφεὶς
τοῖς μετ' αὐτοῦ πιστοῖς προφητικῶς 'δεῖ με
ζῶντα καῆναι.' ταῦτα οὖν μετὰ τοσούτου τάχους 29
ἐγένετο θᾶττον ἢ ἐλέγετο, τῶν ὄχλων παραχρῆμα
συναγόντων ἐκ τῶν ἐργαστηρίων καὶ ἐκ τῶν
βαλανείων ξύλα καὶ φρύγανα, μάλιστα Ἰουδαίων

Digitized by Google

will cause you to be consumed by fire, if you despise the beasts, unless you repent.' But Polycarp said: 'You threaten with the fire that burns for a time, and is quickly quenched, for you do not know the fire which awaits the wicked in the judgement to come and in everlasting punishment. But why are you waiting? Come, do what you will.' And with these and many other words he was filled with courage and joy, and his face was full of grace, so that it not only did not fall with trouble at the things said to him, but that the proconsul, on the other hand, was astounded and sent his herald into the midst of the arena to announce three times: 'Polycarp has confessed that he is a Christian.' When this had been said by the herald, all the multitude of heathen and Jews living in Smyrna cried out with uncontrollable wrath and a loud shout: 'This is the teacher of Asia, the father of the Christians, the destroyer of our Gods, who teaches many neither to offer sacrifice nor to worship.' And when they said this, they cried out and asked Philip the Asiarch to let loose a lion on Polycarp. But he said he could not legally do this, since he had closed the sports. Then they found it good to cry out with one mind that he should burn Polycarp alive, for the vision which had appeared to him on his pillow must be fulfilled, when he saw it burning, while he was praying and he turned and said prophetically to those of the faithful who were with him, 'I must be burnt alive.' These things then happened with so great speed, quicker than it takes to tell, and the crowd came together immediately, and prepared wood and faggots from the workshops and baths and the Jews were extremely zealous, as

Digitized by Google

προθύμως, ὡς ἔθος αὐτοῖς, εἰς ταῦτα ὑπουργούντων. ἀλλ' ὅτε ἡ πυρὰ ἡτοιμάσθη, ἀποθέμενος ἑαυτῷ 30
πάντα τὰ ἱμάτια καὶ λύσας τὴν ζώνην, ἐπειρᾶτο
καὶ ὑπολύειν ἑαυτόν, μὴ πρότερον τοῦτο ποιῶν
διὰ τὸ ἀεὶ ἕκαστον τῶν πιστῶν σπουδάζειν ὅστις
τάχιον τοῦ χρωτὸς αὐτοῦ ἐφάψηται· ἐν παντὶ γὰρ
ἀγαθῆς ἕνεκεν πολιτείας καὶ πρὸ τῆς πολιᾶς
ἐκεκόσμητο. εὐθέως οὖν αὐτῷ περιετίθετο τὰ 31
πρὸς τὴν πυρὰν ἡρμοσμένα ὄργανα· μελλόντων
δὲ αὐτῶν καὶ προσηλοῦν αὐτόν, εἶπεν 'ἄφετέ με
οὕτως· ὁ γὰρ διδοὺς ὑπομεῖναι τὸ πῦρ δώσει καὶ
χωρὶς τῆς ὑμετέρας ἐκ τῶν ἥλων ἀσφαλείας
ἀσκύλτως ἐπιμεῖναι τῇ πυρᾷ.' οἱ δὲ οὐ καθήλωσαν,
προσέδησαν δὲ αὐτόν. ὁ δ' ὀπίσω τὰς χεῖρας 32
ποιήσας καὶ προσδεθεὶς ὥσπερ κριὸς ἐπίσημος,
Wisd. 3, 6 ἀναφερόμενος ἐκ μεγάλου ποιμνίου ὁλοκαύτωμα
δεκτὸν θεῷ παντοκράτορι, εἶπεν 'ὁ τοῦ ἀγαπητοῦ 33
καὶ εὐλογητοῦ παιδός σου Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ πατήρ,
δι' οὗ τὴν περὶ σὲ ἐπίγνωσιν εἰλήφαμεν, ὁ θεὸς
ἀγγέλων καὶ δυνάμεων καὶ πάσης κτίσεως παντός
τε τοῦ γένους τῶν δικαίων οἳ ζῶσιν ἐνώπιόν σου,
εὐλογῶ σε ὅτι ἠξίωσάς με τῆς ἡμέρας καὶ ὥρας
ταύτης, τοῦ λαβεῖν μέρος ἐν ἀριθμῷ τῶν μαρτύρων
ἐν τῷ ποτηρίῳ τοῦ Χριστοῦ σου εἰς ἀνάστασιν ζωῆς
αἰωνίου ψυχῆς τε καὶ σώματος ἐν ἀφθαρσίᾳ πνεύ-
ματος ἁγίου· ἐν οἷς προσδεχθείην ἐνώπιόν σου 34
σήμερον ἐν θυσίᾳ πίονι καὶ προσδεκτῇ, καθὼς
προητοίμασας, προφανερώσας καὶ πληρώσας ὁ
ἀψευδὴς καὶ ἀληθινὸς θεός. διὰ τοῦτο καὶ περὶ 35
πάντων σὲ αἰνῶ, σὲ εὐλογῶ, σὲ δοξάζω διὰ τοῦ
αἰωνίου ἀρχιερέως Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ τοῦ ἀγαπητοῦ

Digitized by Google

is their custom, in assisting at this. Now when the fire was ready he put off all his clothes, and loosened his girdle and tried also to take off his shoes, a thing he was not used to doing, because each of the faithful was always zealous, which of them might the more quickly touch his flesh. For he had been treated with all respect because of his noble life, even before his old age. Immediately, therefore, he was fastened to the instruments which had been prepared for the fire, but when they were going to nail him as well he said: 'Leave me thus, for He who gives me power to endure the fire, will grant me to remain in the flames unmoved even without the security you will give by the nails.' So they did not nail him, but bound him, and he put his hands behind him and was bound, as a noble ram that is offered out of a great flock as a whole burnt offering acceptable to Almighty God; and he said: 'O Father of thy beloved and blessed Child, Jesus Christ, through whom we have received full knowledge of thee, the God of angels and powers, and of all creation, and of the whole family of the righteous, who live before thee! I bless thee, that Thou hast granted me this day and hour, that I may share, among the number of the martyrs, in the cup of thy Christ, for the Resurrection to everlasting life, both of soul and body in the immortality of the Holy Spirit. And may I, to-day, be received among them before Thee, as a rich and acceptable sacrifice, as Thou, the God who lies not and is truth, hast prepared beforehand, and shown forth, and fulfilled. For this reason I also praise Thee for all things, I bless Thee, I glorify Thee through the everlasting and heavenly high priest, Jesus Christ, thy beloved Child, through

Digitized by Google

σου παιδός, δι' οὗ σοι σὺν αὐτῷ ἐν πνεύματι ἁγίῳ δόξα καὶ νῦν καὶ εἰς τοὺς μέλλοντας αἰῶνας, ἀμήν.' ἀναπέμψαντος δὲ αὐτοῦ τὸ ἀμὴν καὶ πληρώσαντος 36
τὴν προσευχήν, οἱ τοῦ πυρὸς ἄνθρωποι ἐξῆψαν τὸ πῦρ, μεγάλης δὲ ἐκλαμψάσης φλογὸς θαῦμα εἴδομεν οἷς ἰδεῖν ἐδόθη, οἳ καὶ ἐτηρήθησαν εἰς τὸ ἀναγγεῖλαι τοῖς λοιποῖς τὰ γενόμενα. τὸ γὰρ πῦρ 37
καμάρας εἶδος ποιῆσαν ὥσπερ ὀθόνης πλοίου ὑπὸ πνεύματος πληρουμένης, κύκλῳ περιετείχισε τὸ σῶμα τοῦ μάρτυρος, καὶ ἦν μέσον οὐχ ὡς σὰρξ
Wisd. 3, 6 καιομένη, ἀλλ' ὡς χρυσὸς καὶ ἄργυρος ἐν καμίνῳ πυρούμενος· καὶ γὰρ εὐωδίας τοσαύτης ἀντελαβόμεθα ὡς λιβανωτοῦ πνέοντος ἢ ἄλλου τινὸς τῶν τιμίων ἀρωμάτων. πέρας γοῦν ἰδόντες οἱ ἄνομοι 38
μὴ δυνάμενον τὸ σῶμα ὑπὸ τοῦ πυρὸς δαπανηθῆναι, ἐκέλευσαν προσελθόντα αὐτῷ κομφέκτορα παραβῦσαι ξίφος, καὶ τοῦτο ποιήσαντος, ἐξῆλθεν πλῆθος 39
αἵματος, ὥστε κατασβέσαι τὸ πῦρ καὶ θαυμάσαι πάντα τὸν ὄχλον εἰ τοσαύτη τις διαφορὰ μεταξὺ τῶν τε ἀπίστων καὶ τῶν ἐκλεκτῶν· ὧν εἷς καὶ οὗτος γέγονεν ὁ θαυμασιώτατος ἐν τοῖς καθ' ἡμᾶς χρόνοις διδάσκαλος ἀποστολικὸς καὶ προφητικὸς γενόμενος ἐπίσκοπος τῆς ἐν Σμύρνῃ καθολικῆς ἐκκλησίας· πᾶν γὰρ ῥῆμα ὃ ἀφῆκεν ἐκ τοῦ στόματος αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἐτελειώθη καὶ τελειωθήσεται.

" Ὁ δὲ ἀντίζηλος καὶ βάσκανος πονηρός, ὁ 40
ἀντικείμενος τῷ γένει τῶν δικαίων, ἰδὼν τὸ μέγεθος αὐτοῦ τῆς μαρτυρίας καὶ τὴν ἀπ' ἀρχῆς ἀνεπίληπτον πολιτείαν ἐστεφανωμένον τε τὸν τῆς ἀφθαρσίας στέφανον καὶ βραβεῖον ἀναντίρρητον ἀπενηνεγμένον, ἐπετήδευσεν ὡς μηδὲ τὸ σωμάτιον αὐτοῦ ὑφ' ἡμῶν ληφθείη, καίπερ πολλῶν ἐπι-

Digitized by Google

whom be glory to Thee with Him and the Holy Spirit, both now and for the ages that are to come, Amen.' Now when he had uttered his Amen and finished his prayer, the men in charge of the fire lit it, and a great flame blazed up and we, to whom it was given to see, saw a marvel. And we have been preserved to report to others what befell. For the fire made the likeness of a room, like the sail of a vessel filled with wind, and surrounded the body of the martyr as with a wall, and he was within it not as burning flesh, but as gold and silver being refined in a furnace. And we perceived such a fragrant smell as the scent of incense or other costly spices. At length the lawless men, seeing that his body could not be consumed by the fire, commanded an executioner to go up and stab him with a dagger, and when he did this, there came out much blood, so that the fire was quenched, and all the crowd marvelled that there was such a difference between the unbelievers and the elect. And of the elect was he indeed one, the wonderful martyr, Polycarp, who in our days was an apostolic and prophetic teacher, bishop of the Catholic Church in Smyrna. For every word which he uttered from his mouth both was fulfilled and will be fulfilled.

But the jealous and envious evil one who resists the family of the righteous, when he saw the greatness of his martyrdom, and his blameless career from the beginning, and that he was crowned with the crown of immortality, and had carried off the unspeakable prize, took care that not even his poor body should be taken away by us, though many

Digitized by Google

θυμούντων τοῦτο ποιῆσαι καὶ κοινωνῆσαι τῷ ἁγίῳ
αὐτοῦ σαρκίῳ. ὑπέβαλον γοῦν τινες Νικήτην, τὸν 41
τοῦ Ἡρῴδου πατέρα, ἀδελφὸν δ' Ἄλκης, ἐντυχεῖν
τῷ ἡγεμόνι ὥστε μὴ δοῦναι αὐτοῦ τὸ σῶμα,
'μή,' φησίν, 'ἀφέντες τὸν ἐσταυρωμένον, τοῦτον
ἄρξωνται σέβειν.' καὶ ταῦτα εἶπον ὑποβαλόντων
καὶ ἐνισχυσάντων τῶν Ἰουδαίων· οἳ καὶ ἐτήρησαν
μελλόντων ἡμῶν ἐκ τοῦ πυρὸς αὐτὸν λαμβάνειν,
ἀγνοοῦντες ὅτι οὔτε τὸν Χριστόν ποτε καταλιπεῖν
δυνησόμεθα, τὸν ὑπὲρ τῆς τοῦ παντὸς κόσμου τῶν
σῳζομένων σωτηρίας παθόντα, οὔτε ἕτερόν τινα
σέβειν. τοῦτον μὲν γὰρ υἱὸν ὄντα τοῦ θεοῦ προσ- 42
κυνοῦμεν, τοὺς δὲ μάρτυρας ὡς μαθητὰς καὶ
μιμητὰς τοῦ κυρίου ἀγαπῶμεν ἀξίως ἕνεκα εὐνοίας
ἀνυπερβλήτου τῆς εἰς τὸν ἴδιον βασιλέα καὶ
διδάσκαλον· ὧν γένοιτο καὶ ἡμᾶς συγκοινωνούς
τε καὶ συμμαθητὰς γενέσθαι. ἰδὼν οὖν ὁ ἑκατοντ- 43
άρχης τὴν τῶν Ἰουδαίων γενομένην φιλονεικίαν,
θεὶς αὐτὸν ἐν μέσῳ, ὡς ἔθος αὐτοῖς, ἔκαυσεν,
οὕτως τε ἡμεῖς ὕστερον ἀνελόμενοι τὰ τιμιώτερα
λίθων πολυτελῶν καὶ δοκιμώτερα ὑπὲρ χρυσίον
ὀστᾶ αὐτοῦ ἀπεθέμεθα ὅπου καὶ ἀκόλουθον ἦν.
ἔνθα, ὡς δυνατόν, ἡμῖν συναγομένοις ἐν ἀγαλλιάσει 44
καὶ χαρᾷ παρέξει ὁ κύριος ἐπιτελεῖν τὴν τοῦ
μαρτυρίου αὐτοῦ ἡμέραν γενέθλιον εἴς τε τὴν τῶν
προηθληκότων μνήμην καὶ τῶν μελλόντων ἄσκησίν
τε καὶ ἑτοιμασίαν. τοιαῦτα τὰ κατὰ τὸν μακάριον 45
Πολύκαρπον· σὺν τοῖς ἀπὸ Φιλαδελφείας δωδέ-
κάτου ἐν Σμύρνῃ μαρτυρήσαντος, [ὃς] μόνος ὑπὸ
πάντων μᾶλλον μνημονεύεται, ὡς καὶ ὑπὸ τῶν
ἐθνῶν ἐν παντὶ τόπῳ λαλεῖσθαι."

Τὰ μὲν δὴ κατὰ τὸν θαυμάσιον καὶ ἀποστολικὸν 46

Digitized by Google

desired to do so, and to have fellowship with his holy flesh. Therefore he put forward Niketas, the father of Herod, and the brother of Alce, to ask the Governor not to give his body, 'lest,' he said, 'they leave the crucified one and begin to worship this man.' And they said this owing to the suggestions and pressure of the Jews, who also watched when we were going to take it from the fire, for they do not know that we shall not ever be able either to abandon Christ, who suffered for the salvation of those who are being saved in the whole world, or to worship any other. For him we worship as the Son of God, but the martyrs we love as disciples and imitators of the Lord; and rightly, because of their unsurpassable affection toward their own King and Teacher. God grant that we too may be their companions and fellow-disciples. When therefore the centurion saw the contentiousness caused by the Jews, he put the body in the midst, as was their custom, and burnt it. Thus we, at last, took up his bones, more precious than precious stones, and finer than gold, and put them where it was meet. There the Lord will permit us to come together according to our power in gladness and joy, and celebrate the birthday of his martyrdom, both in memory of those who have already contested, and for the practice and training of those whose fate it shall be. Such was the lot of the blessed Polycarp, who though he was, together with those from Philadelphia, the twelfth martyr in Smyrna, is alone especially remembered by all, so that he is spoken of in every place, even by the heathen."

This great end was vouchsafed to the life of the

Digitized by Google

Πολύκαρπον τοιούτου κατηξίωτο τέλους, τῶν κατὰ τὴν Σμυρναίων ἐκκλησίαν ἀδελφῶν τὴν ἱστορίαν ἐν ᾗ δεδηλώκαμεν αὐτῶν ἐπιστολῇ κατατεθειμένων· ἐν τῇ αὐτῇ δὲ περὶ αὐτοῦ γραφῇ καὶ ἄλλα μαρτύρια συνῆπτο κατὰ τὴν αὐτὴν Σμύρναν πεπραγμένα ὑπὸ τὴν αὐτὴν περίοδον τοῦ χρόνου τῆς τοῦ Πολυκάρπου μαρτυρίας, μεθ' ὧν καὶ Μητρόδωρος τῆς κατὰ Μαρκίωνα πλάνης πρεσβύτερος δὴ εἶναι δοκῶν πυρὶ παραδοθεὶς ἀνῄρηται. τῶν γε μὴν τότε περιβόητος μάρτυς εἷς τις ἐγνω- 47
ρίζετο Πιόνιος· οὗ τὰς κατὰ μέρος ὁμολογίας τήν τε τοῦ λόγου παρρησίαν καὶ τὰς ὑπὲρ τῆς πίστεως ἐπὶ τοῦ δήμου καὶ τῶν ἀρχόντων ἀπολογίας διδασκαλικάς τε δημηγορίας καὶ ἔτι τὰς πρὸς τοὺς ὑποπεπτωκότας τῷ κατὰ τὸν διωγμὸν πειρασμῷ δεξιώσεις παραμυθίας τε ἃς ἐπὶ τῆς εἱρκτῆς τοῖς παρ' αὐτὸν εἰσαφικνουμένοις ἀδελφοῖς παρετίθετο, ἅς τε ἐπὶ τούτοις ὑπέμεινεν βασάνους, καὶ τὰς ἐπὶ ταύταις ἀλγηδόνας καθηλώσεις τε καὶ τὴν ἐπὶ τῆς πυρᾶς καρτερίαν τήν τε ἐφ' ἅπασιν τοῖς παραδόξοις αὐτοῦ τελευτὴν πληρέστατα τῆς περὶ αὐτοῦ γραφῆς περιεχούσης, τοὺς οἷς φίλον ἐπὶ ταύτην ἀναπέμψομεν τοῖς τῶν ἀρχαίων συναχθεῖσιν ἡμῖν μαρτυρίοις ἐντεταγμένην. ἐξῆς δὲ 48
καὶ ἄλλων ἐν Περγάμῳ πόλει τῆς Ἀσίας ὑπομνήματα μεμαρτυρηκότων φέρεται, Κάρπου καὶ Παπύλου καὶ γυναικὸς Ἀγαθονίκης, μετὰ πλείστας καὶ διαπρεπεῖς ὁμολογίας ἐπιδόξως τετελειωμένων.

XVI. Κατὰ τούτους δὲ καὶ ὁ μικρῷ πρόσθεν ἡμῖν 1
δηλωθεὶς Ἰουστῖνος δεύτερον ὑπὲρ τῶν καθ' ἡμᾶς δογμάτων βιβλίον ἀναδοὺς τοῖς δεδηλωμένοις ἄρχουσιν, θείῳ κατακοσμεῖται μαρτυρίῳ, φιλοσόφου

Digitized by Google

marvellous and apostolic Polycarp, as the Christians of the church at Smyrna have given the story in their letter which we have quoted. In the same document concerning him other martyrdoms are appended which took place in the same Smyrna at the same time as the martyrdom of Polycarp, and among them Metrodorus, who seems to have been a presbyter of the Marcionite error, was given to the fire and put to death. A famous martyr of those at that time was Pionius. The document concerning him gives a full account of his special confession, his boldness of speech, the instructive apologies for the faith and popular addresses before the people and magistrates, as well as the correction and comfort to those who had succumbed to temptation in the persecution, which he addressed during his imprisonment to the brethren who visited him, in addition to this the tortures which he underwent, added to pain, nailing, the enduring of the flame, and, after all his marvellous deeds, his death; and to it we will refer those interested, for it is included in the martyrdoms of the ancients collected by us.[1] There are also memoirs extant of others who were martyred in the city of Pergamon in Asia, Carpus and Papylas, and a woman, Agathonice, who died after many glorious confessions.

XVI. In their time too Justin,[2] whom we mentioned a little earlier, after delivering to the rulers mentioned a second book in behalf of our opinions, was adorned with divine martyrdom when the philosopher

[1] See Introduction, pp. li, lii. [2] See Introduction, pp. l, li.

Digitized by Google

Κρήσκεντος (τὸν φερώνυμον δ' οὗτος τῇ Κυνικῇ προσηγορίᾳ βίον τε καὶ τρόπον ἐζήλου) τὴν ἐπιβουλὴν αὐτῷ καττύσαντος, ἐπειδὴ πλεονάκις ἐν διαλόγοις ἀκροατῶν παρόντων εὐθύνας αὐτόν, τὰ νικητήρια τελευτῶν ἧς ἐπρέσβευεν ἀληθείας διὰ τοῦ μαρτυρίου τοῦ κατ' αὐτὸν ἀνεδήσατο.

Τοῦτο δὲ καὶ αὐτὸς ὁ ταῖς ἀληθείαις φιλο- 2
σοφώτατος ἐν τῇ δεδηλωμένῃ ἀπολογίᾳ σαφῶς οὕτως, ὥσπερ οὖν καὶ ἔμελλεν ὅσον οὔπω περὶ αὐτὸν συμβήσεσθαι, προλαβὼν ἀποσημαίνει τού-
Justin, *Apol.* 2, 3 *Chron. Pasch.* 482, 10-483, 7 τοις τοῖς ῥήμασιν· "κἀγὼ οὖν προσδοκῶ ὑπό 3
τινος τῶν ὠνομασμένων ἐπιβουλευθῆναι καὶ ξύλῳ ἐντιναγῆναι ἢ κἂν ὑπὸ Κρήσκεντος τοῦ ἀφιλοσόφου καὶ φιλοκόμπου· οὐ γὰρ φιλόσοφον εἰπεῖν ἄξιον τὸν ἄνδρα, ὅς γε περὶ ὧν μὴ ἐπίσταται, δημοσίᾳ καταμαρτυρεῖ ὡς ἀθέων καὶ ἀσεβῶν Χριστιανῶν ὄντων, πρὸς χάριν καὶ ἡδονὴν τῶν πολλῶν τῶν πεπλανημένων τοῦτο πράττων. εἴτε 4
γὰρ μὴ ἐντυχὼν τοῖς τοῦ Χριστοῦ διδάγμασιν κατατρέχει ἡμῶν, παμπόνηρός ἐστιν καὶ ἰδιωτῶν πολὺ χείρων, οἳ φυλάττονται πολλάκις περὶ ὧν οὐκ ἐπίστανται, διαλέγεσθαι καὶ ψευδομαρτυρεῖν· καὶ εἰ ἐντυχὼν μὴ συνῆκεν τὸ ἐν αὐτοῖς μεγαλεῖον ἢ συνεὶς πρὸς τὸ μὴ ὑποπτευθῆναι τοιοῦτος ταῦτα ποιεῖ, πολὺ μάλλον ἀγεννὴς καὶ παμπόνηρος, ἰδιωτικῆς καὶ ἀλόγου δόξης καὶ φόβου ἐλάττων ὤν. καὶ γὰρ προθέντα με καὶ ἐρωτήσαντα αὐτὸν 5
ἐρωτήσεις τινὰς τοιαύτας, μαθεῖν καὶ ἐλέγξαι
Chron. Pasch. 482, 10-483, 7 ὅτι ἀληθῶς μηδὲν ἐπίσταται, εἰδέναι ὑμᾶς βούλομαι, καὶ ὅτι ἀληθῆ λέγω, εἰ μὴ ἀνηνέχθησαν ὑμῖν αἱ κοινωνίαι τῶν λόγων, ἕτοιμος καὶ ἐφ' ὑμῶν

Digitized by Google

Crescens, who strove in life and behaviour to justify the name of cynic which he bore, instigated the plot against him, for Justin had often defeated him in debate in the presence of hearers, and finally bound on himself the trophies of victory by his martyrdom for the truth of which he was an ambassador.

This he, who was in truth a supreme philosopher, sets forth in advance, in the above-mentioned Apology, just as clearly as in fact it was almost at once to happen to him, using these words: "I too expect to be plotted against by one of those who have been mentioned, and to be stretched on the rack, or even by Crescens, that lover not of wisdom but of boasting, for the man is not worthy to be called 'philosopher' seeing that he publicly testifies about what he does not know, to the effect that the Christians are atheists and impious, and he does this to gain the grace and pleasure of the many who have been deceived. For either he controverts us without attending to the teachings of Christ, and is a complete rascal and far worse than the uneducated, who often avoid discussing and giving false testimony on subjects of which they have no knowledge; and if he has studied and does not understand the greatness in them, or though he does understand them is base enough to do what he does to avoid suspicion, he is more ignoble and rascally, for he succumbs to ignorant and unreasonable opinion and fear. For I would have you to know that I put forward and asked him certain questions of this kind in order to find out and prove that he really knows nothing; and to show that I am speaking the truth, in case the information as to the arguments was not brought to you, I am ready to communicate the

Digitized by Google

κοινωνεῖν τῶν ἐρωτήσεων πάλιν· βασιλικὸν δ' ἂν καὶ τοῦτο ἔργον εἴη. εἰ δὲ καὶ ἐγνώσθησαν 6
ὑμῖν αἱ ἐρωτήσεις μου καὶ αἱ ἐκείνου ἀποκρίσεις,
φανερὸν ὑμῖν ἐστιν ὅτι οὐδὲν τῶν ἡμετέρων ἐπί-
σταται· ἢ εἰ ἐπίσταται, διὰ τοὺς ἀκούοντας δὲ οὐ
τολμᾷ λέγειν, ὡς πρότερον ἔφην, οὐ φιλόσοφος,
ἀλλὰ φιλόδοξος ἀνὴρ δείκνυται, ὅς γε μηδὲ τὸ
Σωκρατικόν, ἀξιέραστον ὄν, τιμᾷ."

Ταῦτα μὲν οὖν ὁ Ἰουστῖνος· ὅτι δὲ κατὰ τὴν 7
αὐτοῦ πρόρρησιν πρὸς τοῦ Κρήσκεντος συσκευασθεὶς
Tatian, p. 36, 26 ἐτελειώθη, Τατιανός, ἀνὴρ τὸν πρῶτον αὐτοῦ βίον
σοφιστεύσας ἐν τοῖς Ἕλλήνων μαθήμασι καὶ
δόξαν οὐ σμικρὰν ἐν αὐτοῖς ἀπενηνεγμένος πλεῖστά
Tatian, p. 20, 15-17 τε ἐν συγγράμμασιν αὐτοῦ καταλιπὼν μνημεῖα,
ἐν τῷ Πρὸς Ἕλληνας ἱστορεῖ, λέγων ὧδε· "καὶ
ὁ θαυμασιώτατος Ἰουστῖνος ὀρθῶς ἐξεφώνησεν
ἐοικέναι τοὺς προειρημένους λῃσταῖς." εἶτ' ἐπει- 8
Tatian, p. 21, 1-6 πών τινα περὶ τῶν φιλοσόφων, ἐπιλέγει ταῦτα·
"Κρήσκης γοῦν ὁ ἐννεοττεύσας τῇ μεγάλῃ πόλει
παιδεραστίᾳ μὲν πάντας ὑπερήνεγκεν, φιλαργυρίᾳ
δὲ πάνυ προσεχὴς ἦν· θανάτου δὲ ὁ καταφρονεῖν 9
συμβουλεύων οὕτως αὐτὸς ἐδεδίει τὸν θάνατον,
ὡς καὶ Ἰουστῖνον, καθάπερ μεγάλῳ κακῷ, τῷ
θανάτῳ περιβαλεῖν πραγματεύσασθαι, διότι κηρύτ-
των τὴν ἀλήθειαν λίχνους τοὺς φιλοσόφους καὶ
ἀπατεῶνας συνήλεγχεν." καὶ τὸ μὲν κατὰ Ἰου-
στῖνον μαρτύριον τοιαύτην εἴληχεν αἰτίαν.

XVII. Ὁ δ' αὐτὸς ἀνὴρ πρὸ τοῦ κατ' αὐτὸν ἀγῶ- 1
νος ἑτέρων πρὸ αὐτοῦ μαρτυρησάντων ἐν τῇ προτέρᾳ
μνημονεύει ἀπολογίᾳ, χρησίμως τῇ ὑποθέσει καὶ
Justin, *Apol.* 2, 2 ταῦτα ἱστορῶν· γράφει δὲ ὧδε· "γυνή τις συνεβίου 2
ἀνδρὶ ἀκολασταίνοντι, ἀκολασταίνουσα καὶ αὐτὴ

Digitized by Google

questions again before you, and this would be a task worthy of an Emperor. But if my questions and his answers are known to you, it is plain to you that he knows nothing of our position, or, if he does know, does not dare say so because of the listeners, and, as I said before, is proved to be a man who loves not wisdom but reputation and does not even honour the saying of Socrates, worthy of affection as it is." [1]

So says Justin; and that, according to his own prophecy, he was caught by Crescens and suffered martyrdom, Tatian, a man who in early life was trained in the learning of the Greeks and gained great distinction in it and has left many monuments of himself in writing, narrates as follows in his treatise against the Greeks: "And the wonderful Justin rightly exclaimed that those mentioned are like brigands." Then continuing about the philosophers, he proceeds: "Crescens, who lurked in the great city, surpassed all in unnatural vice and was also wholly devoted to the love of money. He counselled others to despise death but himself was so afraid of it that he intrigued to inflict death on Justin, as though it were a great evil, because Justin by preaching the truth convicted the philosophers as gluttons and impostors." Such was the cause of the martyrdom of Justin.

XVII. The same writer mentions in his first Apology that before his own contest others had been martyrs before him. He narrates this profitably to our subject and he writes thus: "A certain woman lived with a dissipated husband, and at first she too

[1] Eusebius forgot to copy the passage quoted by Justin, "A man must not be honoured above the truth" (Plato, *Republic*, x. 595 c).

Digitized by Google

πρότερον· ἐπειδὴ δὲ τὰ τοῦ Χριστοῦ διδάγματα ἔγνω, ἐσωφρονίσθη, καὶ τὸν ἄνδρα ὁμοίως σωφρονεῖν πείθειν ἐπειρᾶτο, τὰ διδάγματα ἀναφέρουσα τήν τε μέλλουσαν τοῖς οὐ σωφρόνως καὶ μετὰ λόγου ὀρθοῦ βιοῦσιν ἔσεσθαι ἐν αἰωνίῳ πυρὶ κόλασιν ἀπαγγέλλουσα. ὁ δὲ ταῖς αὐταῖς ἀσελ- 3
γείαις ἐπιμένων, ἀλλοτρίαν διὰ τῶν πράξεων ἐποιεῖτο τὴν γαμετήν· ἀσεβὲς γὰρ ἡγουμένη τὸ λοιπὸν ἡ γυνὴ συγκατακλίνεσθαι ἀνδρὶ παρὰ τὸν τῆς φύσεως νόμον καὶ παρὰ τὸ δίκαιον πόρους ἡδονῆς ἐκ παντὸς πειρωμένῳ ποιεῖσθαι, τῆς συζυγίας χωρισθῆναι ἐβουλήθη. καὶ ἐπειδὴ ἐξ- 4
εδυσωπεῖτο ὑπὸ τῶν αὐτῆς, ἔτι προσμένειν συμβουλευόντων ὡς εἰς ἐλπίδα μεταβολῆς ἥξοντός ποτε τοῦ ἀνδρός, βιαζομένη ἑαυτὴν ἐπέμενεν· ἐπειδὴ δὲ ὁ ταύτης ἀνὴρ εἰς τὴν Ἀλεξάνδρειαν 5
πορευθείς, χαλεπώτερα πράττειν ἀπηγγέλθη, ὅπως μὴ κοινωνὸς τῶν ἀδικημάτων καὶ ἀσεβημάτων γένηται μένουσα ἐν τῇ συζυγίᾳ καὶ ὁμοδίαιτος καὶ ὁμόκοιτος γινομένη, τὸ λεγόμενον παρ' ὑμῖν ῥεπούδιον δοῦσα ἐχωρίσθη. ὁ δὲ καλὸς κἀγαθὸς 6
ταύτης ἀνήρ, δέον αὐτὸν χαίρειν ὅτι ἃ πάλαι μετὰ τῶν ὑπηρετῶν καὶ τῶν μισθοφόρων εὐχερῶς ἔπραττεν μέθαις χαίρουσα καὶ κακίᾳ πάσῃ, τούτων μὲν τῶν πράξεων πέπαυτο καὶ αὐτὸν τὰ αὐτὰ παύσασθαι πράττοντα ἐβούλετο, μὴ βουλομένου ἀπαλλαγείσης, κατηγορίαν πεποίηται, λέγων αὐτὴν Χριστιανὴν εἶναι. καὶ ἡ μὲν βιβλίδιόν σοι τῷ 7
αὐτοκράτορι ἀνέδωκεν, πρότερον συγχωρηθῆναι αὐτῇ διοικήσασθαι τὰ ἑαυτῆς ἀξιοῦσα, ἔπειτα ἀπολογήσασθαι περὶ τοῦ κατηγορήματος μετὰ τὴν τῶν πραγμάτων αὐτῆς διοίκησιν, καὶ συν-

Digitized by Google

was dissipated, but when she knew the doctrine of Christ she reformed, and tried to persuade her husband to reform likewise, relating the doctrine to him, and announcing the punishment in eternal fire which will be the lot of those who do not live soberly and in accordance with right teaching. But he remained in his dissoluteness, and through his acts broke up his marriage, for his wife thought it was wicked to continue consorting with a husband who tried every kind of pleasure contrary to the law of nature and to righteousness, and wished to be separated from wedlock. Owing to the importunity of her family, who counselled her to stay with him because there was always a hope that the husband would change, she constrained herself to stay with him, but when her husband went to Alexandria, and she heard that he was behaving worse, in order not to be a partner of wickedness and impiety by remaining in wedlock and sharing in his board and bed, she gave him what you call a writ of divorce and was separated. But though her noble husband ought to have rejoiced that she, who had formerly light-heartedly engaged with servants and hirelings in drunken pleasure and in all vices, had given up these habits and wished him too to give up following them, he disliked her conversion and brought an accusation alleging that she was a Christian. She filed a petition with you, as Emperor, begging that she be allowed first to settle her affairs and then to answer the accusation after the settlement of her

Digitized by Google

ἐχώρησας τοῦτο· ὁ δὲ ταύτης ποτὲ ἀνὴρ πρὸς 8
ἐκείνην μὲν μὴ δυνάμενος τὰ νῦν ἔτι λέγειν, πρὸς
Πτολεμαῖόν τινα, ὃν Οὐρβίκιος ἐκολάσατο, δι-
δάσκαλον ἐκείνης τῶν Χριστιανῶν μαθημάτων
γενόμενον, ἐτράπετο διὰ τοῦδε τοῦ τρόπου. ἑκα- 9
τόνταρχον εἰς δεσμὰ ἐμβαλόντα τὸν Πτολεμαῖον,
φίλον αὐτῷ ὑπάρχοντα, ἔπεισε λαβέσθαι τοῦ
Πτολεμαίου καὶ ἀνερωτῆσαι εἰ, αὐτὸ τοῦτο μόνον,
Χριστιανός ἐστιν. καὶ τὸν Πτολεμαῖον, φιλαλήθη
ἀλλ' οὐκ ἀπατηλὸν οὐδὲ ψευδολόγον τὴν γνώμην
ὄντα, ὁμολογήσαντα ἑαυτὸν εἶναι Χριστιανόν, ἐν
δεσμοῖς γενέσθαι ὁ ἑκατόνταρχος πεποίηκεν, καὶ
ἐπὶ πολὺν χρόνον ἐν τῷ δεσμωτηρίῳ ἐκολάσατο·
τελευταῖον δὲ ὅτε ἐπὶ Οὐρβίκιον ἤχθη ὁ ἄνθρωπος, 10
ὁμοίως αὐτὸ τοῦτο μόνον ἐξητάσθη, εἰ εἴη Χρι-
στιανός· καὶ πάλιν, τὰ καλὰ ἑαυτῷ συνεπιστάμενος
διὰ τὴν ἀπὸ τοῦ Χριστοῦ διδαχήν, τὸ διδασκαλεῖον
τῆς θείας ἀρετῆς ὡμολόγησεν. ὁ γὰρ ἀρνούμενος 11
ὁτιοῦν ἢ κατεγνωκὼς τοῦ πράγματος ἔξαρνος
γίνεται ἢ ἑαυτὸν ἀνάξιον ἐπιστάμενος καὶ ἀλλό-
τριον τοῦ πράγματος τὴν ὁμολογίαν φεύγει· ὧν
οὐδὲν πρόσεστιν τῷ ἀληθινῷ Χριστιανῷ. καὶ τοῦ 12
Οὐρβικίου κελεύσαντος αὐτὸν ἀπαχθῆναι, Λούκιός
τις, καὶ αὐτὸς ὢν Χριστιανός, ὁρῶν τὴν ἀλόγως
οὕτως γενομένην κρίσιν, πρὸς τὸν Οὐρβίκιον ἔφη
'τίς ἡ αἰτία τοῦ μήτε μοιχὸν μήτε πόρνον μήτε
ἀνδροφόνον μήτε λωποδύτην μήτε ἅρπαγα μήτε
ἁπλῶς ἀδίκημά τι πράξαντα ἐλεγχόμενον, ὀνόματος

---

[1] The point appears to be that the settlement of the lady's estate meant an accounting to her by her husband, and probably considerable payment by him to her, so that the situation

Digitized by Google

affairs. This you granted. But her former husband being now unable to attack her,[1] turned in the following way against a certain Ptolemy, who had been her teacher in Christian doctrines and was punished by Urbicius. He persuaded a centurion who was a friend of his to arrest Ptolemy, and to ask him this one thing, whether he was a Christian. And Ptolemy, being a lover of the truth, and not deceitful nor of false disposition, confessed that he was a Christian. The centurion caused him to be put in prison and tortured him for a long while in the jail. Finally, when the man was brought before Urbicius he was similarly asked only this same question, whether he was a Christian, and again, conscious of the good which came to him because of the teaching of Christ, he confessed the school of divine virtue. For he who denies anything either condemns the fact and rejects it, or knowing that he is himself unworthy and alien from the fact, avoids confession, and neither of these is the case with the real Christian. When Urbicius ordered him to be executed, a certain Lucius, who was himself a Christian, seeing the verdict which was thus given contrary to all reason, said to Urbicius, 'What is the reason for punishing this man who has not been convicted of adultery or fornication or murder or theft or robbery or, in a word, of having done anything

[1] was that if he wished to gratify his grudge against her he would have to pay more than he desired, while if she wished to escape a martyr's crown she must sacrifice some of her property to her husband. Justin's point of view is obvious, but the emperor may have thought that wives who refused to join in their husband's amusements scarcely deserved to be executed yet might well pay for the privilege of having failed to convert their husbands to their own way of thinking.

Digitized by Google

δὲ Χριστιανοῦ προσωνυμίαν ὁμολογοῦντα, τὸν ἄνθρωπον τοῦτον ἐκολάσω; οὐ πρέποντα Εὐσεβεῖ αὐτοκράτορι οὐδὲ φιλοσόφῳ Καίσαρος παιδὶ οὐδὲ ἱερᾷ συγκλήτῳ κρίνεις, ὦ Οὐρβίκιε.' καὶ ὅς, 13 οὐδὲν ἄλλο ἀποκρινάμενος, καὶ πρὸς τὸν Λούκιον ἔφη ' δοκεῖς μοι καὶ σὺ εἶναι τοιοῦτος,' καὶ τοῦ Λουκίου φήσαντος ' μάλιστα,' πάλιν καὶ αὐτὸν ἀπαχθῆναι ἐκέλευσεν· ὁ δὲ χάριν εἰδέναι ὡμολόγει· πονηρῶν γὰρ δεσποτῶν τῶν τοιούτων ἀπηλλάχθαι ἐπεῖπεν καὶ παρὰ ἀγαθὸν πατέρα καὶ βασιλέα τὸν θεὸν πορεύεσθαι. καὶ ἄλλος δὲ τρίτος ἐπελθὼν κολασθῆναι προσετιμήθη." τούτοις ὁ Ἰουστῖνος εἰκότως καὶ ἀκολούθως ἃς προεμνημονεύσαμεν αὐτοῦ φωνὰς ἐπάγει λέγων " κἀγὼ οὖν προσδοκῶ ὑπό τινος τῶν ὠνομασμένων ἐπιβουλευθῆναι " καὶ τὰ λοιπά.

XVIII. Πλεῖστα δὲ οὗτος καταλέλοιπεν ἡμῖν πε- 1
παιδευμένης διανοίας καὶ περὶ τὰ θεῖα ἐσπουδακυίας ὑπομνήματα, πάσης ὠφελείας ἔμπλεα· ἐφ' ἃ τοὺς φιλομαθεῖς ἀναπέμψομεν, τὰ εἰς ἡμετέραν γνῶσιν ἐλθόντα χρησίμως παρασημηνάμενοι. ὁ μέν τίς 2
ἐστιν αὐτῷ λόγος πρὸς Ἀντωνῖνον τὸν Εὐσεβῆ προσαγορευθέντα καὶ τοὺς τούτου παῖδας τήν τε Ῥωμαίων σύγκλητον προσφωνητικὸς ὑπὲρ τῶν καθ' ἡμᾶς δογμάτων, ὁ δὲ δευτέραν περιέχων ὑπὲρ τῆς ἡμετέρας πίστεως ἀπολογίαν, ἣν πεποίηται πρὸς τὸν τοῦ δεδηλωμένου αὐτοκράτορος διάδοχόν τε καὶ ὁμώνυμον Ἀντωνῖνον Οὐῆρον, οὗ τὰ κατὰ τοὺς χρόνους ἐπὶ τοῦ παρόντος διέξιμεν· καὶ ἄλλος ὁ πρὸς Ἕλληνας, ἐν ᾧ μακρὸν περὶ 3
πλείστων παρ' ἡμῖν τε καὶ τοῖς Ἑλλήνων φιλοσόφοις ζητουμένων κατατείνας λόγον, περὶ τῆς τῶν δαιμόνων διαλαμβάνει φύσεως· ἃ οὐδὲν ἂν ἐπείγοι

Digitized by Google

wrong, but merely confesses that he bears the Christian name? Your judgement, Urbicius, is unworthy of the emperor called Pius, or of Caesar's son, the philosopher, or of the sacred Senate.' And Urbicius made no reply except to say to Lucius, 'You seem to me to be a Christian yourself.' And when Lucius said, 'Certainly,' he ordered him to be executed also. Lucius expressed his gratitude, for he said he was being removed from wicked lords like these and going to God, the good Father and King. A third man, who also came forward, Urbicius commanded to be punished." To this Justin naturally and suitably adds the words which we quoted above, "So I expect myself to suffer a plot from one of those named," etc.

XVIII. Justin has left us treatises of an educated intelligence trained in theology, which are full of helpfulness, and to them we will refer students, indicating what has come usefully to our knowledge. There is a treatise by him, on behalf of our opinions, addressed to Antoninus, surnamed Pius, and his children, and to the Roman Senate another, containing a second Apology for our defence, which he made to the successor and namesake of the above mentioned emperor, Antoninus Verus, whose period we are at present discussing; and another to the Greeks, in which, after a long and expanded argument about very many things inquired into both by Christians and the philosophers of the Greeks, he discourses on the nature of demons, which there is no urgency to quote at present.

Digitized by Google

τὰ νῦν παρατίθεσθαι. καὶ αὖθις ἕτερον πρὸς 4
Ἕλληνας εἰς ἡμᾶς ἐλήλυθεν αὐτοῦ σύγγραμμα,
ὃ καὶ ἐπέγραψεν Ἔλεγχον, καὶ παρὰ τούτους ἄλλο
περὶ θεοῦ μοναρχίας, ἣν οὐ μόνον ἐκ τῶν παρ' ἡμῖν
γραφῶν, ἀλλὰ καὶ τῶν Ἑλληνικῶν συνίστησιν
βιβλίων· ἐπὶ τούτοις ἐπιγεγραμμένον Ψάλτης, 5
καὶ ἄλλο σχολικὸν Περὶ ψυχῆς, ἐν ᾧ διαφόρους
πεύσεις προτείνας περὶ τοῦ κατὰ τὴν ὑπόθεσιν
προβλήματος, τῶν παρ' Ἕλλησιν φιλοσόφων παρα-
τίθεται τὰς δόξας, αἷς καὶ ἀντιλέξειν ὑπισχνεῖται
τήν τε αὐτὸς αὐτοῦ δόξαν ἐν ἑτέρῳ παραθήσεσθαι
συγγράμματι. καὶ διάλογον δὲ πρὸς Ἰουδαίους 6
συνέταξεν, ὃν ἐπὶ τῆς Ἐφεσίων πόλεως πρὸς
Τρύφωνα τῶν τότε Ἑβραίων ἐπισημότατον πε-
Justin, *Dial.* 2-8 ποίηται· ἐν ᾧ τίνα τρόπον ἡ θεία χάρις αὐτὸν ἐπὶ
τὸν τῆς πίστεως παρώρμησε λόγον, δηλοῖ ὁποίαν
τε πρότερον περὶ τὰ φιλόσοφα μαθήματα σπουδὴν
εἰσενήνεκται καὶ ὅσην ἐποιήσατο τῆς ἀληθείας
ἐκθυμοτάτην ζήτησιν. ἱστορεῖ δ' ἐν ταὐτῷ περὶ 7
Ἰουδαίων ὡς κατὰ τῆς τοῦ Χριστοῦ διδασκαλίας
ἐπιβουλὴν συσκευασαμένων, αὐτὰ ταῦτα πρὸς
Justin, *Dial.* 17 τὸν Τρύφωνα ἀποτεινόμενος· "οὐ μόνον δὲ οὐ
μετενοήσατε ἐφ' οἷς ἐπράξατε κακῶς, ἀλλὰ ἄνδρας
ἐκλεκτοὺς ἐκλεξάμενοι τότε ἀπὸ Ἱερουσαλὴμ
ἐξεπέμψατε εἰς πᾶσαν τὴν γῆν, λέγοντες αἵρεσιν
ἄθεον Χριστιανῶν πεφάνθαι καταλέγοντές τε ταῦτα
ἅπερ καθ' ἡμῶν οἱ ἀγνοοῦντες ἡμᾶς πάντες λέγουσιν,
ὥστε οὐ μόνον ἑαυτοῖς ἀδικίας αἴτιοι ὑπάρχετε,
ἀλλὰ καὶ τοῖς ἄλλοις ἅπασιν ἁπλῶς ἀνθρώποις."
Justin, *Dial.* 82 Γράφει δὲ καὶ ὡς ὅτι μέχρι καὶ αὐτοῦ χαρίσματα 8
Justin, *Dial.* 81 προφητικὰ διέλαμπεν ἐπὶ τῆς ἐκκλησίας, μέμνηταί
τε τῆς Ἰωάννου Ἀποκαλύψεως, σαφῶς τοῦ

Digitized by Google

Again a second treatise against the Greeks has reached us, which he entitled *A Confutation*, and besides them another about the Sovereignty of God which he compiled not only from our own scriptures but also from the books of the Greeks. Besides these he wrote the book entitled *Psaltes* and another disputation *On the Soul*, in which he propounds various questions concerning the problem under discussion and adduces the opinion of the Greek philosophers; these he promises to refute and to give his own opinion in another book. He also composed a dialogue against the Jews, which he held in the city of Ephesus against Trypho, the most distinguished Jew of the day. In this he explains how the grace of God brought him to the word of the faith, and how he had formerly been zealous for philosophic learning and made deep and enthusiastic inquiry into the truth. In the same book he narrates about the Jews how they plotted against the teaching of Christ, and presses the same point against Trypho. "Not only did you not repent of the evil that you did but you chose out picked men at that time and sent them from Jerusalem to the whole world saying that a seditious sect of Christians had arisen, and uttering the calumnies which all those who do not know us make against us, so that you are not only guilty of unrighteousness against yourselves but also against absolutely all other men."

He also writes that even up to his own time prophetic gifts illuminated the church, and quotes the Apocalypse of John, saying clearly that it is the work

Digitized by Google

Justin, *Dial.* 71-73 ἀποστόλου αὐτὴν εἶναι λέγων· καὶ ῥητῶν δέ τινων προφητικῶν μνημονεύει, διελέγχων τὸν Τρύφωνα ὡς δὴ περικοψάντων αὐτὰ Ἰουδαίων ἀπὸ τῆς γραφῆς. πλεῖστα δὲ καὶ ἕτερα παρὰ πολλοῖς φέρεται ἀδελφοῖς τῶν αὐτοῦ πόνων, οὑτωσὶ δὲ 9
σπουδῆς εἶναι ἄξιοι καὶ τοῖς παλαιοῖς ἐδόκουν οἱ τἀνδρὸς λόγοι, ὡς τὸν Εἰρηναῖον ἀπομνημονεύειν αὐτοῦ φωνάς, τοῦτο μὲν ἐν τῷ τετάρτῳ Πρὸς τὰς
Iren. 4, 6, 2 αἱρέσεις αὐτὰ δὴ ταῦτα ἐπιλέγοντα· "καὶ καλῶς ὁ Ἰουστῖνος ἐν τῷ πρὸς Μαρκίωνα συντάγματί φησιν ὅτι αὐτῷ τῷ κυρίῳ οὐκ ἂν ἐπείσθην ἄλλον θεὸν καταγγέλλοντι παρὰ τὸν δημιουργόν," τοῦτο δὲ ἐν τῷ πέμπτῳ τῆς αὐτῆς ὑποθέσεως διὰ τούτων·
Iren. 5, 26, 2 "καὶ καλῶς ὁ Ἰουστῖνος ἔφη ὅτι πρὸ μὲν τῆς τοῦ κυρίου παρουσίας οὐδέποτε ἐτόλμησεν ὁ σατανᾶς βλασφημῆσαι τὸν θεόν, ἅτε μηδέπω εἰδὼς αὐτοῦ τὴν κατάκρισιν." καὶ ταῦτα δὲ ἀναγκαίως εἰρήσθω 10
εἰς προτροπὴν τοῦ μετὰ σπουδῆς τοὺς φιλομαθεῖς καὶ τοὺς τούτου περιέπειν λόγους. καὶ τὰ μὲν κατὰ τόνδε τοιαῦτα ἦν.

XIX. Ἤδη δὲ εἰς ὄγδοον ἐλαυνούσης ἔτος τῆς 1
δηλουμένης ἡγεμονίας, τῆς Ῥωμαίων ἐκκλησίας τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν Ἀνίκητον ἔνδεκα τοῖς πᾶσιν ἔτεσιν διελθόντα Σωτὴρ διαδέχεται, ἀλλὰ καὶ τῆς Ἀλεξανδρέων παροικίας Κελαδίωνος τέτταρσιν ἐπὶ δέκα ἔτεσιν προστάντος, XX. τὴν διαδοχὴν Ἀγριππῖνος 1
διαλαμβάνει, καὶ ἐπὶ τῆς Ἀντιοχέων δὲ ἐκκλησίας Θεόφιλος ἕκτος ἀπὸ τῶν ἀποστόλων ἐγνωρίζετο, τετάρτου μὲν τῶν ἐκεῖσε μετὰ Ἥρωνα καταστάντος Κορνηλίου, μετὰ δὲ αὐτὸν πέμπτῳ βαθμῷ τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν Ἔρωτος διαδεξαμένου.

XXI. Ἤκμαζον δ' ἐν τούτοις ἐπὶ τῆς ἐκκλησίας 1

Digitized by Google

of the apostle. And he also quotes some texts from the prophets bringing the charge against Trypho that the Jews had cut them out of the Scripture. There are also many works of his extant among many Christians, and thus the books of this writer seemed even to the ancients worthy of study, for Irenaeus quotes his works, doing so in the fourth book *Against Heresies* in these very words: "And well does Justin say in his treatise against Marcion that he would not have believed the Lord himself had he preached a God other than the Creator." Again, in the fifth book of the same treatise he quotes him as follows: "And well did Justin say that before the coming of the Lord Satan dared not blaspheme God, seeing that he did not yet know his condemnation." These points must serve to encourage students to follow his arguments zealously and such are the facts about him.

XIX. Now when the reign of this emperor was approaching the eighth year[1] Soter succeeded Anicetus in the bishopric of Rome, who had completed eleven years altogether, and when Celadion had presided over the diocese of the Alexandrians for fourteen years, XX. Agrippinus took up the succession, and in the church of the Antiochians, the famous Theophilus was the sixth from the Apostles, the fourth having been Cornelius, who was appointed after Hero, and after Cornelius Eros had succeeded to the bishopric in the fifth place.

XXI. At this time there flourished in the church

[1] A.D. 168.

Digitized by Google

Ἡγήσιππός τε, ὃν ἴσμεν ἐκ τῶν προτέρων, καὶ Διονύσιος Κορινθίων ἐπίσκοπος Πινυτός τε ἄλλος τῶν ἐπὶ Κρήτης ἐπίσκοπος Φίλιππός τε ἐπὶ τούτοις καὶ Ἀπολινάριος καὶ Μελίτων Μουσανός τε καὶ Μόδεστος καὶ ἐπὶ πᾶσιν Εἰρηναῖος, ὧν καὶ εἰς ἡμᾶς τῆς ἀποστολικῆς παραδόσεως ἡ τῆς ὑγιοῦς πίστεως ἔγγραφος κατῆλθεν ὀρθοδοξία.

XXII. Ὁ μὲν οὖν Ἡγήσιππος ἐν πέντε τοῖς εἰς 1
ἡμᾶς ἐλθοῦσιν ὑπομνήμασιν τῆς ἰδίας γνώμης πληρεστάτην μνήμην καταλέλοιπεν· ἐν οἷς δηλοῖ ὡς πλείστοις ἐπισκόποις συμμίξειεν ἀποδημίαν στειλάμενος μέχρι Ῥώμης, καὶ ὡς ὅτι τὴν αὐτὴν παρὰ πάντων παρείληφεν διδασκαλίαν. ἀκοῦσαί γέ τοι πάρεστιν μετά τινα περὶ τῆς Κλήμεντος πρὸς Κορινθίους ἐπιστολῆς αὐτῷ εἰρημένα ἐπιλέγοντος ταῦτα· "καὶ 2
ἐπέμενεν ἡ ἐκκλησία ἡ Κορινθίων ἐν τῷ ὀρθῷ λόγῳ μέχρι Πρίμου ἐπισκοπεύοντος ἐν Κορίνθῳ· οἷς συνέμιξα πλέων εἰς Ῥώμην καὶ συνδιέτριψα τοῖς Κορινθίοις ἡμέρας ἱκανάς, ἐν αἷς συνανεπάημεν τῷ ὀρθῷ λόγῳ· γενόμενος δὲ ἐν Ῥώμῃ, 3
διαδοχὴν ἐποιησάμην μέχρις Ἀνικήτου· οὗ διάκονος ἦν Ἐλεύθερος, καὶ παρὰ Ἀνικήτου διαδέχεται Σωτήρ, μεθ' ὃν Ἐλεύθερος. ἐν ἑκάστῃ δὲ διαδοχῇ καὶ ἐν ἑκάστῃ πόλει οὕτως ἔχει ὡς ὁ νόμος κηρύσσει καὶ οἱ προφῆται καὶ ὁ κύριος."

Ὁ δ' αὐτὸς καὶ τῶν κατ' αὐτὸν αἱρέσεων τὰς 4
ἀρχὰς ὑποτίθεται διὰ τούτων· "καὶ μετὰ τὸ μαρτυρῆσαι Ἰάκωβον τὸν δίκαιον, ὡς καὶ ὁ κύριος, ἐπὶ τῷ αὐτῷ λόγῳ, πάλιν ὁ ἐκ θείου αὐτοῦ Συμεὼν ὁ τοῦ Κλωπᾶ καθίσταται ἐπίσκοπος, ὃν προέθεντο πάντες, ὄντα ἀνεψιὸν τοῦ κυρίου δεύτερον. διὰ τοῦτο ἐκάλουν τὴν ἐκκλησίαν παρθένον, οὔπω γὰρ

Digitized by Google

Hegesippus, whom we know from former narratives, and Dionysius, bishop of the Corinthians, and Pinytus, another bishop of the Cretans, and Philip, and in addition to them Apolinarius and Melito and Musanus and Modestus and, above all, Irenaeus, and their correct opinions on the sound faith of the apostolic tradition have come down to us in writing.

XXII. Hegesippus has left a complete record of his own opinion in five treatises which have come down to us. In them he explains how when travelling as far as Rome he mingled with many bishops and that he found the same doctrine among them all. But it is well to listen to what he said after some remarks about the epistle of Clement to the Corinthians: "And the church of the Corinthians remained in the true doctrine until Primus was bishop of Corinth, and I conversed with them on my voyage to Rome, and spent some days with the Corinthians during which we were refreshed by the true word. When I was in Rome I recovered the list of the succession until Anicetus, whose deacon was Eleutherus; Soter succeeded Anicetus, and after him came Eleutherus. In each list and in each city things are as the law, the prophets, and the Lord preach."

The same writer also describes the beginning of the heresies of his time as follows: "After James the Just had suffered martyrdom for the same reason as the Lord, Symeon, his cousin, the son of Clopas was appointed bishop, whom they all proposed because he was another cousin of the Lord. For this cause they called the church virgin, for it had not

Digitized by Google

ἔφθαρτο ἀκοαῖς ματαίαις· ἄρχεται δὲ ὁ Θεβουθις 5
διὰ τὸ μὴ γενέσθαι αὐτὸν ἐπίσκοπον ὑποφθείρειν
ἀπὸ τῶν ἑπτὰ αἱρέσεων, ὧν καὶ αὐτὸς ἦν, ἐν τῷ
λαῷ, ἀφ' ὧν Σίμων, ὅθεν Σιμωνιανοί, καὶ Κλεόβιος,
ὅθεν Κλεοβιηνοί, καὶ Δοσίθεος, ὅθεν Λοσιθιανοί,
καὶ Γορθαῖος, ὅθεν Γοραθηνοί, καὶ Μασβωθεοι.
ἀπὸ τούτων Μενανδριανισταὶ καὶ Μαρκιανισταὶ
καὶ Καρποκρατιανοὶ καὶ Οὐαλεντινιανοὶ καὶ Βασι-
λειδιανοὶ καὶ Σατορνιλιανοὶ ἕκαστος ἰδίως καὶ
ἑτεροίως ἰδίαν δόξαν παρεισηγάγοσαν, ἀπὸ τούτων 6
ψευδόχριστοι, ψευδοπροφῆται, ψευδαπόστολοι, οἵ-
τινες ἐμέρισαν τὴν ἕνωσιν τῆς ἐκκλησίας φθορι-
μαίοις λόγοις κατὰ τοῦ θεοῦ καὶ κατὰ τοῦ Χριστοῦ
αὐτοῦ."

Ἔτι δ' ὁ αὐτὸς καὶ τὰς πάλαι γεγενημένας παρὰ 7
Ἰουδαίοις αἱρέσεις ἱστορεῖ λέγων· "ἦσαν δὲ
γνῶμαι διάφοροι ἐν τῇ περιτομῇ ἐν υἱοῖς Ἰσραηλι-
τῶν κατὰ τῆς φυλῆς Ἰούδα καὶ τοῦ Χριστοῦ
αὗται· Ἐσσαῖοι Γαλιλαῖοι Ἡμεροβαπτισταὶ Μασ-
βωθεοι Σαμαρεῖται Σαδδουκαῖοι Φαρισαῖοι."

Καὶ ἕτερα δὲ πλεῖστα γράφει, ὧν ἐκ μέρους ἤδη 8
πρότερον ἐμνημονεύσαμεν, οἰκείως τοῖς καιροῖς
τὰς ἱστορίας παραθέμενοι, ἔκ τε τοῦ καθ' Ἑβραίους
εὐαγγελίου καὶ τοῦ Συριακοῦ καὶ ἰδίως ἐκ τῆς
Ἑβραΐδος διαλέκτου τινὰ τίθησιν, ἐμφαίνων ἐξ
Ἑβραίων ἑαυτὸν πεπιστευκέναι, καὶ ἄλλα δὲ ὡς
ἐξ Ἰουδαϊκῆς ἀγράφου παραδόσεως μνημονεύει. οὐ
Iren. 4, 20, 3 μόνος δὲ οὗτος, καὶ Εἰρηναῖος δὲ καὶ ὁ πᾶς τῶν 9
ἀρχαίων χορὸς πανάρετον Σοφίαν τὰς Σολομῶνος
Παροιμίας ἐκάλουν. καὶ περὶ τῶν λεγομένων δὲ

[1] "The people" usually means the Jews, but here it

Digitized by Google

yet been corrupted by vain messages, but Thebouthis, because he had not been made bishop, begins its corruption by the seven heresies, to which he belonged, among the people.[1] Of these were Simon, whence the Simonians, and Cleobius, whence the Cleobians, and Dositheus, whence the Dosithians, and Gorthaeus, whence the Goratheni and the Masbothei. From these come the Menandrianists and the Marcianists and the Carpocratians and the Valentinians and the Basilidians and Saturnilians; each of these puts forward in its own peculiar way its own opinion, and from them come the false Christs and false prophets and false apostles who destroy the unity of the church by their poisonous doctrine against God and against his Christ."

The same writer also described the sects which once existed among the Jews as follows: "Now there were various opinions among the circumcision, among the children of Israel, against the tribe of Judah and the Messiah, as follows: Essenes, Galileans, Hemerobaptists, Masbothei, Samaritans, Sadducees, and Pharisees."

He also wrote much more, from which we have already made some quotations, arranging the narratives chronologically, and he makes extracts from the Gospel according to the Hebrews, and from the Syriac and particularly from the Hebrew language, showing that he had been converted from among the Hebrews, and he mentions points as coming from the unwritten tradition of the Jews. And not only he but also Irenaeus and the whole company of the ancients called the Proverbs the All-virtuous Wisdom. And in dis-

seems to mean Palestinian Christians. But the passage is not clear, and possibly the text is corrupt.

Digitized by Google

ἀποκρύφων διαλαμβάνων, ἐπὶ τῶν αὐτοῦ χρόνων πρός τινων αἱρετικῶν ἀναπεπλάσθαι τινὰ τούτων ἱστορεῖ. ἀλλὰ γὰρ ἐφ' ἕτερον ἤδη μεταβατέον.

XXIII. Καὶ πρῶτόν γε περὶ Διονυσίου φατέον ὅτι 1
τε τῆς ἐν Κορίνθῳ παροικίας τὸν τῆς ἐπισκοπῆς ἐγκεχείριστο θρόνον, καὶ ὡς τῆς ἐνθέου φιλοπονίας οὐ μόνοις τοῖς ὑπ' αὐτόν, ἀλλ' ἤδη καὶ τοῖς ἐπὶ τῆς ἀλλοδαπῆς ἀφθόνως ἐκοινώνει, χρησιμώτατον ἅπασιν ἑαυτὸν καθιστὰς ἐν αἷς ὑπετυποῦτο καθολικαῖς πρὸς τὰς ἐκκλησίας ἐπιστολαῖς· ὧν ἐστιν ἡ μὲν πρὸς Λακεδαιμονίους ὀρθοδοξίας κατηχητικὴ 2
εἰρήνης τε καὶ ἑνώσεως ὑποθετική, ἡ δὲ πρὸς Ἀθηναίους διεγερτικὴ πίστεως καὶ τῆς κατὰ τὸ εὐαγγέλιον πολιτείας, ἧς ὀλιγωρήσαντας ἐλέγχει ὡς ἂν μικροῦ δεῖν ἀποστάντας τοῦ λόγου ἐξ οὗπερ τὸν προεστῶτα αὐτῶν Πούπλιον μαρτυρῆσαι κατὰ τοὺς τότε συνέβη διωγμούς. Κοδράτου δὲ μετὰ 3
τὸν μαρτυρήσαντα Πούπλιον καταστάντος αὐτῶν ἐπισκόπου μέμνηται, ἐπιμαρτυρῶν ὡς διὰ τῆς αὐτοῦ σπουδῆς ἐπισυναχθέντων καὶ τῆς πίστεως
Acts 17, 34 ἀναζωπύρησιν εἰληχότων· δηλοῖ δ' ἐπὶ τούτοις ὡς καὶ Διονύσιος ὁ Ἀρεοπαγίτης ὑπὸ τοῦ ἀποστόλου Παύλου προτραπεὶς ἐπὶ τὴν πίστιν κατὰ τὰ ἐν ταῖς Πράξεσιν δεδηλωμένα, πρῶτος τῆς Ἀθήνησι παροικίας τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν ἐγκεχείριστο. ἄλλη δ' 4
ἐπιστολή τις αὐτοῦ πρὸς Νικομηδέας φέρεται, ἐν ᾗ τὴν Μαρκίωνος αἵρεσιν πολεμῶν τῷ τῆς ἀληθείας παρίσταται κανόνι. καὶ τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ 5
δὲ τῇ παροικούσῃ Γόρτυναν ἅμα ταῖς λοιπαῖς κατὰ Κρήτην παροικίαις ἐπιστείλας, Φίλιππον ἐπίσκοπον αὐτῶν ἀποδέχεται ἅτε δὴ ἐπὶ πλείσταις μαρτυρουμένης ἀνδραγαθίαις τῆς ὑπ' αὐτὸν ἐκ-

Digitized by Google

cussing the so-called Apocrypha, he relates that some of them were fabricated by certain heretics in his own time. But we must now pass on to another writer.

XXIII. Concerning Dionysius it must first be said that he was appointed to the throne of the episcopate of the diocese of Corinth, and that he communicated his divine industry ungrudgingly not only to those under him but also to those at a distance, rendering himself most useful to all in the general epistles which he drew up for the churches.[1] Among them the letter to the Lacedaemonians is an instruction in orthodoxy on the subject of peace and unity, and the letter to the Athenians is a call to faith and to life according to the gospel, and for despising this he rebukes them as all but apostates from the truth since the martyrdom of Publius,[2] their leader, in the persecution of that time. He mentions that Quadratus was appointed their bishop after the martyrdom of Publius and testifies that through his zeal they had been brought together and received a revival of their faith. Moreover, he mentions that Dionysius the Areopagite was converted by the Apostle Paul to the faith, according to the narrative in the Acts, and was the first to be appointed to the bishopric of the diocese of Athens. There is another extant letter of his to the Nicomedians in which he combats the heresy of Marcion and compares it with the rule of the truth. He also wrote to the church sojourning in Gortyna together with the other Cretan dioceses, and welcomes their bishop Philip for the reputation

[1] None of his writings are extant.
[2] Nothing more is known of this Publius.

Digitized by Google

κλησίας, τήν τε τῶν αἱρετικῶν διαστροφὴν ὑπομιμνήσκει φυλάττεσθαι. καὶ τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ δὲ τῇ 6
παροικούσῃ Ἀμαστριν ἅμα ταῖς κατὰ Πόντον
ἐπιστείλας, Βακχυλίδου μὲν καὶ Ἐλπίστου ὡς ἂν
αὐτὸν ἐπὶ τὸ γράψαι προτρεψάντων μέμνηται,
γραφῶν τε θείων ἐξηγήσεις παρατέθειται, ἐπίσκοπον αὐτῶν ὀνόματι Πάλμαν ὑποσημαίνων·
πολλὰ δὲ περὶ γάμου καὶ ἁγνείας τοῖς αὐτοῖς
παραινεῖ, καὶ τοὺς ἐξ οἵας δ' οὖν ἀποπτώσεως,
εἴτε πλημμελείας εἴτε μὴν αἱρετικῆς πλάνης,
ἐπιστρέφοντας δεξιοῦσθαι προστάττει. ταύταις 7
ἄλλη ἐγκατείλεκται πρὸς Κνωσίους ἐπιστολή, ἐν
ᾗ Πινυτὸν τῆς παροικίας ἐπίσκοπον παρακαλεῖ
Matt. 11, 30 μὴ βαρὺ φορτίον ἐπάναγκες τὸ περὶ ἁγνείας τοῖς
ἀδελφοῖς ἐπιτιθέναι, τῆς δὲ τῶν πολλῶν κατα-
στοχάζεσθαι ἀσθενείας· πρὸς ἣν ὁ Πινυτὸς ἀντι- 8
γράφων, θαυμάζει μὲν καὶ ἀποδέχεται τὸν Διονύσιον,
1 Cor. 3, 1. 2 ἀντιπαρακαλεῖ δὲ στερροτέρας ἤδη ποτὲ μεταδιδόναι
Heb. 5 12-14 τροφῆς, τελειοτέροις γράμμασιν εἰς αὖθις τὸν παρ'
αὐτῷ λαὸν ὑποθρέψαντα, ὡς μὴ διὰ τέλους τοῖς
γαλακτώδεσιν ἐνδιατρίβοντες λόγοις τῇ νηπιώδει
ἀγωγῇ λάθοιεν καταγηράσαντες· δι' ἧς ἐπιστολῆς
καὶ ἡ τοῦ Πινυτοῦ περὶ τὴν πίστιν ὀρθοδοξία τε
καὶ φροντὶς τῆς τῶν ὑπηκόων ὠφελείας τό τε
λόγιον καὶ ἡ περὶ τὰ θεῖα σύνεσις ὡς δι' ἀκρι-
βεστάτης ἀναδείκνυται εἰκόνος.

Ἔτι τοῦ Διονυσίου καὶ πρὸς Ῥωμαίους ἐπι- 9
στολὴ φέρεται, ἐπισκόπῳ τῷ τότε Σωτῆρι προσφωνοῦσα· ἐξ ἧς οὐδὲν οἷον τὸ καὶ παραθέσθαι
λέξεις δι' ὧν τὸ μέχρι τοῦ καθ' ἡμᾶς διωγμοῦ
φυλαχθὲν Ῥωμαίων ἔθος ἀποδεχόμενος ταῦτα
γράφει· "ἐξ ἀρχῆς γὰρ ὑμῖν ἔθος ἐστὶν τοῦτο, 10

Digitized by Google

of the church in his charge for many noble acts, and he enjoins care against heretical error. He also wrote to the church sojourning in Amastris, together with the churches in Pontus, and mentions that Bacchylides and Elpistus had urged him to write; he adduces interpretations of the divine scriptures, and mentions by name their bishop Palmas. He gave them many exhortations about marriage and chastity, and orders them to receive those who are converted from any backsliding, whether of conduct or heretical error. To this list has been added another epistle to Cnossus, in which he exhorts Pinytos, the bishop of the diocese, not to put on the brethren a heavy compulsory burden concerning chastity and to consider the weaknesses of the many. To this Pinytos replied that he admired and welcomed Dionysius, but exhorted him in turn to provide at some time more solid food, and to nourish the people under him with another more advanced letter, so that they might not be fed continually on milky words, and be caught unaware by old age while still treated as children. In this letter the orthodoxy of Pinytos in the faith, his care for those under him, his learning and theological understanding are shown as in a most accurate image.

There is, moreover, extant a letter of Dionysius to the Romans addressed to Soter who was then bishop, and there is nothing better than to quote the words in which he welcomes the custom of the Romans, which was observed down to the persecution in our own times. "This has been your custom from the be-

Digitized by Google

πάντας μὲν ἀδελφοὺς ποικίλως εὐεργετεῖν ἐκκλησίαις τε πολλαῖς ταῖς κατὰ πᾶσαν πόλιν ἐφόδια πέμπειν, ὧδε μὲν τὴν τῶν δεομένων πενίαν ἀναψύχοντας, ἐν μετάλλοις δὲ ἀδελφοῖς ὑπάρχουσιν ἐπιχορηγοῦντας δι' ὧν πέμπετε ἀρχῆθεν ἐφοδίων πατροπαράδοτον ἔθος Ῥωμαίων Ῥωμαῖοι φυλάττοντες, ὃ οὐ μόνον διατετήρηκεν ὁ μακάριος ὑμῶν ἐπίσκοπος Σωτήρ, ἀλλὰ καὶ ηὔξηκεν, ἐπιχορηγῶν μὲν τὴν διαπεμπομένην δαψίλειαν τὴν εἰς τοὺς ἁγίους, λόγοις δὲ μακαρίοις τοὺς ἀνιόντας ἀδελφούς, ὡς τέκνα πατὴρ φιλόστοργος, παρακαλῶν."

Ἐν αὐτῇ δὲ ταύτῃ καὶ τῆς Κλήμεντος πρὸς 11
Κορινθίους μέμνηται ἐπιστολῆς, δηλῶν ἀνέκαθεν ἐξ ἀρχαίου ἔθους ἐπὶ τῆς ἐκκλησίας τὴν ἀνάγνωσιν αὐτῆς ποιεῖσθαι· λέγει γοῦν· "τὴν σήμερον οὖν κυριακὴν ἁγίαν ἡμέραν διηγάγομεν, ἐν ᾗ ἀνέγνωμεν ὑμῶν τὴν ἐπιστολήν, ἣν ἔξομεν ἀεί ποτε ἀναγινώσκοντες νουθετεῖσθαι, ὡς καὶ τὴν προτέραν ἡμῖν διὰ Κλήμεντος γραφεῖσαν."

Ἔτι δ' ὁ αὐτὸς καὶ περὶ τῶν ἰδίων ἐπιστολῶν 12
ὡς ῥᾳδιουργηθεισῶν ταῦτά φησιν· "ἐπιστολὰς γὰρ
Matt. 13, 25 ἀδελφῶν ἀξιωσάντων με γράψαι ἔγραψα. καὶ ταύτας οἱ τοῦ διαβόλου ἀπόστολοι ζιζανίων
Rev. 22, 18, 19 γεγέμικαν, ἃ μὲν ἐξαιροῦντες, ἃ δὲ προστιθέντες· οἷς τὸ οὐαὶ κεῖται. οὐ θαυμαστὸν ἄρα εἰ καὶ τῶν κυριακῶν ῥᾳδιουργῆσαί τινες ἐπιβέβληνται γραφῶν, ὁπότε καὶ ταῖς οὐ τοιαύταις ἐπιβεβουλεύκασιν."

Καὶ ἄλλη δέ τις παρὰ ταύτας ἐπιστολὴ τοῦ 13
Διονυσίου φέρεται Χρυσοφόρᾳ πιστοτάτῃ ἀδελφῇ

[1] The mines were constantly used by the Romans as convict establishments, as work in them was regarded as unfit even for slaves.

Digitized by Google

ginning, to do good in manifold ways to all Christians, and to send contributions to the many churches in every city, in some places relieving the poverty of the needy, and ministering to the Christians in the mines,[1] by the contribution which you have sent from the beginning, preserving the ancestral custom of the Romans, true Romans as you are. Your blessed bishop Soter has not only carried on this habit but has even increased it, by administering the bounty distributed to the saints and by exhorting with his blessed words the brethren who come to Rome, as a loving father would his children."

In this same letter he also quotes the letter of Clement to the Corinthians, showing that from the beginning it had been the custom to read it in the church. "To-day we observed the holy day of the Lord, and read out your letter, which we shall continue to read from time to time for our admonition, as we do with that which was formerly sent to us through Clement."[2]

The same writer speaks as follows about the falsification of his own letters. "When Christians asked me to write letters I wrote them, and the apostles of the devil have filled them with tares, by leaving out some things and putting in others. But woe awaits them. Therefore it is no wonder that some have gone about to falsify even the scriptures of the Lord when they have plotted against writings so inferior."

Besides these there is extant another letter of Dionysius to Chrysophora, a most faithful Christian,

[2] It is to be noticed that Dionysius regards both the letter of Soter and the letter of Clement as coming from the church of Rome of which they are the first and second epistles. There is much to be said for A. von Harnack's view that the letter which we call II. Clement is really the letter of Soter.

Digitized by Google

ἐπιστείλαντος, ᾗ τὰ κατάλληλα γράφων, τῆς προσηκούσης καὶ αὐτῇ μετεδίδου λογικῆς τροφῆς. καὶ τὰ μὲν τοῦ Διονυσίου τοσαῦτα.

XXIV. Τοῦ δὲ Θεοφίλου, ὃν τῆς Ἀντιοχέων 1
ἐκκλησίας ἐπίσκοπον δεδηλώκαμεν, τρία τὰ πρὸς Αὐτόλυκον στοιχειώδη φέρεται συγγράμματα, καὶ ἄλλο Πρὸς τὴν αἵρεσιν Ἑρμογένους τὴν ἐπιγραφὴν ἔχον, ἐν ᾧ ἐκ τῆς Ἀποκαλύψεως Ἰωάννου κέχρηται μαρτυρίαις· καὶ ἕτερα δέ τινα κατηχητικὰ αὐτοῦ φέρεται βιβλία. τῶν γε μὴν αἱρετικῶν οὐ χεῖρον
Matt. 13, 25 καὶ τότε ζιζανίων δίκην λυμαινομένων τὸν εἰλικρινῆ τῆς ἀποστολικῆς διδασκαλίας σπόρον, οἱ πανταχόσε τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν ποιμένες, ὥσπερ τινὰς θῆρας ἀγρίους τῶν Χριστοῦ προβάτων ἀποσοβοῦντες, αὐτοὺς ἀνείργον τοτὲ μὲν ταῖς πρὸς τοὺς ἀδελφοὺς νουθεσίαις καὶ παραινέσεσιν, τοτὲ δὲ πρὸς αὐτοὺς γυμνότερον ἀποδυόμενοι, ἀγράφοις τε εἰς πρόσωπον ζητήσεσι καὶ ἀνατροπαῖς, ἤδη δὲ καὶ δι' ἐγγράφων ὑπομνημάτων τὰς δόξας αὐτῶν ἀκριβεστάτοις ἐλέγχοις διευθύνοντες. ὅ γέ τοι Θεόφιλος σὺν τοῖς ἄλλοις κατὰ τούτων στρατευσάμενος δῆλός ἐστιν ἀπό τινος οὐκ ἀγεννῶς αὐτῷ κατὰ Μαρκίωνος πεπονημένου λόγου, ὃς καὶ αὐτὸς μεθ' ὧν ἄλλων εἰρήκαμεν εἰς ἔτι νῦν διασέσωσται. τοῦτον μὲν οὖν ἕβδομος ἀπὸ τῶν ἀποστόλων τῆς Ἀντιοχέων ἐκκλησίας διαδέχεται Μαξιμῖνος.

XXV. Φίλιππός γε μήν, ὃν ἐκ τῶν Διονυσίου 1
φωνῶν τῆς ἐν Γορτύνῃ παροικίας ἐπίσκοπον ἔγνωμεν, πάνυ γε σπουδαιότατον πεποίηται καὶ αὐτὸς κατὰ Μαρκίωνος λόγον, Εἰρηναῖός τε ὡσαύτως καὶ Μόδεστος, ὃς καὶ διαφερόντως παρὰ τοὺς ἄλλους

Digitized by Google

in which he writes to her, suitably imparting to her the proper spiritual food. Such are the facts about Dionysius.

XXIV. Of Theophilus, whom we have mentioned as bishop of the church of the Antiochians, three elementary treatises are extant, addressed to Autolycus, and another with the title, *Against the Heresy of Hermogenes*, in which he has quoted the Apocalypse of John, and there are also extant some other books of his on instruction. Heretics were even then no less defiling the pure seed of apostolic teaching like tares, and the shepherds of the churches in every place, as though driving off wild beasts from Christ's sheep, excluded them at one time by rebukes and exhortations to the brethren, at another by their more complete exposure, by unwritten and personal inquiry and conversation, and ultimately correcting their opinions by accurate arguments in written treatises. It is clear that Theophilus joined with the others in this campaign against them from a noble treatise which he made against Marcion, which has been preserved until now with the others that we have mentioned. His successor in the church of the Antiochians was Maximinus, seventh from the apostles.

XXV. Philip, whom we know from the words of Dionysius as bishop of the diocese in Gortyna, also made a most excellent treatise against Marcion. Irenaeus, likewise, and Modestus,[1] who excels beyond

[1] Nothing more is known of Modestus, though Jerome appears to have been acquainted with his writings (*De vir. ill.* 32).

Digitized by Google

τὴν τοῦ ἀνδρὸς εἰς ἔκδηλον τοῖς πᾶσιν κατεφώρασε πλάνην, καὶ ἄλλοι δὲ πλείους, ὧν παρὰ πλείστοις τῶν ἀδελφῶν εἰς ἔτι νῦν οἱ πόνοι διαφυλάττονται.

XXVI. Ἐπὶ τῶνδε καὶ Μελίτων τῆς ἐν Σάρδεσιν 1
παροικίας ἐπίσκοπος Ἀπολινάριός τε τῆς ἐν Ἱεραπόλει διαπρεπῶς ἤκμαζον, οἳ καὶ τῷ δηλωθέντι κατὰ τοὺς χρόνους Ῥωμαίων βασιλεῖ λόγους ὑπὲρ τῆς πίστεως ἰδίως ἑκάτερος ἀπολογίας προσεφώνησαν. τούτων εἰς ἡμετέραν γνῶσιν 2
ἀφῖκται τὰ ὑποτεταγμένα· Μελίτωνος, τὰ Περὶ τοῦ πάσχα δύο καὶ τὸ Περὶ πολιτείας καὶ προφητῶν καὶ ὁ Περὶ ἐκκλησίας καὶ ὁ Περὶ κυριακῆς λόγος, ἔτι δὲ ὁ Περὶ πίστεως ἀνθρώπου καὶ ὁ Περὶ
Heb. 5, 14 πλάσεως, καὶ ὁ Περὶ ὑπακοῆς πίστεως [καὶ Περὶ] αἰσθητηρίων καὶ πρὸς τούτοις ὁ Περὶ ψυχῆς καὶ σώματος [ηνενοισ] καὶ ὁ Περὶ λουτροῦ καὶ Περὶ ἀληθείας καὶ Περὶ πίστεως καὶ γενέσεως Χριστοῦ καὶ λόγος αὐτοῦ προφητείας καὶ Περὶ ψυχῆς καὶ σώματος καὶ ὁ Περὶ φιλοξενίας καὶ ἡ Κλεὶς καὶ τὰ Περὶ τοῦ διαβόλου καὶ τῆς Ἀποκαλύψεως Ἰωάννου καὶ ὁ Περὶ ἐνσωμάτου θεοῦ, ἐπὶ πᾶσι καὶ τὸ Πρὸς Ἀντωνῖνον βιβλίδιον.

Ἐν μὲν οὖν τῷ Περὶ τοῦ πάσχα τὸν χρόνον καθ' 3
ὃν συνέταττεν, ἀρχόμενος σημαίνει ἐν τούτοις· "ἐπὶ Σερουιλλίου Παύλου ἀνθυπάτου τῆς Ἀσίας, ᾧ Σάγαρις καιρῷ ἐμαρτύρησεν, ἐγένετο ζήτησις

---

[1] Marcus Aurelius (A.D. 161-180).

[2] This conjecture seems necessary and was made by Rufinus and Jerome, but the words bracketed in Greek are omitted in all the Greek manuscripts.

[3] Some Greek manuscripts add "or mind" and others three words which make no sense. The most probable

Digitized by Google

the rest in exposing to everyone the man's error, did the same, and there are many others, too, whose works are still preserved among many Christians.

XXVI. In their time, too, Melito, bishop of the diocese of Sardis, and Apolinarius, bishop of Hierapolis, were at the height of their fame, and each addressed apologetic arguments of their own to the emperor[1] of the Romans of that day, who has been already mentioned. The following of their works have come to our knowledge. Of Melito two books *On the Passover*, a treatise *On Christian Life and the Prophets*, *On the Church*, and *On the Lord's Day*; besides these *On the Faith of Man*, and *On Creation*, and *On the Obedience of Faith*, and *On the Senses*[2]; besides these, *On the Soul and Body*,[3] and *On Baptism* and *Truth* and *Faith and Christ's Birth*,[4] and a treatise of his prophecy[5] and *On Soul and Body*, and *On Hospitality*, and the *Key*, and the books *On the Devil* and the *Apocalypse of John*, and *On God Incarnate*; above all, the little book *To Antoninus*.[6]

At the beginning of the book *On the Passover* he indicates the time at which he was composing it as follows: "In the time of Servillius Paulus,[7] proconsul, of Asia, at the time when Sagaris was martyred,

solution is that of M'Giffert who thinks that "or mind" is a gloss upon the word "soul."

[4] These appear to be the chapters of a single book.

[5] Such must be the meaning of the Greek, but a *περί* may have dropped out by accident. It is found in some MSS., but probably only as an emendation.

[6] *i.e.* Antoninus Verus, usually called Marcus Aurelius.

[7] Servilius Paulus is not known, but Rufinus emended the name to Sergius Paulus, who was consul for the second time in 168, and may have been proconsul of Asia about 164-166. See Waddington, *Fastes des provinces asiatiques*, and McGiffert's note *ad loc.*

Digitized by Google

πολλὴ ἐν Λαοδικείᾳ περὶ τοῦ πάσχα, ἐμπεσόντος
κατὰ καιρὸν ἐν ἐκείναις ταῖς ἡμέραις, καὶ ἐγράφη
ταῦτα." τούτου δὲ τοῦ λόγου μέμνηται Κλήμης 4
ὁ Ἀλεξανδρεὺς ἐν ἰδίῳ Περὶ τοῦ πάσχα λόγῳ, ὃν
ὡς ἐξ αἰτίας τῆς τοῦ Μελίτωνος γραφῆς φησιν
ἑαυτὸν συντάξαι. ἐν δὲ τῷ πρὸς τὸν αὐτοκράτορα 5
βιβλίῳ τοιαῦτά τινα καθ' ἡμῶν ἐπ' αὐτοῦ γεγονέναι
ἱστορεῖ· "τὸ γὰρ οὐδεπώποτε γενόμενον, νῦν
διώκεται τὸ τῶν θεοσεβῶν γένος καινοῖς ἐλαυ-
νόμενον δόγμασιν κατὰ τὴν Ἀσίαν. οἱ γὰρ ἀναι-
δεῖς συκοφάνται καὶ τῶν ἀλλοτρίων ἐρασταὶ τὴν
ἐκ τῶν διαταγμάτων ἔχοντες ἀφορμήν, φανερῶς
λῃστεύουσι, νύκτωρ καὶ μεθ' ἡμέραν διαρπάζοντες
τοὺς μηδὲν ἀδικοῦντας." καὶ μεθ' ἕτερά φησιν· 6
"καὶ εἰ μὲν σοῦ κελεύσαντος τοῦτο πράττεται,
ἔστω καλῶς γινόμενον· δίκαιος γὰρ βασιλεὺς οὐκ
ἂν ἀδίκως βουλεύσαιτο πώποτε, καὶ ἡμεῖς ἡδέως
φέρομεν τοῦ τοιούτου θανάτου τὸ γέρας· ταύτην
δέ σοι μόνην προσφέρομεν δέησιν ἵνα αὐτὸς
πρότερον ἐπιγνοὺς τοὺς τῆς τοιαύτης φιλονεικίας
ἐργάτας, δικαίως κρίνειας εἰ ἄξιοι θανάτου καὶ
τιμωρίας ἢ σωτηρίας καὶ ἡσυχίας εἰσίν. εἰ δὲ καὶ
παρὰ σοῦ μὴ εἴη ἡ βουλὴ αὕτη καὶ τὸ καινὸν τοῦτο
διάταγμα, ὃ μηδὲ κατὰ βαρβάρων πρέπει πολεμίων,
πολὺ μᾶλλον δεόμεθά σου μὴ περιιδεῖν ἡμᾶς ἐν
τοιαύτῃ δημώδει λεηλασίᾳ." τούτοις αὖθις ἐπι- 7
φέρει λέγων· "ἡ γὰρ καθ' ἡμᾶς φιλοσοφία πρό-
τερον μὲν ἐν βαρβάροις ἤκμασεν, ἐπανθήσασα δὲ
τοῖς σοῖς ἔθνέσιν κατὰ τὴν Αὐγούστου τοῦ σοῦ
προγόνου μεγάλην ἀρχήν, ἐγενήθη μάλιστα τῇ
σῇ βασιλείᾳ αἴσιον ἀγαθόν. ἔκτοτε γὰρ εἰς μέγα
καὶ λαμπρὸν τὸ Ῥωμαίων ηὐξήθη κράτος· οὗ σὺ

Digitized by Google

there was a great discussion about the Passover, which fell according to the season in those days, and this was written." Clement of Alexandria quotes this treatise in his own *On the Passover*, which he says that he compiled in consequence of the writing of Melito. And in the book to the emperor he relates that in his time we were treated as follows: "It has never before happened as it is now that the race of the religious should be persecuted and driven about by new decrees throughout Asia. For shameless informers and lovers of other people's property have taken advantage of the decrees, and pillage us openly, harrying night and day those who have done nothing wrong." And after other points he says: "And if this is done as your command, let it be assumed that it is well done, for no righteous king would ever have an unrighteous policy, and we gladly bear the honour of such death. But we submit to you this single request, that you will first take cognizance yourself of the authors of such strife, and judge righteously whether they are worthy of death and punishment, or of acquittal and immunity. But, if it be not from you that there comes this counsel and this new decree (and it would be improper even against barbarian enemies), we beseech you all the more not to neglect us in this brigandage by a mob." He then continues as follows: "Our philosophy first grew up among the barbarians, but its full flower came among your nation in the great reign of your ancestor Augustus, and became an omen of good to your empire, for from that time the power of the Romans became great and splendid. You are now his

Digitized by Google

διάδοχος εὐκταῖος γέγονάς τε καὶ ἔσῃ μετὰ τοῦ παιδός, φυλάσσων τῆς βασιλείας τὴν σύντροφον καὶ συναρξαμένην Αὐγούστῳ φιλοσοφίαν, ἣν καὶ οἱ πρόγονοί σου πρὸς ταῖς ἄλλαις θρησκείαις ἐτίμησαν, καὶ τοῦτο μέγιστον τεκμήριον τοῦ πρὸς ἀγαθοῦ τὸν καθ' ἡμᾶς λόγον συνακμάσαι τῇ 8
καλῶς ἀρξαμένῃ βασιλείᾳ, ἐκ τοῦ μηδὲν φαῦλον ἀπὸ τῆς Αὐγούστου ἀρχῆς ἀπαντῆσαι, ἀλλὰ τοὐναντίον ἅπαντα λαμπρὰ καὶ ἔνδοξα κατὰ τὰς πάντων εὐχάς. μόνοι πάντων, ἀναπεισθέντες ὑπό 9
τινων βασκάνων ἀνθρώπων, τὸν καθ' ἡμᾶς ἐν διαβολῇ καταστῆσαι λόγον ἠθέλησαν Νέρων καὶ Δομετιανός, ἀφ' ὧν καὶ τὸ τῆς συκοφαντίας ἀλόγῳ συνηθείᾳ περὶ τοὺς τοιούτους ῥυῆναι συμβέβηκεν ψεῦδος· ἀλλὰ τὴν ἐκείνων ἄγνοιαν οἱ σοὶ εὐσεβεῖς 10
πατέρες ἐπηνωρθώσαντο, πολλάκις πολλοῖς ἐπιπλήξαντες ἐγγράφως, ὅσοι περὶ τούτων νεωτερίσαι ἐτόλμησαν· ἐν οἷς ὁ μὲν πάππος σου Ἀδριανὸς πολλοῖς μὲν καὶ ἄλλοις, καὶ Φουνδανῷ δὲ τῷ ἀνθυπάτῳ, ἡγουμένῳ δὲ τῆς Ἀσίας, γράφων φαίνεται, ὁ δὲ πατήρ σου, καὶ σοῦ τὰ σύμπαντα διοικοῦντος αὐτῷ, ταῖς πόλεσι περὶ τοῦ μηδὲν νεωτερίζειν περὶ ἡμῶν ἔγραψεν, ἐν οἷς καὶ πρὸς Λαρισαίους καὶ πρὸς Θεσσαλονικεῖς καὶ Ἀθη- 11
ναίους καὶ πρὸς πάντας Ἕλληνας. σὲ δὲ καὶ μᾶλλον περὶ τούτων τὴν αὐτὴν ἐκείνοις ἔχοντα γνώμην καὶ πολύ γε φιλανθρωποτέραν καὶ φιλοσοφωτέραν, πεπείσμεθα πάντα πράσσειν ὅσα σου δεόμεθα."

Ἀλλὰ ταῦτα μὲν ἐν τῷ δηλωθέντι τέθειται 12
λόγῳ· ἐν δὲ ταῖς γραφείσαις αὐτῷ Ἐκλογαῖς ὁ

Digitized by Google

happy successor, and shall be so along with your son,[1] if you protect the philosophy which grew up with the empire and began with Augustus. Your ancestors nourished it together with the other cults, and the greatest proof that our doctrine flourished for good along with the empire in its noble beginning is the fact that it met no evil in the reign of Augustus, but on the contrary everything splendid and glorious according to the wishes of all men.[2] The only emperors who were ever persuaded by malicious men to slander our teaching were Nero and Domitian, and from them arose the lie, and the unreasonable custom of falsely accusing Christians. But their ignorance was corrected by your pious fathers, who wrote many rebukes to many, whenever any dared to take new measures against Christians. Your grandfather Hadrian shows this in his letters to many, and especially to the proconsul Fundanus, the governor of Asia, and your father, while you were joined with him[3] in the administration of the world, wrote to the cities that no new measures should be taken concerning us. Among these are letters to the Larisians and to the Thessalonians and the Athenians and to all the Greeks. Since you hold the same opinion about them and, indeed, one which is far kinder and more philosophic, we are persuaded of your doing all which we beg of you."

These words are found in the treatise quoted, but in the *Extracts* which he wrote the same writer begins

[1] The Emperor and his son are Marcus Aurelius and his son the Emperor Commodus.

[2] The defect in this argument is that Augustus was dead some time before the foundation of the Christian church.

[3] Translating Wilamowitz's emendation συνδιοικοῦντος, which must be right for Melito, even if not for Eusebius.

Digitized by Google

αὐτὸς κατὰ τὸ προοίμιον ἀρχόμενος τῶν ὁμολογουμένων τῆς παλαιᾶς διαθήκης γραφῶν ποιεῖται κατάλογον· ὃν καὶ ἀναγκαῖον ἐνταῦθα καταλέξαι, γράφει δὲ οὕτως· "Μελίτων Ὀνησίμῳ τῷ ἀδελφῷ 13
χαίρειν. ἐπειδὴ πολλάκις ἠξίωσας, σπουδῇ τῇ πρὸς τὸν λόγον χρώμενος, γενέσθαι σοι ἐκλογὰς ἔκ τε τοῦ νόμου καὶ τῶν προφητῶν περὶ τοῦ σωτῆρος καὶ πάσης τῆς πίστεως ἡμῶν, ἔτι δὲ καὶ μαθεῖν τὴν τῶν παλαιῶν βιβλίων ἐβουλήθης ἀκρίβειαν πόσα τὸν ἀριθμὸν καὶ ὁποῖα τὴν τάξιν εἶεν, ἐσπούδασα τὸ τοιοῦτο πρᾶξαι, ἐπιστάμενός σου τὸ σπουδαῖον περὶ τὴν πίστιν καὶ φιλομαθὲς περὶ τὸν λόγον ὅτι τε μάλιστα πάντων πόθῳ τῷ πρὸς τὸν θεὸν ταῦτα προκρίνεις, περὶ τῆς αἰωνίου σωτηρίας ἀγωνιζόμενος. ἀνελθὼν οὖν εἰς τὴν 14
ἀνατολὴν καὶ ἕως τοῦ τόπου γενόμενος ἔνθα ἐκηρύχθη καὶ ἐπράχθη, καὶ ἀκριβῶς μαθὼν τὰ τῆς παλαιᾶς διαθήκης βιβλία, ὑποτάξας ἔπεμψά σοι· ὧν ἐστι τὰ ὀνόματα· Μωυσέως πέντε, Γένεσις Ἔξοδος Ἀριθμοὶ Λευιτικὸν Δευτερονόμιον, Ἰησοῦς Ναυῆ, Κριταί, Ῥούθ, Βασιλειῶν τέσσαρα, Παραλειπομένων δύο, Ψαλμῶν Δαυίδ, Σολομῶνος Παροιμίαι ἡ καὶ Σοφία, Ἐκκλησιαστής, Ἆισμα Ἀισμάτων, Ἰώβ, Προφητῶν Ἡσαΐου Ἱερεμίου τῶν δώδεκα ἐν μονοβίβλῳ Δανιήλ, Ἰεζεκιήλ, Ἔσδρας· ἐξ ὧν καὶ τὰς ἐκλογὰς ἐποιησάμην, εἰς ἓξ βιβλία διελών." καὶ τὰ μὲν τοῦ Μελίτωνος τοσαῦτα.

XXVII. Τοῦ δ' Ἀπολιναρίου πολλῶν παρὰ 1
πολλοῖς σῳζομένων τὰ εἰς ἡμᾶς ἐλθόντα ἐστὶν τάδε· λόγος ὁ πρὸς τὸν προειρημένον βασιλέα καὶ Πρὸς Ἕλληνας συγγράμματα πέντε καὶ Περὶ ἀληθείας

Digitized by Google

in his preface by making a list of the recognized scriptures of the Old Testament, which it is necessary to enumerate here, and he writes as follows : " Melito to Onesimus his brother, greeting. Since you often desired, in your zeal for the true word, to have extracts from the Law and the Prophets concerning the Saviour, and concerning all our faith, and, moreover, since you wished to know the accurate facts about the ancient writings, how many they are in number, and what is their order, I have taken pains to do thus, for I know your zeal for the faith and interest in the word, and that in your struggle for eternal salvation you esteem these things more highly than all else in your love towards God. Accordingly when I came to the east and reached the place where these things were preached and done, and learnt accurately the books of the Old Testament, I set down the facts and sent them to you. These are their names : five books of Moses, Genesis, Exodus, Numbers, Leviticus, Deuteronomy, Joshua the son of Nun, Judges, Ruth, four books of Kingdoms, two books of Chronicles, the Psalms of David, the Proverbs of Solomon and his Wisdom, Ecclesiastes, the Song of Songs, Job, the prophets Isaiah, Jeremiah, the Twelve in a single book, Daniel, Ezekiel, Ezra. From these I have made extracts and compiled them in six books." Such are the facts about Melito.

XXVII. Of the many writings of Apolinarius which have been widely preserved the following have reached us : A treatise to the above mentioned emperor,[1] five books *Against the Greeks*, and books one and two *On the Truth*, one and two *Against the*

[1] Marcus Aurelius.

Digitized by Google

α′ β′ καὶ Πρὸς Ἰουδαίους α′ β′ καὶ ἃ μετὰ ταῦτα συνέγραψε κατὰ τῆς τῶν Φρυγῶν αἱρέσεως, μετ' οὐ πολὺν καινοτομηθείσης χρόνον, τότε γε μὴν ὥσπερ ἐκφύειν ἀρχομένης, ἔτι τοῦ Μοντανοῦ ἅμα ταῖς αὐτοῦ ψευδοπροφήτισιν ἀρχὰς τῆς παρεκτροπῆς ποιουμένου.

XXVIII. Καὶ Μουσανοῦ δέ, ὃν ἐν τοῖς φθάσασιν 1
κατελέξαμεν, φέρεταί τις ἐπιστρεπτικώτατος λόγος, πρός τινας αὐτῷ γραφεὶς ἀδελφοὺς ἀποκλίναντας ἐπὶ τὴν τῶν λεγομένων Ἐγκρατιτῶν αἵρεσιν, ἄρτι τότε φύειν ἀρχομένην ξένην τε καὶ φθοριμαίαν ψευδοδοξίαν εἰσάγουσαν τῷ βίῳ· XXIX. ἧς παρεκ- 1
τροπῆς ἀρχηγὸν καταστῆναι Τατιανὸν λόγος ἔχει, οὗ μικρῷ πρόσθεν τὰς περὶ τοῦ θαυμασίου Ἰουστίνου παρατεθείμεθα λέξεις, μαθητὴν αὐτὸν ἱστοροῦντες τοῦ μάρτυρος. δηλοῖ δὲ τοῦτο Εἰρηναῖος ἐν τῷ πρώτῳ τῶν Πρὸς τὰς αἱρέσεις, ὁμοῦ τά τε περὶ αὐτοῦ καὶ τῆς κατ' αὐτὸν αἱρέσεως οὕτω γράφων·

Iren. 1, 28, 1 "ἀπὸ Σατορνίνου καὶ Μαρκίωνος οἱ καλούμενοι 2
Ἐγκρατεῖς ἀγαμίαν ἐκήρυξαν, ἀθετοῦντες τὴν ἀρχαίαν πλάσιν τοῦ θεοῦ καὶ ἠρέμα κατηγοροῦντες τοῦ ἄρρεν καὶ θῆλυ εἰς γένεσιν ἀνθρώπων πεποιηκότος, καὶ τῶν λεγομένων παρ' αὐτοῖς ἐμψύχων ἀποχὴν εἰσηγήσαντο, ἀχαριστοῦντες τῷ πάντα πεποιηκότι θεῷ, ἀντιλέγουσί τε τῇ τοῦ πρωτοπλάστου σωτηρίᾳ. καὶ τοῦτο νῦν ἐξευρέθη παρ' 3
αὐτοῖς Τατιανοῦ τινος πρώτως ταύτην εἰσενέγκαντος τὴν βλασφημίαν· ὃς Ἰουστίνου ἀκροατὴς γεγονώς, ἐφ' ὅσον μὲν συνῆν ἐκείνῳ, οὐδὲν ἐξέφηνεν τοιοῦτον, μετὰ δὲ τὴν ἐκείνου μαρτυρίαν

[1] See book v. 14-19 (pp. 470-94)
[2] Their name was derived from the Greek ἐγκράτεια,

Digitized by Google

Jews, and after this the treatises which he wrote against the heresy of the Phrygians, which had begun its innovations not long before and was then, as it were, beginning to sprout, while Montanus with his false prophetesses[1] was making the beginnings of the error.

XXVIII. And of Musanus, whom we have mentioned in a previous passage, there is extant a certain very eloquent discourse which he wrote to some Christians who had fallen away to the heresy of the so-called Encratites,[2] which was at that time just beginning to sprout and to introduce into life its strange and corrupting false doctrine. XXIX. The story goes that Tatian was the author of this error, whose words we quoted a little above concerning the marvellous Justin, and related that he was a disciple of the martyr. Irenaeus states this in his first book, *Against the Heresies*, and in the same place writes thus concerning him and his heresy. "The so-called Encratites proceeding from Saturninus and Marcion preached against marriage, annulling the original creation of God, and tacitly condemning him who made male and female. They also introduced abstention from what they called 'animate' things in ingratitude to the God who has made all things, and they deny the salvation of the first created man. This innovation was recently made by them when a certain Tatian first introduced this blasphemy. He had been a hearer of Justin but so long as he was with him, he produced nothing of this kind, but after the martyrdom of Justin he left the church, being

"continence," and they seem to have preached an ascetic doctrine somewhat resembling that of the later Manichaeans.

Digitized by Google

ἀποστὰς τῆς ἐκκλησίας, οἰήματι διδασκάλου ἐπαρθεὶς καὶ τυφωθεὶς ὡς διαφέρων τῶν λοιπῶν, ἴδιον χαρακτῆρα διδασκαλείου συνεστήσατο, αἰῶνάς τινας ἀοράτους ὁμοίως τοῖς ἀπὸ Οὐαλεντίνου μυθολογήσας γάμον τε φθορὰν καὶ πορνείαν παραπλησίως Μαρκίωνι καὶ Σατορνίνῳ ἀναγορεύσας, τῇ δὲ τοῦ Ἀδὰμ σωτηρίᾳ παρ' ἑαυτοῦ τὴν ἀντιλογίαν ποιησάμενος." ταῦτα μὲν ὁ Εἰρηναῖος 4
τότε· σμικρῷ δὲ ὕστερον Σευῆρός τις τοὔνομα κρατύνας τὴν προδεδηλωμένην αἵρεσιν, αἴτιος τοῖς ἐξ αὐτῆς ὡρμημένοις τῆς ἀπ' αὐτοῦ παρηγμένης Σευηριανῶν προσηγορίας γέγονεν. χρῶνται μὲν 5
οὖν οὗτοι νόμῳ καὶ προφήταις καὶ εὐαγγελίοις, ἰδίως ἑρμηνεύοντες τῶν ἱερῶν τὰ νοήματα γραφῶν· βλασφημοῦντες δὲ Παῦλον τὸν ἀπόστολον, ἀθετοῦσιν αὐτοῦ τὰς ἐπιστολάς, μηδὲ τὰς Πράξεις τῶν ἀποστόλων καταδεχόμενοι. ὁ μέντοι γε πρό- 6
τερος αὐτῶν ἀρχηγὸς ὁ Τατιανὸς συνάφειάν τινα καὶ συναγωγὴν οὐκ οἶδ' ὅπως τῶν εὐαγγελίων συνθείς, Τὸ διὰ τεσσάρων τοῦτο προσωνόμασεν, ὃ καὶ παρά τισιν εἰς ἔτι νῦν φέρεται· τοῦ δ' ἀποστόλου φασὶ τολμῆσαί τινας αὐτὸν μεταφράσαι φωνάς, ὡς ἐπιδιορθούμενον αὐτῶν τὴν τῆς φράσεως σύνταξιν. καταλέλοιπεν δὲ οὗτος πολύ τι πλῆθος 7
συγγραμμάτων, ὧν μάλιστα παρὰ πολλοῖς μνημονεύεται διαβόητος αὐτοῦ λόγος ὁ Πρὸς Ἕλληνας, ἐν ᾧ καὶ τῶν ἀνέκαθεν χρόνων μνημονεύσας, τῶν παρ' Ἕλλησιν εὐδοκίμων ἁπάντων προγενέστερον Μωυσέα τε καὶ τοὺς Ἑβραίων προφήτας ἀπέφηνεν· ὃς δὴ καὶ δοκεῖ τῶν συγγραμμάτων ἁπάντων αὐτοῦ κάλλιστός τε καὶ ὠφελιμώτατος ὑπάρχειν. καὶ τὰ μὲν κατὰ τούσδε τοιαῦτα ἦν.

Digitized by Google

exalted by the idea of becoming a teacher and puffed up as superior to others. He established his own type of doctrine, telling stories of invisible Aeons, like the followers of Valentinus, and rejecting marriage as corruption and fornication similarly to Marcion and Saturninus. And as his own contribution he denied the salvation of Adam." Irenaeus wrote thus at that time. But a little later a certain man named Severus strengthened the above mentioned heresy, and is the reason why those who have sprung from it obtained the name of Severiani from him. These indeed use the Law and the Prophets and the Gospels, though they interpret the facts of the sacred scriptures in their own way, but they blaspheme the Apostle Paul, and reject his epistles and do not receive the Acts of the Apostles. Their former leader Tatian composed in some way a combination and collection of the gospels, and gave this the name of *The Diatessaron*,[1] and this is still extant in some places. And they say that he ventured to paraphrase some words of the apostle, as though correcting their style. He has left a great number of writings, of which the most famous, quoted by many, is his discourse *Against the Greeks*. In it he deals with primitive history, and shows that Moses and the prophets of the Hebrews preceded all those who are celebrated among the Greeks. This seems to be the best and most helpful of all his writings. Such are the facts of this period.

[1] See Introduction, p. lii.

Digitized by Google

XXX. Ἐπὶ δὲ τῆς αὐτῆς βασιλείας, πληθυουσῶν 1
τῶν αἱρέσεων ἐπὶ τῆς Μέσης τῶν ποταμῶν, Βαρδησάνης, ἱκανώτατός τις ἀνὴρ ἔν τε τῇ Σύρων φωνῇ διαλεκτικώτατος, πρὸς τοὺς κατὰ Μαρκίωνα καὶ τινας ἑτέρους διαφόρων προϊσταμένους δογμάτων διαλόγους συστησάμενος τῇ οἰκείᾳ παρέδωκεν γλώττῃ τε καὶ γραφῇ μετὰ καὶ πλείστων ἑτέρων αὐτοῦ συγγραμμάτων· οὓς οἱ γνώριμοι (πλεῖστοι δὲ ἦσαν αὐτῷ δυνατῶς τῷ λόγῳ παρισταμένῳ) ἐπὶ τὴν Ἑλλήνων ἀπὸ τῆς Σύρων μεταβεβλήκασι φωνῆς· ἐν οἷς ἐστιν καὶ ὁ πρὸς Ἀντωνῖνον ἱκανώ- 2
τατος αὐτοῦ Περὶ εἱμαρμένης διάλογος ὅσα τε ἄλλα φασὶν αὐτὸν προφάσει τοῦ τότε διωγμοῦ συγγράψαι. ἦν δ' οὗτος πρότερον τῆς κατὰ 3
Οὐαλεντῖνον σχολῆς, καταγνοὺς δὲ ταύτης πλεῖστά τε τῆς κατὰ τοῦτον μυθοποιίας ἀπελέγξας, ἐδόκει μέν πως αὐτὸς ἑαυτῷ ἐπὶ τὴν ὀρθοτέραν γνώμην μετατεθεῖσθαι, οὐ μὴν καὶ παντελῶς γε ἀπερρύψατο τὸν τῆς παλαιᾶς αἱρέσεως ῥύπον.

Ἐν τούτῳ γε μὴν καὶ ὁ τῆς Ῥωμαίων ἐκκλησίας ἐπίσκοπος Σωτὴρ τελευτᾷ.

Digitized by Google

XXX. In the same reign heresies increased in Mesopotamia, and Bardesanes, a most able man and skilled in Syriac, composed dialogues against the Marcionites and other leaders of various opinions, and he issued them in his own language and script, together with many other of his writings. Those who knew them, and they were many, for he was a powerful arguer, have translated them from Syriac into Greek. Among them is his very powerful dialogue with Antoninus *Concerning Fate*, and they say that he wrote many other works in consequence of the persecution of that time. He had been first a member of the Valentinians, but condemned this school and refuted many of their fables, and himself thought that he had changed to orthodox opinion, but in fact he did not completely clean off the filth of his ancient heresy.

At this time Soter, bishop of Rome, died.

Digitized by Google

Ε̄

Τάδε καὶ ἡ πέμπτη περιέχει βίβλος τῆς Ἐκκλησιαστικῆς ἱστορίας

Α̅ Ὅσοι καὶ ὅπως κατὰ Οὐῆρον ἐπὶ τῆς Γαλλίας τὸν ὑπὲρ τῆς εὐσεβείας διεξῆλθον ἀγῶνα.

Β̅ Ὡς οἱ θεοφιλεῖς μάρτυρες τοὺς ἐν τῷ διωγμῷ διαπεπτωκότας ἐθεράπευον δεξιούμενοι.

Γ̅ Ὁποία τῷ μάρτυρι Ἀττάλῳ δι' ὀνείρου γέγονεν ἐπιφάνεια.

Δ̅ Ὅπως οἱ μάρτυρες τὸν Εἰρηναῖον δι' ἐπιστολῆς παρετίθεντο.

Ε̅ Ὡς Μάρκῳ Αὐρηλίῳ Καίσαρι ταῖς τῶν ἡμετέρων εὐχαῖς οὐρανόθεν ὁ θεὸς ἐπακούσας ὕσεν.

Ϛ̅ Τῶν ἐπὶ Ῥώμης ἐπισκοπευσάντων κατάλογος.

Ζ̅ Ὡς καὶ μέχρι τῶν τότε καιρῶν διὰ τῶν πιστῶν δυνάμεις ἐνηργοῦντο παράδοξοι.

Η̅ Ὅπως ὁ Εἰρηναῖος τῶν θείων μνημονεύει γραφῶν.

Θ̅ Οἱ κατὰ Κόμοδον ἐπισκοπεύσαντες.

Ι̅ Περὶ Πανταίνου τοῦ φιλοσόφου.

ΙΑ̅ Περὶ Κλήμεντος τοῦ Ἀλεξανδρέως.

ΙΒ̅ Περὶ τῶν ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις ἐπισκόπων.

ΙΓ̅ Περὶ Ῥόδωνος καὶ ἧς ἐμνημόνευσεν κατὰ Μαρκίωνα διαφωνίας.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS OF BOOK V

The contents of the fifth book of the History of the Church are as follows :

I. The number and behaviour of those who in the time of Verus underwent in Gaul the struggle for religion.

II. How the martyrs, beloved of God, gave the hand of fellowship and healing to those who had fallen in the persecution.

III. The vision which appeared in a dream to the martyr Attalus.

IV. How the martyrs commended Irenaeus by a letter.

V. How God sent rain from heaven to Marcus Aurelius Caesar in response to the prayers of the Christians.

VI. The list of those who were bishops in Rome.

VII. How even until those times strange miracles were wrought by the faithful.

VIII. How Irenaeus quotes the divine Scriptures.

IX. Those who were bishops under Commodus.

X. On Pantaenus the philosopher.

XI. On Clement of Alexandria.

XII. On the bishops in Jerusalem.

XIII. On Rhodo and the dissensions which he mentions among the Marcionites.

Digitized by Google

ΙΔ Περὶ τῶν κατὰ Φρύγας ψευδοπροφητῶν.
ΙΕ Περὶ τοῦ κατὰ Βλάστον ἐπὶ Ῥώμης γενομένου σχίσματος.
ΙϚ Ὅσα περὶ Μοντανοῦ καὶ τῶν μετ' αὐτοῦ ψευδοπροφητῶν μνημονεύεται.
ΙΖ Περὶ Μιλτιάδου καὶ ὧν συνέταξε λόγων.
ΙΗ Ὅσα καὶ Ἀπολλώνιος τοὺς κατὰ Φρύγας ἀπήλεγξεν καὶ τίνων ἐμνημόνευσεν.
ΙΘ Σεραπίωνος περὶ τῆς τῶν Φρυγῶν αἱρέσεως.
Κ Ὅσα Εἰρηναῖος τοῖς ἐπὶ Ῥώμης σχισματικοῖς ἐγγράφως διείλεκται.
ΚΑ Ὅπως ἐπὶ Ῥώμης Ἀπολλώνιος ἐμαρτύρησεν.
ΚΒ Τίνες κατὰ τούτους ἐπίσκοποι ἐγνωρίζοντο.
ΚΓ Περὶ τοῦ τότε κινηθέντος ἀμφὶ τοῦ πάσχα ζητήματος.
ΚΔ Περὶ τῆς κατὰ τὴν Ἀσίαν διαφωνίας.
ΚΕ Ὅπως τοῖς πᾶσι μία ψῆφος περὶ τοῦ πάσχα συνεφωνήθη.
ΚϚ Ὅσα τῆς Εἰρηναίου φιλοκαλίας καὶ εἰς ἡμᾶς κατῆλθεν.
ΚΖ Ὅσα καὶ τῶν λοιπῶν τῶν τηνικάδε συνηκμακότων.
ΚΗ Περὶ τῶν τὴν Ἀρτέμωνος αἵρεσιν ἐξ ἀρχῆς προβεβλημένων οἵοί τε τὸν τρόπον γεγόνασιν καὶ ὅπως τὰς ἁγίας γραφὰς διαφθεῖραι τετολμήκασιν.

Digitized by Google

XIV. On the Montanist [1] false prophets.
XV. About the schism at Rome under Blastus.
XVI. The tradition concerning Montanus and those who were false prophets together with him.
XVII. On Miltiades and the treatises which he composed.
XVIII. How Apollonius also refuted the Montanists and the quotations which he made.
XIX. Of Serapion on Montanism.
XX. The discussions of Irenaeus in writing with the schismatics at Rome.
XXI. How Apollonius was martyred in Rome.
XXII. What bishops were famous in these times.
XXIII. On the paschal controversy which was then active.
XXIV. On the division in Asia.
XXV. How unanimous decision was reached concerning Easter.
XXVI. How much of the eloquent work of Irenaeus has come down to us.
XXVII. How much also of the others who flourished with him at that time.
XXVIII. On those who at the beginning put forward the heresy of Artemon, what manner of men they were, and how they have dared to corrupt the holy Scriptures.

[1] Literally "Among Phrygians" but this is one of the usual names of the Montanists, and passed into Latin as "Catafrygae."

Digitized by Google

E

'Ο μὲν οὖν τῆς 'Ρωμαίων ἐκκλησίας ἐπίσκοπος 1
Σωτὴρ ἐπὶ ὄγδοον ἔτος ἡγησάμενος τελευτᾷ τὸν
βίον· τοῦτον δωδέκατος ἀπὸ τῶν ἀποστόλων
'Ελεύθερος διαδέχεται, ἔτος δ' ἦν ἑπτακαιδέκατον
αὐτοκράτορος 'Αντωνίνου Οὐήρου· ἐν ᾧ κατά τινα
μέρη τῆς γῆς σφοδρότερον ἀναρριπισθέντος τοῦ
καθ' ἡμῶν διωγμοῦ, ἐξ ἐπιθέσεως τῶν κατὰ πόλεις
δήμων μυριάδας μαρτύρων διαπρέψαι στοχασμῷ
λαβεῖν ἔνεστιν ἀπὸ τῶν καθ' ἓν ἔθνος συμβεβη-
κότων, ἃ καὶ γραφῇ τοῖς μετέπειτα παραδοθῆναι,
ἀλήστου μνήμης ὡς ἀληθῶς ἐπάξια ὄντα, συμ-
βέβηκεν. τῆς μὲν οὖν περὶ τούτων ἐντελεστάτης 2
ὑφηγήσεως τὸ πᾶν σύγγραμμα τῇ τῶν μαρτύρων
ἡμῖν κατατέτακται συναγωγῇ, οὐχ ἱστορικὴν αὐτὸ
μόνον, ἀλλὰ καὶ διδασκαλικὴν περιέχον διήγησιν·
ὁπόσα γέ τοι τῆς παρούσης ἔχοιτο πραγματείας,
ταῦτ' ἐπὶ τοῦ παρόντος ἀναλεξάμενος παραθήσομαι.
ἄλλοι μὲν οὖν ἱστορικὰς ποιούμενοι διηγήσεις, 3
πάντως ἂν παρέδωκαν τῇ γραφῇ πολέμων νίκας
καὶ τρόπαια κατ' ἐχθρῶν στρατηγῶν τε ἀριστείας
καὶ ὁπλιτῶν ἀνδραγαθίας, αἵματι καὶ μυρίοις
φόνοις παίδων καὶ πατρίδος καὶ τῆς ἄλλης ἕνεκεν
περιουσίας μιανθέντων· ὁ δέ γε τοῦ κατὰ θεὸν 4

Digitized by Google

BOOK V

SOTER, the bishop of the church of Rome, ended his life in the eighth year of his rule. To him succeeded Eleutherus, the twelfth from the apostles, and it was the seventeenth year of the Emperor Antoninus Verus.[1] In this time the persecution of us in some parts of the world was rekindled more violently by popular violence in the cities, and, to judge from the events in one nation, myriads were distinguished by martyrdom. The story has chanced to be handed down in writing for posterity, and it is truly worthy of unceasing remembrance. Since the whole record of its complete treatment has been embodied in our collection of martyrs,[2] and contains not merely the narrative itself but also an exposition of doctrine, I will at present select and quote merely such points as belong to the present undertaking. Other writers of historical works have confined themselves to the written tradition of victories in wars, of triumphs over enemies, of the exploits of generals and the valour of soldiers, men stained with blood and with countless murders for the sake of children and country and other possessions; but it is wars most peaceful,

[1] That is, Marcus Aurelius. His seventeenth year was A.D. 177.

[2] That is, the *Acts of the Martyrs* which Eusebius collected. See Introduction, p. xxiii.

Digitized by Google

πολιτεύματος διηγηματικὸς ἡμῖν λόγος τοὺς ὑπὲρ αὐτῆς τῆς κατὰ ψυχὴν εἰρήνης εἰρηνικωτάτους πολέμους καὶ τοὺς ἐν τούτοις ὑπὲρ ἀληθείας μᾶλλον ἢ πατρίδος καὶ μᾶλλον ὑπὲρ εὐσεβείας ἢ τῶν φιλτάτων ἀνδρισαμένους αἰωνίαις ἀναγράψεται στήλαις, τῶν εὐσεβείας ἀθλητῶν τὰς ἐνστάσεις καὶ τὰς πολυτλήτους ἀνδρείας τρόπαιά τε τὰ κατὰ δαιμόνων καὶ νίκας τὰς κατὰ τῶν ἀοράτων ἀντιπάλων καὶ τοὺς ἐπὶ πᾶσι τούτοις στεφάνους εἰς αἰώνιον μνήμην ἀνακηρύττων.

I. Γαλλία μὲν οὖν ἡ χώρα ἦν, καθ' ἣν τὸ τῶν 1
δηλουμένων συνεκροτεῖτο στάδιον, ἧς μητροπόλεις ἐπίσημοι καὶ παρὰ τὰς ἄλλας τῶν αὐτόθι διαφέρουσαι βεβόηνται Λούγδουνος καὶ Βίεννα, δι' ὧν ἀμφοτέρων τὴν ἅπασαν χώραν πολλῷ τῷ ῥεύματι περιρρέων ὁ Ῥοδανὸς ποταμὸς διέξεισιν. τὴν 2
οὖν περὶ τῶν μαρτύρων γραφὴν αἵ τῇδε διαφανέσταται ἐκκλησίαι ταῖς κατὰ τὴν Ἀσίαν καὶ Φρυγίαν διαπέμπονται, τὰ παρ' αὐταῖς πραχθέντα τοῦτον ἀνιστοροῦσαι τὸν τρόπον, παραθήσομαι 3
δὲ τὰς αὐτῶν φωνάς· "οἱ ἐν Βιέννῃ καὶ Λουγδούνῳ τῆς Γαλλίας παροικοῦντες δοῦλοι Χριστοῦ τοῖς κατὰ τὴν Ἀσίαν καὶ Φρυγίαν τὴν αὐτὴν τῆς ἀπολυτρώσεως ἡμῖν πίστιν καὶ ἐλπίδα ἔχουσιν ἀδελφοῖς· εἰρήνη καὶ χάρις καὶ δόξα ἀπὸ θεοῦ πατρὸς καὶ Χριστοῦ Ἰησοῦ τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν."

Εἶτα τούτοις ἑξῆς ἕτερα προοιμιασάμενοι, τὴν 4
τοῦ λόγου καταρχὴν ποιοῦνται ἐν τούτοις· "τὸ μὲν οὖν μέγεθος τῆς ἐνθάδε θλίψεως καὶ τὴν τοσαύτην τῶν ἐθνῶν εἰς τοὺς ἁγίους ὀργὴν καὶ ὅσα ὑπέμειναν οἱ μακάριοι μάρτυρες, ἐπ' ἀκριβὲς οὔθ' ἡμεῖς εἰπεῖν ἱκανοὶ οὔτε μὴν γραφῇ περιληφθῆναι

Digitized by Google

waged for the very peace of the soul, and men who therein have been valiant for truth rather than for country, and for piety rather than for their dear ones, that our record of those who order their lives according to God will inscribe on everlasting monuments: it is the struggles of the athletes of piety and their valour which braved so much, trophies won from demons, and victories against unseen adversaries, and the crowns at the end of all, that it will proclaim for everlasting remembrance.

I. Gaul was the country in which was prepared the stage for these events. Its capital cities, famous and more renowned than the others in the district, were Lyons and Vienne, through both of which passes the river Rhone, flowing in an ample stream through the whole district. The distinguished churches of this country sent the document about the martyrs to the churches in Asia and Phrygia, in this way recording what happened among them, and I will quote their words: "The servants sojourning in Vienne and Lyons in Gaul to the brethren in Asia and Phrygia, who have the same faith and hope of redemption as you. Peace, grace, and glory from God the Father and Jesus Christ, our Lord."

Then after other prefatory remarks they begin their narrative thus: "The greatness of the persecution here, and the terrible rage of the heathen against the saints, and the suffering of the blessed martyrs, are more than we can narrate accurately, nor can they be put down in writing. For with all

Digitized by Google

δυνατόν. παντὶ γὰρ σθένει ἐνέσκηψεν ὁ ἀντικεί- 5
μενος, προοιμιαζόμενος ἤδη τὴν ἀδεῶς μέλλουσαν
ἔσεσθαι παρουσίαν αὐτοῦ, καὶ διὰ πάντων διῆλθεν,
ἐθίζων τοὺς ἑαυτοῦ καὶ προγυμνάζων κατὰ τῶν
δούλων τοῦ θεοῦ, ὥστε μὴ μόνον οἰκιῶν καὶ
βαλανείων καὶ ἀγορᾶς εἴργεσθαι, ἀλλὰ καὶ τὸ
καθόλου φαίνεσθαι ἡμῶν τινα αὐτοῖς ἀπειρῆσθαι
ἐν ὁποίῳ δήποτε τόπῳ. ἀντεστρατήγει δὲ ἡ 6
χάρις τοῦ θεοῦ, καὶ τοὺς μὲν ἀσθενεῖς ἐρρύετο,
1 Tim. 3, 15 ἀντιπαρέτασσε δὲ στύλους ἑδραίους δυναμένους
διὰ τῆς ὑπομονῆς πᾶσαν τὴν ὁρμὴν τοῦ πονηροῦ
Heb. 10, 33 εἰς ἑαυτοὺς ἑλκύσαι· οἳ καὶ ὁμόσε ἐχώρουν, πᾶν
εἶδος ὀνειδισμοῦ καὶ κολάσεως ἀνεχόμενοι· οἳ καὶ
τὰ πολλὰ ὀλίγα ἡγούμενοι ἔσπευδον πρὸς Χριστόν,
Rom. 8, 18 ὄντως ἐπιδεικνύμενοι ὅτι οὐκ ἄξια τὰ παθήματα
τοῦ νῦν καιροῦ πρὸς τὴν μέλλουσαν δόξαν ἀπο-
καλυφθῆναι εἰς ἡμᾶς.

"Καὶ πρῶτον μὲν τὰ ἀπὸ τοῦ ὄχλου πανδημεὶ 7
σωρηδὸν ἐπιφερόμενα γενναίως ὑπέμενον, ἐπι-
βοήσεις καὶ πληγὰς καὶ συρμοὺς καὶ διαρπαγὰς
καὶ λίθων βολὰς καὶ συγκλείσεις καὶ πάνθ' ὅσα
ἠγριωμένῳ πλήθει ὡς πρὸς ἐχθροὺς καὶ πολεμίους
φιλεῖ γίνεσθαι, καὶ δὴ ἀναχθέντες εἰς τὴν ἀγορὰν 8
ὑπό τε τοῦ χιλιάρχου καὶ τῶν προεστηκότων τῆς
πόλεως ἐξουσιῶν ἐπὶ παντὸς τοῦ πλήθους ἀνακρι-
θέντες καὶ ὁμολογήσαντες, συνεκλείσθησαν εἰς τὴν
εἱρκτὴν ἕως τῆς τοῦ ἡγεμόνος παρουσίας· μετ- 9
έπειτα δὲ ἐπὶ τὸν ἡγεμόνα ἀχθέντων αὐτῶν κἀκείνου
πάσῃ τῇ πρὸς ἡμᾶς ὠμότητι χρωμένου, Οὐέττιος
Ἐπάγαθος, εἷς ἐκ τῶν ἀδελφῶν, πλήρωμα ἀγάπης
τῆς πρὸς τὸν θεὸν καὶ πρὸς τὸν πλησίον κεχωρηκώς,
οὗ καὶ ἐπὶ τοσοῦτον ἠκρίβωτο ἡ πολιτεία, ὡς

Digitized by Google

his might the adversary attacked us, foreshadowing his coming which is shortly to be, and tried everything, practising his adherents and training them against the servants of God, so that we were not merely excluded from houses and baths and markets, but we were even forbidden to be seen at all in any place whatever. But against them the grace of God did captain us; it rescued the weak, and marshalled against them steadfast pillars of men able by patience to draw to themselves all the attack of the enemy. They came together and endured every kind of abuse and punishment, they counted many things as few in their zeal for Christ, and did indeed prove that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed to us.

"First they endured nobly all that was heaped upon them by the mob, howls and stripes and dragging about, and rapine and imprisonment and stoning, and all things which are wont to happen at the hands of an infuriated populace against its supposed enemies and foes; then they were dragged into the market-place by the tribune and by the chief authorities of the city, were indicted and confessed, and at last they were shut up until the coming of the governor. Then they were brought before the governor, and when he used all his cruelty against them, then intervened Vettius Epagathus, one of the brethren, filled with love towards God and towards his neighbour, the strictness of whose life

Digitized by Google

Luke 1, 16 καίπερ ὄντα νέον συνεξισοῦσθαι τῇ τοῦ πρεσβυτέρου Ζαχαρίου μαρτυρίᾳ· πεπόρευτο γοῦν ἐν πάσαις ταῖς ἐντολαῖς καὶ δικαιώμασι τοῦ κυρίου ἄμεμπτος καὶ πάσῃ τῇ πρὸς τὸν πλησίον λειτουργίᾳ ἄοκνος, ζῆλον θεοῦ πολὺν ἔχων καὶ ζέων τῷ πνεύματι· τοιοῦτος δή τις ὤν, τὴν οὕτως καθ' ἡμῶν ἀλόγως γινομένην κρίσιν οὐκ ἐβάστασεν, ἀλλ' ὑπερηγανάκτησεν καὶ ἠξίου καὶ αὐτὸς ἀκουσθῆναι ἀπολογούμενος ὑπὲρ τῶν ἀδελφῶν ὅτι μηδὲν ἄθεον μηδὲ ἀσεβές ἐστιν ἐν ἡμῖν. τῶν δὲ περὶ τὸ βῆμα 10 καταβοησάντων αὐτοῦ, καὶ γὰρ ἦν ἐπίσημος, καὶ τοῦ ἡγεμόνος μὴ ἀνασχομένου τῆς οὕτως ὑπ' αὐτοῦ δικαίας προταθείσης ἀξιώσεως, ἀλλὰ μόνον τοῦτο πυθομένου εἰ καὶ αὐτὸς εἴη Χριστιανός, τοῦ δὲ λαμπροτάτῃ φωνῇ ὁμολογήσαντος, ἀνελήφθη καὶ αὐτὸς εἰς τὸν κλῆρον τῶν μαρτύρων, παράκλητος Χριστιανῶν χρηματίσας, ἔχων δὲ τὸν παράκλητον
Luke 1, 67 ἐν ἑαυτῷ, τὸ πνεῦμα τοῦ Ζαχαρίου, ὃ διὰ τοῦ
1 John 3, 16 πληρώματος τῆς ἀγάπης ἐνεδείξατο, εὐδοκήσας
1 Thes. 2, 8 ὑπὲρ τῆς τῶν ἀδελφῶν ἀπολογίας καὶ τὴν ἑαυτοῦ θεῖναι ψυχήν· ἦν γὰρ καὶ ἔστιν γνήσιος Χριστοῦ
Rev. 14, 4 μαθητής, ἀκολουθῶν τῷ ἀρνίῳ ὅπου ἂν ὑπάγῃ.

" Ἐντεῦθεν δὴ διεκρίνοντο οἱ λοιποί, καὶ φανεροὶ 11 καὶ ἕτοιμοι ἐγίνοντο πρωτομάρτυρες, οἳ καὶ μετὰ πάσης προθυμίας ἀνεπλήρουν τὴν ὁμολογίαν τῆς μαρτυρίας, ἐφαίνοντο δὲ καὶ οἱ ἀνέτοιμοι καὶ ἀγύμναστοι καὶ ἔτι ἀσθενεῖς, ἀγῶνος μεγάλου

Digitized by Google

had gone so far that in spite of his youth his reputation was equal to that of the elder Zacharias.[1] He walked in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless and was unwearied in all ministrations to his neighbours, having much zeal toward God and being fervent in spirit. His character forbade him to endure the unreasonable judgement given against us, and, overcome with indignation, he asked to be heard himself in defence of the brethren to the effect that there was nothing atheistic or impious among us. He was howled down by those around the judgement-seat, for he was a man of position,[2] and the governor would not tolerate the just requests which he had put forward but merely asked if he were a Christian himself. He then confessed in clear tones and was himself taken into the ranks of the martyrs. He was called the 'Comforter of Christians,' but had the Comforter in himself, the spirit of Zacharias which he had shown by the fullness of his love when he chose to lay down even his own life for the defence of the brethren, for he was and he is [3] a true disciple of Christ, and he follows the Lamb wheresoever he goes.

"The rest were then divided and the first martyrs were obviously ready, and they fulfilled the confession of martyrdom with all readiness, but some others appeared not to be ready, and failed in training and in strength, unable to endure the strain

[1] Zacharias the father of John the Baptist, as is shown by the allusion to Luke i. 6 in the following line.

[2] Apparently the meaning is that his social position made the crowd even more indignant at his advocacy of Christians.

[3] It is almost incredible that this " is " was interpreted by Renan and others as showing that Vettius was not actually put to death.

Digitized by Google

τόνον ἐνεγκεῖν μὴ δυνάμενοι· ὧν καὶ ἐξέτρωσαν
ὡς δέκα τὸν ἀριθμόν· οἳ καὶ μεγάλην λύπην καὶ
πένθος ἀμέτρητον ἐνεποίησαν ἡμῖν καὶ τὴν προ-
θυμίαν τῶν λοιπῶν τῶν μὴ συνειλημμένων ἐνέκοψαν·
οἳ καίπερ πάντα τὰ δεινὰ πάσχοντες, ὅμως συμ-
παρῆσαν τοῖς μάρτυσιν καὶ οὐκ ἀπελείποντο
αὐτῶν, τότε δὲ οἱ πάντες μεγάλως ἐπτοήθημεν 12
διὰ τὸ ἄδηλον τῆς ὁμολογίας, οὐ τὰς ἐπιφερομένας
κολάσεις φοβούμενοι, ἀλλὰ τὸ τέλος ἀφορῶντες
καὶ τὸ ἀποπεσεῖν τινα δεδιότες. συνελαμβάνοντο 13
μέντοι καθ' ἑκάστην ἡμέραν οἱ ἄξιοι τὸν ἐκείνων
ἀναπληροῦντες ἀριθμόν, ὥστε συλλεγῆναι ἐκ τῶν
δύο ἐκκλησιῶν πάντας τοὺς σπουδαίους καὶ δι'
ὧν μάλιστα συνεστήκει τὰ ἐνθάδε· συνελαμβάνοντο 14
δὲ καὶ ἐθνικοί τινες οἰκέται τῶν ἡμετέρων, ἐπεὶ
δημοσίᾳ ἐκέλευσεν ὁ ἡγεμὼν ἀναζητεῖσθαι πάντας
ἡμᾶς· οἳ καὶ κατ' ἐνέδραν τοῦ σατανᾶ, φοβηθέντες
τὰς βασάνους ἃς τοὺς ἁγίους ἔβλεπον πάσχοντας,
τῶν στρατιωτῶν ἐπὶ τοῦτο παρορμώντων αὐτούς,
κατεψεύσαντο ἡμῶν Θυέστεια δεῖπνα καὶ Οἰδιπο-
δείους μίξεις καὶ ὅσα μήτε λαλεῖν μήτε νοεῖν θέμις
ἡμῖν, ἀλλὰ μηδὲ πιστεύειν εἴ τι τοιοῦτο πώποτε
παρὰ ἀνθρώποις ἐγένετο. τούτων δὲ φημισθέντων, 15
πάντες ἀπεθηριώθησαν εἰς ἡμᾶς, ὥστε καὶ εἴ τινες
Acts 7, 54 τὸ πρότερον δι' οἰκειότητα ἐμετρίαζον, τότε
μεγάλως ἐχαλέπαινον καὶ διεπρίοντο ἐφ' ἡμῖν·
ἐπληροῦτο δὲ τὸ ὑπὸ τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν εἰρημένον
John 16, 2 ὅτι ἐλεύσεται καιρὸς ἐν ᾧ πᾶς ὁ ἀποκτείνας ὑμᾶς
δόξει λατρείαν προσφέρειν τῷ θεῷ. ἐνταῦθα λοιπὸν 16
ὑπεράνω πάσης ἐξηγήσεως ὑπέμενον κολάσεις οἱ
ἅγιοι μάρτυρες, φιλοτιμουμένου τοῦ σατανᾶ καὶ

Digitized by Google

of a great conflict, and about ten in number failed, as those born out of due time. They caused us great grief and immeasurable mourning, and hindered the zeal of the others who had not been arrested. Yet they, although suffering all the terrors, nevertheless remained with the martyrs and did not desert them. But at that point we were all greatly terrified by uncertainty as to their confession, not fearing the threatened punishment but looking towards the end and afraid lest some one should fall away. Yet day by day those who were worthy went on being arrested, completing their number, so as to collect from the two churches all the zealous and those through whom the life of the locality was kept together. There were also arrested certain heathen slaves of our members, since the governor had publicly commanded that we should all be prosecuted, and these by the snare of Satan, fearing the tortures which they saw the saints suffering, when the soldiers urged them, falsely accused us of Thyestean feasts and Oedipodean intercourse,[1] and things which it is not right for us either to speak of or to think of or even to believe that such things could ever happen among men. When this rumour spread all men turned like beasts against us, so that even if any had formerly been lenient for friendship's sake they then became furious and raged against us, and there was fulfilled that which was spoken by our Lord that 'the time will come when whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service.' Then at last the holy martyrs endured sufferings beyond all description, for Satan was striving to wring some

[1] According to Greek mythology Thyestes had unconsciously eaten his children and Oedipus had married his mother.

Digitized by Google

δι' ἐκείνων ῥηθῆναί τι τῶν βλασφήμων· ὑπερ- 17
βεβλημένως δὲ ἐνέσκηψεν ἡ ὀργὴ πᾶσα καὶ ὄχλου
καὶ ἡγεμόνος καὶ στρατιωτῶν εἰς Σάγκτον τὸν
διάκονον ἀπὸ Βιέννης καὶ εἰς Μάτουρον, νεο-
φώτιστον μέν, ἀλλὰ γενναῖον ἀγωνιστήν, καὶ εἰς
1 Tim. 8, 15 Ἄτταλον Περγαμηνὸν τῷ γένει, στῦλον καὶ
ἑδραίωμα τῶν ἐνταῦθα ἀεὶ γεγονότα, καὶ εἰς
Βλανδῖναν, δι' ἧς ἐπέδειξεν ὁ Χριστὸς ὅτι τὰ παρὰ
ἀνθρώποις εὐτελῆ καὶ ἀειδῆ καὶ εὐκαταφρόνητα
φαινόμενα μεγάλης καταξιοῦται παρὰ θεῷ δόξης
διὰ τὴν πρὸς αὐτὸν ἀγάπην τὴν ἐν δυνάμει δεικνυ-
μένην καὶ μὴ ἐν εἴδει καυχωμένην. ἡμῶν γὰρ 18
πάντων δεδιότων καὶ τῆς σαρκίνης δεσποίνης
αὐτῆς, ἥτις ἦν καὶ αὐτὴ τῶν μαρτύρων μία ἀγωνί-
στρια, ἀγωνιώσης μὴ οὐδὲ τὴν ὁμολογίαν δυνήσεται
παρρησιάσασθαι διὰ τὸ ἀσθενὲς τοῦ σώματος, ἡ
Βλανδῖνα τοσαύτης ἐπληρώθη δυνάμεως, ὥστε
ἐκλυθῆναι καὶ παρεθῆναι τοὺς κατὰ διαδοχὰς
παντὶ τρόπῳ βασανίζοντας αὐτὴν ἀπὸ ἑωθινῆς
ἕως ἑσπέρας, καὶ αὐτοὺς ὁμολογοῦντας ὅτι νενίκηη-
ται μηδὲν ἔχοντες μηκέτι ὃ ποιήσωσιν αὐτῇ, καὶ
θαυμάζειν ἐπὶ τῷ παραμένειν ἔμπνουν αὐτήν,
παντὸς τοῦ σώματος περιερρωγότος καὶ ἠνεῳγ-
μένου, καὶ μαρτυρεῖν ὅτι ἓν εἶδος στρεβλώσεως
ἱκανὸν ἦν πρὸς τὸ ἐξαγαγεῖν τὴν ψυχήν, οὐχ ὅτι
γε τοιαῦτα καὶ τοσαῦτα. ἀλλ' ἡ μακαρία ὡς 19
γενναῖος ἀθλητὴς ἀνενέαζεν ἐν τῇ ὁμολογίᾳ, καὶ
ἦν αὐτῆς ἀνάληψις καὶ ἀνάπαυσις καὶ ἀναλγησία
τῶν συμβαινόντων τὸ λέγειν ὅτι 'Χριστιανή εἰμι
καὶ παρ' ἡμῖν οὐδὲν φαῦλον γίνεται.'

" Ὁ δὲ Σάγκτος καὶ αὐτὸς ὑπερβεβλημένως 20
καὶ ὑπὲρ πάντα ἄνθρωπον πάσας τὰς ἐξ ἀνθρώπων

Digitized by Google

blasphemy even from them, and all the fury of the mob and of the governor and of the soldiers was raised beyond measure against Sanctus, the deacon from Vienne, and against Maturus, who was a novice but a noble contender, and against Attalus, a Pergamene by race, who had always been a pillar and support of the Christians there, and against Blandina, through whom Christ showed that things which are mean and obscure and contemptible among men are vouchsafed great glory with God because of the love towards him shown in power and not boasted of in appearance. For while we were all afraid, and her human mistress, who was herself one of the contenders among the martyrs, was in distress lest she should not be able, through the weakness of her body, to be bold enough even to make confession, Blandina was filled with such power that she was released and rescued from those who took turns in torturing her in every way from morning until evening, and they themselves confessed that they were beaten, for they had nothing left to do to her, and they marvelled that she still remained alive, seeing that her whole body was broken and opened, and they testified that any one of these tortures was sufficient to destroy life, even when they had not been magnified and multiplied. But the blessed woman, like a noble athlete, kept gaining in vigour in her confession, and found comfort and rest and freedom from pain from what was done to her by saying, 'I am a Christian woman and nothing wicked happens among us.'

"Sanctus also himself endured nobly, beyond measure or human power, all the ill-treatment of

Digitized by Google

αἰκίας γενναίως ὑπομένων, τῶν ἀνόμων ἐλπιζόντων διὰ τὴν ἐπιμονὴν καὶ τὸ μέγεθος τῶν βασάνων ἀκούσεσθαί τι παρ' αὐτοῦ τῶν μὴ δεόντων, τοσαύτῃ ὑποστάσει ἀντιπαρετάξατο αὐτοῖς, ὥστε μήτε τὸ ἴδιον κατειπεῖν ὄνομα μήτε ἔθνους μήτε πόλεως ὅθεν ἦν, μήτε εἰ δοῦλος ἢ ἐλεύθερος εἴη· ἀλλὰ πρὸς πάντα τὰ ἐπερωτώμενα ἀπεκρίνατο τῇ Ῥωμαϊκῇ φωνῇ Χριστιανός εἰμι· τοῦτο καὶ ἀντὶ ὀνόματος καὶ ἀντὶ πόλεως καὶ ἀντὶ γένους καὶ ἀντὶ παντὸς ἐπαλλήλως ὡμολόγει, ἄλλην δὲ φωνὴν οὐκ ἤκουσαν αὐτοῦ τὰ ἔθνη· ὅθεν δὴ καὶ φιλονεικία μεγάλη τοῦ 21
τε ἡγεμόνος καὶ τῶν βασανιστῶν ἐγένετο πρὸς αὐτόν, ὥστε ὁπότε μηκέτι μηδὲν εἶχον ὃ ποιήσωσιν αὐτῷ, τὸ τελευταῖον χαλκᾶς λεπίδας διαπύρους προσεκόλλων τοῖς τρυφερωτάτοις μέλεσι τοῦ σώματος αὐτοῦ. καὶ ταῦτα μὲν ἐκαίετο, αὐτὸς δὲ 22
παρέμενεν ἀνεπίκαμπτος καὶ ἀνένδοτος, στερρὸς
John 7, 38 πρὸς τὴν ὁμολογίαν, ὑπὸ τῆς οὐρανίου πηγῆς τοῦ ὕδατος τῆς ζωῆς τοῦ ἐξιόντος ἐκ τῆς νηδύος τοῦ Χριστοῦ δροσιζόμενος καὶ ἐνδυναμούμενος· τὸ 23
Is. 53, 2. 5 δὲ σωμάτιον μάρτυς ἦν τῶν συμβεβηκότων, ὅλον τραῦμα καὶ μώλωψ καὶ συνεσπασμένον καὶ ἀποβεβληκὸς τὴν ἀνθρώπειον ἔξωθεν μορφήν, ἐν ᾧ πάσχων Χριστὸς μεγάλας ἐπετέλει δόξας, καταργῶν
1 Tim. 1, 16 τὸν ἀντικείμενον καὶ εἰς τὴν τῶν λοιπῶν ὑποτύπωσιν ὑποδεικνύων ὅτι μηδὲν φοβερὸν ὅπου πατρὸς ἀγάπη, μηδὲ ἀλγεινὸν ὅπου Χριστοῦ δόξα. τῶν γὰρ ἀνόμων μεθ' ἡμέρας πάλιν στρεβλούντων 24
τὸν μάρτυρα καὶ νομιζόντων ὅτι οἰδούντων καὶ φλεγμαινόντων τῶν σωμάτων, εἰ τὰ αὐτὰ προσενέγκοιεν κολαστήρια, περιέσοιντο αὐτοῦ, ὁπότε οὐδὲ τὴν ἀπὸ τῶν χειρῶν ἀφὴν ἠνείχετο, ἢ ὅτι

Digitized by Google

men, for though the wicked hoped through persistence and the rigour of his tortures to wring from him something wrong, he resisted them with such constancy that he did not even tell his own name, or the race or the city whence he was, nor whether he was slave or free, but to all questions answered in Latin, 'I am a Christian.' This he said for name and city and race and for everything else, and the heathen heard no other sound from him. For this reason the governor and the torturers were very ambitious to subdue him, so that when they had nothing left at all to do to him at last they fastened plates of heated brass to the tenderest parts of his body. His limbs were burning, but he continued himself unbending and unyielding, firm in his confession, refreshed and strengthened by the heavenly spring of the water of life which proceeds forth from the body of Christ. His body was a witness to his treatment; it was all one wound and bruise, wrenched and torn out of human shape, but Christ suffering in him manifested great glory, overthrowing the adversary and showing for the example of the others how there is nothing fearful where there is the love of the Father nor painful where there is the glory of Christ. For when the wicked after some days again tortured the martyr they thought that they might overcome him now that his body was swollen and inflamed if they applied the same tortures, seeing that he could not even endure to be

Digitized by Google

ἐναποθανὼν ταῖς βασάνοις φόβον ἐμποιήσειεν τοῖς λοιποῖς, οὐ μόνον οὐδὲν περὶ αὐτὸν τοιοῦτο συνέβη, ἀλλὰ καὶ παρὰ πᾶσαν δόξαν ἀνθρώπων ἀνέκυψεν καὶ ἀνωρθώθη τὸ σωμάτιον ἐν ταῖς μετέπειτα βασάνοις, καὶ τὴν ἰδέαν ἀπέλαβεν τὴν προτέραν καὶ τὴν χρῆσιν τῶν μελῶν, ὥστε μὴ κόλασιν, ἀλλ' ἴασιν διὰ τῆς χάριτος τοῦ Χριστοῦ τὴν δευτέραν στρέβλωσιν αὐτῷ γενέσθαι.

25 "Καὶ Βιβλίδα δέ, μίαν τῶν ἠρνημένων, ἤδη δοκῶν ὁ διάβολος καταπεπωκέναι, θελήσας δὲ καὶ διὰ βλασφημίας κατακρῖναι, ἦγεν ἐπὶ κόλασιν, ἀναγκάζων εἰπεῖν τὰ ἄθεα περὶ ἡμῶν, ὡς εὔθραυστον 26 ἤδη καὶ ἄνανδρον· ἡ δὲ ἐν τῇ στρεβλώσει ἀνένηψεν καὶ ὡς ἂν εἰπεῖν ἐκ βαθέος ὕπνου ἀνεγρηγόρησεν, ὑπομνησθεῖσα διὰ τῆς προσκαίρου τιμωρίας τὴν αἰώνιον ἐν γεέννῃ κόλασιν, καὶ ἐξ ἐναντίας ἀντεῖπεν τοῖς βλασφήμοις, φήσασα 'πῶς ἂν παιδία φάγοιεν οἱ τοιοῦτοι, οἷς μηδὲ ἀλόγων ζῴων αἷμα φαγεῖν ἐξόν;' καὶ ἀπὸ τοῦδε Χριστιανὴν ἑαυτὴν ὡμολόγει καὶ τῷ κλήρῳ τῶν μαρτύρων προσετέθη.

27 "Καταργηθέντων δὲ τῶν τυραννικῶν κολαστηρίων ὑπὸ τοῦ Χριστοῦ διὰ τῆς τῶν μακαρίων ὑπομονῆς, ἑτέρας μηχανὰς ὁ διάβολος ἐπενόει, τὰς κατὰ τὴν εἱρκτὴν ἐν τῷ σκότει καὶ τῷ χαλεπωτάτῳ χωρίῳ συγκλείσεις καὶ τὰς ἐν τῷ ξύλῳ διατάσεις τῶν ποδῶν, ἐπὶ πέμπτον διατεινομένων τρύπημα, καὶ τὰς λοιπὰς αἰκίας, ὅσας εἰώθασιν ὀργιζόμενοι ὑπουργοὶ καὶ ταῦτα διαβόλου πλήρεις διατιθέναι τοὺς ἐγκλειομένους· ὥστε ἀποπνιγῆναι τοὺς πλείστους ἐν τῇ εἱρκτῇ, ὅσους γε ὁ κύριος οὕτως ἐξελθεῖν ἠθέλησεν, ἐπιδεικνύων τὴν αὐτοῦ δόξαν. οἱ μὲν γὰρ βασανισθέντες πικρῶς ὥστε 28

Digitized by Google

touched by the hand, or that by dying under torture he would put fear into the rest. Yet not only did nothing of this kind happen, but, beyond all human expectation, he raised himself up and his body was straightened in the subsequent tortures, and he regained his former appearance and the use of his limbs, so that through the grace of Christ the second torturing became not torment but cure.

"Biblis, too, one of those who had denied, did the devil bring to torture (thinking that he had already swallowed her up and wishing to condemn her through blasphemy as well), to force her to say impious things about us, as though she were already broken and weak. But she recovered under torture, and, as it were, woke up out of deep sleep, being reminded through this transitory punishment of the eternal torments in hell, and contradicted the blasphemers, saying, 'How would such men eat children, when they are not allowed to eat the blood even of irrational animals?' And after this she confessed herself a Christian and was added to the ranks of the martyrs.

"But when the tyrant's torments had been brought to naught by Christ through the endurance of the blessed saints, the devil thought of other devices, imprisonment in the jail in darkness and in the most horrible place, and stretching their feet in the stocks, separated to the fifth hole, and the other outrages which angry warders filled with the devil are accustomed to inflict on the prisoners. Thus most of them were strangled in the prison, being all those whom the Lord had chosen thus to depart manifesting his glory. Some were tortured so cruelly

Digitized by Google

δοκεῖν μηδὲ τῆς πάσης θεραπείας τυχόντας ἔτι ζῆσαι δύνασθαι, παρέμενον ἐν τῇ εἱρκτῇ, ἔρημοι μὲν τῆς παρὰ ἀνθρώπων ἐπιμελείας, ἀναρρωννύμενοι δὲ ὑπὸ κυρίου καὶ ἐνδυναμούμενοι καὶ σώματι καὶ ψυχῇ καὶ τοὺς λοιποὺς παρορμῶντες καὶ παραμυθούμενοι· οἱ δὲ νεαροὶ καὶ ἄρτι συνειλημμένοι, ὧν μὴ προκατῄκιστο τὰ σώματα, τὸ βάρος οὐκ ἔφερον τῆς συγκλείσεως, ἀλλ' ἔνδον ἐναπέθνῃσκον.

29 "Ὁ δὲ μακάριος Ποθεινός, ὁ τὴν διακονίαν τῆς ἐπισκοπῆς ἐν Λουγδούνῳ πεπιστευμένος, ὑπὲρ τὰ ἐνενήκοντα ἔτη τῆς ἡλικίας γεγονὼς καὶ πάνυ ἀσθενὴς τῷ σώματι, μόλις μὲν ἐμπνέων διὰ τὴν προκειμένην σωματικὴν ἀσθένειαν, ὑπὸ δὲ προθυμίας πνεύματος ἀναρρωννύμενος διὰ τὴν ἐγκειμένην τῆς μαρτυρίας ἐπιθυμίαν, καὶ αὐτὸς ἐπὶ τὸ βῆμα ἐσύρετο, τοῦ μὲν σώματος καὶ ὑπὸ τοῦ
2 Cor. 2, 14 γήρως καὶ ὑπὸ τῆς νόσου λελυμένου, τηρουμένης δὲ τῆς ψυχῆς ἐν αὐτῷ, ἵνα δι' αὐτῆς Χριστὸς θριαμβεύσῃ· 30 ὃς ὑπὸ τῶν στρατιωτῶν ἐπὶ τὸ βῆμα κομισθείς, παραπεμπόντων αὐτὸν τῶν πολιτικῶν ἐξουσιῶν καὶ παντὸς τοῦ πλήθους, ἐπιβοήσεις παντοίας ποιουμένων ὡς αὐτοῦ ὄντος τοῦ Χριστοῦ, ἀπεδίδου τὴν καλὴν μαρτυρίαν. 31 ἀνεταζόμενος δὲ ὑπὸ τοῦ ἡγεμόνος τίς εἴη Χριστιανῶν ὁ θεός, ἔφη 'ἐὰν ἧς ἄξιος, γνώσῃ'· ἐντεῦθεν δὲ ἀφειδῶς ἐσύρετο καὶ ποικίλας ἔπασχε πληγάς, τῶν μὲν σύνεγγυς χερσὶν καὶ ποσὶν ἐνυβριζόντων παντοίως, μηδὲ τὴν ἡλικίαν αἰδουμένων αὐτοῦ, τῶν δὲ μακράν, ὃ μετὰ χεῖρας ἕκαστος εἶχεν, εἰς αὐτὸν ἀκοντιζόντων, πάντων δὲ ἡγουμένων μεγάλως πλημμελεῖν καὶ ἀσεβεῖν, εἴ τις ἀπολειφθείη τῆς εἰς αὐτὸν ἀσελγείας· καὶ γὰρ τοὺς θεοὺς αὐτῶν

Digitized by Google

that it seemed impossible for them to live even if they had had every care, yet survived in the prison, bereft of human attention but strengthened by the Lord and given power in body and soul, and looking after and comforting the rest. But the younger ones, who had lately been arrested, whose bodies had not become accustomed to it, did not endure the burden of confinement but died in prison.

"The blessed Pothinus, who had been entrusted with the ministry of the bishopric at Lyons, was over ninety years old and very weak physically. He was scarcely breathing through the physical weakness which had already come upon him, but was strengthened by zeal of spirit through urgent desire of martyrdom. He was dragged before the judgement-seat, and although his body was weakened by old age and disease, his soul was kept in him in order that through it Christ might triumph. He was brought by soldiers to the judgement-seat; the local authorities accompanied him, and all the populace, uttering all kinds of howls at him as though he was Christ himself, but he gave noble testimony. When asked by the governor, Who was the God of the Christians, he said, 'If you are worthy, you will know.' And then he was dragged about without mercy, and suffered many blows; for those who were near ill-treated him with feet and hands and in every way, without respect even for his old age, and those who were at a distance each threw at him whatever he had at hand, and all thought that it would be a great transgression and impiety to omit any abuse against him. For they thought that in

Digitized by Google

ὤοντο οὕτως ἐκδικήσειν. καὶ μόγις ἐμπνέων ἐρρίφη ἐν τῇ εἱρκτῇ καὶ μετὰ δύο ἡμέρας ἀπέψυξεν.

32 ''Ἐνταῦθα δὴ μεγάλη τις οἰκονομία θεοῦ ἐγίνετο καὶ ἔλεος ἀμέτρητον ἀνεφαίνετο Ἰησοῦ, σπανίως μὲν ἐν τῇ ἀδελφότητι γεγονός, μὴ ἀπολειπόμενον δὲ τῆς τέχνης Χριστοῦ. οἱ γὰρ κατὰ 33 τὴν πρώτην σύλληψιν ἔξαρνοι γενόμενοι συνεκλείοντο καὶ αὐτοὶ καὶ μετεῖχον τῶν δεινῶν· οὐδὲ γὰρ ἐν τῷ καιρῷ τούτῳ ὄφελός τι αὐτοῖς ἡ ἐξάρνησις ἐγίνετο, ἀλλ' οἱ μὲν ὁμολογοῦντες ὃ καὶ ἦσαν, συνεκλείοντο ὡς Χριστιανοί, μηδεμιᾶς ἄλλης αἰτίας αὐτοῖς ἐπιφερομένης, οὗτοι δὲ λοιπὸν ὡς ἀνδροφόνοι καὶ μιαροὶ κατείχοντο, διπλότερον παρὰ τοὺς λοιποὺς κολαζόμενοι. ἐκείνους μὲν γὰρ ἐπ- 34 εκούφιζεν ἡ χαρὰ τῆς μαρτυρίας καὶ ἡ ἐλπὶς τῶν ἐπηγγελμένων καὶ ἡ πρὸς τὸν Χριστὸν ἀγάπη καὶ τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ πατρικόν, τούτους δὲ τὸ συνειδὸς μεγάλως ἐτιμωρεῖτο, ὥστε καὶ παρὰ τοῖς λοιποῖς ἅπασιν κατὰ τὰς παρόδους διαδήλους τὰς ὄψεις αὐτῶν εἶναι. οἱ μὲν γὰρ ἱλαροὶ προῄεσαν, δόξης 35 καὶ χάριτος πολλῆς ταῖς ὄψεσιν αὐτῶν συγκεκρα-
Ps. 44, 14 μένης, ὥστε καὶ τὰ δεσμὰ κόσμον εὐπρεπῆ περι-
2 Cor. 2, 15 κεῖσθαι αὐτοῖς, ὡς νύμφῃ κεκοσμημένῃ ἐν κροσσωτοῖς χρυσοῖς πεποικιλμένοις, τὴν εὐωδίαν ὀδωδότες ἅμα τὴν Χριστοῦ, ὥστε ἐνίους δόξαι καὶ μύρῳ κοσμικῷ κεχρῖσθαι αὐτούς· οἱ δὲ κατηφεῖς καὶ ταπεινοὶ καὶ δυσειδεῖς καὶ πάσης ἀσχημοσύνης ἀνάπλεοι, προσέτι δὲ καὶ ὑπὸ τῶν ἐθνῶν ὀνειδιζόμενοι ὡς ἀγεννεῖς καὶ ἄνανδροι, ἀνδροφόνων μὲν ἐγκλήματα ἔχοντες, ἀπολωλεκότες δὲ τὴν πάντιμον καὶ ἔνδοξον καὶ ζωοποιὸν προσηγορίαν. ταῦτα δὴ οἱ λοιποὶ θεωροῦντες ἐστηρίχθησαν, καὶ οἱ

Digitized by Google

this way they would vindicate their gods. And he was thrown into prison scarcely breathing and after two days yielded up the ghost.

"Then a great dispensation of God was given, and the measureless mercy of Jesus was so manifested, as has rarely happened among the brethren, but is not beyond the skill of Christ. For those who at the first arrest had denied were imprisoned themselves and shared in the terrors, for this time not even their denial was any advantage to them; but those who confessed what they were were imprisoned as Christians, no other accusation being brought against them, the others however were held as murderers and foul persons and punished twice as much as the rest. For the burden of the former was lightened by the joy of martyrdom and the hope of the promises, and by love towards Christ and by the Spirit of the Father; but the latter were greatly punished by their conscience so that they were conspicuous among all the rest by their faces when they were taken out. For the one went forth gladly; glory and great grace were mingled on their faces, so that they wore even their fetters as a becoming ornament, like a bride adorned with golden lace of many patterns, and they were perfumed with the sweet savour of Christ, so that some supposed that they had been anointed with worldly unguents; but the others were depressed and humble and wretched and filled with every kind of unseemliness, and in addition were insulted by the heathen as ignoble and cowardly; they had gained the accusation of murder, but had lost the name which is full of honour and glory and gives life. When the others saw this they were strengthened and those who

Digitized by Google

συλλαμβανόμενοι ἀδιστάκτως ὡμολόγουν, μηδὲ ἔννοιαν ἔχοντες διαβολικοῦ λογισμοῦ."

Τούτοις μεταξύ τινα ἐπειπόντες, αὖθις ἐπι- 36
φέρουσιν· "μετὰ ταῦτα δὴ λοιπὸν εἰς πᾶν εἶδος
διῃρεῖτο τὰ μαρτύρια τῆς ἐξόδου αὐτῶν. ἐκ
διαφόρων γὰρ χρωμάτων καὶ παντοίων ἀνθῶν
ἕνα πλέξαντες στέφανον προσήνεγκαν τῷ πατρί·
ἐχρῆν δ' οὖν τοὺς γενναίους ἀθλητὰς ποικίλον
ὑπομείναντας ἀγῶνα καὶ μεγάλως νικήσαντας
ἀπολαβεῖν τὸν μέγαν τῆς ἀφθαρσίας στέφανον. ὁ 37
μὲν οὖν Μάτουρος καὶ ὁ Σάγκτος καὶ ἡ Βλανδῖνα
καὶ Ἄτταλος ἤγοντο ἐπὶ τὰ θηρία εἰς τὸ δημόσιον
καὶ εἰς κοινὸν τῶν ἐθνῶν τῆς ἀπανθρωπίας θέαμα,
ἐπίτηδες τῆς τῶν θηριομαχίων ἡμέρας διὰ τοὺς
ἡμετέρους διδομένης. καὶ ὁ μὲν Μάτουρος καὶ 38
ὁ Σάγκτος αὖθις διῆσαν ἐν τῷ ἀμφιθεάτρῳ διὰ
πάσης κολάσεως, ὡς μηδὲν ὅλως προπεπονθότες,
μᾶλλον δ' ὡς διὰ πλειόνων ἤδη κλήρων ἐκβεβια-
κότες τὸν ἀντίπαλον καὶ περὶ τοῦ στεφάνου αὐτοῦ
τὸν ἀγῶνα ἔχοντες, ὑπέφερον πάλιν τὰς διεξόδους
τῶν μαστίγων τὰς ἐκεῖσε εἰθισμένας καὶ τοὺς
ἀπὸ τῶν θηρίων ἑλκηθμοὺς καὶ πάνθ' ὅσα μαινό-
μενος ὁ δῆμος, ἄλλοι ἀλλαχόθεν, ἐπεβόων καὶ
ἐπεκελεύοντο, ἐπὶ πᾶσιν τὴν σιδηρᾶν καθέδραν,
ἐφ' ἧς τηγανιζόμενα τὰ σώματα κνίσης αὐτοὺς
ἐνεφόρει. οἱ δ' οὐδ' οὕτως ἔληγον, ἀλλ' ἔτι καὶ 39
μᾶλλον ἐξεμαίνοντο, βουλόμενοι νικῆσαι τὴν ἐκείνων
ὑπομονήν, καὶ οὐδ' ὡς παρὰ Σάγκτου ἕτερόν τι
εἰσήκουσαν παρ' ἣν ἀπ' ἀρχῆς εἴθιστο λέγειν
τῆς ὁμολογίας φωνήν.

[1] Schwartz thinks with much probability that κοινόν is a gloss. If so, the meaning of the original would be "to the

Digitized by Google

were arrested confessed without hesitation and gave no thought to the arguments of the devil."

After a few more sentences they go on again: "After this the testimony of their death fell into every kind of variety. For they wove various colours and all kinds of flowers into one wreath to offer to the Father, and so it was necessary for the noble athletes to undergo a varied contest, and after great victory to receive the great crown of immortality. Maturus and Sanctus and Blandina and Attalus were led forth to the wild beasts, to the public,[1] and to a common exhibition of the inhumanity of the heathen, for the day of fighting with beasts was specially appointed for the Christians. Maturus and Sanctus passed again through all torture in the amphitheatre as though they had suffered nothing before, but rather as though, having conquered the opponent in many bouts,[2] they were now striving for his crown, once more they ran the gauntlet in the accustomed manner, endured the worrying of the wild beasts, and everything which the maddened public, some in one way, some in another, were howling for and commanding, finally, the iron chair on which the roasting of their own bodies clothed them with its reek. Their persecutors did not stop even here, but went on growing more and more furious, wishing to conquer their endurance, yet gained nothing from Sanctus beyond the sound of the confession which he had been accustomed to make from the beginning.

public exhibition," but it seems just possible that τὸ δημόσιον is used substantively.

[2] Literally, "lots," but the word was used in a technical sense, for the gladiators used to draw lots as to who should fight. See the note of Valesius on this passage, and compare Lucian, *Hermotimus*. The opponent is Satan.

Digitized by Google

"Οὗτοι μὲν οὖν, δι' ἀγῶνος μεγάλου ἐπὶ πολὺ 40
παραμενούσης αὐτῶν τῆς ψυχῆς, τοὔσχατον ἐτύθησαν, διὰ τῆς ἡμέρας ἐκείνης ἀντὶ πάσης τῆς ἐν τοῖς μονομαχίοις ποικιλίας αὐτοὶ θέαμα γενόμενοι τῷ κόσμῳ· ἡ δὲ Βλανδῖνα ἐπὶ ξύλου κρεμασθεῖσα 41
προύκειτο βορὰ τῶν εἰσβαλλομένων θηρίων· ἡ καὶ διὰ τοῦ βλέπεσθαι σταυροῦ σχήματι κρεμαμένη διὰ τῆς εὐτόνου προσευχῆς πολλὴν προθυμίαν τοῖς ἀγωνιζομένοις ἐνεποίει, βλεπόντων αὐτῶν ἐν τῷ ἀγῶνι καὶ τοῖς ἔξωθεν ὀφθαλμοῖς διὰ τῆς ἀδελφῆς τὸν ὑπὲρ αὐτῶν ἐσταυρωμένον, ἵνα πείσῃ τοὺς πιστεύοντας εἰς αὐτὸν ὅτι πᾶς ὁ ὑπὲρ τῆς Χριστοῦ δόξης παθὼν τὴν κοινωνίαν ἀεὶ ἔχει μετὰ τοῦ ζῶντος θεοῦ. καὶ μηδενὸς ἅψαμένου 42
τότε τῶν θηρίων αὐτῆς, καθαιρεθεῖσα ἀπὸ τοῦ ξύλου ἀνελήφθη πάλιν εἰς τὴν εἱρκτήν, εἰς ἄλλον
Is. 27, 1 ἀγῶνα τηρουμένη, ἵνα διὰ πλειόνων γυμνασμάτων νικήσασα, τῷ μὲν σκολιῷ ὄφει ἀπαραίτητον ποιήσῃ τὴν καταδίκην, προτρέψηται δὲ τοὺς ἀδελφούς, ἡ μικρὰ καὶ ἀσθενὴς καὶ εὐκαταφρόνητος
Rom. 13, 14 μέγαν καὶ ἀκαταγώνιστον ἀθλητὴν Χριστὸν ἐνδε-
Gal. 3, 27 δυμένη, διὰ πολλῶν κλήρων ἐκβιάσασα τὸν ἀντικείμενον καὶ δι' ἀγῶνος τὸν τῆς ἀφθαρσίας στεφανίτην στέφανον.

"Ὁ δὲ Ἄτταλος καὶ αὐτὸς μεγάλως ἐξαιτηθεὶς 43
ὑπὸ τοῦ ὄχλου (καὶ γὰρ ἦν ὀνομαστός), ἕτοιμος εἰσῆλθεν ἀγωνιστὴς διὰ τὸ εὐσυνείδητον, ἐπειδὴ γνησίως ἐν τῇ Χριστιανῇ συντάξει γεγυμνασμένος ἦν καὶ ἀεὶ μάρτυς ἐγεγόνει παρ' ἡμῖν ἀληθείας. καὶ περιαχθεὶς κύκλῳ τοῦ ἀμφιθεάτρου, πίνακος 44
αὐτὸν προάγοντος ἐν ᾧ ἐγέγραπτο Ῥωμαϊστί 'οὗτός ἐστιν Ἄτταλος ὁ Χριστιανός,' καὶ τοῦ

Digitized by Google

"Thus after a long time, when their life still remained in them through the great contest, they were at last sacrificed, having been made a spectacle to the world throughout that day as a substitute for all the variations of gladiatorial contests; but Blandina was hung on a stake and offered as a prey to the wild beasts that were let in. She seemed to be hanging in the shape of a cross, and by her continuous prayer gave great zeal to the combatants, while they looked on during the contest, and with their outward eyes saw in the form of their sister him who was crucified for them, to persuade those who believe on him that all who suffer for the glory of Christ have for ever fellowship with the living God. Then when none of the beasts would touch her she was taken down from the stake and brought back into the jail, and was thus preserved for another contest, in order that by winning through more trials she might make irrevocable the condemnation of the crooked serpent, and might encourage the brethren; for small and weak and despised as she was, she had put on the great and invincible athlete, Christ; she had overcome the adversary in many contests, and through the struggle had gained the crown of immortality.

"But Attalus was himself loudly called for by the crowd, for he was well known. He went in, a ready combatant, for his conscience was clear, and he had been nobly trained in Christian discipline and had ever been a witness for truth among us. He was led round the amphitheatre and a placard was carried before him on which was written in Latin, 'This is Attalus, the Christian.' The people were very bitter

Digitized by Google

δήμου σφόδρα σφριγῶντος ἐπ' αὐτῷ, μαθὼν ὁ ἡγεμὼν ὅτι Ῥωμαῖός ἐστιν, ἐκέλευσεν αὐτὸν ἀναληφθῆναι μετὰ καὶ τῶν λοιπῶν τῶν ἐν τῇ εἱρκτῇ ὄντων, περὶ ὧν ἐπέστειλεν τῷ Καίσαρι καὶ περιέμενεν τὴν ἀπόφασιν τὴν ἀπ' ἐκείνου.

2 Peter 1, 8

" Ὁ δὲ διὰ μέσου καιρὸς οὐκ ἀργὸς αὐτοῖς οὐδὲ 45
ἄκαρπος ἐγίνετο, ἀλλὰ διὰ τῆς ὑπομονῆς αὐτῶν τὸ ἀμέτρητον ἔλεος ἀνεφαίνετο Χριστοῦ· διὰ γὰρ τῶν ζώντων ἐζωποιοῦντο τὰ νεκρά, καὶ μάρτυρες

2 Cor. 2, 7
Col. 3, 13

τοῖς μὴ μάρτυσιν ἐχαρίζοντο, καὶ ἐνεγίνετο πολλὴ χαρὰ τῇ παρθένῳ μητρί, οὓς ὡς νεκροὺς ἐξέτρωσε, τούτους ζῶντας ἀπολαμβανούσῃ. δι' ἐκείνων γὰρ 46
οἱ πλείους τῶν ἠρνημένων ἀνεμετροῦντο καὶ ἀνεκυΐσκοντο καὶ ἀνεζωπυροῦντο καὶ ἐμάνθανον ὁμολογεῖν καὶ ζῶντες ἤδη καὶ τετονωμένοι προσ-

Ezek. 12, 28; 33, 11

ήεσαν τῷ βήματι, ἐγγλυκαίνοντος τοῦ τὸν μὲν θάνατον τοῦ ἁμαρτωλοῦ μὴ βουλομένου, ἐπὶ δὲ τὴν μετάνοιαν χρηστευομένου θεοῦ, ἵνα καὶ πάλιν ἐπερωτηθῶσιν ὑπὸ τοῦ ἡγεμόνος. ἐπιστείλαντος 47
γὰρ τοῦ Καίσαρος τοὺς μὲν ἀποτυμπανισθῆναι, εἰ δέ τινες ἀρνοῖντο, τούτους ἀπολυθῆναι, τῆς ἐνθάδε πανηγύρεως (ἔστιν δὲ αὕτη πολυάνθρωπος ἐκ πάντων τῶν ἐθνῶν συνερχομένων εἰς αὐτήν) ἀρχομένης συνεστάναι, ἀνῆγεν ἐπὶ τὸ βῆμα θεατρίζων τοὺς μακαρίους καὶ ἐμπομπεύων τοῖς ὄχλοις· δι' ὃ καὶ πάλιν ἀνήταζεν, καὶ ὅσοι μὲν ἐδόκουν πολιτείαν Ῥωμαίων ἐσχηκέναι, τούτων ἀπέτεμνε τὰς κεφαλάς, τοὺς δὲ λοιποὺς ἔπεμπεν εἰς θηρία. ἐδοξάζετο δὲ μεγάλως ὁ Χριστὸς ἐπὶ 48
τοῖς πρότερον ἀρνησαμένοις, τότε παρὰ τὴν τῶν ἐθνῶν ὑπόνοιαν ὁμολογοῦσιν. καὶ γὰρ ἰδίᾳ οὗτοι ἀνητάζοντο ὡς δῆθεν ἀπολυθησόμενοι, καὶ ὁμο-

Digitized by Google

against him, but when the governor learnt that he was a Roman, he commanded him to be put back with the rest, who were in the jail, about whom he had written to the emperor and was waiting for his reply.

"But the intervening time was not idle or fruitless for them but through their endurance was manifested the immeasurable mercy of Christ, for through the living the dead were being quickened and martyrs gave grace to those who had denied. And there was great joy to the Virgin Mother who had miscarried with them as though dead, and was receiving them back alive. For through them the majority of those who had denied were again brought to birth [1] and again conceived and quickened again, and learned to confess, and now alive and vigorous, made happy by God who wills not the death of the sinner, but is kind towards repentance, went to the judgement-seat, in order that they might again be interrogated by the governor. For Caesar had written that they should be tortured to death, but that if any should recant they should be let go, and at the beginning of the local feast (and this is widely attended by the concourse of all the heathen to it) the governor led them to the judgement-seat, making a show and spectacle of the blessed men to the mob. He accordingly examined them again, beheaded all who appeared to possess Roman citizenship, and sent the rest to the beasts. And Christ was greatly glorified by those who had formerly denied but then confessed contrary to the expectation of the people. For they were examined by themselves with the intention of then letting them

[1] The Greek text ἀνεμετροῦντο is meaningless. I have translated Schwartz's ἀνεμαιοῦντο, "brought to birth," though it is not quite satisfactory.

Digitized by Google

λογοῦντες προσετίθεντο τῷ τῶν μαρτύρων κλήρῳ·
Matt. 22, 11-13 ἔμειναν δὲ ἔξω οἱ μηδὲ ἴχνος πώποτε πίστεως μηδὲ
Rom. 2. 24 αἴσθησιν ἐνδύματος νυμφικοῦ μηδὲ ἔννοιαν φόβου
θεοῦ σχόντες, ἀλλὰ καὶ διὰ τῆς ἀναστροφῆς αὐτῶν
John 17, 12 βλασφημοῦντες τὴν ὁδόν, τοῦτ' ἐστὶν οἱ υἱοὶ τῆς
ἀπωλείας, οἱ δὲ λοιποὶ πάντες τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ προσ-
ετέθησαν· ὧν καὶ ἀνεταζομένων, Ἀλέξανδρός τις, 49
Φρυξ μὲν τὸ γένος, ἰατρὸς δὲ τὴν ἐπιστήμην,
πολλοῖς ἔτεσιν ἐν ταῖς Γαλλίαις διατρίψας καὶ
Acts 4, 29-31 γνωστὸς σχεδὸν πᾶσιν διὰ τὴν πρὸς θεὸν ἀγάπην
καὶ παρρησίαν τοῦ λόγου (ἦν γὰρ καὶ οὐκ ἄμοιρος
ἀποστολικοῦ χαρίσματος), παρεστὼς τῷ βήματι
καὶ νεύματι προτρέπων αὐτοὺς πρὸς τὴν ὁμολογίαν,
φανερὸς ἦν τοῖς περιεστηκόσιν τὸ βῆμα ὥσπερ
ὠδίνων. ἀγανακτήσαντες δὲ οἱ ὄχλοι ἐπὶ τῷ 50
τοὺς πρότερον ἠρνημένους αὖθις ὁμολογεῖν, κατε-
βόησαν τοῦ Ἀλεξάνδρου ὡς ἐκείνου τοῦτο ποιοῦντος,
καὶ ἐπιστήσαντος τοῦ ἡγεμόνος καὶ ἀνετάσαντος
αὐτὸν τίς εἴη, τοῦ δὲ φήσαντος ὅτι 'Χριστιανός,'
ἐν ὀργῇ γενόμενος κατέκρινεν αὐτὸν πρὸς θηρία.
καὶ τῇ ἐπιούσῃ εἰσῆλθεν μετὰ καὶ τοῦ Ἀττάλου,
καὶ γὰρ καὶ τὸν Ἄτταλον τῷ ὄχλῳ χαριζόμενος
ὁ ἡγεμὼν ἐξέδωκε πάλιν πρὸς θηρία· οἳ καὶ διὰ 51
πάντων διελθόντες τῶν ἐν τῷ ἀμφιθεάτρῳ πρὸς
κόλασιν ἐξηυρημένων ὀργάνων καὶ μέγιστον ὑπο-
μείναντες ἀγῶνα, τοὔσχατον ἐτύθησαν καὶ αὐτοί, τοῦ
μὲν Ἀλεξάνδρου μήτε στενάξαντος μήτε γρύξαντός
τι ὅλως, ἀλλὰ κατὰ καρδίαν ὁμιλοῦντος τῷ θεῷ,
ὁ δὲ Ἄτταλος, ὁπότε ἐπὶ τῆς σιδηρᾶς ἐπετέθη 52
καθέδρας καὶ περιεκαίετο, ἡνίκα ἡ ἀπὸ τοῦ
σώματος κνῖσα ἀνεφέρετο, ἔφη πρὸς τὸ πλῆθος
τῇ Ῥωμαϊκῇ φωνῇ 'ἰδοὺ τοῦτό ἐστιν ἀνθρώπους

Digitized by Google

go, but confessed and were added to the ranks of the martyrs. Those indeed remained without who had never had any vestige of faith, nor perception of the bridal garment, nor idea of the fear of God, but even through their behaviour blasphemed the Way—they are the sons of perdition — but all the rest were added to the church. When they too were being examined a certain Alexander, a Phrygian by race and a physician by profession, who had lived in Gaul for many years and was known to almost every one for his love toward God and boldness of speech (for he was not without a share of the apostolic gift), stood by the judgement-seat and by signs encouraged them to confession, and seemed to those who were standing by as though he were in travail. But the crowd, angry that those who had formerly denied were confessing again, howled at Alexander as though he were responsible for this. The governor summoned him and asked him who he was, and when he said 'a Christian,' he flew into a rage and condemned him to the beasts. And the next day he went into the arena together with Attalus; for to please the mob the governor had given Attalus back to the beasts. They passed through all the instruments of torture which were prepared in the amphitheatre, and endured a great contest. Finally they too were sacrificed. Alexander uttered neither groan nor moan at all, but conversed with God in his heart, and Attalus, when he was put on the iron chair and was being burned, and the reek arose from his body, said to the crowd in Latin, 'Lo, this which

Digitized by Google

ἐσθίειν, ὃ ποιεῖτε ὑμεῖς· ἡμεῖς δὲ οὔτε ἀνθρώπους ἐσθίομεν οὔθ' ἕτερόν τι πονηρὸν πράσσομεν.' ἐπερωτώμενος δὲ τί ὄνομα ἔχει ὁ θεός, ἀπεκρίθη 'ὁ θεὸς ὄνομα οὐκ ἔχει ὡς ἄνθρωπος.'

" 'Επὶ πᾶσι δὲ τούτοις τῇ ἐσχάτῃ λοιπὸν ἡμέρᾳ 53
τῶν μονομαχίων ἡ Βλανδῖνα πάλιν εἰσεκομίζετο μετὰ καὶ Ποντικοῦ, παιδαρίου ὡς πεντεκαίδεκα ἐτῶν, οἳ καὶ καθ' ἡμέραν εἰσήγοντο πρὸς τὸ βλέπειν τὴν τῶν λοιπῶν κόλασιν· καὶ ἠναγκάζοντο ὀμνύναι κατὰ τῶν εἰδώλων αὐτῶν, καὶ διὰ τὸ ἐμμένειν εὐσταθῶς καὶ ἐξουθενεῖν αὐτοὺς ἠγριώθη πρὸς αὐτοὺς τὸ πλῆθος, ὡς μήτε τὴν ἡλικίαν τοῦ παιδὸς οἰκτεῖραι μήτε τὸ γύναιον αἰδεσθῆναι, πρὸς 54
πάντα δὲ τὰ δεινὰ παρέβαλλον αὐτοὺς καὶ διὰ πάσης ἐν κύκλῳ διῆγον κολάσεως, ἐπαλλήλως ἀναγκάζοντες ὀμόσαι, ἀλλὰ μὴ δυνάμενοι τοῦτο πρᾶξαι. ὁ μὲν γὰρ Ποντικὸς ὑπὸ τῆς ἀδελφῆς παρωρμημένος, ὡς καὶ τὰ ἔθνη βλέπειν ὅτι ἐκείνη ἦν προτρεπομένη καὶ στηρίζουσα αὐτόν, πᾶσαν κόλασιν γενναίως ὑπομείνας ἀπέδωκεν τὸ πνεῦμα·
2 Macc. 7, 21-23. 27-29. 41
ἡ δὲ μακαρία Βλανδῖνα πάντων ἐσχάτη, καθάπερ 55
μήτηρ εὐγενὴς παρορμήσασα τὰ τέκνα καὶ νικηφόρους προπέμψασα πρὸς τὸν βασιλέα, ἀναμετρουμένη καὶ αὐτὴ πάντα τὰ τῶν παίδων ἀγωνίσματα ἔσπευδεν πρὸς αὐτούς, χαίρουσα καὶ ἀγαλλιωμένη ἐπὶ τῇ ἐξόδῳ, ὡς εἰς νυμφικὸν δεῖπνον κεκλημένη, ἀλλὰ μὴ πρὸς θηρία βεβλημένη· καὶ μετὰ τὰς μάστιγας, μετὰ τὰ θηρία, μετὰ τὸ 56
τήγανον, τοὔσχατον εἰς γυργαθὸν βληθεῖσα ταύρῳ παρεβλήθη, καὶ ἱκανῶς ἀναβληθεῖσα πρὸς τοῦ ζῴου μηδὲ αἴσθησιν ἔτι τῶν συμβαινόντων ἔχουσα διὰ τὴν ἐλπίδα καὶ ἐποχὴν τῶν πεπιστευμένων καὶ

Digitized by Google

you are doing is to eat men, but we neither eat men nor do anything else wicked.' And when he was asked what name God has, he replied, 'God has not a name as a man has.'

"In addition to all this, on the last day of the gladiatorial sports, Blandina was again brought in with Ponticus, a boy of about fifteen years old, and they had been brought in every day to see the torture of the others, and efforts were made to force them to swear by the idols, and the mob was furious against them because they had remained steadfast and disregarded them, so that there was neither pity for the youth of the boy nor respect for the sex of the woman. They exposed them to all the terrors and put them through every torture in turn, trying to make them swear, but not being able to do so. For Ponticus was encouraged by the Christian sister, so that even the heathen saw that she was exhorting and strengthening him, and after nobly enduring every torture he gave up his spirit. But the blessed Blandina, last of all, like a noble mother who had encouraged her children and sent them forth triumphant to the king, having herself endured all the tortures of the children, hastened to them, rejoicing and glad at her departure as though invited to a marriage feast rather than cast to the beasts. And after scourging, after the beasts, after the gridiron, she was at last put in a net and thrown to a bull. She was tossed about a long time by the beast, having no more feeling for what happened to her through her hope and hold on what had been en-

Digitized by Google

ὁμιλίαν πρὸς Χριστόν, ἐτύθη καὶ αὐτή, καὶ αὐτῶν ὁμολογούντων τῶν ἐθνῶν ὅτι μηδεπώποτε παρ' αὐτοῖς γυνὴ τοιαῦτα καὶ τοσαῦτα ἔπαθεν.

" 'Αλλ' οὐδ' οὕτως κόρον ἐλάμβανεν αὐτῶν ἡ 57
μανία καὶ ἡ πρὸς τοὺς ἁγίους ὠμότης. ὑπὸ γὰρ ἀγρίου θηρὸς ἄγρια καὶ βάρβαρα φῦλα ταραχθέντα δυσπαύστως εἶχεν, καὶ ἄλλην ἰδίαν ἀρχὴν ἐπὶ τοῖς σώμασιν ἐλάμβανεν ἡ ὕβρις αὐτῶν· τὸ γὰρ νενικῆ- 58
σθαι αὐτοὺς οὐκ ἐδυσώπει διὰ τὸ μὴ ἔχειν ἀνθρώπινον ἐπιλογισμόν, μᾶλλον δὲ καὶ ἐξέκαιεν αὐτῶν τὴν ὀργὴν καθάπερ θηρίου, καὶ τοῦ ἡγεμόνος καὶ τοῦ δήμου τὸ ὅμοιον εἰς ἡμᾶς ἄδικον ἐπιδεικ-
Rev. 22, 11 νυμένων μῖσος, ἵνα ἡ γραφὴ πληρωθῇ 'ὁ ἄνομος ἀνομησάτω ἔτι, καὶ ὁ δίκαιος δικαιωθήτω ἔτι.' καὶ γὰρ τοὺς ἐναποπνιγέντας τῇ εἱρκτῇ παρ- 59
έβαλλον κυσίν, ἐπιμελῶς παραφυλάσσοντες νύκτωρ καὶ μεθ' ἡμέραν μὴ κηδευθῇ τις ὑφ' ἡμῶν· καὶ τότε δὴ προθέντες τά τε τῶν θηρίων τά τε τοῦ πυρὸς λείψανα, πῇ μὲν ἐσπαραγμένα, πῇ δὲ ἠνθρακευμένα, καὶ τῶν λοιπῶν τὰς κεφαλὰς σὺν τοῖς ἀποτμήμασιν αὐτῶν ὡσαύτως ἀτάφους παρ-
εφύλαττον μετὰ στρατιωτικῆς ἐπιμελείας ἡμέραις
Acts 7, 54 συχναῖς. καὶ οἱ μὲν ἐνέβριμοῦντο καὶ ἔβρυχον 60
τοὺς ὀδόντας ἐπ' αὐτοῖς, ζητοῦντές τινα περισσοτέραν ἐκδίκησιν παρ' αὐτῶν λαβεῖν, οἱ δὲ ἐνεγέλων καὶ ἐπετώθαζον, μεγαλύνοντες ἅμα τὰ εἴδωλα αὐτῶν καὶ ἐκείνοις προσάπτοντες τὴν τούτων τιμωρίαν, οἱ δὲ ἐπιεικέστεροι καὶ κατὰ ποσὸν συμπαθεῖν δοκοῦντες ὠνείδιζον πολύ, λέγοντες 'ποῦ ὁ θεὸς αὐτῶν καὶ τί αὐτοὺς ὤνησεν ἡ θρησκεία, ἣν καὶ πρὸ τῆς ἑαυτῶν εἵλαντο ψυχῆς;' καὶ τὰ μὲν ἀπ' ἐκείνων τοιαύτην εἶχε τὴν ποικιλίαν, 61

Digitized by Google

trusted to her and her converse with Christ. And so she too was sacrificed, and the heathen themselves confessed that never before among them had a woman suffered so much and so long.

"Not even thus was their madness and cruelty to the saints satisfied, for, incited by a wild beast,[1] wild and barbarous tribes could scarcely stop, and their violence began again in a new way on the bodies; for that they had been conquered[2] did not shame them, because they had no human reason, but it rather inflamed their wrath as of a wild beast, and the governor and the people showed the like unrighteous hatred against us that the Scripture might be fulfilled, 'Let him that is unlawful be unlawful still, and he that is righteous be righteous still.' For those who had been strangled in the jail they threw to the dogs, and watched carefully night and day that none should be cared for by us. Then they threw out the remains left by the beasts and by the fire, torn and charred, and for many days watched with a military guard the heads of the rest, together with their trunks, all unburied. And some raged and gnashed their teeth at the remains, seeking some further vengeance from them, others laughed and jeered, glorifying their idols and ascribing to them the punishment of the Christians, and the gentler, who seemed to have a little sympathy, mocked greatly, saying, 'Where is their god and what good to them was their worship, which they preferred beyond their lives?' Their conduct thus

[1] That is, by the Devil.

[2] Because they had been unable to break the courage of the martyrs.

Digitized by Google

τὰ δὲ καθ' ἡμᾶς ἐν μεγάλῳ καθειστήκει πένθει διὰ τὸ μὴ δύνασθαι τὰ σώματα κρύψαι τῇ γῇ· οὔτε γὰρ νὺξ συνεβάλλετο ἡμῖν πρὸς τοῦτο οὔτε ἀργύρια ἔπειθεν οὔτε λιτανεία ἐδυσώπει, παντὶ δὲ τρόπῳ παρετήρουν, ὡς μέγα τι κερδανοῦντες, εἰ μὴ τύχοιεν ταφῆς."

62 Τούτοις ἑξῆς μεθ' ἕτερά φασιν· "τὰ οὖν σώματα τῶν μαρτύρων παντοίως παραδειγματισθέντα καὶ αἰθριασθέντα ἐπὶ ἡμέρας ἕξ, μετέπειτα καέντα καὶ αἰθαλωθέντα ὑπὸ τῶν ἀνόμων κατεσαρώθη εἰς τὸν Ῥοδανὸν ποταμὸν πλησίον παραρρέοντα, ὅπως μηδὲ λείψανον αὐτῶν φαίνηται ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς ἔτι. 63 καὶ ταῦτ' ἔπραττον ὡς δυνάμενοι νικῆσαι τὸν θεὸν καὶ ἀφελέσθαι αὐτῶν τὴν παλιγγενεσίαν, ἵνα, ὡς ἔλεγον ἐκεῖνοι, 'μηδὲ ἐλπίδα σχῶσιν ἀναστάσεως, ἐφ' ᾗ πεποιθότες ξένην τινὰ καὶ καινὴν εἰσάγουσιν ἡμῖν θρησκείαν καὶ καταφρονοῦσι τῶν δεινῶν, ἕτοιμοι καὶ μετὰ χαρᾶς ἥκοντες ἐπὶ τὸν θάνατον· νῦν ἴδωμεν εἰ ἀναστήσονται καὶ εἰ δύναται βοηθῆσαι αὐτοῖς ὁ θεὸς αὐτῶν καὶ ἐξελέσθαι ἐκ τῶν χειρῶν ἡμῶν.'"

II. Τοιαῦτα καὶ τὰ κατὰ τὸν δεδηλωμένον αὐτο- 1
κράτορα ταῖς Χριστοῦ συμβέβηκεν ἐκκλησίαις, ἀφ' ὧν καὶ τὰ ἐν ταῖς λοιπαῖς ἐπαρχίαις ἐνηργημένα εἰκότι λογισμῷ στοχάζεσθαι πάρεστιν. ἄξιον τούτοις ἐκ τῆς αὐτῆς ἐπισυνάψαι γραφῆς λέξεις ἑτέρας, δι' ὧν τὸ ἐπιεικὲς καὶ φιλάνθρωπον τῶν δεδηλωμένων μαρτύρων ἀναγέγραπται τούτοις αὐτοῖς τοῖς ῥήμασιν· "οἳ καὶ ἐπὶ τοσοῦτον ζηλωταὶ 2
Phil. 2, 6 καὶ μιμηταὶ Χριστοῦ ἐγένοντο, ὃς ἐν μορφῇ θεοῦ ὑπάρχων οὐχ ἁρπαγμὸν ἡγήσατο τὸ εἶναι ἴσα θεῷ, ὥστε ἐν τοιαύτῃ δόξῃ ὑπάρχοντες καὶ οὐχ ἅπαξ

Digitized by Google

varied, but in our circle great grief obtained, because we could not bury the bodies in the earth, for night did not avail us for this, nor did money persuade nor entreaty shame, but in every way they watched, as though they would make some great gain, that the bodies should not obtain burial."

Further on they say: "Thus the bodies of the martyrs, after having been exposed and insulted in every way for six days, and afterwards burned and turned to ashes, were swept by the wicked into the river Rhone which flows near by, that not even a relic of them might still appear upon the earth. And this they did as though they could conquer God and take away their rebirth in order, as they said, 'that they might not even have any hope of resurrection, through trusting in which they have brought in strange and new worship and despised terrors, going readily and with joy to death; now let us see if they will rise again, and if their God be able to help them and to take them out of our hands.'"

II. Such things happened to the churches of Christ under the emperor mentioned, and from them it is possible to form a reasonable conclusion as to what was done in the other provinces. It is worth while to add other statements from the same document, in which the gentleness and the kindness of the martyrs already mentioned have been set down in these very words. "And they carried so far their zeal and imitation of Christ, 'who being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God,' that for all their glory, and though they had

Digitized by Google

οὐδὲ δὶς ἀλλὰ πολλάκις μαρτυρήσαντες καὶ ἐκ θηρίων αὖθις ἀναληφθέντες καὶ τὰ καυτήρια καὶ τοὺς μώλωπας καὶ τὰ τραύματα ἔχοντες περικείμενα, οὔτ' αὐτοὶ μάρτυρας ἑαυτοὺς ἀνεκήρυττον οὔτε μὴν ἡμῖν ἐπέτρεπον τούτῳ τῷ ὀνόματι προσαγορεύειν αὐτούς, ἀλλ' εἴ ποτέ τις ἡμῶν δι' ἐπιστολῆς ἢ διὰ λόγου μάρτυρας αὐτοὺς προσεῖπεν, ἐπέπλησσον πικρῶς. ἤδεως γὰρ παρεχώρουν τὴν 3
Rev. 3, 14 τῆς μαρτυρίας προσηγορίαν τῷ Χριστῷ, τῷ πιστῷ
Rev. 1, 5 καὶ ἀληθινῷ μάρτυρι καὶ πρωτοτόκῳ τῶν νεκρῶν
Acts 3, 15 καὶ ἀρχηγῷ τῆς ζωῆς τοῦ θεοῦ, καὶ ἐπεμιμνήσκοντο τῶν ἐξεληλυθότων ἤδη μαρτύρων καὶ ἔλεγον 'ἐκεῖνοι ἤδη μάρτυρες, οὓς ἐν τῇ ὁμολογίᾳ Χριστὸς ἠξίωσεν ἀναληφθῆναι, ἐπισφραγισάμενος αὐτῶν διὰ τῆς ἐξόδου τὴν μαρτυρίαν, ἡμεῖς δὲ ὁμόλογοι μέτριοι καὶ ταπεινοί,' καὶ μετὰ δακρύων παρεκάλουν τοὺς ἀδελφοὺς δεόμενοι ἵνα ἐκτενεῖς εὐχαὶ γίνωνται πρὸς τὸ τελειωθῆναι αὐτούς. καὶ τὴν 4
μὲν δύναμιν τῆς μαρτυρίας ἔργῳ ἐπεδείκνυντο, πολλὴν παρρησίαν ἄγοντες πρὸς τὰ ἔθνη, καὶ τὴν εὐγένειαν διὰ τῆς ὑπομονῆς καὶ ἀφοβίας καὶ ἀτρομίας φανερὰν ἐποίουν, τὴν δὲ πρὸς τοὺς ἀδελφοὺς τῶν μαρτύρων προσηγορίαν παρῃτοῦντο, ἐμπεπλησμένοι φόβου θεοῦ."

1 Peter 5, 6 Καὶ αὖθις μετὰ βραχέα φασίν· "ἐταπείνουν 5
ἑαυτοὺς ὑπὸ τὴν κραταιὰν χεῖρα, ὑφ' ἧς ἱκανῶς νῦν εἰσιν ὑψωμένοι. τότε δὲ πᾶσι μὲν ἀπελογοῦντο, κατηγόρουν δὲ οὐδενός· ἔλυον ἅπαντας, ἐδέσμευον

[1] Or "witness." The translation of all this passage is rendered difficult by the impossibility of translating the Greek word *μαρτύς* by the same English word in all passages. "Martyr" has been adopted so far as possible but the sense of "witness" is much more present than it is in the English

Digitized by Google

testified not once or twice but many times, and had been taken back from the beasts and were covered with burns and scars and wounds, they neither proclaimed themselves as martyrs, nor allowed us to address them by this title. But if ever any one of us called them martyrs either in a letter or in speech they rebuked him sharply. For they gladly conceded the title of martyrdom to Christ, the faithful and true martyr[1] and first-born from the dead and author of the life of God. And they reminded us of the martyrs who had already passed away, and said 'they are already martyrs, whom Christ vouchsafed to be taken up at their confession, and sealed their witness by their departure, but we are lowly and humble confessors.'[2] And they besought the brethren with tears, begging that earnest prayers might be made for their consecration. The power of martyrdom they actually showed, having great boldness towards the heathen, and they made plain their nobleness by endurance and absence of fear or timidity; but the title of martyr they refused from the brethren, for they were filled with the fear of God."

A little further on they say: "They humbled themselves under the mighty hand and by it they have now been greatly exalted. At that time they made defence for all men, against none did they bring accusation; they released all and bound none;

word, for though it is used in a more or less technical sense, it does not as yet imply death.

[2] The sense must be as given above, but the Greek word does not appear to be used in this sense. It is corrected in later manuscripts to ὁμολογηταί. Schwartz thinks that it is a primitive error for ὁμολογο[ῦντες ἐτ]ι, and Wendland suggested ὁμόδουλοι.

Digitized by Google

δὲ οὐδένα· καὶ ὑπὲρ τῶν τὰ δεινὰ διατιθέντων
Acts 7, 60 ἠύχοντο, καθάπερ Στέφανος ὁ τέλειος μάρτυς
'κύριε, μὴ στήσῃς αὐτοῖς τὴν ἁμαρτίαν ταύτην.'
εἰ δ' ὑπὲρ τῶν λιθαζόντων ἐδέετο, πόσῳ μᾶλλον
ὑπὲρ τῶν ἀδελφῶν."

Καὶ αὖθίς φασι μεθ' ἕτερα· "οὗτος γὰρ καὶ 6
μέγιστος αὐτοῖς πρὸς αὐτὸν ὁ πόλεμος ἐγένετο
διὰ τὸ γνήσιον τῆς ἀγάπης, ἵνα ἀποπνιχθεὶς ὁ θὴρ
οὓς πρότερον ᾤετο καταπεπωκέναι, ζῶντας ἐξεμέσῃ.
Gal. 6, 4 οὐ γὰρ ἔλαβον καύχημα κατὰ τῶν πεπτωκότων,
ἀλλ' ἐν οἷς ἐπλεόναζον αὐτοί, τοῦτο τοῖς ἐνδεε-
στέροις ἐπήρκουν μητρικὰ σπλάγχνα ἔχοντες, καὶ
πολλὰ περὶ αὐτῶν ἐκχέοντες δάκρυα πρὸς τὸν
πατέρα, ζωὴν ᾐτήσαντο, καὶ ἔδωκεν αὐτοῖς· ἣν 7
καὶ συνεμερίσαντο τοῖς πλησίον, κατὰ πάντα
νικηφόροι πρὸς θεὸν ἀπελθόντες. εἰρήνην ἀγα-
πήσαντες ἀεὶ καὶ εἰρήνην ἡμῖν παρεγγυήσαντες,
μετ' εἰρήνης ἐχώρησαν πρὸς θεόν, μὴ καταλιπόντες
πόνον τῇ μητρὶ μηδὲ στάσιν καὶ πόλεμον τοῖς
ἀδελφοῖς ἀλλὰ χαρὰν καὶ εἰρήνην καὶ ὁμόνοιαν
καὶ ἀγάπην." ταῦτα καὶ περὶ τῆς τῶν μακαρίων 8
ἐκείνων πρὸς τοὺς παραπεπτωκότας τῶν ἀδελφῶν
στοργῆς ὠφελίμως προκείσθω τῆς ἀπανθρώπου
καὶ ἀνηλεοῦς ἕνεκα διαθέσεως τῶν μετὰ ταῦτα
ἀφειδῶς τοῖς Χριστοῦ μέλεσιν προσενηνεγμένων.

III. Ἡ δ' αὐτὴ τῶν προειρημένων μαρτύρων 1
γραφὴ καὶ ἄλλην τινὰ μνήμης ἀξίαν ἱστορίαν περι-
έχει, ἣν καὶ οὐδεὶς ἂν γένοιτο φθόνος μὴ οὐχὶ τῶν

[1] The "beast" is the Devil, and those whom he had swallowed are those who had at first recanted; the hope of the confessors was to regain backsliders and so rescue them from the Devil's maw. [2] That is, the Church.

Digitized by Google

and they prayed for those who had inflicted torture, even as did Stephen, the perfect martyr, 'Lord, lay not this sin to their charge.' And if he prayed for those who were stoning him, how much more for the brethren?"

And again after other details, they say: "For their greatest contest, through the genuineness of their love, was this, that the beast[1] should be choked into throwing up alive those whom he had at first thought to have swallowed down. For they did not boast over the fallen, but from their own abundance supplied with a mother's love those that needed, and shedding many tears for them to the Father, they prayed for life, and he gave it to them, and they divided it among their neighbours, and then departed to God, having in all things carried off the victory. They ever loved peace; peace they commended to us; and with peace they departed to God; for their mother[2] they left behind no sorrow, and for the brethren no strife and war, but glory, peace, concord, and love." Let this profitable extract suffice concerning the love of those blessed ones for their brethren who had fallen, for the sake of the inhuman and merciless disposition of those who after these events acted unsparingly to the members of Christ.[3]

III. The same document of the aforementioned martyrs contains also another story worthy of memory, and none could grudge our bringing it to

[3] Eusebius wishes to emphasize the charity of these martyrs towards backsliders in contrast to the hardness of soul of his own contemporaries, notably the Donatists and Novatians.

Digitized by Google

ἐντευξομένων εἰς γνῶσιν προθεῖναι· ἔχει δὲ οὕτως.
'Αλκιβιάδου γάρ τινος ἐξ αὐτῶν πάνυ αὐχμηρὸν 2
βιοῦντος βίον καὶ μηδενὸς ὅλως τὸ πρότερον
μεταλαμβάνοντος, ἀλλ' ἢ ἄρτῳ μόνῳ καὶ ὕδατι
χρωμένου πειρωμένου τε καὶ ἐν τῇ εἱρκτῇ οὕτω
διάγειν, 'Αττάλῳ μετὰ τὸν πρῶτον ἀγῶνα ὃν ἐν
τῷ ἀμφιθεάτρῳ ἤνυσεν, ἀπεκαλύφθη ὅτι μὴ καλῶς
ποιοίη ὁ 'Αλκιβιάδης μὴ χρώμενος τοῖς κτίσμασι
τοῦ θεοῦ καὶ ἄλλοις τύπον σκανδάλου ὑπολειπόμε-
νος. πεισθεὶς δὲ ὁ 'Αλκιβιάδης πάντων ἀνέδην 3
μετελάμβανεν καὶ ηὐχαρίστει τῷ θεῷ· οὐ γὰρ
ἀνεπίσκεπτοι χάριτος θεοῦ ἦσαν, ἀλλὰ τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ
ἅγιον ἦν σύμβουλον αὐτοῖς. καὶ ταῦτα μὲν ὠδὶ
ἐχέτω.

Τῶν δ' ἀμφὶ τὸν Μοντανὸν καὶ 'Αλκιβιάδην καὶ 4
Θεόδοτον περὶ τὴν Φρυγίαν ἄρτι τότε πρῶτον τὴν
περὶ τοῦ προφητεύειν ὑπόληψιν παρὰ πολλοῖς
ἐκφερομένων (πλεῖσται γὰρ οὖν καὶ ἄλλαι παρα-
δοξοποιίαι τοῦ θείου χαρίσματος εἰς ἔτι τότε
κατὰ διαφόρους ἐκκλησίας ἐκτελούμεναι πίστιν
παρὰ πολλοῖς τοῦ κἀκείνους προφητεύειν παρεῖχον)
καὶ δὴ διαφωνίας ὑπαρχούσης περὶ τῶν δεδηλω-
μένων, αὖθις οἱ κατὰ τὴν Γαλλίαν ἀδελφοὶ τὴν
ἰδίαν κρίσιν καὶ περὶ τούτων εὐλαβῆ καὶ ὀρθο-
δοξοτάτην ὑποτάττουσιν, ἐκθέμενοι καὶ τῶν παρ'
αὐτοῖς τελειωθέντων μαρτύρων διαφόρους ἐπι-
στολάς, ἃς ἐν δεσμοῖς ἔτι ὑπάρχοντες τοῖς ἐπ'
'Ασίας καὶ Φρυγίας ἀδελφοῖς διεχάραξαν, οὐ μὴν
ἀλλὰ καὶ 'Ελευθέρῳ τῷ τότε 'Ρωμαίων ἐπισκόπῳ,
τῆς τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν εἰρήνης ἕνεκα πρεσβεύοντες.

Digitized by Google

the knowledge of those who are about to study. It runs thus: There was among them a certain Alcibiades, who was living a very austere life, and at first was not partaking of anything at all, but used merely bread and water and was trying to live thus even in the jail. But it was revealed to Attalus after the first contest which he underwent in the amphitheatre that Alcibiades was not doing well in not making use of the creations of God, and offering an example of offence [1] to others. Alcibiades was persuaded and began to partake of everything without restraint and gave thanks to God; for they were not without help from the grace of God but the Holy Spirit was their counsellor. Let this suffice for this point.

Just at that time the party of Montanus and Alcibiades and Theodotus in Phrygia began first to engender among many their views concerning prophecy (for the many other wonderful works of the grace of God which were still being wrought up to that time in divers churches produced the belief among many that they also were prophets), and when dissension arose about the persons mentioned the brethren in Gaul again formulated their own judgement, pious and most orthodox, concerning them, subjoining various letters from the martyrs who had been consecrated among them, which letters while they were still in prison they had composed for the brethren in Asia and Phrygia, and also for Eleutherus, who was then bishop of the Romans, and so they were ambassadors for the sake of the peace of the churches.

[1] An "example of offence" because it might seem to support the heretical doctrine that matter is evil, as some Gnostics maintained.

Digitized by Google

IV. Οἱ δ' αὐτοὶ μάρτυρες καὶ τὸν Εἰρηναῖον, πρεσ- 1
βύτερον ἤδη τότ' ὄντα τῆς ἐν Λουγδούνῳ παροικίας,
τῷ δηλωθέντι κατὰ Ῥώμην ἐπισκόπῳ συνίστων,
πλεῖστα τῷ ἀνδρὶ μαρτυροῦντες, ὡς αἱ τοῦτον
ἔχουσαι τὸν τρόπον δηλοῦσι φωναί· "χαίρειν ἐν 2
θεῷ σε πάλιν εὐχόμεθα καὶ ἀεί, πάτερ Ἐλεύθερε.
Rev. 1, 9 ταῦτά σοι τὰ γράμματα προετρεψάμεθα τὸν
ἀδελφὸν ἡμῶν καὶ κοινωνὸν Εἰρηναῖον διακομίσαι,
καὶ παρακαλοῦμεν ἔχειν σε αὐτὸν ἐν παραθέσει,
ζηλωτὴν ὄντα τῆς διαθήκης Χριστοῦ. εἰ γὰρ
ᾔδειμεν τόπον τινὶ δικαιοσύνην περιποιεῖσθαι, ὡς
πρεσβύτερον ἐκκλησίας, ὅπερ ἐστὶν ἐπ' αὐτῷ, ἐν
πρώτοις ἂν παρεθέμεθα."

Τί δεῖ καταλέγειν τὸν ἐν τῇ δηλωθείσῃ γραφῇ 3
τῶν μαρτύρων κατάλογον, ἰδίᾳ μὲν τῶν ἀποτμήσει
κεφαλῆς τετελειωμένων, ἰδίᾳ δὲ τῶν θηρσὶν εἰς
βορὰν παραβεβλημένων, καὶ αὖθις τῶν ἐπὶ τῆς
εἱρκτῆς κεκοιμημένων, τόν τε ἀριθμὸν τῶν εἰς
ἔτι τότε περιόντων ὁμολογητῶν; ὅτῳ γὰρ φίλον,
καὶ ταῦτα ῥᾴδιον πληρέστατα διαγνῶναι μετὰ
χεῖρας ἀναλαβόντι τὸ σύγγραμμα, ὃ καὶ αὐτὸ τῇ
τῶν μαρτύρων συναγωγῇ πρὸς ἡμῶν, ὡς γοῦν
ἔφην, κατείληκται. ἀλλὰ τὰ μὲν ἐπ' Ἀντωνίνου
τοιαῦτα.

V. Τούτου δὴ ἀδελφὸν Μάρκον Αὐρήλιον Καίσαρα 1
λόγος ἔχει Γερμανοῖς καὶ Σαρμάταις ἀντιπαρα-
τατόμενον μάχῃ, δίψει πιεζομένης αὐτοῦ τῆς
στρατιᾶς, ἐν ἀμηχανίᾳ γενέσθαι· τοὺς δ' ἐπὶ τῆς
Μελιτηνῆς οὕτω καλουμένης λεγεῶνος στρατιώτας
διὰ πίστεως ἐξ ἐκείνου καὶ εἰς δεῦρο συνεστώσης
ἐν τῇ πρὸς τοὺς πολεμίους παρατάξει γόνυ θέντας
ἐπὶ γῆν κατὰ τὸ οἰκεῖον ἡμῖν τῶν εὐχῶν ἔθος ἐπὶ

Digitized by Google

IV. Irenaeus also, who was at that time already a presbyter of the diocese at Lyons, the same martyrs commended to the afore-mentioned bishop of Rome, and gave him much good testimony, as is shown by words to the following effect: "Once more and always, Father Eleutherus, we wish you greeting in God. We have asked our brother and companion, Irenaeus, to bring this letter to you and we beg you to hold him in esteem, for he is zealous for the covenant of Christ. For had we known that rank can confer righteousness on anyone, we should first of all have recommended him as being a presbyter of the church, for that is his position."

What need is there to transcribe the list of the martyrs in the above mentioned document, some consecrated by beheading, some cast out to be eaten by the wild beasts, others who fell asleep in the jail, and the number of the confessors which still survived at that time? For whoever wishes can easily read the full account by taking the description which has been included in our collection of martyrs,[1] as I said before. Such were the events which happened under Antoninus.

V. It is said that when his brother, Marcus Aurelius Caesar, was engaging in battle with the Germans and Sarmatians, he was in difficulties, because his army was oppressed by thirst; but the soldiers of the legion which is called after Melitene,[2] knelt on the ground according to our own custom of prayer, in the faith which has sustained them from that time to this in their contests with their enemies, and turned

[1] See Introduction, p. xxiii.
[2] Melitene is in eastern Cappadocia.

Digitized by Google

τὰς πρὸς τὸν θεὸν ἱκεσίας τραπέσθαι, παραδόξου 2
δὲ τοῖς πολεμίοις τοῦ τοιούτου δὴ θεάματος
φανέντος, ἄλλο τι λόγος ἔχει παραδοξότερον ἐπι-
καταλαβεῖν αὐτίκα, σκηπτὸν μὲν εἰς φυγὴν καὶ
ἀπώλειαν συνελαύνοντα τοὺς πολεμίους, ὄμβρον δὲ
ἐπὶ τὴν τῶν τὸ θεῖον παρακεκληκότων στρατιάν,
πᾶσαν αὐτὴν ἐκ τοῦ δίψους μέλλουσαν ὅσον οὔπω
διαφθείρεσθαι ἀνακτώμενον.

Ἡ δ' ἱστορία φέρεται μὲν καὶ παρὰ τοῖς πόρρω 3
τοῦ καθ' ἡμᾶς λόγου συγγραφεῦσιν οἷς μέλον
γέγονεν τῆς κατὰ τοὺς δηλουμένους γραφῆς,
δεδήλωται δὲ καὶ πρὸς τῶν ἡμετέρων. ἀλλὰ τοῖς
μὲν ἔξωθεν ἱστορικοῖς, ἅτε τῆς πίστεως ἀνοικείοις,
τέθειται μὲν τὸ παράδοξον, οὐ μὴν καὶ ταῖς τῶν
ἡμετέρων εὐχαῖς τοῦθ' ὡμολογήθη γεγονέναι· τοῖς
δέ γε ἡμετέροις, ἅτε ἀληθείας φίλοις, ἁπλῷ καὶ
ἀκακοήθει τρόπῳ τὸ πραχθὲν παραδέδοται. τού- 4
των δ' ἂν εἴη καὶ Ἀπολινάριος, ἐξ ἐκείνου φήσας
τὴν δι' εὐχῆς τὸ παράδοξον πεποιηκυῖαν λεγεῶνα
οἰκείαν τῷ γεγονότι πρὸς τοῦ βασιλέως εἰληφέναι
προσηγορίαν, κεραυνοβόλον τῇ Ῥωμαίων ἐπι-
κληθεῖσαν φωνῇ. μάρτυς δὲ τούτων γένοιτ' ἂν 5
ἀξιόχρεως ὁ Τερτυλλιανός, τὴν Ῥωμαϊκὴν τῇ
συγκλήτῳ προσφωνήσας ὑπὲρ τῆς πίστεως ἀπο-
λογίαν, ἧς καὶ πρόσθεν ἐμνημονεύσαμεν, τήν τε
ἱστορίαν βεβαιῶν σὺν ἀποδείξει μείζονι καὶ ἐναρ-
γεστέρᾳ· γράφει δ' οὖν καὶ αὐτός, λέγων Μάρκου 6
τοῦ συνετωτάτου βασιλέως ἐπιστολὰς εἰς ἔτι νῦν
φέρεσθαι ἐν αἷς αὐτὸς μαρτυρεῖ ἐν Γερμανίᾳ

Tertull. *Apol.* 5

[1] Dio Cassius, lxxi. 8, who ascribes the miracle to the Egyptian magician, Arnuphis. Capitolinus in the life of Marcus Aurelius ascribes it to the prayer of the emperor, and

Digitized by Google

towards supplications to God. Now though this kind of spectacle seemed strange to the enemy, the story goes that another still more marvellous overcame them at once, for lightning drove the enemy to flight and destruction, and a shower falling on the army which had prayed to God, refreshed them all when they were on the point of destruction from thirst.

The story is both told among writers who are foreign to our faith who have undertaken to write of the times of the above mentioned emperors,[1] and has also been recorded by Christians. By the heathen writers, inasmuch as they were strangers to the faith, the miracle is related, but it was not confessed that it happened through the prayers of the Christians; but in our own writers, inasmuch as they are the friends of truth, what happened has been described in a simple and harmless fashion. Among these would be also Apolinarius, who states that after that time the legion which had wrought the miracle through prayer had received a name from the emperor appropriate to what had happened, and was called in Latin the "Thundering Legion."[2] Tertullian is also a worthy witness of these things, who in addressing in Latin an apology for our faith to the Senate, which we have quoted already, confirmed the story with more and clearer proof. In his writing he says that letters of Marcus, the most prudent emperor, were still extant, in which he testifies himself that when his army was on the point

the emperor himself on his coins represents Jupiter as hurling thunderbolts against the Germans.

[2] But from Dio Cassius and from inscriptions, it would appear that the legion had certainly this name in the time of Nero, and probably in that of Augustus.

Digitized by Google

ὕδατος ἀπορίᾳ μέλλοντα αὐτοῦ τὸν στρατὸν διαφθείρεσθαι ταῖς τῶν Χριστιανῶν εὐχαῖς σεσῶσθαι, τοῦτον δέ φησιν καὶ θάνατον ἀπειλῆσαι τοῖς κατηγορεῖν ἡμῶν ἐπιχειροῦσιν· οἷς ὁ δηλωθεὶς ἀνὴρ καὶ ταῦτα προσεπιλέγει· "ποταποὶ οὖν οἱ 7
νόμοι οὗτοι, οὓς καθ' ἡμῶν μόνων ἔπονται ἀσεβεῖς ἄδικοι ὠμοί; οὓς οὔτε Οὐεσπασιανὸς ἐφύλαξεν, καίτοι γε Ἰουδαίους νικήσας, οὓς Τραϊανὸς ἐκ μέρους ἐξουθένησεν, κωλύων ἐκζητεῖσθαι Χριστιανούς, οὓς οὔτε Ἀδριανός, καίτοι γε πάντα τὰ περίεργα πολυπραγμονῶν, οὔτε ὁ Εὐσεβὴς ἐπικληθεὶς ἐπεκύρωσεν." ἀλλὰ ταῦτα μὲν ὅπῃ τις ἐθέλοι, τιθέσθω· μετίωμεν δ' ἡμεῖς ἐπὶ τὴν τῶν ἑξῆς ἀκολουθίαν.

Ποθεινοῦ δὴ ἐφ' ὅλοις τῆς ζωῆς ἔτεσιν ἐνενήκοντα 8
σὺν τοῖς ἐπὶ Γαλλίας μαρτυρήσασιν τελειωθέντος, Εἰρηναῖος τῆς κατὰ Λούγδουνον ἧς ὁ Ποθεινὸς ἡγεῖτο παροικίας τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν διαδέχεται· Πολυκάρπου δὲ τοῦτον ἀκουστὴν γενέσθαι κατὰ τὴν νέαν ἐμανθάνομεν ἡλικίαν. οὗτος τῶν ἐπὶ Ῥώμης 9
τὴν διαδοχὴν ἐπισκόπων ἐν τρίτῃ συντάξει τῶν πρὸς τὰς αἱρέσεις παραθέμενος, εἰς Ἐλεύθερον, οὗ τὰ κατὰ τοὺς χρόνους ἡμῖν ἐξετάζεται, ὡς ἂν δὴ κατ' αὐτὸν σπουδαζομένης αὐτῷ τῆς γραφῆς,
Iren. 3, 3. 3 τὸν κατάλογον ἵστησι, γράφων ὧδε· VI. "θεμελιώ- 1
σαντες οὖν καὶ οἰκοδομήσαντες οἱ μακάριοι ἀπόστολοι τὴν ἐκκλησίαν, Λίνῳ τὴν τῆς ἐπισκοπῆς
2 Tim. 4, 21 λειτουργίαν ἐνεχείρισαν· τούτου τοῦ Λίνου Παῦλος ἐν ταῖς πρὸς Τιμόθεον ἐπιστολαῖς μέμνηται. διαδέχεται δ' αὐτὸν Ἀνέγκλητος, μετὰ τοῦτον δὲ 2
τρίτῳ τόπῳ ἀπὸ τῶν ἀποστόλων τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν κληροῦται Κλήμης, ὁ καὶ ἑορακὼς τοὺς μακαρίους

Digitized by Google

of destruction in Germany from lack of water it had been saved by the prayers of the Christians, and Tertullian says that the emperor also threatened death to those who attempted to accuse us. The author goes on as follows: "What kind of laws are these which wicked, unrighteous, and cruel men use against us alone? Vespasian did not observe them although he conquered the Jews. Trajan partially allowed them, but forbade Christians to be sought out. Neither Hadrian, though busy in all curious matters, nor Pius, as he is called, ratified them." But let these things be as anyone will, we must pass on to the train of further events.

When Pothinus was consecrated with the martyrs in Gaul at the age of full ninety years, Irenaeus received the episcopacy of the diocese in Lyons,[1] of which Pothinus had been the head, and we have been told that he had been a listener to Polycarp in his early youth. In his third book against the heresies he gives the succession of the bishops in Rome as far as Eleutherus, the events of whose days are now being discussed by us, as though his book had been composed at that time, and he gives the list, writing as follows. VI. "Therefore when the blessed apostles had found and built the church they gave the ministry of the episcopate to Linus. Paul mentioned this Linus in his epistle to Timothy. Anencletus succeeded him, and after him Clement obtained the episcopate in the third place from the apostles. He had seen the blessed apostles and

[1] That is, in A.D. 177. *Cf.* v. 1. 1, p. 407.

Digitized by Google

ἀποστόλους καὶ συμβεβληκὼς αὐτοῖς καὶ ἔτι ἔναυλον τὸ κήρυγμα τῶν ἀποστόλων καὶ τὴν παράδοσιν πρὸ ὀφθαλμῶν ἔχων, οὐ μόνος· ἔτι γὰρ πολλοὶ ὑπελείποντο τότε ὑπὸ τῶν ἀποστόλων δεδιδαγμένοι. ἐπὶ τούτου οὖν τοῦ Κλήμεντος 3
στάσεως οὐκ ὀλίγης τοῖς ἐν Κορίνθῳ γενομένης ἀδελφοῖς, ἐπέστειλεν ἡ ἐν Ῥώμῃ ἐκκλησία ἱκανωτάτην γραφὴν τοῖς Κορινθίοις, εἰς εἰρήνην συμβιβάζουσα αὐτοὺς καὶ ἀνανεοῦσα τὴν πίστιν αὐτῶν καὶ ἣν νεωστὶ ἀπὸ τῶν ἀποστόλων παράδοσιν ἐλήφει."

Iren. 3, 3, 3 Καὶ μετὰ βραχέα φησίν· "τὸν δὲ Κλήμεντα 4
τοῦτον διαδέχεται Εὐάρεστος καὶ τὸν Εὐάρεστον Ἀλέξανδρος, εἶθ' οὕτως ἕκτος ἀπὸ τῶν ἀποστόλων καθίσταται Ξύστος, μετὰ δὲ τοῦτον Τελεσφόρος, ὃς καὶ ἐνδόξως ἐμαρτύρησεν· ἔπειτα Ὑγῖνος, εἶτα Πίος, μεθ' ὃν Ἀνίκητος. διαδεξαμένου τὸν Ἀνίκητον Σωτῆρος, νῦν δωδεκάτῳ τόπῳ τὸν τῆς ἐπισκοπῆς ἀπὸ τῶν ἀποστόλων κατέχει κλῆρον Ἐλεύθερος. τῇ αὐτῇ τάξει καὶ τῇ αὐτῇ διδαχῇ 5
ἥ τε ἀπὸ τῶν ἀποστόλων ἐν τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ παράδοσις καὶ τὸ τῆς ἀληθείας κήρυγμα κατήντηκεν εἰς ἡμᾶς."

VII. Ταῦτα ὁ Εἰρηναῖος ἀκολούθως ταῖς προ- 1
διεξοδευθείσαις ἡμῖν ὑπογράψας ἱστορίαις ἐν οἷς ἐπέγραψεν, πέντε οὖσι τὸν ἀριθμόν, Ἐλέγχου καὶ
1 Tim. 6, 20 ἀνατροπῆς τῆς ψευδωνύμου γνώσεως, ἐν δευτέρῳ τῆς αὐτῆς ὑποθέσεως, ὅτου δὲ καὶ εἰς αὐτὸν ὑποδείγματα τῆς θείας καὶ παραδόξου δυνάμεως ἐν ἐκκλησίαις τισὶν ὑπολέλειπτο, διὰ τούτων ἐπισημαίνεται,

[1] The letter in question is generally called "the First Epistle of Clement," but the true title is "the Epistle of the

Digitized by Google

conversed with them and the teaching of the apostles still rang in his ears, their tradition was held before his eyes. Nor was he alone in this, for there were still many surviving at that time who had been taught by the apostles. When in the time of this Clement no little dissension arose among the Christians at Corinth, the church in Rome sent a most powerful letter to the Corinthians urging them to peace and renewing their faith and the tradition which they had recently received from the apostles.[1]"

And after a little he says: "Evarestus succeeded to this Clement and Alexander to Evarestus, and then Xystus was appointed as the sixth from the apostles, and after him Telesphorus, who also was martyred gloriously; then Hyginus, then Pius, after him Anicetus. Soter succeeded Anicetus, and now, in the twelfth place from the apostles, Eleutherus holds the lot of the episcopate. The tradition from the apostles in the church and the preaching of the truth have reached us in the same order and the same teaching."[2]

VII. These things Irenaeus recounts, according to the extracts which we have made already, in the books, five in number, to which he gave the title of *Refutation and Overthrow of Knowledge falsely so-called*, and in the second book of this work he proves in the following words that manifestations of the divine and marvellous power had remained in some

Church in Rome to the Church in Corinth." Probably the subject of εἰλήφει in the last sentence is the church in Corinth supplied from the general sense of the preceding paragraph, as it clearly refers to Corinth and not to Rome.

[2] It is probable that "teaching" is a mistake in the text of Eusebius for διαδοχή, "succession," which is implied by the Latin version of Irenaeus.

Digitized by Google

Iren. 2, 31, 2 λέγων· "τοσοῦτον δὲ ἀποδέουσιν τοῦ νεκρὸν 2
ἐγεῖραι, καθὼς ὁ κύριος ἤγειρεν καὶ οἱ ἀπόστολοι
διὰ προσευχῆς καὶ ἐν τῇ ἀδελφότητι πολλάκις
διὰ τὸ ἀναγκαῖον καὶ τῆς κατὰ τόπον ἐκκλησίας
πάσης αἰτησαμένης μετὰ νηστείας καὶ λιτανείας
πολλῆς ἐπέστρεψεν τὸ πνεῦμα τοῦ τετελευτηκότος
καὶ ἐχαρίσθη ὁ ἄνθρωπος ταῖς εὐχαῖς τῶν ἁγίων."
Iren. 2, 32, 4 καὶ αὖθίς φησιν μεθ' ἕτερα· "εἰ δὲ καὶ τὸν κύριον 3
φαντασιωδῶς τὰ τοιαῦτα πεποιηκέναι φήσουσιν,
ἐπὶ τὰ προφητικὰ ἀνάγοντες αὐτούς, ἐξ αὐτῶν
ἐπιδείξομεν πάντα οὕτως περὶ αὐτοῦ καὶ προ-
ειρῆσθαι καὶ γεγονέναι βεβαίως καὶ αὐτὸν μόνον
εἶναι τὸν υἱὸν τοῦ θεοῦ· δι' ὃ καὶ ἐν τῷ ἐκείνου
ὀνόματι οἱ ἀληθῶς αὐτοῦ μαθηταί, παρ' αὐτοῦ
λαβόντες τὴν χάριν ἐπιτελοῦσιν ἐπ' εὐεργεσίᾳ τῇ
τῶν λοιπῶν ἀνθρώπων, καθὼς εἷς ἕκαστος τὴν
δωρεὰν εἴληφεν παρ' αὐτοῦ. οἱ μὲν γὰρ δαίμονας 4
ἐλαύνουσιν βεβαίως καὶ ἀληθῶς, ὥστε πολλάκις
καὶ πιστεύειν ἐκείνους αὐτοὺς τοὺς καθαρισθέντας
ἀπὸ τῶν πονηρῶν πνευμάτων καὶ εἶναι ἐν τῇ
ἐκκλησίᾳ, οἱ δὲ καὶ πρόγνωσιν ἔχουσιν τῶν
μελλόντων καὶ ὀπτασίας καὶ ῥήσεις προφητικάς,
ἄλλοι δὲ τοὺς κάμνοντας διὰ τῆς τῶν χειρῶν
ἐπιθέσεως ἰῶνται καὶ ὑγιεῖς ἀποκαθιστᾶσιν, ἤδη
δέ, καθὼς ἔφαμεν, καὶ νεκροὶ ἠγέρθησαν καὶ παρ-
έμειναν σὺν ἡμῖν ἔτεσιν ἱκανοῖς, καί, τί γάρ; οὐκ 5
ἔστιν ἀριθμὸν εἰπεῖν τῶν χαρισμάτων ὧν κατὰ
παντὸς τοῦ κόσμου ἡ ἐκκλησία παρὰ θεοῦ λαβοῦσα
ἐν τῷ ὀνόματι Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ τοῦ σταυρωθέντος
ἐπὶ Ποντίου Πιλάτου ἑκάστης ἡμέρας ἐπ' εὐεργεσίᾳ

[1] Eusebius seems to slip in making his extract from Irenaeus, and by omitting the end of the sentence leaves "so

Digitized by Google

churches even as far as his time: "But they fall so far[1] short of raising the dead, as did the Lord and his apostles through prayer (and often among the brethren, because of necessity and at the request of the whole church in the neighbourhood, with fasting and much supplication, the spirit of him who had died returned, and the man was given to the prayers of the saints)." And again he says after other things: "But if they say that the Lord has done all these things merely in appearance we will take them back to the prophetic writings, and show from them that all these things had been foretold concerning him, and that they certainly happened, and that he alone is the Son of God; for which cause also his true disciples having received grace from him use it in his name for the benefit of the rest of men, even as each has received the gift from him. For some drive out demons with certainty and truth, so that often those who have themselves been cleansed from the evil spirits believe and are in the church, and some have foreknowledge of things to be, and visions and prophetic speech, and others cure the sick by the laying on of hands and make them whole, and even as we have said, the dead have been raised and remained with us for many years. And why should I say more? It is not possible to tell the number of the gifts which the church throughout the whole world, having received them from God in the name of Jesus Christ, who was crucified under Pontius Pilate, uses each day for the

[1] far" hanging in the air. In the original the sentence runs: "They fall so far short of raising the dead, as did the Lord etc. . . ., that they do not even believe that it can be done." The "they" referred to are the Simonians and Carpocratians —two early heresies.

Digitized by Google

τῇ τῶν ἐθνῶν ἐπιτελεῖ, μήτε ἐξαπατῶσά τινας
Matt. 10, 8 μήτε ἐξαργυριζομένη· ὡς γὰρ δωρεὰν εἴληφεν παρὰ
θεοῦ, δωρεὰν καὶ διακονεῖ." καὶ ἐν ἑτέρῳ δὲ τόπῳ 6
Iren. 5, 6, 1 ὁ αὐτὸς γράφει· "καθὼς καὶ πολλῶν ἀκούομεν
ἀδελφῶν ἐν τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ προφητικὰ χαρίσματα
ἐχόντων καὶ παντοδαπαῖς λαλούντων διὰ τοῦ πνεύ-
ματος γλώσσαις καὶ τὰ κρύφια τῶν ἀνθρώπων
εἰς φανερὸν ἀγόντων ἐπὶ τῷ συμφέροντι καὶ τὰ
μυστήρια τοῦ θεοῦ ἐκδιηγουμένων." ταῦτα καὶ
περὶ τοῦ διαφορὰς χαρισμάτων μέχρι καὶ τῶν
δηλουμένων χρόνων παρὰ τοῖς ἀξίοις διαμεῖναι.

VIII. Ἐπεὶ δὲ ἀρχόμενοι τῆς πραγματείας ὑπό- 1
σχεσιν πεποιήμεθα παραθήσεσθαι κατὰ καιρὸν εἰπόν-
τες τὰς τῶν ἀρχαίων ἐκκλησιαστικῶν πρεσβυτέρων
τε καὶ συγγραφέων φωνὰς ἐν αἷς τὰς περὶ τῶν
ἐνδιαθήκων γραφῶν εἰς αὐτοὺς κατελθούσας παρα-
δόσεις γραφῇ παραδεδώκασιν, τούτων δὲ καὶ ὁ
Εἰρηναῖος ἦν, φέρε, καὶ τὰς αὐτοῦ παραθώμεθα
λέξεις, καὶ πρώτας γε τὰς περὶ τῶν ἱερῶν εὐ- 2
Iren. 3, 1, 1 αγγελίων, οὕτως ἐχούσας· "ὁ μὲν δὴ Ματθαῖος ἐν
τοῖς Ἑβραίοις τῇ ἰδίᾳ αὐτῶν διαλέκτῳ καὶ γραφὴν
ἐξήνεγκεν εὐαγγελίου, τοῦ Πέτρου καὶ τοῦ Παύλου
ἐν Ῥώμῃ εὐαγγελιζομένων καὶ θεμελιούντων τὴν
ἐκκλησίαν· μετὰ δὲ τὴν τούτων ἔξοδον Μάρκος, 3
ὁ μαθητὴς καὶ ἑρμηνευτὴς Πέτρου, καὶ αὐτὸς τὰ
ὑπὸ Πέτρου κηρυσσόμενα ἐγγράφως ἡμῖν παρα-
δέδωκεν· καὶ Λουκᾶς δέ, ὁ ἀκόλουθος Παύλου, τὸ
ὑπ' ἐκείνου κηρυσσόμενον εὐαγγέλιον ἐν βίβλῳ κατ-
έθετο. ἔπειτα Ἰωάννης, ὁ μαθητὴς τοῦ κυρίου, 4
John 13, 25. 21, 20 ὁ καὶ ἐπὶ τὸ στῆθος αὐτοῦ ἀναπεσών, καὶ αὐτὸς
ἐξέδωκεν τὸ εὐαγγέλιον, ἐν Ἐφέσῳ τῆς Ἀσίας
διατρίβων."

Digitized by Google

benefit of the heathen, deceiving none and making profit from none. For as it received freely from God, it ministers also freely." And in another place the same author writes: "Just as also we hear many brethren in the church who have gifts of prophecy, and who speak through the Spirit with all manner of tongues, and who bring the hidden things of men into clearness for the common good and expound the mysteries of God." So much on the point that variety of gifts remained among the worthy up till the time spoken of.

VIII. At the beginning of this work we made a promise to quote from time to time the sayings of the presbyters and writers of the church of the first period, in which they have delivered the traditions which came down to them about the canonical Scriptures. Now Irenaeus was one of these, so let us quote his words, and in the first place those which refer to the sacred Gospels, as follows: "Now Matthew published among the Hebrews a written gospel[1] also in their own tongue, while Peter and Paul were preaching in Rome and founding the church. But after their death Mark also, the disciple and interpreter of Peter, himself handed down to us in writing the things which were preached by Peter, and Luke also, who was a follower of Paul, put down in a book the gospel which was preached by him. Then John, the disciple of the Lord, who had even rested on his breast, himself also gave forth the gospel, while he was living at Ephesus in Asia."

[1] The point of the καὶ γραφήν is that it was a written as well as a spoken gospel.

Digitized by Google

Ταῦτα μὲν οὖν ἐν τρίτῳ τῆς εἰρημένης ὑποθέσεως 5
τῷ προδηλωθέντι εἴρηται, ἐν δὲ τῷ πέμπτῳ περὶ
Rev. 18, 18 τῆς Ἰωάννου Ἀποκαλύψεως καὶ τῆς ψήφου τῆς
τοῦ ἀντιχρίστου προσηγορίας οὕτως διαλαμβάνει·
Iren. 5, 30, 1 "τούτων δὲ οὕτως ἐχόντων καὶ ἐν πᾶσι δὲ τοῖς
σπουδαίοις καὶ ἀρχαίοις ἀντιγράφοις τοῦ ἀριθμοῦ
τούτου κειμένου καὶ μαρτυρούντων αὐτῶν ἐκείνων
τῶν κατ' ὄψιν τὸν Ἰωάννην ἑορακότων καὶ τοῦ
λόγου διδάσκοντος ἡμᾶς ὅτι ὁ ἀριθμὸς τοῦ ὀνό-
ματος τοῦ θηρίου κατὰ τὴν Ἑλλήνων ψῆφον διὰ
τῶν ἐν αὐτῷ γραμμάτων ἐμφαίνεται." καὶ ὑπο- 6
Iren. 5. 30, 3 καταβὰς περὶ τοῦ αὐτοῦ φάσκει· "ἡμεῖς οὖν οὐκ
ἀποκινδυνεύομεν περὶ τοῦ ὀνόματος τοῦ ἀντι-
χρίστου ἀποφαινόμενοι βεβαιωτικῶς. εἰ γὰρ ἔδει
ἀναφανδὸν <ἐν> τῷ νῦν καιρῷ κηρύττεσθαι τοὔ-
νομα αὐτοῦ, δι' ἐκείνου ἂν ἐρρέθη τοῦ καὶ τὴν
ἀποκάλυψιν ἑορακότος· οὐδὲ γὰρ πρὸ πολλοῦ
χρόνου ἑωράθη, ἀλλὰ σχεδὸν ἐπὶ τῆς ἡμετέρας
γενεᾶς, πρὸς τῷ τέλει τῆς Δομετιανοῦ ἀρχῆς."

Iren. 3, 16, 5. 8 Ταῦτα καὶ περὶ τῆς Ἀποκαλύψεως ἱστόρηται 7
[1 John 2, 18-22. 4, 1-3. 5, 1] τῷ δεδηλωμένῳ· μέμνηται δὲ καὶ τῆς Ἰωάννου
πρώτης ἐπιστολῆς, μαρτυρίας ἐξ αὐτῆς πλείστας
Iren. 4, 9, 2. 5, 7, 2. 4, 16, 5 εἰσφέρων, ὁμοίως δὲ καὶ τῆς Πέτρου προτέρας.
[1 Peter 1, 8. 2. 16] οὐ μόνον δὲ οἶδεν, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἀποδέχεται τὴν τοῦ
Iren. 4, 20, 2 [Herm. mand. 1] Ποιμένος γραφήν, λέγων· "καλῶς οὖν ἡ γραφὴ
ἡ λέγουσα πρῶτον πάντων πίστευσον ὅτι εἷς
ἐστιν ὁ θεὸς ὁ τὰ πάντα κτίσας καὶ καταρτίσας"
καὶ τὰ ἑξῆς. καὶ ῥητοῖς δέ τισιν ἐκ τῆς Σολομῶνος 8
Iren. 4, 38. 3 Σοφίας κέχρηται, μόνον οὐχὶ φάσκων· "ὅρασις

Digitized by Google

These things were said by the writer referred to in the third book of his treatise which has been quoted before, and in the fifth book he discourses thus about the Apocalypse of John and the number of the name of the Antichrist.[1] "Now since this is so, and since this number is found in all the good and ancient copies, and since those who have seen John face to face testify, and reason teaches us that the number of the name of the beast appears according to the numeration of the Greeks by the letters in it . . ." And going on later he says concerning the same point, "We therefore will not take the risk of making any positive statement concerning the name of the Antichrist. For if it had been necessary for his name to have been announced clearly at the present time, it would have been spoken by him who also saw the Revelation; for it was not even seen a long time ago, but almost in our own generation towards the end of the reign of Domitian."

The author quoted says this about the Apocalypse, and he also mentions the first Epistle of John, making many quotations from it, and likewise the first Epistle of Peter. And he not only knew but also received[2] the writing of the Shepherd, saying, "Well did the Scripture say 'first of all believe that God is one who created and fitted together all things,' and so on." He also made some quotations all but verbally from the Wisdom of Solomon, "And

[1] According to Rev. xiii. 18 the Number of the Beast is 666. The point is that in ancient times the letters of the alphabet were used as numbers; thus the writer means that if the letters in the name of the Beast be taken as numbers they will when added up amount to 666. The difficulty is that with a little ingenuity this can be proved to be true of almost any unpopular person.

[2] *i.e.* as Scripture.

Digitized by Google

Wisd. 6, 20 δὲ θεοῦ περιποιητικὴ ἀφθαρσίας, ἀφθαρσία δὲ
Iren. 4, 27, 1. 2, 28, 1. 30, 1. 31, 1. 32, 1 ἐγγὺς εἶναι ποιεῖ θεοῦ.'' καὶ ἀπομνημονευμάτων δὲ ἀποστολικοῦ τινος πρεσβυτέρου, οὗ τοὔνομα σιωπῇ παρέδωκεν, μνημονεύει ἐξηγήσεις τε αὐτοῦ
Iren. 4, 6, 2. 5, 26, 2. 28, 4 θείων γραφῶν παρατέθειται. ἔτι καὶ Ἰουστίνου 9
τοῦ μάρτυρος καὶ Ἰγνατίου μνήμην πεποίηται, μαρτυρίαις αὖθις καὶ ἀπὸ τῶν τούτοις γραφέντων
Iren. 1, 27. 4 κεχρημένος, ἐπήγγελται δ' αὐτὸς ἐκ τῶν Μαρκίωνος συγγραμμάτων ἀντιλέξειν αὐτῷ ἐν ἰδίῳ σπουδάσματι.

Καὶ περὶ τῆς κατὰ τοὺς ἑβδομήκοντα ἑρμηνείας 10
τῶν θεοπνεύστων γραφῶν ἄκουε οἷα κατὰ λέξιν
Iren. 3, 21, 1 γράφει· '' ὁ θεὸς οὖν ἄνθρωπος ἐγένετο καὶ αὐτὸς κύριος ἔσωσεν ἡμᾶς, δοὺς τὸ τῆς παρθένου σημεῖον, ἀλλ' οὐχ ὡς ἔνιοί φασιν τῶν νῦν τολμώντων
Is. 7, 14 μεθερμηνεύειν τὴν γραφήν, 'ἰδοὺ ἡ νεᾶνις ἐν γαστρὶ ἕξει καὶ τέξεται υἱόν'· ὡς Θεοδοτίων ἡρμήνευσεν ὁ Ἐφέσιος καὶ Ἀκύλας ὁ Ποντικός, ἀμφότεροι Ἰουδαῖοι προσήλυτοι, οἷς κατακολουθήσαντες οἱ Ἐβιωναῖοι ἐξ Ἰωσὴφ αὐτὸν γε-
γενῆσθαι φάσκουσιν.'' τούτοις ἐπιφέρει μετὰ 11
Iren. 3, 21, 2 βραχέα λέγων· '' πρὸ τοῦ γὰρ Ῥωμαίους κρατῦναι τὴν ἀρχὴν αὐτῶν, ἔτι τῶν Μακεδόνων τὴν Ἀσίαν κατεχόντων, Πτολεμαῖος ὁ Λάγου φιλοτιμούμενος τὴν ὑπ' αὐτοῦ κατεσκευασμένην βιβλιοθήκην ἐν Ἀλεξανδρείᾳ κοσμῆσαι τοῖς πάντων ἀνθρώπων συγγράμμασιν ὅσα γε σπουδαῖα ὑπῆρχεν, ἠτήσατο παρὰ τῶν Ἱεροσολυμιτῶν εἰς τὴν Ἑλληνικὴν διάλεκτον σχεῖν αὐτῶν μεταβεβλημένας τὰς γραφάς. οἱ δέ, ὑπήκουον γὰρ ἔτι τοῖς Μακεδόσιν τότε, τοὺς 12
παρ' αὐτοῖς ἐμπειροτάτους τῶν γραφῶν καὶ ἀμφοτέρων τῶν διαλέκτων, ἑβδομήκοντα πρεσβυ-

Digitized by Google

the vision of God produces incorruptibility and incorruptibility brings us near to God." He also quotes treatises of a certain apostolic presbyter whose name he passes by in silence and gives his interpretation of divine Scripture. Moreover, he has made mention of Justin Martyr and Ignatius, making frequent quotations from their writings, and he promised to give in a special work a refutation of Marcion from his own writings.

Hear also, word for word, what he writes about the interpretation of the inspired Scriptures according to the Septuagint. "So God became man and the Lord himself saved us, giving us the sign of the virgin, but not as some say, who at the present time venture to translate the Scriptures, 'behold a young woman shall conceive and bear a son,' as Theodotion the Ephesian translated it and Aquila from Pontus, both of them Jewish proselytes, whom the Ebionites follow and aver that he was begotten by Joseph." After a little he goes on thus: "For before the Romans established their government, while the Macedonians still possessed Asia, Ptolemy, the son of Lagus,[1] being very anxious to adorn the library, which he had founded in Alexandria, with all the best extant writings of all men, asked from the inhabitants of Jerusalem to have their Scriptures translated into Greek. They, for they were at that time still subject to the Macedonians, sent to Ptolemy seventy elders, the most experienced they had

[1] Usually called Ptolemy Soter; he reigned from 323 to 285 B.C.

Digitized by Google

τέρους, ἔπεμψαν Πτολεμαίῳ, ποιήσαντος τοῦ θεοῦ ὅπερ ἠβούλετο. ὁ δὲ ἰδίᾳ πεῖραν αὐτῶν λαβεῖν 13
θελήσας εὐλαβηθείς τε μή τι ἄρα συνθέμενοι ἀποκρύψωσι τὴν ἐν ταῖς γραφαῖς διὰ τῆς ἑρμηνείας ἀλήθειαν, χωρίσας αὐτοὺς ἀπ' ἀλλήλων ἐκέλευσε τοὺς πάντας τὴν αὐτὴν ἑρμηνείαν γράφειν, καὶ τοῦτ' ἐπὶ πάντων τῶν βιβλίων ἐποίησεν. συνελ- 14
θόντων δὲ αὐτῶν ἐπὶ τὸ αὐτὸ παρὰ τῷ Πτολεμαίῳ καὶ συναντιβαλόντων ἑκάστου τὴν ἑαυτοῦ ἑρμηνείαν, ὁ μὲν θεὸς ἐδοξάσθη, αἱ δὲ γραφαὶ ὄντως θεῖαι ἐγνώσθησαν, τῶν πάντων τὰ αὐτὰ ταῖς αὐταῖς λέξεσιν καὶ τοῖς αὐτοῖς ὀνόμασιν ἀναγορευσάντων ἀπ' ἀρχῆς μέχρι τέλους, ὥστε καὶ τὰ παρόντα ἔθνη γνῶναι ὅτι κατ' ἐπίπνοιαν τοῦ θεοῦ εἰσιν ἑρμηνευμέναι αἱ γραφαί. καὶ οὐδέν γε θαυμαστὸν 15
τὸν θεὸν τοῦτο ἐνηργηκέναι, ὅς γε καὶ ἐν τῇ ἐπὶ Ναβουχοδονόσορ αἰχμαλωσίᾳ τοῦ λαοῦ διαφθαρεισῶν τῶν γραφῶν καὶ μετὰ ἑβδομήκοντα ἔτη τῶν Ἰουδαίων ἀνελθόντων εἰς τὴν χώραν αὐτῶν, ἔπειτα ἐν τοῖς χρόνοις Ἀρταξέρξου τοῦ Περσῶν
1 Ezra 9, 38-41 βασιλέως ἐνέπνευσεν Ἔσδρᾳ τῷ ἱερεῖ ἐκ τῆς φυλῆς Λευὶ τοὺς τῶν προγεγονότων προφητῶν πάντας ἀνατάξασθαι λόγους καὶ ἀποκαταστῆσαι τῷ λαῷ τὴν διὰ Μωυσέως νομοθεσίαν." τοσαῦτα ὁ Εἰρηναῖος.

IX. Ἐννέα δὲ καὶ δέκα ἔτεσιν τῇ βασιλείᾳ δι- 1
αρκέσαντος Ἀντωνίνου, Κόμοδος τὴν ἡγεμονίαν παραλαμβάνει· οὗ κατὰ τὸ πρῶτον ἔτος τῶν κατ' Ἀλεξάνδρειαν ἐκκλησιῶν Ἰουλιανὸς ἐγχειρίζεται τὴν ἐπισκοπήν, ἐπὶ δυοκαίδεκα ἔτεσιν Ἀγριππίνου τὴν λειτουργίαν ἀποπλήσαντος.

Digitized by Google

in the Scriptures and in both languages, and God thus wrought what he willed. But Ptolemy, wishing to make trial of them in his own way, and being afraid lest they should have made some agreement to conceal by their translation the truth in the Scriptures, separated them from one another and commanded them all to write the same translation. And this he did in the case of all the books. But when they came together to Ptolemy, and compared each his own translation, God was glorified and the Scriptures were recognized as truly divine, for they all rendered the same things in the same words and the same names, from beginning to end, so that even the heathen who were present knew that the Scriptures had been translated by the inspiration of God. And it is no marvel that God did this, for when the Scriptures had been destroyed in the captivity of the people in the days of Nebuchadnezzar, and the Jews had gone back to their country after seventy years, then in the times of Artaxerxes, the king of the Persians, he inspired Ezra, the priest of the tribe of Levi, to restore all the sayings of the prophets who had gone before, and to restore to the people the law given by Moses." [1] So much says Irenaeus.

IX. When Antoninus had held the empire for nineteen years, Commodus [2] received the sovereignty, and in his first year Julian was appointed to the episcopate of the churches in Alexandria when Agrippinus had completed his ministry after twelve years.

[1] The source of this tradition seems to be the *Letter of Aristeas*, which purports to be the work of a Persian noble in the time of Ptolemy Philadelphus (285-247 B.C.). See E. Schürer, *GJV*. vol. ii.

[2] In A.D. 180.

Digitized by Google

X. Ἡγεῖτο δὲ τηνικαῦτα τῆς τῶν πιστῶν αὐτόθι 1
διατριβῆς ἀνὴρ κατὰ παιδείαν ἐπιδοξότατος, ὄνομα
αὐτῷ Πάνταινος, ἐξ ἀρχαίου ἔθους διδασκαλείου
τῶν ἱερῶν λόγων παρ' αὐτοῖς συνεστῶτος· ὃ καὶ εἰς
ἡμᾶς παρατείνεται καὶ πρὸς τῶν ἐν λόγῳ καὶ τῇ
περὶ τὰ θεῖα σπουδῇ δυνατῶν συγκροτεῖσθαι
παρειλήφαμεν, ἐν δὲ τοῖς μάλιστα κατ' ἐκεῖνο
καιροῦ διαλάμψαι λόγος ἔχει τὸν δεδηλωμένον,
οἷα καὶ ἀπὸ φιλοσόφου ἀγωγῆς τῶν καλουμένων
Στωϊκῶν ὡρμημένον. τοσαύτην δ' οὖν φασιν 2
αὐτὸν ἐκθυμοτάτῃ διαθέσει προθυμίαν περὶ τὸν
θεῖον λόγον ἐνδείξασθαι, ὡς καὶ κήρυκα τοῦ κατὰ
Χριστὸν εὐαγγελίου τοῖς ἐπ' ἀνατολῆς ἔθνεσιν
ἀναδειχθῆναι, μέχρι καὶ τῆς Ἰνδῶν στειλάμενον
γῆς. ἦσαν γάρ, ἦσαν εἰς ἔτι τότε πλείους εὐ-
αγγελισταὶ τοῦ λόγου, ἔνθεον ζῆλον ἀποστολικοῦ
μιμήματος συνεισφέρειν ἐπ' αὐξήσει καὶ οἰκοδομῇ
τοῦ θείου λόγου προμηθούμενοι· ὧν εἷς γενόμενος
καὶ ὁ Πάνταινος, καὶ εἰς Ἰνδοὺς ἐλθεῖν λέγεται, 3
ἔνθα λόγος εὑρεῖν αὐτὸν προφθάσαν τὴν αὐτοῦ παρ-
ουσίαν τὸ κατὰ Ματθαῖον εὐαγγέλιον παρά τισιν
αὐτόθι τὸν Χριστὸν ἐπεγνωκόσιν, οἷς Βαρθολομαῖον
τῶν ἀποστόλων ἕνα κηρῦξαι αὐτοῖς τε Ἑβραίων
γράμμασι τὴν τοῦ Ματθαίου καταλεῖψαι γραφήν,
ἣν καὶ σῴζεσθαι εἰς τὸν δηλούμενον χρόνον. ὅ 4
γε μὴν Πάνταινος ἐπὶ πολλοῖς κατορθώμασι τοῦ
κατ' Ἀλεξάνδρειαν τελευτῶν ἡγεῖται διδασκαλείου,
ζώσῃ φωνῇ καὶ διὰ συγγραμμάτων τοὺς τῶν
θείων δογμάτων θησαυροὺς ὑπομνηματιζόμενος.

XI. Κατὰ τοῦτον ταῖς θείαις γραφαῖς συν- 1
ασκούμενος ἐπ' Ἀλεξανδρείας ἐγνωρίζετο Κλήμης,
ὁμώνυμος τῷ πάλαι τῆς Ῥωμαίων ἐκκλησίας

Digitized by Google

X. At that time a man very famous for his learning named Pantaenus had charge of the life of the faithful in Alexandria, for from ancient custom a school of sacred learning existed among them. This school has lasted on to our time, and we have heard that it is managed by men powerful in their learning and zeal for divine things, but tradition says that at that time Pantaenus was especially eminent, and that he had been influenced by the philosophic system of those called Stoics. They say that he showed such zeal in his warm disposition for the divine word that he was appointed as a herald for the gospel of Christ to the heathen in the East, and was sent as far as India. For indeed there were until then many evangelists of the word who had forethought to use inspired zeal on the apostolic model for the increase and the building up of the divine word. One of these was Pantaenus, and it is said that he went to the Indians, and the tradition is that he found there that among some of those there who had known Christ the Gospel according to Matthew had preceded his coming; for Bartholomew, one of the apostles, had preached to them and had left them the writing of Matthew in Hebrew letters, which was preserved until the time mentioned. Pantaenus, after many achievements, was at the head of the school in Alexandria until his death, and orally and in writing expounded the treasures of the divine doctrine.

XI. In his time Clement, the namesake of the pupil of the apostles who had once ruled the church of Rome, was famous in Alexandria for his study

Digitized by Google

ἡγησαμένῳ φοιτητῇ τῶν ἀποστόλων· ὃς δὴ καὶ 2
ὀνομαστὶ ἐν αἷς συνέταξεν Ὑποτυπώσεσιν ὡς ἂν
διδασκάλου τοῦ Πανταίνου μέμνηται, τοῦτόν τε
αὐτὸν καὶ τῶν Στρωματέων ἐν πρώτῳ συγγράμ-
ματι αἰνίττεσθαί μοι δοκεῖ, ὅτε τοὺς ἐμφανεστέρους
ἧς κατείληφεν ἀποστολικῆς διαδοχῆς ἐπισημηνά-
Clem. *Strom.* 1, 11 μενος ταῦτά φησιν· "ἤδη δὲ οὐ γραφὴ εἰς ἐπίδειξιν 3
τετεχνασμένη ἥδε ἡ πραγματεία, ἀλλά μοι ὑπο-
μνήματα εἰς γῆρας θησαυρίζεται, λήθης φάρμακον,
εἴδωλον ἀτεχνῶς καὶ σκιαγραφία τῶν ἐναργῶν καὶ
ἐμψύχων ἐκείνων ὧν κατηξιώθην ἐπακοῦσαι λόγων
τε καὶ ἀνδρῶν μακαρίων καὶ τῷ ὄντι ἀξιολόγων.
τούτων ὁ μὲν ἐπὶ τῆς Ἑλλάδος, ὁ Ἰωνικός, ὁ δὲ 4
ἐπὶ τῆς μεγάλης Ἑλλάδος, τῆς Κοίλης ἄτερος
αὐτῶν Συρίας ἦν, ὁ δὲ ἀπ' Αἰγύπτου, ἄλλοι δὲ
ἀνὰ τὴν ἀνατολήν, καὶ ταύτης ὁ μέν τις τῶν
Ἀσσυρίων, ὁ δὲ ἐν τῇ Παλαιστίνῃ Ἑβραῖος
ἀνέκαθεν· ὑστάτῳ δὲ περιτυχών, δυνάμει δὲ ἄρα
πρῶτος ἦν, ἀνεπαυσάμην, ἐν Αἰγύπτῳ θηράσας
λεληθότα. ἀλλ' οἱ μὲν τὴν ἀληθῆ τῆς μακαρίας 5
σῴζοντες διδασκαλίας παράδοσιν εὐθὺς ἀπὸ Πέτρου
καὶ Ἰακώβου Ἰωάννου τε καὶ Παύλου τῶν ἁγίων
ἀποστόλων παῖς παρὰ πατρὸς ἐκδεξάμενος (ὀλίγοι
δὲ οἱ πατράσιν ὅμοιοι), ἦκον δὴ σὺν θεῷ καὶ εἰς
ἡμᾶς, τὰ προγονικὰ ἐκεῖνα καὶ ἀποστολικὰ κατα-
θησόμενοι σπέρματα."

XII. Ἐπὶ τούτων τῆς ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις ἐκκλη- 1
σίας ἐπίσκοπος ὁ παρὰ πολλοῖς εἰς ἔτι νῦν βε-
βοημένος Νάρκισσος ἐγνωρίζετο, πεντεκαιδεκάτην
ἄγων διαδοχὴν ἀπὸ τῆς τῶν Ἰουδαίων κατὰ
Ἀδριανὸν πολιορκίας, ἐξ οὗ δὴ πρῶτον τὴν
αὐτόθι ἐκκλησίαν ἐξ ἐθνῶν συστῆναι μετὰ τοὺς

Digitized by Google

of the Holy Scriptures with Pantaenus. In the *Hypotyposes* which he composed he mentioned Pantaenus by name as his teacher, and he seems to me to allude to him in the first book of the *Stromateis*,[1] when he speaks thus in reference to the more distinguished members of the apostolic succession which he had received. "This work is not a writing composed for show, but notes stored up for my old age, a remedy against forgetfulness, an image without art, and a sketch of those clear and vital words which I was privileged to hear, and of blessed and truly notable men. Of these one, the Ionian, was in Greece, another in South Italy, a third in Coele-Syria,[2] another from Egypt, and there were others in the East, one of them an Assyrian, another in Palestine of Hebrew origin. But when I had met the last, and in power he was indeed the first, I hunted him out from his concealment in Egypt and found rest. But these men preserved the true tradition of the blessed teaching directly from Peter and James and John and Paul, the holy apostles, son receiving it from father (but there were few like their fathers), and by the blessing of God they came down to us to deposit those ancestral and apostolic seeds."

XII. In their time there flourished Narcissus, bishop of the church at Jerusalem, who is still widely famous. He held the succession in the fifteenth place after the siege of the Jews under Hadrian, and we have stated already that from that time the church in that city was composed of Gentiles, in

[1] See Introduction, p. xlv.
[2] That is, the district of the Lebanon.

Digitized by Google

ἐκ περιτομῆς καθηγήσασθαί τε αὐτῶν πρῶτον ἐξ ἐθνῶν ἐπίσκοπον Μάρκον ἐδηλώσαμεν· μεθ' ὃν 2
ἐπισκοπεῦσαι Κασσιανὸν αἱ τῶν αὐτόθι διαδοχαὶ περιέχουσιν, καὶ μετὰ τοῦτον Πούπλιον, εἶτα Μάξιμον, καὶ ἐπὶ τούτοις Ἰουλιανόν, ἔπειτα Γάϊον, μεθ' ὃν Σύμμαχον, καὶ Γάϊον ἕτερον, καὶ πάλιν ἄλλον Ἰουλιανόν, Καπίτωνά τε πρὸς τούτοις καὶ Οὐάλεντα καὶ Δολιχιανόν, καὶ ἐπὶ πᾶσι τὸν Νάρκισσον, τριακοστὸν ἀπὸ τῶν ἀποστόλων κατὰ τὴν τῶν ἑξῆς διαδοχὴν γεγενημένον.

XIII. Ἐν τούτῳ καὶ Ῥόδων, γένος τῶν ἀπὸ 1
Ἀσίας, μαθητευθεὶς ἐπὶ Ῥώμης, ὡς αὐτὸς ἱστορεῖ, Τατιανῷ, ὃν ἐκ τῶν πρόσθεν ἔγνωμεν, διάφορα συντάξας βιβλία, μετὰ τῶν λοιπῶν καὶ πρὸς τὴν Μαρκίωνος παρατέτακται αἵρεσιν· ἣν καὶ εἰς διαφόρους γνώμας κατ' αὐτὸν διαστᾶσαν ἱστορεῖ, τοὺς τὴν διάστασιν ἐμπεποιηκότας ἀναγράφων ἐπ' ἀκριβές τε τὰς παρ' ἑκάστῳ τούτων ἐπινενοημένας διελέγχων ψευδολογίας. ἄκουε δ' οὖν καὶ αὐτοῦ ταῦτα γράφοντος· "διὰ τοῦτο καὶ παρ' 2
ἑαυτοῖς ἀσύμφωνοι γεγόνασιν, ἀσυστάτου γνώμης ἀντιποιούμενοι. ἀπὸ γὰρ τῆς τούτων ἀγέλης Ἀπελλῆς μέν, ὁ τὴν πολιτείαν σεμνυνόμενος καὶ τὸ γῆρας, μίαν ἀρχὴν ὁμολογεῖ, τὰς δὲ προφητείας ἐξ ἀντικειμένου λέγει πνεύματος, πειθόμενος ἀποφθέγμασι παρθένου δαιμονώσης, ὄνομα Φιλουμένης· ἕτεροι δέ, καθὼς καὶ αὐτὸς ὁ ναύτης [Μαρκίων], 3
δύο ἀρχὰς εἰσηγοῦνται· ἀφ' ὧν εἰσιν Ποτῖτός τε καὶ Βασιλικός. καὶ οὗτοι μὲν κατακολουθήσαντες 4
τῷ Ποντικῷ λύκῳ καὶ μὴ εὑρίσκοντες τὴν διαίρεσιν

Digitized by Google

succession to the Jewish Christians, and that the first of the Gentile bishops was Marcus. After him the local successions record that Cassian was bishop, and after him Publius, then Maximus, in addition to them Julian, then Gaius, after him Symmachus and Gaius the second, and then another Julian, and Capito, and in addition to them Valens and Dolichianus, and after them all Narcissus, the thirtieth from the apostles according to the regular succession.[1]

XIII. At this time too Rhodo, of Asiatic race, was, as he narrates himself, the pupil at Rome of Tatian, whom we have mentioned above, and composed various books, among others especially one directed against the heresy of Marcion. He says that it was divided in his time into various opinions, and, describing accurately those who had caused the divergence, he refutes the false teaching devised by each of them. Listen then to him when he writes thus: "Therefore they have ceased to agree among themselves, maintaining inconsistent opinions. One of their herd is Apelles, who is reverenced for his life and old age. He admits that there is one Principle,[2] but says that the prophecies are of an opposing spirit, and he was persuaded by the utterances of a possessed maiden named Philoumene. But others, such as the captain himself (Marcion), introduced two Principles. To them belong Potitus and Basilicus. These followed the wolf of Pontus,[3] not perceiving

[1] This only gives thirteen names from Marcus to Narcissus, but Eusebius says that Narcissus is the fifteenth. Comparison with the *Chronicon* shows that after Capito the names of Maximus the second and Antoninus should be inserted.

[2] Or "Source of being," "Beginning," or almost "God."

[3] That is, Marcion, who is said to have been the son of a bishop in Pontus.

Digitized by Google

τῶν πραγμάτων, ὡς οὐδ' ἐκεῖνος, ἐπὶ τὴν εὐχέρειαν ἐτράποντο καὶ δύο ἀρχὰς ἀπεφήναντο ψιλῶς καὶ ἀναποδείκτως· ἄλλοι δὲ πάλιν ἀπ' αὐτῶν ἐπὶ τὸ χεῖρον ἐξοκείλαντες, οὐ μόνον δύο, ἀλλὰ καὶ τρεῖς ὑποτίθενται φύσεις· ὧν ἐστιν ἀρχηγὸς καὶ προστάτης Συνέρως, καθὼς οἱ τὸ διδασκαλεῖον αὐτοῦ προβαλλόμενοι λέγουσιν."

Γράφει δὲ ὁ αὐτὸς ὡς καὶ εἰς λόγους ἐληλύθει 5
τῷ Ἀπελλῇ, φάσκων οὕτως· "ὁ γὰρ γέρων Ἀπελλῆς συμμίξας ἡμῖν, πολλὰ μὲν κακῶς λέγων ἠλέγχθη· ὅθεν καὶ ἔφασκεν μὴ δεῖν ὅλως ἐξετάζειν τὸν λόγον, ἀλλ' ἕκαστον, ὡς πεπίστευκεν, διαμένειν· σωθήσεσθαι γὰρ τοὺς ἐπὶ τὸν ἐσταυρωμένον ἠλπικότας ἀπεφαίνετο, μόνον ἐὰν ἐν ἔργοις ἀγαθοῖς εὑρίσκωνται· τὸ δὲ πάντων ἀσαφέστατον ἐδογματίζετο αὐτῷ πρᾶγμα, καθὼς προειρήκαμεν, τὸ περὶ θεοῦ. ἔλεγεν μὲν γὰρ μίαν ἀρχὴν καθὼς καὶ ὁ ἡμέτερος λόγος." εἶτα προθεὶς αὐτοῦ πᾶσαν τὴν 6
δόξαν, ἐπιφέρει φάσκων· "λέγοντος δὲ πρὸς αὐτόν 'πόθεν ἡ ἀπόδειξις αὕτη σοι, ἢ πῶς δύνασαι λέγειν μίαν ἀρχήν; φράσον ἡμῖν' ἔφη τὰς μὲν προφητείας ἑαυτὰς ἐλέγχειν διὰ τὸ μηδὲν ὅλως ἀληθὲς εἰρηκέναι· ἀσύμφωνοι γὰρ ὑπάρχουσι καὶ ψευδεῖς καὶ ἑαυταῖς ἀντικείμεναι. τὸ δὲ πῶς ἐστιν μία ἀρχή, μὴ γινώσκειν ἔλεγεν, οὕτως δὲ κινεῖσθαι μόνον. εἶτ' ἐπομοσαμένου μου τἀληθὲς εἰπεῖν, 7
ὤμνυεν ἀληθεύων λέγειν μὴ ἐπίστασθαι πῶς εἰς ἐστιν ἀγένητος θεός, τοῦτο δὲ πιστεύειν. ἐγὼ δὲ γελάσας κατέγνων αὐτοῦ, διότι διδάσκαλος εἶναι λέγων, οὐκ ᾔδει τὸ διδασκόμενον ὑπ' αὐτοῦ κρατύνειν."

Ἐν τῷ αὐτῷ δὲ συγγράμματι Καλλιστίωνι 8

Digitized by Google

the division of things, any more than he, and turning to a simple solution, announced two principles, baldly and without proof. Others again, passing into worse error, supposed that there are not only two but even three Natures. Of them the chief and leader is Syneros, as those state who represent his school."

The same writer (Rhodo) says that he conversed with Apelles, and states it thus: "For the old man Apelles when he consorted with us, was proved to make many false statements. Hence also he used to say that it is not necessary to investigate the argument fully, but that each should remain in his own belief, for he asserted that those who placed their hope on the Crucified would be saved, if they persisted in good works. But as we have said before, the most obscure part of all the doctrines which he put forward were about God. For he kept on saying that there is only one Principle just as our doctrine states." Then after expounding all his opinions he goes on as follows: "And when I said to him, 'Where is this proof of yours, or how can you say that there is one Principle? Tell us,' he said that the prophecies refute themselves by not having spoken the truth at all, for they are inconsistent and false and contradict themselves, but as to how there is one Principle he said that he did not know it, but merely inclined to that view. Then when I adjured him to speak the truth he swore that he was speaking the truth, when he said that he did not know how the unbegotten God is one but that he believed it. But I laughed at him and condemned him, because though he called himself a teacher he did not know how to establish what he taught."

In the same work, speaking to Kallistio, the same

Digitized by Google

προσφωνῶν ὁ αὐτὸς μεμαθητεῦσθαι ἐπὶ Ῥώμης Τατιανῷ ἑαυτὸν ὁμολογεῖ· φησὶν δὲ καὶ ἐσπουδάσθαι τῷ Τατιανῷ Προβλημάτων βιβλίον· δι' ὧν τὸ ἀσαφὲς καὶ ἐπικεκρυμμένον τῶν θείων γραφῶν παραστήσειν ὑποσχομένου τοῦ Τατιανοῦ, αὐτὸς ὁ Ῥόδων ἐν ἰδίῳ συγγράμματι τὰς τῶν ἐκείνου προβλημάτων ἐπιλύσεις ἐκθήσεσθαι ἐπαγγέλλεται. φέρεται δὲ τοῦ αὐτοῦ καὶ εἰς τὴν ἑξαήμερον ὑπόμνημα. ὅ γέ τοι Ἀπελλῆς οὗτος μυρία κατὰ 9
τοῦ Μωυσέως ἠσέβησεν νόμου, διὰ πλειόνων συγγραμμάτων τοὺς θείους βλασφημήσας λόγους εἰς ἔλεγχόν τε, ὥς γε δὴ ἐδόκει, καὶ ἀνατροπὴν αὐτῶν οὐ μικρὰν πεποιημένος σπουδήν. ταῦτα μὲν οὖν περὶ τούτων·

XIV. Μισόκαλός γε μὴν ἐς τὰ μάλιστα καὶ 1
φιλοπόνηρος ὢν ὁ τῆς ἐκκλησίας τοῦ θεοῦ πολέμιος, μηδένα τε μηδαμῶς τῆς κατὰ τῶν ἀνθρώπων ἀπολιπὼν ἐπιβουλῆς τρόπον, αἱρέσεις ξένας αὖθις ἐπιφύεσθαι κατὰ τῆς ἐκκλησίας ἐνήργει· ὧν οἱ μὲν ἰοβόλων δίκην ἑρπετῶν ἐπὶ τῆς Ἀσίας καὶ Φρυγίας εἵρπον, τὸν μὲν δὴ παράκλητον Μοντανόν, τὰς δ' ἐξ αὐτοῦ γυναῖκας, Πρίσκιλλαν καὶ Μαξιμιλλαν, ὡς ἂν τοῦ Μοντανοῦ προφήτιδας γεγονυίας, αὐχοῦντες· XV. οἱ δ' ἐπὶ Ῥώμης ἤκμαζον, ὧν 1
ἡγεῖτο Φλωρῖνος, πρεσβυτερίου τῆς ἐκκλησίας ἀποπεσών, Βλάστος τε σὺν τούτῳ, παραπλησίῳ πτώματι κατεσχημένος· οἳ καὶ πλείους τῆς ἐκκλησίας περιέλκοντες ἐπὶ τὸ σφῶν ὑπῆγον βούλημα, θάτερος ἰδίως περὶ τὴν ἀλήθειαν νεωτερίζειν πειρώμενος.

XVI. Πρὸς μὲν οὖν τὴν λεγομένην κατὰ Φρύγας 1
αἵρεσιν ὅπλον ἰσχυρὸν καὶ ἀκαταγώνιστον ἐπὶ τῆς

Digitized by Google

writer states that he had been himself a disciple of Tatian at Rome, and he says that Tatian had prepared a book on Problems, in which he undertook to set out what was unclear and hidden in the divine Scriptures, and Rhodo himself in his own work announces that he will set out the answers to Tatian's Problems. There is also extant a treatise of Rhodo on the Hexaëmeron.[1] Apelles, however, uttered countless impieties against the law of Moses, and in many treatises blasphemed the divine words with no little zeal, as it seemed, for their refutation and overthrow, as he at least thought. So much then concerning these.

XIV. The enemy of the church of God, who hates good and loves deeply all that is wicked, left untried no kind of plot against men and again strove to raise up strange heresies against the church. Of these some like poisonous reptiles crawled over Asia and Phrygia, and boasted that Montanus was the Paraclete and that the women of his sect, Priscilla and Maximilla, were the prophetesses of Montanus. XV. Others flourished in Rome of which Florinus was the leader. He had been turned out of the presbytery of the church and with him was Blastus who had suffered a similar fall. These drew away more of the church and brought them to their own opinion, each trying to introduce innovations about the truth in his own way.

XVI. Against the so-called Cataphrygian[2] heresy the power which champions the truth raised up a powerful and invincible weapon at Hierapolis in

[1] That is, the Narrative of Creation in six days.

[2] *i.e.* Montanist.

Digitized by Google

Ἱεραπόλεως τὸν Ἀπολινάριον, οὗ καὶ πρόσθεν μνήμην ὁ λόγος πεποίητο, ἄλλους τε σὺν αὐτῷ πλείους τῶν τηνικάδε λογίων ἀνδρῶν ἡ τῆς ἀληθείας ὑπέρμαχος ἀνίστη δύναμις, ἐξ ὧν καὶ ἡμῖν ἱστορίας πλείστη τις ὑπόθεσις καταλέλειπται. ἀρχόμενος 2
γοῦν τῆς κατ' αὐτῶν γραφῆς, τῶν εἰρημένων δή τις πρῶτον ἐπισημαίνεται ὡς καὶ ἀγράφοις τοῖς κατ' αὐτῶν ἐπεξέλθοι ἐλέγχοις· προοιμιάζεται γοῦν τοῦτον τὸν τρόπον· "ἐκ πλείστου ὅσου καὶ 3
ἱκανωτάτου χρόνου, ἀγαπητὲ Αὐίρκιε Μάρκελλε, ἐπιταχθεὶς ὑπὸ σοῦ συγγράψαι τινὰ λόγον εἰς τὴν τῶν κατὰ Μιλτιάδην λεγομένων αἵρεσιν, ἐφεκτικώτερόν πως μέχρι νῦν διεκείμην, οὐκ ἀπορίᾳ τοῦ δύνασθαι ἐλέγχειν μὲν τὸ ψεῦδος, μαρτυρεῖν δὲ τῇ ἀληθείᾳ, δεδιὼς δὲ καὶ ἐξευλαβούμενος μή πῃ
Rev. 22, 18. δόξω τισὶν ἐπισυγγράφειν ἢ ἐπιδιατάσσεσθαι τῷ
19 τῆς τοῦ εὐαγγελίου καινῆς διαθήκης λόγῳ, ᾧ μήτε προσθεῖναι μήτε ἀφελεῖν δυνατὸν τῷ κατὰ τὸ εὐαγγέλιον αὐτὸ πολιτεύεσθαι προῃρημένῳ. προσφάτως δὲ γενόμενος ἐν Ἀγκύρᾳ τῆς Γαλατίας 4
καὶ καταλαβὼν τὴν κατὰ τόπον ἐκκλησίαν ὑπὸ τῆς νέας ταύτης, οὐχ, ὡς αὐτοί φασιν, προφητείας, πολὺ δὲ μᾶλλον, ὡς δειχθήσεται, ψευδοπροφητείας διατεθρυλημένην, καθ' ὅσον δυνατόν, τοῦ κυρίου παρασχόντος, περὶ αὐτῶν τε τούτων καὶ τῶν προτεινομένων ὑπ' αὐτῶν ἕκαστά τε διελέχθημεν ἡμέραις πλείοσιν ἐν τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ, ὡς τὴν μὲν ἐκκλησίαν ἀγαλλιαθῆναι καὶ πρὸς τὴν ἀλήθειαν ἐπιρρωσθῆναι, τοὺς δ' ἐξ ἐναντίας πρὸς τὸ παρὸν ἀποκρουσθῆναι καὶ τοὺς ἀντιθέτους λυπηθῆναι. ἀξιούντων οὖν τῶν κατὰ τόπον πρεσβυτέρων ὅπως 5
τῶν λεχθέντων κατὰ τῶν ἀντιδιατιθεμένων τῷ τῆς

Digitized by Google

Apolinarius, who has already been mentioned in this work, and with him many others of the learned men of that time, from whom abundant material for history has been left to us. One of these at the beginning of his treatise against the Montanists indicates that he had also taken part in oral controversy against them. He writes a preface in this way: "For a long and protracted time, my dear Abercius Marcellus, I have been urged by you to compose a treatise against the sect of those called after Miltiades,[1] but until now I was somewhat reluctant, not from any lack of ability to refute the lie and testify to the truth, but from timidity and scruples lest I might seem to some to be adding to the writings or injunctions of the word of the new covenant of the gospel, to which no one who has chosen to live according to the gospel itself can add and from which he cannot take away. But when I had just come to Ancyra in Galatia and perceived that the church in that place was torn in two by this new movement which is not, as they call it, prophecy but much rather, as will be shown, false prophecy, I disputed concerning these people themselves and their propositions so far as I could, with the Lord's help, for many days continuously [2] in the church. Thus the church rejoiced and was strengthened in the truth, but our opponents were crushed for the moment and our adversaries were distressed. Therefore the presbyters of the place asked me to leave some note of what had been said against the opponents of the

[1] See Introduction, p. lv. Miltiades was apparently a leader of the Montanists.

[2] This translates Schwartz's emendation of *ἐκτενέστατα* instead of the impossible *ἕκαστά τε*.

Digitized by Google

ἀληθείας λόγῳ ὑπόμνημά τι καταλείπωμεν, παρόντος καὶ τοῦ συμπρεσβυτέρου ἡμῶν Ζωτικοῦ τοῦ Ὀτρηνοῦ, τοῦτο μὲν οὐκ ἐπράξαμεν, ἐπηγγειλάμεθα δέ, ἐνθάδε γράψαντες, τοῦ κυρίου διδόντος, διὰ σπουδῆς πέμψειν αὐτοῖς."

Ταῦτα καὶ ἑξῆς τούτοις ἕτερα κατ' ἀρχὰς εἰπὼν 6
τοῦ λόγου, τὸν αἴτιον τῆς δηλουμένης αἱρέσεως
προϊὼν τοῦτον ἀνιστορεῖ τὸν τρόπον· "ἡ τοίνυν
ἔνστασις αὐτῶν καὶ πρόσφατος τοῦ ἀποσχίσματος
αἵρεσις πρὸς τὴν ἐκκλησίαν τὴν αἰτίαν ἔσχε
τοιαύτην. κώμη τις εἶναι λέγεται ἐν τῇ κατὰ τὴν 7
Φρυγίαν Μυσίᾳ, καλουμένη Ἀρδαβαῦ τοὔνομα·
ἔνθα φασί τινα τῶν νεοπίστων πρώτως, Μοντανὸν
τοὔνομα, κατὰ Γρᾶτον Ἀσίας ἀνθύπατον, ἐν ἐπι-
θυμίᾳ ψυχῆς ἀμέτρῳ φιλοπρωτείας δόντα πάροδον
εἰς ἑαυτὸν τῷ ἀντικειμένῳ πνευματοφορηθῆναί
τε καὶ αἰφνιδίως ἐν κατοχῇ τινι καὶ παρεκστάσει
γενόμενον ἐνθουσιᾶν ἄρξασθαί τε λαλεῖν καὶ
ξενοφωνεῖν, παρὰ τὸ κατὰ παράδοσιν καὶ κατὰ
διαδοχὴν ἄνωθεν τῆς ἐκκλησίας ἔθος δῆθεν προ-
φητεύοντα. τῶν δὲ κατ' ἐκεῖνο καιροῦ ἐν τῇ τῶν 8
νόθων ἐκφωνημάτων ἀκροάσει γενομένων οἱ μὲν
ὡς ἐπὶ ἐνεργουμένῳ καὶ δαιμονῶντι καὶ ἐν πλάνης
πνεύματι ὑπάρχοντι καὶ τοὺς ὄχλους ταράττοντι
ἀχθόμενοι, ἐπετίμων καὶ λαλεῖν ἐκώλυον, με-
Matt. 7, 15 μνημένοι τῆς τοῦ κυρίου διαστολῆς τε καὶ ἀπειλῆς
πρὸς τὸ φυλάττεσθαι τὴν τῶν ψευδοπροφητῶν
ἐγρηγορότως παρουσίαν· οἱ δὲ ὡς ἁγίῳ πνεύματι
καὶ προφητικῷ χαρίσματι ἐπαιρόμενοι καὶ οὐχ
ἥκιστα χαυνούμενοι καὶ τῆς διαστολῆς τοῦ κυρίου
ἐπιλανθανόμενοι, τὸ βλαψίφρον καὶ ὑποκοριστικὸν
καὶ λαοπλάνον πνεῦμα προυκαλοῦντο, θελγόμενοι

Digitized by Google

word of the truth, when Zoticus of Otrous, our fellow presbyter, was also present. Though we did not do so, we promised to write from home if the Lord permitted, and to send it to them speedily."

Continuing with other similar remarks at the beginning of his treatise, he proceeds to narrate as follows the cause of the heresy referred to:—"Their opposition and their recent heretical schism from the church had the following origin. In Phrygian Mysia there is said to be a village called Ardabav. There they say that a recent convert called Montanus, when Gratus was proconsul of Asia, in the unbounded lust of his soul for leadership gave access to himself to the adversary, became obsessed, and suddenly fell into frenzy and convulsions. He began to be ecstatic and to speak and to talk strangely, prophesying contrary to the custom which belongs to the tradition and succession of the church from the beginning. Of those who at that time heard these bastard utterances some were vexed, thinking that he was possessed by a devil and by a spirit of error, and was disturbing the populace; they rebuked him, and forbade him to speak, remembering the distinction made by the Lord, and his warning to keep watchful guard against the coming of the false prophets; but others, as though elevated by a holy spirit and a prophetic gift, and not a little conceited, forgot the Lord's distinction, and encouraged the mind-injuring and seducing and people-misleading

Digitized by Google

καὶ πλανώμενοι ὑπ' αὐτοῦ, εἰς τὸ μηκέτι κωλύεσθαι σιωπᾶν. τέχνῃ δέ τινι, μᾶλλον δὲ τοιαύτῃ μεθόδῳ 9
κακοτεχνίας ὁ διάβολος τὴν κατὰ τῶν παρηκόων
ἀπώλειαν μηχανησάμενος καὶ παρ' ἀξίαν ὑπ'
αὐτῶν τιμώμενος ὑπεξήγειρέν τε καὶ προσεξέκαυσεν
αὐτῶν τὴν ἀποκεκοιμημένην ἀπὸ τῆς κατ' ἀλήθειαν
πίστεως διάνοιαν, ὡς καὶ ἑτέρας τινὰς δύο γυναῖκας
ἐπεγεῖραι καὶ τοῦ νόθου πνεύματος πληρῶσαι, ὡς
καὶ λαλεῖν ἐκφρόνως καὶ ἀκαίρως καὶ ἀλλοτριο-
τρόπως, ὁμοίως τῷ προειρημένῳ. καὶ τοὺς μὲν
χαίροντας καὶ χαυνουμένους ἐπ' αὐτῷ μακαρίζοντος
τοῦ πνεύματος καὶ διὰ τοῦ μεγέθους τῶν ἐπαγ-
γελμάτων ἐκφυσιοῦντος, ἔσθ' ὅπῃ δὲ καὶ κατα-
κρίνοντος στοχαστικῶς καὶ ἀξιοπίστως αὐτοὺς
ἄντικρυς, ἵνα καὶ ἐλεγκτικὸν εἶναι δοκῇ (ὀλίγοι
δ' ἦσαν οὗτοι τῶν Φρυγῶν ἐξηπατημένοι), τὴν δὲ
καθόλου καὶ πᾶσαν τὴν ὑπὸ τὸν οὐρανὸν ἐκκλησίαν
βλασφημεῖν διδάσκοντος τοῦ ἀπηυθαδισμένου πνεύ-
ματος, ὅτι μήτε τιμὴν μήτε πάροδον εἰς αὐτὴν τὸ 10
ψευδοπροφητικὸν ἐλάμβανε πνεῦμα, τῶν γὰρ κατὰ
τὴν Ἀσίαν πιστῶν πολλάκις καὶ πολλαχῇ τῆς
Ἀσίας εἰς τοῦτο συνελθόντων καὶ τοὺς προσφάτους
λόγους ἐξετασάντων καὶ βεβήλους ἀποφηνάντων
καὶ ἀποδοκιμασάντων τὴν αἵρεσιν, οὕτω δὴ τῆς
τε ἐκκλησίας ἐξεώσθησαν καὶ τῆς κοινωνίας
εἴρχθησαν."

Ταῦτα ἐν πρώτοις ἱστορήσας καὶ δι' ὅλου τοῦ 11
συγγράμματος τὸν ἔλεγχον τῆς κατ' αὐτοὺς
πλάνης ἐπαγαγών, ἐν τῷ δευτέρῳ περὶ τῆς τελευτῆς

[1] The meaning is plain, though it is not quite clear whether the subject of the infinitives (*κωλύεσθαι σιωπᾶν*) is Montanus or the "seducing spirit," but there is a word too much in the

Digitized by Google

spirit, being cheated and deceived by it so that he could not be kept silent.[1] But by some art, or rather by such an evil scheme of artifice, the devil wrought destruction for the disobedient, and receiving unworthy honours from them stimulated and inflamed their understanding which was already dead to the true faith; so that he raised up two more women and filled them with the bastard spirit so that they spoke madly and improperly and strangely, like Montanus. The spirit[2] gave blessings to those who rejoiced and were proud in him, and puffed them up by the greatness of its promises. Yet sometimes it flatly condemned them completely, wisely, and faithfully, that it might seem to be critical, though but few of the Phrygians were deceived. But when the arrogant spirit taught to blaspheme the whole Catholic church throughout the world, because the spirit of false prophecy received from it neither honour nor entrance, for the Christians of Asia after assembling for this purpose many times and in many parts of the province, tested the recent utterances, pronounced them profane, and rejected the heresy, —then at last the Montanists were driven out of the church and excommunicated."

He tells this story at the beginning, and throughout the book continues the refutation of the error, but in the second book he speaks as follows about the

Greek and either κωλύεσθαι or σιωπᾶν must be an interpolation.

[2] That is to say, the false spirit speaking through Montanus. It is important to notice that Abercius fully believed in the supernatural gift of Montanus but ascribed it to the Devil instead of to the Holy Spirit. It was the difficulty of distinguishing except on subjective grounds between these two sources of inspiration which led to so much trouble.

Digitized by Google

τῶν προδεδηλωμένων ταῦτά φησιν· "ἐπειδὴ τοίνυν 12
καὶ προφητοφόντας ἡμᾶς ἀπεκάλουν, ὅτι μὴ τοὺς
ἀμετροφώνους αὐτῶν προφήτας ἐδεξάμεθα (τού-
John 14, 26 τους γὰρ εἶναί φασιν οὕσπερ ἐπηγγείλατο τῷ λαῷ
πέμψειν ὁ κύριος), ἀποκρινάσθωσαν ἡμῖν πρὸς
θεοῦ· ἔστιν τις, ὦ βέλτιστοι, τούτων τῶν ἀπὸ
Μοντανοῦ καὶ τῶν γυναικῶν λαλεῖν ἀρξαμένων
Matt. 23, 34 ὅστις ὑπὸ Ἰουδαίων ἐδιώχθη ἢ ὑπὸ παρανόμων
ἀπεκτάνθη; οὐδείς. οὐδέ γέ τις αὐτῶν κρατηθεὶς
ὑπὲρ τοῦ ὀνόματος ἀνεσταυρώθη; οὐ γὰρ οὖν.
οὐδὲ μὴν οὐδὲ ἐν συναγωγαῖς Ἰουδαίων τῶν
γυναικῶν τις ἐμαστιγώθη ποτὲ ἢ ἐλιθοβολήθη;
οὐδαμόσε οὐδαμῶς, ἄλλῳ δὲ θανάτῳ τελευτῆσαι 13
λέγονται Μοντανός τε καὶ Μαξίμιλλα. τούτους
γὰρ ὑπὸ πνεύματος βλαψίφρονος ἑκατέρους ὑπο-
κινήσαντος λόγος ἀναρτῆσαι ἑαυτοὺς οὐχ ὁμοῦ,
κατὰ δὲ τὸν τῆς ἑκάστου τελευτῆς καιρὸν φήμη
πολλὴ καὶ οὕτω δὲ τελευτῆσαι καὶ τὸν βίον κατα-
στρέψαι Ἰούδα προδότου δίκην, καθάπερ καὶ τὸν 14
θαυμαστὸν ἐκεῖνον τὸν πρῶτον τῆς κατ' αὐτοὺς
λεγομένης προφητείας οἷον ἐπίτροπόν τινα Θεό-
δοτον πολὺς αἱρεῖ λόγος ὡς αἱρόμενόν ποτε καὶ
ἀναλαμβανόμενον εἰς οὐρανοὺς παρεκστῆναί τε
καὶ καταπιστεῦσαι ἑαυτὸν τῷ τῆς ἀπάτης πνεύματι
καὶ δισκευθέντα κακῶς τελευτῆσαι· φασὶ γοῦν
τοῦτο οὕτως γεγονέναι. ἀλλὰ μὴ ἄνευ τοῦ ἰδεῖν 15
ἡμᾶς ἐπίστασθαί τι τῶν τοιούτων νομίζωμεν, ὦ
μακάριε· ἴσως μὲν γὰρ οὕτως, ἴσως δὲ οὐχ οὕτως
τετελευτήκασιν Μοντανός τε καὶ Θεόδοτος καὶ ἡ
προειρημένη γυνή."

Αὖθις δ' ἐν τῷ αὐτῷ φησιν λόγῳ τοὺς τότε 16
ἱεροὺς ἐπισκόπους πεπειρᾶσθαι μὲν τὸ ἐν τῇ

Digitized by Google

end of the persons referred to: "Since then they called us murderers of the prophets because we did not receive their chattering prophets (for they say that these are those whom the Lord promised to send to the people), let them answer us before God. Is there anyone, good people, of those whose talking began with Montanus and the women, who was persecuted by Jews or killed by the wicked? Not one. Or was there any one of them who was taken and crucified for the name? No, there was not. Or was any one of the women ever scourged in the synagogues of the Jews or stoned? Never anywhere. It was a different death that Montanus and Maximilla are said to have died; for the story goes that each of them was inspired by a mind-destroying spirit to commit suicide, though not together, and there was much gossip at the time of the death of each. But thus it was that they died, and destroyed their lives like the traitor Judas. So also general report says that a certain Theodotus, that remarkable man, the first steward as it were of their alleged prophecy, was sometimes taken up and raised to Heaven, when he fell into a trance and trusted himself to the spirit of deceit, but was hurled down and died miserably. They say, at least, that this happened thus. But not having seen them ourselves we do not claim to have any knowledge of such things, my friend, for perhaps Montanus and Theodotus and the above mentioned woman died in this way, but perhaps they did not."

Again in the same book he says that the sacred bishops of that time tried to refute the spirit that

Digitized by Google

Μαξιμίλλῃ πνεῦμα διελέγξαι, κεκωλύσθαι δὲ πρὸς ἑτέρων, συνεργούντων δηλαδὴ τῷ πνεύματι· γράφει 17
δὲ οὕτως· "καὶ μὴ λεγέτω ἐν τῷ αὐτῷ λόγῳ τῷ κατὰ Ἀστέριον Ὀρβανὸν τὸ διὰ Μαξιμίλλης πνεῦμα 'διώκομαι ὡς λύκος ἐκ προβάτων· οὐκ εἰμὶ λύκος· ῥῆμά εἰμι καὶ πνεῦμα καὶ δύναμις,' ἀλλὰ τὴν ἐν τῷ πνεύματι δύναμιν ἐναργῶς δειξάτω καὶ ἐλεγξάτω καὶ ἐξομολογεῖσθαι διὰ τοῦ πνεύματος καταναγκασάτω τοὺς τότε παρόντας εἰς τὸ δοκιμάσαι καὶ διαλεχθῆναι τῷ πνεύματι λαλοῦντι, ἄνδρας δοκίμους καὶ ἐπισκόπους, Ζωτικὸν ἀπὸ Κουμάνης κώμης καὶ Ἰουλιανὸν ἀπὸ Ἀπαμείας, ὧν οἱ περὶ Θεμίσωνα τὰ στόματα φιμώσαντες οὐκ εἴασαν τὸ ψευδὲς καὶ λαοπλάνον πνεῦμα ὑπ' αὐτῶν ἐλεγχθῆναι."

Ἐν ταὐτῷ δὲ πάλιν ἕτερα μεταξὺ πρὸς ἔλεγχον 18
τῶν τῆς Μαξιμίλλης ψευδοπροφητειῶν εἰπών, ὁμοῦ τόν τε χρόνον καθ' ὃν ταῦτ' ἔγραφεν, σημαίνει καὶ τῶν προρρήσεων αὐτῆς μέμνηται δι' ὧν πολέμους ἔσεσθαι καὶ ἀκαταστασίας προεμαντεύσατο, ὧν καὶ τὴν ψευδολογίαν εὐθύνει, ὧδε λέγων· "καὶ πῶς οὐ καταφανὲς ἤδη γέγονεν καὶ 19
τοῦτο τὸ ψεῦδος; πλείω γὰρ ἢ τρισκαίδεκα ἔτη εἰς ταύτην τὴν ἡμέραν ἐξ οὗ τετελεύτηκεν ἡ γυνή, καὶ οὔτε μερικὸς οὔτε καθολικὸς κόσμῳ γέγονεν πόλεμος, ἀλλὰ καὶ Χριστιανοῖς μᾶλλον εἰρήνη διάμονος ἐξ ἐλέου θεοῦ."

Καὶ ταῦτα δ' ἐκ τοῦ δευτέρου συγγράμματος. 20
καὶ ἀπὸ τοῦ τρίτου δὲ σμικρὰς παραθήσομαι

[1] Or possibly, Urbanus. Nothing is known about him, but Valesius thinks that the words "according to Asterius Orbanus" are a misplaced marginal note giving the name

Digitized by Google

was in Maximilla, but were prevented by others who plainly co-operated with the spirit, and he writes thus : " And let not the spirit which speaks through Maximilla say, in the same work according to Asterius Orbanus,[1] ' I am driven away like a wolf from the sheep. I am not a wolf, I am word and spirit and power.' But let him show clearly and prove the power in the spirit, and let him through the spirit force to recognize him those who were then present for the purpose of testing and conversing with the spirit as it spoke,—eminent men and bishops, Zoticus from the village Cumane, and Julian from Apamea, whose mouths the party of Themiso muzzled, and did not allow the false spirit which deceived the people to be refuted by them."

In the same book, again, after other refutations of the false prophecies of Maximilla, in a single passage he both indicates the time at which he wrote this, and quotes her predictions, in which she foretold future wars and revolutions, and he corrects the falsehood of them as follows : " Has it not been made obvious already that this is another lie ? For it is more than thirteen years to-day since the woman died, and there has been in the world neither local nor universal war, but rather by the mercy of God continuing peace even for Christians." [2]

This is from his second book. And from the third I will also quote a few words in which he speaks as

of the writer of this treatise. The phrase certainly is awkward, but it seems equally possible that the text is right and that Asterius was the name of a Montanist writer.

[2] This probably means the period before the wars of Septimus Severus. There seem to have been no important wars in the reign of Commodus, and though there were some persecutions there were less than in the earlier reigns.

Digitized by Google

λέξεις, δι' ὧν πρὸς τοὺς αὐχοῦντας ὡς ἄρα πλείους καὶ αὐτῶν μεμαρτυρηκότες εἶεν, ταῦτά φησιν· "ὅταν τοίνυν ἐν πᾶσι τοῖς εἰρημένοις ἐλεγχθέντες ἀπορήσωσιν, ἐπὶ τοὺς μάρτυρας καταφεύγειν πειρῶνται, λέγοντες πολλοὺς ἔχειν μάρτυρας καὶ τοῦτ' εἶναι τεκμήριον πιστὸν τῆς δυνάμεως τοῦ παρ' αὐτοῖς λεγομένου προφητικοῦ πνεύματος. τὸ δ' ἐστὶν ἄρα, ὡς ἔοικεν, παντὸς μᾶλλον οὐκ ἀληθές. καὶ γὰρ τῶν ἄλλων αἱρέσεών τινες 21
πλείστους ὅσους ἔχουσι μάρτυρας, καὶ οὐ παρὰ τοῦτο δήπου συγκαταθησόμεθα, οὐδὲ ἀληθειαν ἔχειν αὐτοὺς ὁμολογήσομεν. καὶ πρῶτοί γε οἱ ἀπὸ τῆς Μαρκίωνος αἱρέσεως Μαρκιανισταὶ καλούμενοι πλείστους ὅσους ἔχειν Χριστοῦ μάρτυρας λέγουσιν, ἀλλὰ τόν γε Χριστὸν αὐτὸν κατ' ἀλήθειαν οὐχ ὁμολογοῦσιν."

Καὶ μετὰ βραχέα τούτοις ἐπιφέρει λέγων· "ὅθεν 22
τοι καὶ ἐπειδὰν οἱ ἐπὶ τὸ τῆς κατ' ἀλήθειαν πίστεως μαρτύριον κληθέντες ἀπὸ τῆς ἐκκλησίας τύχωσι μετά τινων τῶν ἀπὸ τῆς τῶν Φρυγῶν αἱρέσεως λεγομένων μαρτύρων, διαφέρονταί τε πρὸς αὐτοὺς καὶ μὴ κοινωνήσαντες αὐτοῖς τελειοῦνται διὰ τὸ μὴ βούλεσθαι συγκαταθέσθαι τῷ διὰ Μοντανοῦ καὶ τῶν γυναικῶν πνεύματι. καὶ ὅτι τοῦτ' ἀληθές, καὶ ἐπὶ τῶν ἡμετέρων χρόνων ἐν Ἀπαμείᾳ τῇ πρὸς Μαιάνδρῳ τυγχάνει γεγενημένον ἐν τοῖς περὶ Γάϊον καὶ Ἀλέξανδρον ἀπὸ Εὐμενείας μαρτυρήσασι πρόδηλον."

XVII. Ἐν τούτῳ δὲ τῷ συγγράμματι καὶ 1
Μιλτιάδου συγγραφέως μέμνηται, ὡς λόγον τινὰ καὶ αὐτοῦ κατὰ τῆς προειρημένης αἱρέσεως γεγραφότος· παραθέμενος γοῦν αὐτῶν λέξεις τινάς,

Digitized by Google

follows against those who boasted that they had had more martyrs. "So when they have been refuted in the whole discussion and have nothing to reply, they try to take refuge in martyrs, saying that they have many martyrs and that this is a trustworthy proof of the power of the alleged prophetic spirit among them. But this appears to be actually further from the truth than anything. For some of the other heresies have innumerable martyrs, but I do not suppose that we shall accept them for that reason, nor admit that they have the truth. In the first place, indeed, the so-called Marcianists of the heresy of Marcion say that they have innumerable martyrs to Christ but nevertheless Christ himself they do not confess according to truth."

And after a little he goes on as follows: "Wherefore whenever members of the church who have been called to martyrdom for the true faith meet any of the so-called martyrs of the Montanist heresy, they separate from them and die without communicating with them, because they refuse to agree with the spirit in Montanus and the women. And that this is true, and that it happened in our time in Apamea on the Meander, is shown by the case of those who were martyred with Gaius and Alexander of Eumeneia."

XVII. And in this work he also quotes Miltiades as a writer who had also himself written a treatise against the heresy mentioned. After quoting some

Digitized by Google

ἐπιφέρει λέγων· "ταῦτα εὑρὼν ἔν τινι συγγράμματι αὐτῶν ἐνισταμένων τῷ Ἀλκιβιάδου τοῦ ἀδελφοῦ συγγράμματι, ἐν ᾧ ἀποδείκνυσιν περὶ τοῦ μὴ δεῖν προφήτην ἐν ἐκστάσει λαλεῖν, ἐπετεμόμην." ὑπο- 2
καταβὰς δ' ἐν ταὐτῷ τοὺς κατὰ τὴν καινὴν διαθήκην προπεφητευκότας καταλέγει, ἐν οἷς καταριθμεῖ Ἀμμίαν τινὰ καὶ Κοδρᾶτον, λέγων οὕτως· "ἀλλ' ὅ γε ψευδοπροφήτης ἐν παρεκστάσει, ᾧ ἕπεται ἄδεια καὶ ἀφοβία, ἀρχομένου μὲν ἐξ ἑκουσίου ἀμαθίας, καταστρέφοντος δὲ εἰς ἀκούσιον μανίαν ψυχῆς, ὡς προείρηται. τοῦτον δὲ τὸν τρόπον οὔτε 3
τινὰ τῶν κατὰ τὴν παλαιὰν οὔτε τῶν κατὰ τὴν καινὴν πνευματοφορηθέντα προφήτην δεῖξαι δυνή-
Acts 11, 28. 21, 10. 15, 32 21, 9 σονται, οὔτε Ἄγαβον οὔτε Ἰούδαν οὔτε Σίλαν οὔτε τὰς Φιλίππου θυγατέρας, οὔτε τὴν ἐν Φιλαδελφίᾳ Ἀμμίαν οὔτε Κοδρᾶτον, οὔτε εἴ δή τινας ἄλλους μηδὲν αὐτοῖς προσήκοντας καυχήσονται." καὶ αὖθις δὲ μετὰ βραχέα ταῦτά φησιν· "εἰ γὰρ 4
μετὰ Κοδρᾶτον καὶ τὴν ἐν Φιλαδελφίᾳ Ἀμμίαν, ὥς φασιν, αἱ περὶ Μοντανὸν διεδέξαντο γυναῖκες τὸ προφητικὸν χάρισμα, τοὺς ἀπὸ Μοντανοῦ καὶ τῶν γυναικῶν τίνες παρ' αὐτοῖς διεδέξαντο,
Eph. 4, 11 ff. 1 Cor. 1, 7 δειξάτωσαν· δεῖν γὰρ εἶναι τὸ προφητικὸν χάρισμα ἐν πάσῃ τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ μέχρι τῆς τελείας παρουσίας ὁ ἀπόστολος ἀξιοῖ. ἀλλ' οὐκ ἂν ἔχοιεν δεῖξαι τεσσαρεσκαιδέκατον ἤδη που τοῦτο ἔτος ἀπὸ τῆς Μαξιμίλλης τελευτῆς."

Οὗτος μὲν δὴ τοσαῦτα· ὅ γέ τοι πρὸς αὐτοῦ 5
δεδηλωμένος Μιλτιάδης καὶ ἄλλας ἡμῖν τῆς ἰδίας περὶ τὰ θεῖα λόγια σπουδῆς μνήμας καταλέλοιπεν

[1] Schwartz and almost all editors except McGiffert emend this to Miltiades. This emendation certainly seems

Digitized by Google

of their sayings he continues as follows: "I have given this abstract of what I found in a work of theirs when they were attacking the work of Alcibiades [1] the Christian in which he shows that a prophet need not to speak in ecstasy." And he goes on in the same work to give a catalogue of those who have been prophets of the New Testament, and among them he numbers a certain Ammia and Quadratus and says thus: "But the false prophet speaks in ecstasy, after which follow ease and freedom from fear; he begins with voluntary ignorance, but turns to involuntary madness of soul, as has been said before. But they cannot show that any prophet, either of those in the Old Testament or of those in the New, was inspired in this way; they can boast neither of Agabus, nor of Judas, nor of Silas, nor of the daughters of Philip, nor of Ammia in Philadelphia, nor of Quadratus, nor of any others who do not belong to them." And again after a little he goes on, "For if the Montanist women succeeded to Quadratus and Ammia in Philadelphia in the prophetic gift, let them show who among them succeeded the followers of Montanus and the women, for the apostle grants that the prophetic gift shall be in all the church until the final coming, but this they could not show, seeing that this is already the fourteenth year from the death of Maximilla."

He, therefore, so writes. But the Miltiades mentioned by him has also left us other monuments of his own zeal for the oracles of God in the treatises which

to be correct so far as historical fact is concerned, but the evidence of the MSS. seems equally to prove that the mistake is due to Eusebius himself, and as such ought to appear in the text. See Introduction, p. lv., and *cf.* McGiffert's note *ad loc.*

Digitized by Google

ἔν τε οἷς πρὸς Ἕλληνας συνέταξε λόγοις καὶ τοῖς πρὸς Ἰουδαίους, ἑκατέρᾳ ἰδίως ὑποθέσει ἐν δυσὶν ὑπαντήσας συγγράμμασιν, ἔτι δὲ καὶ πρὸς τοὺς κοσμικοὺς ἄρχοντας ὑπὲρ ἧς μετῄει φιλοσοφίας πεποίηται ἀπολογίαν.

XVIII. Τῆς δὲ κατὰ Φρύγας καλουμένης αἱρέ- 1
σεως καὶ Ἀπολλώνιος, ἐκκλησιαστικὸς συγγραφεύς, ἀκμαζούσης εἰς ἔτι τότε κατὰ τὴν Φρυγίαν ἔλεγχον ἐνστησάμενος, ἴδιον κατ' αὐτῶν πεποίηται σύγγραμμα, τὰς μὲν φερομένας αὐτῶν προφητείας ψευδεῖς οὔσας κατὰ λέξιν εὐθύνων, τὸν δὲ βίον τῶν τῆς αἱρέσεως ἀρχηγῶν ὁποῖός τις γέγονεν, διελέγχων· αὐτοῖς δὲ ῥήμασιν περὶ τοῦ Μοντανοῦ ταῦτα λέγοντος ἄκουε· "ἀλλὰ τίς ἐστιν οὗτος ὁ πρόσ- 2
φατος διδάσκαλος, τὰ ἔργα αὐτοῦ καὶ ἡ διδασκαλία δείκνυσιν. οὗτός ἐστιν ὁ διδάξας λύσεις γάμων, ὁ νηστείας νομοθετήσας, ὁ Πέπουζαν καὶ Τύμιον Ἱερουσαλὴμ ὀνομάσας (πόλεις δ' εἰσὶν αὗται μικραὶ τῆς Φρυγίας), τοὺς πανταχόθεν ἐκεῖ συναγαγεῖν ἐθέλων, ὁ πρακτῆρας χρημάτων καταστήσας, ὁ ἐπ' ὀνόματι προσφορῶν τὴν δωροληψίαν ἐπιτεχνώμενος, ὁ σαλάρια χορηγῶν τοῖς κηρύσσουσιν αὐτοῦ τὸν λόγον, ἵνα διὰ τῆς γαστριμαργίας ἡ διδασκαλία τοῦ λόγου κρατύνηται."

Καὶ ταῦτα μὲν περὶ τοῦ Μοντανοῦ· καὶ περὶ τῶν 3
προφητίδων δὲ αὐτοῦ ὑποκαταβὰς οὕτω γράφει· "δείκνυμεν οὖν αὐτὰς πρώτας τὰς προφήτιδας ταύτας, ἀφ' οὗ τοῦ πνεύματος ἐπληρώθησαν, τοὺς ἄνδρας καταλιπούσας. πῶς οὖν ἐψεύδοντο Πρίσκιλλαν παρθένον ἀποκαλοῦντες; εἶτ' ἐπιφέρει 4
Didache 11, 12 λέγων· "δοκεῖ σοι πᾶσα γραφὴ κωλύειν προφήτην λαμβάνειν δῶρα καὶ χρήματα; ὅταν οὖν ἴδω τὴν

Digitized by Google

he composed against the Gentiles and against the Jews, treating each subject separately in two treatises, and besides this he wrote an Apology to the secular rulers on behalf of the philosophy which he held.

XVIII. Apollonius also, a writer of the church when the so-called Montanist heresy was still flourishing in Phrygia, composed a refutation and published it as a separate work against them, proving word by word that their alleged prophecies are false and showing the true character of the life of the leaders of the heresy. Listen to the actual words which he uses about Montanus. "But the deeds and the teachings of this recent teacher show his character. It is he who taught the annulment of marriage, who enacted fasts, who gave the name of Jerusalem to Pepuza and Tymion, which are little towns in Phrygia, and wished to hold assemblies there from everywhere, who appointed collectors of money, who organized the receiving of gifts under the name of offerings, who provided salaries for those who preached his doctrine in order that its teaching might prevail through gluttony."

So he says about Montanus. And a little further on he writes thus about the prophetesses. "Thus we prove that these first prophetesses themselves deserted their husbands from the moment that they were filled with the spirit. What a lie it is then for them to call Priscilla a virgin." Then he goes on saying: "Does not all Scripture seem to you to forbid a prophet from receiving gifts and money? There-

Digitized by Google

προφῆτιν εἰληφυῖαν καὶ χρυσὸν καὶ ἄργυρον καὶ πολυτελεῖς ἐσθῆτας, πῶς αὐτὴν μὴ παραιτήσωμαι."

Αὖθις δ' ὑποκαταβὰς περί τινος τῶν κατ' 5
αὐτοὺς ὁμολογητῶν ταῦτά φησιν· "ἔτι δὲ καὶ Θεμίσων, ὁ τὴν ἀξιόπιστον πλεονεξίαν ἠμφιεσμένος, ὁ μὴ βαστάσας τῆς ὁμολογίας τὸ σημεῖον, ἀλλὰ πλήθει χρημάτων ἀποθέμενος τὰ δεσμά, δέον ἐπὶ τούτῳ ταπεινοφρονεῖν, ὡς μάρτυς καυχώμενος, ἐτόλμησεν, μιμούμενος τὸν ἀπόστολον, καθολικήν τινα συνταξάμενος ἐπιστολήν, κατηχεῖν μὲν τοὺς ἄμεινον αὐτοῦ πεπιστευκότας, συναγωνίζεσθαι δὲ τοῖς τῆς κενοφωνίας λόγοις, βλασφημῆσαι δὲ εἰς τὸν κύριον καὶ τοὺς ἀποστόλους καὶ τὴν ἁγίαν ἐκκλησίαν." καὶ περὶ ἑτέρου δὲ αὖθις τῶν κατ' 6
αὐτοὺς τετιμημένων ὡς δὴ μαρτύρων οὕτω γράφει· "ἵνα δὲ μὴ περὶ πλειόνων λέγωμεν, ἡ προφῆτις ἡμῖν εἰπάτω τὰ κατὰ Ἀλέξανδρον, τὸν λέγοντα ἑαυτὸν μάρτυρα, ᾧ συνεστιᾶται, ᾧ προσκυνοῦσιν καὶ αὐτῷ πολλοί· οὗ τὰς λῃστείας καὶ τὰ ἄλλα τολμήματα ἐφ' οἷς κεκόλασται, οὐχ ἡμᾶς δεῖ λέγειν, ἀλλὰ ὁ ὀπισθόδομος ἔχει. τίς οὖν τίνι χαρίζεται τὰ ἁμαρτήματα; πότερον ὁ προφήτης 7
τὰς λῃστείας τῷ μάρτυρι ἢ ὁ μάρτυς τῷ προφήτῃ τὰς πλεονεξίας; εἰρηκότος γὰρ τοῦ κυρίου μὴ
Matt. 10, 9. 10 κτήσησθε χρυσὸν μήτε ἄργυρον μηδὲ δύο χιτῶνας, οὗτοι πᾶν τοὐναντίον πεπλημμελήκασιν περὶ τὰς τούτων τῶν ἀπηγορευμένων κτήσεις. δείξομεν γὰρ τοὺς λεγομένους παρ' αὐτοῖς προφήτας καὶ

[1] This is the text of all MSS. except one which reads "the prophet." Probably this is a correction, but the context shows that it is right and that the reference is to Themiso. Apparently Themiso and Alexander lived together.

Digitized by Google

fore when I see that the prophetess has received gold and silver and expensive clothes, how should I refrain from blaming her ? "

Then further on he says this about one of their confessors : " Moreover, Themiso too, who was garbed with specious covetousness, who did not endure the sign of confession but exchanged prison for wealth when he ought to have been humble-minded on this account, and boasted that he was a martyr, dared, in imitation of the apostle, to compose an epistle general, to instruct those whose faith was better than his, and to contend with empty sounding words and to blaspheme against the Lord and the apostles and the holy church." And again he writes thus about another of those who were honoured among them as martyrs : " But in order that we may not speak about more of them, let the prophetess [1] tell us the story of Alexander, who calls himself a martyr, with whom she joins in revels, to whom many pay reverence. We need not tell of his robberies and the other crimes for which he has been punished, but the record-house [2] has them. Which then forgives the other's sins ? Does the prophet absolve the martyr of robbery or the martyr forgive the prophet for avarice ? For the Lord said, ' Provide neither gold nor silver nor two coats ' ; but these, doing wholly otherwise, have transgressed by the acquisition of these forbidden things. For we will show that their so-called prophets and martyrs make

[2] *ὀπισθόδομος*, literally " back room." It originally referred to a back room in the temple of Athena on the Acropolis at Athens which was used as the treasury, and it was afterwards extended to any room used for this or similar public purposes.

Digitized by Google

μάρτυρας μὴ μόνον παρὰ πλουσίων, ἀλλὰ καὶ παρὰ πτωχῶν καὶ ὀρφανῶν καὶ χηρῶν κερματιζομένους. καὶ εἰ πεποίθησιν ἔχουσιν, στήτωσαν ἐν 8
τούτῳ καὶ διορισάσθωσαν ἐπὶ τούτοις, ἵνα ἐὰν ἐλεγχθῶσιν, κἂν τοῦ λοιποῦ παύσωνται πλημμελοῦντες. δεῖ γὰρ τοὺς καρποὺς δοκιμάζεσθαι
Matt. 12, 33 τοῦ προφήτου· ἀπὸ γὰρ τοῦ καρποῦ τὸ ξύλον 9
γινώσκεται. ἵνα δὲ τοῖς βουλομένοις τὰ κατὰ Ἀλέξανδρον ἢ γνώριμα, κέκριται ὑπὸ Αἰμιλίου Φροντίνου ἀνθυπάτου ἐν Ἐφέσῳ, οὐ διὰ τὸ ὄνομα, ἀλλὰ δι' ἃς ἐτόλμησεν ληστείας, ὧν ἤδη παραβάτης· εἶτ' ἐπιψευσάμενος τῷ ὀνόματι τοῦ κυρίου, ἀπολέλυται, πλανήσας τοὺς ἐκεῖ πιστούς, καὶ ἡ ἰδία παροικία αὐτόν, ὅθεν ἦν, οὐκ ἐδέξατο διὰ τὸ εἶναι αὐτὸν ληστήν, καὶ οἱ θέλοντες μαθεῖν τὰ κατ' αὐτὸν ἔχουσιν τὸ τῆς Ἀσίας δημόσιον ἀρχεῖον· ὃν ὁ προφήτης συνόντα πολλοῖς ἔτεσιν ἀγνοεῖ. τοῦτον ἐλέγ- 10
χοντες ἡμεῖς, δι' αὐτοῦ καὶ τὴν ὑπόστασιν ἐξελέγχομεν τοῦ προφήτου. τὸ ὅμοιον ἐπὶ πολλῶν δυνάμεθα ἀποδεῖξαι, καὶ εἰ θαρροῦσιν, ὑπομεινάτωσαν τὸν ἔλεγχον."

Πάλιν τε αὖ ἐν ἑτέρῳ τόπῳ τοῦ συγγράμματος 11
περὶ ὧν αὐχοῦσι προφητῶν ἐπιλέγει ταῦτα· "ἐὰν ἀρνῶνται δῶρα τοὺς προφήτας αὐτῶν εἰληφέναι, τοῦθ' ὁμολογησάτωσαν ὅτι ἐὰν ἐλεγχθῶσιν εἰληφότες, οὐκ εἰσὶ προφῆται, καὶ μυρίας ἀποδείξεις τούτων παραστήσομεν. ἀναγκαῖον δέ ἐστιν πάντας καρποὺς δοκιμάζεσθαι προφήτου. προφήτης, εἰπέ μοι, βάπτεται; προφήτης στιβίζεται; προφήτης φιλοκοσμεῖ; προφήτης τάβλαις καὶ κύβοις παίζει; προφήτης δανείζει; ταῦτα ὁμολογησάτωσαν πό-

Digitized by Google

gain not only from the rich but from the poor and from orphans and widows. And if they have the courage let them stop at this point and discuss these matters in order that if they are convicted they may at least cease transgressing for the future. For it is necessary to test the fruits of the prophet, for from the fruits the tree is known. But, that the story of Alexander may be known to those who wish, he was convicted by Aemilius Pompinus, proconsul in Ephesus, not for being a Christian but for his daring robberies, and he was an old offender. Then, by falsely claiming the name of the Lord he was released, having deceived the Christians there, and his own diocese from which he came would not receive him because he was a robber, and those who wish to learn his story have the public records of Asia at their disposition.[1] The prophet is ignorant about him though he lived with him for many years, but we have exposed him, and through him expose also the nature of the prophet. We can show the same in many instances, and, if they dare, let them stand the test."

And again in another part of the book he says this about their boasted prophets: "If they deny that their prophets have taken gifts let them admit this, that if they have been convicted, they are not true prophets, and we will give countless proofs of this. But it is necessary to test all the fruits of a prophet. Tell me, does a prophet dye his hair? Does he pencil his eyelids? Does he love ornaments? Does he gamble and dice? Does he lend money? Let them state

[1] The story is an interesting parallel to Lucian's account of Peregrinus.

Digitized by Google

τερον ἔξεστιν ἢ μή, ἐγὼ δ' ὅτι γέγονεν παρ' αὐτοῖς, δείξω."

'Ο δ' αὐτὸς οὗτος Ἀπολλώνιος κατὰ τὸ αὐτὸ 12
σύγγραμμα ἱστορεῖ ὡς ἄρα τεσσαρακοστὸν ἐτύγχανεν ἔτος ἐπὶ τὴν τοῦ συγγράμματος αὐτοῦ γραφὴν ἐξ οὗ τῇ προσποιήτῳ αὐτοῦ προφητείᾳ ὁ Μοντανὸς ἐπικεχείρηκεν, καὶ πάλιν φησὶν ὡς ἄρα Ζωτικός, οὗ καὶ ὁ πρότερος συγγραφεὺς ἐ- 13
μνημόνευσεν, ἐν Πεπούζοις προφητεύειν δὴ προσποιουμένης τῆς Μαξιμίλλης ἐπιστὰς διελέγξαι τὸ ἐνεργοῦν ἐν αὐτῇ πνεῦμα πεπείραται, ἐκωλύθη γε μὴν πρὸς τῶν τὰ ἐκείνης φρονούντων. καὶ Θρασέα δέ τινος τῶν τότε μαρτύρων μνημονεύει. ἔτι δὲ 14
ὡς ἐκ παραδόσεως τὸν σωτῆρά φησιν προστεταχέναι τοῖς αὐτοῦ ἀποστόλοις ἐπὶ δώδεκα ἔτεσιν μὴ χωρισθῆναι τῆς Ἱερουσαλήμ, κέχρηται δὲ καὶ μαρτυρίαις ἀπὸ τῆς Ἰωάννου Ἀποκαλύψεως, καὶ νεκρὸν δὲ δυνάμει θείᾳ πρὸς αὐτοῦ Ἰωάννου ἐν τῇ Ἐφέσῳ ἐγηγέρθαι ἱστορεῖ, καὶ ἄλλα τινά φησιν, δι' ὧν ἱκανῶς τῆς προειρημένης αἱρέσεως πληρέστατα διηύθυνεν τὴν πλάνην. ταῦτα καὶ ὁ Ἀπολλώνιος.

XIX. Τῶν δὲ Ἀπολιναρίου κατὰ τῆς δηλωθείσης 1
αἱρέσεως μνήμην πεποίηται Σεραπίων, ὃν ἐπὶ τῶν δηλουμένων χρόνων μετὰ Μαξιμῖνον ἐπίσκοπον τῆς Ἀντιοχέων ἐκκλησίας γενέσθαι κατέχει λόγος· μέμνηται δ' αὐτοῦ ἐν ἰδίᾳ ἐπιστολῇ τῇ πρὸς Καρικὸν καὶ Πόντιον, ἐν ᾗ διευθύνων καὶ αὐτὸς τὴν αὐτὴν αἵρεσιν, ἐπιλέγει ταῦτα· "ὅπως δὲ 2
καὶ τοῦτο εἰδῆτε ὅτι τῆς ψευδοῦς ταύτης τάξεως τῆς ἐπικαλουμένης νέας προφητείας ἐβδέλυκται ἡ ἐνέργεια παρὰ πάσῃ τῇ ἐν κόσμῳ ἀδελφότητι,

Digitized by Google

whether these things are right or not, and I will show that they have been done among them."

This same Apollonius in the same book says that it was forty years from the time when Montanus plotted his fictitious prophecy, to the time when he wrote his book. And again he says that Zoticus, whom the former writer mentioned, when Maximilla pretended to prophesy in Pepuza had tried in opposition to confute the spirit which worked in her, but was prevented by those who agreed with her. He also mentions a certain Thraseas [1] as one of the martyrs of that time. Moreover, he says, as though from tradition, that the Saviour ordered his apostles not to leave Jerusalem for twelve years. He also makes quotations from the Apocalypse of John and tells how by divine power a dead man was raised by John himself at Ephesus. And he says other things by which he demonstrated powerfully and completely the error of the heresy under discussion. So far says Apollonius.

XIX. Tradition says that Serapion was bishop of Antioch after Maximinus at the time referred to, and he has mentioned the works of Apolinarius against the heresy described. He mentions him in his own letter to Caricus and Pontius, in which he also himself refutes the same heresy, and continues thus: "And in order that you may know this, that the working of the so-called new prophecy of this false order is abominated in the whole of Christendom

[1] *Cf. H.E.* v. 24.

Digitized by Google

πέπομφα ὑμῖν καὶ Κλαυδίου Ἀπολιναρίου, τοῦ μακαριωτάτου γενομένου ἐν Ἱεραπόλει τῆς Ἀσίας ἐπισκόπου, γράμματα." ἐν ταύτῃ δὲ τῇ τοῦ 3
Σεραπίωνος ἐπιστολῇ καὶ ὑποσημειώσεις φέρονται διαφόρων ἐπισκόπων, ὧν ὁ μέν τις ὧδέ πως ὑποσεσημείωται· "Αὐρήλιος Κυρίνιος μάρτυς ἐρρῶσθαι ὑμᾶς εὔχομαι," ὁ δέ τις τοῦτον τὸν τρόπον· "Αἴλιος Πούπλιος Ἰούλιος ἀπὸ Δεβελτοῦ κολωνίας τῆς Θρᾴκης ἐπίσκοπος· ζῇ ὁ θεὸς ὁ ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς, ὅτι Σωτᾶς ὁ μακάριος ὁ ἐν Ἀγχιάλῳ ἠθέλησε τὸν δαίμονα τὸν Πρισκίλλης ἐκβαλεῖν, καὶ οἱ ὑποκριταὶ οὐκ ἀφῆκαν." καὶ ἄλλων δὲ πλειόνων τὸν ἀριθμὸν 4
ἐπισκόπων συμψήφων τούτοις ἐν τοῖς δηλωθεῖσιν γράμμασιν αὐτόγραφοι φέρονται σημειώσεις. καὶ τὰ μὲν κατὰ τούτους ἦν τοιαῦτα.

XX. Ἐξ ἐναντίας δὲ τῶν ἐπὶ Ῥώμης τὸν ὑγιῆ 1
τῆς ἐκκλησίας θεσμὸν παραχαραττόντων, Εἰρηναῖος διαφόρους ἐπιστολὰς συντάττει, τὴν μὲν ἐπιγράψας Πρὸς Βλάστον περὶ σχίσματος, τὴν δὲ Πρὸς Φλωρῖνον περὶ μοναρχίας ἢ περὶ τοῦ μὴ εἶναι τὸν θεὸν ποιητὴν κακῶν. ταύτης γάρ τοι τῆς γνώμης οὗτος ἐδόκει προασπίζειν· δι' ὃν αὖθις ὑποσυρόμενον τῇ κατὰ Οὐαλεντῖνον πλάνῃ καὶ τὸ Περὶ ὀγδοάδος συντάττεται τῷ Εἰρηναίῳ σπούδασμα, ἐν ᾧ καὶ ἐπισημαίνεται τὴν πρώτην τῶν ἀποστόλων κατειληφέναι ἑαυτὸν διαδοχήν· ἔνθα πρὸς τῷ τοῦ συγ- 2
γράμματος τέλει χαριεστάτην αὐτοῦ σημείωσιν εὑρόντες, ἀναγκαίως καὶ ταύτην τῇδε καταλέξομεν τῇ γραφῇ, τοῦτον ἔχουσαν τὸν τρόπον· "ὁρκίζω σε τὸν μεταγραψόμενον τὸ βιβλίον τοῦτο κατὰ τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ καὶ κατὰ τῆς ἐνδόξου παρουσίας αὐτοῦ, ἧς ἔρχεται κρῖναι ζῶντας καὶ

Digitized by Google

throughout the world, I have sent you the writings of Claudius Apolinarius, the bishop of Hierapolis in Asia, of blessed memory." And in this letter of Serapion there are preserved the signatures of various bishops, of whom one signed himself "I, Aurelius Cyrenaeus, a martyr, pray for your welfare." Another as follows: "I, Aelius Publius Julius, bishop of Debeltum, a colony of Thrace. As God lives in the heavens the blessed Sotas in Anchialus wished to drive the devil out of Priscilla and the hypocrites would not let him." The autograph signatures of many other bishops who agreed with them are also preserved in the above mentioned writing. So far concerning them.

XX. In opposition to those in Rome who were discarding the sound ordinance of the church, Irenaeus composed various letters. He addressed one to Blastus *On Schism*, another to Florinus, *On the Sole Sovereignty* [1] or *That God is not the Author of Evil*, for Florinus seemed to be defending this opinion. For his sake too, when he was attracted by the Valentinian error, a work was composed by Irenaeus *On the Ogdoad*,[2] in which he also indicates that he had himself received the first succession of the apostles, and in it, at the end of the work, we find a most acceptable notice from him which we are obliged to give in this book and it runs as follows: "I adjure thee, who shalt copy out this book, by our Lord Jesus Christ, by his glorious advent when he comes to judge the living and the dead, that thou

[1] The μοναρχία became the technical term for the assertion of the Unity of the Godhead, without—as it was thought—due regard to the reality of the Persons of the Trinity, though "Person" (or ὑπόστασις) was not yet used in this sense. [2] Some Gnostics regarded God as eightfold.

Digitized by Google

νεκρούς, ἵνα ἀντιβάλῃς ὃ μετεγράψω, καὶ κατορθώσῃς αὐτὸ πρὸς τὸ ἀντίγραφον τοῦτο ὅθεν μετεγράψω, ἐπιμελῶς· καὶ τὸν ὅρκον τοῦτον ὁμοίως μεταγράψεις καὶ θήσεις ἐν τῷ ἀντιγράφῳ." καὶ 3 ταῦτα δὲ ὠφελίμως ὑπ' ἐκείνου λελέχθω πρὸς ἡμῶν τε ἱστορείσθω, ὡς ἂν ἔχοιμεν ἄριστον σπουδαιοτάτης ἐπιμελείας τοὺς ἀρχαίους ἐκείνους καὶ ὄντως ἱεροὺς ἄνδρας ὑπόδειγμα.

Ἐν ᾗ γε μὴν προειρήκαμεν πρὸς τὸν Φλωρῖνον 4 ὁ Εἰρηναῖος ἐπιστολῇ αὖθις τῆς ἅμα Πολυκάρπῳ συνουσίας αὐτοῦ μνημονεύει, λέγων· "ταῦτα τὰ δόγματα, Φλωρῖνε, ἵνα πεφεισμένως εἶπω, οὐκ ἔστιν ὑγιοῦς γνώμης· ταῦτα τὰ δόγματα ἀσύμφωνά ἐστιν τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ εἰς τὴν μεγίστην ἀσέβειαν περιβάλλοντα τοὺς πειθομένους αὐτοῖς· ταῦτα τὰ δόγματα οὐδὲ οἱ ἔξω τῆς ἐκκλησίας αἱρετικοὶ ἐτόλμησαν ἀποφήνασθαί ποτε· ταῦτα τὰ δόγματα οἱ πρὸ ἡμῶν πρεσβύτεροι, οἱ καὶ τοῖς ἀποστόλοις συμφοιτήσαντες, οὐ παρέδωκάν σοι. εἶδον γάρ 5 σε, παῖς ἔτι ὤν, ἐν τῇ κάτω Ἀσίᾳ παρὰ Πολυκάρπῳ, λαμπρῶς πράσσοντα ἐν τῇ βασιλικῇ αὐλῇ καὶ πειρώμενον εὐδοκιμεῖν παρ' αὐτῷ. μᾶλλον γὰρ τὰ τότε διαμνημονεύω τῶν ἔναγχος γινομένων (αἱ γὰρ ἐκ παίδων μαθήσεις συναύξουσαι τῇ ψυχῇ, 6 ἑνοῦνται αὐτῇ), ὥστε με δύνασθαι εἰπεῖν καὶ τὸν τόπον ἐν ᾧ καθεζόμενος διελέγετο ὁ μακάριος Πολύκαρπος, καὶ τὰς προόδους αὐτοῦ καὶ τὰς εἰσόδους καὶ τὸν χαρακτῆρα τοῦ βίου καὶ τὴν τοῦ σώματος ἰδέαν καὶ τὰς διαλέξεις ἃς ἐποιεῖτο πρὸς τὸ πλῆθος, καὶ τὴν μετὰ Ἰωάννου συναναστροφὴν ὡς ἀπήγγελλεν καὶ τὴν μετὰ τῶν λοιπῶν τῶν ἑορακότων τὸν κύριον, καὶ ὡς ἀπεμνημόνευεν τοὺς

Digitized by Google

compare what thou shalt transcribe and correct it with this copy whence thou art transcribing, with all care, and thou shalt likewise transcribe this oath and put it in the copy." May his words be spoken to our profit and be narrated in order that we may keep those primitive and truly sacred men as the best example of the most zealous care.

In the letter to Florinus, which we have spoken of above, Irenaeus again mentions his intercourse with Polycarp, and says: "These opinions, O Florinus, that I may speak sparingly, do not belong to sound doctrine. These opinions are inconsistent with the church, and bring those who believe in them into the greatest impiety. These opinions not even the heretics outside the church ever dared to proclaim. These opinions those who were presbyters before us, they who accompanied the apostles, did not hand on to you. For while I was still a boy I knew you in lower Asia in Polycarp's house when you were a man of rank in the royal hall and endeavouring to stand well with him. I remember the events of those days more clearly than those which happened recently, for what we learn as children grows up with the soul and is united to it, so that I can speak even of the place in which the blessed Polycarp sat and disputed, how he came in and went out, the character of his life, the appearance of his body, the discourses which he made to the people, how he reported his intercourse with John and with the others who had seen the Lord, how he remembered their words, and what

Digitized by Google

λόγους αὐτῶν, καὶ περὶ τοῦ κυρίου τίνα ἦν ἃ παρ' ἐκείνων ἀκηκόει, καὶ περὶ τῶν δυνάμεων αὐτοῦ,
John 1, 1, 2 καὶ περὶ τῆς διδασκαλίας, ὡς παρὰ τῶν αὐτοπτῶν τῆς ζωῆς τοῦ λόγου παρειληφὼς ὁ Πολύκαρπος ἀπήγγελλεν πάντα σύμφωνα ταῖς γραφαῖς. ταῦτα 7
καὶ τότε διὰ τὸ ἔλεος τοῦ θεοῦ τὸ ἐπ' ἐμοὶ γεγονὸς σπουδαίως ἤκουον, ὑπομνηματιζόμενος αὐτὰ οὐκ ἐν χάρτῃ, ἀλλ' ἐν τῇ ἐμῇ καρδίᾳ· καὶ ἀεὶ διὰ τὴν χάριν τοῦ θεοῦ γνησίως αὐτὰ ἀναμαρυκῶμαι, καὶ δύναμαι διαμαρτύρασθαι ἔμπροσθεν τοῦ θεοῦ ὅτι εἴ τι τοιοῦτον ἀκηκόει ἐκεῖνος ὁ μακάριος καὶ ἀποστολικὸς πρεσβύτερος, ἀνακράξας ἂν καὶ ἐμφράξας τὰ ὦτα αὐτοῦ καὶ κατὰ τὸ σύνηθες αὐτῷ εἰπών 'ὦ καλὲ θεέ, εἰς οἵους με καιροὺς τετήρηκας, ἵνα τούτων ἀνέχωμαι,' πεφεύγει ἂν καὶ τὸν τόπον ἐν ᾧ καθεζόμενος ἢ ἑστὼς τῶν τοιούτων ἀκηκόει λόγων. καὶ ἐκ τῶν ἐπιστολῶν δὲ αὐτοῦ ὧν 8
ἐπέστειλεν ἤτοι ταῖς γειτνιώσαις ἐκκλησίαις, ἐπιστηρίζων αὐτάς, ἢ τῶν ἀδελφῶν τισί, νουθετῶν αὐτοὺς καὶ προτρεπόμενος, δύναται φανερωθῆναι." ταῦτα ὁ Εἰρηναῖος.

XXI. Κατὰ δὲ τὸν αὐτὸν τῆς Κομόδου βασιλείας 1
χρόνον μεταβέβλητο μὲν ἐπὶ τὸ πρᾶον τὰ καθ' ἡμᾶς, εἰρήνης σὺν θείᾳ χάριτι τὰς καθ' ὅλης τῆς οἰκουμένης διαλαβούσης ἐκκλησίας· ὅτε καὶ ὁ σωτήριος λόγος ἐκ παντὸς γένους ἀνθρώπων πᾶσαν ὑπήγετο ψυχὴν ἐπὶ τὴν εὐσεβῆ τοῦ τῶν ὅλων θεοῦ θρησκείαν, ὡς ἤδη καὶ τῶν ἐπὶ Ῥώμης εὖ μάλα πλούτῳ καὶ γένει διαφανῶν πλείους ἐπὶ τὴν σφῶν ὁμόσε χωρεῖν πανοικεί τε καὶ παγγενεῖ σωτηρίαν. οὐκ ἦν δὲ ἄρα τοῦτο τῷ μισοκάλῳ δαίμονι βασκάνῳ 2
ὄντι τὴν φύσιν οἰστόν, ἀπεδύετο δ' οὖν εἰς αὖθις,

Digitized by Google

were the things concerning the Lord which he had heard from them, and about their miracles, and about their teaching, and how Polycarp had received them from the eyewitnesses of the word of life, and reported all things in agreement with the Scriptures. I listened eagerly even then to these things through the mercy of God which was given me, and made notes of them, not on paper but in my heart, and ever by the grace of God do I truly ruminate on them, and I can bear witness before God that if that blessed and apostolic presbyter had heard anything of this kind he would have cried out, and shut his ears, and said according to his custom, 'O good God, to what time hast thou preserved me that I should endure this?' He would have fled even from the place in which he was seated or standing when he heard such words. And from his letters which he sent either to the neighbouring churches, strengthening them, or to some of the brethren, exhorting and warning them, this can be made plain." So says Irenaeus.

XXI. And at the same time in the reign of Commodus our treatment was changed to a milder one, and by the grace of God peace came on the churches throughout the whole world. The word of salvation began to lead every soul of every race of men to the pious worship of the God of the universe, so that now many of those who at Rome were famous for wealth and family turned to their own salvation with all their house and with all their kin. This was unendurable to the demon who hates good, envious as he is by nature, and he again stripped for conflict,

Digitized by Google

ποικίλας τὰς καθ' ἡμῶν μηχανὰς ἐπιτεχνώμενος. ἐπὶ γοῦν τῆς Ῥωμαίων πόλεως Ἀπολλώνιον, ἄνδρα τῶν τότε πιστῶν ἐπὶ παιδείᾳ καὶ φιλοσοφίᾳ βεβοημένον, ἐπὶ δικαστήριον ἄγει, ἕνα γέ τινα τῶν εἰς ταὐτ' ἐπιτηδείων αὐτῷ διακόνων ἐπὶ κατηγορίᾳ τἀνδρὸς ἐγείρας. ἀλλ' ὁ μὲν δείλαιος παρὰ καιρὸν 3
τὴν δίκην εἰσελθών, ὅτι μὴ ζῆν ἐξὸν ἦν κατὰ βασιλικὸν ὅρον τοὺς τῶν τοιῶνδε μηνυτάς, αὐτίκα κατεάγνυται τὰ σκέλη, Περεννίου δικαστοῦ τοιαύτην κατ' αὐτοῦ ψῆφον ἀπενέγκαντος· ὁ δέ γε θεο- 4
φιλέστατος μάρτυς, πολλὰ λιπαρῶς ἱκετεύσαντος τοῦ δικαστοῦ καὶ λόγον αὐτὸν ἐπὶ τῆς συγκλήτου βουλῆς αἰτήσαντος, λογιωτάτην ὑπὲρ ἧς ἐμαρτύρει πίστεως ἐπὶ πάντων παρασχὼν ἀπολογίαν, κεφαλικῇ κολάσει ὡς ἂν ἀπὸ δόγματος συγκλήτου τελειοῦται, μηδ' ἄλλως ἀφεῖσθαι τοὺς ἅπαξ εἰς δικαστήριον παριόντας καὶ μηδαμῶς τῆς προθέσεως μεταβαλλομένους ἀρχαίου παρ' αὐτοῖς
Acta Martyr. sel. ed. Gebhardt, p. vi νόμου κεκρατηκότος. τούτου μὲν οὖν τὰς ἐπὶ τοῦ 5
δικαστοῦ φωνὰς καὶ τὰς ἀποκρίσεις ἃς πρὸς πεῦσιν πεποίητο τοῦ Περεννίου, πᾶσάν τε τὴν πρὸς τὴν σύγκλητον ἀπολογίαν, ὅτῳ διαγνῶναι φίλον, ἐκ τῆς τῶν ἀρχαίων μαρτύρων συναχθείσης ἡμῖν ἀναγραφῆς εἴσεται.

XXII. Δεκάτῳ γε μὴν τῆς Κομόδου βασιλείας 1
ἔτει δέκα πρὸς τρισὶν ἔτεσιν τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν λελειτουργηκότα Ἐλεύθερον διαδέχεται Βίκτωρ· ἐν ᾧ καὶ Ἰουλιανοῦ δέκατον ἔτος ἀποπλήσαντος, τῶν κατ' Ἀλεξάνδρειαν παροικιῶν τὴν λειτουργίαν ἐγχειρίζεται Δημήτριος· καθ' οὓς καὶ τῆς Ἀντιοχέων ἐκκλησίας ὄγδοος ἀπὸ τῶν ἀποστόλων ὁ πρόσθεν ἤδη δεδηλωμένος ἔτι τότε Σεραπίων

Digitized by Google

and prepared various devices against us. In the city of the Romans he brought before the court Apollonius, a man famous among the Christians of that time for his education and philosophy, and raised up to accuse him one of his servants who was suitable for this. But the coward entered the case at a bad time, for according to imperial decree informers on such points were not allowed to live; so they broke his legs at once, for the judge Perennius decreed this sentence against him. But the martyr, beloved of God, when the judge earnestly begged and prayed him to defend himself before the senate, made before every one a most learned defence of the faith for which he was a martyr, and was consecrated by beheading as if by decree of the senate; for an ancient law obtained among them that there should be no other issue for the case of those who once appeared before the court and did not change their opinion. The words of Apollonius before the judge and the answers which he made to the interrogation of Perennius, and all the defence which he made to the senate, can be read by anyone who wishes in the compilation which we have made of the ancient martyrs.[1]

XXII. In the tenth year of the reign of Commodus[2] Victor succeeded Eleutherus who had served in the episcopate thirteen years. In the same year Julian had completed his tenth year, and Demetrius was appointed to the administration of the Alexandrian dioceses, and at the same time the famous Serapion, whom we mentioned before, was bishop of the church

[1] See Introduction, p. xxiii. The facts as to Apollonius are obscure; but the servant was probably executed in accordance with the law against slaves who betrayed their masters.

[2] That is, in A.D. 189.

Digitized by Google

ἐπίσκοπος ἐγνωρίζετο. Καισαρείας δὲ τῆς Παλαιστίνων ἡγεῖτο Θεόφιλος, καὶ Νάρκισσος δὲ ὁμοίως, οὗ καὶ πρόσθεν ὁ λόγος μνήμην ἐποιήσατο, τῆς ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις ἐκκλησίας ἔτι τότε τὴν λειτουργίαν εἶχεν, Κορίνθου δὲ τῆς καθ' Ἑλλάδα κατὰ τοὺς αὐτοὺς ἐπίσκοπος ἦν Βάκχυλλος καὶ τῆς ἐν Ἐφέσῳ παροικίας Πολυκράτης. καὶ ἄλλοι δ', ὥς γε εἰκός, ἐπὶ τούτοις μυρίοι κατὰ τούσδε διέπρεπον· ὧν γε μὴν ἔγγραφος ἡ τῆς πίστεως εἰς ἡμᾶς κατῆλθεν ὀρθοδοξία, τούτους εἰκότως ὀνομαστὶ κατελέξαμεν.

XXIII. Ζητήσεως δῆτα κατὰ τούσδε οὐ σμικρᾶς 1
ἀνακινηθείσης, ὅτι δὴ τῆς Ἀσίας ἁπάσης αἱ παροικίαι ὡς ἐκ παραδόσεως ἀρχαιοτέρας σελήνης τὴν τεσσαρεσκαιδεκάτην ᾤοντο δεῖν ἐπὶ τῆς τοῦ σωτηρίου πάσχα ἑορτῆς παραφυλάττειν, ἐν ᾗ θύειν τὸ πρόβατον Ἰουδαίοις προηγόρευτο, ὡς δέον ἐκ παντὸς κατὰ ταύτην, ὁποίᾳ δ' ἂν ἡμέρᾳ τῆς ἑβδομάδος περιτυγχάνοι, τὰς τῶν ἀσιτιῶν ἐπιλύσεις ποιεῖσθαι, οὐκ ἔθους ὄντος τοῦτον ἐπιτελεῖν τὸν τρόπον ταῖς ἀνὰ τὴν λοιπὴν ἅπασαν οἰκουμένην ἐκκλησίαις, ἐξ ἀποστολικῆς παραδόσεως τὸ καὶ εἰς δεῦρο κρατῆσαν ἔθος φυλαττούσαις, ὡς μηδ' ἑτέρᾳ προσήκειν παρὰ τὴν τῆς ἀναστάσεως τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν ἡμέρᾳ τὰς νηστείας ἐπιλύεσθαι, σύνοδοι δὴ καὶ συγκροτήσεις ἐπισκόπων ἐπὶ 2
ταὐτὸν ἐγίνοντο, πάντες τε μιᾷ γνώμῃ δι' ἐπιστολῶν ἐκκλησιαστικὸν δόγμα τοῖς πανταχόσε διετυποῦντο ὡς ἂν μηδ' ἐν ἄλλῃ ποτὲ τῆς κυριακῆς ἡμέρᾳ τὸ τῆς ἐκ νεκρῶν ἀναστάσεως ἐπιτελοῖτο τοῦ κυρίου μυστήριον, καὶ ὅπως ἐν ταύτῃ μόνῃ τῶν κατὰ τὸ

Digitized by Google

of Antioch and the eighth from the apostles. Theophilus ruled Caesarea in Palestine, and Narcissus, whom our work has mentioned before, was still holding the administration of the church at Jerusalem, and at the same time Bacchyllus was bishop of Corinth in Greece and Polycrates of the diocese of Ephesus. There were also, of course, countless other famous men at this time, but we have naturally given the names of those the orthodoxy of whose faith has been preserved to us in writing.

XXIII. At that time no small controversy arose because all the dioceses of Asia thought it right, as though by more ancient tradition, to observe for the feast of the Saviour's passover the fourteenth day of the moon, on which the Jews had been commanded to kill the lamb. Thus it was necessary to finish the fast on that day, whatever day of the week it might be.[1] Yet it was not the custom to celebrate in this manner in the churches throughout the rest of the world, for from apostolic tradition they kept the custom which still exists that it is not right to finish the fast on any day save that of the resurrection of our Saviour. Many meetings and conferences with bishops were held on this point, and all unanimously formulated in their letters the doctrine of the church for those in every country that the mystery of the Lord's resurrection from the dead could be celebrated on no day save Sunday,[2] and

[1] That is, instead of Good Friday as the anniversary of the Lord's death the Asiatic Christians observed the Jewish feast on the fourteenth day after the new moon with which the month Nisan began. Hence they are often called Quartodecimans.

[2] And therefore the celebration of the crucifixion must come on a Friday.

Digitized by Google

πάσχα νηστειῶν φυλαττοίμεθα τὰς ἐπιλύσεις. φέρεται δ' εἰς ἔτι νῦν τῶν κατὰ Παλαιστίνην 3
τηνικάδε συγκεκροτημένων γραφή, ὧν προυτέτακτο Θεόφιλος τῆς ἐν Καισαρείᾳ παροικίας ἐπίσκοπος καὶ Νάρκισσος τῆς ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις, καὶ τῶν ἐπὶ Ῥώμης δ' ὁμοίως ἄλλη περὶ τοῦ αὐτοῦ ζητήματος, ἐπίσκοπον Βίκτορα δηλοῦσα, τῶν τε κατὰ Πόντον ἐπισκόπων, ὧν Πάλμας ὡς ἀρχαιότατος προυτέτακτο, καὶ τῶν κατὰ Γαλλίαν δὲ 4
παροικιῶν, ἃς Εἰρηναῖος ἐπεσκόπει, ἔτι τε τῶν κατὰ τὴν Ὀσροηνὴν καὶ τὰς ἐκεῖσε πόλεις, καὶ ἰδίως Βακχύλλου τῆς Κορινθίων ἐκκλησίας ἐπισκόπου, καὶ πλείστων ὅσων ἄλλων, οἳ μίαν καὶ τὴν αὐτὴν δόξαν τε καὶ κρίσιν ἐξενηνεγμένοι, τὴν αὐτὴν τέθεινται ψῆφον.

XXIV. Καὶ τούτων μὲν ἦν ὅρος εἷς, ὁ δεδηλω- 1
μένος· τῶν δὲ ἐπὶ τῆς Ἀσίας ἐπισκόπων τὸ πάλαι πρότερον αὐτοῖς παραδοθὲν διαφυλάττειν ἔθος χρῆναι διισχυριζομένων ἡγεῖτο Πολυκράτης· ὃς καὶ αὐτὸς ἐν ᾗ πρὸς Βίκτορα καὶ τὴν Ῥωμαίων ἐκκλησίαν διετυπώσατο γραφῇ τὴν εἰς αὐτὸν ἐλθοῦσαν παράδοσιν ἐκτίθεται διὰ τούτων· "ἡμεῖς 2
οὖν ἀραδιούργητον ἄγομεν τὴν ἡμέραν, μήτε προστιθέντες μήτε ἀφαιροῦμενοι. καὶ γὰρ κατὰ τὴν Ἀσίαν μεγαλα στοιχεῖα κεκοίμηται· ἅτινα ἀναστήσεται τῇ ἡμέρᾳ τῆς παρουσίας τοῦ κυρίου, ἐν ᾗ ἔρχεται μετὰ δόξης ἐξ οὐρανῶν καὶ ἀναζητήσει πάντας τοὺς ἁγίους, Φίλιππον τῶν δώδεκα ἀποστόλων, ὃς κεκοίμηται ἐν Ἱεραπόλει καὶ δύο θυγατέρες αὐτοῦ γεγηρακυῖαι παρθένοι καὶ ἡ ἑτέρα αὐτοῦ θυγάτηρ ἐν ἁγίῳ πνεύματι πολι-
John 21, 20 13, 23 τευσαμένη ἐν Ἐφέσῳ ἀναπαύεται· ἔτι δὲ καὶ 3

Digitized by Google

that on that day alone we should celebrate the end of the paschal fast. There is still extant a writing of those who were convened in Palestine, over whom presided Theophilus, bishop of the diocese of Caesarea, and Narcissus, bishop of Jerusalem; and there is similarly another from those in Rome on the same controversy, which gives Victor as bishop; and there is one of the bishops of Pontus over whom Palmas presided as the oldest; and of the dioceses of Gaul, of which Irenaeus was bishop; and yet others of those in Osrhoene and the cities there; and particularly of Bacchyllus, the bishop of the church of Corinth; and of very many more who expressed one and the same opinion and judgement, and gave the same vote.

XXIV. These issued the single definition which was given above; but the bishops in Asia were led by Polycrates in persisting that it was necessary to keep the custom which had been handed down to them of old. Polycrates himself in a document which he addressed to Victor and to the church of Rome, expounds the tradition which had come to him as follows. "Therefore we keep the day undeviatingly, neither adding nor taking away, for in Asia great luminaries [1] sleep, and they will rise on the day of the coming of the Lord, when he shall come with glory from heaven and seek out [2] all the saints. Such were Philip of the twelve apostles, and two of his daughters who grew old as virgins, who sleep in Hierapolis, and another daughter of his, who lived in the Holy Spirit, rests at Ephesus. Moreover,

[1] στοιχεῖα in late Greek often means the planets.
[2] Some MSS. (AB) read ἀναστήσει, "raise up," and this may be the right reading.

Digitized by Google

Ἰωάννης ὁ ἐπὶ τὸ στῆθος τοῦ κυρίου ἀναπεσών,
Ex. 28, 32 ff. 30, 38 ff. ὃς ἐγενήθη ἱερεὺς τὸ πέταλον πεφορεκὼς καὶ
μάρτυς καὶ διδάσκαλος· οὗτος ἐν Ἐφέσῳ κε- 4
κοίμηται, ἔτι δὲ καὶ Πολύκαρπος ἐν Σμύρνῃ, καὶ
ἐπίσκοπος καὶ μάρτυς· καὶ Θρασέας καὶ ἐπίσκοπος
καὶ μάρτυς ἀπὸ Εὐμενείας, ὃς ἐν Σμύρνῃ κεκοί- 5
μηται. τί δὲ δεῖ λέγειν Σάγαριν ἐπίσκοπον καὶ
μάρτυρα, ὃς ἐν Λαοδικείᾳ κεκοίμηται, ἔτι δὲ καὶ
Παπίριον τὸν μακάριον καὶ Μελίτωνα τὸν εὐνοῦχον,
τὸν ἐν ἁγίῳ πνεύματι πάντα πολιτευσάμενον, ὃς
κεῖται ἐν Σάρδεσιν περιμένων τὴν ἀπὸ τῶν οὐρανῶν
ἐπισκοπὴν ἐν ᾗ ἐκ νεκρῶν ἀναστήσεται; οὗτοι 6
πάντες ἐτήρησαν τὴν ἡμέραν τῆς τεσσαρεσκαι-
δεκάτης τοῦ πάσχα κατὰ τὸ εὐαγγέλιον, μηδὲν
παρεκβαίνοντες, ἀλλὰ κατὰ τὸν κανόνα τῆς πίστεως
ἀκολουθοῦντες· ἔτι δὲ κἀγὼ ὁ μικρότερος πάντων
ὑμῶν Πολυκράτης, κατὰ παράδοσιν τῶν συγγενῶν
μου, οἷς καὶ παρηκολούθησά τισιν αὐτῶν. ἑπτὰ
μὲν ἦσαν συγγενεῖς μου ἐπίσκοποι, ἐγὼ δὲ ὄγδοος·
καὶ πάντοτε τὴν ἡμέραν ἤγαγον οἱ συγγενεῖς μου
ὅταν ὁ λαὸς ἤρνυεν τὴν ζύμην. ἐγὼ οὖν, ἀδελφοί, 7
ἑξήκοντα πέντε ἔτη ἔχων ἐν κυρίῳ καὶ συμ-
Philipp. 1, 28 βεβληκὼς τοῖς ἀπὸ τῆς οἰκουμένης ἀδελφοῖς καὶ
πᾶσαν ἁγίαν γραφὴν διεληλυθώς, οὐ πτύρομαι ἐπὶ
τοῖς καταπλησσομένοις· οἱ γὰρ ἐμοῦ μείζονες εἰρή-
Acts 5, 29 κασι ‘πειθαρχεῖν δεῖ θεῷ μᾶλλον ἢ ἀνθρώποις.’”

Τούτοις ἐπιφέρει περὶ τῶν γράφοντι συμπαρόντων 8
αὐτῷ καὶ ὁμοδοξούντων ἐπισκόπων ταῦτα λέγων
“ἐδυνάμην δὲ τῶν ἐπισκόπων τῶν συμπαρόντων
μνημονεῦσαι, οὓς ὑμεῖς ἠξιώσατε μετακληθῆναι
ὑπ’ ἐμοῦ καὶ μετεκαλεσάμην· ὧν τὰ ὀνόματα ἐὰν
γράφω, πολλὰ πλήθη εἰσίν· οἱ δὲ εἰδότες τὸν

Digitized by Google

there is also John, who lay on the Lord's breast, who was a priest wearing the breastplate, and a martyr, and teacher. He sleeps at Ephesus. And there is also Polycarp at Smyrna, both bishop and martyr, and Thraseas, both bishop and martyr, from Eumenaea, who sleeps in Smyrna. And why should I speak of Sagaris, bishop and martyr, who sleeps at Laodicaea, and Papirius, too, the blessed, and Melito the eunuch, who lived entirely in the Holy Spirit, who lies in Sardis, waiting for the visitation from heaven when he will rise from the dead? All these kept the fourteenth day of the passover according to the gospel, never swerving, but following according to the rule of the faith. And I also, Polycrates, the least of you all, live according to the tradition of my kinsmen, and some of them have I followed. For seven of my family were bishops and I am the eighth, and my kinsmen ever kept the day when the people put away the leaven. Therefore, brethren, I who have lived sixty-five years in the Lord and conversed with brethren from every country, and have studied all holy Scripture, am not afraid of threats, for they have said who were greater than I, 'It is better to obey God rather than men.'"

He continues about the bishops who when he wrote were with him and shared his opinion, and says thus: "And I could mention the bishops who are present whom you required me to summon, and I did so. If I should write their names they would be many multitudes; and they knowing my feeble

Digitized by Google

μικρόν μου ἄνθρωπον συνηυδόκησαν τῇ ἐπιστολῇ, εἰδότες ὅτι εἰκῇ πολιὰς οὐκ ἤνεγκα, ἀλλ' ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ πάντοτε πεπολίτευμαι."

Ἐπὶ τούτοις ὁ μὲν τῆς Ῥωμαίων προεστὼς 9
Βίκτωρ ἀθρόως τῆς Ἀσίας πάσης ἅμα ταῖς
ὁμόροις ἐκκλησίαις τὰς παροικίας ἀποτέμνειν, ὡς
ἂν ἑτεροδοξούσας, τῆς κοινῆς ἑνώσεως πειρᾶται,
καὶ στηλιτεύει γε διὰ γραμμάτων ἀκοινωνήτους
πάντας ἄρδην τοὺς ἐκεῖσε ἀνακηρύττων ἀδελφούς·
ἀλλ' οὐ πᾶσί γε τοῖς ἐπισκόποις ταῦτ' ἠρέσκετο. 10
ἀντιπαρακελεύονται δῆτα αὐτῷ τὰ τῆς εἰρήνης
καὶ τῆς πρὸς τοὺς πλησίον ἑνώσεώς τε καὶ ἀγάπης
φρονεῖν, φέρονται δὲ καὶ αἱ τούτων φωναὶ πλη-
κτικώτερον καθαπτομένων τοῦ Βίκτορος· ἐν οἷς 11
καὶ ὁ Εἰρηναῖος ἐκ προσώπου ὧν ἡγεῖτο κατὰ τὴν
Γαλλίαν ἀδελφῶν ἐπιστείλας, παρίσταται μὲν τῷ
δεῖν ἐν μόνῃ τῇ τῆς κυριακῆς ἡμέρᾳ τὸ τῆς τοῦ
κυρίου ἀναστάσεως ἐπιτελεῖσθαι μυστήριον, τῷ
γε μὴν Βίκτορι προσηκόντως, ὡς μὴ ἀποκόπτοι
ὅλας ἐκκλησίας θεοῦ ἀρχαίου ἔθους παράδοσιν
ἐπιτηρούσας, πλεῖστα ἕτερα παραινεῖ, καὶ αὐτοῖς
δὲ ῥήμασιν τάδε ἐπιλέγων· "οὐδὲ γὰρ μόνον περὶ 12
τῆς ἡμέρας ἐστὶν ἡ ἀμφισβήτησις, ἀλλὰ καὶ περὶ
τοῦ εἴδους αὐτοῦ τῆς νηστείας. οἱ μὲν γὰρ οἴονται
μίαν ἡμέραν δεῖν αὐτοὺς νηστεύειν, οἱ δὲ δύο, οἱ
δὲ καὶ πλείονας· οἱ δὲ τεσσαράκοντα ὥρας ἡμερινάς
τε καὶ νυκτερινὰς συμμετροῦσιν τὴν ἡμέραν αὐτῶν.
καὶ τοιαύτη μὲν ποικιλία τῶν ἐπιτηρούντων οὐ 13
νῦν ἐφ' ἡμῶν γεγονυῖα, ἀλλὰ καὶ πολὺ πρότερον

[1] It appears to have been some time before the Church adopted the Lenten fast of forty days. Oddly enough, according to the historian Socrates (*Hist. Eccl.* v. 22) the

Digitized by Google

humanity, agreed with the letter, knowing that not in vain is my head grey, but that I have ever lived in Christ Jesus."

Upon this Victor, who presided at Rome, immediately tried to cut off from the common unity the dioceses of all Asia, together with the adjacent churches, on the ground of heterodoxy, and he indited letters announcing that all the Christians there were absolutely excommunicated. But by no means all were pleased by this, so they issued counter-requests to him to consider the cause of peace and unity and love towards his neighbours. Their words are extant, sharply rebuking Victor. Among them too Irenaeus, writing in the name of the Christians whose leader he was in Gaul, though he recommends that the mystery of the Lord's resurrection be observed only on the Lord's day, yet nevertheless exhorts Victor suitably and at length not to excommunicate whole churches of God for following a tradition of ancient custom, and continues as follows: "For the controversy is not only about the day, but also about the actual character of the fast; for some think that they ought to fast one day, others two, others even more, some count their day as forty hours, day and night.[1] And such variation of observance did not begin in our own time,[2] but much earlier, in the days of our predecessors who,

[1] Greek name for Lent (τεσσαρακοστή=fortieth) is older than the custom of fasting forty days. Forty hours was the traditional interval between the death and resurrection of Jesus. The present limits of Lent appear to have been fixed in the seventh century. See Smith's *Dictionary of Christian Antiquities*, s.v. *Lent*.

[2] The construction of the Greek is harsh: γεγονῖα seems a mistake for γέγονε.

Digitized by Google

ἐπὶ τῶν πρὸ ἡμῶν, τῶν παρὰ τὸ ἀκριβές, ὡς εἰκός, κρατούντων τὴν καθ' ἁπλότητα καὶ ἰδιωτισμὸν συνήθειαν εἰς τὸ μετέπειτα πεποιηκότων, καὶ οὐδὲν ἔλαττον πάντες οὗτοι εἰρήνευσάν τε καὶ εἰρηνεύομεν πρὸς ἀλλήλους, καὶ ἡ διαφωνία τῆς νηστείας τὴν ὁμόνοιαν τῆς πίστεως συνίστησιν."

Τούτοις καὶ ἱστορίαν προστίθησιν, ἣν οἰκείως 14
παραθήσομαι, τοῦτον ἔχουσαν τὸν τρόπον· "ἐν οἷς καὶ οἱ πρὸ Σωτῆρος πρεσβύτεροι, οἱ προστάντες τῆς ἐκκλησίας ἧς σὺ νῦν ἀφηγῇ, Ἀνίκητον λέγομεν καὶ Πίον Ὑγῖνόν τε καὶ Τελεσφόρον καὶ Ξύστον, οὔτε αὐτοὶ ἐτήρησαν οὔτε τοῖς μετ' αὐτῶν ἐπέτρεπον, καὶ οὐδὲν ἔλαττον αὐτοὶ μὴ τηροῦντες εἰρήνευον τοῖς ἀπὸ τῶν παροικιῶν ἐν αἷς ἐτηρεῖτο, ἐρχομένοις πρὸς αὐτούς· καίτοι μᾶλλον ἐναντίον ἦν τὸ τηρεῖν τοῖς μὴ τηροῦσιν. καὶ οὐδέποτε 15
διὰ τὸ εἶδος τοῦτο ἀπεβλήθησάν τινες, ἀλλ' αὐτοὶ μὴ τηροῦντες οἱ πρὸ σοῦ πρεσβύτεροι τοῖς ἀπὸ τῶν παροικιῶν τηροῦσιν ἔπεμπον εὐχαριστίαν, καὶ 16
τοῦ μακαρίου Πολυκάρπου ἐπιδημήσαντος τῇ Ῥώμῃ ἐπὶ Ἀνικήτου καὶ περὶ ἄλλων τινῶν μικρὰ σχόντες πρὸς ἀλλήλους, εὐθὺς εἰρήνευσαν, περὶ τούτου τοῦ κεφαλαίου μὴ φιλεριστήσαντες εἰς ἑαυτούς. οὔτε γὰρ ὁ Ἀνίκητος τὸν Πολύκαρπον πεῖσαι ἐδύνατο μὴ τηρεῖν, ἅτε μετὰ Ἰωάννου τοῦ μαθητοῦ τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν καὶ τῶν λοιπῶν ἀποστόλων οἷς συνδιέτριψεν, ἀεὶ τετηρηκότα, οὔτε μὴν ὁ Πολύκαρπος τὸν Ἀνίκητον ἔπεισεν τηρεῖν,

[1] That is, the Quartodeciman practice; see note on p. 503.

[2] The meaning appears to be that the previous generation of Romans had not made an issue out of the Quartodeciman practice, even when Asiatics visiting Rome

Digitized by Google

it would appear, disregarding strictness maintained a practice which is simple and yet allows for personal preference, establishing it for the future, and none the less all these lived in peace, and we also live in peace with one another and the disagreement in the fast confirms our agreement in the faith."

He adds to this a narrative which I may suitably quote, running as follows: "Among these too were the presbyters before Soter, who presided over the church of which you are now the leader, I mean Anicetus and Pius and Telesphorus and Xystus. They did not themselves observe it,[1] nor did they enjoin it on those who followed them, and though they did not keep it they were none the less at peace with those from the dioceses in which it was observed when they came to them, although to observe it was more objectionable to those who did not do so.[2] And no one was ever rejected for this reason, but the presbyters before you who did not observe it sent the Eucharist to those from other dioceses who did; and when the blessed Polycarp was staying in Rome in the time of Anicetus, though they disagreed a little about some other things as well, they immediately made peace, having no wish for strife between them on this matter. For neither was Anicetus able to persuade Polycarp not to observe it, inasmuch as he had always done so in company with John the disciple of our Lord and the other apostles with whom he had associated; nor did Polycarp persuade Anicetus to observe it, for he said that he ought to

observed it. The difficulty can be seen best if it be remembered that the Quartodeciman practice would sometimes mean that Asiatics treated as Easter day what the Romans regarded as Good Friday.

Digitized by Google

λέγοντα τὴν συνήθειαν τῶν πρὸ αὐτοῦ πρεσβυτέρων ὀφείλειν κατέχειν. καὶ τούτων οὕτως ἐχόντων, 17
ἐκοινώνησαν ἑαυτοῖς, καὶ ἐν τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ παρεχώρησεν ὁ Ἀνίκητος τὴν εὐχαριστίαν τῷ Πολυκάρπῳ, κατ᾽ ἐντροπὴν δηλονότι, καὶ μετ᾽ εἰρήνης ἀπ᾽ ἀλλήλων ἀπηλλάγησαν, πάσης τῆς ἐκκλησίας εἰρήνην ἐχόντων, καὶ τῶν τηρούντων καὶ τῶν μὴ τηρούντων."

Καὶ ὁ μὲν Εἰρηναῖος φερώνυμός τις ὢν τῇ 18
προσηγορίᾳ αὐτῷ τε τῷ τρόπῳ εἰρηνοποιός, τοιαῦτα ὑπὲρ τῆς τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν εἰρήνης παρεκάλει τε καὶ ἐπρέσβευεν, ὁ δ᾽ αὐτὸς οὐ μόνῳ τῷ Βίκτορι, καὶ διαφόροις δὲ πλείστοις ἄρχουσιν ἐκκλησιῶν τὰ κατάλληλα δι᾽ ἐπιστολῶν περὶ τοῦ κεκινημένου ζητήματος ὡμίλει.

XXV. Οἵ γε μὴν ἐπὶ Παλαιστίνης, οὓς ἀρτίως 1
διεληλύθαμεν, ὅ τε Νάρκισσος καὶ Θεόφιλος, καὶ σὺν αὐτοῖς Κάσσιος τῆς κατὰ Τύρον ἐκκλησίας ἐπίσκοπος καὶ Κλᾶρος τῆς ἐν Πτολεμαΐδι οἵ τε μετὰ τούτων συνεληλυθότες, περὶ τῆς κατελθούσης εἰς αὐτοὺς ἐκ διαδοχῆς τῶν ἀποστόλων περὶ τοῦ πάσχα παραδόσεως πλεῖστα διειληφότες, κατὰ τὸ τέλος τῆς γραφῆς αὐτοῖς ῥήμασιν ἐπιλέγουσιν ταῦτα· "τῆς δ᾽ ἐπιστολῆς ἡμῶν πειράθητε κατὰ πᾶσαν παροικίαν ἀντίγραφα διαπέμψασθαι, ὅπως μὴ ἔνοχοι ὦμεν τοῖς ῥᾳδίως πλανῶσιν ἑαυτῶν τὰς ψυχάς. δηλοῦμεν δὲ ὑμῖν ὅτι τῇ αὐτῇ ἡμέρᾳ καὶ ἐν Ἀλεξανδρείᾳ ἄγουσιν ἣπερ καὶ ἡμεῖς· παρ᾽ ἡμῶν γὰρ τὰ γράμματα κομίζεται αὐτοῖς καὶ ἡμῖν παρ᾽ αὐτῶν, ὥστε συμφώνως καὶ ὁμοῦ ἄγειν ἡμᾶς τὴν ἁγίαν ἡμέραν."

XXVI. Ἀλλὰ γὰρ πρὸς τοῖς ἀποδοθεῖσιν Εἰρη- 1

Digitized by Google

keep the custom of those who were presbyters before him. And under these circumstances they communicated with each other, and in the church Anicetus yielded the celebration of the Eucharist to Polycarp, obviously out of respect, and they parted from each other in peace, for the peace of the whole church was kept both by those who observed and by those who did not."

And Irenaeus, who deserved his name, making an eirenicon in this way, gave exhortations of this kind for the peace of the church and served as its ambassador, for in letters he discussed the various views on the issue which had been raised, not only with Victor but also with many other rulers of churches.

XXV. The Palestinians whom we have recently mentioned, that is to say Narcissus and Theophilus, and with them Cassius, the bishop of the church in Tyre, and Clarus, the bishop of the church in Ptolemais, and those who assembled with them, treated at length the tradition concerning the passover which had come down to them from the succession of the apostles, and at the end of their writing they add as follows: "Try to send copies of our letter to every diocese that we may not be guilty towards those who easily deceive their own souls. And we make it plain to you that in Alexandria also they celebrate the same day as do we, for letters have been exchanged between them and us, so that we observe the holy day together and in agreement."

XXVI. In addition to the published treatises

Digitized by Google

ναίου συγγράμμασιν καὶ ταῖς ἐπιστολαῖς φέρεταί τις αὐτοῦ πρὸς Ἕλληνας λόγος συντομώτατος καὶ τὰ μάλιστα ἀναγκαιότατος, Περὶ ἐπιστήμης ἐπιγεγραμμένος, καὶ ἄλλος, ὃν ἀνατέθεικεν ἀδελφῷ Μαρκιανῷ τοὔνομα εἰς ἐπίδειξιν τοῦ ἀποστολικοῦ κηρύγματος, καὶ βιβλίον τι διαλέξεων διαφόρων, ἐν ᾧ τῆς πρὸς Ἑβραίους ἐπιστολῆς καὶ τῆς λεγομένης Σολομῶνος Σοφίας μνημονεύει, ῥητά τινα ἐξ αὐτῶν παραθέμενος. καὶ τὰ μὲν εἰς ἡμετέραν ἐλθόντα γνῶσιν τῶν Εἰρηναίου τοσαῦτα.

Κομόδου δὲ τὴν ἀρχὴν ἐπὶ δέκα καὶ τρισὶν ἔτεσιν καταλύσαντος, αὐτοκράτωρ Σευῆρος οὐδ' ὅλοις μησὶν ἐξ μετὰ τὴν Κομόδου τελευτὴν Περτίνακος διαγενομένου κρατεῖ. XXVII. πλεῖστα μὲν[1] οὖν παρὰ πολλοῖς εἰς ἔτι νῦν τῶν τότε σῴζεται παλαιῶν καὶ ἐκκλησιαστικῶν ἀνδρῶν ἐναρέτου σπουδῆς ὑπομνήματα· ὧν γε μὴν αὐτοὶ διέγνωμεν, εἴη ἂν τὰ Ἡρακλείτου εἰς τὸν ἀπόστολον, καὶ τὰ Μαξίμου περὶ τοῦ πολυθρυλήτου παρὰ τοῖς αἱρεσιώταις ζητήματος τοῦ πόθεν ἡ κακία, καὶ περὶ τοῦ γενητὴν ὑπάρχειν τὴν ὕλην, τά τε Κανδίδου εἰς τὴν ἑξαήμερον, καὶ Ἀπίωνος εἰς τὴν αὐτὴν ὑπόθεσιν, ὁμοίως Σέξτου περὶ ἀναστάσεως, καὶ ἄλλη τις ὑπόθεσις Ἀραβιανοῦ, καὶ μυρίων ἄλλων, ὧν διὰ τὸ μηδεμίαν ἔχειν ἀφορμὴν οὐχ οἷόν τε οὔτε τοὺς χρόνους παραδοῦναι γραφῇ οὔθ' ἱστορίας μνήμην ὑποσημήνασθαι. καὶ ἄλλων δὲ πλείστων, ὧν οὐδὲ τὰς προσηγορίας καταλέγειν ἡμῖν δυνατόν, ἦλθον εἰς ἡμᾶς λόγοι, ὀρθοδόξων μὲν καὶ ἐκκλη-

[1] Commodus was killed on December 31, A.D. 192. Pertinax succeeded him, but was killed by the Praetorian guard on March 28, 193. The Praetorians sold the empire

Digitized by Google

and to the letters of Irenaeus, there is extant a concise and extremely convincing treatise of his against the Greeks, entitled *Concerning Knowledge*, and another which he has dedicated to a Christian named Marcian on the *Demonstration of the Apostolic Preaching*, and a little book of various discourses in which he mentions the Epistle to the Hebrews and the so-called Wisdom of Solomon, quoting certain passages from them. Such is the extent of our knowledge of the works of Irenaeus.

When Commodus had finished his reign after thirteen years Severus became emperor not quite six months after the death of Commodus, Pertinax coming in the interval.[1] XXVII. Many works of the virtuous zeal of the ancient members of the church of that time have still been widely preserved until now, and we have read them ourselves. Such are the writings of Heraclitus on the Epistles,[2] and the writings of Maximus on the problem of the source of evil, so much traversed by the heretics, and on whether matter has an origin, the works of Candidus on the Hexaëmeron,[3] and of Apion on the same subject, also of Sextus on the Resurrection, and another treatise of Arabianus, and countless others of which we are unable from lack of evidence to give the date or any accounts of their history. And there are many others also which have reached us, but we cannot even give their names, yet they are orthodox

to Didius Iulianus, but the Pannonian legions acclaimed Severus, who marched on Rome. The Senate then turned against Didius Iulianus who was beheaded after a reign of only sixty-six days.

[2] Literally "on the apostle," which in ecclesiastical Greek regularly means the Epistles of Paul, not the Acts of the Apostles.

[3] That is, the Six days of creation.

Digitized by Google

σιαστικῶν, ὥς γε δὴ ἡ ἑκάστου παραδείκνυσιν τῆς θείας γραφῆς ἑρμηνεία, ἀδήλων δ' ὅμως ἡμῖν, ὅτι μὴ τὴν προσηγορίαν ἐπάγεται τῶν συγγραψαμένων.

XXVIII. Τούτων ἔν τινος σπουδάσματι κατὰ 1
τῆς Ἀρτέμωνος αἱρέσεως πεπονημένῳ, ἣν αὖθις ὁ ἐκ Σαμοσάτων Παῦλος καθ' ἡμᾶς ἀνανεώσασθαι πεπείραται, φέρεταί τις διήγησις ταῖς ἐξεταζομέναις ἡμῖν προσήκουσα ἱστορίαις. τὴν γάρ τοι 2
δεδηλωμένην αἵρεσιν ψιλὸν ἄνθρωπον γενέσθαι τὸν σωτῆρα φάσκουσαν οὐ πρὸ πολλοῦ τε νεωτερισθεῖσαν διευθύνων, ἐπειδὴ σεμνύνειν αὐτὴν ὡς ἂν ἀρχαίαν οἱ ταύτης ἤθελον εἰσηγηταί, πολλὰ καὶ ἄλλα εἰς ἔλεγχον αὐτῶν τῆς βλασφήμου ψευδηγορίας παραθεὶς ὁ λόγος ταῦτα κατὰ λέξιν ἱστορεῖ· "φασὶν γὰρ τοὺς μὲν προτέρους ἅπαντας 3
καὶ αὐτοὺς τοὺς ἀποστόλους παρειληφέναι τε καὶ δεδιδαχέναι ταῦτα ἃ νῦν οὗτοι λέγουσιν, καὶ τετηρῆσθαι τὴν ἀλήθειαν τοῦ κηρύγματος μέχρι τῶν Βίκτορος χρόνων, ὃς ἦν τρισκαιδέκατος ἀπὸ Πέτρου ἐν Ῥώμῃ ἐπίσκοπος· ἀπὸ δὲ τοῦ διαδόχου αὐτοῦ Ζεφυρίνου παρακεχαράχθαι τὴν ἀλήθειαν. ἦν δ' ἂν τυχὸν πιθανὸν τὸ λεγόμενον, εἰ μὴ πρῶ- 4
τον μὲν ἀντέπιπτον αὐτοῖς αἱ θεῖαι γραφαί· καὶ ἀδελφῶν δέ τινων ἔστιν γράμματα, πρεσβύτερα τῶν Βίκτορος χρόνων, ἃ ἐκεῖνοι καὶ πρὸς τὰ ἔθνη ὑπὲρ τῆς ἀληθείας καὶ πρὸς τὰς τότε αἱρέσεις ἔγραψαν, λέγω δὲ Ἰουστίνου καὶ Μιλτιάδου καὶ Τατιανοῦ καὶ Κλήμεντος καὶ ἑτέρων πλειόνων, ἐν οἷς ἅπασιν θεολογεῖται ὁ Χριστός. τὰ γὰρ 5
Εἰρηναίου τε καὶ Μελίτωνος καὶ τῶν λοιπῶν τίς ἀγνοεῖ βιβλία, θεὸν καὶ ἄνθρωπον καταγγέλλοντα

Digitized by Google

and Christian, as their interpretation of the divine Scripture demonstrates, but the writers are unknown to us because their names are not given in their writings.

XXVIII. In a treatise worked out by one of these against the heresy of Artemon, which Paul of Samosata has tried to renew in our time, there is extant an account which bears on the history which we are examining. For he criticizes the above-mentioned heresy (which claims that the Saviour was a mere man) as a recent innovation, because those who introduced it wished to make it respectable as being ancient. Among many other points adduced in refutation of their blasphemous falsehood, the treatise relates this: "For they say that all who went before and the apostles themselves received and taught what they now say, and that the truth of the teaching was preserved until the times of Victor, who was the thirteenth bishop in Rome after Peter, but that the truth had been corrupted from the time of his successor, Zephyrinus. What they said might perhaps be plausible if in the first place the divine Scriptures were not opposed to them, and there are also writings of certain Christians, older than the time of Victor, which they wrote to the Gentiles on behalf of the truth and against the heresies of their own time. I mean the works of Justin and Miltiades and Tatian and Clement and many others in all of which Christ is treated as God. For who is ignorant of the books of Irenaeus and Melito and the others who announced Christ as God

Digitized by Google

τὸν Χριστόν, ψαλμοὶ δὲ ὅσοι καὶ ᾠδαὶ ἀδελφῶν 6
ἀπ' ἀρχῆς ὑπὸ πιστῶν γραφεῖσαι τὸν λόγον τοῦ
θεοῦ τὸν Χριστὸν ὑμνοῦσιν θεολογοῦντες; πῶς
οὖν ἐκ τοσούτων ἐτῶν καταγγελλομένου τοῦ
ἐκκλησιαστικοῦ φρονήματος, ἐνδέχεται τοὺς μέχρι
Βίκτορος οὕτως ὡς οὗτοι λέγουσιν κεκηρυχέναι;
πῶς δὲ οὐκ αἰδοῦνται ταῦτα Βίκτορος κατα-
ψεύδεσθαι, ἀκριβῶς εἰδότες ὅτι Βίκτωρ Θεόδοτον
τὸν σκυτέα, τὸν ἀρχηγὸν καὶ πατέρα ταύτης τῆς
ἀρνησιθέου ἀποστασίας, ἀπεκήρυξεν τῆς κοινωνίας,
πρῶτον εἰπόντα ψιλὸν ἄνθρωπον τὸν Χριστόν; εἰ
γὰρ Βίκτωρ κατ' αὐτοὺς οὕτως ἐφρόνει ὡς ἡ
τούτων διδάσκει βλασφημία, πῶς ἂν ἀπέβαλεν
Θεόδοτον τὸν τῆς αἱρέσεως ταύτης εὑρετήν;"

Καὶ τὰ μὲν κατὰ τὸν Βίκτορα τοσαῦτα· τούτου 7
δὲ ἔτεσιν δέκα προστάντος τῆς λειτουργίας
διάδοχος καθίσταται Ζεφυρῖνος ἀμφὶ τὸ ἕνατον
τῆς Σευήρου βασιλείας ἔτος. προστίθησιν δὲ ὁ
τὸ προειρημένον συντάξας περὶ τοῦ κατάρξαντος
τῆς δηλωθείσης αἱρέσεως βιβλίον καὶ ἄλλην κατὰ
Ζεφυρῖνον γενομένην πρᾶξιν, ὧδέ πως αὐτοῖς
ῥήμασι γράφων· "ὑπομνήσω γοῦν πολλοὺς τῶν 8
Matt. 11, 23 ἀδελφῶν πρᾶγμα ἐφ' ἡμῶν γενόμενον, ὃ νομίζω
ὅτι εἰ ἐν Σοδόμοις ἐγεγόνει, τυχὸν ἂν κἀκείνους
ἐνουθέτησεν. Νατάλιος ἦν τις ὁμολογητής, οὐ
πάλαι, ἀλλ' ἐπὶ τῶν ἡμετέρων γενόμενος καιρῶν.
οὗτος ἠπατήθη ποτὲ ὑπὸ Ἀσκληπιοδότου καὶ 9
ἑτέρου Θεοδότου τινὸς τραπεζίτου· ἦσαν δὲ οὗτοι
ἄμφω Θεοδότου τοῦ σκυτέως μαθηταὶ τοῦ πρώτου
ἐπὶ ταύτῃ τῇ φρονήσει, μᾶλλον δὲ ἀφροσύνῃ,
ἀφορισθέντος τῆς κοινωνίας ὑπὸ Βίκτορος, ὡς

Digitized by Google

and man? And all the Psalms and hymns which were written by faithful Christians from the beginning sing of the Christ as the Logos of God and treat him as God. How then is it possible that after the mind of the church had been announced for so many years that the generation before Victor can have preached as these say? Why are they not ashamed of so calumniating Victor when they know quite well that Victor excommunicated Theodotus the cobbler, the founder and father of this insurrection which denies God, when he first said that Christ was a mere man? For if Victor was so minded towards them as their blasphemy teaches, how could he have thrown out Theodotus who invented this heresy?"

Such were the events of the time of Victor. When he had held his office ten years, Zephyrinus was appointed his successor in the ninth year of the reign of Severus.[1] And the author of the book mentioned about the founder of the above-mentioned heresy adds another incident which happened in the time of Zephyrinus and writes as follows: "I will at least remind many of the brethren of an event which happened in our time which I think would have probably been a warning to the men of Sodom had it happened in their city. There was a certain confessor, Natalius, not long ago but in our own time. He was deceived by Asclepiodotus and by a second Theodotus, a banker. These were both disciples of Theodotus the cobbler, who was first excommunicated by Victor, who, as I said, was then bishop, for this way

[1] That is, A.D. 201. But reckoning backwards from the time of Callistus who seems to have become bishop of Rome in 217, when Zephyrinus had been bishop for eighteen years (*cf.* Eusebius, *Hist. Eccl.* vi. 21), it would seem that this date is somewhat too late.

Digitized by Google

ἔφην, τοῦ τότε ἐπισκόπου. ἀνεπείσθη δὲ ὁ Νατά- 10
λιος ὑπ' αὐτῶν ἐπὶ σαλαρίῳ ἐπίσκοπος κληθῆναι
ταύτης τῆς αἱρέσεως, ὥστε λαμβάνειν παρ' αὐτῶν
μηνιαῖα δηνάρια ρν'. γενόμενος οὖν σὺν αὐτοῖς, 11
δι' ὁραμάτων πολλάκις ἐνουθετεῖτο ὑπὸ τοῦ
κυρίου· ὁ γὰρ εὔσπλαγχνος θεὸς καὶ κύριος ἡμῶν
Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς οὐκ ἐβούλετο ἔξω ἐκκλησίας
γενόμενον ἀπολέσθαι μάρτυρα τῶν ἰδίων παθῶν.
ἐπεὶ δὲ ῥᾳθυμότερον τοῖς ὁράμασιν προσεῖχεν, 12
δελεαζόμενος τῇ τε παρ' αὐτοῖς πρωτοκαθεδρίᾳ
καὶ τῇ πλείστους ἀπολλυούσῃ αἰσχροκερδίᾳ, τελευ-
ταῖον ὑπὸ ἁγίων ἀγγέλων ἐμαστιγώθη δι' ὅλης
τῆς νυκτὸς οὐ μικρῶς αἰκισθείς, ὥστε ἕωθεν
ἀναστῆναι καὶ ἐνδυσάμενον σάκκον καὶ σποδὸν
καταπασάμενον μετὰ πολλῆς σπουδῆς καὶ δακρύων
προσπεσεῖν Ζεφυρίνῳ τῷ ἐπισκόπῳ, κυλιόμενον
ὑπὸ τοὺς πόδας οὐ μόνον τῶν ἐν κλήρῳ, ἀλλὰ καὶ
τῶν λαϊκῶν, συγχέαι τε τοῖς δάκρυσιν τὴν εὔσπλαγ-
χνον ἐκκλησίαν τοῦ ἐλεήμονος Χριστοῦ πολλῇ τε
τῇ δεήσει χρησάμενον δείξαντά τε τοὺς μώλωπας
ὧν εἰλήφει πληγῶν μόλις κοινωνηθῆναι."

Τούτοις ἐπισυνάψομεν καὶ ἄλλας περὶ τῶν 13
αὐτῶν τοῦ αὐτοῦ συγγραφέως φωνάς, τοῦτον
ἐχούσας τὸν τρόπον· "γραφὰς μὲν θείας ἀφόβως
ῥεᾳδιουργήκασιν, πίστεώς τε ἀρχαίας κανόνα
ἠθετήκασιν, Χριστὸν δὲ ἠγνοήκασιν, οὐ τί αἱ
θεῖαι λέγουσιν γραφαί, ζητοῦντες, ἀλλ' ὁποῖον
σχῆμα συλλογισμοῦ εἰς τὴν τῆς ἀθεότητος σύστασιν
εὑρεθῇ, φιλοπόνως ἀσκοῦντες. κἂν αὐτοῖς προ-
τείνῃ τις ῥητὸν γραφῆς θεϊκῆς, ἐξετάζουσιν πό-

Digitized by Google

of thinking, or rather of not thinking. Natalius was persuaded by them to be called bishop of this heresy with a salary, so that he was paid a hundred and fifty denarii a month by them.[1] When he was with them he was often warned by the Lord in visions, for our merciful God and Lord, Jesus Christ, did not wish that there should go out of the church and perish one who had been a witness of his own sufferings.[2] But when he paid indifferent attention to the visions, for he was entrapped by his leading rank among them and by that covetousness which ruins so many, he was at last scourged all night long by holy angels, and suffered not a little, so that in the morning he got up, put on sackcloth, and covered himself with ashes, and went with much haste, and fell down with tears before Zephyrinus the bishop, rolling at the feet not only of the clergy but also of the laity, and moved with his tears the compassionate church of the merciful Christ. But for all his prayers and the exhibition of the weals of the stripes he had received, he was scarcely admitted into communion."

We would add to this some other words of the same author on the same persons, which run as follows: "They have not feared to corrupt divine Scriptures, they have nullified the rule of ancient faith, they have not known Christ, they do not inquire what the divine Scriptures say, but industriously consider what syllogistic figure may be found for the support of their atheism. If anyone adduced to them a text of divine Scripture they

[1] That is, rather more than £5. This is the first clear instance of the payment of bishops, but compare chapter 18. 2.

[2] This does not mean more than "had been a confessor"—a witness in court to the "sufferings of Christ."

Digitized by Google

τερον συνημμένον ἢ διεζευγμένον δύναται ποιῆσαι σχῆμα συλλογισμοῦ· καταλιπόντες δὲ τὰς ἁγίας 14
τοῦ θεοῦ γραφάς, γεωμετρίαν ἐπιτηδεύουσιν, ὡς ἂν ἐκ τῆς γῆς ὄντες καὶ ἐκ τῆς γῆς λαλοῦντες καὶ τὸν ἄνωθεν ἐρχόμενον ἀγνοοῦντες. Εὐκλείδης γοῦν παρά τισιν αὐτῶν φιλοπόνως γεωμετρεῖται, Ἀριστοτέλης δὲ καὶ Θεόφραστος θαυμάζονται· Γαληνὸς γὰρ ἴσως ὑπό τινων καὶ προσκυνεῖται. οἱ δὲ ταῖς 15
τῶν ἀπίστων τέχναις εἰς τὴν τῆς αἱρέσεως αὐτῶν γνώμην ἀποχρώμενοι καὶ τῇ τῶν ἀθέων πανουργίᾳ τὴν ἁπλῆν τῶν θείων γραφῶν πίστιν καπηλεύοντες, ὅτι μηδὲ ἐγγὺς πίστεως ὑπάρχουσιν, τί δεῖ καὶ λέγειν; διὰ τοῦτο ταῖς θείαις γραφαῖς ἀφόβως ἐπέβαλον τὰς χεῖρας, λέγοντες αὐτὰς διωρθωκέναι. καὶ ὅτι τοῦτο μὴ καταψευδόμενος αὐτῶν λέγω, 16
ὁ βουλόμενος δύναται μαθεῖν. εἰ γάρ τις θελήσει συγκομίσας αὐτῶν ἑκάστου τὰ ἀντίγραφα ἐξετάζειν πρὸς ἄλληλα, κατὰ πολὺ ἂν εὕροι διαφωνοῦντα. ἀσύμφωνα γοῦν ἔσται τὰ Ἀσκλη- 17
πιάδου τοῖς Θεοδότου, πολλῶν δὲ ἔστιν εὐπορῆσαι διὰ τὸ φιλοτίμως ἐκγεγράφθαι τοὺς μαθητὰς αὐτῶν τὰ ὑφ' ἑκάστου αὐτῶν, ὡς αὐτοὶ καλοῦσιν, κατωρθωμένα, τοῦτ' ἐστὶν ἠφανισμένα· πάλιν δὲ τούτοις τὰ Ἑρμοφίλου οὐ συνᾴδει. τὰ γὰρ Ἀπολλωνιάδου οὐδὲ αὐτὰ ἑαυτοῖς ἐστιν σύμφωνα· ἔνεστιν γὰρ συγκρῖναι τὰ πρότερον ὑπ' αὐτῶν κατασκευασθέντα τοῖς ὕστερον πάλιν ἐπιδιαστρα-

[1] Lit. "earth-measurement." Note the play on the words.

[2] Apparently the meaning of the passage is that these persons tried to introduce Greek learning generally into

Digitized by Google

inquire whether it can be put in the form of a conjunctive or a disjunctive syllogism. They abandon the holy Scripture of God and study geometry,[1] for they are of the earth and they speak of the earth and him who comes from above they do not know. Some of them, forsooth, study the geometry of Euclid and admire Aristotle and Theophrastus. Galen perhaps is even worshipped by some of them.[2] When they make a bad use of the arts of unbelievers for the opinions of their heresy, and adulterate the simple faith of the divine scriptures by the cunning of the godless, what need is there to say that they are not even near the faith? For this cause they did not fear to lay hands on the divine scriptures, saying that they had corrected them. And that I do not calumniate them in saying this any who wish can learn, for if any be willing to collect and compare with each other the texts of each of them, he would find them in great discord, for the copies[3] of Asclepiades do not agree with those of Theodotus, and it is possible to obtain many of them because their disciples have diligently written out copies corrected, as they say, but really corrupted by each of them. Again the copies of Hermophilus do not agree with these, the copies of Apolloniades are not even consistent with themselves, for the copies prepared by them at first can be compared with those which later on underwent a second corruption, and they

the interpretation of Scripture. Though little noted at the time or since, their rejection by the Church is perhaps one of the turning-points of history.

[3] That is, the copies of Scripture used by Asclepiades. Apparently these Roman heretics added textual criticism to the sin of using Aristotle's logic, and were unable to resist the temptations of conjectural emendation.

Digitized by Google

φεῖσιν καὶ εὑρεῖν κατὰ πολὺ ἀπᾴδοντα. ὅσης δὲ 18
τόλμης ἐστὶ τοῦτο τὸ ἁμάρτημα, εἰκὸς μηδὲ
ἐκείνους ἀγνοεῖν. ἢ γὰρ οὐ πιστεύουσιν ἁγίῳ
πνεύματι λελέχθαι τὰς θείας γραφάς, καί εἰσιν
ἄπιστοι· ἢ ἑαυτοὺς ἡγοῦνται σοφωτέρους τοῦ
ἁγίου πνεύματος ὑπάρχειν, καὶ τί ἕτερον ἢ δαι-
μονῶσιν; οὐδὲ γὰρ ἀρνήσασθαι δύνανται ἑαυτῶν
εἶναι τὸ τόλμημα, ὁπόταν καὶ τῇ αὐτῶν χειρὶ ᾖ
γεγραμμένα, καὶ παρ' ὧν κατηχήθησαν, μὴ
τοιαύτας παρέλαβον τὰς γραφάς, καὶ δεῖξαι
ἀντίγραφα ὅθεν αὐτὰ μετεγράψαντο, μὴ ἔχωσιν.
ἔνιοι δ' αὐτῶν οὐδὲ παραχαράσσειν ἠξίωσαν 19
αὐτάς, ἀλλ' ἁπλῶς ἀρνησάμενοι τόν τε νόμον καὶ
τοὺς προφήτας, ἀνόμου καὶ ἀθέου διδασκαλίας
προφάσει χάριτος εἰς ἔσχατον ἀπωλείας ὄλεθρον
κατωλίσθησαν."

Καὶ ταῦτα μὲν τοῦτον ἱστορήσθω τὸν τρόπον.

Digitized by Google

will be found to disagree greatly. The impudence of this sin can scarcely be unknown even to them, for either they do not believe that the divine scriptures were spoken by the Holy Spirit, and if so they are unbelievers, or they think that they are wiser than the Holy Spirit, and what are they but demoniacs? For they cannot even deny that this crime is theirs, seeing that the copies were written in their own hand, and they did not receive the scriptures in this condition from their teachers, nor can they show originals from which they made their copies. Some of them have not thought it necessary even to emend the text, but simply deny the Law and the Prophets, and thus on the pretence [1] of their wicked and godless teaching have fallen to the lowest destruction of perdition." And let this suffice for these things.

[1] χάριτος seems to be a primitive error, for though it is found in all the MSS. it is impossible to give it any reasonable sense. Possibly a word has fallen out which would give the meaning "they have fallen from grace, etc."

Printed in Great Britain by R. & R. Clark, Limited, *Edinburgh.*

Digitized by Google

EUSEBIUS

THE ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY

WITH AN ENGLISH TRANSLATION BY [Lake & al]

J. E. L. OULTON, D.D.

REGIUS PROFESSOR OF DIVINITY IN THE UNIVERSITY OF DUBLIN

TAKEN FROM THE EDITION PUBLISHED IN CONJUNCTION WITH

H. J. LAWLOR, D.D. LITT.D.

FORMERLY PROFESSOR OF ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY
IN THE UNIVERSITY OF DUBLIN

IN TWO VOLUMES

II



43470
D.H.H.S

LONDON
WILLIAM HEINEMANN LTD
CAMBRIDGE, MASSACHUSETTS
HARVARD UNIVERSITY PRESS
MCMXLII

SR
160
E4
1926
v.2

First printed 1932
Reprinted 1938, 1942

Printed in Great Britain

PREFACE

THE purpose of this preface is to express my warm thanks to Professor Oulton for relieving me of the heavy burden of an unnecessary task. I was just beginning the translation of Books VI to X of the *Ecclesiastical History* of Eusebius, which were to be the second volume in the Loeb Classical Library, when the complete translation of the whole was issued by Professors Lawlor and Oulton.

It was at once obvious that to attempt another version parallel to their excellent rendering would be an uncompensated waste of time; and I am most grateful to Professor Oulton for yielding to my urgent request that he take over the preparation of the second volume. His gracious assent has relieved me from much toil and will be a benefit to all who study Eusebius.

KIRSOPP LAKE.

The Editors wish to express their sincere thanks to the Society for the Promotion of Christian Knowledge for their kind permission to use the above translation, which is their copyright.

CONTENTS OF VOLUME II

	PAGE
PREFACE	v
BOOK VI	2
BOOK VII	132
BOOK VIII	246
BOOK IX	326
BOOK X	388
INDEX	483

THE ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY OF EUSEBIUS

$\overline{\varsigma}$

Τάδε καὶ ἡ $\overline{\varsigma}$ περιέχει βίβλος τῆς Ἐκκλησιαστικῆς ἱστορίας

$\overline{\text{Α}}$ Περὶ τοῦ κατὰ Σευῆρον διωγμοῦ.
$\overline{\text{Β}}$ Περὶ τῆς Ὠριγένους ἐκ παιδὸς ἀσκήσεως.
$\overline{\Gamma}$ Ὡς κομιδῇ νέος ὢν τὸν Χριστοῦ λόγον ἐπρέσβευεν.
$\overline{\Delta}$ Ὅσοι δι' αὐτοῦ κατηχηθέντες προήχθησαν μάρτυρες.
$\overline{\text{Ε}}$ Περὶ Ποταμιαίνης.
$\overline{\varsigma}$ Περὶ Κλήμεντος τοῦ Ἀλεξανδρέως.
$\overline{\text{Ζ}}$ Περὶ Ἰούδα συγγραφέως.
$\overline{\text{Η}}$ Περὶ τοῦ τολμηθέντος Ὠριγένει.
$\overline{\Theta}$ Περὶ τῶν κατὰ Νάρκισσον παραδόξων.
$\overline{\text{Ι}}$ Περὶ τῶν ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις ἐπισκόπων.
$\overline{\text{ΙΑ}}$ Περὶ Ἀλεξάνδρου.
$\overline{\text{ΙΒ}}$ Περὶ Σεραπίωνος καὶ τῶν φερομένων αὐτοῦ λόγων.
$\overline{\text{ΙΓ}}$ Περὶ τῶν Κλήμεντος συγγραμμάτων.
$\overline{\text{ΙΔ}}$ Ὁπόσων ἐμνημόνευσε γραφῶν.
$\overline{\text{ΙΕ}}$ Περὶ Ἡρακλᾶ.
$\overline{\text{ΙΣ}}$ Ὅπως Ὠριγένης περὶ τὰς θείας γραφὰς ἐσπουδάκει.

CONTENTS OF BOOK VI

The Sixth Book of the Ecclesiastical History contains the following :

I. On the persecution under Severus.
II. On Origen's training from boyhood.
III. How he set forth the word of Christ when quite young.
IV. How many of those instructed by him were elevated to the rank of martyrs.
V. On Potamiaena.
VI. On Clement the Alexandrian.
VII. On Judas, a writer.
VIII. On Origen's rash act.
IX. On the miracles of Narcissus.
X. On the bishops at Jerusalem.
XI. On Alexander.
XII. On Serapion and his extant works.
XIII. On the treatises of Clement.
XIV. What Scriptures he mentioned.
XV. On Heraclas.
XVI. How Origen laboured at the divine Scriptures.

ΙΖ Περὶ Συμμάχου τοῦ ἑρμηνέως.
ΙΗ Περὶ Ἀμβροσίου.
ΙΘ Ὅσα περὶ Ὠριγένους μνημονεύεται.
Κ Ὅσοι τῶν τηνικάδε φέρονται λόγοι.
ΚΑ Ὅσοι κατὰ τούσδε ἐπίσκοποι ἐγνωρίζοντο.
ΚΒ Ὅσα τῶν Ἱππολύτου εἰς ἡμᾶς ἦλθεν.
ΚΓ Περὶ τῆς Ὠριγένους σπουδῆς καὶ ὡς τοῦ ἐκκλησιατικοῦ πρεσβείου ἠξιώθη.
ΚΔ Τίνα ἐπὶ τῆς Ἀλεξανδρείας ἐξηγήσατο.
ΚΕ Ὅπως τῶν ἐνδιαθήκων γραφῶν ἐμνημόνευσεν.
ΚΣ Ὅπως αὐτὸν ἑώρων οἱ ἐπίσκοποι.
ΚΖ Ὡς Ἡρακλᾶς τὴν Ἀλεξανδρέων ἐπισκοπὴν διεδέξατο.
ΚΗ Περὶ τοῦ κατὰ Μαξιμῖνον διωγμοῦ.
ΚΘ Περὶ Φαβιανοῦ ὡς Ῥωμαίων ἐπίσκοπος ἐκ θεοῦ παραδόξως ἀνεδείχθη.
Λ Ὅσοι γεγόνασιν Ὠριγένους φοιτηταί.
ΛΑ Περὶ Ἀφρικανοῦ.
ΛΒ Τίνα Ὠριγένης ἐν Καισαρείᾳ τῆς Παλαιστίνης ἐξηγήσατο.
ΛΓ Περὶ τῆς Βηρύλλου παρατροπῆς.
ΛΔ Τὰ κατὰ Φίλιππον.
ΛΕ Ὡς Διονύσιος Ἡρακλᾶ τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν διεδέξατο.
ΛΣ Ὅσα ἄλλα ἐσπούδαστο τῷ Ὠριγένει.

XVII. On Symmachus the translator.
XVIII. On Ambrose.
XIX. What things are mentioned concerning Origen.
XX. What books of the men of that day are extant.
XXI. What bishops were well known in the time of these persons.
XXII. What works of Hippolytus have reached us.
XXIII. On Origen's zeal, and how he was deemed worthy of the presbyterate in the Church.
XXIV. The commentaries he wrote at Alexandria.
XXV. How he mentioned the Canonical Scriptures.
XXVI. How the bishops regarded him.
XXVII. How Heraclas succeeded to the episcopate of the Alexandrians.
XXVIII. On the persecution under Maximin.
XXIX. On Fabian, how he was miraculously designated bishop of the Romans by God.
XXX. What pupils of Origen there have been.
XXXI. On Africanus.
XXXII. The commentaries that Origen wrote at Caesarea in Palestine.
XXXIII. On the error of Beryllus.
XXXIV. What happened under Philip.
XXXV. How Dionysius succeeded Heraclas in the episcopate.
XXXVI. Other works composed by Origen.

ΛΖ Περὶ τῆς τῶν Ἀράβων διαστάσεως.
ΛΗ Περὶ τῆς Ἐλκεσαιτῶν αἱρέσεως.
ΛΘ Περὶ τῶν κατὰ Δέκιον.
Μ Περὶ τῶν Διονυσίῳ συμβάντων.
ΜΑ Περὶ τῶν ἐπ' αὐτῆς Ἀλεξανδρείας μαρτυρησάντων.
ΜΒ Περὶ ὧν ἄλλων ὁ Διονύσιος ἱστορεῖ.
ΜΓ Περὶ Νοουάτου, οἷός τις ἦν τὸν τρόπον, καὶ περὶ τῆς κατ' αὐτὸν αἱρέσεως.
ΜΔ Περὶ Σεραπίωνος ἱστορία Διονυσίου.
ΜΕ Ἐπιστολὴ πρὸς Νοουᾶτον Διονυσίου.
ΜϚ Περὶ τῶν ἄλλων Διονυσίου ἐπιστολῶν.

XXXVII. On the dissension of the Arabians.
XXXVIII. On the heresy of the Helkesaites.
XXXIX. On what happened under Decius.
XL. On what befell Dionysius.
XLI. On those that suffered martyrdom at Alexandria itself.
XLII. On the other martyrdoms which Dionysius relates.
XLIII. On Novatus, his manner of life, and his heresy.
XLIV. A story of Dionysius about Serapion.
XLV. Letter of Dionysius to Novatus.
XLVI. On the other letters of Dionysius.

ΕΥΣΗΒΙΟΥ

ΕΚΚΛΗΣΙΑΣΤΙΚΗΣ ΙΣΤΟΡΙΑΣ

ς

I. Ὡς δὲ καὶ Σευῆρος διωγμὸν κατὰ τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν ἐκίνει, λαμπρὰ μὲν τῶν ὑπὲρ εὐσεβείας ἀθλητῶν κατὰ πάντα τόπον ἀπετελεῖτο μαρτύρια, μάλιστα δ' ἐπλήθυεν ἐπ' Ἀλεξανδρείας, τῶν ἀπ' Αἰγύπτου καὶ Θηβαΐδος ἁπάσης αὐτόθι ὥσπερ ἐπὶ μέγιστον ἀθλητῶν θεοῦ παραπεμπομένων στάδιον διὰ καρτερικωτάτης τε ποικίλων βασάνων καὶ θανάτου τρόπων ὑπομονῆς τοὺς παρὰ θεῷ στεφάνους ἀναδουμένων· ἐν οἷς καὶ Λεωνίδης, ὁ λεγόμενος Ὠριγένους πατήρ, τὴν κεφαλὴν ἀποτμηθείς, νέον κομιδῇ καταλείπει τὸν παῖδα· ὃς δὴ ὁποίας ἐξ ἐκείνου περὶ τὸν θεῖον λόγον προαιρέσεως ἦν, οὐκ ἄκαιρον διὰ βραχέων διελθεῖν τῷ μάλιστα πολὺν εἶναι παρὰ τοῖς πολλοῖς τὸν περὶ αὐτοῦ βεβοημένον λόγον. II. πολλὰ μὲν οὖν ἄν τις εἴποι τὸν βίον τοῦ ἀνδρὸς ἐν σχολῇ παραδοῦναι διὰ γραφῆς πειρώμενος, δέοιτο δ' ἂν καὶ ἰδίας ὑποθέσεως ἡ περὶ αὐτοῦ σύνταξις· ὅμως δ' ἡμεῖς ἐπὶ τοῦ παρόντος ἐπιτεμόμενοι τὰ πλεῖστα διὰ βραχέων ὡς οἷόν τε, ὀλίγα ἅττα τῶν

THE ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY OF EUSEBIUS

BOOK VI

I. Now when Severus also was stirring up persecution against the churches, in every place splendid martyrdoms of the champions of piety were accomplished, but with especial frequency at Alexandria. Thither, as to some great arena, were escorted from Egypt and the whole Thebais God's champions, who, through their most stedfast endurance in divers tortures and modes of death, were wreathed with the crowns laid up with God. Among these was Leonides, known as "the father of Origen," who was beheaded, leaving his son behind him quite young. It will not be out of place to describe briefly how deliberately the boy's mind was set on the Divine Word from that early age, especially as the story about him has received exceedingly widespread notoriety. II. Many things, indeed, would there be to say, if one were to attempt at leisure to hand down in writing the man's life, and the narrative concerning him would require also a work of its own. Nevertheless, on the present occasion abridging most things as briefly as may be, we shall state some few of the facts concerning him,

περὶ αὐτὸν διελευσόμεθα, ἔκ τινων ἐπιστολῶν καὶ ἱστορίας τῶν καὶ εἰς ἡμᾶς τῷ βίῳ πεφυλαγμένων αὐτοῦ γνωρίμων τὰ δηλούμενα φέροντες.

'Ωριγένους καὶ τὰ ἐξ αὐτῶν ὡς εἰπεῖν σπαργάνων 2
ἀξιομνημόνευτά μοι εἶναι δοκεῖ. δέκατον μὲν γὰρ ἐπεῖχε Σευῆρος τῆς βασιλείας ἔτος, ἡγεῖτο δὲ 'Αλεξανδρείας καὶ τῆς λοιπῆς Αἰγύπτου Λαῖτος, τῶν δ' αὐτόθι παροικιῶν τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν νεωστὶ τότε μετὰ 'Ιουλιανὸν Δημήτριος ὑπειλήφει. εἰς 3
μέγα δὴ οὖν τῆς τοῦ διωγμοῦ πυρκαϊᾶς ἀφθείσης καὶ μυρίων ὅσων τοῖς κατὰ τὸ μαρτύριον ἀναδουμένων στεφάνοις, ἔρως τοσοῦτος μαρτυρίου τὴν 'Ωριγένους, ἔτι κομιδῇ παιδὸς ὑπάρχοντος, κατεῖχε ψυχήν, ὡς ὁμόσε τοῖς κινδύνοις χωρεῖν προπηδᾶν τε καὶ ὁρμᾶν ἐπὶ τὸν ἀγῶνα προθύμως ἔχειν. ἤδη γέ τοι σμικρὸν ὅσον αὐτῷ καὶ τὰ τῆς 4
ἀπὸ τοῦ βίου ἀπαλλαγῆς οὐ πόρρω καθίστατο, μὴ οὐχὶ τῆς θείας καὶ οὐρανίου προνοίας εἰς τὴν πλείστων ὠφέλειαν διὰ τῆς αὐτοῦ μητρὸς ἐμποδὼν αὐτῷ τῆς προθυμίας ἐνστάσης. αὕτη γοῦν τὰ μὲν 5
πρῶτα λόγοις ἱκετεύουσα, τῆς περὶ αὐτὸν μητρικῆς διαθέσεως φειδὼ λαβεῖν παρεκάλει, σφοδρότερον δ' ἐπιτείναντα θεασαμένη, ὅτε γνοὺς ἁλόντα τὸν πατέρα δεσμωτηρίῳ φυλάττεσθαι ὅλος ἐγίνετο τῆς περὶ τὸ μαρτύριον ὁρμῆς, τὴν πᾶσαν αὐτοῦ ἀποκρυψαμένη ἐσθῆτα οἴκοι μένειν ἀνάγκην ἐπῆγεν· ὃ δ', ὡς οὐδὲν ἄλλο πράττειν αὐτῷ παρῆν, τῆς 6
προθυμίας ὑπὲρ τὴν ἡλικίαν ἐπιτεινομένης οὐχ οἷός τε ὢν ἡρεμεῖν, διαπέμπεται τῷ πατρὶ προτρεπτικωτάτην περὶ μαρτυρίου ἐπιστολήν, ἐν ᾗ κατὰ λέξιν αὐτῷ παραινεῖ λέγων "ἔπεχε μὴ δι'

gathering what we set forth from certain letters and information derived from pupils of his, whose lives have been preserved even to our day.

In the case of Origen I think that even the facts from his very cradle,[1] so to speak, are worthy of mention. For Severus was in the tenth year of his reign,[2] and Laetus was governor of Alexandria and the rest of Egypt, and Demetrius had just then received the episcopate of the communities there in succession to Julian. When, therefore, the flame of persecution was kindled to a fierce blaze, and countless numbers were being wreathed with the crowns of martyrdom, Origen's soul was possessed with such a passion for martyrdom, while he was still quite a boy, that he was all eagerness to come to close quarters with danger, and to leap forward and rush into the conflict. In fact, it were but a very little step and the end of his life was at hand, had not the divine and heavenly Providence, acting for the general good through his mother, stood in the way of his zeal. She, at all events, at first had recourse to verbal entreaties, bidding him spare a mother's feelings; then, when he learnt that his father had been captured and was kept in prison, and his whole being was set on the desire for martyrdom, perceiving that his purpose was more resolute than ever, she hid all his clothes, and so laid upon him the necessity of remaining at home. And since nothing else remained for him to do, and a zeal, intense beyond his years, suffered him not to be quiet, he sent to his father a letter on martyrdom most strongly urging him on, in which he advises him in these very words, saying: "Take care not to change

[1] Lit. "swaddling-clothes."

[2] A.D. 203.

ἡμᾶς ἄλλο τι φρονήσῃς." τοῦτο πρῶτον τῆς
Ὠριγένους παιδικῆς ἀγχινοίας καὶ περὶ τὴν
θεοσέβειαν γνησιωτάτης διαθέσεως ἀνάγραπτον
ἔστω τεκμήριον. καὶ γὰρ ἤδη καὶ τῶν τῆς 7
πίστεως λόγων οὐ σμικρὰς ἀφορμὰς καταβέβλητο,
ταῖς θείαις γραφαῖς ἐξ ἔτι παιδὸς ἐνησκημένος·
οὐ μετρίως γοῦν καὶ περὶ ταύτας πεπόνητο, τοῦ
πατρὸς αὐτῷ πρὸς τῇ τῶν ἐγκυκλίων παιδείᾳ καὶ
τούτων οὐ κατὰ πάρεργον τὴν φροντίδα πεποιη-
μένου. ἐξ ἅπαντος γοῦν αὐτὸν πρὸ τῆς τῶν 8
Ἑλληνικῶν μαθημάτων μελέτης ἐνῆγεν τοῖς ἱεροῖς
ἐνασκεῖσθαι παιδεύμασιν, ἐκμαθήσεις καὶ ἀπ-
αγγελίας ἡμέρας ἑκάστης αὐτὸν εἰσπραττόμενος·
οὐκ ἀπροαιρέτως δὲ ταῦτ' ἐγίνετο τῷ παιδί, ἀλλὰ 9
καὶ ἄγαν προθυμότατα περὶ ταῦτα πονοῦντι, ὡς
μηδ' ἐξαρκεῖν αὐτῷ τὰς ἁπλᾶς καὶ προχείρους
τῶν ἱερῶν λόγων ἐντεύξεις, ζητεῖν δέ τι πλέον
καὶ βαθυτέρας ἤδη ἐξ ἐκείνου πολυπραγμονεῖν
θεωρίας, ὥστε καὶ πράγματα παρέχειν τῷ πατρί,
τί ἄρα ἐθέλοι δηλοῦν τὸ τῆς θεοπνεύστου γρα-
φῆς ἀναπυνθανόμενος βούλημα. ἐκεῖνος δὲ τῷ 1
μὲν δοκεῖν εἰς πρόσωπον ἐπέπληττεν αὐτῷ, μηδὲν
ὑπὲρ ἡλικίαν μηδὲ τῆς προφανοῦς διανοίας πε-
ραιτέρω τι ζητεῖν παραινῶν, ἰδίως δὲ παρ' ἑαυτῷ
τὰ μεγάλα γεγηθὼς τὴν μεγίστην ὡμολόγει τῷ
πάντων ἀγαθῶν αἰτίῳ θεῷ χάριν, ὅτι δὴ αὐτὸν
τοιοῦδε πατέρα γενέσθαι παιδὸς ἠξίωσεν. ἐπι- 1
στάντα δὲ ἤδη πολλάκις καθεύδοντι τῷ παιδὶ
γυμνῶσαι μὲν αὐτοῦ τὰ στέρνα φασίν, ὥσπερ δὲ
θείου πνεύματος ἔνδον ἐν αὐτοῖς ἀφιερωμένου,
φιλῆσαί τε σεβασμίως καὶ τῆς εὐτεκνίας μακάριον

thy mind on our account." Let this be recorded as the first proof of Origen's boyish readiness of mind and genuine love of godliness. For indeed in the study of the faith also he had already laid down a good foundation, having been trained in the divine Scriptures from the time that he was still a boy. Certainly it was no ordinary amount of labour that he bestowed on these, since his father, in addition to the customary curriculum, took pains that these also should be for him no secondary matter. On all occasions, for example, he kept urging him before beginning his secular[1] lessons to train himself in the sacred studies, exacting from him each day learning by heart and repetition. And this the boy did with no lack of willingness, nay, he worked with even excessive zeal at these studies, so that he was not satisfied with reading the sacred words in a simple and literal manner, but sought something further, and busied himself, even at that age, with deeper speculations, troubling his father by his questions as to what could be the inner meaning of the inspired Scripture. And his father would rebuke him ostensibly to his face, counselling him to seek nothing beyond his years nor anything further than the manifest meaning; but secretly in himself he rejoiced greatly, and gave profound thanks to God, the Author of all good things, that He had deemed him worthy to be the father of such a boy. And it is said that many a time he would stand over the sleeping boy and uncover his breast, as if a divine spirit were enshrined therein, and kissing it with reverence count himself happy in his goodly offspring.

[1] Ἑλληνικῶν, "pagan"; *cf.* the use of the word in 2 Macc. iv. 10.

ἑαυτὸν ἡγήσασθαι. ταῦτα καὶ ἕτερα τούτοις συγγενῆ περὶ παῖδα ὄντα τὸν Ὠριγένην γενέσθαι μνημονεύουσιν.

Ὡς δὲ ἤδη αὐτῷ ὁ πατὴρ μαρτυρίῳ τετελείωτο, ἔρημος ἅμα μητρὶ καὶ βραχυτέροις ἀδελφοῖς τὸν ἀριθμὸν ἕξ, ἑπτακαιδέκατον οὐ πλῆρες ἔτος ἄγων, καταλείπεται· τῆς γε μὴν τοῦ πατρὸς περιουσίας τοῖς βασιλικοῖς ταμείοις ἀναληφθείσης, ἐν σπάνει τῶν κατὰ τὸν βίον χρειῶν σὺν τοῖς προσήκουσιν καταστάς, οἰκονομίας τῆς ἐκ θεοῦ καταξιοῦται καὶ τυγχάνει δεξιώσεως ὁμοῦ καὶ ἀναπαύσεως παρά τινι πλουσιωτάτῃ μὲν τὸν βίον καὶ τὰ ἄλλα περιφανεστάτῃ γυναικί, διαβόητόν γε μὴν ἄνδρα περιεπούσῃ τῶν τότε ἐπὶ τῆς Ἀλεξανδρείας αἱρεσιωτῶν· τὸ γένος ἦν οὗτος Ἀντιοχεύς, θετὸν δ' υἱὸν αὐτὸν εἶχέν τε σὺν ἑαυτῇ καὶ ἐν τοῖς μάλιστα περιεῖπεν ἡ δεδηλωμένη. ἀλλὰ τούτῳ γε ἐπ- ἀναγκες ὁ Ὠριγένης συνών, τῆς ἐξ ἐκείνου περὶ τὴν πίστιν ὀρθοδοξίας ἐναργῆ παρείχετο δείγματα, ὅτι δὴ μυρίου πλήθους διὰ τὸ δοκοῦν ἱκανὸν ἐν λόγῳ τοῦ Παύλου (τοῦτο γὰρ ἦν ὄνομα τῷ ἀνδρί) συναγομένου παρ' αὐτῷ οὐ μόνον αἱρετικῶν, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἡμετέρων, οὐδεπώποτε προυτράπη κατὰ τὴν εὐχὴν αὐτῷ συστῆναι, φυλάττων ἐξ ἔτι παιδὸς κανόνα ἐκκλησίας βδελυττόμενός τε, ὡς αὐτῷ ῥήματί φησίν που αὐτός, τὰς τῶν αἱρέσεων διδασκαλίας. προαχθεὶς δ' ὑπὸ τοῦ πατρὸς ἐν τοῖς Ἑλλήνων μαθήμασιν ἐκθυμότερόν τε [καὶ] μετὰ τὴν ἐκείνου τελευτὴν τῇ περὶ τοὺς λόγους ἀσκήσει ὅλον ἐπιδοὺς ἑαυτόν, ὡς καὶ παρασκευὴν ἐπὶ τὰ γραμματικὰ μετρίαν ἔχειν, μετ' οὐ πολὺ τῆς τοῦ πατρὸς τελειώσεως, τούτοις ἐπιδεδωκὼς ἑαυτόν,

These are the stories, and others akin to these, that they tell about Origen's boyhood.

But when his father had been perfected by martyrdom, he was left destitute with his mother and six smaller brothers, when he was not quite seventeen. His father's property was confiscated for the imperial treasury, and he found himself, along with his relatives, in want of the necessaries of life. Yet he was deemed worthy of divine aid, and met with both welcome and refreshment from a certain lady, very rich in this world's goods, and otherwise distinguished, who nevertheless was treating with honour a well-known person, one of the heretics at Alexandria at that time. He was an Antiochene by race, but the lady we have mentioned kept him at her house as her adopted son, and treated him with especial honour. But although Origen of necessity had to consort with him, he used to give clear proofs of his orthodoxy, at that age, in the faith. For though very great numbers, not only of heretics but also of our own people, were gathered together with Paul (for that was the man's name), attracted by his apparent skilfulness in speech, Origen could never be persuaded to associate with him in prayer, keeping the rule of the Church, even from boyhood, and "loathing"—the very word he himself uses somewhere—the teachings of the heresies. His father had brought him forward in secular studies, and after his death he applied himself wholly with renewed zeal to a literary training, so that he had a tolerable amount of proficiency in letters; and, not long after his father's perfecting, by dint of application to these

εὐπόρει τῶν ἀναγκαίων, ὡς ἐν ἐκείνῃ τῇ ἡλικίᾳ, δαψιλῶς.

III. Σχολάζοντι δὲ τῇ διατριβῇ, ὥς που καὶ 1
αὐτὸς ἐγγράφως ἱστορεῖ, μηδενός τε ἐπὶ τῆς Ἀλεξανδρείας τῷ κατηχεῖν ἀνακειμένου, πάντων δ' ἀπεληλαμένων ὑπὸ τῆς ἀπειλῆς τοῦ διωγμοῦ, προσῄεσαν αὐτῷ τινες ἀπὸ τῶν ἐθνῶν ἀκουσόμενοι τὸν λόγον τοῦ θεοῦ· ὧν πρῶτον ἐπισημαίνεται γεγο- 2
νέναι Πλούταρχον, ὃς μετὰ τὸ βιῶναι καλῶς καὶ μαρτυρίῳ θείῳ κατεκοσμήθη, δεύτερον Ἡρακλᾶν, τοῦ Πλουτάρχου ἀδελφόν, ὃς δὴ καὶ αὐτὸς παρ' αὐτῷ πλείστην βίου φιλοσόφου καὶ ἀσκήσεως ἀπόδειξιν παρασχών, τῆς Ἀλεξανδρέων μετὰ Δημήτριον ἐπισκοπῆς ἀξιοῦται. ἔτος δ' ἦγεν 3
ὀκτωκαιδέκατον καθ' ὃ τοῦ τῆς κατηχήσεως προέστη διδασκαλείου· ἐν ᾧ καὶ προκόπτει ἐπὶ τῶν κατὰ Ἀκύλαν τῆς Ἀλεξανδρείας ἡγούμενον διωγμῶν, ὅτε καὶ μάλιστα διαβόητον ἐκτήσατο παρὰ πᾶσιν τοῖς ἀπὸ τῆς πίστεως ὁρμωμένοις ὄνομα δι' ἣν ἐνεδείκνυτο πρὸς ἅπαντας τοὺς ἁγίους ἀγνῶτάς τε καὶ γνωρίμους μάρτυρας δεξίωσίν τε καὶ προθυμίαν. οὐ μόνον γὰρ ἐν δεσμοῖς 4
τυγχάνουσιν, οὐδὲ μέχρις ὑστάτης ἀποφάσεως ἀνακρινομένοις συνῆν, ἀλλὰ καὶ μετὰ ταύτην ἀπαγομένοις τὴν ἐπὶ θανάτῳ τοῖς ἁγίοις μάρτυσιν, πολλῇ τῇ παρρησίᾳ χρώμενος καὶ ὁμόσε τοῖς κινδύνοις χωρῶν· ὥστε ἤδη αὐτὸν προσιόντα θαρσαλέως καὶ τοὺς μάρτυρας μετὰ πολλῆς παρρησίας φιλήματι προσαγορεύοντα πολλάκις ἐπιμανεὶς ὁ ἐν κύκλῳ τῶν ἐθνῶν δῆμος μικροῦ δεῖν κατέλευσεν, εἰ μὴ τῆς θείας δεξιᾶς βοηθοῦ

[1] A.D. 204. [2] He was in office in A.D. 206.

studies, he was abundantly supplied, for a person of his years, with the necessaries of life.

III. And while he was devoting himself to teaching, as he himself informs us somewhere in writing, since there was no one at Alexandria set apart for catechetical instruction (for all had been driven away by the threat of the persecution), some of the heathen approached him to hear the word of God. Of these Plutarch is pointed out as being the first, who after a noble life was adorned also with a divine martyrdom; and the second, Heraclas, Plutarch's brother. He also, in his own person, afforded a noteworthy example of a philosophic life and of discipline, and was deemed worthy of the bishopric of the Alexandrians in succession to Demetrius. Origen was in his eighteenth year [1] when he came to preside over the catechetical school, and at this time also he came into prominence when the persecutions were going on under Aquila, the governor of Alexandria.[2] Then also he won for himself an exceedingly wide reputation among all those who were of the faith, by the kindly help and goodwill that he displayed towards all the holy martyrs, unknown and known alike. For he was present not only with the holy martyrs who were in prison, not only with those who were under examination right up to the final sentence, but also when they were being led away afterwards to their death, using great boldness and coming to close quarters with danger; so that, as he courageously drew near and with great boldness greeted the martyrs with a kiss, many a time the heathen multitude round about in its fury went near to stoning him, but for the fact that time after time he found the divine right hand to help him, and so

καθάπαξ τυγχάνων παραδόξως διεδίδρασκεν, ἡ 5
δ' αὐτὴ θεία καὶ οὐράνιος χάρις ἄλλοτε πάλιν καὶ
πάλιν καὶ οὐδ' ἔστιν ὁσάκις εἰπεῖν, τῆς ἄγαν περὶ
τὸν Χριστοῦ λόγον προθυμίας τε καὶ παρρησίας
ἕνεκεν τηνικαῦτα ἐπιβουλευόμενον αὐτὸν δι-
εφύλαττεν. τοσοῦτος δ' ἦν ἄρα τῶν ἀπίστων ὁ
πρὸς αὐτὸν πόλεμος, ὡς καὶ συστροφὰς ποιησα-
μένους, στρατιώτας αὐτῷ περὶ τὸν οἶκον, ἔνθα
κατέμενεν, ἐπιστῆσαι διὰ τὸ πλῆθος τῶν τὰ τῆς
ἱερᾶς πίστεως κατηχουμένων παρ' αὐτῷ. οὕτω 6
δὲ ὁσημέραι ὁ κατ' αὐτοῦ διωγμὸς ἐξεκάετο, ὡς
μηκέτι χωρεῖν αὐτὸν τὴν πᾶσαν πόλιν, οἴκους
μὲν ἐξ οἴκων ἀμείβοντα, πανταχόθεν δὲ ἐλαυνό-
μενον, τῆς πληθύος ἕνεκεν τῶν δι' αὐτοῦ τῇ θείᾳ
προσιόντων διδασκαλίᾳ· ἐπεὶ καὶ τὰ κατὰ πρᾶξιν
ἔργα αὐτῷ γνησιωτάτης φιλοσοφίας κατορθώματα
εὖ μάλα θαυμαστὰ περιεῖχεν ("οἷον γοῦν τὸν λόγον, 7
τοιόνδε," φασίν, "τὸν τρόπον" καὶ "οἷον τὸν
τρόπον, τοιόνδε τὸν λόγον" ἐπεδείκνυτο), δι' ἃ δὴ
μάλιστα, συναιρομένης αὐτῷ δυνάμεως θείας, μυ-
ρίους ἐνῆγεν ἐπὶ τὸν αὐτοῦ ζῆλον.

Ἐπειδὴ δὲ ἑώρα φοιτητὰς ἤδη πλείους προσ- 8
ιόντας, αὐτῷ μόνῳ τῆς τοῦ κατηχεῖν διατριβῆς
ὑπὸ Δημητρίου τοῦ τῆς ἐκκλησίας προεστῶτος
ἐπιτετραμμένης, ἀσύμφωνον ἡγησάμενος τὴν τῶν
γραμματικῶν λόγων διδασκαλίαν τῇ πρὸς τὰ θεῖα
παιδεύματα ἀσκήσει, μὴ μελλήσας· ἀπορρήγνυσιν
ἅτε ἀνωφελῆ καὶ τοῖς ἱεροῖς μαθήμασιν ἐναντίαν
τὴν τῶν γραμματικῶν λόγων διατριβήν, εἶτα 9
λογισμῷ καθήκοντι, ὡς ἂν μὴ γένοιτο τῆς παρ'
ἑτέρων ἐπικουρίας ἐνδεής, ὅσαπερ ἦν αὐτῷ πρό-

escaped marvellously; and this same divine and heavenly grace on other occasions again and again—it is impossible to say how often—preserved him safely, when plots were laid against him at that time because of his excessive zeal and boldness for the word of Christ. And so great, then, was the war of unbelievers against him, that soldiers were placed in groups for his protection[1] round the house where he abode, because of the number of those who were receiving instruction from him in the sacred faith. Thus day by day the persecution against him blazed, so that there was no longer any place for him in the whole city; from house to house he passed, but was driven from all sides, on account of the numbers who through him came over to the divine teaching. For in his practical conduct were to be found to a truly marvellous degree the right actions of a most genuine philosophy (for—as the saying goes—"as was his speech, so was the manner of life"[2] that he displayed, and "as his manner of life, so his speech"), and it was especially for this reason that, with the co-operation of the divine power, he brought so very many to share his zeal.

And when he saw still more pupils coming to him (for the task of instruction had been entrusted by Demetrius, the president of the church, to him alone), considering that the teaching of letters[3] was not consonant with training in the divine studies, without more ado he broke off the task of teaching letters,[3] as being unprofitable and opposed to sacred study; and then, for the good reason that he might never be in need of others' assistance, he disposed of all the

[1] Or "with a view to capturing him."
[2] *Cf.* Plato, *Repub.* 400 D.
[3] Or "literature."

τερον λόγων ἀρχαίων συγγράμματα φιλοκάλως ἐσπουδασμένα, μεταδούς, ὑπὸ τοῦ ταῦτα ἐωνημένου φερομένοις αὐτῷ τέτταρσιν ὀβολοῖς τῆς ἡμέρας ἠρκεῖτο. πλείστοις τε ἔτεσιν τοῦτον φιλοσοφῶν
2 Ti. –, 22 διετέλει τὸν τρόπον, πάσας ὕλας νεωτερικῶν ἐπιθυμιῶν ἑαυτοῦ περιαιρούμενος, καὶ διὰ πάσης μὲν ἡμέρας οὐ σμικροὺς ἀσκήσεως καμάτους ἀναπ‹ιμπ›λῶν, καὶ τῆς νυκτὸς δὲ τὸν πλείονα χρόνον ταῖς τῶν θείων γραφῶν ἑαυτὸν ἀνατιθεὶς μελέταις, βίῳ τε ὡς ἔνι μάλιστα ἐγκαρτερῶν φιλοσοφωτάτῳ, τοτὲ μὲν τοῖς ἐν ἀσιτίαις γυμνασίοις, τοτὲ δὲ μεμετρημένοις τοῖς κατὰ τὸν ὕπνον καιροῖς, οὗ μεταλαμβάνειν οὐδ' ὅλως ἐπὶ στρωμνῆς, ἀλλ' ἐπὶ τοὔδαφος διὰ σπουδῆς ἐποιεῖτο· πάντων δὲ μάλιστα τὰς εὐαγγελικὰς τοῦ σωτῆρος
Matt. 10, 10 φωνὰς φυλακτέας ᾤετο εἶναι δεῖν τάς τε περὶ τοῦ μὴ δύο χιτῶνας μηδ' ὑποδήμασιν χρῆσθαι παραινούσας μηδὲ μὴν ταῖς περὶ τοῦ μέλλοντος χρόνου
cf. Matt. 6, 34 φροντίσιν κατατρίβεσθαι· ἀλλὰ καὶ μείζονι τῆς
1 Cor. 11, 27 ἡλικίας προθυμίᾳ χρώμενος, ἐν ψύχει καὶ γυμνότητι διακαρτερῶν εἰς ἄκρον τε ὑπερβαλλούσης ἀκτημοσύνης ἐλαύνων, τοὺς ἀμφ' αὐτὸν εἰς τὰ μάλιστα κατέπληττεν, μυρίους μὲν λυπῶν εὐχομένους αὐτῷ κοινωνεῖν τῶν ὑπαρχόντων δι' οὓς ἑώρων αὐτὸν εἰσφέροντα περὶ τὴν θείαν διδασκαλίαν καμάτους, οὐ μὴν αὐτός γε ἐνδιδοὺς ταῖς καρτερίαις. λέγεται γοῦν καὶ πλειόνων ἐτῶν γῆν πεπατηκέναι μηδενὶ μηδαμῶς κεχρημένος ὑποδήματι, ἀλλὰ καὶ οἴνου χρήσεως καὶ τῶν ἄλλων παρὰ τὴν ἀναγκαίαν τροφὴν πλείστοις ἔτεσιν ἀπεσχημένος, ὥστε ἤδη εἰς κίνδυνον ἀνατροπῆς καὶ διαφθορᾶς τοῦ θώρακος περιπεσεῖν.

volumes of ancient literature which formerly he so fondly cherished, content if he who purchased them brought him four obols a day. For a great number of years he continued to live like a philosopher in this wise, putting aside everything that might lead to youthful lusts; all day long his discipline was to perform labours of no light character, and the greater part of the night he devoted himself to studying the divine Scriptures; and he persevered, as far as possible, in the most philosophic manner of life, at one time disciplining himself by fasting, at another measuring out the time for sleep, which he was careful to take, never on a couch, but on the floor. And above all he considered that those sayings of the Saviour in the Gospel ought to be kept which exhort us not [to provide] two coats nor to use shoes, nor, indeed, to be worn out with thoughts about the future. Yea, he was possessed of a zeal beyond his years, and by persevering in cold and nakedness and going to the extremest limit of poverty, he greatly astounded his followers, causing grief to numbers who besought him to share their goods, when they saw the labour that he bestowed on teaching divine things. But he was not one to slacken endurance. He is said, for example, to have walked for many years without using a shoe of any description, yea more, to have refrained for a great many years from the use of wine and all except necessary food, so that he actually incurred the risk of upsetting and injuring his stomach.[1]

[1] So the translation of Rufinus; but no exact parallel can be adduced for the meaning here given to *θώραξ*.

Τοιαῦτα δὴ φιλοσόφου βίου τοῖς θεωμένοις 1
παρέχων ὑποδείγματα, εἰκότως ἐπὶ τὸν ὅμοιον
αὐτῷ ζῆλον πλείους παρώρμα τῶν φοιτητῶν,
ὥστε ἤδη καὶ τῶν ἀπίστων ἐθνῶν τῶν τε ἀπὸ
παιδείας καὶ φιλοσοφίας οὐ τοὺς τυχόντας ὑπ-
άγεσθαι τῇ δι' αὐτοῦ διδασκαλίᾳ· οἷς καὶ αὐτοῖς
γνησίως ἐν βάθει ψυχῆς τὴν εἰς τὸν θεῖον λόγον
πίστιν δι' αὐτοῦ παραδεχομένοις, διαπρέπειν συν-
έβαινεν κατὰ τὸν τότε τοῦ διωγμοῦ καιρόν, ὡς καί
τινας αὐτῶν ἁλόντας μαρτυρίῳ τελειωθῆναι.

IV. Πρῶτος μὲν οὖν τούτων ὁ μικρῷ πρόσθεν 1
δηλωθεὶς Πλούταρχος ἦν· οὗ τὴν ἐπὶ θάνατον ἀπ-
αγομένου, σμικροῦ δεῖν αὖθις ὁ περὶ οὗ ὁ λόγος,
συμπαρὼν αὐτῷ εἰς ὑστάτην τοῦ βίου τελευτήν,
ὑπὸ τῶν αὐτοῦ πολιτῶν ἀνῄρητο, ὡς αἴτιος αὐτῷ
πεφηνὼς τοῦ θανάτου· θεοῦ δὲ αὐτὸν ἐτήρει καὶ
τότε βουλή. μετὰ δὲ Πλούταρχον δεύτερος τῶν 2
Ὠριγένους φοιτητῶν μάρτυς ἀναδείκνυται Σέρηνος,
διὰ πυρὸς τὴν δοκιμὴν ἧς παρειλήφει πίστεως
παρεσχημένος. τῆς αὐτῆς διατριβῆς τρίτος καθ- 3
ίσταται μάρτυς Ἡρακλείδης, καὶ ἐπὶ τούτῳ τέ-
ταρτος Ἥρων, ὁ μὲν πρότερος ἔτι κατηχούμενος,
ὁ δὲ νεοφώτιστος, τὴν κεφαλὴν ἀποτμηθέντες. ἔτι
πρὸς τούτοις τῆς αὐτῆς σχολῆς πέμπτος ἀθλητὴς
εὐσεβείας ἀνακηρύττεται ἕτερος τοῦ πρώτου Σέρη-
νος, ὃν μετὰ πλείστην βασάνων ὑπομονὴν κεφαλῇ
κολασθῆναι λόγος ἔχει. καὶ γυναικῶν δὲ Ἡραΐς
ἔτι κατηχουμένη "τὸ βάπτισμα," ὥς πού φησιν
αὐτός, "τὸ διὰ πυρὸς λαβοῦσα," τὸν βίον ἐξ-
ελήλυθεν.

---

[1] 3. 2. [2] *Cf.* 3. 4, 5.

And by displaying proofs such as these of a philosophic life to those who saw him, he naturally stimulated a large number of his pupils to a like zeal, so that, even among the unbelieving Gentiles and those from the ranks of learning and philosophy, some persons of no small account were won by his instruction. By his agency these very persons received the faith of the divine Word truly in the depths of the soul, and were conspicuous at the persecution then taking place; insomuch that even some of them were arrested and perfected by martyrdom.

IV. The first of these, then, was Plutarch, he whom we mentioned a little while ago.[1] As this man was being led on the way to death, he of whom we have been speaking, being present with him to the very end of his life, was again almost killed by his fellow-citizens, as being clearly responsible for his death. But on that occasion also he was kept by the will of God.[2] And, after Plutarch, Serenus was the second of Origen's pupils to show himself a martyr, having through fire given the proof of the faith he had received. From the same school Heraclides was the third martyr, and after him Hero, the fourth; the former of these was still a catechumen, the latter lately baptized. Both were beheaded. Further, in addition to these, from the same school was proclaimed a fifth champion of piety, one Serenus, a different person from the first-mentioned of that name. It is recorded that after very great endurance of torture his head was taken off. And, among the women, Herais, who was still under instruction for baptism, as Origen himself says somewhere, "received the baptism by fire," and so ended her life.

V. Ἕβδομος ἐν τούτοις ἀριθμείσθω Βασιλείδης, 1
τὴν περιβόητον Ποταμίαιναν ἀπαγαγών, περὶ ἧς
πολὺς ὁ λόγος εἰς ἔτι νῦν παρὰ τοῖς ἐπιχωρίοις
ᾄδεται, μυρία μὲν ὑπὲρ τῆς τοῦ σώματος ἁγνείας
τε καὶ παρθενίας, ἐν ᾗ διέπρεψεν, πρὸς ἐραστὰς
ἀγωνισαμένης (καὶ γὰρ οὖν αὐτῇ ἀκμαῖον πρὸς τῇ
ψυχῇ καὶ τὸ τοῦ σώματος ὡραῖον ἐπήνθει), μυρία
δὲ ἀνατλάσης καὶ τέλος μετὰ δεινὰς καὶ φρικτὰς
εἰπεῖν βασάνους ἅμα μητρὶ Μαρκέλλῃ διὰ πυρὸς
τελειωθείσης. φασί γέ τοι τὸν δικαστήν (Ἀκύλας 2
ἦν τούτῳ ὄνομα) χαλεπὰς ἐπιθέντα αὐτῇ κατὰ
παντὸς τοῦ σώματος αἰκίας, τέλος ἐφ' ὕβρει τοῦ
σώματος μονομάχοις αὐτὴν ἀπειλῆσαι παραδοῦναι·
τὴν δὲ βραχύ τι πρὸς ἑαυτὴν ἐπισκεψαμένην
ἐρωτηθεῖσαν ὃ κρίνειεν, τοιαύτην δοῦναι ἀπόκρισιν
δι' ἧς ἐδόκει νενομισμένον τι αὐτοῖς ἀσεβὲς ἀπο-
φθέγξασθαι. ἅμα δὲ λόγῳ τὸν τῆς ἀποφάσεως 3
ὅρον καταδεξαμένην ὁ Βασιλείδης, εἷς τις ὢν τῶν
ἐν στρατείαις ἀναφερομένων, ἀπάγει παραλαβὼν
τὴν ἐπὶ θανάτῳ. ὡς δὲ τὸ πλῆθος ἐνοχλεῖν αὐτὴν
καὶ ἀκολάστοις ἐνυβρίζειν ῥήμασιν ἐπειρᾶτο, ὃ
μὲν ἀνεῖργεν ἀποσοβῶν τοὺς ἐνυβρίζοντας, πλεῖστον
ἔλεον καὶ φιλανθρωπίαν εἰς αὐτὴν ἐνδεικνύμενος,
ἡ δὲ τῆς περὶ αὐτὴν συμπαθείας ἀποδεξαμένη
τὸν ἄνδρα θαρρεῖν παρακελεύεται· ἐξαιτήσεσθαι
γὰρ αὐτὸν ἀπελθοῦσαν παρὰ τοῦ ἑαυτῆς κυρίου
καὶ οὐκ εἰς μακρὸν τῶν εἰς αὐτὴν πεπραγμένων
τὴν ἀμοιβὴν ἀποτίσειν αὐτῷ. ταῦτα δ' εἰποῦσαν 4
γενναίως τὴν ἔξοδον ὑποστῆναι, πίττης ἐμπύρου
κατὰ διάφορα μέρη τοῦ σώματος ἀπ' ἄκρων ποδῶν
καὶ μέχρι κορυφῆς ἠρέμα καὶ κατὰ βραχὺ περι-
χυθείσης αὐτῇ. καὶ ὁ μὲν τῆς ἀοιδίμου κόρης 5

V. Seventh among them must be numbered Basilides, who led away the famous Potamiaena. The praise of this woman is to this day still loudly sung by her fellow-countrymen, as of one who on behalf of the chastity and virginity of her body, in which she excelled, contended much with lovers (for assuredly her body, as well as her mind, was in the full bloom of its youthful beauty); as of one who endured much, and at the end, after tortures that were terrible and fearful to relate, was perfected by fire, along with her mother Marcella. It is said, in fact, that the judge, whose name was Aquila, after inflicting severe tortures upon her entire body, at last threatened to hand her over to the gladiators for bodily insult, and that, when after a brief period of reflection she was asked what her decision was, she made a reply which involved from their point of view something profane. No sooner had she spoken than she received the sentence, and Basilides, being one of those serving in the army, took her and led her away to death. And as the crowd tried to annoy her, and insult her with shameful words, he kept restraining them and driving away the insulters, displaying the greatest pity and kindness towards her. She on her part accepted his fellow-feeling for her and bade him be of good cheer, for that she would ask him from her Lord, when she departed, and before long would requite him for what he had done for her. Thus speaking [it is said], she right nobly endured the end, boiling pitch being poured slowly and little by little over different parts of her body from head to toe. Such was the contest waged by this maiden celebrated in

τοιοῦτος κατηγώνιστο ἆθλος· οὐ μακρὸν δὲ χρόνον διαλιπὼν ὁ Βασιλείδης ὅρκον διά τινα αἰτίαν πρὸς
Cf. Matt. 5, 33. 34 τῶν συστρατιωτῶν αἰτηθείς, μὴ ἐξεῖναι αὐτῷ τὸ παράπαν ὀμνύναι διεβεβαιοῦτο· Χριστιανὸν γὰρ ὑπάρχειν καὶ τοῦτο ἐμφανῶς ὁμολογεῖν. παίζειν μὲν οὖν ἐνομίζετο τέως τὰ πρῶτα, ὡς δ' ἐπιμόνως ἀπισχυρίζετο, ἄγεται ἐπὶ τὸν δικαστήν· ἐφ' οὗ τὴν ἔνστασιν ὁμολογήσας, δεσμοῖς παραδίδοται. τῶν δὲ κατὰ θεὸν ἀδελφῶν ὡς αὐτὸν ἀφικνουμένων καὶ τὴν αἰτίαν τῆς ἀθρόας καὶ παραδόξου ταύτης ὁρμῆς πυνθανομένων, λέγεται εἰπεῖν ὡς ἄρα Ποταμίαινα τρισὶν ὕστερον ἡμέραις τοῦ μαρτυρίου νύκτωρ ἐπιστᾶσα, στέφανον αὐτοῦ τῇ κεφαλῇ περιθεῖσα εἴη φαίη τε παρακεκληκέναι χάριν αὐτοῦ τὸν κύριον καὶ τῆς ἀξιώσεως τετυχηκέναι οὐκ εἰς μακρόν τε αὐτὸν παραλήψεσθαι. ἐπὶ τούτοις τῶν ἀδελφῶν τῆς ἐν κυρίῳ σφραγῖδος μεταδόντων αὐτῷ, τῇ μετέπειτα ἡμέρᾳ τῷ τοῦ κυρίου διαπρέψας μαρτυρίῳ τὴν κεφαλὴν ἀποτέμνεται. καὶ ἄλλοι δὲ πλείους τῶν κατ' Ἀλεξάνδρειαν ἀθρόως τῷ Χριστοῦ λόγῳ προσελθεῖν κατὰ τοὺς δηλουμένους ἱστοροῦνται, ὡς δὴ καθ' ὕπνους τῆς Ποταμιαίνης ἐπιφανείσης καὶ προσκεκλημένης αὐτούς. ἀλλὰ ταῦτα μὲν ὧδε ἐχέτω.

VI. Πάνταινον δὲ Κλήμης διαδεξάμενος, τῆς κατ' Ἀλεξάνδρειαν κατηχήσεως εἰς ἐκεῖνο τοῦ καιροῦ καθηγεῖτο, ὡς καὶ τὸν Ὠριγένην τῶν φοιτητῶν γενέσθαι αὐτοῦ. τήν γέ τοι τῶν Στρωματέων πραγματείαν ὁ Κλήμης ὑπομνηματιζόμενος, κατὰ τὸ πρῶτον σύγγραμμα χρονικὴν ἐκθέμενος γραφήν, εἰς τὴν Κομόδου τελευτὴν περιγράφει τοὺς χρόνους, ὡς εἶναι σαφὲς ὅτι κατὰ

song. And not long afterwards, when Basilides was asked by his fellow-soldiers to swear for some reason or other, he stoutly affirmed that swearing was absolutely forbidden in his case, for that he was a Christian and acknowledged it openly. At first, indeed, for a time they thought he was jesting, but when he continued stedfastly to affirm it, they brought him to the judge. And when he admitted the constancy [of his profession] in his presence, he was committed to prison. When his brethren in God came to him and inquired the reason of this sudden and incredible impulse, it is said that he stated that three days after her martyrdom Potamiaena appeared to him by night, wreathing his head with a crown and saying that she had called upon the Lord for him, and obtained what she requested, and that before long she would take him to herself. Thereupon the brethren imparted to him the seal in the Lord, and on the day afterwards he gave notable testimony for the Lord and was beheaded. And it is related that many others of those at Alexandria came over all at once to the word of Christ in the time of the persons mentioned, because Potamiaena appeared to them in dreams and invited them. But this must suffice.

VI. Pantaenus was succeeded by Clement, who directed the instruction at Alexandria up to such a date that Origen also was one of his pupils. In fact Clement, when compiling his *Stromateis*, in the first book displays a chronological table, using the death of Commodus as a terminus in measuring his dates[1]; so that it is clear that the work was composed by him

[1] Clem. *Strom.* i. 21 (139, 140, 144).

Σευῆρον αὐτῷ πεπόνητο τὰ σπουδάσματα, οὗ τοὺς χρόνους ὁ παρὼν ἱστορεῖ λόγος.

VII. Ἐν τούτῳ καὶ Ἰούδας, συγγραφέων ἕτερος, Dan. 9, 24 εἰς τὰς παρὰ τῷ Δανιὴλ ἑβδομήκοντα ἑβδομάδας ἐγγράφως διαλεχθείς, ἐπὶ τὸ δέκατον τῆς Σευήρου βασιλείας ἵστησιν τὴν χρονογραφίαν· ὃς καὶ τὴν θρυλουμένην τοῦ ἀντιχρίστου παρουσίαν ἤδη τότε πλησιάζειν ᾤετο· οὕτω σφοδρῶς ἡ τοῦ καθ' ἡμῶν τότε διωγμοῦ κίνησις τὰς τῶν πολλῶν ἀνατεταράχει διανοίας.

VIII. Ἐν τούτῳ δὲ τῆς κατηχήσεως ἐπὶ τῆς Ἀλεξανδρείας τοὔργον ἐπιτελοῦντι τῷ Ὠριγένει πρᾶγμά τι πέπρακται φρενὸς μὲν ἀτελοῦς καὶ νεανικῆς, πίστεώς γε μὴν ὁμοῦ καὶ σωφροσύνης Matt. 19, 12 μέγιστον δεῖγμα περιέχον. τὸ γὰρ "εἰσὶν εὐνοῦχοι οἵτινες εὐνούχισαν ἑαυτοὺς διὰ τὴν βασιλείαν τῶν οὐρανῶν" ἁπλούστερον καὶ νεανικώτερον ἐκλαβών, ὁμοῦ μὲν σωτήριον φωνὴν ἀποπληροῦν οἰόμενος, ὁμοῦ δὲ καὶ διὰ τὸ νέον τὴν ἡλικίαν ὄντα μὴ ἀνδράσι μόνον, καὶ γυναιξὶ δὲ τὰ θεῖα προσομιλεῖν, ὡς ἂν πᾶσαν τὴν παρὰ τοῖς ἀπίστοις αἰσχρᾶς διαβολῆς ὑπόνοιαν ἀποκλείσειεν, τὴν σωτήριον φωνὴν ἔργοις ἐπιτελέσαι ὡρμήθη, τοὺς πολλοὺς τῶν ἀμφ' αὐτὸν γνωρίμων διαλαθεῖν φροντίσας. οὐκ ἦν δὲ ἄρα δυνατὸν αὐτῷ καίπερ βουλομένῳ τοσοῦτον ἔργον ἐπικρύψασθαι. γνοὺς δῆτα ὕστερον ὁ Δημήτριος, ἅτε τῆς αὐτόθι παροικίας προεστώς, εὖ μάλα μὲν αὐτὸν ἀποθαυμάζει τοῦ τολμήματος, τὴν δέ γε προθυμίαν καὶ τὸ γνήσιον αὐτοῦ τῆς πίστεως ἀποδεξάμενος, θαρρεῖν παρακελεύεται, καὶ νῦν μᾶλλον ἔχεσθαι αὐτὸν τοῦ τῆς κατηχήσεως ἔργου παρορμᾷ.

under Severus, whose time this present account is describing.

VII. At this time Judas also, another writer, composed a written discourse on the seventy weeks in the book of Daniel; he stops his record of time at the tenth year of the reign of Severus. He also was of the opinion that the much talked of coming of the antichrist was then already near. So strongly did the persecution which was then stirred up against us disturb the minds of the many.

VIII. At that time, while Origen was performing the work of instruction at Alexandria, he did a thing which gave abundant proof of an immature and youthful mind, yet withal of faith and self-control. For he took the saying, "There are eunuchs which made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake," in too literal and extreme a sense, and thinking both to fulfil the Saviour's saying, and also that he might prevent all suspicion of shameful slander on the part of unbelievers (for, young as he was, he used to discourse on divine things with women as well as men), he hastened to put into effect the Saviour's saying, taking care to escape the notice of the greater number of his pupils. But, wishful though he might be, it was not possible to hide a deed of this nature. In fact Demetrius got to know of it later, since he was presiding over the community at that place; and while he marvelled exceedingly at him for his rash act, he approved the zeal and the sincerity of his faith, bade him be of good cheer, and urged him to attach himself now all the more to the work of instruction.

Ἀλλὰ τότε μὲν οὗτος τοιοῦτός τις ἦν· οὐ μακροῖς δὲ χρόνοις ὕστερον ὁ αὐτὸς ὁρῶν εὖ πράττοντα μέγαν τε καὶ λαμπρὸν καὶ παρὰ πᾶσιν ὄντα βεβοημένον, ἀνθρώπινόν τι πεπονθὼς τοῖς ἀνὰ τὴν οἰκουμένην ἐπισκόποις καταγράφειν ὡς ἀτοπωτάτου τοῦ πραχθέντος ἐπειρᾶτο, ὅτε τῶν κατὰ Παλαιστίνην οἱ μάλιστα δόκιμοι καὶ διαπρέποντες Καισαρείας τε καὶ Ἱεροσολύμων ἐπίσκοποι πρεσβείων τὸν Ὠριγένην καὶ τῆς ἀνωτάτω τιμῆς ἄξιον εἶναι δοκιμάσαντες, χεῖρας εἰς πρεσβυτέριον αὐτῷ τεθείκασιν. τηνικαῦτα δ' οὖν εἰς μέγα δόξης προελθόντος ὄνομά τε παρὰ τοῖς πανταχῇ πᾶσιν ἀνθρώποις καὶ κλέος ἀρετῆς καὶ σοφίας οὐ σμικρὸν κτησαμένου, μηδεμιᾶς ἄλλης εὐπορῶν ὁ Δημήτριος κατηγορίας, τῆς πάλαι ἐν παιδὶ γεγονυίας αὐτῷ πράξεως δεινὴν ποιεῖται διαβολήν, συμπεριλαβεῖν τολμήσας ταῖς κατηγορίαις τοὺς ἐπὶ τὸ πρεσβυτέριον αὐτὸν προάξαντας.

Ταῦτα μὲν οὖν μικρὸν ἐπράχθη ὕστερον· τότε γε μὴν ὁ Ὠριγένης ἐπὶ τῆς Ἀλεξανδρείας τὸ τῆς θείας διδασκαλίας ἔργον εἰς ἅπαντας ἀφυλάκτως τοὺς προσιόντας νύκτωρ καὶ μεθ' ἡμέραν ἐπετέλει, τοῖς θείοις ἀόκνως μαθήμασιν καὶ τοῖς ὡς αὐτὸν φοιτῶσιν τὴν πᾶσαν ἀνατιθεὶς σχολήν.

Ἐπὶ δέκα δὲ καὶ ὀκτὼ ἔτεσιν τὴν ἀρχὴν ἐπικρατήσαντα Σευῆρον Ἀντωνῖνος ὁ παῖς διαδέχεται. ἐν τούτῳ δὲ τῶν κατὰ τὸν διωγμὸν ἀνδρισαμένων καὶ μετὰ τοὺς ἐν ὁμολογίαις ἀγῶνας διὰ προνοίας θεοῦ πεφυλαγμένων εἴς τις ὢν Ἀλέξανδρος, ὃν ἀρτίως ἐπίσκοπον τῆς ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις ἐκκλησίας ἐδηλώσαμεν, οἷα ταῖς ὑπὲρ Χριστοῦ διαπρέψας

Such indeed was his attitude at that time. But not long afterwards, when the same person saw that he was prospering and a great man and distinguished and famous in the sight of all, overcome by a human weakness, he attempted to describe the deed as monstrous to the bishops throughout the world, when the most highly approved and distinguished bishops in Palestine, namely those of Caesarea and Jerusalem,[1] deeming Origen worthy of privilege and the highest honour, ordained him to the presbyterate by laying on of hands.[2] So, as he had then advanced to a position of great esteem, and had acquired no small reputation and fame for his virtue and wisdom in the eyes of all men everywhere, through lack of any other ground of accusation Demetrius spread grave scandal about the deed that he had committed long ago when a boy, and had the temerity to include in his accusations those who raised him to the presbyterate.

This happened a little while afterwards. At that time, however, Origen was engaged at Alexandria in the work of divine instruction for all, without reserve, who came to him by night and in the course of the day, devoting his whole time untiringly to the divine studies and his pupils.

When Severus had held the principate for eighteen years, he was succeeded by his son Antoninus.[3] At this time Alexander (being one of those who played the man during the persecution and after contending for the faith by their confessions were preserved by the Providence of God), whom we have mentioned lately[4] as bishop of the church at Jerusalem, was deemed worthy of the said bishopric, distinguished

[1] *i.e.* Theoctistus and Alexander: *cf.* 19. 17; 27.
[2] See 23. 4. [3] A.D. 211. [4] § 4.

ὁμολογίαις, τῆς δηλωθείσης ἐπισκοπῆς ἀξιοῦται, ἔτι Ναρκίσσου, ὃς ἦν αὐτοῦ πρότερος, περιόντος τῷ βίῳ.

IX. Πολλὰ μὲν οὖν καὶ ἄλλα παράδοξα οἱ τῆς παροικίας πολῖται ὡς ἐκ παραδόσεως τῶν κατὰ διαδοχὴν ἀδελφῶν τοῦ Ναρκίσσου μνημονεύουσιν, ἐν οἷς καὶ τοιόνδε τι θαῦμα δι' αὐτοῦ γεγονὸς ἱστοροῦσιν. κατὰ τὴν μεγάλην ποτὲ τοῦ πάσχα διανυκτέρευσιν τοὔλαιόν φασιν τοῖς διακόνοις ἐπιλιπεῖν· ἐφ' ᾧ τὸ πᾶν πλῆθος δεινῆς ἀθυμίας διαλαβούσης, τὸν Νάρκισσον τοῖς τὰ φῶτα παρασκευάζουσιν ἐπιτάξαι ὕδωρ ἀνιμήσαντας ὡς αὐτὸν κομιεῖσθαι. τούτου δὲ ἅμα λόγῳ πραχθέντος, ἐπευξάμενον τῷ ὕδατι, ἐγχέαι κατὰ τῶν λύχνων πίστει τῇ εἰς τὸν κύριον γνησίᾳ παρακελεύσασθαι· ποιησάντων δὲ καὶ τοῦτο, παρὰ πάντα λόγον δυνάμει παραδόξῳ καὶ θείᾳ μεταβαλεῖν ἐξ ὕδατος εἰς ἐλαίου ποιότητα τὴν φύσιν, παρά τε πλείστοις τῶν αὐτόθι ἀδελφῶν ἐπὶ μήκιστον ἐξ ἐκείνου καὶ εἰς ἡμᾶς βραχύ τι δεῖγμα τοῦ τότε θαύματος φυλαχθῆναι.

Ἄλλα τε πλεῖστα περὶ τοῦ βίου τοῦδε τοῦ ἀνδρὸς μνήμης ἄξια καταλέγουσιν, ἐν οἷς καὶ τοιόνδε τι. τὸ εὔτονον αὐτοῦ καὶ στερρὸν τοῦ βίου φαῦλοί τινες ἀνθρωπίσκοι μὴ οἷοί τε φέρειν, δέει τοῦ μὴ δίκην ὑποσχεῖν ἁλόντας, διὰ τὸ μυρία κακὰ ἑαυτοῖς συνεγνωκέναι, συσκευὴν κατ' αὐτοῦ προλαβόντες συρράπτουσιν καί τινα δεινὴν κατασχέουσιν αὐτοῦ διαβολήν. εἶτα πιστούμενοι τοὺς ἀκροωμένους, ὅρκοις ἐβεβαίουν τὰς κατηγορίας, καὶ ὁ μέν, ἢ μὴν ἀπόλοιτο πυρί, ὤμνυεν, ὁ δέ, ἢ μὴν σκαιᾷ νόσῳ δαπανηθείη τὸ σῶμα, ὁ δὲ τρίτος,

as he was for his confessions on behalf of Christ; Narcissus his predecessor being still alive.[1]

IX. Many other miracles, indeed, of Narcissus do the citizens of the community call to mind, as handed down by the brethren in succession, and among these they relate that the following wonder was performed by him. Once at the great all-night vigil of the Pascha it is said that the oil failed the deacons, and that when deep despondency seized the whole multitude, thereupon Narcissus commanded those who were preparing the lights to draw water and bring it to him; that when this was no sooner said than done, he then prayed over the water, and bade them pour it down into the lamps with unfeigned faith in the Lord. And that when they did this, contrary to all reason by miraculous and divine power its nature was changed in quality from water into oil; and that for a very long time, from that day even to ours, a little was preserved as a proof of that wonder of former days by very many of the brethren there.

And they enumerate a great many other things about the life of this man worthy of mention, among which is the following. Certain miserable creatures, not being able to endure his energy and the firmness of his conduct, and fearing lest they should be taken and put on their trial (for they were conscious of many evil deeds), anticipated the event by devising an intrigue against him and spreading a certain grave slander to his hurt. Then, with a view to securing the belief of their hearers, they strove to confirm their accusations by oaths; one swore, "[if this is not true] may I be destroyed by fire"; another, "may my body be wasted by an untoward disease"; and the

[1] For the reason of this see c. 11.

ἢ μὴν τὰς ὁράσεις πηρωθείη· ἀλλ' οὐδ' οὕτως αὐτοῖς, καίπερ ὀμνύουσιν, τῶν πιστῶν τις προσεῖχε τὸν νοῦν διὰ τὴν εἰς πάντας λάμπουσαν ἐκ τοῦ παντὸς σωφροσύνην τε καὶ πανάρετον ἀγωγὴν τοῦ Ναρκίσσου. αὐτός γε μὴν τὴν τῶν εἰρημένων μηδαμῶς ὑπομένων μοχθηρίαν καὶ ἄλλως ἐκ μακροῦ τὸν φιλόσοφον ἀσπαζόμενος βίον, διαδρὰς πᾶν τὸ τῆς ἐκκλησίας πλῆθος, ἐν ἐρημίαις καὶ ἀφανέσιν ἀγροῖς λανθάνων πλείστοις ἔτεσιν διέτριβεν. ἀλλ' οὐ καὶ ὁ τῆς δίκης μέγας ὀφθαλμὸς ἐπὶ τοῖς πεπραγμένοις ἠρέμει, μετῄει δὲ ὡς τάχιστα τοὺς ἀσεβεῖς αἷς καθ' ἑαυτῶν ἐπιορκοῦντες κατεδήσαντο ἀραῖς. ὁ μὲν οὖν πρῶτος, ἐκ μηδεμιᾶς προφάσεως ἁπλῶς οὕτως, μικροῦ διαπεσόντος ἐφ' ἧς κατέμενεν οἰκίας σπινθῆρος, νύκτωρ ὑφαφθείσης ἁπάσης, παγγενεῖ καταφλέγεται· ὁ δὲ ἀθρόως τὸ σῶμα ἐξ ἄκρων ποδῶν ἐπὶ κεφαλὴν ἧς αὐτὸς προσετίμησεν ἑαυτῷ νόσου πίμπλαται· ὁ δὲ τρίτος τὰς τῶν προτέρων συνιδὼν ἐκβάσεις καὶ τοῦ πάντων ἐφόρου θεοῦ τρέσας τὴν ἀδιάδραστον δίκην, ὁμολογεῖ μὲν τοῖς πᾶσιν τὰ κοινῇ σφίσιν αὐτοῖς ἐσκευωρημένα, τοσαύταις δὲ κατετρύχετο μεταμελόμενος οἰμωγαῖς δακρύων τε ἐς τοσοῦτον οὐκ ἀπέλιπεν, ἕως ἄμφω διεφθάρη τὰς ὄψεις.

Καὶ οἵδε μὲν τῆς ψευδολογίας τοιαύτας ὑπέσχον τιμωρίας· Χ. τοῦ δὲ Ναρκίσσου ἀνακεχωρηκότος καὶ μηδαμῶς ὅπῃ ὢν τυγχάνοι, γινωσκομένου, δόξαν τοῖς τῶν ὁμόρων ἐκκλησιῶν προεστῶσιν, ἐφ' ἑτέρου μετίασιν ἐπισκόπου χειροτονίαν· Δῖος τούτῳ ὄνομα ἦν· ὃν οὐ πολὺν προστάντα χρόνον Γερμανίων διαδέχεται, καὶ τοῦτον Γόρδιος· καθ'

third, " may my eyes be blinded." But, swear though they might, none of the faithful gave heed to them, because the fame of Narcissus's sobriety and virtuous manner of life was always well known to all. He, nevertheless, could not brook the wickedness of what had been said, and, besides, had for a long time been pursuing the philosophic life; so he escaped the whole company of the church, and spent many years secretly in deserts and obscure parts of the country. Yet the great eye of Justice did not remain quiet at these deeds, but with utmost speed visited upon those godless men the curses with which in their perjury they had bound themselves. So the first was burnt to death with all his family, the house in which he was staying being wholly set on fire one night from absolutely no other cause than a small spark which happened to fall on it; as for the second, his body was covered, all at once, from head to toe with the disease that he had assigned to himself as a penalty; and the third, perceiving the hap of the other two, and fearing the inevitable judgement of God who seeth all, made public confession of what they had plotted together in common. Yet, in the act of his repentance, so great were the lamentations by which he was wasted, so many were the tears that he unceasingly poured forth, that both eyes were destroyed.

Such were the punishments that these men suffered for their falsehood. X. But as Narcissus had retired and no one knew where he might be, it seemed good to those presiding over the neighbouring churches to proceed to the appointment of another bishop. His name was Dius. After a brief presidency he was succeeded by Germanion, and he in turn by Gordius.

ὃν ὥσπερ ἐξ ἀναβιώσεως ἀναφανείς ποθεν ὁ Νάρκισσος αὖθις ὑπὸ τῶν ἀδελφῶν ἐπὶ τὴν προστασίαν παρακαλεῖται, μειζόνως ἔτι μᾶλλον τῶν πάντων ἀγασθέντων αὐτὸν τῆς τε ἀναχωρήσεως ἕνεκα καὶ τῆς φιλοσοφίας καὶ ἐφ' ἅπασιν δι' ἣν παρὰ τοῦ θεοῦ κατηξίωτο ἐκδίκησιν.

XI. Καὶ δὴ μηκέθ' οἷόν τε ὄντος λειτουργεῖν διὰ λιπαρὸν γῆρας, τὸν εἰρημένον Ἀλέξανδρον, ἐπίσκοπον ἑτέρας ὑπάρχοντα παροικίας, οἰκονομία θεοῦ ἐπὶ τὴν ἅμα τῷ Ναρκίσσῳ λειτουργίαν ἐκάλει κατὰ ἀποκάλυψιν νύκτωρ αὐτῷ δι' ὁράματος φανεῖσαν. ταύτῃ δ' οὖν, ὡς κατά τι θεοπρόπιον, ἐκ τῆς Καππαδοκῶν γῆς, ἔνθα τὸ πρῶτον τῆς ἐπισκοπῆς ἠξίωτο, τὴν πορείαν ἐπὶ τὰ Ἱεροσόλυμα εὐχῆς καὶ τῶν τόπων ἱστορίας ἕνεκεν πεποιημένον φιλοφρονέστατα οἱ τῇδε ὑπολαβόντες οὐκέτ' οἴκαδε αὐτῷ παλινοστεῖν ἐπιτρέπουσιν καθ' ἑτέραν ἀποκάλυψιν καὶ αὐτοῖς νύκτωρ ὀφθεῖσαν μίαν τε φωνὴν σαφεστάτην τοῖς μάλιστα αὐτῶν σπουδαίοις χρήσασαν· ἐδήλου γὰρ προελθόντας ἔξω πυλῶν τὸν ἐκ θεοῦ προωρισμένον αὐτοῖς ἐπίσκοπον ὑποδέξασθαι· τοῦτο δὲ πράξαντες, μετὰ κοινῆς τῶν ἐπισκόπων, οἳ τὰς πέριξ διεῖπον ἐκκλησίας, γνώμης ἐπάναγκες αὐτὸν παραμένειν βιάζονται. μνημονεύει γέ τοι καὶ αὐτὸς ὁ Ἀλέξανδρος ἐν ἰδίαις ἐπιστολαῖς ταῖς πρὸς Ἀντινοΐτας, εἰς ἔτι νῦν παρ' ἡμῖν σῳζομέναις, τῆς Ναρκίσσου σὺν αὐτῷ προεδρίας, ταῦτα κατὰ λέξιν ἐπὶ τέλει γράφων

[1] 8. 7.

[2] The community at Antinoë, or Antinoöpolis, a city on the eastern bank of the Nile, founded by Hadrian in A.D. 122 in honour of Antinous. See iv. 8. 2.

In his day Narcissus appeared from somewhere, as if come to life again, and was once more summoned to the presidency by the brethren, for all admired him to a still greater degree because of his retirement and philosophic life, and especially because of the punishment with which God had deemed it meet to avenge him.

XI. And when he was no longer able to perform the ministry on account of ripe old age, the above-mentioned[1] Alexander, being bishop of another community, was called by a dispensation of God to a joint ministry with Narcissus, by a revelation which appeared to him in a vision at night. Whereupon, as if in obedience to some oracle, he made the journey from the land of the Cappadocians, where he was first deemed worthy of the episcopate, to Jerusalem, for the purpose of prayer and investigation of the [sacred] places. The people there gave him the most cordial welcome, and suffered him not to return home again, in accordance with another revelation which was seen by them also at night, and which vouchsafed an identical utterance of the clearest kind to those of them who were peculiarly zealous. For it indicated to them to go forth outside the gates and welcome as their bishop him who was fore-ordained of God. And doing this, with the common consent of the bishops who were administering the churches round about, they compelled him of necessity to remain. And in fact Alexander himself in a personal letter to the Antinoites,[2] which is still to this day preserved with us, mentions Narcissus as holding the chief place along with him, writing as follows, in these very words,

τῆς ἐπιστολῆς, "ἀσπάζεται ὑμᾶς Νάρκισσος ὁ πρὸ ἐμοῦ διέπων τὸν τόπον τῆς ἐπισκοπῆς τὸν ἐνθάδε καὶ νῦν συνεξεταζόμενός μοι διὰ τῶν εὐχῶν, ϛις ἔτη ἠνυκώς, παρακαλῶν ὑμᾶς ὁμοίως ἐμοὶ ὁμοφρονῆσαι."

Καὶ ταῦτα μὲν οὕτως εἶχεν· τῆς δὲ κατ' Ἀντιόχειαν ἐκκλησίας, Σεραπίωνος ἀναπαυσαμένου, τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν διαδέχεται Ἀσκληπιάδης, ἐν ταῖς κατὰ τὸν διωγμὸν ὁμολογίαις διαπρέψας καὶ αὐτός. μέμνηται καὶ τῆς τούτου καταστάσεως Ἀλέξανδρος Ἀντιοχεῦσιν γράφων ὧδε· "'Αλέξανδρος, δοῦλος καὶ δέσμιος Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, τῇ μακαρίᾳ Ἀντιοχέων ἐκκλησίᾳ ἐν κυρίῳ χαίρειν. ἐλαφρά μοι καὶ κοῦφα τὰ δεσμὰ ὁ κύριος ἐποίησεν, κατὰ τὸν καιρὸν τῆς εἰρκτῆς πυθομένῳ τῆς ἁγίας ὑμῶν τῶν Ἀντιοχέων ἐκκλησίας κατὰ τὴν θείαν πρόνοιαν Ἀσκληπιάδην τὸν ἐπιτηδειότατον κατ' ἀξίαν τὴν πίστιν τῆς ἐπισκοπῆς ἐγκεχειρισμένον."

Ταύτην δὲ τὴν ἐπιστολὴν σημαίνει διὰ Κλήμεντος ἀπεσταλκέναι, πρὸς τῷ τέλει τοῦτον γράφων τὸν τρόπον· "ταῦτα δὲ ὑμῖν, κύριοί μου ἀδελφοί, τὰ γράμματα ἀπέστειλα διὰ Κλήμεντος τοῦ μακαρίου πρεσβυτέρου, ἀνδρὸς ἐναρέτου καὶ δοκίμου, ὃν ἴστε καὶ ὑμεῖς καὶ ἐπιγνώσεσθε· ὃς καὶ ἐνθάδε παρὼν κατὰ τὴν πρόνοιαν καὶ ἐπισκοπὴν τοῦ δεσπότου ἐπεστήριξέν τε καὶ ηὔξησεν τὴν τοῦ κυρίου ἐκκλησίαν."

XII. Τοῦ μὲν οὖν Σεραπίωνος τῆς περὶ λόγους ἀσκήσεως καὶ ἄλλα μὲν εἰκὸς σῴζεσθαι παρ' ἑτέροις ὑπομνήματα, εἰς ἡμᾶς δὲ μόνα κατῆλθεν τὰ Πρὸς Δόμνον, ἐκπεπτωκότα τινὰ παρὰ τὸν τοῦ διωγμοῦ καιρὸν ἀπὸ τῆς εἰς Χριστὸν πίστεως

at the close of the letter: "Narcissus greets you, who before me was holding the position of bishop here, and now is associated with me in the prayers, having completed 116 years; and exhorts you, as I do likewise, to be of one mind."

So was it with these matters. But when Serapion entered upon his rest, Asclepiades succeeded to the bishopric of the church at Antioch, and he was himself distinguished for his confessions in the persecution. Alexander also mentions his appointment, writing thus to the Antiochenes: "Alexander, a slave and prisoner of Jesus Christ, to the blessed church of the Antiochenes, greeting in the Lord. Light and easy did the Lord make my bonds, when I learnt at the time of my imprisonment that by the Divine Providence Asclepiades, whose worthy faith makes him most suitable, had been entrusted with the bishopric of your holy church of the Antiochenes."

This epistle he indicates had been sent by the hand of Clement,[1] writing at the close in this manner: "But this letter I send unto you, my dear brethren, by the hand of Clement the blessed presbyter, a man virtuous and approved, of whom ye yourselves also have heard, and with whom ye will become acquainted; who also, when he was present here in accordance with the providence and overseership of the Master, both stablished and increased the Church of the Lord."

XII. Now it is likely, indeed, that other memoirs also, the fruit of Serapion's literary studies, are preserved by other persons, but there have come down to us only those addressed To Domnus, one who had fallen away from the faith of Christ, at the

[1] *i.e.* Clement of Alexandria.

Cf. Col. 2, 23 ἐπὶ τὴν Ἰουδαϊκὴν ἐθελοθρησκείαν, καὶ τὰ Πρὸς Πόντιον καὶ Καρικόν, ἐκκλησιαστικοὺς ἄνδρας, καὶ ἄλλαι πρὸς ἑτέρους ἐπιστολαί, ἕτερός τε συντεταγμένος αὐτῷ λόγος Περὶ τοῦ λεγομένου κατὰ Πέτρον εὐαγγελίου, ὃν πεποίηται ἀπελέγχων τὰ ψευδῶς ἐν αὐτῷ εἰρημένα διά τινας ἐν τῇ κατὰ Ῥωσσὸν παροικίᾳ προφάσει τῆς εἰρημένης γραφῆς εἰς ἑτεροδόξους διδασκαλίας ἀποκείλαντας· ἀφ' οὗ εὔλογον βραχείας παραθέσθαι λέξεις, δι' ὧν ἣν εἶχεν περὶ τοῦ βιβλίου γνώμην προτίθησιν, οὕτω γράφων· " ἡμεῖς γάρ, ἀδελφοί, καὶ Πέτρον
Gal. 4, 14 καὶ τοὺς ἄλλους ἀποστόλους ἀποδεχόμεθα ὡς Χριστόν, τὰ δὲ ὀνόματι αὐτῶν ψευδεπίγραφα ὡς ἔμπειροι παραιτούμεθα, γινώσκοντες ὅτι τὰ τοιαῦτα οὐ παρελάβομεν. ἐγὼ γὰρ γενόμενος παρ' ὑμῖν, ὑπενόουν τοὺς πάντας ὀρθῇ πίστει προσφέρεσθαι, καὶ μὴ διελθὼν τὸ ὑπ' αὐτῶν προφερόμενον ὀνόματι Πέτρου εὐαγγέλιον, εἶπον ὅτι εἰ τοῦτό ἐστιν μόνον τὸ δοκοῦν ὑμῖν παρέχειν μικροψυχίαν, ἀναγινωσκέσθω· νῦν δὲ μαθὼν ὅτι αἱρέσει τινὶ ὁ νοῦς αὐτῶν ἐφώλευεν, ἐκ τῶν λεχθέντων μοι σπουδάσω πάλιν γενέσθαι πρὸς ὑμᾶς, ὥστε, ἀδελφοί, προσδοκᾶτέ με ἐν τάχει. ἡμεῖς δέ, ἀδελφοί, καταλαβόμενοι ὁποίας ἦν αἱρέσεως ὁ Μαρκιανός, ‹ὃς› καὶ ἑαυτῷ ἐναντιοῦτο, μὴ νοῶν

[1] A large fragment of this Gospel was discovered at Akhmîm in 1886, which agrees exactly with the description given above by Serapion, and is manifestly docetic in its conception of Christ. Scholars are not unanimous about the

time of the persecution, to Jewish will-worship; and those To Pontius and Caricus, churchmen, and other letters to other persons ; and another book has been composed by him *Concerning what is known as the Gospel of Peter*,[1] which he has written refuting the false statements in it, because of certain in the community of Rhossus, who on the ground of the said writing turned aside into heterodox teachings. It will not be unreasonable to quote a short passage from this work, in which he puts forward the view he held about the book, writing as follows : " For our part, brethren, we receive both Peter and the other apostles as Christ, but the writings which falsely bear their names we reject, as men of experience, knowing that such were not handed down to us. For I myself, when I came among you, imagined that all of you clung to the true faith ; and, without going through the Gospel put forward by them in the name of Peter, I said : If this is the only thing that seemingly causes captious feelings among you, let it be read. But since I have now learnt, from what has been told me, that their mind was lurking in some hole of heresy,[2] I shall give diligence to come again to you ; wherefore, brethren, expect me quickly. But we, brethren, gathering to what kind of heresy Marcianus[3] belonged (who[4] used to contradict himself, not knowing what he was saying, as ye will learn

date of this Gospel: Swete put it at A.D. 165, others forty or even more years earlier.

[2] Schwartz supposes that Serapion wrote : " was halting by reason of some heresy," reading *ἐχώλευεν*.

[3] The Armenian version has *Marcion*. But the person here mentioned was probably not the well-known heretic of Pontus, but a leader of the Docetae at Rhossus.

[4] Reading *ὅς*, with Schwartz.

ἃ ἐλάλει, ἃ μαθήσεσθε ἐξ ὧν ὑμῖν ἐγράφη, ἐδυνήθη- 6
μεν [γὰρ] παρ' ἄλλων τῶν ἀσκησάντων ναὐτὸ τοῦτο
τὸ εὐαγγέλιον, τοῦτ' ἐστὶν παρὰ τῶν διαδόχων
τῶν καταρξαμένων αὐτοῦ, οὓς Δοκητὰς καλοῦμεν
(τὰ γὰρ πλείονα φρονήματα ἐκείνων ἐστὶ τῆς
διδασκαλίας), χρησάμενοι παρ' αὐτῶν διελθεῖν καὶ
εὑρεῖν τὰ μὲν πλείονα τοῦ ὀρθοῦ λόγου τοῦ σωτῆρος,
τινὰ δὲ προσδιεσταλμένα, ἃ καὶ ὑπετάξαμεν ὑμῖν."
XIII. καὶ ταῦτα μὲν τὰ Σεραπίωνος.

Τοῦ δὲ Κλήμεντος Στρωματεῖς, οἱ πάντες 1
ὀκτώ, παρ' ἡμῖν σῴζονται, οὓς καὶ τοιαύτης
ἠξίωσεν προγραφῆς "Τίτου Φλαυίου Κλήμεντος
τῶν κατὰ τὴν ἀληθῆ φιλοσοφίαν γνωστικῶν ὑπο-
μνημάτων στρωματεῖς," ἰσάριθμοί τε τούτοις 2
εἰσὶν οἱ ἐπιγεγραμμένοι Ὑποτυπώσεων αὐτοῦ
λόγοι, ἐν οἷς ὀνομαστὶ ὡς διδασκάλου τοῦ Πανταίνου
μνημονεύει ἐκδοχάς τε αὐτοῦ γραφῶν καὶ παρα-
δόσεις ἐκτέθειται· ἔστιν δὲ αὐτῷ καὶ πρὸς Ἕλληνας 3
λόγος ὁ Προτρεπτικὸς τρεῖς τε οἱ τοῦ ἐπιγεγραμ-
μένου Παιδαγωγοῦ καὶ "Τίς ὁ σῳζόμενος πλού-
σιος" οὕτως ἐπιγραφεὶς ἕτερος αὐτοῦ λόγος τό
τε Περὶ τοῦ πάσχα σύγγραμμα καὶ διαλέξεις Περὶ
νηστείας καὶ Περὶ καταλαλιᾶς καὶ ὁ Προτρεπτικὸς
εἰς ὑπομονὴν ἢ πρὸς τοὺς νεωστὶ βεβαπτισμένους
καὶ ὁ ἐπιγεγραμμένος Κανὼν ἐκκλησιαστικὸς ἢ
πρὸς τοὺς Ἰουδαΐζοντας, ὃν Ἀλεξάνδρῳ τῷ
δεδηλωμένῳ ἐπισκόπῳ ἀνατέθεικεν.

[1] Omitting *γάρ*, with Schwartz.

[2] This word (derived from *δοκεῖν*, "to seem") was in common use as indicating persons or sects who denied the reality of our Lord's body or of His sufferings.

[3] In late Greek *στρωματεύς* came to have the meaning of *στρωματόδεσμος*, *i.e.* the *striped* bag in which slaves rolled up

from what has been written to you), were enabled[1] by others who studied this very Gospel, that is, by the successors of those who began it, whom we call Docetae[2] (for most of the ideas belong to their teaching)—using [the material supplied] by them, were enabled to go through it and discover that the most part indeed was in accordance with the true teaching of the Saviour, but that some things were added, which also we place below for your benefit." XIII. Such are the writings of Serapion.

But of Clement the *Stromateis*, all the eight books, are preserved with us, upon which he bestowed the following title: "Titus Flavius Clement's Stromateis[3] of Gnostic Memoirs according to the True Philosophy"; and of equal number with these are his books entitled *Hypotyposeis*,[4] in which he mentions Pantaenus by name as his teacher, and has set forth his interpretations of the Scriptures and his traditions. There is also a book of his, the *Exhortation to the Greeks*,[5] and the three books of the work entitled *Paedagogus*, and *Who is the Rich Man that is being Saved?*[5] (such is the title of another book of his), and the treatise *On the Pascha*, and discourses *On Fasting* and *On Slander*, and the *Exhortation to Endurance*, or *To the Recently Baptized*,[5] and the [book] entitled the *Ecclesiastical Canon*, or *Against the Judaizers*,[6] which he has dedicated to Alexander, the bishop mentioned above.[7]

the bedclothes. Hence works of a miscellaneous character were thus entitled, not only by Clement, but also by Plutarch and Origen (see 24. 3).

[4] *i.e.* "Sketches."

[5] Translated in Loeb Classical Library, vol. 92.

[6] Or "To the Judaizers."

[7] 8. 7; 11.

Ἐν μὲν οὖν τοῖς Στρωματεῦσιν οὐ μόνον τῆς 4
θείας κατάστρωσιν πεποίηται γραφῆς, ἀλλὰ καὶ
τῶν παρ' Ἕλλησιν, εἴ τι ἄρα ὠφέλιμον ἐδόκει καὶ
αὐτοῖς εἰρῆσθαι, μνημονεύει τῶν τε παρὰ τοῖς
πολλοῖς δογμάτων, τὰ Ἑλλήνων ὁμοῦ καὶ τὰ 5
βαρβάρων ἀναπτύσσων καὶ ἔτι τὰς τῶν αἱρεσιαρχῶν
ψευδοδοξίας εὐθύνων, ἱστορίαν τε πολλὴν ἐξαπλοῖ,
ὑπόθεσιν ἡμῖν πολυμαθοῦς παρέχων παιδείας.
τούτοις ἅπασιν καταμίγνυσιν καὶ τὰ φιλοσόφων
δόγματα, ὅθεν εἰκότως κατάλληλον τῇ ὑποθέσει
καὶ τὴν προγραφὴν τῶν Στρωματέων πεποίηται.
κέχρηται δ' ἐν αὐτοῖς καὶ ταῖς ἀπὸ τῶν ἀντι- 6
λεγομένων γραφῶν μαρτυρίαις, τῆς τε λεγομένης
Σολομῶνος Σοφίας καὶ τῆς Ἰησοῦ τοῦ Σιρὰχ καὶ
τῆς πρὸς Ἑβραίους ἐπιστολῆς τῆς τε Βαρναβᾶ
καὶ Κλήμεντος καὶ Ἰούδα, μνημονεύει τε τοῦ πρὸς 7
Ἕλληνας Τατιανοῦ λόγου καὶ Κασσιανοῦ ὡς καὶ
αὐτοῦ χρονογραφίαν πεποιημένου, ἔτι μὴν Φίλωνος
καὶ Ἀριστοβούλου Ἰωσήπου τε καὶ Δημητρίου
καὶ Εὐπολέμου, Ἰουδαίων συγγραφέων, ὡς ἂν
τούτων ἁπάντων ἐγγράφως πρεσβύτερον τῆς παρ'
Ἕλλησιν ἀρχαιογονίας Μωυσέα τε καὶ τὸ Ἰουδαίων
γένος ἀποδειξάντων. καὶ ἄλλης δὲ πλείστης 8
χρηστομαθείας ἔμπλεῳ οἱ δηλούμενοι τυγχάνουσιν
τοῦ ἀνδρὸς λόγοι· ὧν ἐν τῷ πρώτῳ περὶ ἑαυτοῦ
δηλοῖ ὡς ἔγγιστα τῆς τῶν ἀποστόλων γενομένου
διαδοχῆς, ὑπισχνεῖται δ' ἐν αὐτοῖς καὶ εἰς τὴν
Γένεσιν ὑπομνηματιεῖσθαι.

Καὶ ἐν τῷ λόγῳ δὲ αὐτοῦ τῷ Περὶ τοῦ πάσχα 9
ἐκβιασθῆναι ὁμολογεῖ πρὸς τῶν ἑταίρων ἃς ἔτυχεν

[1] Clem. *Strom.* i. 21 (101. 2).

Now in the *Stromateis* he has composed a patchwork, not only of the divine Scripture, but of the writings of the Greeks as well, if he thought that they also had said anything useful, and he mentions opinions from many sources, explaining Greek and barbarian alike, and moreover sifts the false opinions of the heresiarchs; and unfolding much history he gives us a work of great erudition. With all these he mingles also the opinions of philosophers, and so he has suitably made the title of the *Stromateis* to correspond to the work itself. And in them he has also made use of testimonies from the disputed writings, the book known as the Wisdom of Solomon, and the Wisdom of Jesus the Son of Sirach, and the Epistle to the Hebrews, and those of Barnabas, and Clement, and Jude; and he mentions Tatian's book *Against the Greeks*, and Cassian, since he also had composed a chronography,[1] and moreover Philo and Aristobulus and Josephus and Demetrius and Eupolemus, Jewish writers, in that they would show, all of them, in writing, that Moses and the Jewish race went back further in their origins than the Greeks.[2] And the books of Clement, of which we are speaking, are full of much other useful learning. In the first of these he shows with reference to himself that he came very near to the successors of the Apostles[3]; and he promises in them also to write a commentary on Genesis.[4]

And in his book *On the Pascha* he professes that he was compelled by his companions to commit to

[2] *Ibid.* 15 (72. 4), 22 (150. 1), 21 (147. 2; 141. 1 ff.), 23 (153. 4).

[3] Lit. "the succession from the apostles." *Ibid.* 1 (11. 3), quoted v. 11. 5.

[4] Clem. *Strom.* iii. 14 (95. 2); iv. 1 (3. 3); vi. 18 (168. 4).

παρὰ τῶν ἀρχαίων πρεσβυτέρων ἀκηκοὼς παραδόσεις γραφῇ τοῖς μετὰ ταῦτα παραδοῦναι, μέμνηται δ' ἐν αὐτῷ Μελίτωνος καὶ Εἰρηναίου καί τινων ἑτέρων, ὧν καὶ τὰς διηγήσεις τέθειται.

XIV. Ἐν δὲ ταῖς Ὑποτυπώσεσιν ξυνελόντα εἰπεῖν πάσης τῆς ἐνδιαθήκου γραφῆς ἐπιτετμημένας πεποίηται διηγήσεις, μηδὲ τὰς ἀντιλεγομένας παρελθών, τὴν Ἰούδα λέγω καὶ τὰς λοιπὰς καθολικὰς ἐπιστολὰς τήν τε Βαρναβᾶ, καὶ τὴν Πέτρου λεγομένην Ἀποκάλυψιν. καὶ τὴν πρὸς Ἑβραίους δὲ ἐπιστολὴν Παύλου μὲν εἶναί φησιν, γεγράφθαι δὲ Ἑβραίοις Ἑβραϊκῇ φωνῇ, Λουκᾶν δὲ φιλοτίμως αὐτὴν μεθερμηνεύσαντα ἐκδοῦναι τοῖς Ἕλλησιν, ὅθεν τὸν αὐτὸν χρῶτα εὑρίσκεσθαι κατὰ τὴν ἑρμηνείαν ταύτης τε τῆς ἐπιστολῆς καὶ τῶν Πράξεων· μὴ προγεγράφθαι δὲ τὸ "Παῦλος
Gal. 1, 1, etc. ἀπόστολος" εἰκότως· "Ἑβραίοις γάρ," φησίν, "ἐπιστέλλων πρόληψιν εἰληφόσιν κατ' αὐτοῦ καὶ ὑποπτεύουσιν αὐτόν, συνετῶς πάνυ οὐκ ἐν ἀρχῇ ἀπέτρεψεν αὐτούς, τὸ ὄνομα θείς."

Εἶτα ὑποβὰς ἐπιλέγει, "ἤδη δέ, ὡς ὁ μακάριος
Heb. 3, 1 ἔλεγεν πρεσβύτερος, ἐπεὶ ὁ κύριος, ἀπόστολος ὢν τοῦ παντοκράτορος, ἀπεστάλη πρὸς Ἑβραίους, διὰ μετριότητα ὁ Παῦλος, ὡς ἂν εἰς τὰ ἔθνη ἀπ-
Acts 22, 21 εσταλμένος, οὐκ ἐγγράφει ἑαυτὸν Ἑβραίων ἀπόστολον διά τε τὴν πρὸς τὸν κύριον τιμὴν διά τε τὸ ἐκ περιουσίας καὶ τοῖς Ἑβραίοις ἐπιστέλλειν,
1 Tim. 2, 7; 2 Tim. 1, 11; Rom. 11, 13 ἐθνῶν κήρυκα ὄντα καὶ ἀπόστολον."

Αὖθις δ' ἐν τοῖς αὐτοῖς ὁ Κλήμης βιβλίοις περὶ τῆς τάξεως τῶν εὐαγγελίων παράδοσιν τῶν ἀνέκαθεν πρεσβυτέρων τέθειται, τοῦτον ἔχουσαν τὸν τρόπον. προγεγράφθαι ἔλεγεν τῶν εὐαγγελίων

writing traditions that he had heard from the elders of olden time, for the benefit of those that should come after; and he mentions in it Melito and Irenaeus and some others, whose accounts also of the matter he has set down.

XIV. And in the *Hypotyposeis*, to speak briefly, he has given concise explanations of all the Canonical Scriptures, not passing over even the disputed writings, I mean the Epistle of Jude and the remaining Catholic Epistles, and the Epistle of Barnabas, and the Apocalypse known as Peter's. And as for the Epistle to the Hebrews, he says indeed that it is Paul's, but that it was written for Hebrews in the Hebrew tongue, and that Luke, having carefully translated it, published it for the Greeks; hence, as a result of this translation, the same complexion of style is found in this Epistle and in the Acts: but that the [words] "Paul an apostle" were naturally not prefixed. For, says he, "in writing to Hebrews who had conceived a prejudice against him and were suspicious of him, he very wisely did not repel them at the beginning by putting his name."

Then lower down he adds: "But now, as the blessed elder used to say, since the Lord, being the apostle of the Almighty, was sent to the Hebrews, Paul, through modesty, since he had been sent to the Gentiles, does not inscribe himself as an apostle of the Hebrews, both to give due deference to the Lord and because he wrote to the Hebrews also out of his abundance, being a preacher and apostle of the Gentiles."

And again in the same books Clement has inserted a tradition of the primitive elders with regard to the order of the Gospels, as follows. He said that those

τὰ περιέχοντα τὰς γενεαλογίας, τὸ δὲ κατὰ Μάρκον 6
ταύτην ἐσχηκέναι τὴν οἰκονομίαν. τοῦ Πέτρου
δημοσίᾳ ἐν Ῥώμῃ κηρύξαντος τὸν λόγον καὶ πνεύ-
ματι τὸ εὐαγγέλιον ἐξειπόντος, τοὺς παρόντας,
πολλοὺς ὄντας, παρακαλέσαι τὸν Μάρκον, ὡς ἂν
ἀκολουθήσαντα αὐτῷ πόρρωθεν καὶ μεμνημένον
τῶν λεχθέντων, ἀναγράψαι τὰ εἰρημένα· ποιήσαντα
δέ, τὸ εὐαγγέλιον μεταδοῦναι τοῖς δεομένοις αὐτοῦ·
ὅπερ ἐπιγνόντα τὸν Πέτρον προτρεπτικῶς μήτε 7
κωλῦσαι μήτε προτρέψασθαι. τὸν μέντοι Ἰωάννην
ἔσχατον, συνιδόντα ὅτι τὰ σωματικὰ ἐν τοῖς εὐαγ-
γελίοις δεδήλωται, προτραπέντα ὑπὸ τῶν γνωρίμων,
πνεύματι θεοφορηθέντα πνευματικὸν ποιῆσαι εὐ-
αγγέλιον. τοσαῦτα ὁ Κλήμης.

Πάλιν δ' ὁ δηλωθεὶς Ἀλέξανδρος τοῦ Κλή- 8
μεντος, ἅμα δὲ καὶ τοῦ Πανταίνου ἔν τινι πρὸς
Ὠριγένην ἐπιστολῇ μνημονεύει, ὡς δὴ γνωρίμων
αὐτῷ γενομένων τῶν ἀνδρῶν, γράφει δὲ οὕτως·
" τοῦτο γὰρ καὶ θέλημα θεοῦ, ὡς οἶδας, γέγονεν ἵνα
ἡ ἀπὸ προγόνων ἡμῖν φιλία μένῃ ἄσυλος, μᾶλλον δὲ
θερμοτέρα ᾖ καὶ βεβαιοτέρα. πατέρας γὰρ ἴσμεν 9
τοὺς μακαρίους ἐκείνους τοὺς προοδεύσαντας, πρὸς
οὓς μετ' ὀλίγον ἐσόμεθα, Πάνταινον, τὸν μακάριον
ἀληθῶς καὶ κύριον, καὶ τὸν ἱερὸν Κλήμεντα, κύριόν
μου γενόμενον καὶ ὠφελήσαντά με, καὶ εἴ τις
ἕτερος τοιοῦτος· δι' ὧν σὲ ἐγνώρισα, τὸν κατὰ
πάντα ἄριστον καὶ κύριόν μου καὶ ἀδελφόν." καὶ
ταῦτα μὲν τοιαῦτα.

Ὁ γέ τοι Ἀδαμάντιος (καὶ τοῦτο γὰρ ἦν τῷ
Ὠριγένει ὄνομα), Ζεφυρίνου κατὰ τούσδε τοὺς

[1] Lit. " had this dispensation."

Gospels were first written which include the genealogies, but that the Gospel according to Mark came into being in this manner[1]: When Peter had publicly preached the word at Rome, and by the Spirit had proclaimed the Gospel, that those present, who were many, exhorted Mark, as one who had followed him for a long time and remembered what had been spoken, to make a record of what was said; and that he did this, and distributed the Gospel among those that asked him. And that when the matter came to Peter's knowledge he neither strongly forbade it nor urged it forward. But that John, last of all, conscious that the outward[2] facts had been set forth in the Gospels, was urged on by his disciples, and, divinely moved by the Spirit, composed a spiritual Gospel. This is Clement's account.

And again Alexander, of whom we spoke before,[3] mentions Clement, and at the same time also Pantaenus, in a certain letter to Origen, as men who had been known to him. He writes as follows: "For this also has proved to be the will of God, as thou knowest, that the friendship that comes to us from our forefathers should remain unshaken, nay rather grow warmer and more stedfast. For we know as fathers those blessed ones who went before us, with whom we shall be ere long: Pantaenus, truly blessed and my master, and the holy Clement, who was my master and profited me, and all others like them. Through these I came to know thee, who art the best in all things, and my master and brother." Thus do these matters stand.

Now Adamantius (for this also was Origen's name), when Zephyrinus was at that time ruling the church

[2] Lit. "bodily." [3] c. 11, etc.

χρόνους τῆς Ῥωμαίων ἐκκλησίας ἡγουμένου, ἐπιδημῆσαι τῇ Ῥώμῃ καὶ αὐτός που γράφει, λέγων " εὐξάμενος τὴν ἀρχαιοτάτην Ῥωμαίων ἐκκλησίαν ἰδεῖν "· ἔνθα οὐ πολὺ διατρίψας, ἐπάνεισιν εἰς τὴν 1
Ἀλεξάνδρειαν, καὶ δὴ τὰ συνήθη τῆς κατηχήσεως ἐνταῦθα μετὰ πάσης ἐπλήρου σπουδῆς, Δημητρίου τῶν τῇδε ἐπισκόπου ἔτι τότε παρορμῶντος αὐτὸν καὶ μόνον οὐχὶ ἀντιβολοῦντος ἀόκνως τὴν εἰς τοὺς ἀδελφοὺς ὠφέλειαν ποιεῖσθαι. XV. ὃ δ' ὡς ἑαυτὸν 1
ἑώρα μὴ ἐπαρκοῦντα τῇ τῶν θείων βαθυτέρᾳ σχολῇ τῇ τε ἐξετάσει καὶ ἑρμηνείᾳ τῶν ἱερῶν γραμμάτων καὶ προσέτι τῇ τῶν προσιόντων κατηχήσει μηδ' ἀναπνεῦσαι συγχωρούντων αὐτῷ, ἑτέρων ἐφ' ἑτέροις ἐξ ἕω καὶ μέχρις ἑσπέρας ἐπὶ τὸ παρ' αὐτῷ διδασκαλεῖον φοιτώντων, διανείμας τὰ πλήθη, τὸν Ἡρακλᾶν τῶν γνωρίμων προκρίνας, ἔν τε τοῖς θείοις σπουδαῖον καὶ ἄλλως ὄντα λογιώτατον ἄνδρα καὶ φιλοσοφίας οὐκ ἄμοιρον, κοινωνὸν καθίστη τῆς κατηχήσεως, τῷ μὲν τὴν πρώτην τῶν ἄρτι στοιχειουμένων εἰσαγωγὴν ἐπιτρέψας, αὐτῷ δὲ τὴν τῶν ἐν ἕξει φυλάξας ἀκρόασιν.

XVI. Τοσαύτη δὲ εἰσήγετο τῷ Ὠριγένει τῶν 1
θείων λόγων ἀπηκριβωμένη ἐξέτασις, ὡς καὶ τὴν Ἑβραΐδα γλῶτταν ἐκμαθεῖν τάς τε παρὰ τοῖς Ἰουδαίοις φερομένας πρωτοτύπους αὐτοῖς Ἑβραίων στοιχείοις γραφὰς κτῆμα ἴδιον ποιήσασθαι ἀνιχνεῦσαί τε τὰς τῶν ἑτέρων παρὰ τοὺς ἑβδομήκοντα τὰς ἱερὰς γραφὰς ἑρμηνευκότων ἐκδόσεις καί τινας ἑτέρας παρὰ τὰς κατημαξευμένας ἑρμηνείας ἐναλλαττούσας, τήν τε Ἀκύλου καὶ Συμμάχου καὶ Θεοδοτίωνος, ἐφευρεῖν, ἃς οὐκ οἶδ' ὅθεν ἔκ τινων

of the Romans, himself states in writing somewhere that he stayed at Rome. His words are : " Desiring to see the most ancient church of the Romans."

After spending a short time there, he returned to Alexandria, and indeed continued to fulfil in that city his customary work of instruction with all zeal, Demetrius, the bishop of the people there, still exhorting and wellnigh entreating him to ply diligently his task of usefulness for the brethren.

XV. But when he saw that he was becoming unable for the deeper study of divine things, namely, the examination and translation of the sacred writings, and in addition for the instruction of those who were coming to him and did not give him time to breathe (for one batch of pupils after another kept frequenting from morn to night his lecture-room), he made a division of the numbers. Selecting Heraclas from among his pupils, a man who was zealous of divine things, and, as well, a very learned person and no tyro in philosophy, he gave him a share in the task of instruction, assigning to him the preliminary studies of those who were just learning their elements, and reserving for himself the teaching of the experienced pupils.

XVI. And so accurate was the examination that Origen brought to bear upon the divine books, that he even made a thorough study of the Hebrew tongue, and got into his own possession the original writings in the actual Hebrew characters, which were extant among the Jews. Thus, too, he traced the editions of the other translators of the sacred writings besides the Seventy ; and besides the beaten track of translations, that of Aquila and Symmachus and Theodotion, he discovered certain others, which were used

μυχῶν τὸν πάλαι λανθανούσας χρόνον ἀνιχνεύσας προήγαγεν εἰς φῶς· ἐφ' ὧν διὰ τὴν ἀδηλότητα, 2
τίνος ἄρ' εἶεν οὐκ εἰδώς, αὐτὸ τοῦτο μόνον ἐπεσημήνατο ὡς ἄρα τὴν μὲν εὕροι ἐν τῇ πρὸς Ἀκτίοις Νικοπόλει, τὴν δὲ ἐν ἑτέρῳ τοιῷδε τόπῳ· 3
ἔν γε μὴν τοῖς Ἑξαπλοῖς τῶν Ψαλμῶν μετὰ τὰς ἐπισήμους τέσσαρας ἐκδόσεις οὐ μόνον πέμπτην, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἕκτην καὶ ἑβδόμην παραθεὶς ἑρμηνείαν, ἐπὶ μιᾶς αὖθις σεσημείωται ὡς ἐν Ἰεριχοῖ εὑρημένης ἐν πίθῳ κατὰ τοὺς χρόνους Ἀντωνίνου τοῦ υἱοῦ Σευήρου. ταύτας δὲ ἁπάσας ἐπὶ ταὐτὸν 4
συναγαγὼν διελών τε πρὸς κῶλον καὶ ἀντιπαραθεὶς ἀλλήλαις μετὰ καὶ αὐτῆς τῆς Ἑβραίων σημειώσεως τὰ τῶν λεγομένων Ἑξαπλῶν ἡμῖν ἀντίγραφα καταλέλοιπεν, ἰδίως τὴν Ἀκύλου καὶ Συμμάχου καὶ Θεοδοτίωνος ἔκδοσιν ἅμα τῇ τῶν ἑβδομήκοντα ἐν τοῖς Τετρασσοῖς ἐπισκευάσας.

XVII. Τῶν γε μὴν ἑρμηνευτῶν αὐτῶν δὴ 1
τούτων ἱστέον Ἐβιωναῖον τὸν Σύμμαχον γεγονέναι· αἵρεσις δέ ἐστιν ἡ τῶν Ἐβιωναίων οὕτω καλουμένη τῶν τὸν Χριστὸν ἐξ Ἰωσὴφ καὶ Μαρίας γεγονέναι φασκόντων ψιλόν τε ἄνθρωπον ὑπειληφότων αὐτὸν καὶ τὸν νόμον χρῆναι Ἰουδαϊκώτερον φυλάττειν ἀπισχυριζομένων, ὥς που καὶ ἐκ τῆς πρόσθεν ἱστορίας ἔγνωμεν. καὶ ὑπομνήματα δὲ τοῦ Συμμάχου εἰς ἔτι νῦν φέρεται, ἐν οἷς δοκεῖ πρὸς τὸ κατὰ Ματθαῖον ἀποτεινόμενος εὐαγγέλιον τὴν δεδηλωμένην αἵρεσιν κρατύνειν. ταῦτα δὲ ὁ Ὠριγένης μετὰ καὶ ἄλλων εἰς τὰς γραφὰς

[1] The Hexapla is the great critical work of Origen, so called because it was arranged in *six* main columns, in the following order from left to right: (1) Hebrew, (2) transliteration of

in turn, which, after lying hidden for a long time, he traced and brought to light, I know not from what recesses. With regard to these, on account of their obscurity (not knowing whose in the world they were) he merely indicated this : that the one he found at Nicopolis, near Actium, and the other in such another place. At any rate, in the Hexapla[1] of the Psalms, after the four well-known editions, he placed beside them not only a fifth but also a sixth and a seventh translation ; and in the case of one of these he has indicated again that it was found at Jericho in a jar in the time of Antoninus the son of Severus. All these he brought together, dividing them into clauses and placing them one over against the other, together with the actual Hebrew text ; and so he has left us the copies of the Hexapla, as it is called. He made a further separate arrangement of the edition of Aquila and Symmachus and Theodotion together with that of the Seventy, in the Tetrapla.[2]

XVII. Now as regards these same translators it is to be noted that Symmachus was an Ebionite. Those who belong to the heresy of the Ebionites, as it is called, affirm that the Christ was born of Joseph and Mary, and suppose Him to be a mere man, and strongly maintain that the law ought to be kept in a more strictly Jewish fashion, as also we saw somewhere from the foregoing history.[3] And memoirs too of Symmachus are still extant, in which, by his opposition to the Gospel according to Matthew, he seems to hold the above-mentioned heresy. These, along with other interpretations of the Scriptures by

the Hebrew into Greek letters, (3) Aquila, (4) Symmachus, (5) Septuagint, (6) Theodotion.

[2] *i.e.* the Hexapla with columns (1) and (2) omitted.

[3] iii. 27. 2.

ἑρμηνειῶν τοῦ Συμμάχου σημαίνει παρὰ Ἰουλιανῆς τινος εἰληφέναι, ἣν καί φησιν παρ' αὐτοῦ Συμμάχου τὰς βίβλους διαδέξασθαι.

XVIII. Ἐν τούτῳ καὶ Ἀμβρόσιος τὰ τῆς 1
Οὐαλεντίνου φρονῶν αἱρέσεως, πρὸς τῆς ὑπὸ Ὠριγένους πρεσβευομένης ἀληθείας ἐλεγχθεὶς καὶ ὡς ἂν ὑπὸ φωτὸς καταυγασθεὶς τὴν διάνοιαν, τῷ τῆς ἐκκλησιαστικῆς ὀρθοδοξίας προστίθεται λόγῳ. καὶ ἄλλοι δὲ πλείους τῶν ἀπὸ παιδείας, τῆς περὶ 2
τὸν Ὠριγένην φήμης πανταχόσε βοωμένης, ᾔεσαν ὡς αὐτόν, πεῖραν τῆς ἐν τοῖς ἱεροῖς λόγοις ἱκανότητος τἀνδρὸς ληψόμενοι· μυρίοι δὲ τῶν αἱρετικῶν φιλοσόφων τε τῶν μάλιστα ἐπιφανῶν οὐκ ὀλίγοι διὰ σπουδῆς αὐτῷ προσεῖχον, μόνον οὐχὶ πρὸς τοῖς θείοις καὶ τὰ τῆς ἔξωθεν φιλοσοφίας πρὸς αὐτοῦ παιδευόμενοι. εἰσῆγέν τε γὰρ ὅσους εὐφυῶς 3
ἔχοντας ἑώρα, καὶ ἐπὶ τὰ φιλόσοφα μαθήματα, γεωμετρίαν καὶ ἀριθμητικὴν καὶ τἄλλα προπαιδεύματα παραδιδοὺς εἴς τε τὰς αἱρέσεις τὰς παρὰ τοῖς φιλοσόφοις προάγων καὶ τὰ παρὰ τούτοις συγγράμματα διηγούμενος ὑπομνηματιζόμενός τε καὶ θεωρῶν εἰς ἕκαστα, ὥστε μέγαν καὶ παρ' αὐτοῖς Ἕλλησιν φιλόσοφον τὸν ἄνδρα κηρύττεσθαι· πολλοὺς δὲ καὶ τῶν ἰδιωτικωτέρων ἐνῆγεν 4
ἐπὶ τὰ ἐγκύκλια γράμματα, οὐ μικρὰν αὐτοῖς ἔσεσθαι φάσκων ἐξ ἐκείνων ἐπιτηδειότητα εἰς τὴν τῶν θείων γραφῶν θεωρίαν [τε] καὶ παρασκευήν, ὅθεν μάλιστα καὶ ἑαυτῷ ἀναγκαίαν ἡγήσατο τὴν περὶ τὰ κοσμικὰ καὶ φιλόσοφα μαθήματα ἄσκησιν.

XIX. Μάρτυρες δὲ καὶ τῆς περὶ ταῦτα αὐτοῦ 1
κατορθώσεως αὐτῶν Ἑλλήνων οἱ κατ' αὐτὸν ἡκμακότες φιλόσοφοι, ὧν ἐν συγγράμμασιν πολλὴν

Symmachus, Origen indicates that he had received from a certain Juliana, who, he says, inherited in her turn the books from Symmachus himself.

XVIII. At this time also Ambrose, who held the views of the heresy of Valentinus,[1] was refuted by the truth as presented by Origen, and, as if his mind were illuminated by light, gave his adhesion to the true doctrine as taught by the Church. And many other cultured persons, since Origen's fame was noised abroad everywhere, came to him to make trial of the man's sufficiency in the sacred books. And numbers of the heretics, and not a few of the most distinguished philosophers, gave earnest heed to him, and, one might almost say, were instructed by him in secular philosophy as well as in divine things. For he used to introduce also to the study of philosophy as many as he saw were naturally gifted, imparting geometry and arithmetic and the other preliminary subjects, and then leading them on to the systems which are found among philosophers, giving a detailed account of their treatises, commenting upon and examining into each, so that the man was proclaimed as a great philosopher even among the Greeks themselves. And many persons also of a more ignorant character he urged to take up the ordinary elementary studies, declaring that they would derive no small advantage from these when they came to examine and study the divine Scriptures. For this reason he deemed especially necessary even for himself a training in secular and philosophic studies.

XIX. Now, as witnesses also to his achievements in this direction, we have the Greek philosophers themselves who flourished in his day, in whose treatises

[1] A Gnostic of the 2nd century: see iv. 11. 1.

μνήμην εὕρομεν τοῦ ἀνδρός, τοτὲ μὲν αὐτῷ προσφωνούντων τοὺς ἑαυτῶν λόγους, τοτὲ δὲ ὡς διδασκάλῳ εἰς ἐπίκρισιν τοὺς ἰδίους ἀναφερόντων πόνους. τί δεῖ ταῦτα λέγειν, ὅτε καὶ ὁ καθ' ἡμᾶς 2
ἐν Σικελίᾳ καταστὰς Πορφύριος συγγράμματα καθ' ἡμῶν ἐνστησάμενος καὶ δι' αὐτῶν τὰς θείας γραφὰς διαβάλλειν πεπειραμένος τῶν τε εἰς αὐτὰς ἐξηγησαμένων μνημονεύσας, μηδὲν μηδαμῶς φαῦλον ἔγκλημα τοῖς δόγμασιν ἐπικαλεῖν δυνηθείς, ἀπορίᾳ λόγων ἐπὶ τὸ λοιδορεῖν τρέπεται καὶ τοὺς ἐξηγητὰς ἐνδιαβάλλειν, ὧν μάλιστα τὸν Ὠριγένην· ὃν κατὰ τὴν νέαν ἡλικίαν ἐγνωκέναι φήσας, διαβάλλειν μὲν πειρᾶται, συνιστῶν δὲ ἄρα τὸν ἄνδρα ἐλάνθανεν, τὰ μὲν ἐπαληθεύων, ἐν οἷς οὐδ' ἑτέρως αὐτῷ λέγειν ἦν δυνατόν, τὰ δὲ καὶ ψευδόμενος, ἐν οἷς λήσεσθαι ἐνόμιζεν, καὶ τοτὲ μὲν ὡς Χριστιανοῦ κατηγορῶν, τοτὲ δὲ τὴν περὶ τὰ φιλόσοφα μαθήματα ἐπίδοσιν αὐτοῦ διαγράφων. 3

Ἄκουε δ' οὖν ἃ φησιν κατὰ λέξιν· "τῆς δὴ 4
μοχθηρίας τῶν Ἰουδαϊκῶν γραφῶν οὐκ ἀπόστασιν, λύσιν δέ τινες εὑρεῖν προθυμηθέντες, ἐπ' ἐξηγήσεις ἐτράποντο ἀσυγκλώστους καὶ ἀναρμόστους τοῖς γεγραμμένοις, οὐκ ἀπολογίαν μᾶλλον ὑπὲρ τῶν ὀθνείων, παραδοχὴν δὲ καὶ ἔπαινον τοῖς οἰκείοις φερούσας. αἰνίγματα γὰρ τὰ φανερῶς παρὰ Μωυσεῖ λεγόμενα εἶναι κομπάσαντες καὶ ἐπιθειάσαντες ὡς θεσπίσματα πλήρη κρυφίων μυστηρίων διά τε τοῦ τύφου τὸ κριτικὸν τῆς ψυχῆς καταγοητεύσαντες, ἐπάγουσιν ἐξηγήσεις."

Εἶτα μεθ' ἕτερά φησιν· "ὁ δὲ τρόπος τῆς 5

[1] A philosopher of the Neoplatonist school, born in A.D. 233,

we find frequent mention of the man. Sometimes they would dedicate their books to him, sometimes submit their own labours to him for judgement, as to a master. But why need one say this, when even Porphyry,[1] who settled in our day in Sicily, issued treatises against us, attempting in them to slander the sacred Scriptures, and mentioned those who had given their interpretations of them? And since he could not by any means bring any base charge against our opinions, for lack of argument he turned to deride and slander their interpreters also, and among these Origen especially. He says that in his early manhood he had known him; and he tries to slander the man, but unknown to himself really commends him, telling the truth in some cases, where he could not speak otherwise, in others telling lies, where he thought he could escape detection; and at one time accusing him as a Christian, at another describing his devotion to the study of philosophy.

But hear the very words that he uses: "Some, in their eagerness to find an explanation of the wickedness of the Jewish writings rather than give them up, had recourse to interpretations that are incompatible and do not harmonize with what has been written, offering not so much a defence of what was outlandish as commendation and praise of their own work. For they boast that the things said plainly by Moses are riddles, treating them as divine oracles full of hidden mysteries, and bewitching the mental judgement by their own pretentious obscurity; and so they put forward their interpretations."

Then, after other remarks, he says: "But this

[1] who composed a lengthy treatise against Christianity, which was answered by Eusebius himself.

ἀτοπίας ἐξ ἀνδρὸς ᾧ καγὼ κομιδῇ νέος ὢν ἔτι
ἐντετύχηκα, σφόδρα εὐδοκιμήσαντος καὶ ἔτι δι'
ὧν καταλέλοιπεν συγγραμμάτων εὐδοκιμοῦντος,
παρειλήφθω, Ὠριγένους, οὗ κλέος παρὰ τοῖς
διδασκάλοις τούτων τῶν λόγων μέγα διαδέδοται.
ἀκροατὴς γὰρ οὗτος Ἀμμωνίου τοῦ πλείστην ἐν 6
τοῖς καθ' ἡμᾶς χρόνοις ἐπίδοσιν ἐν φιλοσοφίᾳ
ἐσχηκότος γεγονώς, εἰς μὲν τὴν τῶν λόγων
ἐμπειρίαν πολλὴν παρὰ τοῦ διδασκάλου τὴν
ὠφέλειαν ἐκτήσατο, εἰς δὲ τὴν ὀρθὴν τοῦ βίου
προαίρεσιν τὴν ἐναντίαν ἐκείνῳ πορείαν ἐποιή-
σατο. Ἀμμώνιος μὲν γὰρ Χριστιανὸς ἐν Χρι- 7
στιανοῖς ἀνατραφεὶς τοῖς γονεῦσιν, ὅτε τοῦ φρονεῖν
καὶ τῆς φιλοσοφίας ἥψατο, εὐθὺς πρὸς τὴν κατὰ
νόμους πολιτείαν μετεβάλετο, Ὠριγένης δὲ Ἕλλην·
ἐν Ἕλλησιν παιδευθεὶς λόγοις, πρὸς τὸ βάρβαρον
ἐξώκειλεν τόλμημα· ᾧ δὴ φέρων αὐτόν τε καὶ τὴν
ἐν τοῖς λόγοις ἕξιν ἐκαπήλευσεν, κατὰ μὲν τὸν
βίον Χριστιανῶς ζῶν καὶ παρανόμως, κατὰ δὲ τὰς
περὶ τῶν πραγμάτων καὶ τοῦ θείου δόξας ἑλληνίζων
τε καὶ τὰ Ἑλλήνων τοῖς ὀθνείοις ὑποβαλλόμενος
μύθοις. συνῆν τε γὰρ ἀεὶ τῷ Πλάτωνι, τοῖς τε 8
Νουμηνίου καὶ Κρονίου Ἀπολλοφάνους τε καὶ
Λογγίνου καὶ Μοδεράτου Νικομάχου τε καὶ τῶν
ἐν τοῖς Πυθαγορείοις ἐλλογίμων ἀνδρῶν ὡμίλει
συγγράμμασιν, ἐχρῆτο δὲ καὶ Χαιρήμονος τοῦ
Στωϊκοῦ Κορνούτου τε ταῖς βίβλοις, παρ' ὧν τὸν
μεταληπτικὸν τῶν παρ' Ἕλλησιν μυστηρίων γνοὺς
τρόπον ταῖς Ἰουδαϊκαῖς προσῆψεν γραφαῖς."

Ταῦτα τῷ Πορφυρίῳ κατὰ τὸ τρίτον σύγγραμμα 9
τῶν γραφέντων αὐτῷ κατὰ Χριστιανῶν εἴρηται,
ἐπαληθεύσαντι μὲν περὶ τῆς τἀνδρὸς ἀσκήσεως

kind of absurdity must be traced to a man whom I met when I was still quite young, who had a great reputation, and still holds it, because of the writings he has left behind him, I mean Origen, whose fame has been widespread among the teachers of this kind of learning. For this man was a hearer of Ammonius,[1] who had the greatest proficiency in philosophy in our day; and so far as a grasp of knowledge was concerned he owed much to his master, but as regards the right choice in life he took the opposite road to him. For Ammonius was a Christian, brought up in Christian doctrine by his parents, yet, when he began to think and study philosophy, he immediately changed his way of life conformably to the laws; but Origen, a Greek educated in Greek learning, drove headlong towards barbarian recklessness; and making straight for this he hawked himself and his literary skill about; and while his manner of life was Christian and contrary to the law, in his opinions about material things and the Deity he played the Greek, and introduced Greek ideas into foreign fables. For he was always consorting with Plato, and was conversant with the writings of Numenius and Cronius, Apollophanes and Longinus and Moderatus, Nicomachus and the distinguished men among the Pythagoreans; and he used also the books of Chaeremon the Stoic and Cornutus, from whom he learnt the figurative interpretation, as employed in the Greek mysteries, and applied it to the Jewish writings."

These statements were made by Porphyry in the third treatise of his writings against Christians. And while he tells the truth about the man's training and

[1] Ammonius Saccas, an Alexandrian philosopher, the teacher of Longinus and Plotinus, who is said to have died in A.D. 243.

καὶ πολυμαθείας, ψευσαμένῳ δὲ σαφῶς (τί γὰρ οὐκ ἔμελλεν ὁ κατὰ Χριστιανῶν;)· ἐν οἷς αὐτὸν μέν φησιν ἐξ Ἑλλήνων μετατεθεῖσθαι, τὸν δ' Ἀμμώνιον ἐκ βίου τοῦ κατὰ θεοσέβειαν ἐπὶ τὸν ἐθνικὸν τρόπον ἐκπεσεῖν. τῷ τε γὰρ Ὠριγένει τὰ τῆς κατὰ Χριστὸν διδασκαλίας ἐκ προγόνων ἐσῴζετο, ὡς καὶ τὰ τῆς πρόσθεν ἱστορίας ἐδήλου, τῷ τε Ἀμμωνίῳ τὰ τῆς ἐνθέου φιλοσοφίας ἀκέραια καὶ ἀδιάπτωτα καὶ μέχρις ἐσχάτης τοῦ βίου διέμενεν τελευτῆς, ὥς που καὶ οἱ τἀνδρὸς εἰς ἔτι νῦν μαρτυροῦσι πόνοι, δι' ὧν κατέλιπε συγγραμμάτων παρὰ τοῖς πλείστοις εὐδοκιμοῦντος, ὥσπερ οὖν καὶ ὁ ἐπιγεγραμμένος Περὶ τῆς Μωυσέως καὶ Ἰησοῦ συμφωνίας καὶ ὅσοι ἄλλοι παρὰ τοῖς φιλοκάλοις εὑρηνται.

Ταῦτα μὲν οὖν εἰς παράστασιν ἐκκείσθω τῆς τε τοῦ ψευδηγόρου συκοφαντίας καὶ τῆς Ὠριγένους καὶ περὶ τὰ Ἑλλήνων μαθήματα πολυπειρίας, περὶ ἧς πρός τινας μεμψαμένους αὐτῷ διὰ τὴν περὶ ἐκεῖνα σπουδὴν ἀπολογούμενος, ἐν ἐπιστολῇ τινι ταῦτα γράφει· " ἐπεὶ δὲ ἀνακειμένῳ μοι τῷ λόγῳ, τῆς φήμης διατρεχούσης περὶ τῆς ἕξεως ἡμῶν, προσῄεσαν ὁτὲ μὲν αἱρετικοί, ὁτὲ δὲ οἱ ἀπὸ τῶν Ἑλληνικῶν μαθημάτων καὶ μάλιστα τῶν ἐν φιλοσοφίᾳ, ἔδοξεν ἐξετάσαι τά τε τῶν αἱρετικῶν δόγματα καὶ τὰ ὑπὸ τῶν φιλοσόφων περὶ ἀληθείας λέγειν ἐπαγγελλόμενα. τοῦτο δὲ πεποιήκαμεν μιμησάμενοί τε τὸν πρὸ ἡμῶν πολλοὺς ὠφελήσαντα Πάνταινον, οὐκ ὀλίγην ἐν ἐκείνοις ἐσχηκότα παρασκευήν, καὶ τὸν νῦν ἐν τῷ πρεσβυτερίῳ καθεζόμενον Ἀλεξανδρέων Ἡρακλᾶν, ὄντινα εὗρον παρὰ

erudition, he clearly lies (for what is the opponent of Christians not prepared to do?) where he says that Origen came over from the Greeks, and that Ammonius lapsed from a godly life into paganism. For Origen kept safely the Christian teaching which he had from his parents, as the history above made clear[1]; and Ammonius maintained his inspired philosophy pure and unshaken right up to the very end of his life.[2] To this fact the man's works witness to the present day, and the widespread fame that he owes to the writings he left behind him, as, for example, that entitled On the Harmony of Moses and Jesus, and all the other works that are to be found in the possession of lovers of literature.

Let these things be stated to prove at once the false one's calumny and Origen's great knowledge of Greek learning. With regard to such learning also he writes as follows in a certain epistle, defending himself against those who found fault with him for his zeal in that direction: "But as I was devoted to the word, and the fame of our proficiency was spreading abroad, there approached me sometimes heretics, sometimes those conversant with Greek learning, and especially philosophy, and I thought it right to examine both the opinions of the heretics, and also the claim that the philosophers make to speak concerning truth. And in doing this we followed the example of Pantaenus, who, before us, was of assistance to many, and had acquired no small attainments in these matters, and also Heraclas, who now has a seat in the presbytery of the Alexandrians, whom I

[1] 2. 7 ff.

[2] Eusebius is mistaken here. Ammonius Saccas was certainly not a Christian in later life.

τῷ διδασκάλῳ τῶν φιλοσόφων μαθημάτων, ἤδη πέντε ἔτεσιν αὐτῷ προσκαρτερήσαντα πρὶν ἢ ἐμὲ ἄρξασθαι ἀκούειν ἐκείνων τῶν λόγων· δι' ὃν καὶ πρότερον κοινῇ ἐσθῆτι χρώμενος ἀποδυσάμενος καὶ φιλόσοφον ἀναλαβὼν σχῆμα μέχρι τοῦ δεῦρο τηρεῖ βιβλία τε Ἑλλήνων κατὰ δύναμιν οὐ παύεται φιλολογῶν."

Καὶ ταῦτα μὲν αὐτῷ περὶ τῆς Ἑλληνικῆς ἀσκήσεως ἀπολογουμένῳ εἴρηται· κατὰ τοῦτον δὲ τὸν χρόνον ἐπ' Ἀλεξανδρείας αὐτῷ τὰς διατριβὰς ποιουμένῳ ἐπιστάς τις τῶν στρατιωτικῶν ἀνεδίδου γράμματα Δημητρίῳ τε τῷ τῆς παροικίας ἐπισκόπῳ καὶ τῷ τότε τῆς Αἰγύπτου ἐπάρχῳ παρὰ τοῦ τῆς Ἀραβίας ἡγουμένου, ὡς ἂν μετὰ σπουδῆς ἁπάσης τὸν Ὠριγένην πέμψοιεν κοινωνήσοντα λόγων αὐτῷ. καὶ δὴ ἀφικνεῖται ἐπὶ τὴν Ἀραβίαν· οὐκ εἰς μακρὸν δὲ τὰ τῆς ἀφίξεως εἰς πέρας ἀγαγών, αὖθις ἐπὶ τὴν Ἀλεξάνδρειαν ἐπανῄει. χρόνου δὲ μεταξὺ διαγενομένου, οὐ σμικροῦ κατὰ τὴν πόλιν ἀναρριπισθέντος πολέμου, ὑπεξελθὼν τῆς Ἀλεξανδρείας, ᾔει μὲν ἐπὶ Παλαιστίνης, ἐν Καισαρείᾳ δὲ τὰς διατριβὰς ἐποιεῖτο· ἔνθα καὶ διαλέγεσθαι τάς τε θείας ἑρμηνεύειν γραφὰς ἐπὶ τοῦ κοινοῦ τῆς ἐκκλησίας οἱ τῇδε ἐπίσκοποι, καίτοι τῆς τοῦ πρεσβυτερίου χειροτονίας οὐδέπω τετυχηκότα, αὐτὸν ἠξίουν· ὃ καὶ αὐτὸ γένοιτ' ἂν ἔκδηλον ἀφ' ὧν περὶ τοῦ Δημητρίου γράφοντες Ἀλέξανδρος ὁ Ἱεροσολύμων ἐπίσκοπος καὶ Θεόκτιστος ὁ Καισαρείας ὧδέ πως ἀπολογοῦνται. "προσέθηκεν δὲ τοῖς γράμμασιν ὅτι τοῦτο οὐδέποτε ἠκούσθη οὐδὲ νῦν γεγένηται, τὸ παρόντων ἐπισκόπων λαϊκοὺς ὁμιλεῖν, οὐκ οἶδ' ὅπως προφανῶς

found with the teacher of philosophy, and who had remained five years with him before I began to attend his lectures. And though he formerly wore ordinary dress, on his teacher's account he put it off and assumed a philosophic garb,[1] which he keeps to this day, all the while studying Greek books as much as possible."

This, indeed, is what he wrote in defence of his Greek training. But at this time, while he was living at Alexandria, one of the military appeared on the scene and delivered letters to Demetrius, the bishop of the community, and to the then governor of the province of Egypt, from the ruler of Arabia, to the intent that he should send Origen with all speed for an interview with him. He duly arrived in Arabia, but soon accomplished the object of his journey thither, and returned again to Alexandria. But after the lapse of some time no small warfare[2] broke out again in the city, and leaving Alexandria secretly he went to Palestine and abode at Caesarea. And although he had not yet received ordination to the presbyterate, the bishops there requested him to discourse and expound the divine Scriptures publicly in the church. That this is so is clear from what Alexander, the bishop of Jerusalem, and Theoctistus, the bishop of Caesarea, write with reference to Demetrius. They make their defence somewhat as follows : " And he added to his letter that such a thing had never been heard of, nor taken place hitherto, that laymen should preach in the presence of bishops ; though I do not know how he comes to

[1] The reference is to the distinctive mantle of the Greek philosophers, called in Latin *pallium*. *Cf.* iv. 11. 8.

[2] This was no doubt the massacre of the inhabitants of Alexandria by Caracalla in A.D. 215.

οὐκ ἀληθῆ λέγων. ὅπου γοῦν εὑρίσκονται οἱ ἐπιτήδειοι πρὸς τὸ ὠφελεῖν τοὺς ἀδελφούς, καὶ παρακαλοῦνται τῷ λαῷ προσομιλεῖν ὑπὸ τῶν ἁγίων ἐπισκόπων, ὥσπερ ἐν Λαράνδοις Εὔελπις ὑπὸ Νέωνος καὶ ἐν Ἰκονίῳ Παυλῖνος ὑπὸ Κέλσου καὶ ἐν Συνάδοις Θεόδωρος ὑπὸ Ἀττικοῦ, τῶν μακαρίων ἀδελφῶν. εἰκὸς δὲ καὶ ἐν ἄλλοις τόποις τοῦτο γίνεσθαι, ἡμᾶς δὲ μὴ εἰδέναι."

Τοῦτον καὶ ἔτι νέος ὢν ὁ δηλούμενος ἀνὴρ οὐ πρὸς μόνων τῶν συνήθων, ἀλλὰ καὶ τῶν ἐπὶ ξένης ἐπισκόπων ἐτιμᾶτο τὸν τρόπον. ἀλλὰ γὰρ αὖθις τοῦ Δημητρίου διὰ γραμμάτων αὐτὸν ἀνακαλέσαντος δι' ἀνδρῶν τε διακόνων τῆς ἐκκλησίας ἐπισπεύσαντος ἐπανελθεῖν εἰς τὴν Ἀλεξάνδρειαν, ἀφικόμενος τὰς συνήθεις ἀπετέλει σπουδάς.

XX. Ἤκμαζον δὲ κατὰ τοῦτο πλείους λόγιοι καὶ ἐκκλησιαστικοὶ ἄνδρες, ὧν καὶ ἐπιστολάς, ἃς πρὸς ἀλλήλους διεχάραττον, ἔτι νῦν σωζομένας εὑρεῖν εὔπορον· αἳ καὶ εἰς ἡμᾶς ἐφυλάχθησαν ἐν τῇ κατὰ Αἰλίαν βιβλιοθήκῃ, πρὸς τοῦ τηνικάδε τὴν αὐτόθι διέποντος ἐκκλησίαν Ἀλεξάνδρου ἐπισκευασθείσῃ, ἀφ' ἧς καὶ αὐτοὶ τὰς ὕλας τῆς μετὰ χεῖρας ὑποθέσεως ἐπὶ ταὐτὸν συναγαγεῖν δεδυνήμεθα.

Τούτων Βήρυλλος σὺν ἐπιστολαῖς καὶ συγγραμμάτων διαφόρους φιλοκαλίας καταλέλοιπεν, ἐπίσκοπος δ' οὗτος ἦν τῶν κατὰ Βόστραν Ἀράβων· ὡσαύτως δὲ καὶ Ἱππόλυτος, ἑτέρας που καὶ αὐτὸς προεστὼς ἐκκλησίας.

Ἦλθεν δὲ εἰς ἡμᾶς καὶ Γαΐου, λογιωτάτου

[1] Jerusalem. See iv. 6. 4.

[2] See c. 22, below. Very little is known about this man,

say what is evidently not true. For instance, where there are found persons suited to help the brethren, they also are invited to preach to the people by the holy bishops, as, for example, in Laranda Euelpis by Neon, and in Iconium Paulinus by Celsus, and in Synnada Theodore by Atticus, our blessed brother bishops. And it is likely that this thing happens in other places also without our knowing it."

In this way honour was paid to the man of whom we are speaking, while he was still young, not only by his fellow-countrymen but also by the bishops in a foreign land. But since Demetrius once again recalled him by letter, and by men who were deacons of the Church urged him to come back with speed to Alexandria, he returned and continued to labour with his accustomed zeal.

XX. Now there flourished at that time many learned churchmen, and the letters which they penned to one another are still extant and easily accessible. They have been preserved even to our day in the library at Aelia,[1] equipped by Alexander, then ruling the church there; from which also we have been able ourselves to gather together the material for our present work.

Of these Beryllus has left behind him, as well as letters, varied and beautiful compositions. He was bishop of the Arabians at Bostra. And likewise also Hippolytus,[2] who also presided over another church somewhere.

And there has reached us also a Dialogue of Gaius,

who was the greatest scholar of the Western Church in the first three centuries, although conjecture and controversy regarding him have been rife in modern times. His dates are *c.* A.D. 160 to *c.* 235.

ἀνδρός, διάλογος, ἐπὶ Ῥώμης κατὰ Ζεφυρῖνον πρὸς Πρόκλον τῆς κατὰ Φρύγας αἱρέσεως ὑπερμαχοῦντα κεκινημένος· ἐν ᾧ τῶν δι' ἐναντίας τὴν περὶ τὸ συντάττειν καινὰς γραφὰς προπέτειάν τε καὶ τόλμαν ἐπιστομίζων, τῶν τοῦ ἱεροῦ ἀποστόλου δεκατριῶν μόνων ἐπιστολῶν μνημονεύει, τὴν πρὸς Ἑβραίους μὴ συναριθμήσας ταῖς λοιπαῖς, ἐπεὶ καὶ εἰς δεῦρο παρὰ Ῥωμαίων τισὶν οὐ νομίζεται τοῦ ἀποστόλου τυγχάνειν.

XXI. Ἀλλὰ γὰρ Ἀντωνῖνον ἔτη βασιλεύσαντα ἑπτὰ καὶ μῆνας ἓξ Μακρῖνος διαδέχεται· τούτου δ' ἐπ' ἐνιαυτὸν διαγενομένου, αὖθις ἕτερος Ἀντωνῖνος τὴν Ῥωμαίων ἡγεμονίαν παραλαμβάνει· οὗ κατὰ τὸ πρῶτον ἔτος ὁ Ῥωμαίων ἐπίσκοπος Ζεφυρῖνος μεταλλάττει τὸν βίον, ὅλοις ὀκτωκαίδεκα διακατασχὼν ἔτεσιν τὴν λειτουργίαν· μεθ' ὃν Κάλλιστος τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν ἐγχειρίζεται, ὃς ἐπιβιώσας ἔτεσιν πέντε, Οὐρβανῷ τὴν λειτουργίαν καταλείπει.

Αὐτοκράτωρ Ἀλέξανδρος ἐπὶ τούτοις διαδέχεται τὴν Ῥωμαίων ἀρχήν, ἐπὶ τέτταρσιν μόνοις ἔτεσιν Ἀντωνίνου διαγενομένου. ἐν τούτῳ δὲ καὶ ἐπὶ τῆς Ἀντιοχέων ἐκκλησίας Ἀσκληπιάδην Φιλητὸς διαδέχεται.

Τοῦ δ' αὐτοκράτορος μήτηρ, Μαμαία τοὔνομα, εἰ καί τις ἄλλη θεοσεβεστάτη γυνή, τῆς Ὠριγένους πανταχόσε βοωμένης φήμης, ὡς καὶ μέχρι τῶν αὐτῆς ἐλθεῖν ἀκοῶν, περὶ πολλοῦ ποιεῖται τῆς τοῦ ἀνδρὸς θέας ἀξιωθῆναι καὶ τῆς ὑπὸ πάντων θαυμαζομένης περὶ τὰ θεῖα συνέσεως αὐτοῦ πεῖραν λαβεῖν. ἐπ' Ἀντιοχείας δῆτα διατρίβουσα, μετὰ στρατιωτικῆς δορυφορίας αὐτὸν ἀνακαλεῖται· παρ'

a very learned person (which was set a-going at Rome in the time of Zephyrinus), with Proclus the champion of the heresy of the Phrygians.[1] In which, when curbing the recklessness and audacity of his opponents in composing new Scriptures, he mentions only thirteen epistles of the holy Apostle, not numbering the Epistle to the Hebrews with the rest; seeing that even to this day among the Romans there are some who do not consider it to be the Apostle's.

XXI. But indeed when Antoninus had reigned for seven years and six months he was succeeded by Macrinus[2]; and when he had continued in office for a year, again another Antoninus[3] received the Roman government. In the first year of the latter, Zephyrinus, the bishop of the Romans,[4] departed this life, having held the ministry for eighteen entire years. After him Callistus was entrusted with the episcopate; he survived five years and then left the ministry to Urban.

After this the Emperor Alexander succeeded to the principate of the Romans, Antoninus having continued in office for only four years. At this time also Philetus succeeded Asclepiades in the church of the Antiochenes.

Origen's fame was now universal, so as to reach the ears of the Emperor's mother, Mamaea by name, a religious woman if ever there was one. She set great store on securing a sight of the man, and on testing that understanding of divine things which was the wonder of all. She was then staying at Antioch, and summoned him to her presence with a military escort.

[1] See ii. 25. 6, and note.
[2] A.D. 217.
[3] Generally known as Elagabalus.
[4] A.D. 222.

ἢ χρόνον διατρίψας πλεῖστά τε ὅσα εἰς τὴν τοῦ κυρίου δόξαν καὶ τῆς τοῦ θείου διδασκαλείου ἀρετῆς ἐπιδειξάμενος, ἐπὶ τὰς συνήθεις ἔσπευδεν διατριβάς.

XXII. Τότε δῆτα καὶ Ἱππόλυτος συντάττων μετὰ πλείστων ἄλλων ὑπομνημάτων καὶ τὸ Περὶ τοῦ πάσχα πεποίηται σύγγραμμα, ἐν ᾧ τῶν χρόνων ἀναγραφὴν ἐκθέμενος καί τινα κανόνα ἐκκαιδεκαετηρίδος περὶ τοῦ πάσχα προθείς, ἐπὶ τὸ πρῶτον ἔτος αὐτοκράτορος Ἀλεξάνδρου τοὺς χρόνους περιγράφει· τῶν δὲ λοιπῶν αὐτοῦ συγγραμμάτων τὰ εἰς ἡμᾶς ἐλθόντα ἐστὶν τάδε· Εἰς τὴν Ἑξαήμερον, Εἰς τὰ μετὰ τὴν Ἑξαήμερον, Πρὸς Μαρκίωνα, Εἰς τὸ Ἄισμα, Εἰς μέρη τοῦ Ἰεζεκιήλ, Περὶ τοῦ πάσχα, Πρὸς ἁπάσας τὰς αἱρέσεις, πλεῖστά τε ἄλλα καὶ παρὰ πολλοῖς εὕροις ἂν σῳζόμενα.

XXIII. Ἐξ ἐκείνου δὲ καὶ Ὠριγένει τῶν εἰς τὰς θείας γραφὰς ὑπομνημάτων ἐγίνετο ἀρχή. Ἀμβροσίου παρορμῶντος αὐτὸν μυρίαις ὅσαις οὐ προτροπαῖς ταῖς διὰ λόγων καὶ παρακλήσεσιν αὐτὸ μόνον, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἀφθονωτάταις τῶν ἐπιτηδείων χορηγίαις. ταχυγράφοι τε γὰρ αὐτῷ πλείους ἢ ἑπτὰ τὸν ἀριθμὸν παρῆσαν ὑπαγορεύοντι, χρόνοις τεταγμένοις ἀλλήλους ἀμείβοντες, βιβλιογράφοι τε οὐχ ἧττους ἅμα καὶ κόραις ἐπὶ τὸ καλλιγραφεῖν ἠσκημέναις· ὧν ἁπάντων τὴν δέουσαν τῶν ἐπιτηδείων ἄφθονον περιουσίαν ὁ Ἀμβρόσιος παρεστήσατο· ναὶ μὴν καὶ ἐν τῇ περὶ τὰ θεῖα λόγια ἀσκήσει τε καὶ σπουδῇ προθυμίαν ἄφατον αὐτῷ συνεισέφερεν, ἢ καὶ μάλιστα αὐτὸν προύτρεπεν ἐπὶ τὴν τῶν ὑπομνημάτων σύνταξιν.

And when he had stayed with her for some time, and shown her very many things that were for the glory of the Lord and the excellence of the divine teaching, he hastened back to his accustomed duties.

XXII. At that very time also Hippolytus, besides very many other memoirs, composed the treatise *On the Pascha*, in which he sets forth a register of the times and puts forward a certain canon of a sixteen-years cycle for the Pascha, using the first year of the Emperor Alexander as a terminus in measuring his dates. Of his other treatises the following have reached us: *On the Hexaëmeron*,[1] *On what followed the Hexaëmeron, Against Marcion, On the Song, On Parts of Ezekiel, On the Pascha, Against All the Heresies*; and very many others also might be found preserved by many people.

XXIII. Starting from that time also Origen's commentaries on the divine Scriptures had their beginning, at the instigation of Ambrose, who not only plied him with innumerable verbal exhortations and encouragements, but also provided him unstintingly with what was necessary. For as he dictated there were ready at hand more than seven shorthand-writers, who relieved each other at fixed times, and as many copyists, as well as girls skilled in penmanship; for all of whom Ambrose supplied without stint the necessary means. Nay further, he contributed to Origen a vast amount of zeal in the earnest study of the divine oracles, a zeal which more than anything else acted as an incentive to him to compose his commentaries.

[1] *i.e.* the Six Days of Creation.

Τούτων δὲ οὕτως ἐχόντων, Οὐρβανὸν ἐπισκοπεύσαντα τῆς Ῥωμαίων ἐκκλησίας ἔτεσιν ὀκτὼ διαδέχεται Ποντιανός, τῆς δ' Ἀντιοχέων μετὰ Φιλητὸν Ζέβεννος· καθ' οὓς Ὠριγένης, ἐπειγούσης χρείας ἐκκλησιαστικῶν ἕνεκα πραγμάτων ἐπὶ τὴν Ἑλλάδα στειλάμενος τὴν διὰ Παλαιστίνης, πρεσβείου χειροθεσίαν ἐν Καισαρείᾳ πρὸς τῶν τῇδε ἐπισκόπων ἀναλαμβάνει. τὰ μὲν οὖν ἐπὶ τούτῳ περὶ αὐτοῦ κεκινημένα τά τε ἐπὶ τοῖς κινηθεῖσιν δεδογμένα τοῖς τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν προεστῶσιν ὅσα τε ἄλλα ἀκμάζων περὶ τὸν θεῖον εἰσενήνεκται λόγον, ἰδίας δεόμενα συντάξεως, μετρίως ἐν τῷ δευτέρῳ ἧς ὑπὲρ αὐτοῦ πεποιήμεθα ἀπολογίας ἀνεγράψαμεν.

XXIV. Ταῦτα δ' ἐκείνοις δέοι ἂν ἐπιθεῖναι ὡς ἐν μὲν τῷ ἕκτῳ τῶν εἰς τὸ κατὰ Ἰωάννην Ἐξηγητικῶν σημαίνει τὰ πρότερα πέντε ἐπ' Ἀλεξάνδρειας ἔτ' ὄντα αὐτὸν συντάξαι, τῆς δ' εἰς τὸ πᾶν εὐαγγέλιον αὐτὸ δὴ τοῦτο πραγματείας μόνοι δύο καὶ εἴκοσι εἰς ἡμᾶς περιῆλθον τόμοι· κατὰ δὲ τὸ ἔνατον τῶν Εἰς τὴν Γένεσιν (δώδεκα δ' ἐστὶν τὰ πάντα) οὐ μόνον τοὺς πρὸ τοῦ ἐνάτου δηλοῖ ἐπὶ τῆς Ἀλεξανδρείας ὑπεμνηματίσθαι, καὶ εἰς τοὺς πρώτους δὲ πέντε καὶ εἴκοσι Ψαλμοὺς ἔτι τε τὰ εἰς τοὺς Θρήνους, ὧν εἰς ἡμᾶς ἐληλύθασιν τόμοι πέντε, ἐν οἷς μέμνηται καὶ τῶν Περὶ ἀναστάσεως· δύο δ' ἐστὶν καὶ ταῦτα. οὐ μὴν ἀλλὰ καὶ τὰ Περὶ ἀρχῶν πρὸ τῆς ἀπ' Ἀλεξανρδείας μεταναστάσεως γράφει, καὶ τοὺς ἐπιγεγραμμένους Στρωματεῖς, ὄντας τὸν ἀριθμὸν δέκα, ἐπὶ τῆς αὐτῆς πόλεως κατὰ τὴν Ἀλεξάνδρου συντάττει

Such was the state of affairs when Pontianus succeeded Urban, who had been bishop of the church of the Romans for eight years, and Zebennus came after Philetus as [bishop] of the [church] of the Antiochenes. In their day Origen journeyed to Greece through Palestine because of an urgent necessity in Church matters, and received the laying-on of hands for the presbyterate at Caesarea from the bishops there. The agitation that was set on foot concerning him on this account, and the decisions made by those who presided over the churches on the matters agitated, as well as the other contributions that he made as he was reaching his prime to the study of the divine Word, require a separate composition, and we have given a fairly full account of them in the second [book] of the *Apology* that we have written on his behalf.

XXIV. But to that information it is necessary to add that in the sixth of his *Expositions on the* [Gospel] *according to John* he indicates that he composed the first five while he was still at Alexandria; but of this work on the whole of the selfsame Gospel only twenty-two tomes have come our way. And [we must also state] that in the ninth of those *On Genesis* (there are twelve in all) he shows that not only were those before the ninth written at Alexandria, but also [his commentary] on the first twenty-five Psalms, and, as well, those on Lamentations, of which there have come to us five tomes. In these he mentions also those *On the Resurrection*, of which there are two. Moreover he wrote his *De Principiis* before his removal from Alexandria, and he composed the [books] entitled *Stromateis*, ten in number, in the same city in the reign of Alexander, as is shown

βασιλείαν, ὡς καὶ τοῦτο ὁλόγραφοι δηλοῦσιν αὐτοῦ πρὸ τῶν τόμων ἐπισημειώσεις.

XXV. Τὸν μέν γε πρῶτον ἐξηγούμενος Ψαλμόν, ἔκθεσιν πεποίηται τοῦ τῶν ἱερῶν γραφῶν τῆς παλαιᾶς διαθήκης καταλόγου, ὧδέ πως γράφων κατὰ λέξιν· "οὐκ ἀγνοητέον δ' εἶναι τὰς ἐνδιαθήκους βίβλους, ὡς Ἑβραῖοι παραδιδόασιν, δύο καὶ εἴκοσι, ὅσος ἀριθμὸς τῶν παρ' αὐτοῖς στοιχείων ἐστίν."

Εἶτα μετά τινα ἐπιφέρει λέγων· "εἰσὶν δὲ αἱ εἴκοσι δύο βίβλοι καθ' Ἑβραίους αἵδε· ἡ παρ' ἡμῖν Γένεσις ἐπιγεγραμμένη, παρὰ δ' Ἑβραίοις ἀπὸ τῆς ἀρχῆς τῆς βίβλου Βρησιθ, ὅπερ ἐστὶν 'ἐν ἀρχῇ'· Ἔξοδος, Ουελλεσμωθ, ὅπερ ἐστὶν 'ταῦτα τὰ ὀνόματα'· Λευιτικόν, Ουϊκρα, 'καὶ ἐκάλεσεν'· Ἀριθμοί, Αμμεσφεκωδειμ· Δευτερονόμιον, Ελλεαδδεβαρειμ, 'οὗτοι οἱ λόγοι'· Ἰησοῦς υἱὸς Ναυῆ, Ιωσουεβεννουν· Κριταί, Ῥούθ, παρ' αὐτοῖς ἐν ἑνί, Σωφτειμ· Βασιλειῶν α' β', παρ' αὐτοῖς ἕν, Σαμουηλ, 'ὁ θεόκλητος'· Βασιλειῶν γ' δ' ἐν ἑνί, Ουαμμελχδαυιδ, ὅπερ ἐστὶν 'βασιλεία Δαυίδ'· Παραλειπομένων α' β' ἐν ἑνί, Δαβρηϊαμειν ὅπερ ἐστὶν 'λόγοι ἡμερῶν'· Ἔζρας α' β' ἐν ἑνί, Εζρα, ὅ ἐστιν 'βοηθός'· βίβλος Ψαλμῶν, Σφαρθελλειμ· Σολομῶνος παροιμίαι, Μελωθ· Ἐκκλησιαστής, Κωελθ· Ἆισμα ᾀσμάτων (οὐ γάρ, ὡς ὑπολαμβάνουσίν τινες, Ἄισματα ᾀσμάτων), Σιρασσιρειμ· Ἡσαΐας, Ιεσσια· Ἱερεμίας σὺν Θρήνοις καὶ τῇ Ἐπιστολῇ ἐν ἑνί, Ιερεμια· Δανιήλ, Δανιηλ· Ἰεζεκιήλ, Ιεζεκιηλ· Ἰώβ, Ιωβ·

by the annotations in his own hand in front of the tomes.

XXV. Now while expounding the first Psalm he set forth the catalogue of the sacred Scriptures of the Old Testament, writing somewhat as follows in these words: "But it should be known that there are twenty-two canonical books, according to the Hebrew tradition; the same as the number of the letters of their alphabet."

Then further on he adds as follows: "These are the twenty-two books according to the Hebrews: That which is entitled with us Genesis, but with the Hebrews, from the beginning of the book, Brēsith, that is 'In the beginning.' Exodus, Ouelle smōth, that is, 'These are the names.' Leviticus, Ouïkra, 'And he called.' Numbers, Ammes phekōdeim.[1] Deuteronomy, Elle addebareim, 'These are the words.' Jesus the son of Nave, Iōsoue ben noun. Judges, Ruth, with them in one book, Sōphteim.[2] Of Kingdoms i, ii, with them one, Samuel, 'The called of God.' Of Kingdoms iii, iv, in one, Ouammelch david, that is, 'The kingdom of David.' Chronicles i, ii, in one, Dabrē iamein, that is, 'Words of days.' Esdras i, ii, in one, Ezra, that is, 'Helper.' Book of Psalms, Sphar thelleim. Proverbs of Solomon, Melōth. Ecclesiastes, Kōelth. Song of Songs (not, as some suppose, Songs of Songs), Sir assireim. Esaias, Iessia. Jeremiah with Lamentations and the Letter, in one, Jeremia. Daniel, Daniēl. Ezekiel, Ezekiēl. Job, Jōb. Esther, Esthēr. And outside

[1] *i.e.* "fifth (book) of the precepts" or "of the mustered men."

[2] A transliteration of the Hebrew word meaning "judges."

Ἐσθήρ, Εσθηρ. ἔξω δὲ τούτων ἐστὶ τὰ Μακκαβαϊκά, ἅπερ ἐπιγέγραπται Σαρβηθσαβαναιελ.[1]"

Ταῦτα μὲν οὖν ἐν τῷ προειρημένῳ τίθησι συγγράμματι· ἐν δὲ τῷ πρώτῳ τῶν εἰς τὸ κατὰ Ματθαῖον, τὸν ἐκκλησιαστικὸν φυλάττων κανόνα, μόνα τέσσαρα εἰδέναι εὐαγγέλια μαρτύρεται, ὧδέ πως γράφων· "ὡς ἐν παραδόσει μαθὼν περὶ τῶν τεσσάρων εὐαγγελίων, ἃ καὶ μόνα ἀναντίρρητά ἐστιν ἐν τῇ ὑπὸ τὸν οὐρανὸν ἐκκλησίᾳ τοῦ θεοῦ, ὅτι πρῶτον μὲν γέγραπται τὸ κατὰ τόν ποτε τελώνην, ὕστερον δὲ ἀπόστολον Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ Ματθαῖον, ἐκδεδωκότα αὐτὸ τοῖς ἀπὸ Ἰουδαϊσμοῦ πιστεύσασιν, γράμμασιν Ἑβραϊκοῖς συντεταγμένον· δεύτερον δὲ τὸ κατὰ Μάρκον, ὡς Πέτρος ὑφηγήσατο αὐτῷ, ποιήσαντα, ὃν καὶ υἱὸν ἐν τῇ καθολικῇ
1 Pet. 5, 13 ἐπιστολῇ διὰ τούτων ὡμολόγησεν φάσκων 'ἀσπάζεται ὑμᾶς ἡ ἐν Βαβυλῶνι συνεκλεκτὴ καὶ Μάρκος ὁ υἱός μου'· καὶ τρίτον τὸ κατὰ Λουκᾶν, τὸ
See 2 Cor. 8, 18 ὑπὸ Παύλου ἐπαινούμενον εὐαγγέλιον τοῖς ἀπὸ τῶν ἐθνῶν πεποιηκότα· ἐπὶ πᾶσιν τὸ κατὰ Ἰωάννην."

Καὶ ἐν τῷ πέμπτῳ δὲ τῶν εἰς τὸ κατὰ Ἰωάννην Ἐξηγητικῶν ὁ αὐτὸς ταῦτα περὶ τῶν ἐπιστολῶν
2 Cor. 3, 6 τῶν ἀποστόλων φησίν· "ὁ δὲ ἱκανωθεὶς διάκονος γενέσθαι τῆς καινῆς διαθήκης, οὐ γράμματος, ἀλλὰ πνεύματος, Παῦλος, ὁ πεπληρωκὼς τὸ
Rom. 15, 19 εὐαγγέλιον ἀπὸ Ἱερουσαλὴμ καὶ κύκλῳ μέχρι τοῦ Ἰλλυρικοῦ, οὐδὲ πάσαις ἔγραψεν αἷς ἐδίδαξεν ἐκκλησίαις, ἀλλὰ καὶ αἷς ἔγραψεν, ὀλίγους στί-

[1] This name is interesting as evidence of the existence in the third century of the Hebrew original of 1 Maccabees, but its meaning is obscure. Possibly a φ has dropped out

these there are the Maccabees, which are entitled Sar bēth sabanai el."[1]

These things he inserts in the above-mentioned treatise. But in the first of his [*Commentaries*] *on the Gospel according to Matthew*, defending the canon of the Church, he gives his testimony that he knows only four Gospels, writing somewhat as follows: ". . . as having learnt by tradition concerning the four Gospels, which alone are unquestionable in the Church of God under heaven, that first was written that according to Matthew, who was once a tax-collector but afterwards an apostle of Jesus Christ, who published it for those who from Judaism came to believe, composed as it was in the Hebrew language. Secondly, that according to Mark, who wrote it in accordance with Peter's instructions, whom also Peter acknowledged as his son in the catholic epistle, speaking in these terms: 'She that is in Babylon, elect together with you, saluteth you; and so doth Mark my son.' And thirdly, that according to Luke, who wrote, for those who from the Gentiles [came to believe], the Gospel that was praised by Paul. After them all, that according to John."

And in the fifth of his *Expositions on the Gospel according to John* the same person says this with reference to the epistles of the apostles: "But he who was made sufficient to become a minister of the new covenant, not of the letter but of the spirit, even Paul, who fully preached the Gospel from Jerusalem and round about even unto Illyricum, did not so much as write to all the churches that he taught; and even to those to which he wrote he sent but a few

[1] of the first word in the text, and so it would represent "The history of the house of the warriors."

Matt. 16, 18 χους ἐπέστειλεν. Πέτρος δέ, ἐφ' ᾧ οἰκοδομεῖται 8
ἡ Χριστοῦ ἐκκλησία, ἧς πύλαι Ἅιδου οὐ κατ-
ισχύσουσιν, μίαν ἐπιστολὴν ὁμολογουμένην κατα-
λέλοιπεν, ἔστω δὲ καὶ δευτέραν· ἀμφιβάλλεται
John 13, 25 γάρ. τί δεῖ περὶ τοῦ ἀναπεσόντος ἐπὶ τὸ στῆθος 9
λέγειν τοῦ Ἰησοῦ, Ἰωάννου, ὃς εὐαγγέλιον ἓν
καταλέλοιπεν, ὁμολογῶν δύνασθαι τοσαῦτα ποιή- 1
John 21, 25 σειν ἃ οὐδ' ὁ κόσμος χωρῆσαι ἐδύνατο, ἔγραψεν
Rev. 10, 3, 4 δὲ καὶ τὴν Ἀποκάλυψιν, κελευσθεὶς σιωπῆσαι
καὶ μὴ γράψαι τὰς τῶν ἑπτὰ βροντῶν φωνάς;
καταλέλοιπεν καὶ ἐπιστολὴν πάνυ ὀλίγων στίχων,
ἔστω δὲ καὶ δευτέραν καὶ τρίτην· ἐπεὶ οὐ πάντες
φασὶν γνησίους εἶναι ταύτας· πλὴν οὔκ εἰσιν
στίχων ἀμφότεραι ἑκατόν."

Ἔτι πρὸς τούτοις περὶ τῆς Πρὸς Ἑβραίους 1
ἐπιστολῆς ἐν ταῖς εἰς αὐτὴν Ὁμιλίαις ταῦτα
διαλαμβάνει· "ὅτι ὁ χαρακτὴρ τῆς λέξεως τῆς
Πρὸς Ἑβραίους ἐπιγεγραμμένης ἐπιστολῆς οὐκ
2 Cor. 11, 6 ἔχει τὸ ἐν λόγῳ ἰδιωτικὸν τοῦ ἀποστόλου, ὁμολογή-
σαντος ἑαυτὸν ἰδιώτην εἶναι τῷ λόγῳ, τοῦτ' ἐστὶν
τῇ φράσει, ἀλλ' ἐστὶν ἡ ἐπιστολὴ συνθέσει τῆς
λέξεως Ἑλληνικωτέρα, πᾶς ὁ ἐπιστάμενος κρίνειν 1
φράσεων διαφορὰς ὁμολογήσαι ἄν. πάλιν τε αὖ
ὅτι τὰ νοήματα τῆς ἐπιστολῆς θαυμάσιά ἐστιν
καὶ οὐ δεύτερα τῶν ἀποστολικῶν ὁμολογουμένων
γραμμάτων, καὶ τοῦτο ἂν συμφήσαι εἶναι ἀληθὲς
πᾶς ὁ προσέχων τῇ ἀναγνώσει τῇ ἀποστολικῇ."

Τούτοις μεθ' ἕτερα ἐπιθέρει λέγων· "ἐγὼ δὲ 1
ἀποφαινόμενος εἶποιμ' ἂν ὅτι τὰ μὲν νοήματα τοῦ
ἀποστόλου ἐστίν, ἡ δὲ φράσις καὶ ἡ σύνθεσις
ἀπομνημονεύσαντός τινος τὰ ἀποστολικὰ καὶ
ὥσπερ σχολιογραφήσαντός τινος τὰ εἰρημένα ὑπὸ

lines. And Peter, on whom the Church of Christ is built, against which the gates of Hades shall not prevail, has left one acknowledged epistle, and, it may be, a second also ; for it is doubted. Why need I speak of him who leaned back on Jesus' breast, John, who has left behind one Gospel, confessing that he could write so many that even the world itself could not contain them ; and he wrote also the Apocalypse, being ordered to keep silence and not to write the voices of seven thunders ? He has left also an epistle of a very few lines, and, it may be, a second and a third ; for not all say that these are genuine. Only, the two of them together are not a hundred lines long."

Furthermore, he thus discusses the Epistle to the Hebrews, in his *Homilies* upon it: "That the character of the diction of the epistle entitled To the Hebrews has not the apostle's rudeness in speech, who confessed himself rude in speech, that is, in style, but that the epistle is better Greek in the framing of its diction, will be admitted by everyone who is able to discern differences of style. But again, on the other hand, that the thoughts of the epistle are admirable, and not inferior to the acknowledged writings of the apostle, to this also everyone will consent as true who has given attention to reading the apostle."

Further on, he adds the following remarks : " But as for myself, if I were to state my own opinion, I should say that the thoughts are the apostle's, but that the style and composition belong to one who called to mind the apostle's teachings and, as it were,

τοῦ διδασκάλου. εἴ τις οὖν ἐκκλησία ἔχει ταύτην τὴν ἐπιστολὴν ὡς Παύλου, αὕτη εὐδοκιμείτω καὶ ἐπὶ τούτῳ· οὐ γὰρ εἰκῇ οἱ ἀρχαῖοι ἄνδρες ὡς Παύλου αὐτὴν παραδεδώκασιν. τίς δὲ ὁ γράψας 14
τὴν ἐπιστολήν, τὸ μὲν ἀληθὲς θεὸς οἶδεν, ἡ δὲ εἰς ἡμᾶς φθάσασα ἱστορία ὑπὸ τινῶν μὲν λεγόντων ὅτι Κλήμης, ὁ γενόμενος ἐπίσκοπος Ῥωμαίων, ἔγραψεν τὴν ἐπιστολήν, ὑπὸ τινῶν δὲ ὅτι Λουκᾶς, ὁ γράψας τὸ εὐαγγέλιον καὶ τὰς Πράξεις."

XXVI. Ἀλλὰ ταῦτα μὲν ὧδε ἐχέτω· ἔτος δ' 1
ἦν τοῦτο δέκατον τῆς δηλουμένης ἡγεμονίας, καθ' ὃ τὴν ἀπ' Ἀλεξανδρείας μετανάστασιν ἐπὶ τὴν Καισάρειαν ὁ Ὠριγένης ποιησάμενος, Ἡρακλᾷ τὸ τῆς κατηχήσεως τῶν αὐτόθι διδασκαλεῖον καταλείπει· οὐκ εἰς μακρὸν δὲ καὶ Δημήτριος ὁ τῆς Ἀλεξανδρέων ἐκκλησίας ἐπίσκοπος τελευτᾷ, ἐφ' ὅλοις ἔτεσι τρισὶ καὶ τεσσαράκοντα τῇ λειτουργίᾳ διαρκέσας· διαδέχεται δ' αὐτὸν ὁ Ἡρακλᾶς.

XXVII Διέπρεπεν δ' ἐν τούτῳ Φιρμιλιανός, 1
Καισαρείας τῆς Καππαδοκῶν ἐπίσκοπος, τοσαύτην εἰσάγων περὶ τὸν Ὠριγένην σπουδήν, ὡς τοτὲ μὲν αὐτὸν ἀμφὶ τὰ κατ' αὐτὸν κλίματα εἰς τὴν τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν ὠφέλειαν ἐκκαλεῖσθαι, τοτὲ δὲ ὡς αὐτὸν ἐπὶ τὴν Ἰουδαίαν στέλλεσθαι καί τινας αὐτῷ συνδιατρίβειν χρόνους τῆς εἰς τὰ θεῖα βελτιώσεως ἕνεκα. οὐ μὴν ἀλλὰ καὶ ὁ τῆς Ἱεροσολύμων προεστὼς Ἀλέξανδρος Θεόκτιστός τε ὁ κατὰ Καισάρειαν τὸν πάντα χρόνον προσανέχοντες αὐτῷ, οἷα διδασκάλῳ μόνῳ, τὰ τῆς τῶν θείων γραφῶν ἑρμηνείας καὶ τὰ λοιπὰ τοῦ ἐκκλησιαστικοῦ λόγου πράττειν συνεχώρουν.

XXVIII. Τόν γε μὴν Ῥωμαίων αὐτοκράτορα 1

made short notes of what his master said. If any church, therefore, holds this epistle as Paul's, let it be commended for this also. For not without reason have the men of old time handed it down as Paul's. But who wrote the epistle, in truth God knows. Yet the account which has reached us [is twofold], some saying that Clement, who was bishop of the Romans, wrote the epistle, others, that it was Luke, he who wrote the Gospel and the Acts."

XXVI. But this must suffice on these matters. Now it was in the tenth year of the above-mentioned reign[1] that Origen removed from Alexandria to Caesarea, leaving to Heraclas the Catechetical School for those in the city. And not long afterwards Demetrius, the bishop of the church of the Alexandrians, died, having continued in the ministry for forty-three entire years. He was succeeded by Heraclas.

XXVII. Now at this time Firmilian, bishop of Caesarea in Cappadocia, was distinguished; he displayed such esteem for Origen, that at one time he would summon him to his own parts for the benefit of the churches; at another, journey himself to Judaea, and spend some time with him for his own betterment in divine things. Nay further, Alexander, who presided over the [church] of Jerusalem, and Theoctistus, [who presided] at Caesarea, continued their attendance on him the whole time, as their only teacher, and used to concede to him the task of expounding the divine Scriptures, and the other parts of the Church's instruction.

XXVIII. But to resume. When Alexander the

[1] A.D. 232.

Ἀλέξανδρον τρισὶν ἐπὶ δέκα ἔτεσιν τὴν ἀρχὴν διανύσαντα Μαξιμῖνος Καῖσαρ διαδέχεται· ὃς δὴ κατὰ κότον τὸν πρὸς τὸν Ἀλεξάνδρου οἶκον, ἐκ πλειόνων πιστῶν συνεστῶτα, διωγμὸν ἐγείρας, τοὺς τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν ἄρχοντας μόνους ὡς αἰτίους τῆς κατὰ τὸ εὐαγγέλιον διδασκαλίας ἀναιρεῖσθαι προστάττει. τότε καὶ Ὠριγένης τὸν Περὶ μαρτυρίου συντάττει, Ἀμβροσίῳ καὶ Πρωτοκτήτῳ πρεσβυτέρῳ τῆς ἐν Καισαρείᾳ παροικίας ἀναθεὶς τὸ σύγγραμμα, ὅτι δὴ ἄμφω περίστασις οὐχ ἡ τυχοῦσα ἐν τῷ διωγμῷ κατειλήφει· ἐν ᾗ καὶ διαπρέψαι κατέχει λόγος ἐν ὁμολογίᾳ τοὺς ἄνδρας, οὐ πλείονος ἢ τριετοῦς χρόνου τῷ Μαξιμίνῳ διαγενομένου. σεσημείωται δὲ τουτονὶ τοῦ διωγμοῦ τὸν καιρὸν ἔν τε τῷ δευτέρῳ καὶ εἰκοστῷ τῶν εἰς τὸ κατὰ Ἰωάννην Ἐξηγητικῶν καὶ ἐν διαφόροις ἐπιστολαῖς Ὠριγένης.

XXIX. Γορδιανοῦ δὲ μετὰ Μαξιμῖνον τὴν 1
Ῥωμαίων ἡγεμονίαν διαδεξαμένου, τῆς κατὰ Ῥώμην ἐκκλησίας Ποντιανὸν ἔτεσιν ἓξ ἐπισκοπεύσαντα διαδέχεται Ἀντέρως καὶ τοῦτον Φαβιανός, ἐπὶ μῆνα τῇ λειτουργίᾳ διακονησάμενον. ἐξ ἀγροῦ 2
φασιν τὸν Φαβιανὸν μετὰ τὴν Ἀντέρωτος τελευτὴν ἅμ' ἑτέροις συνελθόντα ἐπιχωριάζειν τῇ Ῥώμῃ, ἔνθα παραδοξότατα πρὸς τῆς θείας καὶ οὐρανίου χάριτος ἐπὶ τὸν κλῆρον παρεληλυθέναι. τῶν γὰρ 3
ἀδελφῶν ἁπάντων χειροτονίας ἕνεκεν τῆς τοῦ μέλλοντος διαδέξασθαι τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν συγκεκροτημένων πλείστων τε ἐπιφανῶν καὶ ἐνδόξων ἀνδρῶν τοῖς πολλοῖς ἐν ὑπονοίᾳ ὑπαρχόντων, ὁ Φαβιανὸς παρὼν οὐδενὸς μὲν ἀνθρώπων εἰς διάνοιαν ἦει, ὅμως δ' οὖν ἀθρόως ἐκ μετεώρου περιστερὰν κατα-

Emperor of the Romans had brought his principate to an end after thirteen years, he was succeeded by Maximin Caesar.[1] He, through ill-will towards the house of Alexander, since it consisted for the most part of believers, raised a persecution, ordering the leaders of the Church alone to be put to death, as being responsible for the teaching of the Gospel. Then also Origen composed his work *On Martyrdom*, dedicating the treatise to Ambrose and Protoctetus, a presbyter of the community at Caesarea ; for in the persecution no ordinary distress had befallen them both, in which distress it is recorded that these men were distinguished for the confession they made during the period, not more than three years, that the reign of Maximin lasted. Origen has noted this particular time for the persecution, in the twenty-second of his *Expositions of the Gospel according to John*, and in various letters.

XXIX. Gordian having succeeded to the Roman government after Maximin,[2] Pontianus, when he had been bishop of the church of Rome for six years, was succeeded by Anteros ; who exercised his ministry for a month, and was succeeded by Fabian. It is said that Fabian, after the death of Anteros, came from the country along with others and stayed at Rome, where he came to the office in a most miraculous manner, thanks to the divine and heavenly grace. For when the brethren were all assembled for the purpose of appointing him who should succeed to the episcopate, and very many notable and distinguished persons were in the thoughts of many, Fabian, who was there, came into nobody's mind. But all of a sudden, they relate, a dove flew down from above and

[1] A.D. 235. [2] A.D. 238.

πτᾶσαν ἐπικαθεσθῆναι τῇ αὐτοῦ κεφαλῇ μνημονεύουσιν, μίμημα ἐνδεικνυμένην τῆς ἐπὶ τὸν σωτῆρα
Luke 3, 22 τοῦ ἁγίου πνεύματος ἐν εἴδει περιστερᾶς καθόδου· ἐφ' ᾧ τὸν πάντα λαόν, ὥσπερ ὑφ' ἑνὸς πνεύματος 4
θείου κινηθέντα, προθυμίᾳ πάσῃ καὶ μιᾷ ψυχῇ ἄξιον ἐπιβοῆσαι καὶ ἀμελλήτως ἐπὶ τὸν θρόνον τῆς ἐπισκοπῆς λαβόντας αὐτὸν ἐπιθεῖναι.

Τότε δὴ καὶ τοῦ κατ' Ἀντιόχειαν ἐπισκόπου Ζεβέννου τὸν βίον μεταλλάξαντος, Βαβυλᾶς τὴν ἀρχὴν διαδέχεται, ἔν τε Ἀλεξανδρείᾳ μετὰ Δημήτριον Ἡρακλᾶ τὴν λειτουργίαν παρειληφότος, τῆς τῶν αὐτόθι κατηχήσεως τὴν διατριβὴν διαδέχεται Διονύσιος, εἷς καὶ οὗτος τῶν Ὠριγένους γενόμενος φοιτητῶν.

XXX. Τῷ δὲ Ὠριγένει ἐπὶ τῆς Καισαρείας τὰ 1
συνήθη πράττοντι πολλοὶ προσήεσαν οὐ μόνον τῶν ἐπιχωρίων, ἀλλὰ καὶ τῆς ἀλλοδαπῆς μυρίοι φοιτηταὶ τὰς πατρίδας ἀπολιπόντες· ὧν ἐπισήμους μάλιστα ἔγνωμεν Θεόδωρον, ὃς ἦν αὐτὸς οὗτος ὁ καθ' ἡμᾶς ἐπισκόπων διαβόητος Γρηγόριος, τόν τε τούτου ἀδελφὸν Ἀθηνόδωρον, οὓς ἀμφὶ τὰ Ἑλλήνων καὶ τὰ Ῥωμαίων μαθήματα δεινῶς ἐπτοημένους, φιλοσοφίας αὐτοῖς ἐνεὶς ἔρωτα, τῆς προτέρας σπουδῆς τὴν θείαν ἄσκησιν ἀντικαταλλάξασθαι προυτρέψατο· πέντε δὲ ὅλοις ἔτεσιν αὐτῷ συγγενόμενοι, τοσαύτην ἀπηνέγκαντο περὶ τὰ θεῖα βελτίωσιν, ὡς ἔτι νέους ἄμφω ἐπισκοπῆς τῶν κατὰ Πόντον ἐκκλησιῶν ἀξιωθῆναι.

XXXI. Ἐν τούτῳ καὶ Ἀφρικανὸς ὁ τῶν ἐπι- 1
γεγραμμένων Κεστῶν συγγραφεὺς ἐγνωρίζετο. ἐπιστολὴ τούτου Ὠριγένει γραφεῖσα φέρεται, ἀποροῦντος ὡς νόθου καὶ πεπλασμένης οὔσης τῆς

settled on his head, in clear imitation of the descent of the Holy Ghost in the form of a dove upon the Saviour; whereupon the whole people, as if moved by one divine inspiration, with all eagerness and with one soul cried out "worthy," and without more ado took him and placed him on the episcopal throne.

At that very time also Zebennus, bishop of Antioch, departed this life and Babylas succeeded to the rule; and in Alexandria, Heraclas, having received the ministry after Demetrius, was succeeded in the Catechetical School there by Dionysius, who had also been one of Origen's pupils.

XXX. Now while Origen was plying his accustomed tasks at Caesarea, many came to him, not only of the natives, but also numbers of foreign pupils who had left their own countries. Among these as especially distinguished we know to have been Theodore, who was the selfsame person as that renowned bishop in our day, Gregory, and his brother Athenodore. Both of them were strongly enamoured of Greek and Roman studies, but Origen instilled into them a passion for philosophy and urged them to exchange their former love for the study of divine truth.[1] Five whole years they continued with him, and made such progress in divine things that while still young both of them were deemed worthy of the episcopate in the churches of Pontus.

XXXI. At that time Africanus also, the author of the books entitled *Cesti*,[2] was well known. A letter of his, written to Origen, is extant; he was at a loss as to whether the story of Susanna in the book of

[1] Gregory, *Pan.* vi. 78, 83, 84.

[2] *i.e.* "embroidered girdles," indicating the varied nature of the contents of the work: *cf.* "Stromateis," 13. 1.

ἐν τῷ Δανιὴλ κατὰ Σουσάνναν ἱστορίας· πρὸς ἣν Ὠριγένης ἀντιγράφει πληρέστατα. τοῦ δ' αὐτοῦ Ἀφρικανοῦ καὶ ἄλλα τὸν ἀριθμὸν πέντε Χρονογραφιῶν ἦλθεν εἰς ἡμᾶς ἐπ' ἀκριβὲς πεπονημένα σπουδάσματα· ἐν οἷς φησιν ἑαυτὸν πορείαν στείλασθαι ἐπὶ τὴν Ἀλεξάνδρειαν διὰ πολλὴν τοῦ Ἡρακλᾶ φήμην, ὃν ἐπὶ λόγοις φιλοσόφοις καὶ τοῖς ἄλλοις Ἑλλήνων μαθήμασιν εὖ μάλα διαπρέψαντα, τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν τῆς αὐτόθι ἐκκλησίας ἐγχειρισθῆναι ἐδηλώσαμεν. καὶ ἑτέρα δὲ τοῦ αὐτοῦ Ἀφρικανοῦ φέρεται ἐπιστολὴ πρὸς Ἀριστείδην, περὶ τῆς νομιζομένης διαφωνίας τῶν παρὰ Ματθαίῳ τε καὶ Λουκᾷ τοῦ Χριστοῦ γενεαλογιῶν· ἐν ᾗ σαφέστατα τὴν συμφωνίαν τῶν εὐαγγελιστῶν παρίστησιν ἐξ ἱστορίας εἰς αὐτὸν κατελθούσης, ἣν κατὰ καιρὸν ἐν τῷ πρώτῳ τῆς μετὰ χεῖρας ὑποθέσεως προλαβὼν ἐξέθέμην.

XXXII. Καὶ Ὠριγένει δὲ κατὰ τοῦτον τὸν χρόνον τὰ εἰς τὸν Ἡσαΐαν, ἐν ταὐτῷ δὲ καὶ τὰ εἰς τὸν Ἰεζεκιὴλ συνετάττετο· ὧν εἰς μὲν τὸ τρίτον μέρος τοῦ Ἡσαΐου μέχρι τῆς ὁράσεως τῶν τετραπόδων τῶν ἐν τῇ ἐρήμῳ τριάκοντα εἰς ἡμᾶς περιῆλθον τόμοι, εἰς δὲ τὸν Ἰεζεκιὴλ πέντε καὶ εἴκοσι, οὓς καὶ μόνους εἰς τὸν πάντα πεποίηται προφήτην. γενόμενος δὲ τηνικάδε ἐν Ἀθήναις, περαίνει μὲν τὰ εἰς τὸν Ἰεζεκιήλ, τῶν δ' εἰς τὸ Ἄισμα τῶν ᾀσμάτων ἄρχεται, καὶ πρόεισίν γε αὐτόθι μέχρι τοῦ πέμπτου συγγράμματος· ἐπανελθὼν δ' ἐπὶ τὴν Καισάρειαν καὶ ταῦτα εἰς πέρας, δέκα ὄντα τὸν ἀριθμόν, ἄγει. τί δεῖ τῶν λόγων τἀνδρὸς ἐπὶ τοῦ παρόντος τὸν ἀκριβῆ κατάλογον ποιεῖσθαι, ἰδίας δεόμενον σχολῆς; ὃν καὶ ἀν-

Is. 30. 6 (LXX).

Daniel were a spurious forgery. Origen makes a very full reply to it. And of the same Africanus there have reached us as well five books of *Chronographies*, a monument of labour and accuracy. In these he says that he himself made a journey to Alexandria because of the great fame of Heraclas; who, as we have stated,[1] was greatly distinguished for philosophy and other Greek learning, and was entrusted with the bishopric of the church there. And another letter of the same Africanus is extant, to Aristides, On the supposed discord between the Genealogies of Christ in Matthew and Luke. In it he establishes very clearly the harmony of the evangelists from an account that came down to him, which by anticipation I set forth in the proper place in the first book of the present work.[2]

XXXII. And Origen too at this time was composing his *Commentaries on Isaiah*, and at the same time those also on Ezekiel. Of the former, thirty tomes have come our way on the third part of Isaiah, up to the vision of the beasts in the desert; and on Ezekiel five and twenty, the only ones that he has written on the whole prophet. And having come at that time to Athens, he finished the commentary on Ezekiel, and began that on the Song of Songs, carrying it forward there up to the fifth book. And returning to Caesarea he brought these also to an end, numbering ten. Why should one draw up the exact catalogue of the man's works here and now, seeing that such would require a special study? And

[1] 3. 2; 15; 19. 13 f.; 26. [2] i. 7.

ἐγράψαμεν ἐπὶ τῆς τοῦ Παμφίλου βίου τοῦ καθ' ἡμᾶς ἱεροῦ μάρτυρος ἀναγραφῆς, ἐν ᾗ τὴν περὶ τὰ θεῖα σπουδὴν τοῦ Παμφίλου ὁπόση τις γεγόνοι, παριστῶντες, τῆς συναχθείσης αὐτῷ τῶν τε Ὠριγένους καὶ τῶν ἄλλων ἐκκλησιαστικῶν συγγραφέων βιβλιοθήκης τοὺς πίνακας παρεθέμην, ἐξ ὧν ὅτῳ φίλον, πάρεστιν ἐντελέστατα τῶν Ὠριγένους πόνων τὰ εἰς ἡμᾶς ἐλθόντα διαγνῶναι. νυνὶ δὲ πορευτέον ἐπὶ τὴν τῆς ἱστορίας ἀκολουθίαν.

XXXIII. Βήρυλλος ὁ μικρῷ πρόσθεν δεδηλωμένος Βόστρων τῆς Ἀραβίας ἐπίσκοπος, τὸν ἐκκλησιαστικὸν παρεκτρέπων κανόνα, ξένα τινὰ τῆς πίστεως παρεισφέρειν ἐπειρᾶτο, τὸν σωτῆρα καὶ κύριον ἡμῶν λέγειν τολμῶν μὴ προϋφεστάναι κατ' ἰδίαν οὐσίας περιγραφὴν πρὸ τῆς εἰς ἀνθρώπους ἐπιδημίας μηδὲ μὴν θεότητα ἰδίαν ἔχειν, ἀλλ' ἐμπολιτευομένην αὐτῷ μόνην τὴν πατρικήν. ἐπὶ τούτῳ πλείστων ἐπισκόπων ζητήσεις καὶ διαλόγους πρὸς τὸν ἄνδρα πεποιημένων, μεθ' ἑτέρων παρακληθεὶς Ὠριγένης κάτεισι μὲν εἰς ὁμιλίαν τὰ πρῶτα τῷ ἀνδρί, τίνα νοῦν ἔχοι, ἀποπειρώμενος, ὡς δ' ἔγνω ὅ τι καὶ λέγοι, εὐθύνας μὴ ὀρθοδοξοῦντα λογισμῷ τε πείσας, τῇ περὶ τοῦ δόγματος ἐφίστησιν ἀληθείᾳ ἐπί τε τὴν προτέραν ὑγιῆ δόξαν ἀποκαθίστησιν. καὶ φέρεταί γε εἰς ἔτι νῦν ἔγγραφα τοῦ τε Βηρύλλου καὶ τῆς δι' αὐτὸν γενομένης συνόδου, ὁμοῦ τὰς Ὠριγένους πρὸς αὐτὸν ζητήσεις καὶ τὰς λεχθείσας ἐπὶ τῆς αὐτοῦ παροικίας διαλέξεις ἕκαστά τε τῶν τότε πεπραγμένων περιέχοντα. καὶ ἄλλα μὲν οὖν μυρία Ὠριγένους πέρι μνήμῃ παραδιδόασιν τῶν καθ' ἡμᾶς οἱ πρεσβύτεροι, ἃ καὶ παρήσειν μοι δοκῶ,

we did record it in our account of the life of Pamphilus, that holy martyr of our day, in which, in showing the extent of Pamphilus's zeal for divine things, I quoted as evidence the lists in the library that he had brought together of the works of Origen and of other ecclesiastical writers; and from these anyone who pleases can gather the fullest knowledge of the works of Origen that have reached us. But we must now proceed with our history.

XXXIII. Beryllus, who, as we have mentioned a little above,[1] was bishop of Bostra in Arabia, perverting the Church's standard, attempted to introduce things foreign to the faith, daring to say that our Saviour and Lord did not pre-exist in an individual existence of His own before His coming to reside among men, nor had He a divinity of His own, but only the Father's dwelling in Him. Whereupon, after a large number of bishops had held questionings and discussions with the man, Origen, being invited along with others, entered in the first place into conversation with the man to discover what were his opinions, and when he knew what it was that he asserted, he corrected what was unorthodox, and, persuading him by reasoning, established him in the truth as to the doctrine, and restored him to his former sound opinion. And there are still extant to this very day records in writing both of Beryllus and of the synod that was held on his account, which contain at once the questions Origen put to him and the discussions that took place in his own community, and all that was done on that occasion. And a great many other things about Origen have been handed down to memory by the older men of our day, which

[1] 20. 2.

οὐ τῆς ἐνεστώσης ἐχόμενα πραγματείας· ὅσα δὲ ἀναγκαῖα τῶν περὶ αὐτὸν διαγνῶναι ἦν, ταῦτα καὶ ἐκ τῆς ὑπὲρ αὐτοῦ πεπονημένης ἡμῖν τε καὶ τῷ καθ' ἡμᾶς ἱερῷ μάρτυρι Παμφίλῳ ἀπολογίας πάρεστιν ἀναλέξασθαι, ἣν τῶν φιλαιτίων ἕνεκα συμπονήσαντες ἀλλήλοις διὰ σπουδῆς πεποιήμεθα.

XXXIV. Ἔτεσιν δὲ ὅλοις ἓξ Γορδιανοῦ τὴν [1]
Ῥωμαίων διανύσαντος ἡγεμονίαν, Φίλιππος ἅμα παιδὶ Φιλίππῳ τὴν ἀρχὴν διαδέχεται. τοῦτον κατέχει λόγος Χριστιανὸν ὄντα ἐν ἡμέρᾳ τῆς ὑστάτης τοῦ πάσχα παννυχίδος τῶν ἐπὶ τῆς ἐκκλησίας εὐχῶν τῷ πλήθει μετασχεῖν ἐθελῆσαι, οὐ πρότερον δὲ ὑπὸ τοῦ τηνικάδε προεστῶτος ἐπιτραπῆναι εἰσβαλεῖν, ἢ ἐξομολογήσασθαι καὶ τοῖς ἐν παραπτώμασιν ἐξεταζομένοις μετανοίας τε χώραν ἴσχουσιν ἑαυτὸν καταλέξαι· ἄλλως γὰρ μὴ ἂν ποτε πρὸς αὐτοῦ, μὴ οὐχὶ τοῦτο ποιήσαντα, διὰ πολλὰς τῶν κατ' αὐτὸν αἰτίας παραδεχθῆναι. καὶ πειθαρχῆσαί γε προθύμως λέγεται, τὸ γνήσιον καὶ εὐλαβὲς τῆς περὶ τὸν θεῖον φόβου διαθέσεως ἔργοις ἐπιδεδειγμένον.

XXXV. Τρίτον δὲ τούτῳ ἔτος ἦν, καθ' ὃ μετ- [1]
αλλάξαντος Ἡρακλᾶ τὸν βίον ἐπὶ δέκα ἓξ ἔτεσιν τῆς προστασίας τῶν κατ' Ἀλεξάνδρειαν ἐκκλησιῶν, τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν Διονύσιος ὑπολαμβάνει.

XXXVI. Τότε δῆτα, οἷα καὶ εἰκὸς ἦν, πλη- [1]
θυούσης τῆς πίστεως πεπαρρησιασμένου τε τοῦ καθ' ἡμᾶς παρὰ πᾶσιν λόγου, ὑπὲρ τὰ ἑξήκοντά φασιν ἔτη τὸν Ὠριγένην γενόμενον, ἅτε δὴ μεγίστην ἤδη συλλεξάμενον ἐκ τῆς μακρᾶς παρασκευῆς ἕξιν, τὰς ἐπὶ τοῦ κοινοῦ λεγομένας αὐτῷ διαλέξεις

[1] A.D. 244. [2] A.D. 247.

I think it well to pass over, as they do not concern the present work. But all that it was necessary to know of his affairs, these also one may gather from the *Apology* that was written on his behalf by us and Pamphilus, that holy martyr of our day, a work that we were at pains to compose conjointly because of the fault-finders.

XXXIV. When after six whole years Gordian brought his government of the Romans to an end, Philip along with his son Philip succeeded to the principate.[1] It is recorded that he, being a Christian, wished on the day of the last paschal vigil to share along with the multitude the prayers at the church, but was not permitted to enter by him who was then presiding, until he confessed and numbered himself among those who were reckoned to be in sins and were occupying the place of penitence; for that otherwise, had he not done so, he would never have been received by [the president] on account of the many charges made concerning him. And it is said that he obeyed readily, displaying by his actions how genuine and pious was his disposition towards the fear of God.

XXXV. It was the third year of his reign[2] when Heraclas departed this life, after presiding for sixteen years over the churches at Alexandria; Dionysius took up the episcopal office.

XXXVI. Then indeed, as was fitting, when the faith was increasing and our doctrine was boldly proclaimed in the ears of all, it is said that Origen, who was over sixty years of age, inasmuch as he had now acquired immense facility from long preparation,[3] permitted shorthand-writers to take down the dis-

[3] Gregory, *Pan.* ii. 10.

ταχυγράφοις μεταλαβεῖν ἐπιτρέψαι, οὐ πρότερόν ποτε τοῦτο γενέσθαι συγκεχωρηκότα.

Ἐν τούτῳ καὶ τὰ πρὸς τὸν ἐπιγεγραμμένον καθ' 2
ἡμῶν Κέλσου τοῦ Ἐπικουρείου Ἀληθῆ λόγον ὀκτὼ τὸν ἀριθμὸν συγγράμματα συντάττει καὶ τοὺς εἰς τὸ κατὰ Ματθαῖον εὐαγγέλιον εἴκοσι πέντε τόμους τούς τε εἰς τοὺς δώδεκα προφήτας, ἀφ' ὧν μόνους εὕρομεν πέντε καὶ εἴκοσι. φέρεται 3
δὲ αὐτοῦ καὶ πρὸς αὐτὸν βασιλέα Φίλιππον ἐπιστολὴ καὶ ἄλλη πρὸς τὴν τούτου γαμετὴν Σευήραν διάφοροί τε ἄλλαι πρὸς διαφόρους· ὧν ὁπόσας σποράδην παρὰ διαφόροις σωθείσας συναγαγεῖν δεδυνήμεθα, ἐν ἰδίαις τόμων περιγραφαῖς, ὡς ἂν μηκέτι διαρρίπτοιντο, κατελέξαμεν, τὸν ἑκατὸν ἀριθμὸν ὑπερβαινούσας. γράφει δὲ καὶ Φαβιανῷ 4
τῷ κατὰ Ῥώμην ἐπισκόπῳ ἑτέροις τε πλείστοις ἄρχουσιν ἐκκλησιῶν περὶ τῆς κατ' αὐτὸν ὀρθοδοξίας· ἔχεις καὶ τούτων τὰς ἀποδείξεις ἐν ἕκτῳ τῆς γραφείσης ἡμῖν περὶ τοῦ ἀνδρὸς ἀπολογίας.

XXXVII. Ἄλλοι δ' αὖ πάλιν ἐπὶ τῆς Ἀραβίας 1
κατὰ τὸν δηλούμενον ἐπιφύονται χρόνον δόγματος ἀλλοτρίου τῆς ἀληθείας εἰσηγηταί, οἳ ἔλεγον τὴν ἀνθρωπείαν ψυχὴν τέως μὲν κατὰ τὸν ἐνεστῶτα καιρὸν ἅμα τῇ τελευτῇ συναποθνήσκειν τοῖς σώμασιν καὶ συνδιαφθείρεσθαι, αὖθις δέ ποτε κατὰ τὸν τῆς ἀναστάσεως καιρὸν σὺν αὐτοῖς ἀναβιώσεσθαι. καὶ δὴ καὶ τότε συγκροτηθείσης οὐ σμικρᾶς συνόδου, πάλιν Ὠριγένης παρακληθεὶς καὶ ἐνταῦθα κινήσας τε λόγους ἐπὶ τοῦ κοινοῦ περὶ τοῦ ζητουμένου, οὕτως ἠνέχθη ὡς μετατεθῆναι τὰς τῶν πρότερον ἐσφαλμένων διανοίας.

XXXVIII. Τότε δὲ καὶ ἄλλης διαστροφῆς κατ- 1

courses delivered by him in public, a thing that he had never before allowed.

At that time also he composed the treatises, eight in number, in answer to the work against us, entitled *True Discourse of Celsus the Epicurean*, and his twenty-five tomes on the Gospel according to Matthew, and those on the twelve prophets, of which we found only five and twenty. And there is extant also a letter of his to the Emperor Philip himself, and another to his wife Severa, and various other letters to various persons. As many of these as we have been able to bring together, preserved as they were here and there by various persons, we arranged in separate roll-cases, so that they might no longer be dispersed. These letters number more than a hundred. And he wrote also to Fabian the bishop of Rome, and to very many other rulers of churches, with reference to his orthodoxy. You will find these facts also established in the sixth book of the *Apology* we wrote on the man's behalf.

XXXVII. Once more in Arabia at the above-mentioned time other persons sprang up, introducing a doctrine foreign to the truth, and saying that the human soul dies for a while in this present time, along with our bodies, at their death, and with them turns to corruption ; but that hereafter, at the time of the resurrection, it will come to life again along with them. Moreover, when a synod of no small dimensions was then assembled together, Origen was again invited, and there opened a discussion in public on the subject in question, with such power that he changed the opinions of those who had formerly been deluded.

XXXVIII. At that time also another perverse

ἄρχεται ἡ τῶν Ἐλκεσαϊτῶν λεγομένη αἵρεσις, ἣ καὶ ἅμα τῷ ἄρξασθαι ἀπέσβη. μνημονεύει δ' αὐτῆς ὁμιλῶν ἐπὶ τοῦ κοινοῦ εἰς τὸν πβ ψαλμὸν ὁ Ὠριγένης, ὧδέ πως λέγων· "ἐλήλυθέν τις ἐπὶ τοῦ παρόντος μέγα φρονῶν ἐπὶ τῷ δύνασθαι πρεσβεύειν γνώμης ἀθέου καὶ ἀσεβεστάτης, καλουμένης Ἐλκεσαϊτῶν, νεωστὶ ἐπανισταμένης ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις. ἐκείνη ἡ γνώμη οἷα λέγει κακά, παραθήσομαι ὑμῖν, ἵνα μὴ συναρπάζησθε. ἀθετεῖ τινα ἀπὸ πάσης γραφῆς, κέχρηται ῥητοῖς πάλιν ἀπὸ πάσης παλαιᾶς τε καὶ εὐαγγελικῆς, τὸν ἀπόστολον τέλεον ἀθετεῖ. φησὶν δὲ ὅτι τὸ ἀρνήσασθαι ἀδιάφορόν ἐστιν καὶ ὁ μὲν νοήσας τῷ μὲν στόματι ἐν ἀνάγκαις ἀρνήσεται, τῇ δὲ καρδίᾳ οὐχί. καὶ βίβλον τινὰ φέρουσιν, ἣν λέγουσιν ἐξ οὐρανοῦ πεπτωκέναι καὶ τὸν ἀκηκοότα ἐκείνης καὶ πιστεύοντα ἄφεσιν λήψεσθαι τῶν ἁμαρτημάτων, ἄλλην ἄφεσιν παρ' ἣν Χριστὸς Ἰησοῦς ἀφῆκεν."

XXXIX. Ἀλλὰ γὰρ Φίλιππον ἔτεσιν ἑπτὰ βασιλεύσαντα διαδέχεται Δέκιος· ὃς δὴ τοῦ πρὸς Φίλιππον ἔχθους ἕνεκα διωγμὸν κατὰ τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν ἐγείρει, ἐν ᾧ Φαβιανοῦ ἐπὶ Ῥώμης μαρτυρίῳ τελειωθέντος, Κορνήλιος τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν διαδέχεται. 1

Ἐπὶ δὲ Παλαιστίνης Ἀλέξανδρος ὁ τῆς Ἱεροσολύμων ἐκκλησίας ἐπίσκοπος αὖθις διὰ Χριστὸν ἐν τῇ Καισαρείᾳ ἡγεμονικοῖς παραστὰς δικαστηρίοις καὶ ἐπὶ δευτέρᾳ διαπρέψας ὁμολογίᾳ, δεσμωτηρίου πειρᾶται, λιπαρῷ γήρει καὶ σεμνῇ πολιᾷ κατεστεμμένος. τούτου δὲ μετὰ τὴν ἐν τοῖς ἡγεμονικοῖς 2 3

[1] A.D. 249.

opinion had its beginning, the heresy known as that of the Helkesaites, which no sooner began than it was quenched. Origen mentions it in a public address on the eighty-second Psalm, in some such words as these: "There has come just now a certain man who prides himself on being able to champion a godless and very impious opinion, of the Helkesaites, as it is called, which has lately come into opposition with the churches. I shall lay before you the mischievous teachings of that opinion, that you may not be carried away by it. It rejects some things from every Scripture; again, it has made use of texts from every part of the Old Testament and the Gospels; it rejects the Apostle entirely. And it says that to deny is a matter of indifference, and that the discreet man will on occasions of necessity deny with his mouth, but not in his heart. And they produce a certain book of which they say that it has fallen from heaven, and that he who has heard it and believes will receive forgiveness of his sins—a forgiveness other than that which Christ Jesus has bestowed."

XXXIX. But to resume. When Philip had reigned for seven years he was succeeded by Decius.[1] He, on account of his enmity towards Philip, raised a persecution against the churches, in which Fabian was perfected by martyrdom at Rome, and was succeeded in the episcopate by Cornelius.

In Palestine, Alexander, the bishop of the church of Jerusalem, appeared once more for Christ's sake at Caesarea before the governor's courts, and for the second time distinguished himself by the confession he made; he underwent the trial of imprisonment, crowned with the venerable hoary locks of ripe old age. And when after the splendid and manifest

δικαστηρίοις λαμπρὰν καὶ περιφανῆ μαρτυρίαν ἐπὶ τῆς εἱρκτῆς κοιμηθέντος, Μαζαβάνης διάδοχος τῆς ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις ἐπισκοπῆς ἀναδείκνυται.

4 Τῷ δ' Ἀλεξάνδρῳ παραπλησίως ἐν Ἀντιοχείᾳ τοῦ Βαβυλᾶ μετὰ ὁμολογίαν ἐν δεσμωτηρίῳ μεταλλάξαντος, Φάβιος τῆς αὐτόθι προΐσταται ἐκκλησίας.

5 Τὰ μὲν οὖν Ὠριγένει κατὰ τὸν διωγμὸν συμβάντα οἷα καὶ ὅσα, καὶ ὁποίας ἔτυχεν τελευτῆς, τοῦ πονηροῦ δαίμονος ἐφαμίλλως τἀνδρὶ πανστρατιᾷ παραταξαμένου πάσῃ τε μηχανῇ καὶ δυνάμει κατ' αὐτοῦ στρατηγήσαντος παρὰ πάντας τε τοὺς τηνικάδε πολεμηθέντας διαφερόντως ἐπισκήψαντος αὐτῷ, οἷά τε καὶ ὅσα διὰ τὸν Χριστοῦ λόγον ὁ ἀνὴρ ὑπέμεινεν, δεσμὰ καὶ βασάνους τὰς κατὰ τοῦ σώματος τάς τε ὑπὸ σιδήρῳ καὶ μυχοῖς εἱρκτῆς τιμωρίας, καὶ ὡς ἐπὶ πλείσταις ἡμέραις τοὺς πόδας ὑπὸ τέσσαρα τοῦ κολαστηρίου ξύλου παραταθεὶς διαστήματα, πυρός τε ἀπειλὰς καὶ ὅσα ἄλλα πρὸς τῶν ἐχθρῶν ἐπενεχθέντα καρτερῶς ἤνεγκεν, οἷου τε τὰ κατ' αὐτὸν ἔτυχεν τέλους, μηδαμῶς αὐτὸν ἀνελεῖν παντὶ σθένει τοῦ δικαστοῦ φιλονείκως ἐνστάντος, ὁποίας τε μετὰ ταῦτα καταλείπει φωνὰς καὶ αὐτὰς πλήρεις τοῖς ἀναλήψεως δεομένοις ὠφελείας, πλεῖσται ὅσαι τἀνδρὸς ἐπιστολαὶ τἀληθὲς ὁμοῦ καὶ ἀκριβὲς περιέχουσιν.

XL. 1 Τά γέ τοι κατὰ Διονύσιον ἐκ τῆς πρὸς Γερμανὸν ἐπιστολῆς αὐτοῦ παραθήσομαι, ἔνθα τοῦτον περὶ ἑαυτοῦ λέγων ἱστορεῖ τὸν τρόπον·

Gal. 1, 20 "ἐγὼ δὲ καὶ ἐνώπιον τοῦ θεοῦ λαλῶ, καὶ αὐτὸς οἶδεν εἰ ψεύδομαι· οὐδεμίαν ἐπ' ἐμαυτοῦ βαλλόμενος οὐδὲ ἀθεεὶ πεποίημαι τὴν φυγήν, ἀλλὰ καὶ

testimony that he gave in the governor's courts he fell asleep in prison, Mazabanes was proclaimed as his successor in the episcopate at Jerusalem.

And when at Antioch Babylas, in like manner to Alexander, after confession departed this life in prison, Fabius was made president of the church there.

Now the nature and extent of that which happened to Origen at the time of the persecution, and what was the end thereof; how the evil demon marshalled all his forces in rivalry against the man, how he led them with every device and power, and singled him out, above all others upon whom he made war at that time, for special attack; the nature and extent of that which he endured for the word of Christ, chains and tortures, punishments inflicted on his body, punishments as he lay in iron and in the recesses of his dungeon; and how, when for many days his feet were stretched four spaces in that instrument of torture, the stocks, he bore with a stout heart threats of fire and everything else that was inflicted by his enemies; and the kind of issue he had thereof, the judge eagerly striving with all his might on no account to put him to death; and what sort of sayings he left behind him after this, sayings full of help for those who needed uplifting—[of all these matters] the man's numerous letters contain both a true and accurate account.

XL. As to that which befell Dionysius, I shall quote from a letter of his against Germanus, where, speaking of himself, he gives the following account: "Now I for my part speak also before God, and He knows if I lie. Acting not on my own judgement nor apart from God have I taken flight; but on a former

πρότερον, τοῦ κατὰ Δέκιον προτεθέντος διωγμοῦ, Σαβῖνος αὐτῆς ὥρας φρουμεντάριον ἔπεμψεν εἰς ἀναζήτησίν μου, κἀγὼ μὲν τεσσάρων ἡμερῶν ἐπὶ τῆς οἰκίας ἔμεινα, τὴν ἄφιξιν τοῦ φρουμενταρίου προσδοκῶν, ὃ δὲ πάντα μὲν περιῆλθεν ἀνερευνῶν, τὰς ὁδοὺς τοὺς ποταμοὺς τοὺς ἀγρούς, ἔνθα κρύπτεσθαί με ἢ βαδίζειν ὑπενόησεν, ἀορασίᾳ δὲ εἴχετο μὴ εὑρίσκων τὴν οἰκίαν· οὐ γὰρ ἐπίστευεν οἴκοι με διωκόμενον μένειν. καὶ μόλις, μετὰ τὴν τετάρτην ἡμέραν, κελεύσαντός μοι μεταστῆναι τοῦ θεοῦ καὶ παραδόξως ὁδοποιήσαντος, ἐγώ τε καὶ οἱ παῖδες καὶ πολλοὶ τῶν ἀδελφῶν ἅμα συνεξήλθομεν. καὶ ὅτι τῆς τοῦ θεοῦ προνοίας ἔργον ἐκεῖνο γέγονεν, τὰ ἑξῆς ἐδήλωσεν, ἐν οἷς τάχα τισὶν γεγόναμεν χρήσιμοι."

Εἶτά τινα μεταξὺ εἰπών, τὰ μετὰ τὴν φυγὴν αὐτῷ συμβεβηκότα δηλοῖ, ταῦτα ἐπιφέρων· "ἐγὼ μὲν γὰρ περὶ ἡλίου δυσμὰς ἅμα τοῖς σὺν ἐμοὶ γενόμενος ὑπὸ τοῖς στρατιώταις, εἰς Ταπόσιριν ἦχθην, ὁ δὲ Τιμόθεος κατὰ τὴν τοῦ θεοῦ πρόνοιαν ἔτυχεν μὴ παρὼν μηδὲ καταληφθείς, ἐλθὼν δὲ ὕστερον εὗρεν τὸν οἶκον ἔρημον καὶ φρουροῦντας αὐτὸν ὑπηρέτας, ἡμᾶς δὲ ἐξηνδραποδισμένους."

Καὶ μεθ' ἕτερά φησιν· "καὶ τίς ὁ τῆς θαυμασίας οἰκονομίας αὐτοῦ τρόπος; τὰ γὰρ ἀληθῆ λεχθήσεται. ἀπήντετό τις τῶν χωριτῶν ὑποφεύγοντι τῷ Τιμοθέῳ καὶ τεταραγμένῳ, καὶ τὴν αἰτίαν τῆς ἐπείξεως ἐπύθετο. ὁ δὲ τἀληθὲς ἐξεῖπεν, κἀκεῖνος

---

[1] The *frumentarii*, otherwise called *milites peregrini* (soldiers from abroad), were a body consisting of centurions of the legions in the provinces. As the name implies, they

occasion also, when the persecution under Decius was publicly proclaimed, that selfsame hour Sabinus sent a *frumentarius*[1] to seek me out, and on my part I remained four days at my house, expecting the arrival of the *frumentarius*; but he went around searching everything, the roads, the rivers, the fields, where he suspected I was hidden or walking, but was holden with blindness and did not find the house. For he did not believe that, pursued as I was, I was staying at home. And after the fourth day, when God bade me depart, and miraculously made a way, with difficulty did I and the boys[2] and many of the brethren set out together. And that this was the work of the Divine Providence, the sequel showed, in which we proved helpful, it may be, to some."

Then, after some intervening remarks, he tells what happened to him after the flight, adding as follows: "For I, indeed, falling about sunset into the hands of the soldiers, together with those who were with me, was brought to Taposiris,[3] but Timothy by the Divine Providence happened to be absent and to escape being seized; but coming afterwards he found the house deserted and servants guarding it, and us completely taken captive."

And further on he says: "And what was the way in which He wonderfully brought it about? For the truth shall be told. One of the country-folk met Timothy fleeing and distraught, and inquired the reason of his haste. And he spoke out the truth, and when the other heard it (now he was off to take part

had to do with the commissariat, but they also acted as couriers, and were employed on police work.

[2] These may be either the sons or the pupils or the servants of Dionysius.

[3] Near the coast, about thirty miles S.W. of Alexandria.

ἀκούσας (ἀπῆει δ' εὐωχησόμενος γάμους, διαπαννυχίζειν γὰρ αὐτοῖς ἐν ταῖς τοιαύταις συνόδοις ἔθος) εἰσελθὼν ἀπήγγειλεν τοῖς κατακειμένοις· οἱ δὲ ὁρμῇ μιᾷ, καθάπερ ὑπὸ συνθήματι, πάντες ἐξανέστησαν, καὶ δρόμῳ φερόμενοι τάχιστα ἦκον, ἐπεισπεσόντες τε ἡμῖν ἠλάλαξαν, καὶ φυγῆς εὐθέως τῶν φρουρούντων ἡμᾶς στρατιωτῶν γενομένης, ἐπέστησαν ἡμῖν, ὡς εἴχομεν ἐπὶ τῶν ἀστρώτων σκιμπόδων κατακείμενοι. κἀγὼ μέν, οἷδεν ὁ θεὸς ὡς λῃστὰς εἶναι πρότερον ἡγούμενος ἐπὶ σύλησιν καὶ ἁρπαγὴν ἀφικομένους, μένων ἐπὶ τῆς εὐνῆς, ἤμην γυμνὸς ἐν τῷ λινῷ ἐσθήματι, τὴν δὲ λοιπὴν ἐσθῆτα παρακειμένην αὐτοῖς ὤρεγον· οἱ δὲ ἐξανίστασθαί τε ἐκέλευον καὶ τὴν ταχίστην ἐξιέναι. καὶ τότε συνεὶς ἐφ' ᾧ παρῆσαν, ἀνέκραγον δεόμενος αὐτῶν καὶ ἱκετεύων ἀπιέναι καὶ ἡμᾶς ἐᾶν, εἰ δὲ βούλονταί τι χρηστὸν ἐργάσασθαι, τοὺς ἀπάγοντάς με φθάσαι καὶ τὴν κεφαλὴν αὐτοὺς τὴν ἐμὴν ἀποτεμεῖν ἠξίουν. καὶ τοιαῦτα βοῶντος, ὡς ἴσασιν οἱ κοινωνοί μου καὶ μέτοχοι πάντων γενόμενοι, ἀνίστασαν πρὸς βίαν. κἀγὼ μὲν παρῆκα ἐμαυτὸν ὕπτιον εἰς τοὔδαφος, οἱ δὲ διαλαβόντες χειρῶν καὶ ποδῶν σύροντες ἐξήγαγον, ἐπηκολούθουν δέ μοι οἱ τούτων πάντων μάρτυρες, Γάϊος Φαῦστος Πέτρος Παῦλος· οἱ καὶ ὑπολαβόντες με φοράδην ἐξήγαγον τοῦ πολιχνίου καὶ ὄνῳ γυμνῷ ἐπιβιβάσαντες ἀπήγαγον." ταῦτα περὶ ἑαυτοῦ ὁ Διονύσιος.

XLI. Ὁ δ' αὐτὸς ἐν ἐπιστολῇ τῇ πρὸς Φάβιον Ἀντιοχέων ἐπίσκοπον, τῶν κατὰ Δέκιον μαρτυρησάντων ἐν Ἀλεξανδρείᾳ τοὺς ἀγῶνας τοῦτον ἱστορεῖ τὸν τρόπον· "οὐκ ἀπὸ τοῦ βασιλικοῦ προστάγματος ὁ διωγμὸς παρ' ἡμῖν ἤρξατο, ἀλλὰ

in a marriage-feast, for it is their custom to spend the entire night in such gatherings) he went in and told those who were reclining at table. And they all, with a single impulse, as if at a preconcerted signal, rose up, and came running with all speed; and bursting in upon us they gave a shout, and when the soldiers that were guarding us straightway took to flight, they came up to us, lying as we were on pallets without bedding. And I—God knows that at first I thought they were robbers coming to plunder and steal—stayed on the bed, naked save for my linen shirt, and the rest of my garments that were lying by I held out to them. But they bade me get up and go out with all speed. And then, gathering why they were come, I cried out, begging and beseeching them to go away and leave us alone; and I asked them, if they wished to do me a good turn, to anticipate those who were leading me away and to cut off my head themselves. And while I was thus shouting, as those who were my companions and partakers in everything know, they raised me up forcibly. And I let myself fall on my back on the ground, but they seized me by the hands and feet and dragged and brought me outside. And there followed me the witnesses of all these things, Gaius, Faustus, Peter and Paul; who also took me up in their arms and brought me out of the little town, and setting me on the bare back of an ass led me away." Such is the account Dionysius gives concerning himself.

XLI. But the same person in a letter to Fabius, bishop of the Antiochenes, gives the following account of the contests of those who suffered martyrdom at Alexandria under Decius: "It was not with the imperial edict that the persecution began amongst

γὰρ ὅλον ἐνιαυτὸν προύλαβεν, καὶ φθάσας ὁ κακῶν
τῇ πόλει ταύτῃ μάντις καὶ ποιητής, ὅστις ἐκεῖνος
ἦν, ἐκίνησεν καὶ παρώρμησεν καθ' ἡμῶν τὰ πλήθη
τῶν ἐθνῶν, εἰς τὴν ἐπιχώριον αὐτοῦ δεισιδαιμονίαν
ἀναρριπίσας· οἱ δ' ἐρεθισθέντες ὑπ' αὐτοῦ καὶ
πάσης ἐξουσίας εἰς ἀνοσιουργίαν λαβόμενοι, μόνην
εὐσέβειαν τὴν θρησκείαν τῶν δαιμόνων ταύτην ὑπ
ἔλαβον, τὸ καθ' ἡμῶν φονᾶν.

"Πρῶτον οὖν πρεσβύτην, Μητρᾶν ὀνόματι, συναρ
πάσαντες καὶ κελεύσαντες ἄθεα λέγειν ῥήματα, μὴ
πειθόμενον, ξύλοις τε παίοντες τὸ σῶμα καὶ καλάμοις
ὀξέσιν τὸ πρόσωπον καὶ τοὺς ὀφθαλμοὺς κεντοῦντες
ἀγαγόντες εἰς τὸ προάστειον, κατελιθοβόλησαν.

"Εἶτα πιστὴν γυναῖκα, Κοΐνταν καλουμένην, ἐπ
τὸ εἰδωλεῖον ἀγαγόντες, ἠνάγκαζον προσκυνεῖν
ἀποστρεφομένην δὲ καὶ βδελυττομένην ἐκδήσαντες
τῶν ποδῶν διὰ πάσης τῆς πόλεως κατὰ τοῦ τρα
χέος λιθοστρώτου σύροντες προσαρασσομένην τοῖ
μυλιαίοις λίθοις, ἅμα καὶ μαστιγοῦντες, ἐπὶ τὸ
αὐτὸν ἀγαγόντες κατέλευσαν τόπον. εἶθ' ὁμο
θυμαδὸν ἅπαντες ὥρμησαν ἐπὶ τὰς τῶν θεοσεβῶν
οἰκίας, καὶ οὓς ἐγνώριζον ἕκαστοι γειτνιῶντας
ἐπεισπεσόντες ἦγον ἐσύλων τε καὶ διήρπαζον, τ
μὲν τιμιώτερα τῶν κειμηλίων νοσφιζόμενοι, τ
δὲ εὐτελέστερα καὶ ὅσα ἐκ ξύλων ἐπεποίητο
διαρριπτοῦντες καὶ κατακάοντες ἐν ταῖς ὁδοῖ
ἐαλωκυίας ὑπὸ πολεμίων πόλεως παρεῖχον θέαν
ἐξέκλινον δὲ καὶ ὑπανεχώρουν οἱ ἀδελφοὶ καὶ τὴ
ἁρπαγὴν τῶν ὑπαρχόντων ὁμοίως ἐκείνοις οἷς κο
Heb. 10, 34 Παῦλος ἐμαρτύρησεν, μετὰ χαρᾶς προσεδέξαντο
καὶ οὐκ οἶδ' εἴ τις, πλὴν εἰ μή πού τις εἰς ἐμπεσώ
μέχρι γε τούτου τὸν κύριον ἠρνήσατο.

us, but it preceded it by a whole year; and that prophet and creator of evils for this city, whoever he was, was beforehand in stirring and inciting the masses of the heathen against us, fanning anew the flame of their native superstition. Aroused by him and seizing upon all authority for their unholy deeds, they conceived that this kind of worship of their gods—the thirsting for our blood—was the only form of piety.

"First, then, they seized an old man named Metras, and bade him utter blasphemous words; and when he refused to obey they belaboured his body with cudgels, stabbed his face and eyes with sharp reeds, and leading him to the suburbs stoned him.

"Then they led a woman called Quinta, a believer, to the idol temple, and were for forcing her to worship. But when she turned away and showed her disgust, they bound her by the feet and dragged her through the whole city over the rough pavement, so that she was bruised by the big stones, beating her all the while; and bringing her to the same place they stoned her to death. Then with one accord they all rushed to the houses of the godly, and, falling each upon those whom they recognized as neighbours, they harried, spoiled and plundered them, appropriating the more valuable of their treasures, and scattering and burning in the streets the cheaper articles and such as were made of wood, until they gave the city the appearance of having been captured by enemies. But the brethren gave way and gradually retired, and, like those of whom Paul also testified, they took joyfully the spoiling of their possessions. And I know not if there be any—save, it may be, some single one who fell into their hands—who up to the present has denied the Lord.

"Ἀλλὰ καὶ τὴν θαυμασιωτάτην τότε παρθένον πρεσβῦτιν Ἀπολλωνίαν διαλαβόντες, τοὺς μὲν ὀδόντας ἅπαντας κόπτοντες τὰς σιαγόνας ἐξήλασαν, πυρὰν δὲ νήσαντες πρὸ τῆς πόλεως ζῶσαν ἠπείλουν κατακαύσειν, εἰ μὴ συνεκφωνήσειεν αὐτοῖς τὰ τῆς ἀσεβείας κηρύγματα. ἡ δὲ ὑποπαραιτησαμένη βραχὺ καὶ ἀνεθεῖσα, συντόνως ἐπήδησεν εἰς τὸ πῦρ, καὶ καταπέφλεκται.

"Σεραπίωνά τε καταλαβόντες ἐφέστιον, σκληραῖς βασάνοις αἰκισάμενοι καὶ πάντα τὰ ἄρθρα διακλάσαντες, ἀπὸ τοῦ ὑπερῴου πρηνῆ κατέρριψαν.

"Οὐδεμία δὲ ὁδός, οὐ λεωφόρος, οὐ στενωπὸς ἡμῖν βάσιμος ἦν, οὐ νύκτωρ, οὐ μεθ' ἡμέραν, ἀεὶ καὶ πανταχοῦ πάντων κεκραγότων, εἰ μὴ τὰ δύσφημά τις ἀνυμνοίη ῥήματα, τοῦτον εὐθέως δεῖν σύρεσθαί τε καὶ πίμπρασθαι. καὶ ταῦτα ἐπὶ πολὺ μὲν τοῦτον ἤκμασεν τὸν τρόπον, διαδεξαμένη δὲ τοὺς ἀθλίους ἡ στάσις καὶ πόλεμος ἐμφύλιος τὴν καθ' ἡμῶν ὠμότητα πρὸς ἀλλήλους αὐτῶν ἔτρεψεν, καὶ σμικρὸν μὲν προσανεπνεύσαμεν, ἀσχολίαν τοῦ πρὸς ἡμᾶς θυμοῦ λαβόντων, εὐθέως δὲ ἡ τῆς βασιλείας ἐκείνης τῆς εὐμενεστέρας ἡμῖν μεταβολὴ διήγγελται, καὶ πολὺς ὁ τῆς ἐφ' ἡμᾶς ἀπειλῆς φόβος ἀνετείνετο. καὶ δὴ καὶ παρῆν τὸ πρόσταγμα, αὐτὸ σχεδὸν ἐκεῖνο οἷον τὸ προρρηθὲν ὑπὸ τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν παρὰ βραχὺ τὸ φοβερώτατον, ὡς, εἰ
Matt. 24, 24 δυνατόν, σκανδαλίσαι καὶ τοὺς ἐκλεκτούς. πλὴν πάντες γε κατεπτήχεσαν· καὶ πολλοὶ μὲν εὐθέως τῶν περιφανεστέρων, οἱ μὲν ἀπήντων δεδιότες, οἱ δὲ δημοσιεύοντες ὑπὸ τῶν πράξεων ἤγοντο, οἱ

[1] Or "eagerly." [2] *i.e.* the rule of Philip.

" Moreover, they seized then that marvellous aged virgin Apollonia, broke out all her teeth with blows on her jaws, and piling up a pyre before the city threatened to burn her alive, if she refused to recite along with them their blasphemous sayings. But she asked for a brief space, and, being released, without flinching [1] she leaped into the fire and was consumed.

" Serapion they laid hold of at his own home, broke all his limbs by the severe tortures they inflicted, and cast him down head foremost from the upper story.

" Now there was no way, no thoroughfare, no alley by which we could go, either by night or during the day: always and everywhere all were shouting, that he who did not join in the chorus of blasphemy must immediately be dragged off and burnt. And this state of things continued at its height for a long time. But strife and civil war came upon the wretched men, and turned on themselves the fury of which we had been the object; and for a brief space we breathed again, since they had no time to indulge their anger against us. Straightway, however, the news was spread abroad of the change from that rule that had been more kindly to us,[2] and great was the fear of threatened punishment that hung over us. And, what is more, the edict arrived, and it was almost like that which was predicted by our Lord, wellnigh the most terrible of all, so as, if possible, to cause to stumble even the elect.[3] Howsoever that be, all cowered with fear. And of many of the more eminent persons, some came forward immediately through fear, others in public positions were compelled to do so by their business, and others were

[3] Matt. xxiv. 24. Eusebius has σκανδαλίσαι for Matthew's πλανᾶσθαι.

δὲ ὑπὸ τῶν ἀμφ' αὐτοῖς ἐφείλκοντο· ὀνομαστί τε καλούμενοι ταῖς ἀνάγνοις καὶ ἀνιέροις θυσίαις προσῄεσαν, οἳ μὲν ὠχριῶντες καὶ τρέμοντες, ὥσπερ οὐ θύσοντες, ἀλλ' αὐτοὶ θύματα καὶ σφάγια τοῖς εἰδώλοις ἐσόμενοι, ὡς ὑπὸ πολλοῦ τοῦ περιεστῶτος δήμου χλεύην αὐτοῖς ἐπιφέρεσθαι καὶ δήλους μὲν εἶναι πρὸς πάντα δειλοὺς ὑπάρχοντας, καὶ πρὸς τὸ τεθνάναι καὶ πρὸς τὸ θῦσαι· οἳ δέ τινες ἑτοιμότερον τοῖς βωμοῖς προσέτρεχον, ἰσχυριζόμενοι τῇ θρασύτητι τὸ μηδὲ πρότερον Χριστιανοὶ γεγονέναι, περὶ ὧν ἡ τοῦ κυρίου πρόρρησις ἀληθεστάτη
cf. ibid. 19, 23 ὅτι δυσκόλως σωθήσονται. τῶν δὲ λοιπῶν οἳ μὲν ἔπονto τούτοις ἑκατέροις, οἳ δὲ ἔφευγον· οἳ
Heb. 11, 36 δὲ ἡλίσκοντο, καὶ τούτων οἳ μὲν ἄχρι δεσμῶν καὶ φυλακῆς χωρήσαντες, καὶ τινὲς καὶ πλείονας ἡμέρας καθειρχθέντες, εἶτα καὶ πρὶν ἐπὶ δικαστήριον ἐλθεῖν, ἐξωμόσαντο, οἳ δὲ καὶ βασάνοις ἐπὶ ποσὸν ἐγκαρτερήσαντες, πρὸς τὸ ἑξῆς ἀπεῖπον.

"Οἱ δὲ στερροὶ καὶ μακάριοι στῦλοι τοῦ κυρίου κραταιωθέντες ὑπ' αὐτοῦ καὶ τῆς ἰσχυρᾶς ἐν αὐτοῖς πίστεως ἀξίαν καὶ ἀνάλογον δύναμιν καὶ καρτερίαν λαβόντες, θαυμαστοὶ γεγόνασιν αὐτοῦ τῆς βασιλείας μάρτυρες· ὧν πρῶτος Ἰουλιανός, ἄνθρωπος ποδαγρός, μὴ στῆναι, μὴ βαδίσαι δυνάμενος, σὺν ἑτέροις δύο τοῖς φέρουσιν αὐτὸν προσήχθη· ὧν ὁ μὲν ἕτερος εὐθὺς ἠρνήσατο, ὁ δ' ἕτερος, Κρονίων ὀνόματι, ἐπίκλην δὲ Εὔνους, καὶ αὐτὸς ὁ πρεσβύτης Ἰουλιανὸς ὁμολογήσαντες τὸν κύριον, διὰ πάσης τῆς πόλεως, μεγίστης οὔσης ὡς ἴστε, καμήλοις ἐποχούμενοι καὶ μετέωροι μαστιγούμενοι, τέλος ἀσβέστῳ, περικεχυμένου τοῦ δήμου παντός, κατ-

dragged by those around them. Called by name they approached the impure and unholy sacrifices, some pale and trembling, as if they were not for sacrificing but rather to be themselves the sacrifices and victims to the idols, so that the large crowd that stood around heaped mockery upon them, and it was evident that they were by nature cowards in everything, cowards both to die and to sacrifice. But others ran eagerly towards the altars, affirming by their forwardness that they had not been Christians even formerly; concerning whom the Lord very truly predicted that they shall hardly be saved.[1] Of the rest, some followed one or other of these, others fled; some were captured, and of these some went as far as bonds and imprisonment, and certain, when they had been shut up for many days, then forswore themselves even before coming into court, while others, who remained firm for a certain time under tortures, subsequently gave in.

"But the firm and blessed pillars of the Lord, being strengthened by Him, and receiving power and stedfastness in due measure according to the mighty faith that was in them, proved themselves admirable martyrs of His kingdom. Of these the first was Julian, a man who suffered from gout, unable to stand or walk. He was brought up with two others who carried him, of whom the one straightway denied; the other, Cronion by name, but surnamed Eunus, and the old man Julian himself, confessed the Lord, and were carried upon camels through the whole city, very large in extent as ye know, and thus uplifted were beaten, and in the end, surrounded by all the

[1] A very free reference to Matt. xix. 23; *cf.* Mark x. 23; Luke xviii. 24.

ετάκησαν. στρατιώτης τε αὐτοῖς ἀπαγομένοις παραστὰς καὶ τοῖς ἐφυβρίζουσιν ἐναντιωθείς, ἐκβοησάντων ἐκείνων προσαχθεὶς ὁ ἀνδρειότατος ὁπλομάχος τοῦ θεοῦ Βησᾶς κἀν τῷ μεγάλῳ πολέμῳ τῷ περὶ τῆς εὐσεβείας ἀριστεύσας, ἀπετμήθη τὴν κεφαλήν. καί τις ἕτερος, τὸ μὲν γένος Λίβυς, τὴν δὲ προσηγορίαν ἅμα καὶ τὴν εὐλογίαν ἀληθὴς Μάκαρ, προτροπῆς αὐτῷ πολλῆς ὑπὸ τοῦ δικαστοῦ πρὸς ἄρνησιν γενομένης, οὐχ ὑπαχθεὶς ζῶν καταπέφλεκται. Ἐπίμαχός τε μετ' αὐτοὺς καὶ Ἀλέξανδρος μετὰ πολὺν ὃν ἔμειναν δεσμῶται χρόνον, μυρίας διενεγκόντες ἀλγηδόνας ξυστῆρας μάστιγας, [πυρὶ] ἀσβέστῳ καὶ οὗτοι διεχύθησαν.

See Matt. 5, 10, 11

"Καὶ σὺν αὐτοῖς γυναῖκες τέσσαρες, Ἀμμωνάριόν τε ἁγία παρθένος, πάνυ φιλονείκως αὐτὴν ἐπὶ πλεῖστον τοῦ δικαστοῦ βασανίσαντος, ἅτε προαποφηναμένην ὅτι μηδὲν ὧν ἐκεῖνος κελεύοι φθέγξεται, ἀληθεύσασα τὴν ἐπαγγελίαν, ἀπήχθη· αἱ δὲ λοιπαί, ἡ σεμνοτάτη πρεσβῦτις Μερκουρία καὶ ἡ πολύπαις μέν, οὐχ ὑπὲρ τὸν κύριον δὲ ἀγαπήσασα τὰ τέκνα Διονυσία, καταιδεσθέντος εἰς ἀνήνυτον ἔτι βασανίζειν καὶ ὑπὸ γυναικῶν ἡττᾶσθαι τοῦ ἡγεμόνος, σιδήρῳ τεθνᾶσιν, μηκέτι βασάνων πεῖραν λαβοῦσαι· τὰς γὰρ ὑπὲρ πασῶν ἡ πρόμαχος Ἀμμωνάριον ἀνεδέδεκτο.

"Ἥρων δὲ καὶ Ἀτὴρ καὶ Ἰσίδωρος Αἰγύπτιοι καὶ σὺν αὐτοῖς παιδάριον ὡς πεντεκαιδεκαέτης ὁ Διόσκορος παρεδόθησαν· καὶ πρῶτον τὸ μειράκιον λόγοις τε ἀπατᾶν ὡς εὐπαράγωγον καὶ βασάνοις καταναγκάζειν ὡς εὐένδοτον πειρωμένου, οὔτ' ἐπείσθη οὔτ' εἶξεν ὁ Διόσκορος· τοὺς δὲ λοιποὺς

people, burnt in quicklime. A soldier who stood by as they were being led off, opposed those who insulted them; and, when the crowd cried out, Besas, that brave warrior of God, was brought up, and after excelling in the great war of piety was beheaded. And another, a Libyan by race, Macar,[1] true both to his name and the [Lord's] benediction, though the judge urged him strongly to deny, was not induced, and so was burnt alive. And after these Epimachus and Alexander, when they had remained a long time in prison, enduring to the end countless agonies from scrapers and scourges, were also burnt in quicklime.

"And with them four women: Ammonarion, a holy virgin, though tortured vigorously by the judge for a very long time, inasmuch as she had made it plain beforehand that she would not utter anything of what he bade her, kept true to her promise, and was led away. And as to the rest, Mercuria, an aged woman of reverend mien, and Dionysia, the mother indeed of many children, who yet did not love them above the Lord, when the governor was ashamed to ply continued torture all to no end, and to be worsted by women,—they were put to death by the sword, and so had trial of no further tortures. For these Ammonarion, true champion, had taken upon herself on behalf of all.

"Hero and Ater and Isidore, Egyptians, and with them a young boy of about fifteen named Dioscorus were delivered up. And at first [the governor] tried to wheedle the lad by words, as one easily led astray, and to compel him by tortures, as one that would easily give in; but Dioscorus neither obeyed nor

[1] "Blessed."

ἀγριώτατα καταξήνας, ἐγκαρτερήσαντας πυρὶ καὶ τούτους ἔδωκεν. τὸν δὲ Διόσκορον ἐλλαμπρυνάμενόν τε δημοσίᾳ καὶ σοφώτατα πρὸς τὰς ἰδίας πεύσεις ἀποκρινάμενον θαυμάσας, παρῆκεν, ὑπέρθεσιν φήσας εἰς μετάνοιαν αὐτῷ διὰ τὴν ἡλικίαν ἐπιμετρεῖν· καὶ νῦν ὁ θεοπρεπέστατος σὺν ἡμῖν ἐστιν Διόσκορος, εἰς μακρότερον τὸν ἀγῶνα καὶ διαρκέστερον μείνας τὸν ἆθλον.

" Νεμεσίων δέ τις, κἀκεῖνος Αἰγύπτιος, ἐσυκο- 2
φαντήθη μὲν ὡς δὴ σύνοικος λῃστῶν, ἀπολυσάμενος δὲ ταύτην παρὰ τῷ ἑκατοντάρχῳ τὴν ἀλλοτριωτάτην διαβολήν, καταμηνυθεὶς ὡς Χριστιανὸς ἦκεν δεσμώτης ἐπὶ τὸν ἡγούμενον· ὁ δὲ
Cf. Matt. 27, 38; Mark 15, 27; Luke 23, 33; John 19, 18
ἀδικώτατος διπλαῖς αὐτὸν ἢ τοὺς λῃστὰς ταῖς τε βασάνοις καὶ ταῖς μάστιξιν λυμηνάμενος, μεταξὺ τῶν λῃστῶν κατέφλεξεν τιμηθέντα τὸν μακάριον τῷ τοῦ Χριστοῦ παραδείγματι.

" Ἀθρόον δέ τι σύνταγμα στρατιωτικόν, Ἄμμων 2
καὶ Ζήνων καὶ Πτολεμαῖος καὶ Ἰγγένης καὶ σὺν αὐτοῖς πρεσβύτης Θεόφιλος, εἱστήκεισαν πρὸ τοῦ δικαστηρίου· κρινομένου δή τινος ὡς Χριστιανοῦ καὶ πρὸς ἄρνησιν ἤδη ῥέποντος, ἐπρίοντο οὗτοι παρεστηκότες, καὶ τοῖς τε προσώποις ἐνένευον καὶ τὰς χεῖρας ἀνέτεινον καὶ συνεσχηματίζοντο τοῖς σώμασιν. ἐπιστροφῆς δὲ πάντων πρὸς αὐτοὺς 2
γενομένης, πρίν τινας αὐτῶν ἄλλως λαβέσθαι, φθάσαντες ἐπὶ τὸ βάθρον ἀνέδραμον, εἶναι Χριστιανοὶ λέγοντες, ὡς τόν τε ἡγεμόνα καὶ τοὺς συνέδρους ἐμφόβους γενέσθαι, καὶ τοὺς μὲν κρινομένους εὐθαρσεστάτους ἐφ' οἷς πείσονται, φαίνεσθαι, τοὺς δὲ δικάζοντας ἀποδειλιᾶν. καὶ οὗτοι μὲν ἐκ δικαστηρίων ἐνεπόμπευσαν καὶ ἠγαλλιάσαντο τῇ

yielded. The rest he savagely tore in pieces, and, when they endured, committed them also to the flames. But, marvelling at the splendid bearing of Dioscorus in public and the wise answers he made to his questions in private, he let him off, saying that he granted him a period of delay to repent, on account of his youth. And now the most godly Dioscorus is with us, having remained for a still longer contest and a more lasting conflict.

"A certain Nemesion, he also an Egyptian, was falsely accused of consorting with robbers, and when he had cleared himself before the centurion of that charge so foreign to his character, he was informed against as being a Christian, and came bound before the governor. He most unjustly inflicted on him twice as many tortures and scourgings as he did on the robbers, and burnt him between them, thus honouring him, happy man, with a likeness to Christ.

"A whole band of soldiers, Ammon and Zeno and Ptolemy and Ingenuus, and with them an old man Theophilus, had taken their stand before the court. Now a certain man was being tried as a Christian, and at that moment was inclining towards denial, when these men standing by ground their teeth, cast looks at him, stretched out their hands and made gestures with their bodies. And when all turned towards them, before anyone could otherwise seize them, they ran of their own accord to the prisoner's dock, saying that they were Christians; so that both the governor and his assessors were filled with fear, and those who were on their trial showed themselves very courageous in the face of their future sufferings, while the judges were affrighted. So these men marched from the court in proud pro-

2 Cor. 2, 14 μαρτυρίᾳ, θριαμβεύοντος αὐτοὺς ἐνδόξως τοῦ θεοῦ.

XLII. "Ἄλλοι δὲ πλεῖστοι κατὰ πόλεις καὶ 1
κώμας ὑπὸ τῶν ἐθνῶν διεσπάσθησαν, ὧν ἑνὸς
παραδείγματος ἕνεκεν ἐπιμνησθήσομαι. Ἰσχυ-
ρίων ἐπετρόπευέν τινι τῶν ἀρχόντων ἐπὶ μισθῷ.
τοῦτον ὁ μισθοδότης ἐκέλευσεν θῦσαι, μὴ πει-
θόμενον ὕβριζεν, ἐμμένοντα προεπηλάκιζεν, ὑφ-
ισταμένου, βακτηρίαν μεγίστην λαβὼν διὰ τῶν
ἐντέρων καὶ τῶν σπλάγχνων διώσας, ἀπέκτεινεν.

"Τί δεῖ λέγειν τὸ πλῆθος τῶν ἐν ἐρημίαις καὶ 2
Cf. Heb. 11, 38 ὄρεσιν πλανηθέντων, ὑπὸ λιμοῦ καὶ δίψης καὶ
κρύους καὶ νόσων καὶ λῃστῶν καὶ θηρίων δι-
εφθαρμένων; ὧν οἱ περιγενόμενοι τῆς ἐκείνων εἰσὶν
ἐκλογῆς καὶ νίκης μάρτυρες, ἓν δὲ καὶ τούτων εἰς
δήλωσιν ἔργον παραθήσομαι. Χαιρήμων ἦν ὑπέρ- 3
γηρως τῆς Νείλου καλουμένης πόλεως ἐπίσκοπος.
οὗτος εἰς τὸ Ἀράβιον ὄρος ἅμα τῇ συμβίῳ ἑαυτοῦ
φυγών, οὐκ ἐπανελήλυθεν, οὐδὲ ἐδυνήθησαν ἰδεῖν
οὐκέτι, καίτοι πολλὰ διερευνησάμενοι, οἱ ἀδελφοὶ
οὔτε αὐτοὺς οὔτε τὰ σώματα. πολλοὶ δὲ οἱ κατ' 4
αὐτὸ τὸ Ἀραβικὸν ὄρος ἐξανδραποδισθέντες ὑπὸ
βαρβάρων Σαρακηνῶν· ὧν οἳ μὲν μόλις ἐπὶ πολλοῖς
χρήμασιν ἐλυτρώθησαν, οἳ δὲ μέχρι νῦν οὐδέπω.

"Καὶ ταῦτα διεξῆλθον οὐ μάτην, ἀδελφέ, ἀλλ'
ἵνα εἰδῇς ὅσα καὶ ἡλίκα δεινὰ παρ' ἡμῖν συνέβη·
ὧν οἱ μᾶλλον πεπειραμένοι πλείονα ἂν εἰδεῖεν."

Εἶτα τούτοις ἐπιφέρει μετὰ βραχέα λέγων· 5
" αὐτοὶ τοίνυν οἱ θεῖοι μάρτυρες παρ' ἡμῖν, οἱ νῦν
τοῦ Χριστοῦ πάρεδροι καὶ τῆς βασιλείας αὐτοῦ

[1] A free reference to Heb. xi. 38.

[2] *σύμβιος* is a common word for husband or wife in later Greek.

cession, exulting in their witness, God spreading abroad their fame gloriously.

XLII. "And many others throughout the cities and villages were torn in pieces by the heathen, of whom I shall mention one as an example. Ischyrion was acting as the hired steward of one of the rulers. His employer bade him sacrifice; when he refused he insulted him, when he abode by his refusal he abused him foully; and as he still remained firm he took a very large stick, thrust it through his bowels and vital organs, and so killed him.

"What need is there to speak of the multitude of those who wandered in deserts and mountains,[1] and perished by hunger and thirst and frost and diseases and robbers and wild beasts? Such of them as survive bear testimony to their election and victory; but one fact in connexion with these men also I shall adduce as evidence. Chaeremon was bishop of the city called Nilopolis, and of extreme age. He fled to the Arabian mountain with his wife,[2] and never returned, nor could the brethren ever lay eyes again either on them or their bodies, although they made a long and thorough search. But many in that same Arabian mountain were reduced to utter slavery by barbarian Saracens. Of these some were with difficulty ransomed for large sums, others have not yet been, up to this day.

"And I have not given this account, brother, to no purpose, but that you may know all the terrible things that happened with us. Those who have had a larger experience of them would know more examples."

Then, after a little, he adds as follows: "Therefore the divine martyrs themselves among us, who now are assessors of Christ, and share the fellowship of

κοινωνοὶ καὶ μέτοχοι τῆς κρίσεως αὐτοῦ καὶ
Cf. Matt. 19, 28; 1 Cor. 6, 2. 3; Rev. 20, 4. *συνδικάζοντες αὐτῷ, τῶν παραπεπτωκότων ἀδελφῶν τινας ὑπευθύνους τοῖς τῶν θυσιῶν ἐγκλήμασιν γενομένους προσελάβοντο, καὶ τὴν ἐπιστροφὴν καὶ μετάνοιαν αὐτῶν ἰδόντες δεκτήν τε γενέσθαι*
Cf. Ezek. 33, 11; 2 Pet. 3, 9 *δυναμένην τῷ μὴ βουλομένῳ καθόλου τὸν θάνατον τοῦ ἁμαρτωλοῦ ὡς τὴν μετάνοιαν δοκιμάσαντες, εἰσεδέξαντο καὶ συνήγαγον καὶ συνέστησαν καὶ προσευχῶν αὐτοῖς καὶ ἑστιάσεων ἐκοινώνησαν. τί οὖν ἡμῖν, ἀδελφοί, περὶ τούτων συμβουλεύετε; τί ἡμῖν πρακτέον; σύμψηφοι καὶ ὁμογνώμονες* 6
αὐτοῖς καταστῶμεν καὶ τὴν κρίσιν αὐτῶν καὶ τὴν χάριν φυλάξωμεν καὶ τοῖς ἐλεηθεῖσιν ὑπ' αὐτῶν χρηστευσώμεθα, ἢ τὴν κρίσιν αὐτῶν ἄδικον ποιησώμεθα καὶ δοκιμαστὰς αὐτοὺς τῆς ἐκείνων γνώμης ἐπιστήσωμεν καὶ τὴν χρηστότητα λυπήσωμεν καὶ τὴν τάξιν ἀνασκευάσωμεν;"

Ταῦτα δ' εἰκότως ὁ Διονύσιος παρατέθειται, *τὸν περὶ τῶν ἐξησθενηκότων κατὰ τὸν τοῦ διωγμοῦ καιρὸν ἀνακινῶν λόγον,* XLIII. *ἐπειδήπερ τῇ* 1 *κατὰ τούτων ἀρθεὶς ὑπερηφανίᾳ* Νοουάτος, *τῆς* Ῥωμαίων *ἐκκλησίας πρεσβύτερος, ὡς μηκέτ' οὔσης αὐτοῖς σωτηρίας ἐλπίδος μηδ' εἰ πάντα τὰ εἰς ἐπιστροφὴν γνησίαν καὶ καθαρὰν ἐξομολόγησιν ἐπιτελοῖεν, ἰδίας αἱρέσεως τῶν κατὰ λογισμοῦ φυσίωσιν* Καθαροὺς *ἑαυτοὺς ἀποφηνάντων ἀρχηγὸς καθίσταται· ἐφ' ᾧ συνόδου μεγίστης ἐπὶ* Ῥώμης 2 *συγκροτηθείσης ἑξήκοντα μὲν τὸν ἀριθμὸν ἐπισκόπων, πλειόνων δ' ἔτι μᾶλλον πρεσβυτέρων τε*

---

[1] *συνήγαγον*: *cf.* vii. 7. 4.

[2] The *consistentes*, or bystanders, were the highest order

His kingdom, and take part in His decisions and judge along with Him, have espoused the cause of certain of the fallen brethren who became answerable for the charge of sacrificing ; and seeing their conversion and repentance, they judged it had the power to prove acceptable to Him who hath no pleasure at all in the death of the sinner, but rather his repentance ; and so they received and admitted them to the worship of the Church[1] as *consistentes*,[2] and gave them fellowship in their prayers and feasts. What then do ye counsel us, brethren, on these matters ? What are we to do ? Are we to be of like opinion and mind with them, uphold their decision and concession, and deal kindly with those they pitied ? Or shall we esteem their decision unjust, and set ourselves up as critics of their opinion, cause grief to kindness, and do away with their arrangement ? "

Now these words Dionysius added suitably, raising the question about those who had proved weak in the time of persecution, XLIII. since Novatus,[3] a presbyter of the church of the Romans, being lifted up by arrogance against these, as if there was no longer any hope of salvation for them, not even if they were to perform everything that a genuine conversion and a pure confession demand, became the leader of a separate sect of those who, in their pride of mind, styled themselves Puritans. Whereupon a very large synod was assembled at Rome, of sixty bishops and a still greater number of presbyters

of penitents. They were admitted to the eucharistic prayers, but debarred from communion.

[3] This person, the founder of the Novatianist sect, is called by Eusebius, and subsequent Greek writers, Novatus, but by the Westerns (no doubt rightly) Novatianus. *Cf.* the letters of Dionysius in c. 45 and vii. 8.

καὶ διακόνων, ἰδίως τε κατὰ τὰς λοιπὰς ἐπαρχίας τῶν κατὰ χώραν ποιμένων περὶ τοῦ πρακτέου διασκεψαμένων, δόγμα παρίσταται τοῖς πᾶσιν, τὸν μὲν Νοουάτον ἅμα τοῖς σὺν αὐτῷ συνεπαρθεῖσιν τούς τε συνευδοκεῖν τῇ μισαδέλφῳ καὶ ἀπανθρωποτάτῃ γνώμῃ τἀνδρὸς προαιρουμένους ἐν ἀλλοτρίοις τῆς ἐκκλησίας ἡγεῖσθαι, τοὺς δὲ τῇ συμφορᾷ περιπεπτωκότας τῶν ἀδελφῶν ἰᾶσθαι καὶ θεραπεύειν τοῖς τῆς μετανοίας φαρμάκοις.

Ἦλθον δ' οὖν εἰς ἡμᾶς ἐπιστολαὶ Κορνηλίου 3
Ῥωμαίων ἐπισκόπου πρὸς τὸν τῆς Ἀντιοχέων ἐκκλησίας Φάβιον, δηλοῦσαι τὰ περὶ τῆς Ῥωμαίων συνόδου καὶ τὰ δόξαντα τοῖς κατὰ τὴν Ἰταλίαν καὶ Ἀφρικὴν καὶ τὰς αὐτόθι χώρας, καὶ ἄλλαι πάλιν, Ῥωμαϊκῇ φωνῇ συντεταγμέναι, Κυπριανοῦ καὶ τῶν ἅμ' αὐτῷ κατὰ τὴν Ἀφρικήν, δι' ὧν τὸ καὶ αὐτοὺς συνευδοκεῖν τῷ δεῖν τυγχάνειν ἐπικουρίας τοὺς πεπειρασμένους ἐνεφαίνετο καὶ τῷ χρῆναι εὐλόγως τῆς καθολικῆς ἐκκλησίας ἐκκήρυκτον ποιήσασθαι τὸν τῆς αἱρέσεως ἀρχηγὸν πάντας τε ὁμοίως τοὺς συναπαγομένους αὐτῷ. ταύταις 4
ἄλλη τις ἐπιστολὴ συνῆπτο τοῦ Κορνηλίου περὶ τῶν κατὰ τὴν σύνοδον ἀρεσάντων καὶ πάλιν ἑτέρα περὶ τῶν κατὰ Νοουάτον πραχθέντων· ἀφ' ἧς καὶ μέρη παραθέσθαι οὐδὲν ἂν κωλύοι, ὅπως εἰδεῖεν τὰ κατ' αὐτὸν οἱ τῇδε ἐντυγχάνοντες τῇ γραφῇ. τὸν δὴ οὖν Φάβιον ἀναδιδάσκων ὁποῖός τις ὁ 5
Νοουάτος γεγόνοι τὸν τρόπον, αὐτὰ δὴ ταῦτα γράφει ὁ Κορνήλιος· " ἵνα δὲ γνῷς ὅτι πρόπαλαι
1 Tim. 3, 1 ὀρεγόμενος τῆς ἐπισκοπῆς ὁ θαυμάσιος οὗτος καὶ κρύπτων ἐν αὐτῷ τὴν προπετῆ ταύτην αὐτοῦ ἐπιθυμίαν ἐλάνθανεν, ἐπικαλύμματι τῆς αὐτοῦ

and deacons, while in the rest of the provinces the pastors in their several regions individually considered the question as to what was to be done. It was unanimously decreed that Novatus, together with the partners of his arrogance, and those who decided to agree with the man's brother-hating and most inhuman opinion, should be considered as strangers to the Church, but that such of the brethren as had fallen into the misfortune should be treated and restored with the medicines of repentance.

Now there have reached us a letter of Cornelius, bishop of the Romans, to Fabius, bishop of the church of the Antiochenes, telling the facts concerning the Roman Synod, and what was decreed by them of Italy and Africa and the regions thereabout; and, again, another of Cyprian and of those with him in Africa, composed in the Latin language, in which it was made clear that they also agreed that those who had suffered trial should meet with succour, and that in the reason of things it was fitting that the leader of the heresy should be excommunicated from the Catholic Church, and likewise all those who were led away with him. To these was subjoined a certain other letter of Cornelius, on the resolutions of the synod; and, again, another on the doings of Novatus. There is nothing to prevent me from quoting parts of this last, so that those who read this book may know about him. In explaining, then, to Fabius what kind of manner of man Novatus was, Cornelius writes these very words: "But that you may know that for a long time back this marvellous fellow has been seeking the office of a bishop, and has succeeded in concealing in his heart this his violent desire, using

ἀπονοίας τῷ κατ' ἀρχὰς σὺν αὐτῷ τοὺς ὁμολογητὰς ἐσχηκέναι χρώμενος, εἰπεῖν βούλομαι. Μάξιμος πρεσβύτερος τῶν παρ' ἡμῖν καὶ Οὐρβανός, δὶς τὴν ἐξ ὁμολογίας δόξαν ἀρίστην καρπωσάμενοι, Σιδόνιός τε καὶ Κελερῖνος, ἀνὴρ ὃς πάσας βασάνους διὰ τὸν τοῦ θεοῦ ἔλεον καρτερικώτατα διενέγκας καὶ τῇ ῥώμῃ τῆς αὐτοῦ πίστεως τὸ ἀσθενὲς τῆς σαρκὸς ἐπιρρώσας, κατὰ κράτος νενίκηκεν τὸν ἀντικείμενον, οὗτοι δὴ οὖν οἱ ἄνδρες κατανοήσαντες αὐτὸν καὶ καταφωράσαντες τὴν ἐν αὐτῷ πανουργίαν τε καὶ παλιμβολίαν τάς τε ἐπιορκίας καὶ τὰς ψευδολογίας καὶ τὴν ἀκοινωνησίαν αὐτοῦ καὶ λυκοφιλίαν, ἐπανῆλθον εἰς τὴν ἁγίαν ἐκκλησίαν, καὶ ἅπαντα αὐτοῦ τὰ τεχνάσματα καὶ πονηρεύματα, ἃ ἐκ πολλοῦ ἔχων ἐν ἑαυτῷ ὑπεστέλλετο, παρόντων ἱκανῶν τοῦτο μὲν ἐπισκόπων τοῦτο δὲ πρεσβυτέρων καὶ λαϊκῶν ἀνδρῶν παμπόλλων, ἐξήγγειλαν, ἀποδυρόμενοι καὶ μεταγινώσκοντες ἐφ' οἷς πεισθέντες τῷ δολερῷ καὶ κακοήθει θηρίῳ πρὸς ὀλίγον χρόνον τῆς ἐκκλησίας ἀπελείφθησαν."

Εἶτα μετὰ βραχέα φησίν· "ἀμήχανον ὅσην, ἀγαπητὲ ἀδελφέ, τροπὴν καὶ μεταβολὴν ἐν βραχεῖ καιρῷ ἐθεασάμεθα ἐπ' αὐτοῦ γεγενημένην. ὁ γάρ τοι λαμπρότατος καὶ δι' ὅρκων φοβερῶν τινων
1 Tim. 3, 1 πιστούμενος τὸ μηδ' ὅλως ἐπισκοπῆς ὀρέγεσθαι, αἰφνίδιον ἐπίσκοπος ὥσπερ ἐκ μαγγάνου τινὸς εἰς τὸ μέσον ῥιφεὶς ἀναφαίνεται. οὗτος γάρ τοι ὁ δογματιστής, ὁ τῆς ἐκκλησιαστικῆς ἐπιστήμης ὑπερασπιστής, ὁπηνίκα παρασπᾶσθαί τε καὶ ὑφαρπάζειν τὴν μὴ δοθεῖσαν αὐτῷ ἄνωθεν ἐπισκοπὴν ἐπεχείρει, δύο ἑαυτῷ κοινωνούς, ἀπεγνωκότας τῆς

as a veil for his insane folly the fact that he had the confessors with him from the beginning, I wish to speak. Maximus, one of our presbyters, and Urban, both of whom twice reaped the highest meed of renown by confession, and Sidonius, and Celerinus, a man who, by the mercy of God, bore with the utmost endurance all kinds of tortures, and by the strength of his faith strengthened the weakness of his body, and so has mightily overcome the adversary—these men marked him, and detecting the craftiness and duplicity that was in him, his perjuries and falsehoods, his unsociability and wolf-like friendship, returned to the holy Church. And all the knavish tricks and devices that he had long dissembled in his heart, they made known in the presence both of a number of bishops, and also of very many presbyters and laymen, bewailing and repenting of the fact that for a brief space they had left the Church under the persuasion of this treacherous and malicious wild beast."

Then shortly afterwards he says: "How extraordinary a change and transformation, brother beloved, we have beheld to have taken place in him in a little while! For in sooth this highly distinguished person, who was in the habit of pledging himself by some terrible oaths in no wise to seek the office of a bishop, of a sudden appears as a bishop as if he were cast into our midst by some contrivance.[1] For in sooth this master of doctrine, this champion of the Church's discipline, when he was attempting to wrest and filch away the episcopate that was not given him from above, chose to himself two com-

[1] μαγγάνου: the reference is probably to the method of raising, by means of pulleys, cages containing wild beasts to the level of the arena.

ἑαυτῶν σωτηρίας, ἐπελέξατο, ὡς ἂν εἰς βραχύ τι μέρος καὶ ἐλάχιστον τῆς Ἰταλίας ἀποστείλῃ κἀκεῖθεν ἐπισκόπους τρεῖς, ἀνθρώπους ἀγροίκους καὶ ἁπλουστάτους, πλαστῇ τινι ἐπιχειρήσει ἐξαπατήσῃ, διαβεβαιούμενος καὶ διισχυριζόμενος δεῖν αὐτοὺς ἐν τάχει παραγενέσθαι εἰς Ῥώμην, ὡς δῆθεν πᾶσα ἥτις δήποτε οὖν διχοστασία γεγονυῖα σὺν καὶ ἑτέροις ἐπισκόποις καὶ αὐτῶν μεσιτευόντων διαλυθῇ· οὓς παραγενομένους, ἅτε δή, ὡς ἔφθημεν 9
λέγοντες, ἀνθρώπους ἁπλουστέρους περὶ τὰς τῶν πονηρῶν μηχανάς τε καὶ ῥᾳδιουργίας, συγκλεισθέντας ὑπό τινων ὁμοίων αὐτῷ τεταραγμένων ἀνθρώπων, ὥρᾳ δεκάτῃ, μεθύοντας καὶ κραιπαλῶντας, μετὰ βίας ἠνάγκασεν εἰκονικῇ τινι καὶ ματαίᾳ χειρεπιθεσίᾳ ἐπισκοπὴν αὐτῷ δοῦναι, ἣν ἐνέδρᾳ καὶ πανουργίᾳ, μὴ ἐπιβάλλουσαν αὐτῷ, ἐκδικεῖ· ἐξ ὧν εἷς μετ᾽ οὐ πολὺ ἐπανῆλθεν εἰς τὴν 10
ἐκκλησίαν, ἀποδυρόμενος καὶ ἐξομολογούμενος τὸ ἑαυτοῦ ἁμάρτημα, ᾧ καὶ ἐκοινωνήσαμεν λαϊκῷ, ὑπὲρ αὐτοῦ δεηθέντος παντὸς τοῦ παρόντος λαοῦ· καὶ τῶν λοιπῶν δὲ ἐπισκόπων διαδόχους εἰς τοὺς τόπους, ἐν οἷς ἦσαν, χειροτονήσαντες ἀπεστάλκαμεν.

"Ὁ ἐκδικητὴς οὖν τοῦ εὐαγγελίου οὐκ ἠπίστατο 11
ἕνα ἐπίσκοπον δεῖν εἶναι ἐν καθολικῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ, ἐν ᾗ οὐκ ἠγνόει, πῶς γάρ; πρεσβυτέρους εἶναι τεσσαράκοντα ἕξ, διακόνους ἑπτά, ὑποδιακόνους ἑπτά, ἀκολούθους δύο καὶ τεσσαράκοντα, ἐξορκιστὰς δὲ καὶ ἀναγνώστας ἅμα πυλωροῖς δύο καὶ πεντήκοντα, χήρας σὺν θλιβομένοις ὑπὲρ τὰς χιλίας πεντακοσίας, οὓς πάντας ἡ τοῦ δεσπότου χάρις καὶ φιλανθρωπία διατρέφει· ὧν οὐδὲ τοσοῦτο 12
πλῆθος καὶ οὕτως ἀναγκαῖον ἐν τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ, διὰ

panions who had renounced their own salvation, that he might send them to a small and very insignificant part of Italy, and entice thence by some made-up device three bishops, rough and very simple men. He confidently maintained and affirmed the necessity of their coming quickly to Rome, on the pretext that any dissension whatsoever that had arisen might be ended by their activity as mediators, conjointly with other bishops. When they arrived, inasmuch as they were too simple, as we said before, for the unscrupulous devices of the wicked, they were shut up by certain disorderly men like himself, and at the tenth hour, when they were drunk, and sick with the after effects, he forcibly compelled them to give him a bishop's office by a counterfeit and vain laying on of hands, an office that he assumed by crafty treachery since it did not fall to his lot. One of the bishops not long afterwards returned to the Church, bewailing and confessing his fault; with whom we had communion as a layman, all the laity present interceding for him. And as for the remaining bishops, to these we appointed successors, whom we sent into the places where they were.

" This vindicator, then, of the Gospel did not know that there should be one bishop in a catholic church, in which he was not ignorant (for how could he be ?) that there are forty-six presbyters, seven deacons, seven sub-deacons, forty-two acolytes, fifty-two exorcists, readers and door-keepers, above fifteen hundred widows and persons in distress, all of whom are supported by the grace and loving-kindness of the Master. But not even did this great multitude, so

τῆς τοῦ θεοῦ προνοίας πλούσιός τε καὶ πληθύων ἀριθμὸς μετὰ μεγίστου καὶ ἀναριθμήτου λαοῦ, ἀπὸ τῆς τοιαύτης ἀπογνώσεώς τε καὶ ἀπαγορεύσεως ἐνέτρεψέν τε καὶ ἀνεκαλέσατο εἰς τὴν ἐκκλησίαν."

Καὶ αὐθις μεθ' ἕτερα τούτοις προστίθησιν ταῦτα· 13
"φέρε δή, ἐξῆς εἴπωμεν τίσιν ἔργοις ἢ τίσιν πολιτείαις τεθαρρηκὼς ἀντεποιήθη τῆς ἐπισκοπῆς. ἆρά γε διὰ τὸ ἐξ ἀρχῆς ἐν τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ ἀνεστράφθαι καὶ πολλοὺς ἀγῶνας ὑπὲρ αὐτῆς ἠγωνίσθαι καὶ ἐν κινδύνοις πολλοῖς τε καὶ μεγάλοις ἕνεκα τῆς θεοσεβείας γεγονέναι; ἀλλ' οὐκ ἔστιν· ᾧ γε 14
ἀφορμὴ τοῦ πιστεῦσαι γέγονεν ὁ σατανᾶς, φοιτήσας εἰς αὐτὸν καὶ οἰκήσας ἐν αὐτῷ χρόνον ἱκανόν· ὃς βοηθούμενος ὑπὸ τῶν ἐπορκιστῶν νόσῳ περιπεσὼν χαλεπῇ καὶ ἀποθανεῖσθαι ὅσον οὐδέπω νομιζόμενος, ἐν αὐτῇ τῇ κλίνῃ, οὗ ἔκειτο, περιχυθεὶς ἔλαβεν, εἴ γε χρὴ λέγειν τὸν τοιοῦτον εἰληφέναι. οὐ μὴν οὐδὲ τῶν λοιπῶν ἔτυχεν, διαφυγὼν τὴν 15
νόσον, ὧν χρὴ μεταλαμβάνειν κατὰ τὸν τῆς ἐκκλησίας κανόνα, τοῦ τε σφραγισθῆναι ὑπὸ τοῦ ἐπισκόπου· τούτων δὲ μὴ τυχών, πῶς ἂν τοῦ ἁγίου πνεύματος ἔτυχεν;"

Καὶ πάλιν μετὰ βραχέα φησίν· "ὁ διὰ δειλίαν 16
καὶ φιλοζωΐαν ἐν τῷ καιρῷ τῆς διώξεως πρεσβύτερον εἶναι ἑαυτὸν ἀρνησάμενος. ἀξιούμενος γὰρ καὶ παρακαλούμενος ὑπὸ τῶν διακόνων, ἵν' ἐξελθὼν τοῦ οἰκίσκου, ἐν ᾧ καθεῖρξεν ἑαυτόν, βοηθήσῃ τοῖς ἀδελφοῖς ὅσα θέμις καὶ ὅσα δυνατὸν πρεσβυτέρῳ κινδυνεύουσιν ἀδελφοῖς καὶ ἐπικουρίας δεομένοις βοηθεῖν, τοσοῦτον ἀπέσχεν τοῦ πειθαρχῆσαι παρακαλοῦσι τοῖς διακόνοις, ὡς καὶ χαλεπαίνοντα

necessary in the Church, that number who by God's providence were rich and multiplying, nor an immense and countless laity, turn him from such a desperate failure and recall him to the Church."

And again, further on, he adds to these remarks as follows : " But come, let us next say in what deeds or in what kind of conduct he placed his confidence so as to aspire to the episcopate. Was it because from the beginning he had been brought up in the Church, and had fought many conflicts on her behalf, and had been through the midst of dangers, many and great, for the sake of religion ? Not so. The occasion of his acceptance of the faith was Satan, who resorted to him and dwelt in him for a long time. While he was being healed by the exorcists he fell into a grievous sickness, and, as he was considered to be all but dead, received baptism by affusion on the very bed in which he lay, if indeed one may say that such a man has received it. Nor yet indeed did he obtain the other things, when he recovered from his sickness, of which one should partake according to the rule of the Church, or the sealing by the bishop. And as he did not obtain these, how could he obtain the Holy Spirit ? "

And shortly afterwards he says again : " . . . he who through cowardice and love of life at the time of persecution denied that he was a presbyter. For when he was requested and exhorted by the deacons to leave the cell in which he shut himself, and bring all the help to the brethren that it is right and possible for a presbyter to bring to brethren who are in danger and in need of succour, so far was he from obeying the deacons' exhortations, that he even went

ἀπιέναι καὶ ἀπαλλάττεσθαι· μὴ γὰρ ἔτι βούλεσθαι πρεσβύτερος εἶναι ἔφη, ἑτέρας γὰρ εἶναι φιλοσοφίας ἐραστής."

Ὑπερβὰς δ' ὀλίγα, τούτοις πάλιν ἐπιφέρει λέγων· 17
" καταλιπὼν γὰρ ὁ λαμπρὸς οὗτος τὴν ἐκκλησίαν τοῦ θεοῦ, ἐν ᾗ πιστεύσας κατηξιώθη τοῦ πρεσβυτερίου κατὰ χάριν τοῦ ἐπισκόπου τοῦ ἐπιθέντος αὐτῷ χεῖρα εἰς πρεσβυτερίου κλῆρον, ὃς διακωλυόμενος ὑπὸ παντὸς τοῦ κλήρου, ἀλλὰ καὶ λαϊκῶν πολλῶν, ἐπεὶ μὴ ἐξὸν ἦν τὸν ἐν κλίνῃ διὰ νόσον περιχυθέντα, ὥσπερ καὶ οὗτος, εἰς κλῆρόν τινα γενέσθαι, ἠξίωσεν συγχωρηθῆναι αὐτῷ τοῦτον μόνον χειροτονῆσαι."

Εἶτ' ἄλλο τι τούτοις χείριστον προστίθησιν τῶν 18
τοῦ ἀνδρὸς ἀτοπημάτων, λέγων· οὕτως " ποιήσας γὰρ τὰς προσφορὰς καὶ διανέμων ἑκάστῳ τὸ μέρος καὶ ἐπιδιδοὺς τοῦτο, ὀμνύειν ἀντὶ τοῦ εὐλογεῖν τοὺς ταλαιπώρους ἀνθρώπους ἀναγκάζει, κατέχων ἀμφοτέραις ταῖς χερσὶ τὰς τοῦ λαβόντος καὶ μὴ ἀφιείς, ἕστ' ἂν ὀμνύοντες εἴπωσιν ταῦτα (τοῖς γὰρ ἐκείνου χρήσομαι λόγοις)· ' ὅμοσόν μοι κατὰ τοῦ αἵματος καὶ τοῦ σώματος τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ μηδέποτέ με καταλιπεῖν καὶ ἐπιστρέψαι πρὸς Κορνήλιον.' καὶ ὁ ἄθλιος ἄνθρωπος οὐ 19
πρότερον γεύεται, εἰ μὴ πρότερον αὐτῷ καταράσαιτο, καὶ ἀντὶ τοῦ εἰπεῖν λαμβάνοντα τὸν ἄρτον ἐκεῖνον τὸ ἀμήν, ' οὐκ ἐπανήξω πρὸς Κορνήλιον ' λέγει."

Καὶ μεθ' ἕτερα πάλιν ταῦτά φησιν· " ἤδη δὲ 20
ἴσθι γεγυμνῶσθαι καὶ ἔρημον γεγονέναι, καταλιμπανόντων αὐτὸν καθ' ἡμέραν ἑκάστην τῶν ἀδελφῶν καὶ εἰς τὴν ἐκκλησίαν ἐπανερχομένων· ὃν καὶ

away and departed in anger. For he said that he no longer wished to be a presbyter, since he was enamoured of a different philosophy."

Passing over a few things, he again adds as follows: "For when this illustrious person deserted the Church of God, in which, when he came to believe, he was deemed worthy of the presbyterate through the favour of the bishop, who laid his hand on him to confer that order (meeting the opposition of all the clergy and many lay persons as well—since one who has received baptism by affusion[1] on his bed owing to sickness, as Novatus had, might not be ordained to an order—with the request that he should be allowed to ordain this man alone). . . ."

Then he adds something else, the worst of all the man's offences, saying thus: "For when he has made the offerings, and is distributing to each his portion,[2] as he gives it [into their hands] he compels the wretched persons to utter an oath instead of the blessing, taking in both his hands those of him who had received, and not letting go until they swear saying thus (for I shall use his very words): 'Swear to me by the Blood and Body of our Lord Jesus Christ never to forsake me and turn to Cornelius.' And the miserable person does not taste until he first calls down a curse upon himself, and instead of saying the Amen as he receives that bread, he says, 'I will not return to Cornelius.'"

And after other remarks he again says as follows: "But know that now he has become bare and desolate, for every day the brethren desert him and go back

[1] *i.e.* by pouring water, not by immersion.
[2] *i.e.* of the Sacrament.

Μωσῆς, ὁ μακάριος μάρτυς, ὁ παρ' ἡμῖν ἔναγχος μαρτυρήσας καλήν τινα καὶ θαυμαστὴν μαρτυρίαν, ἔτι ὢν ἐν κόσμῳ, κατιδὼν αὐτοῦ τὴν θρασύτητα καὶ τὴν ἀπόνοιαν, ἀκοινώνητον ἐποίησεν σὺν τοῖς πέντε πρεσβυτέροις τοῖς ἅμα αὐτῷ ἀποσχίσασιν ἑαυτοὺς τῆς ἐκκλησίας."

Καὶ ἐπὶ τέλει δὲ τῆς ἐπιστολῆς τῶν ἐπὶ τῆς 21
Ῥώμης παραγενομένων ἐπισκόπων τῆς τε τοῦ Νοουάτου κατεγνωκότων ἀβελτηρίας κατάλογον πεποίηται, ὁμοῦ τά τε ὀνόματα καὶ ἧς ὁ καθεῖς αὐτῶν προηγεῖτο παροικίας, ἐπισημαινόμενος, τῶν τε μὴ παραγενομένων μὲν ἐπὶ τῆς Ῥώμης, συνευ- 22
δοκησάντων δὲ διὰ γραμμάτων τῇ τῶν προειρημένων ψήφῳ τὰς προσηγορίας ὁμοῦ καὶ τὰς πόλεις, ὅθεν ἕκαστος ὁρμώμενος ἐπέστελλεν, μνημονεύει. ταῦτα μὲν ὁ Κορνήλιος Φαβίῳ Ἀντιοχείας ἐπισκόπῳ δηλῶν ἔγραφεν.

XLIV. Τῷ δ' αὐτῷ τούτῳ Φαβίῳ, ὑποκατα- 1
κλινομένῳ πως τῷ σχίσματι, καὶ Διονύσιος ὁ κατ' Ἀλεξάνδρειαν ἐπιστείλας πολλά τε καὶ ἄλλα περὶ μετανοίας ἐν τοῖς πρὸς αὐτὸν γράμμασιν διελθὼν τῶν τε κατ' Ἀλεξάνδρειαν ἔναγχος τότε μαρτυρησάντων τοὺς ἀγῶνας διιών, μετὰ τῆς ἄλλης ἱστορίας πρᾶγμά τι μεστὸν θαύματος διηγεῖται, ὃ καὶ αὐτὸ ἀναγκαῖον τῇδε παραδοῦναι τῇ γραφῇ, οὕτως ἔχον· "ἓν δέ σοι τοῦτο παρά- 2
δειγμα παρ' ἡμῖν συμβεβηκὸς ἐκθήσομαι. Σεραπίων τις ἦν παρ' ἡμῖν, πιστὸς γέρων, ἀμέμπτως μὲν τὸν πολὺν διαβιώσας χρόνον, ἐν δὲ τῷ πειρασμῷ πεσών. οὗτος πολλάκις ἐδεῖτο, καὶ οὐδεὶς προσεῖχεν αὐτῷ· καὶ γὰρ ἐτεθύκει. ἐν νόσῳ δὲ γενόμενος, τριῶν ἑξῆς ἡμερῶν ἄφωνος καὶ ἀναίσθητος

to the Church. And Moses, that blessed martyr who just now bore a goodly and marvellous testimony amongst us, while he was still in the world, perceiving his insane arrogance, broke off communion with him and with the five presbyters who, along with him, had separated themselves from the Church."

And at the close of the letter he has made a catalogue of the bishops present at Rome who condemned the stupidity of Novatus, indicating at once both their names and the name of the community over which each one presided; and of those who were not present, indeed, at Rome, but who signified in writing their assent to the judgement of the aforesaid, he mentions the names and, as well, the city where each lived and from which each wrote. This is what Cornelius wrote for the information of Fabius, bishop of Antioch.

XLIV. But to this same Fabius, when he was inclining somewhat towards the schism, Dionysius also, he of Alexandria, wrote, making many other remarks with reference to repentance in his letter to him, and describing the conflicts of those lately martyred at Alexandria. In the course of his narrative he tells a certain astonishing tale, which must needs be handed down in this work. It is as follows: "But this one example that happened amongst us I shall set forth for thee. There was a certain Serapion amongst us, an old man and a believer, who lived blamelessly for a long time, but in the trial fell. This man oftentimes besought [absolution], and no one paid him heed. For indeed he had sacrificed. And, falling sick, he continued for three successive days speechless and unconscious; but on the fourth

διετέλεσεν, βραχὺ δὲ ἀνασφήλας τῇ τετάρτῃ προσ- 3
εκαλέσατο τὸν θυγατριδοῦν, καὶ ‘ μέχρι με τίνος ’
φησίν ‘ ὦ τέκνον, κατέχετε; δέομαι, σπεύσατε,
καὶ με θᾶττον ἀπολύσατε, τῶν πρεσβυτέρων μοί
τινα κάλεσον.’ καὶ ταῦτα εἰπών, πάλιν ἦν ἄφωνος. 4
ἔδραμεν ὁ παῖς ἐπὶ τὸν πρεσβύτερον· νὺξ δὲ ἦν,
κἀκεῖνος ἠσθένει. ἀφικέσθαι μὲν οὐκ ἐδυνήθη,
ἐντολῆς δὲ ὑπ’ ἐμοῦ δεδομένης τοὺς ἀπαλλαττο-
μένους τοῦ βίου, εἰ δέοιντο, καὶ μάλιστα εἰ καὶ
πρότερον ἱκετεύσαντες τύχοιεν, ἀφίεσθαι, ἵν’ εὐ-
έλπιδες ἀπαλλάττωνται, βραχὺ τῆς εὐχαριστίας
ἔδωκεν τῷ παιδαρίῳ, ἀποβρέξαι κελεύσας καὶ τῷ
πρεσβύτῃ κατὰ τοῦ στόματος ἐπιστάξαι. ἐπανῆκεν 5
ὁ παῖς φέρων, ἐγγύς τε γενομένου, πρὶν εἰσελθεῖν,
ἀνενέγκας πάλιν ὁ Σεραπίων ‘ ἦκες ’ ἔφη ‘ τέκνον;
καὶ ὁ μὲν πρεσβύτερος ἐλθεῖν οὐκ ἠδυνήθη, σὺ
δὲ ποίησον ταχέως τὸ προσταχθὲν καὶ ἀπάλλαττέ
με.’ ἀπέβρεξεν ὁ παῖς καὶ ἅμα τε ἐνέχεεν τῷ
στόματι καὶ μικρὸν ἐκεῖνος καταβροχθίσας εὐθέως
ἀπέδωκεν τὸ πνεῦμα. ἆρ’ οὐκ ἐναργῶς διετηρήθη 6
καὶ παρέμεινεν, ἕως λυθῇ καὶ τῆς ἁμαρτίας ἐξαλει-
φθείσης ἐπὶ πολλοῖς οἷς ἔπραξεν καλοῖς ὁμολογη-
θῆναι δυνηθῇ; ”

XLV. Ταῦτα ὁ Διονύσιος. ἴδωμεν δ’ ὁ αὐτὸς 1
ὁποῖα καὶ τῷ Νοουάτῳ διεχάραξεν, ταράττοντι
τηνικάδε τὴν Ῥωμαίων ἀδελφότητα· ἐπειδὴ οὖν
τῆς ἀποστασίας καὶ τοῦ σχίσματος πρόφασιν
ἐποιεῖτο τῶν ἀδελφῶν τινας, ὡς δὴ πρὸς αὐτῶν
ἐπὶ τοῦτ’ ἐλθεῖν ἐκβεβιασμένος, ὅρα τίνα τρόπον
αὐτῷ γράφει· “Διονύσιος Νοουατιανῷ ἀδελφῷ

[1] This was done in the sick man's house. The "Eucharist"

he rallied a little, and calling his grandson to him, he said: 'How long, my child, do ye hold me back? Haste ye, I pray, and grant me a speedy release; do thou summon me one of the presbyters.' And having said this he again became speechless. The boy ran for the presbyter. But it was night, and he was unwell and could not come. Yet since I had given an order that those who were departing this life, if they besought it, and especially if they had made supplication before, should be absolved, that they might depart in hope, he gave the little boy a small portion of the eucharist, bidding him soak it and let it fall in drops down into the old man's mouth. Back came the boy with it, and when he was near, before he entered, Serapion revived again and said, 'Hast thou come, child? The presbyter could not come, but do thou quickly what he bade thee, and let me depart.' The boy soaked it[1] and at the same time poured it into his mouth, and when he had swallowed a little he straightway gave up the ghost. Was it not plain that he was preserved and remained until he obtained release, that, with his sin blotted out, he might be acknowledged for all the good deeds he had done?"

XLV. Such is the account of Dionysius. But let us see the kind of letter that the same person wrote also to Novatus,[2] who was then disturbing the Roman brotherhood. Since, then, he put forward some of the brethren as an excuse for his defection and schism, as having been compelled by them to proceed to this length, see how Dionysius writes to him: "Dionysius

must therefore have been soaked in water, or unconsecrated wine—a very early instance of communion in one kind.

[2] See note on 43. 1.

χαίρειν. εἰ ἄκων, ὡς φῄς, ἦχθης, δείξεις ἀναχωρήσας ἑκών. ἔδει μὲν γὰρ καὶ πᾶν ὅτι οὖν παθεῖν ὑπὲρ τοῦ μὴ διακόψαι τὴν ἐκκλησίαν τοῦ θεοῦ, καὶ ἦν οὐκ ἀδοξοτέρα τῆς ἕνεκεν τοῦ μὴ εἰδωλολατρῆσαι γινομένης ἡ ἕνεκεν τοῦ μὴ σχίσαι μαρτυρία, κατ' ἐμὲ δὲ καὶ μείζων. ἐκεῖ μὲν γὰρ ὑπὲρ μιᾶς τις τῆς ἑαυτοῦ ψυχῆς, ἐνταῦθα δὲ ὑπὲρ ὅλης τῆς ἐκκλησίας μαρτυρεῖ. καὶ νῦν δὲ εἰ πείσαις ἢ βιάσαιο τοὺς ἀδελφοὺς εἰς ὁμόνοιαν ἐλθεῖν, μεῖζον ἔσται σοι τοῦ σφάλματος τὸ κατόρθωμα, καὶ τὸ μὲν οὐ λογισθήσεται, τὸ δὲ ἐπαινεθήσεται. εἰ δὲ ἀπειθούντων ἀδυνατοίης, σῴζων
Gen. 19, 17 (LXX). σῷζε τὴν σεαυτοῦ ψυχήν. ἐρρῶσθαί σε, ἐχόμενον τῆς εἰρήνης ἐν κυρίῳ, εὔχομαι."

XLVI. Ταῦτα καὶ πρὸς τὸν Νοουάτον· γράφει 1
δὲ καὶ τοῖς κατ' Αἴγυπτον ἐπιστολὴν περὶ μετανοίας ἐν ᾗ τὰ δόξαντα αὐτῷ περὶ τῶν ὑποπεπτωκότων παρατέθειται, τάξεις παραπτωμάτων διαγράψας. καὶ πρὸς Κόλωνα (τῆς Ἑρμουπολιτῶν δὲ παροικίας 2
ἐπίσκοπος ἦν οὗτος) ἰδία τις περὶ μετανοίας αὐτοῦ φέρεται γραφὴ καὶ ἄλλη ἐπιστρεπτικὴ πρὸς τὸ κατ' Ἀλεξάνδρειαν αὐτοῦ ποίμνιον. ἐν τούτοις ἐστὶν καὶ ἡ περὶ μαρτυρίου πρὸς τὸν Ὠριγένην γραφεῖσα· καὶ τοῖς κατὰ Λαοδίκειαν ἀδελφοῖς, ὧν προῖστατο Θηλυμίδρης ἐπίσκοπος, καὶ τοῖς κατὰ Ἀρμενίαν ὡσαύτως περὶ μετανοίας ἐπι- 3
στέλλει, ὧν ἐπεσκόπευεν Μερουζάνης. πρὸς ἅπασι τούτοις καὶ Κορνηλίῳ τῷ κατὰ Ῥώμην γράφει, δεξάμενος αὐτοῦ τὴν κατὰ τοῦ Νοουάτου ἐπιστολήν, ᾧ καὶ σημαίνει δηλῶν ἑαυτὸν παρακεκλῆσθαι ὑπό τε Ἑλένου τοῦ ἐν Ταρσῷ τῆς Κιλικίας ἐπισκόπου καὶ τῶν λοιπῶν τῶν σὺν αὐτῷ

to Novatianus [1] a brother, greeting. If thou wast led on unwillingly, as thou sayest, thou wilt prove it by retiring willingly. For a man ought to suffer anything and everything rather than divide the Church of God, and it were not less glorious to incur martyrdom to avoid schism than to avoid idolatry, nay, in my opinion it were more so. For in the one case a man is a martyr for the sake of his own single soul, but in the other for the sake of the whole Church. And if thou wert even now to persuade or compel the brethren to come to one mind, thy recovery will be greater than thy fall, and the one will not be reckoned, while the other will be praised. But if they obey thee not, and thou hast no power, by all means save thine own soul. I pray that thou mayest fare well and cleave to peace in the Lord."

XLVI. This also he wrote to Novatus. And he wrote also to the Egyptians a letter On Repentance, in which he has set forth his opinions with reference to those who had fallen, outlining degrees of failures. And to Colon (he was bishop of the community of the Hermopolitans) a personal letter of his is extant On Repentance, and another in the nature of a rebuke to his flock at Alexandria. Among these there is also the letter written to Origen On Martyrdom ; and to the brethren at Laodicea over whom Thelymidres presided as bishop ; and he wrote to those in Armenia, likewise On Repentance, whose bishop was Meruzanes. In addition to all these he wrote also to Cornelius of Rome, when he received his letter against Novatus, in which also he clearly indicates that he had been invited by Helenus, bishop at Tarsus in Cilicia, and the rest of the bishops with him,

[1] See note on 43. 1.

Φιρμιλιανοῦ τε τοῦ ἐν Καππαδοκίᾳ καὶ τοῦ κατὰ Παλαιστίνην Θεοκτίστου, ὡς ἂν ἐπὶ τὴν σύνοδον ἀπαντήσοι τὴν κατὰ Ἀντιόχειαν, ἔνθα τοῦ Νοουάτου κρατύνειν τινὲς ἐνεχείρουν τὸ σχίσμα. πρὸς τούτοις ἐπιστέλλει μηνυθῆναι αὐτῷ Φάβιον μὲν κεκοιμῆσθαι, Δημητριανὸν δὲ διάδοχον ἐκείνου τῆς κατ' Ἀντιόχειαν ἐπισκοπῆς καθεστάναι· γράφει δὲ καὶ περὶ τοῦ ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις αὐτοῖς ῥήμασιν φάσκων· "ὁ μὲν γὰρ θαυμάσιος Ἀλέξανδρος ἐν φρουρᾷ γενόμενος, μακαρίως ἀνεπαύσατο."

Ἐξῆς ταύτῃ καὶ ἑτέρα τις ἐπιστολὴ τοῖς ἐν Ῥώμῃ τοῦ Διονυσίου φέρεται διακονικὴ διὰ Ἱππολύτου· τοῖς αὐτοῖς δὲ ἄλλην περὶ εἰρήνης διατυποῦται, καὶ ὡσαύτως περὶ μετανοίας, καὶ αὖ πάλιν ἄλλην τοῖς ἐκεῖσε ὁμολογηταῖς, ἔτι τῇ τοῦ Νοουάτου συμφερομένοις γνώμῃ· τοῖς δὲ αὐτοῖς τούτοις ἑτέρας δύο, μεταθεμένοις ἐπὶ τὴν ἐκκλησίαν, ἐπιστέλλει. καὶ ἄλλοις δὲ πλείοσιν ὁμοίως διὰ γραμμάτων ὁμιλήσας, ποικίλας τοῖς ἔτι νῦν σπουδὴν περὶ τοὺς λόγους αὐτοῦ ποιουμένοις καταλέλοιπεν ὠφελείας.

[1] The meaning of διακονική is uncertain. Perhaps Archbishop Benson's rendering, "serviceable," is the best of many

namely Firmilian in Cappadocia and Theoctistus in Palestine, to attend the synod at Antioch, where certain were attempting to strengthen the schism of Novatus. Moreover he writes that he had received information that Fabius had fallen asleep, and that Demetrian was appointed his successor in the episcopate of Antioch. And he writes also with reference to the bishop of Jerusalem, saying in these very words : " For Alexander, that wonderful man, being put in prison, happily entered into his rest."

Next to this there is also another extant, a " diaconic " [1] letter of Dionysius to those in Rome through Hippolytus. To the same people he composed another letter On Peace, and likewise On Repentance, and again another to the confessors there while they were still in agreement with the opinion of Novatus. And to these same persons he wrote two more, after they had returned to the Church. And in his communications with many others, likewise by letter, he has left behind a varied source of profit to those who still to this day set store by his writings.

guesses. Hippolytus, who seems to have been the bearer of the letter, cannot be identified.

Ζ̄

Τάδε καὶ ἡ ἑβδόμη περιέχει βίβλος τῆς Ἐκκλησιαστικῆς ἱστορίας

Ᾱ Περὶ τῆς Δεκίου καὶ Γάλλου κακοτροπίας.
Β̄ Οἱ κατὰ τούσδε Ῥωμαίων ἐπίσκοποι.
Γ̄ Ὅπως Κυπριανὸς ἅμα τοῖς κατ' αὐτὸν ἐπισκόποις τοὺς ἐξ αἱρετικῆς πλάνης ἐπιστρέφοντας λουτρῷ δεῖν καθαίρειν πρῶτος ἐδογμάτισεν.
Δ̄ Ὁπόσας περὶ τούτου Διονύσιος συνέταξεν ἐπιστολάς.
Ε̄ Περὶ τῆς μετὰ τὸν διωγμὸν εἰρήνης.
Ϛ̄ Περὶ τῆς κατὰ Σαβέλλιον αἱρέσεως.
Ζ̄ Περὶ τῆς τῶν αἱρετικῶν παμμιάρου πλάνης καὶ τῆς θεοπόμπου ὁράσεως Διονυσίου οὗ τε παρείληφεν ἐκκλησιαστικοῦ κανόνος.
Η̄ Περὶ τῆς κατὰ Νοουάτον ἑτεροδοξίας.
Θ̄ Περὶ τοῦ τῶν αἱρετικῶν ἀθέου βαπτίσματος.
Ῑ Περὶ Οὐαλεριανοῦ καὶ τοῦ κατ' αὐτὸν διωγμοῦ.
ΙᾹ Περὶ τῶν τότε Διονυσίῳ καὶ τοῖς κατ' Αἴγυπτον συμβάντων.

CONTENTS OF BOOK VII

The Seventh Book of the Ecclesiastical History contains the following :

I. On the evil disposition of Decius and Gallus.

II. The bishops of Rome in their day.

III. How Cyprian, along with the bishops on his side, was the first to hold the opinion that those who were turning from heretical error ought to be cleansed by baptism.

IV. How many letters Dionysius composed on this subject.

V. On the peace after the persecution.

VI. On the heresy of Sabellius.

VII. On the abominable error of the heretics and the God-sent vision of Dionysius, and the rule of the Church which he had received.

VIII. On the heterodoxy of Novatus.

IX. On the ungodly baptism of the heretics.

X. On Valerian and the persecution in his day.

XI. On the things that then happened to Dionysius and those in Egypt.

ΙΒ Περὶ τῶν ἐν Καισαρείᾳ τῆς Παλαιστίνης μαρτυρησάντων.
ΙΓ Περὶ τῆς κατὰ Γαλλιῆνον εἰρήνης.
ΙΔ Οἱ κατ' ἐκεῖνο συνηκμακότες ἐπίσκοποι.
ΙΕ Ὅπως κατὰ Καισάρειαν Μαρῖνος ἐμαρτύρησεν.
ΙϚ Ἡ κατὰ Ἀστύριον ἱστορία.
ΙΖ Περὶ τῶν κατὰ Πανεάδα σημείων τῆς τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν μεγαλουργίας.
ΙΗ Περὶ τοῦ θρόνου Ἰακώβου.
ΙΘ Περὶ τῶν ἑορταστικῶν Διονυσίου ἐπιστολῶν, ἔνθα καὶ περὶ τοῦ πάσχα κανονίζει.
Κ Περὶ τῶν ἐν Ἀλεξανδρείᾳ συμβάντων.
ΚΑ Περὶ τῆς ἐπισκηψάσης νόσου.
ΚΒ Περὶ τῆς Γαλλιήνου βασιλείας.
ΚΓ Περὶ Νέπωτος καὶ τοῦ κατ' αὐτὸν σχίσματος.
ΚΔ Περὶ τῆς Ἰωάννου ἀποκαλύψεως.
ΚΕ Περὶ τῶν ἐπιστολῶν Διονυσίου.
ΚϚ Περὶ Παύλου τοῦ Σαμοσατέως καὶ τῆς ἐν Ἀντιοχείᾳ συστάσης ὑπ' αὐτοῦ αἱρέσεως.
ΚΖ Περὶ τῶν τότε γνωριζομένων διαφανῶν ἐπισκόπων.
ΚΗ Ὅπως ὁ Παῦλος ἀπελεγχθεὶς ἐξεκηρύχθη.
ΚΘ Περὶ τῆς τῶν Μανιχαίων ἑτεροδόξου διαστροφῆς ἄρτι τότε ἀρξαμένης.
Λ Περὶ τῶν καθ' ἡμᾶς αὐτοὺς διαπρεψάντων ἐκκλησιαστικῶν ἀνδρῶν τίνες τε αὐτῶν μέχρι τῆς τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν πολιορκίας διέμειναν.

XII. On those who were martyred at Caesarea in Palestine.
XIII. On the peace under Gallienus.
XIV. The bishops who flourished at that time.
XV. How Marinus was martyred at Caesarea.
XVI. The story of Astyrius.
XVII. On the signs at Paneas of the mighty working of our Saviour.
XVIII. On the throne of James.
XIX. On the festal letters of Dionysius, where also he draws up a canon concerning the Pascha.
XX. On the happenings at Alexandria.
XXI. On the disease that visited it.
XXII. On the reign of Gallienus.
XXIII. On Nepos and his schism.
XXIV. On the Apocalypse of John.
XXV. On the letters of Dionysius.
XXVI. On Paul of Samosata and the heresy put together by him at Antioch.
XXVII. On the illustrious bishops who were well known at that time.
XXVIII. How Paul was refuted and excommunicated.
XXIX. On the perverse heterodoxy of the Manicheans, which began precisely at that time.
XXX. On the distinguished churchmen of our own day, and which of them remained until the attack upon the churches.[1]

[1] This Table of Contents does not tally with the new universally adopted division of Book VII. into thirty-two chapters.

Z

Τὸν ἕβδομον τῆς ἐκκλησιαστικῆς ἱστορίας αὖθις ὁ μέγας ἡμῖν Ἀλεξανδρέων ἐπίσκοπος Διονύσιος ἰδίαις φωναῖς συνεκπονήσει, τῶν καθ' ἑαυτὸν πεπραγμένων ἕκαστα ἐν μέρει δι' ὧν καταλέλοιπεν ἐπιστολῶν ὑφηγούμενος· ἐμοὶ δ' ὁ λόγος ἐντεῦθεν ποιήσεται τὴν ἀρχήν.

I. Δέκιον οὐδ' ὅλον ἐπικρατήσαντα δυεῖν ἐτοῖν χρόνον αὐτίκα τε ἅμα τοῖς παισὶν κατασφαγέντα Γάλλος διαδέχεται· Ὠριγένης ἐν τούτῳ ἑνὸς δέοντα τῆς ζωῆς ἑβδομήκοντα ἀποπλήσας ἔτη, τελευτᾷ. γράφων γέ τοι ὁ Διονύσιος Ἑρμάμμωνι, περὶ τοῦ Γάλλου ταῦτα φάσκει· "ἀλλ' οὐδὲ Γάλλος ἔγνω τὸ Δεκίου κακὸν οὐδὲ προεσκόπησεν τί ποτ' ἐκεῖνον ἔσφηλεν, ἀλλὰ πρὸς τὸν αὐτὸν πρὸ τῶν ὀφθαλμῶν αὐτοῦ γενόμενον ἔπταισε λίθον· ὃς εὖ φερομένης αὐτῷ τῆς βασιλείας καὶ κατὰ νοῦν χωρούντων τῶν πραγμάτων, τοὺς ἱεροὺς ἄνδρας, τοὺς περὶ τῆς εἰρήνης αὐτοῦ καὶ τῆς ὑγιείας πρεσβεύοντας πρὸς τὸν θεόν, ἤλασεν. οὐκοῦν σὺν ἐκείνοις ἐδίωξεν καὶ τὰς ὑπὲρ αὐτοῦ προσευχάς."

II. Ταῦτα μὲν οὖν περὶ τοῦδε· κατὰ δὲ τὴν Ῥωμαίων πόλιν Κορνηλίου ἔτεσιν ἀμφὶ τὰ τρία

---

[1] vi. 35. [2] A.D. 251.

BOOK VII

In the composition of the seventh book of the *Ecclesiastical History* Dionysius, the great bishop of the Alexandrians,[1] will again assist us in our task by his own words, indicating in turn each of the things that were done in his day, by means of the letters he has left behind. From that point of time my record will take its beginning.

I. When Decius had reigned for an entire period of less than two years, he was forthwith murdered along with his sons, and Gallus succeeded him.[2] At this time [3] Origen died, having completed the seventieth year save one of his life. Now when writing to Hermammon, Dionysius speaks as follows, with reference to Gallus : " But not even did Gallus recognize the fault [in the policy] of Decius, nor yet did he look to that which caused his fall, but he stumbled against the same stone that was before his eyes. For when his reign was prospering, and matters were going according to his mind, he drove away the holy men who were supplicating God for his peace and health. Therefore along with them he banished also their prayers on his behalf."

II. So much, then, concerning him. But in the city of the Romans, when Cornelius brought his

[3] A vague date: Origen died apparently in 255, in the reign of Valerian.

τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν διανύσαντος, Λούκιος κατέστη διάδοχος, μησὶν δ' οὐδ' ὅλοις οὗτος ὀκτὼ τῇ λειτουργίᾳ διακονησάμενος, Στεφάνῳ τελευτῶν μεταδίδωσι τὸν κλῆρον. τούτῳ τὴν πρώτην ὁ Διονύσιος τῶν περὶ βαπτίσματος ἐπιστολῶν διατυποῦται, ζητήματος οὐ σμικροῦ τηνικάδε ἀνακινηθέντος, εἰ δέοι τοὺς ἐξ οἵας δ' οὖν αἱρέσεως ἐπιστρέφοντας διὰ λουτροῦ καθαίρειν. παλαιοῦ γέ τοι κεκρατηκότος ἔθους ἐπὶ τῶν τοιούτων μόνῃ χρῆσθαι τῇ διὰ χειρῶν ἐπιθέσεως εὐχῇ, III. πρῶτος τῶν τότε Κυπριανός, τῆς κατὰ Καρχηδόνα παροικίας ποιμήν, οὐδ' ἄλλως ἢ διὰ λουτροῦ πρότερον τῆς πλάνης ἀποκαθηραμένους προσίεσθαι δεῖν ἠγεῖτο. ἀλλ' ὅ γε Στέφανος μὴ δεῖν τι νεώτερον παρὰ τὴν κρατήσασαν ἀρχῆθεν παράδοσιν ἐπικαινοτομεῖν οἰόμενος, ἐπὶ τούτῳ διηγανάκτει· IV. πλεῖστα δὴ οὖν αὐτῷ περὶ τούτου διὰ γραμμάτων ὁ Διονύσιος ὁμιλήσας, τελευτῶν δηλοῖ ὡς ἄρα τοῦ διωγμοῦ λελωφηκότος αἱ πανταχόσε ἐκκλησίαι τὴν κατὰ Νοουάτον ἀποστραφεῖσαι νεωτεροποιίαν, εἰρήνην πρὸς ἑαυτὰς ἀνειλήφεσαν· γράφει δὲ ὧδε· V. "ἴσθι δὲ νῦν, ἀδελφέ, ὅτι ἥνωνται πᾶσαι αἱ πρότερον διεσχισμέναι κατά τε τὴν ἀνατολὴν ἐκκλησίαι καὶ ἔτι προσωτέρω, καὶ πάντες εἰσὶν ὁμόφρονες οἱ πανταχοῦ προεστῶτες, χαίροντες καθ' ὑπερβολὴν ἐπὶ τῇ παρὰ προσδοκίαν εἰρήνῃ γενομένῃ, Δημητριανὸς ἐν Ἀντιοχείᾳ, Θεόκτιστος ἐν Καισαρείᾳ, Μαζαβάνης ἐν Αἰλίᾳ, Μαρῖνος ἐν Τύρῳ κοιμηθέντος Ἀλεξάνδρου, Ἡλιόδωρος ἐν Λαοδικείᾳ ἀναπαυσαμένου Θηλυμίδρου, Ἕλενος ἐν Ταρσῷ καὶ πᾶσαι αἱ τῆς Κιλικίας ἐκκλησίαι, Φιρμιλιανὸς καὶ πᾶσα Καππαδοκία·

episcopate to an end after about three years, Lucius was appointed his successor; but he exercised his ministry for less than eight entire months, and dying transmitted his office to Stephen. To him Dionysius indited the first of his letters On Baptism, no small question having then arisen as to whether it were necessary to cleanse by means of baptism those who were turning from any heresy whatsoever. A custom, which was at any rate old, having prevailed in such cases to use only prayer with the laying on of hands, III. Cyprian, pastor of the community at Carthage, was the first of those of his day to consider that they ought not to be admitted otherwise than by having been first cleansed from their error by baptism. But Stephen, thinking that they ought not to make any innovation contrary to the tradition that had prevailed from the beginning, was full of indignation thereat. IV. Dionysius, therefore, having communicated with him on this point at very great length in a letter, at its close shows that with the abatement of the persecution the churches everywhere, having now rejected the innovation of Novatus, had resumed peace among themselves. He writes thus: V. "But know now, brother, that all the churches in the East and still further away, which were formerly divided, have been united, and all their presidents everywhere are of like mind, rejoicing above measure at the unexpected arrival of peace: Demetrian at Antioch, Theoctistus at Caesarea, Mazabanes at Aelia, Marinus at Tyre (Alexander having fallen asleep), Heliodorus at Laodicea (for Thelymidres has entered into his rest), Helenus at Tarsus and all the churches of Cilicia, Firmilian and all Cappadocia.

τοὺς γὰρ περιφανεστέρους μόνους τῶν ἐπισκόπων ὠνόμασα, ἵνα μήτε μῆκος τῇ ἐπιστολῇ μήτε βάρος προσάψω τῷ λόγῳ. αἱ μέντοι Συρίαι ὅλαι καὶ 2
ἡ Ἀραβία, οἷς ἐπαρκεῖτε ἑκάστοτε καὶ οἷς νῦν ἐπεστείλατε, ἥ τε Μεσοποταμία Πόντος τε καὶ Βιθυνία καί, συνελόντι εἰπεῖν, ἀγαλλιῶνται πάντες πανταχοῦ τῇ ὁμονοίᾳ καὶ φιλαδελφίᾳ, δοξάζοντες τὸν θεόν."

Ταῦτα μὲν ὁ Διονύσιος· Στέφανον δ' ἐπὶ δυσὶν 3
ἀποπλήσαντα τὴν λειτουργίαν ἔτεσιν, Ξύστος διαδέχεται. τούτῳ δευτέραν ὁ Διονύσιος περὶ βαπτίσματος χαράξας ἐπιστολήν, ὁμοῦ τὴν Στεφάνου καὶ τῶν λοιπῶν ἐπισκόπων γνώμην τε καὶ κρίσιν δηλοῖ, περὶ τοῦ Στεφάνου λέγων ταῦτα·
" ἐπεστάλκει μὲν οὖν πρότερον καὶ περὶ Ἑλένου 4
καὶ περὶ Φιρμιλιανοῦ καὶ πάντων τῶν τε ἀπὸ Κιλικίας καὶ Καππαδοκίας καὶ δῆλον ὅτι Γαλατίας καὶ πάντων τῶν ἑξῆς ὁμορούντων ἐθνῶν, ὡς οὐδὲ ἐκείνοις κοινωνήσων διὰ τὴν αὐτὴν ταύτην αἰτίαν, ἐπειδὴ τοὺς αἱρετικούς, φησίν, ἀναβαπτίζουσιν. καὶ σκόπει τὸ μέγεθος τοῦ πράγματος. ὄντως γὰρ 5
δόγματα περὶ τούτου γέγονεν ἐν ταῖς μεγίσταις τῶν ἐπισκόπων συνόδοις, ὡς πυνθάνομαι, ὥστε τοὺς προσιόντας ἀπὸ αἱρέσεων προκατηχηθέντας
1 Cor. 6, 11 εἶτα ἀπολούεσθαι καὶ ἀνακαθαίρεσθαι τὸν τῆς
1 Cor. 5, 7 παλαιᾶς καὶ ἀκαθάρτου ζύμης ῥύπον. καὶ περὶ τούτων αὐτοῦ πάντων δεόμενος ἐπέστειλα."

Καὶ μεθ' ἕτερά φησιν· " καὶ τοῖς ἀγαπητοῖς δὲ 6
ἡμῶν καὶ συμπρεσβυτέροις Διονυσίῳ καὶ Φιλήμονι, συμψήφοις πρότερον Στεφάνῳ γενομένοις καὶ περὶ τῶν αὐτῶν μοι γράφουσιν, πρότερον μὲν ὀλίγα, καὶ νῦν δὲ διὰ πλειόνων ἐπέστειλα."

For I name only the more eminent bishops, to avoid making my letter long and my discourse tedious. Nevertheless, the Syrias as a whole and Arabia, which ye constantly help and to which ye have now written, and Mesopotamia and Pontus and Bithynia, and, in a word, all everywhere rejoice exceedingly in their concord and brotherly love, giving glory to God."

Such is the account of Dionysius. But when Stephen had fulfilled his ministry for two years, he was succeeded by Xystus. To him Dionysius penned a second letter On Baptism, showing the opinion and decision both of Stephen and of the other bishops. About Stephen he speaks thus : " Now he had written formerly with reference both to Helenus and Firmilian and all those from Cilicia and Cappadocia and, in fact, Galatia and all the provinces that border on these, to the effect that he would not hold communion in future with them either, for this same reason ; since, says he, they rebaptize heretics. And look thou at the importance of the matter. For decrees on this question have been actually passed in the largest synods of bishops, as I learn, so that those who come over from heresies are first placed under instruction, then washed and purged again from the filth of the old and impure leaven. And I wrote beseeching him on all these matters."

And, after other remarks, he says : " And to our beloved fellow-presbyters also, Dionysius and Philemon, who had formerly been of the same opinion as Stephen and wrote [some letters] to me about the same matters, at first I wrote briefly, but now at greater length."

'Αλλὰ ταῦτα μὲν περὶ τοῦ δηλουμένου ζητήματος· VI. σημαίνων δὲ ἐν ταὐτῷ καὶ περὶ τῶν 1
κατὰ Σαβέλλιον αἱρετικῶν ὡς κατ' αὐτὸν ἐπιπολαζόντων, ταῦτά φησιν· "περὶ γὰρ τοῦ νῦν
κινηθέντος ἐν τῇ Πτολεμαΐδι τῆς Πενταπόλεως
δόγματος, ὄντος ἀσεβοῦς καὶ βλασφημίαν πολλὴν
ἔχοντος περὶ τοῦ παντοκράτορος θεοῦ πατρὸς τοῦ
κυρίου ἡμῶν 'Ιησοῦ Χριστοῦ ἀπιστίαν τε πολλὴν
Col. 1, 15 περὶ τοῦ μονογενοῦς παιδὸς αὐτοῦ, τοῦ πρωτοτόκου
πάσης κτίσεως, τοῦ ἐνανθρωπήσαντος λόγου, ἀν-
αισθησίαν δὲ τοῦ ἁγίου πνεύματος, ἐλθόντων ἑκα-
τέρωθεν πρὸς ἐμὲ καὶ προγραμμάτων καὶ τῶν
διαλεξομένων ἀδελφῶν, ἐπέστειλά τινα, ὡς ἐδυ-
νήθην, παρασχόντος τοῦ θεοῦ, διδασκαλικώτερον
ὑφηγούμενος, ὧν τὰ ἀντίγραφα ἔπεμψά σοι."
VII. Καὶ ἐν τῇ τρίτῃ δὲ τῶν περὶ βαπτίσματος, 1
ἣν Φιλήμονι τῷ κατὰ 'Ρώμην πρεσβυτέρῳ ὁ αὐτὸς
γράφει Διονύσιος, ταῦτα παρατίθεται· "ἐγὼ δὲ
καὶ τοῖς συντάγμασιν καὶ ταῖς παραδόσεσιν τῶν
αἱρετικῶν ἐνέτυχον, χραίνων μέν μου πρὸς ὀλίγον
τὴν ψυχὴν ταῖς παμμιάροις αὐτῶν ἐνθυμήσεσιν,
ὄνησιν δ' οὖν ἀπ' αὐτῶν ταύτην λαμβάνων, τὸ
ἐξελέγχειν αὐτοὺς παρ' ἐμαυτῷ καὶ πολὺ πλέον
βδελύττεσθαι. καὶ δή τινος ἀδελφοῦ τῶν πρεσβυ- 2
τέρων με ἀπείργοντος καὶ δεδιττομένου συμφύρε-
σθαι τῷ τῆς πονηρίας αὐτῶν βορβόρῳ, λυμανεῖσθαι
γὰρ τὴν ψυχὴν τὴν ἐμαυτοῦ, καὶ ἀληθῆ γε λέ-
γοντος, ὡς ἠσθόμην· ὅραμα θεόπεμπτον προσελθὸν
ἐπέρρωσέν με, καὶ λόγος πρός με γενόμενος 3
προσέταξεν, διαρρήδην λέγων· 'πᾶσιν ἐντύγχανε

[1] Sabellius held that Father, Son, and Holy Spirit were

So much with regard to the question of which I am speaking. VI. But when indicating in the same letter, with reference to the followers of the Sabellian heresy,[1] that they were prevalent in his day, he speaks thus: "For as to the doctrine now set on foot at Ptolemais in the Pentapolis, an impious doctrine which contains great blasphemy concerning the Almighty God, Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, and great unbelief as to His only-begotten Son, the firstborn of all creation, the Word who was made man, and which is without perception of the Holy Spirit,—when there came to me from both sides both documents and also the brethren who were ready to discuss the question, I wrote some letters, as I was able by the help of God, giving an exposition of the matter in a somewhat didactic manner; of which I send thee the copies."

VII. And in the third of those On Baptism, which the same Dionysius wrote to Philemon the Roman presbyter, he relates the following: "But as for me, I read both the compositions and the traditions of the heretics, polluting my soul for a little with their abominable thoughts, yet all the while deriving this advantage from them, that I could refute them for myself and loathed them far more. And indeed a certain brother, one of the presbyters, attempted to dissuade and frighten me from becoming involved in the mire of their wickedness, for he said that I should injure my own soul; and said truly, as I perceived. But a vision sent by God came and strengthened me, and a word of command was given me, saying expressly: 'Read all things that may come to thy

only πρόσωπα or characters by which God is revealed to men: the Trinity being one of revelation, not of essence. See 26. 1.

οἷς ἂν εἰς χεῖρας λάβοις· διευθύνειν γὰρ ἕκαστα
Cf. 1 Thess. 5, 21 καὶ δοκιμάζειν ἱκανὸς εἶ, καί σοι γέγονεν τοῦτο ἐξ ἀρχῆς καὶ τῆς πίστεως αἴτιον.' ἀπεδεξάμην τὸ ὅραμα, ὡς ἀποστολικῇ φωνῇ συντρέχον τῇ λεγούσῃ πρὸς τοὺς δυνατωτέρους 'γίνεσθε δόκιμοι τραπεζῖται.'"

Εἶτά τινα περὶ πασῶν εἰπὼν τῶν αἱρέσεων, 4
ἐπιφέρει λέγων· "τοῦτον ἐγὼ τὸν κανόνα καὶ τὸν τύπον παρὰ τοῦ μακαρίου πάπα ἡμῶν Ἡρακλᾶ παρέλαβον. τοὺς γὰρ προσιόντας ἀπὸ τῶν αἱρέσεων, καίτοι τῆς ἐκκλησίας ἀποστάντας, μᾶλλον δὲ οὐδὲ ἀποστάντας, ἀλλὰ συνάγεσθαι μὲν δοκοῦντας, καταμηνυθέντας δὲ ὡς προσφοιτῶντάς τινι τῶν ἑτεροδιδασκαλούντων, ἀπελάσας τῆς ἐκκλησίας, δεομένους οὐ προσήκατο, ἕως δημοσίᾳ πάντα ὅσα ἀκηκόασιν παρὰ τοῖς
2 Tim. 2, 25. ἀντιδιατιθεμένοις ἐξέφρασαν, καὶ τότε συνήγαγεν αὐτούς, οὐ δεηθεὶς ἐπ' αὐτῶν ἑτέρου βαπτίσματος· τοῦ γὰρ ἁγίου πρότερον παρ' αὐτοῦ τετυχήκεσαν."

Πάλιν δὲ ἐπὶ πολὺ γυμνάσας τὸ πρόβλημα, ταῦτ' 5
ἐπιλέγει· "μεμάθηκα καὶ τοῦτο ὅτι μὴ νῦν οἱ ἐν Ἀφρικῇ μόνον τοῦτο παρεισήγαγον, ἀλλὰ καὶ πρὸ πολλοῦ κατὰ τοὺς πρὸ ἡμῶν ἐπισκόπους ἐν ταῖς πολυανθρωποτάταις ἐκκλησίαις καὶ ταῖς συνόδοις τῶν ἀδελφῶν, ἐν Ἰκονίῳ καὶ Συνάδοις καὶ παρὰ πολλοῖς, τοῦτο ἔδοξεν· ὧν τὰς βουλὰς ἀνατρέπων εἰς ἔριν αὐτοὺς καὶ φιλονεικίαν ἐμβαλεῖν οὐχ ὑπομένω. 'οὐ γὰρ μετακινήσεις,' φησίν, 'ὅρια
Deut. 19, 14 (LXX) τοῦ πλησίον σου, ἃ ἔθεντο οἱ πατέρες σου.'"

Ἡ τετάρτη αὐτοῦ τῶν περὶ βαπτίσματος ἐπι- 6

[1] This saying is quoted by many earlier writers, and is usually cited as a saying of Christ. But *cf.* 1 Thess. v. 21.

hand. For thou art able to sift and prove each matter ; which thing was originally the cause of thy faith.' I accepted the vision, as agreeing with the apostolic saying addressed to the stronger : 'Show yourselves approved money-changers.' "[1]

Then, making certain remarks about all the heresies, he goes on to say : " This rule and pattern I myself received from our blessed pope[2] Heraclas. For those who came over from the heresies, although they had departed from the Church (or rather, had not even done that, but, while still reputed members of the congregation, were charged with frequenting some false teacher), he drove from the Church, and refused to listen to their entreaties until they publicly declared all that they had heard from 'them that oppose themselves,' and then he admitted them to the congregation, without requiring of them a second baptism. For they had formerly received the holy [baptism] from him."

And again, after a protracted discussion of the question, he adds as follows : " I have learnt this also, that the Africans did not introduce this practice now for the first time, but that long before, in the days of the bishops that were before us, in the most populous churches and the synods of the brethren, in Iconium and Synnada and in many places, this course was adopted. And I do not dare to overturn their decisions and involve them in strife and contention. 'For thou shalt not remove,' he says, 'thy neighbour's landmarks, which thy fathers placed.' "

The fourth of his letters on baptism was written to

[2] πάπα: this is the earliest known occasion on which an Alexandrian bishop is entitled " pope," though later on there are several instances of the practice.

στολῶν πρὸς τὸν κατὰ Ῥώμην ἐγράφη Διονύσιον, τότε μὲν πρεσβείου ἠξιωμένον, οὐκ εἰς μακρὸν δὲ καὶ τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν τῶν ἐκεῖσε παρειληφότα· ἐξ ἧς γνῶναι πάρεστιν ὅπως καὶ αὐτὸς οὗτος λόγιός τε καὶ θαυμάσιος πρὸς τοῦ κατ' Ἀλεξανδρειαν Διονυσίου μεμαρτύρηται. γράφει δὲ αὐτῷ μεθ' ἕτερα τῶν κατὰ Νοουάτον μνημονεύων ἐν τούτοις· VIII. "Νοουατιανῷ μὲν γὰρ εὐλόγως 1
ἀπεχθανόμεθα, διακόψαντι τὴν ἐκκλησίαν καί τινας τῶν ἀδελφῶν εἰς ἀσεβείας καὶ βλασφημίας ἑλκύσαντι καὶ περὶ τοῦ θεοῦ διδασκαλίαν ἀνοσιωτάτην ἐπεισκυκλήσαντι καὶ τὸν χρηστότατον κύριον ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν ὡς ἀνηλεῆ συκοφαντοῦντι, ἐπὶ πᾶσι δὲ τούτοις τὸ λουτρὸν ἀθετοῦντι τὸ ἅγιον καὶ τήν τε πρὸ αὐτοῦ πίστιν καὶ ὁμολογίαν ἀνατρέποντι τό τε πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον ἐξ αὐτῶν, εἰ καί τις ἦν ἐλπὶς τοῦ παραμεῖναι ἢ καὶ ἐπανελθεῖν πρὸς αὐτούς, παντελῶς φυγαδεύοντι."

IX. Καὶ ἡ πέμπτη δὲ αὐτῷ πρὸς τὸν Ῥω- 1
μαίων ἐπίσκοπον Ξύστον γέγραπτο· ἐν ᾗ πολλὰ κατὰ τῶν αἱρετικῶν εἰπών, τοιοῦτόν τι γεγονὸς κατ' αὐτὸν ἐκτίθεται, λέγων· "καὶ γὰρ ὄντως, ἀδελφέ, καὶ συμβουλῆς δέομαι καὶ γνώμην αἰτῶ παρὰ σοῦ, τοιούτου τινός μοι προσελθόντος πράγματος, δεδιὼς μὴ ἄρα σφάλλομαι. τῶν γὰρ 2
συναγομένων ἀδελφῶν πιστὸς νομιζόμενος ἀρχαῖος καὶ πρὸ τῆς ἐμῆς χειροτονίας, οἶμαι δὲ καὶ τῆς τοῦ μακαρίου Ἡρακλᾶ καταστάσεως, τῆς συναγωγῆς μετασχών, τοῖς ὑπόγυον βαπτιζομένοις παρατυχὼν καὶ τῶν ἐπερωτήσεων καὶ τῶν ἀποκρίσεων ἐπακούσας, προσῆλθέν μοι κλαίων καὶ καταθρηνῶν ἑαυτὸν καὶ πίπτων πρὸ τῶν ποδῶν

Dionysius of Rome, who at that time had been deemed worthy of the presbyterate, but not long afterwards received also the episcopate there. From it one may learn how that he too had witness paid him by Dionysius of Alexandria for his learning and admirable qualities. In the course of his letter to him he mentions the affair of Novatus in the following terms :

VIII. " For it is with good reason indeed that we feel enmity towards Novatian, who caused a division in the Church and drew away some of the brethren to impieties and blasphemies, and introduced as well most profane teaching about God, and falsely accuses our most compassionate Lord Jesus Christ of being without mercy ; and above all this, he sets at naught the holy washing, and overturns the faith and confession that precede it, and entirely banishes the Holy Spirit from them, even though there was some hope of His remaining with or even returning to them."

IX. And his fifth letter was written to Xystus, bishop of the Romans. In it, speaking much against the heretics, he sets forth the following thing that happened in his day, saying : " Of a truth, brother, I have need of counsel, and ask an opinion of thee. The following matter has come before me, and I am fearful lest after all I be mistaken. Of the brethren who meet together for worship there is one, reckoned faithful, of long standing, a member of the congregation before my ordination, and, I think, before the appointment of the blessed Heraclas. Having been present with those who were recently being baptized, and having heard the questions and answers, he came to me in tears, bewailing himself and falling before

μου, ἐξομολογούμενος μὲν καὶ ἐξομνύμενος τὸ βάπτισμα, ὃ παρὰ τοῖς αἱρετικοῖς βεβάπτιστο, μὴ τοῦτο εἶναι μηδὲ ὅλως ἔχειν τινὰ πρὸς τοῦτο κοινωνίαν, ἀσεβείας γὰρ ἐκεῖνο καὶ βλασφημιῶν πεπληρῶσθαι, λέγων δὲ πάνυ τι τὴν ψυχὴν νῦν 3
Cf. Acts 2, 37 Luke 18, 13 κατανενύχθαι καὶ μηδὲ παρρησίαν ἔχειν ἐπᾶραι τοὺς ὀφθαλμοὺς πρὸς τὸν θεὸν ἀπὸ τῶν ἀνοσίων ἐκείνων ῥημάτων καὶ πραγμάτων ὁρμώμενος, καὶ διὰ τοῦτο δεόμενος τῆς εἰλικρινεστάτης ταύτης καθάρσεως καὶ παραδοχῆς καὶ χάριτος τυχεῖν· ὅπερ ἐγὼ μὲν οὐκ ἐτόλμησα ποιῆσαι, φήσας αὐτ- 4
ἄρκη τὴν πολυχρόνιον αὐτῷ κοινωνίαν εἰς τοῦτο γεγονέναι. εὐχαριστίας γὰρ ἐπακούσαντα καὶ συνεπιφθεγξάμενον τὸ ἀμὴν καὶ τραπέζῃ παραστάντα καὶ χεῖρας εἰς ὑποδοχὴν τῆς ἁγίας τροφῆς προτείναντα καὶ ταύτην καταδεξάμενον καὶ τοῦ σώματος καὶ τοῦ αἵματος τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν μεταschόντα ἱκανῷ χρόνῳ, οὐκ ἂν ἐξ ὑπαρχῆς ἀνασκευάζειν ἔτι τολμήσαιμι· θαρσεῖν δὲ ἐκέλευον καὶ μετὰ βεβαίας πίστεως καὶ ἀγαθῆς ἐλπίδος τῇ μετοχῇ τῶν ἁγίων προσιέναι. ὃ δὲ οὔτε πενθῶν παύεται 5
πέφρικέν τε τῇ τραπέζῃ προσιέναι καὶ μόλις παρακαλούμενος συνεστάναι ταῖς προσευχαῖς ἀνέχεται."

Ἐπὶ ταῖς προειρημέναις φέρεταί τις καὶ ἄλλη τοῦ 6
αὐτοῦ περὶ βαπτίσματος ἐπιστολή, ἐξ αὐτοῦ καὶ ἧς ἠγεῖτο παροικίας Ξύστῳ καὶ τῇ κατὰ Ῥώμην ἐκκλησίᾳ προσπεφωνημένη, ἐν ᾗ διὰ μακρᾶς ἀποδείξεως τὸν περὶ τοῦ ὑποκειμένου ζητήματος παρατείνει λόγον. καὶ ἄλλη δέ τις αὐτοῦ μετὰ ταύτας φέρεται πρὸς τὸν κατὰ Ῥώμην Διονύσιον, ἡ περὶ Λουκιανοῦ. καὶ περὶ μὲν τούτων τοσαῦτα.

Χ. Οἵ γε μὴν ἀμφὶ τὸν Γάλλον οὐδ' ὅλοις ἔτεσιν 1

my feet; confessing and swearing that the baptism with which he had been baptized by the heretics, was not such as this and had nothing in common with it inasmuch as it had been full of impieties and blasphemies. He said that he was now altogether pricked in heart and had not courage so much as to lift up his eyes to God, after beginning with those unholy words and deeds; and therefore he begged that he might receive this most pure cleansing and reception and grace. This I for my part did not dare to do, saying that his long-standing communion with us had been sufficient for this purpose. For since he had heard the Thanksgiving and joined in saying the Amen, and stood beside the Table and stretched forth his hands to receive the holy food, and had received it and partaken of the Body and Blood of our Lord for a long time, I should not dare to build him up again from the beginning. But I kept exhorting him to be of good courage, and to approach for the participation of the holy things with firm faith and good hope. But he never ceases his lament, and shudders to approach the Table, and scarcely, though invited, does he dare to take his stand with the *consistentes* at the prayers.[1] "

In addition to the above-mentioned letters, there is extant also another of his On Baptism, addressed by him and the community over which he ruled to Xystus and the church at Rome, in which with a long proof he gives a protracted discussion of the subject in question. And, after these, there is yet another letter of his extant, to Dionysius at Rome, that with reference to Lucian. So much for these matters.

X. But to resume. Gallus and his associates held

[1] *συνεστάναι ταῖς προσευχαῖς*: see vi. 42. 5.

δύο τὴν ἀρχὴν ἐπικατασχόντες, ἐκποδὼν μεθ-
ίστανται, Οὐαλεριανὸς δ' ἅμα παιδὶ Γαλλιήνῳ δια-
δέχεται τὴν ἡγεμονίαν. αὖθις δὴ οὖν ὁ Διονύσιος 2
οἷα καὶ περὶ τούτου διέξεισιν, ἐκ τῆς πρὸς Ἑρμάμ-
μωνα ἐπιστολῆς μαθεῖν ἔστιν, ἐν ᾗ τοῦτον ἱστορεῖ
τὸν τρόπον· " καὶ τῷ Ἰωάννῃ δὲ ὁμοίως ἀπο-
Rev. 13, 5 καλύπτεται· ' καὶ ἐδόθη γὰρ αὐτῷ,' φησίν, ' στόμα
λαλοῦν μεγάλα καὶ βλασφημίαν, καὶ ἐδόθη αὐτῷ
ἐξουσία καὶ μῆνες τεσσαράκοντα δύο.' ἀμφότερα 3
Rev. 13, 3 δὲ ἔστιν ἐπὶ Οὐαλεριανοῦ θαυμάσαι καὶ τούτων
μάλιστα τὰ πρῶτα ὡς οὕτως ἔσχεν, συννοεῖν
ὡς μὲν ἤπιος καὶ φιλόφρων ἦν πρὸς τοὺς ἀν-
θρώπους τοῦ θεοῦ· οὐδὲ γὰρ ἄλλος τις οὕτω τῶν
πρὸ αὐτοῦ βασιλέων εὐμενῶς καὶ δεξιῶς πρὸς
αὐτοὺς διετέθη, οὐδ' οἱ λεχθέντες ἀναφανδὸν
Χριστιανοὶ γεγονέναι, ὡς ἐκεῖνος οἰκειότατα ἐν
ἀρχῇ καὶ προσφιλέστατα φανερὸς ἦν αὐτοὺς ἀπο-
δεχόμενος, καὶ πᾶς τε ὁ οἶκος αὐτοῦ θεοσεβῶν
πεπλήρωτο καὶ ἦν ἐκκλησία θεοῦ· ἀποσκευάσασθαι 4
δὲ παρέπεισεν αὐτὸν ὁ διδάσκαλος καὶ τῶν ἀπ'
Αἰγύπτου μάγων ἀρχισυνάγωγος, τοὺς μὲν καθα-
ροὺς καὶ ὁσίους ἄνδρας κτείννυσθαι καὶ διώκεσθαι
κελεύων ὡς ἀντιπάλους καὶ κωλυτὰς τῶν παμ-
μιάρων καὶ βδελυκτῶν ἐπαοιδῶν ὑπάρχοντας (καὶ
γὰρ εἰσὶν καὶ ἦσαν ἱκανοί, παρόντες καὶ ὁρώμενοι
καὶ μόνον ἐμπνέοντες καὶ φθεγγόμενοι διασκεδάσαι
τὰς τῶν ἀλιτηρίων δαιμόνων ἐπιβουλάς), τελετὰς
δὲ ἀνάγνους καὶ μαγγανείας ἐξαγίστους καὶ ἱε-

[1] Rev. xiii. 5. (The text differs somewhat from that of A.V. and R.V.)

[2] Apparently, in the preceding context, Dionysius had quoted a passage of Scripture, not from the Apocalypse,

the principate for less than two entire years, and then were removed out of the way; and Valerian along with his son Gallienus succeeded to the government. Once more we may learn from his letter to Hermammon the description that Dionysius gives of him also; in which he gives an account of the following kind: "And to John also it is likewise revealed: 'And there was given to him,' says he, 'a mouth speaking great things and blasphemy, and there was given to him authority and forty and two months.'[1] One may wonder at both of these things[2] under Valerian, and of them note especially the nature of his previous conduct,[3] how mild and friendly he was to the men of God. For not a single one of the emperors before him was so kindly and favourably disposed towards them, not even those who were said to have been openly Christians, as he manifestly was, when he received them at the beginning in the most intimate and friendly manner; indeed all his house had been filled with godly persons, and was a church of God. But the master and ruler of the synagogue of the Egyptian magicians[4] persuaded him to get rid of them, bidding him slay and pursue the pure and holy men, as being rivals and hinderers of his abominable and disgusting incantations (for indeed they are and were capable by their presence and sight, and by merely breathing on them and uttering words, of scattering the designs of the baneful demons). And he advised him to perform unhallowed rites, and abominable juggleries and ill-

which predicted Valerian, and (as we may suppose) depicted him as favourable to the Church. The word "both" (*ἀμφότερα*) refers to it and Rev. xiii. 5.

[3] Reading *τὰ πρῶτα*, with three MSS., in place of *τὰ πρὸ αὐτοῦ*.

[4] *i.e.* Macrianus (see § 5).

ρουργίας ἀκαλλιερήτους ἐπιτελεῖν ὑποτιθέμενος, παῖδας ἀθλίους ἀποσφάττειν καὶ τέκνα δυστήνων πατέρων καταθύειν καὶ σπλάγχνα νεογενῆ διαιρεῖν καὶ τὰ τοῦ θεοῦ διακόπτειν καὶ καταχορδεύειν πλάσματα, ὡς ἐκ τούτων εὐδαιμονήσοντας."

Καὶ τούτοις γε ἐπιφέρει λέγων· "καλὰ γοῦν 5
αὐτοῖς Μακριανὸς τῆς ἐλπιζομένης βασιλείας προσήνεγκεν χαριστήρια· ὃς πρότερον μὲν ἐπὶ τῶν καθόλου λόγων λεγόμενος εἶναι βασιλέως, οὐδὲν εὔλογον οὐδὲ καθολικὸν ἐφρόνησεν, ἀλλ'
Ezek. 13, 3 ὑποπέπτωκεν ἀρᾷ προφητικῇ τῇ λεγούσῃ 'οὐαὶ τοῖς προφητεύουσιν ἀπὸ καρδίας αὐτῶν καὶ τὸ καθόλου μὴ βλέπουσιν'· οὐ γὰρ συνῆκεν τὴν 6
Cf. Eph. 4, 6; Col. 1, 17 καθόλου πρόνοιαν, οὐδὲ τὴν κρίσιν ὑπείδετο τοῦ πρὸ πάντων καὶ διὰ πάντων καὶ ἐπὶ πᾶσιν, δι' ὃ καὶ τῆς μὲν καθολικῆς αὐτοῦ ἐκκλησίας γέγονεν πολέμιος, ἠλλοτρίωσεν δὲ καὶ ἀπεξένωσεν ἑαυτὸν τοῦ ἐλέους τοῦ θεοῦ καὶ πορρωτάτω τῆς ἑαυτοῦ σωτηρίας ἐφυγάδευσεν, ἐν τούτῳ τὸ ἴδιον ἐπαληθεύων ὄνομα."

Καὶ πάλιν μεθ' ἕτερά φησιν· "ὁ μὲν γὰρ Οὐα- 7
λεριανὸς εἰς ταῦτα ὑπὸ τούτου προαχθείς, εἰς ὕβρεις καὶ ὀνειδισμοὺς ἐκδοθείς, κατὰ τὸ ῥηθὲν
Is. 66, 3, 4 πρὸς Ἡσαΐαν· 'καὶ οὗτοι ἐξελέξαντο τὰς ὁδοὺς αὐτῶν καὶ τὰ βδελύγματα αὐτῶν, ἡ ψυχὴ αὐτῶν ἠθέλησεν, καὶ ἐγὼ ἐκλέξομαι τὰ ἐμπαίγματα αὐτῶν, καὶ τὰς ἁμαρτίας ἀνταποδώσω αὐτοῖς'· οὗτος δὲ τῇ βασιλείᾳ παρὰ τὴν ἀξίαν ἐπιμανεὶς 8

[1] Obscure: probably the meaning is that Macrianus propitiated them (*sc.* the demons) in order to gain his ambitious ends. A double play on words follows, which cannot be reproduced in English, between λόγων ("accounts") and

omened sacrifices, such as cutting the throats of wretched boys and sacrificing children of hapless parents and opening up the entrails of new-born babes, and cutting up and mincing the handywork of God, as if all this would bring them divine favour."

And in addition he goes on to say : " Goodly at all events were the thank-offerings that Macrianus made to them for the Empire of his hopes.[1] Formerly when he was regarded as minister over the imperial accounts as a whole, he displayed neither a reasonable nor a catholic mind. But he has fallen under the prophetic curse which says: 'Woe unto them that prophesy from their heart, and see not the whole.' For he did not understand the universal Providence, nor did he suspect the judgement of Him who is before all and through all and over all. Therefore he has come to be at enmity with His Catholic Church, and so alienated and estranged himself from God's mercy and banished himself as far as possible from his own salvation, in this proving true his name."[2]

And again, after other remarks, he says : " For Valerian, being induced by him to this course of action, was given over to insults and reproaches, according to that which was said to Isaiah : 'And these have chosen their own ways and abominations, in which their soul delighteth, and I will choose their mockings, and their sins I will recompense them.' Now this man,[3] in his mad desire for the

εὔλογον (" reasonable "), and also between καθόλου and καθολικόν; and, in order to maintain this latter play, Dionysius, in his quotation of Ezek. xiii. 3 (LXX), takes τὸ καθόλου as the object of the sentence (" the whole ") instead of adverbially (" not at all ").

[2] Another play upon words: Macrianus and μακρός (" far off ").

[3] *i.e.* Macrianus; he was lame.

καὶ τὸν βασίλειον ὑποδῦναι κόσμον ἀδυνατῶν ἀναπήρῳ τῷ σώματι, τοὺς δύο παῖδας τὰς πατρῴας ἀναδεξαμένους ἁμαρτίας προεστήσατο. ἐναργὴς γὰρ ἐπὶ τούτων ἡ πρόρρησις ἦν εἶπεν ὁ θεός· Ex. 20, 5 'ἀποδιδοὺς ἁμαρτίας πατέρων ἐπὶ τέκνα ἕως τρίτης καὶ τετάρτης γενεᾶς τοῖς μισοῦσίν με.' τὰς γὰρ ἰδίας πονηρὰς ἐπιθυμίας, ὧν ἠτύχει, ταῖς 9 τῶν υἱῶν κεφαλαῖς ἐπιβαλών, εἰς ἐκείνους τὴν ἑαυτοῦ κακίαν καὶ τὸ πρὸς τὸν θεὸν μῖσος ἐξωμόρξατο."

Καὶ περὶ μὲν τοῦ Οὐαλεριανοῦ τοσαῦτα ὁ Διονύσιος· XI. περὶ δὲ τοῦ κατ' αὐτὸν διωγμοῦ 1 σφοδρότατα πνεύσαντος οἷα σὺν ἑτέροις ὁ αὐτὸς διὰ τὴν εἰς τὸν τῶν ὅλων θεὸν εὐσέβειαν ὑπέστη, δηλώσουσιν αἱ αὐτοῦ φωναὶ ἃς πρὸς Γερμανὸν τῶν κατ' αὐτὸν ἐπισκόπων κακῶς ἀγορεύειν αὐτὸν πειρώμενον ἀποτεινόμενος, τοῦτον παρατίθεται *Cf.* 2 Cor. 11, 1, 17 τὸν τρόπον· "εἰς ἀφροσύνην δὲ κινδυνεύω πολλὴν 2 καὶ ἀναισθησίαν ὄντως ἐμπεσεῖν, εἰς ἀνάγκην συμβιβαζόμενος τοῦ διηγεῖσθαι τὴν θαυμαστὴν περὶ Tobit 12, 7 ἡμᾶς οἰκονομίαν τοῦ θεοῦ· ἀλλ' ἐπεὶ 'μυστήριον,' φησίν, 'βασιλέως κρύψαι καλόν, τὰ δὲ ἔργα τοῦ θεοῦ ἀνακαλύπτειν ἔνδοξον,' ὁμόσε χωρήσω τῇ Γερμανοῦ βίᾳ. ἦκον πρὸς Αἰμιλιανόν, οὐ μόνος, 3 ἠκολούθησαν δέ μοι συμπρεσβύτερός τέ μου Μάξιμος καὶ διάκονοι Φαῦστος Εὐσέβιος Χαιρήμων, καί τις τῶν ἀπὸ Ῥώμης παρόντων ἀδελφῶν ἡμῖν συνεισῆλθεν. Αἰμιλιανὸς δὲ οὐκ εἶπέν μοι προ- 4 ηγουμένως 'μὴ σύναγε.' περιττὸν γὰρ τοῦτο ἦν αὐτῷ καὶ τὸ τελευταῖον, ἐπὶ τὸ πρῶτον ἀνατρέχοντι· οὐ γὰρ περὶ τοῦ μὴ συνάγειν ἑτέρους ὁ

[1] Deputy-prefect of Egypt in 258.

imperial rule of which he was not worthy, and unable to deck his maimed body with the imperial robes, put forward his two sons, who thus received their father's sins. For in them was clearly fulfilled the prophecy that God spake: 'Visiting the sins of fathers upon children, until the third and fourth generation in them that hate me.' For his own evil desires, in which he failed, he heaped upon the heads of his sons, and so wiped off on them his own wickedness and his hatred toward God."

This is the account given by Dionysius concerning Valerian. XI. But with regard to the storm of persecution that raged fiercely in his day, what the same Dionysius, and others with him, underwent for their piety toward the God of the universe will be made plain by his own words which he wrote at length against Germanus, one of the bishops of his day who was attempting to defame him. He makes his statement in the following manner: "But I am in danger of falling, in truth, into great foolishness and stupidity, being forced to the point of compulsion to recount the wonderful dispensation of God concerning us. But since 'it is good,' he says, 'to keep close the secret of a king, but glorious to reveal the works of God,' I will join issue with the violence of Germanus. I came before Aemilianus,[1] not alone, but there followed me my fellow-presbyter Maximus, and Faustus, Eusebius, Chaeremon, deacons; and one of the brethren who had come from Rome entered in along with us. And Aemilianus did not lead off with the words 'Do not hold assemblies.' For that would have been superfluous for him to say, and the last thing [to be mentioned] by one who was going back to the very beginning. For his discourse

λόγος ἦν αὐτῷ, ἀλλὰ περὶ τοῦ μηδ' αὐτοὺς ἡμᾶς εἶναι Χριστιανούς, καὶ τούτου προσέταττεν πεπαῦσθαι, εἰ μεταβαλοίμην ἐγώ, καὶ τοὺς ἄλλους ἔψεσθαί μοι νομίζων. ἀπεκρινάμην δὲ οὐκ ἀπ- 5
Acts 5, 29 εοικότως οὐδὲ μακρὰν τοῦ 'πειθαρχεῖν δεῖ θεῷ μᾶλλον ἢ ἀνθρώποις,' ἀλλ' ἄντικρυς διεμαρτυράμην ὅτι τὸν θεὸν τὸν ὄντα μόνον καὶ οὐδένα ἕτερον σέβω οὐδ' ἂν μεταθείμην οὐδὲ παυσαίμην ποτὲ Χριστιανὸς ὤν. ἐπὶ τούτοις ἐκέλευσεν ἡμᾶς ἀπελθεῖν εἰς κώμην πλησίον τῆς ἐρήμου καλουμένην Κεφρώ.

"Αὐτῶν δὲ ἐπακούσατε τῶν ὑπ' ἀμφοτέρων 6
λεχθέντων ὡς ὑπεμνηματίσθη. εἰσαχθέντων Διονυσίου καὶ Φαύστου καὶ Μαξίμου καὶ Μαρκέλλου καὶ Χαιρήμονος Αἰμιλιανὸς διέπων τὴν ἡγεμονίαν εἶπεν· 'καὶ ἀγράφως ὑμῖν διελέχθην περὶ τῆς φιλανθρωπίας τῶν κυρίων ἡμῶν ᾗ περὶ ὑμᾶς κέχρηνται· δεδώκασιν γὰρ ἐξουσίαν ὑμῖν σωτηρίας, 7
εἰ βούλοισθε ἐπὶ τὸ κατὰ φύσιν τρέπεσθαι καὶ θεοὺς τοὺς σώζοντας αὐτῶν τὴν βασιλείαν προσκυνεῖν, ἐπιλαθέσθαι δὲ τῶν παρὰ φύσιν. τί οὖν φατὲ πρὸς ταῦτα; οὐδὲ γὰρ ἀχαρίστους ὑμᾶς ἔσεσθαι περὶ τὴν φιλανθρωπίαν αὐτῶν προσδοκῶ, ἐπειδήπερ ἐπὶ τὰ βελτίω ὑμᾶς προτρέπονται.'

"Διονύσιος ἀπεκρίνατο· 'οὐ πάντες πάντας 8
προσκυνοῦσι θεούς, ἀλλ' ἕκαστοι τινάς, οὓς νομίζουσιν. ἡμεῖς τοίνυν τὸν ἕνα θεὸν καὶ δημιουργὸν τῶν ἁπάντων, τὸν καὶ τὴν βασιλείαν ἐγχειρίσαντα τοῖς θεοφιλεστάτοις Οὐαλεριανῷ καὶ Γαλλιήνῳ Σεβαστοῖς, τοῦτον καὶ σέβομεν καὶ προσκυνοῦμεν, καὶ τούτῳ διηνεκῶς ὑπὲρ τῆς βασιλείας αὐτῶν, ὅπως ἀσάλευτος διαμείνῃ, προσευχόμεθα.'

was not about not assembling others, but about not being Christians ourselves, and from that he ordered me to desist, thinking that if I were to change, the others also would follow me. But I gave a reply that was not inappropriate, nor far from 'We must obey God rather than men'; yea, I testified outright that I worship the only God and none other, nor would I change or ever cease to be a Christian. Thereupon he bade us depart to a village near the desert, called Cephro.

"But hear the things themselves that were spoken on both sides, as they were placed on record: When Dionysius and Faustus and Maximus and Marcellus and Chaeremon were brought into court, Aemilianus, the deputy-prefect, said, '. . . And verbally I discoursed with you concerning the kindness that our lords[1] have displayed on your behalf. For they gave you the opportunity of safety if ye were willing to turn to that which is according to nature and worship the gods which preserve their Empire, and forget those gods which are contrary to nature. What, therefore, say ye to these things? For I do not expect that ye will be ungrateful for their kindness, forasmuch as they urge you on to the better course.'

"Dionysius replied: 'Not all men worship all gods, but each one certain whom he regards as such. We therefore both worship and adore the one God and Maker of all things, who also committed the Empire to the Augusti, most highly favoured of God, Valerian and Gallienus; and to Him we unceasingly pray for their Empire, that it may remain unshaken.'

[1] *i.e.* Valerian and Gallienus.

" Αἰμιλιανὸς διέπων τὴν ἡγεμονίαν αὐτοῖς εἶπεν· ' τίς γὰρ ὑμᾶς κωλύει καὶ τοῦτον, εἴπερ ἐστὶν θεός, μετὰ τῶν κατὰ φύσιν θεῶν προσκυνεῖν; θεοὺς γὰρ σέβειν ἐκελεύσθητε. καὶ θεοὺς οὓς πάντες ἴσασιν.'

" Διονύσιος ἀπεκρίνατο· ' ἡμεῖς οὐδένα ἕτερον προσκυνοῦμεν.'

" Αἰμιλιανὸς διέπων τὴν ἡγεμονίαν αὐτοῖς εἶπεν· ' ὁρῶ ὑμᾶς ὁμοῦ καὶ ἀχαρίστους ὄντας καὶ ἀναισθήτους τῆς πραότητος τῶν Σεβαστῶν ἡμῶν· δι' ὅπερ οὐκ ἔσεσθε ἐν τῇ πόλει ταύτῃ, ἀλλὰ ἀποσταλήσεσθε εἰς τὰ μέρη τῆς Λιβύης καὶ ἐν τόπῳ λεγομένῳ Κεφρώ· τοῦτον γὰρ τὸν τόπον ἐξελεξάμην ἐκ τῆς κελεύσεως τῶν Σεβαστῶν ἡμῶν. οὐδαμῶς δὲ ἐξέσται οὔτε ὑμῖν οὔτε ἄλλοις τισὶν ἢ συνόδους ποιεῖσθαι ἢ εἰς τὰ καλούμενα κοιμητήρια εἰσιέναι. εἰ δέ τις φανείη ἢ μὴ γενόμενος εἰς τὸν τόπον τοῦτον ὃν ἐκέλευσα, ἢ ἐν συναγωγῇ τινι εὑρεθείη, ἑαυτῷ τὸν κίνδυνον ἐπαρτήσει· οὐ γὰρ ἐπιλείψει ἡ δέουσα ἐπιστρέφεια. ἀπόστητε οὖν ὅπου ἐκελεύσθητε.'

" Καὶ νοσοῦντα δέ με κατήπειξεν, οὐδὲ μιᾶς ὑπέρθεσιν δοὺς ἡμέρας. ποίαν οὖν ἔτι τοῦ συνάγειν ἢ μὴ συνάγειν εἶχον σχολήν; "

Εἶτα μεθ' ἕτερά φησιν· " ἀλλ' οὐδὲ τῆς αἰσθητῆς ἡμεῖς μετὰ τοῦ κυρίου συναγωγῆς ἀπέστημεν, ἀλλὰ τοὺς μὲν ἐν τῇ πόλει σπουδαιότερον
1 Cor. 5, 3 συνεκρότουν ὡς συνών, ' ἀπὼν μὲν τῷ σώματι,' ὡς εἶπεν, ' παρὼν δὲ τῷ πνεύματι,' ἐν δὲ τῇ Κεφροῖ καὶ πολλὴ συνεπεδήμησεν ἡμῖν ἐκκλησία, τῶν μὲν ἀπὸ τῆς πόλεως ἀδελφῶν ἑπομένων, τῶν δὲ
Col. 4, 3 συνιόντων ἀπ' Αἰγύπτου. κἀκεῖ θύραν ἡμῖν ὁ

" Aemilianus, the deputy-prefect, said to them : ' And who prevents you from worshipping this god also, if he be a god, along with the natural gods ? For ye were bidden to worship gods, and gods whom all know.'

" Dionysius replied : ' We worship no other God.'

" Aemilianus, the deputy-prefect, said to them : ' I see that ye are at once ungrateful and insensible of the clemency of our Augusti. Wherefore ye shall not be in this city, but ye shall betake yourselves to the parts of Libya and [remain] in a place called Cephro. For this is the place I chose in accordance with the command of our Augusti. And it shall in no wise be permitted either to you or to any others either to hold assemblies or to enter the cemeteries,[1] as they are called. If anyone be proved not to have gone to the place that I commanded, or be found at any assembly, he will bring the peril upon himself, for there shall be no lack of the necessary observation. Be gone therefore whither ye were bidden.'

" And even though I was sick, he hurried me away without granting me a single day's respite. What spare time had I then remaining either for holding or not holding an assembly ? "

Then after other remarks he says : " But we did not abstain from even the visible assembling of ourselves with the Lord ; nay, I strove the more earnestly to gather together those in the city, as if I were with them, ' being absent in body,' as he [2] said, ' but present in spirit,' and at Cephro a large church also sojourned with us, some brethren following us from the city, others joining us from Egypt. And

[1] It was felt to be dangerous to allow Christians to assemble at the grave of martyrs : *cf.* ix. 2.

[2] *i.e.* St. Paul.

θεὸς ἀνέῳξεν τοῦ λόγου. καὶ τὸ μὲν πρῶτον ἐδιώχθημεν, ἐλιθοβολήθημεν, ὕστερον δέ τινες οὐκ ὀλίγοι τῶν ἐθνῶν τὰ εἴδωλα καταλιπόντες, ἐπέστρεψαν ἐπὶ τὸν θεόν· οὐ πρότερον δὲ παραδεξαμένοις αὐτοῖς τότε πρῶτον δι' ἡμῶν ὁ λόγος ἐπεσπάρη, καὶ ὥσπερ τούτου ἕνεκεν ἀπαγαγὼν
Acts 12, 25 ἡμᾶς πρὸς αὐτοὺς ὁ θεός, ἐπεὶ τὴν διακονίαν ταύτην ἐπληρώσαμεν, πάλιν ἀπαγήοχεν.

"Ὁ γὰρ Αἰμιλιανὸς εἰς τραχυτέρους μέν, ὡς ἐδόκει, καὶ λιβυκωτέρους ἡμᾶς μεταστῆσαι τόπους ἐβουλήθη, καὶ τοὺς πανταχόσε εἰς τὸν Μαρεώτην ἐκέλευσεν συρρεῖν, κώμας ἑκάστοις τῶν κατὰ χώραν ἀφορίσας, ἡμᾶς δὲ μᾶλλον ἐν ὁδῷ καὶ πρώτους καταληφθησομένους ἔταξεν. ᾠκονόμει γὰρ δῆλον ὅτι καὶ παρεσκεύαζεν ἵνα ὁπόταν βουληθείη συλλαβεῖν, πάντας εὐαλώτους ἔχοι. ἐγὼ δὲ ὅτε μὲν εἰς Κεφρὼ κεκελεύσμην ἀπελθεῖν, καὶ τὸν τόπον ἠγνόουν ὅποι ποτὲ οὗτός ἐστιν, οὐδὲ τὸ ὄνομα σχεδὸν πρότερον ἀκηκοώς, καὶ ὅμως εὐθύμως καὶ ἀταράχως ἀπῄειν· ἐπεὶ δὲ μετασκηνώσειν εἰς τὰ Κολλουθίωνος ἀπηγγέλη μοι, ἴσασιν οἱ παρόντες ὅπως διετέθην (ἐνταῦθα γὰρ ἐμαυτοῦ κατηγορήσω), τὸ μὲν πρῶτον ἠχθέσθην καὶ λίαν ἐχαλέπηνα· καὶ γὰρ εἰ γνωριμώτεροι καὶ συνηθέστεροι ἐτύγχανον ἡμῖν οἱ τόποι, ἀλλ' ἔρημον μὲν ἀδελφῶν καὶ σπουδαίων ἀνθρώπων ἔφασκον εἶναι τὸ χωρίον, ταῖς δὲ τῶν ὁδοιπορούντων ἐνοχλήσεσιν καὶ ληστῶν καταδρομαῖς ἐκκείμενον· ἔτυχον δὲ παραμυθίας, ὑπομνησάντων με τῶν ἀδελφῶν ὅτι γειτνιῴη μᾶλλον τῇ πόλει καὶ ἡ μὲν Κεφρὼ πολλὴν ἡμῖν ἦγεν ἀδελφῶν τῶν

there God opened unto us a door for the word. And at first we were pursued, we were stoned, but afterwards not a few of the heathen left their idols and turned to God. Then for the first time was the word sown through our agency among those who had not formerly received it. It was, as it were, for this that God took us away to them, and, when we had fulfilled this ministration, took us away again.

" For Aemilianus wished to remove us to rougher, as he thought, and more Libyan-like places, and he bade those [who were scattered] in every direction to stream together to the Mareotian [nome], assigning separate villages in the district for each party ; but us he posted more on the road, so that we should be the first to be arrested. For he evidently was managing and arranging it, that, whenever he wished to seize us, he might find us all easy of capture. As for me, when I had been bidden to depart to Cephro, I did not even know in what direction the place lay, scarcely having heard so much as the name before ; nevertheless I departed with a good grace and made no disturbance. But when it was told me that I was to remove to the parts of Colluthion, those who were present know how I was affected (for here I shall be my own accuser) : at first I was vexed and exceedingly angry ; for although the places happened to be better known and more familiar to us, yet it was affirmed that the district was without brethren or persons of good character, and exposed besides to annoyances of travellers and incursions of robbers. But I found encouragement when the brethren reminded me that it was nearer the city,[1] and that, while Cephro used to bring us much intercourse with

[1] *i.e.* Alexandria.

ἀπ' Αἰγύπτου τὴν ἐπιμιξίαν, ὡς πλατύτερον ἐκκλησιάζειν δύνασθαι, ἐκεῖ δέ, πλησιαίτερον οὔσης τῆς πόλεως, συνεχέστερον τῆς τῶν ὄντως ἀγαπητῶν καὶ οἰκειοτάτων καὶ φιλτάτων ὄψεως ἀπολαύσομεν· ἀφίξονται γὰρ καὶ ἀναπαύσονται καὶ ὡς ἐν προαστείοις πορρωτέρω κειμένοις κατὰ μέρος ἔσονται συναγωγαί. καὶ οὕτως ἐγένετο."

Καὶ μεθ' ἕτερα περὶ τῶν συμβεβηκότων αὐτῷ αὖθις ταῦτα γράφει· "πολλαῖς γε ταῖς ὁμολογίαις Γερμανὸς σεμνύνεται, πολλά γε εἰπεῖν ἔχει καθ' ἑαυτοῦ γενόμενα· ὅσας ἀριθμῆσαι δύναται περὶ ἡμῶν ἀποφάσεις, δημεύσεις, προγραφάς, ὑπ-
Heb. 10, 34 ἀρχόντων ἁρπαγάς, ἀξιωμάτων ἀποθέσεις, δόξης κοσμικῆς ὀλιγωρίας, ἐπαίνων ἡγεμονικῶν καὶ βουλευτικῶν καταφρονήσεις καὶ τῶν ἐναντίων,
Cf. Rom. 8, 35 ἀπειλῶν καὶ καταβοήσεων καὶ κινδύνων καὶ διωγμῶν καὶ πλάνης καὶ στενοχωρίας καὶ ποικίλης θλίψεως ὑπομονήν, οἷα τὰ ἐπὶ Δεκίου καὶ Σαβίνου συμβάντα μοι, οἷα μέχρι νῦν Αἰμιλιανοῦ. ποῦ δὲ Γερμανὸς ἐφάνη; τίς δὲ περὶ αὐτοῦ λόγος; ἀλλὰ τῆς πολλῆς ἀφροσύνης, εἰς ἣν ἐμπίπτω διὰ Γερμανόν, ὑφίεμαι, δι' ὃ καὶ τὴν καθ' ἕκαστον τῶν γενομένων διήγησιν παρίημι τοῖς εἰδόσιν ἀδελφοῖς λέγειν."

Ὁ δ' αὐτὸς καὶ ἐν τῇ πρὸς Δομέτιον καὶ Δίδυμον ἐπιστολῇ τῶν ἀμφὶ τὸν διωγμὸν αὖθις μνημονεύει ἐν τούτοις· "τοὺς δὲ ἡμετέρους πολλούς τε ὄντας καὶ ἀγνῶτας ὑμῖν, περισσὸν ὀνομαστὶ καταλέγειν, πλὴν ἴστε ὅτι ἄνδρες καὶ γυναῖκες, καὶ νέοι καὶ γέροντες, καὶ κόραι καὶ πρεσβύτιδες, καὶ στρατιῶται καὶ ἰδιῶται, καὶ πᾶν γένος καὶ πᾶσα ἡλικία, οἳ μὲν διὰ μαστίγων καὶ πυρός, οἳ δὲ διὰ σιδήρου τὸν

brethren from Egypt, so that there was a wider area from which to gather a congregation, yet there, from the nearer position of the city, we should enjoy seeing more constantly those really beloved and most intimate and dear. They would come, they said, and stay the night, and, as in the more remote suburban districts, there would be sectional assemblies. And so it proved."

And, after other remarks with reference to what happened to him, he writes again as follows: "Many, to be sure, are the confessions on which Germanus prides himself, many the happenings to his hurt of which he has to tell—even all the things that he can make a list of as regards us: sentences, confiscations, proscriptions, spoiling of possessions, losses of dignities, despisings of worldly glory, disdainings of commendations and the reverse from prefect and council, endurance of threats, outcries, perils, persecutions, wanderings, anguish and divers tribulations, such as happened to me under Decius and Sabinus, up to the present time under Aemilianus. But where did Germanus appear? What talk was there about him? But I must cease from the great folly into which I am falling on account of Germanus; wherefore also I forbear to give in detail to the brethren who know them an account of the events."

The same Dionysius, in the letter also to Domitius and Didymus, mentions again the happenings of the persecution, as follows: "But it is superfluous to recount by name our people, since they are numerous and unknown to you. Only understand that men and women, both old men and lads, both girls and aged women, both soldiers and civilians, both every race and every age, some enduring scourgings and fire,

ἀγῶνα νικήσαντες, τοὺς στεφάνους ἀπειλήφασιν· τοῖς δὲ οὐ πάμπολυς αὐτάρκης ἀπέβη χρόνος εἰς τὸ φανῆναι δεκτοὺς τῷ κυρίῳ, ὥσπερ οὖν ἔοικεν μηδὲ ἐμοὶ μέχρι νῦν, διόπερ εἰς ὃν οἶδεν αὐτὸς ἐπιτήδειον καιρὸν ὑπερέθετό με ὁ λέγων ‘ καιρῷ δεκτῷ ἐπήκουσά σου, καὶ ἐν ἡμέρᾳ σωτηρίας ἐβοήθησά σοι.’ τὰ γὰρ καθ’ ἡμᾶς ἐπειδὴ πυνθάνεσθε καὶ βούλεσθε δηλωθῆναι ὑμῖν ὅπως διάγομεν, ἠκούσατε μὲν πάντως ὅπως ἡμᾶς δεσμώτας ἀγομένους ὑπὸ ἑκατοντάρχου καὶ στρατηγῶν καὶ τῶν σὺν αὐτοῖς στρατιωτῶν καὶ ὑπηρετῶν, ἐμέ τε καὶ Γάϊον καὶ Φαῦστον καὶ Πέτρον καὶ Παῦλον, ἐπελθόντες τινὲς τῶν Μαρεωτῶν, ἄκοντας καὶ μηδὲ ἑπομένους, βίᾳ τε καὶ σύροντες, ἀφήρπασαν· ἐγὼ δὲ νῦν καὶ Γάϊος καὶ Πέτρος μόνοι, τῶν ἄλλων ἀδελφῶν ἀπορφανισθέντες, ἐν ἐρήμῳ καὶ αὐχμηρῷ τῆς Λιβύης τόπῳ κατακεκλείσμεθα, τριῶν ὁδὸν ἡμερῶν τοῦ Παραιτονίου διεστηκότες.”

Is. 49, 8
2 Cor. 6, 2

Καὶ ὑποκαταβάς φησιν· “ ἐν δὲ τῇ πόλει καταδεδύκασιν ἀφανῶς ἐπισκεπτόμενοι τοὺς ἀδελφούς, πρεσβύτεροι μὲν Μάξιμος Διόσκορος Δημήτριος Λούκιος· οἱ γὰρ ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ προφανέστεροι Φαυστῖνος καὶ Ἀκύλας ἐν Αἰγύπτῳ πλανῶνται· διάκονοι δὲ οἱ μετὰ τοὺς ἐν τῇ νήσῳ τελευτήσαντας ὑπολειφθέντες Φαῦστος Εὐσέβιος Χαιρήμων· Εὐσέβιος, ὃν ἐξ ἀρχῆς ὁ θεὸς ἐνεδυνάμωσεν καὶ παρεσκεύασεν τὰς ὑπηρεσίας τῶν ἐν ταῖς φυλακαῖς γενομένων ὁμολογητῶν ἐναγωνίως ἀποπληροῦν καὶ τὰς τῶν σωμάτων περιστολὰς τῶν τελείων καὶ μακαρίων μαρτύρων οὐκ ἀκινδύνως ἐκτελεῖν· καὶ γὰρ μέχρι νῦν οὐκ ἀνίησιν ὁ ἡγούμενος τοὺς μὲν ἀναιρῶν, ὡς προεῖπον, ὠμῶς τῶν προσ-

others the sword, conquered in the fight and have received their crowns. But in the case of some, a very long time was not sufficient to show them acceptable to the Lord, as indeed it is still seemingly not sufficient in my case; wherefore I have been put off, until that suitable time that He knows, by Him that saith: 'At an acceptable time I hearkened unto thee, and in a day of salvation did I succour thee.' For since ye make inquiries as to our affairs and desire to be told how we pass our time, ye have heard of course how that when we were being led away prisoners by a centurion and duumvirs with their soldiers and servants—I and Gaius and Faustus and Peter and Paul—certain of the nome of Marea came up, dragged us by force and carried us away, against our will and in the face of our refusal to follow them. And now I and Gaius and Peter only, bereft of the other brethren, have been shut up in a lonely, parched spot in Libya, a three-days journey from Paraetonium."

And a little further down he says: "But in the city there have concealed themselves, secretly visiting the brethren, of the presbyters Maximus, Dioscorus, Demetrius, Lucius. For those who are better known in the world, Faustinus and Aquila, are wandering about in Egypt. As to the deacons, they who survived those that died in the island are Faustus, Eusebius, Chaeremon: that Eusebius, whom from the beginning God strengthened and prepared to render with all energy the services to the confessors that were in prison, and at no small risk to perform the task of laying out the corpses of the blessed and perfect martyrs. For even to this day the prefect does not cease from putting to a cruel death, as I have said before, some of those who are brought before

ἀγομένων, τοὺς δὲ βασάνοις καταξαίνων, τοὺς δὲ φυλακαῖς καὶ δεσμοῖς ἐκτήκων προστάσσων τε μηδένα τούτοις προσιέναι καὶ ἀνερευνῶν μή τις φανείη, καὶ ὅμως ὁ θεὸς τῇ προθυμίᾳ καὶ λιπαρίᾳ τῶν ἀδελφῶν διαναπαύει τοὺς πεπιεσμένους."

Καὶ τοσαῦτα μὲν ὁ Διονύσιος. ἰστέον δὲ ὡς ὁ μὲν Εὐσέβιος, ὃν διακονον προσεῖπεν, σμικρὸν ὕστερον ἐπίσκοπος τῆς κατὰ Συρίαν Λαοδικείας καθίσταται, ὁ δὲ Μάξιμος, ὃν τότε πρεσβύτερον εἴρηκεν, μετ' αὐτὸν Διονύσιον τὴν λειτουργίαν τῶν κατ' Ἀλεξάνδρειαν ἀδελφῶν διαδέχεται, Φαῦστος δέ, ὁ σὺν αὐτῷ τηνικάδε διαπρέψας ἐν τῇ ὁμολογίᾳ, μέχρι τοῦ καθ' ὑμᾶς διωγμοῦ φυλαχθείς, γηραιὸς κομιδῇ καὶ πλήρης ἡμερῶν καθ' ἡμᾶς αὐτοὺς μαρτυρίῳ τὴν κεφαλὴν ἀποτμηθεὶς τελειοῦται.

Ἀλλὰ τὰ μὲν κατ' ἐκεῖνο καιροῦ τῷ Διονυσίῳ συμβάντα τοιαῦτα. XII. κατὰ δὲ τὸν δηλούμενον Οὐαλεριανοῦ διωγμὸν τρεῖς ἐν Καισαρείᾳ τῆς Παλαιστίνης τῇ κατὰ Χριστὸν διαλάμψαντες ὁμολογίᾳ, θείῳ κατεκοσμήθησαν μαρτυρίῳ, θηρίων γενόμενοι βορά· τούτων ὁ μὲν Πρίσκος ἐκαλεῖτο, ὁ δὲ Μάλχος, τῷ δὲ τρίτῳ Ἀλέξανδρος ὄνομα ἦν. τούτους φασὶν κατ' ἀγρὸν οἰκοῦντας, πρότερον μὲν ἑαυτοὺς ὡς ἀμελεῖς καὶ ῥᾳθύμους κακίσαι, ὅτι δὴ βραβείων, τοῦ καιροῦ τοῖς πόθου γλιχομένοις οὐρανίου διανέμοντος, ὀλιγωροῖεν αὐτοί, μὴ οὐχὶ προαρπάζοντες τὸν τοῦ μαρτυρίου στέφανον· ταύτῃ δὲ βουλευσαμένους, ὁρμῆσαι ἐπὶ τὴν Καισάρειαν ὁμόσε τε χωρῆσαι ἐπὶ τὸν δικαστὴν καὶ τυχεῖν

him, while others he mutilates with tortures, or allows to pine away in imprisonment and chains, giving his orders that no one is to go near them, and investigating whether any has been found so doing ; nevertheless God gives some respite to those who are sorely pressed, through the zeal and steadfastness of the brethren."

Such is the account given by Dionysius. It should be observed, however, that Eusebius, whom he calls a deacon, shortly afterwards was appointed bishop of Laodicea in Syria ; and Maximus, of whom he speaks as a presbyter then, succeeded Dionysius himself in his ministry to the brethren in Alexandria ; but that Faustus, who along with him was distinguished at that time for his confession, was preserved until the persecution in our day, and, when quite an old man and full of days, was perfected by martyrdom in our own time, being beheaded.

XII. So it happened to Dionysius at that time. But during the persecution of Valerian, of which we are speaking, three persons at Caesarea in Palestine, conspicuous for their confession of Christ, were adorned with a divine martyrdom, becoming food for wild beasts. Of these one was called Priscus, the second Malchus, and the name of the third was Alexander. It is said that these men, who were living in the country, at first reproached themselves for their carelessness and sloth, because instead of hastening to secure the crown of martyrdom, they were proving contemptuous of prizes, though the present opportunity was bestowing them upon such as yearned with a heavenly desire. But that when they had taken counsel thereon, they started for Caesarea, appeared before the judge and met the

τοῦ προδεδηλωμένου τέλους. ἔτι πρὸς τούτοις γύναιόν τι κατὰ τὸν αὐτὸν διωγμὸν ἐν τῇ αὐτῇ πόλει τὸν ὅμοιον ἱστοροῦσιν ἀγῶνα διηθληκέναι· τῆς δὲ Μαρκίωνος αὐτὴν αἱρέσεως γενέσθαι κατέχει λόγος.

XIII. Ἀλλ' οὐκ εἰς μακρὸν δουλείαν τὴν παρὰ βαρβάροις ὑπομείναντος Οὐαλεριανοῦ, μοναρχήσας ὁ παῖς σωφρονέστερον τὴν ἀρχὴν διατίθεται, ἀνίησί τε αὐτίκα διὰ προγραμμάτων τὸν καθ' ἡμῶν διωγμόν, ἐπ' ἐλευθερίας τοῖς τοῦ λόγου προεστῶσιν τὰ ἐξ ἔθους ἐπιτελεῖν δι' ἀντιγραφῆς προστάξας, ἥτις τοῦτον ἔχει τὸν τρόπον· "Αὐτοκράτωρ Καῖσαρ Πούπλιος Λικίνιος Γαλλιῆνος Εὐσεβὴς Εὐτυχὴς Σεβαστὸς Διονυσίῳ καὶ Πίννᾳ καὶ Δημητρίῳ καὶ τοῖς λοιποῖς ἐπισκόποις. τὴν εὐεργεσίαν τῆς ἐμῆς δωρεᾶς διὰ παντὸς τοῦ κόσμου ἐκβιβασθῆναι προσέταξα, ὅπως ἀπὸ τῶν τόπων τῶν θρησκευσίμων ἀποχωρήσωσιν, καὶ διὰ τοῦτο καὶ ὑμεῖς τῆς ἀντιγραφῆς τῆς ἐμῆς τῷ τύπῳ χρῆσθαι δύνασθε, ὥστε μηδένα ὑμῖν ἐνοχλεῖν. καὶ τοῦτο, ὅπερ κατὰ τὸ ἐξὸν δύναται ὑφ' ὑμῶν ἀναπληροῦσθαι, ἤδη πρὸ πολλοῦ ὑπ' ἐμοῦ συγκεχώρηται, καὶ διὰ τοῦτο Αὐρήλιος Κυρίνιος, ὁ τοῦ μεγίστου πράγματος προστατεύων, τὸν τύπον τὸν ὑπ' ἐμοῦ δοθέντα διαφυλάξει."

Ταῦτα ἐπὶ τὸ σαφέστερον ἐκ τῆς Ῥωμαίων ἑρμηνευθέντα γλώττης ἐγκείσθω. καὶ ἄλλη δὲ τοῦ αὐτοῦ διάταξις φέρεται, ἣν πρὸς ἑτέρους

---

[1] The Persian King, Sapor I., invading the eastern provinces of the Empire, took Antioch, and made the emperor Valerian a prisoner.

above-mentioned end. Moreover they relate that, besides these, a certain woman during the same persecution and in the same city endured to the end a like conflict. But it is recorded that she belonged to the sect of Marcion.

XIII. But not long afterwards Valerian underwent slavery at the hands of the barbarians,[1] and his son, succeeding to the sole power,[2] conducted the government with more prudence, and immediately by means of edicts put an end to the persecution against us. He granted free power to those who presided over the word to perform their accustomed duties, by a rescript which runs as follows : " The Emperor Caesar Publius Licinius Gallienus Pius Felix Augustus to Dionysius and Pinnas and Demetrius and the other bishops. I have given my order that the benefit of my bounty should be published throughout all the world, to the intent that they should depart from the places of worship,[3] and therefore ye also may use the ordinance contained in my rescript, so that none may molest you. And this thing which it is within your power to accomplish has long since been conceded by me ; and therefore Aurelius Quirinius, who is in charge of the Exchequer, will observe the ordinance given by me."

Let this, which for the sake of greater clearness was translated from the Latin, be inserted. And there is also extant another of the same emperor's ordinances, which he addressed to other bishops,

[2] Gallienus, who had been associated in rule with his father Valerian since A.D. 253, became sole Augustus in 260 or 261.

[3] *i.e.* that the *heathen* should depart from them, and give them up to the Christians.

ἐπισκόπους πεποίηται, τὰ τῶν καλουμένων κοιμητηρίων ἀπολαμβάνειν ἐπιτρέπων χωρία.

XIV. Ἐν τούτῳ δὲ τῆς μὲν Ῥωμαίων ἐκκλησίας εἰς ἔτι τότε καθηγεῖτο Ξύστος, τῆς δ' ἐπ' Ἀντιοχείας μετὰ Φάβιον Δημητριανός, Φιρμιλιανὸς δὲ Καισαρείας τῆς Καππαδοκῶν, καὶ ἐπὶ τούτοις τῶν κατὰ Πόντον ἐκκλησιῶν Γρηγόριος καὶ ὁ τούτου ἀδελφὸς Ἀθηνόδωρος, Ὠριγένους γνώριμοι· τῆς δ' ἐπὶ Παλαιστίνης Καισαρείας, Θεοκτίστου μεταλλάξαντος, διαδέχεται τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν Δόμνος, βραχεῖ δὲ χρόνῳ τούτου διαγενομένου, Θεότεκνος, ὁ καθ' ἡμᾶς, διάδοχος καθίσταται· τῆς δ' Ὠριγένους διατριβῆς καὶ οὗτος ἦν. ἀλλὰ καὶ ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις ἀναπαυσαμένου Μαζαβάνου, τὸν θρόνον Ὑμέναιος, ὁ καὶ αὐτὸς ἐπὶ πλείστοις τοῖς καθ' ἡμᾶς διαπρέψας ἔτεσιν, διεδέξατο.

XV. Κατὰ τούτους εἰρήνης ἁπανταχοῦ τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν οὔσης, ἐν Καισαρείᾳ τῆς Παλαιστίνης Μαρῖνος τῶν ἐν στρατείαις ἀξιώμασι τετιμημένων γένει τε καὶ πλούτῳ περιφανὴς ἀνήρ, διὰ τὴν Χριστοῦ μαρτυρίαν τὴν κεφαλὴν ἀποτέμνεται, τοιάδε ἕνεκεν αἰτίας. τιμή τίς ἐστι παρὰ Ῥωμαίοις τὸ κλῆμα, οὗ τοὺς τυχόντας φασὶν ἑκατοντάρχους γίνεσθαι. τόπου σχολάζοντος, ἐπὶ τοῦτο προκοπῆς τὸν Μαρῖνον ἡ τοῦ βαθμοῦ τάξις ἐκάλει, ἤδη τε μέλλοντα τῆς τιμῆς ἔχεσθαι παρελθὼν ἄλλος πρὸ τοῦ βήματος, μὴ ἐξεῖναι μὲν ἐκείνῳ τῆς Ῥωμαίων μετέχειν ἀξίας κατὰ τοὺς παλαιοὺς νόμους, Χριστιανῷ γε ὄντι καὶ τοῖς βασιλεῦσι μὴ θύοντι, κατηγόρει, αὐτῷ δ' ἐπιβάλλειν τὸν κλῆρον· ἐφ' ᾧ κινηθέντα τὸν δικαστὴν (Ἀχαιὸς οὗτος ἦν)

giving them permission to recover the sites of the cemeteries, as they are called.

XIV. At that time Xystus was still ruling the church of the Romans, Demetrian, who came after Fabius, the church at Antioch, and Firmilian at Caesarea in Cappadocia ; and moreover Gregory and his brother Athenodore were ruling the churches of Pontus, pupils of Origen. As to Caesarea in Palestine, on the death of Theoctistus, Domnus succeeded to the episcopate, but after he had continued in office a short time Theotecnus, our contemporary, was appointed to succeed him. He also was of the school of Origen. But at Jerusalem, when Mazabanes had entered into his rest, Hymenaeus succeeded to the throne, the same who was distinguished for very many years in our day.

XV. In the time of those persons, when the churches everywhere were at peace, a man at Caesarea in Palestine called Marinus, honoured by high rank in the army and distinguished besides by birth and wealth, was beheaded for his testimony to Christ, on the following account. There is a certain mark of honour among the Romans, the vine-switch, and those that obtain it become, it is said, centurions. A post was vacant, and according to the order of promotion Marinus was being called to this advancement. Indeed he was on the point of receiving the honour, when another stepped forward before the tribunal, and stated that in accordance with the ancient laws Marinus could not share in the rank that belonged to Romans, since he was a Christian and did not sacrifice to the emperors ; but that the office fell to himself. And [it is said] that the judge (his name was Achaeus) was moved thereat, and first

πρῶτον μὲν ἐρέσθαι ποίας ὁ Μαρῖνος εἴη γνώμης, ὡς δ' ὁμολογοῦντα Χριστιανὸν ἐπιμόνως ἑώρα, τριῶν ὡρῶν ἐπιδοῦναι αὐτῷ εἰς ἐπίσκεψιν διάστημα.

Ἐκτὸς δῆτα γενόμενον αὐτὸν τοῦ δικαστηρίου Θεότεκνος ὁ τῇδε ἐπίσκοπος ἀφέλκει, προσελθὼν δι' ὁμιλίας, καὶ τῆς χειρὸς λαβὼν ἐπὶ τὴν ἐκκλησίαν προάγει, εἴσω τε πρὸς αὐτῷ στήσας τῷ ἁγιάσματι, μικρόν τι παραναστείλας αὐτοῦ τῆς χλαμύδος καὶ τὸ προσηρτημένον αὐτῷ ξίφος ἐπιδείξας ἅμα τε ἀντιπαρατίθησιν προσαγαγὼν αὐτῷ τὴν τῶν θείων εὐαγγελίων γραφήν, κελεύσας τῶν δυεῖν ἑλέσθαι τὸ κατὰ γνώμην.

Ὡς δ' ἀμελλητὶ τὴν δεξιὰν προτείνας ἐδέξατο τὴν θείαν γραφήν, "ἔχου τοίνυν, ἔχου," φησὶν πρὸς αὐτὸν ὁ Θεότεκνος, "τοῦ θεοῦ, καὶ τύχοις ὧν εἵλου, πρὸς αὐτοῦ δυναμούμενος, καὶ βάδιζε μετ' εἰρήνης." εὐθὺς ἐκεῖθεν ἐπανελθόντα αὐτὸν κῆρυξ ἐβόα καλῶν πρὸ τοῦ δικαστηρίου· καὶ γὰρ ἤδη τὰ τῆς προθεσμίας τοῦ χρόνου πεπλήρωτο· καὶ δὴ παραστὰς τῷ δικαστῇ καὶ μείζονα τῆς πίστεως τὴν προθυμίαν ἐπιδείξας, εὐθὺς ὡς εἶχεν, ἀπαχθεὶς τὴν ἐπὶ θανάτῳ, τελειοῦται.

XVI. Ἔνθα καὶ Ἀστύριος ἐπὶ τῇ θεοφιλεῖ παρρησίᾳ μνημονεύεται, ἀνὴρ τῶν ἐπὶ Ῥώμης συγκλητικῶν γενόμενος βασιλεῦσίν τε προσφιλὴς καὶ πᾶσι γνώριμος εὐγενείας τε ἕνεκα καὶ περιουσίας· ὃς παρὼν τελειουμένῳ τῷ μάρτυρι, τὸν ὦμον ὑποθείς, ἐπὶ λαμπρᾶς καὶ πολυτελοῦς ἐσθῆτος ἄρας τὸ σκῆνος ἐπιφέρεται, περιστείλας τε εὖ μάλα πλουσίως, τῇ προσηκούσῃ ταφῇ παραδίδωσιν.

[1] Or "sanctuary": τῷ ἁγιάσματι.

of all asked what views Marinus held; and then, when he saw that he was stedfast in confessing himself a Christian, gave him a space of three hours for consideration.

When he came outside the court Theotecnus, the bishop there, approached and drew him aside in conversation, and taking him by the hand led him forward to the church. Once inside, he placed him close to the altar [1] itself, and raising his cloak a little, pointed to the sword with which he was girded; at the same time he brought and placed before him the book of the divine Gospels, and bade him choose which of the two he wished.

Without hesitation he stretched forth his right hand and took the divine book. "Hold fast then," said Theotecnus to him, "hold fast to God; and, strengthened by Him, mayest thou obtain that thou hast chosen. Go in peace." As he was returning thence immediately a herald cried aloud, summoning him before the court of justice. For the appointed time was now over. Standing before the judge he displayed still greater zeal for the faith; and straightway, even as he was, was led away to death, and so was perfected.

XVI. In that place Astyrius also is commemorated for the boldness which is dear to God. He was a member of the Roman Senate, a favourite of emperors, and well known to all both for birth and wealth. He was present with the martyr when he was being perfected, and raising the corpse [2] upon his shoulder he placed it upon a splendid and costly robe, and laying it out with great magnificence gave it a fitting burial.

[2] Lit. "tabernacle" (σκῆνος).

Τούτου μυρία μὲν καὶ ἄλλα μνημονεύουσιν οἱ τἀνδρὸς καὶ εἰς ἡμᾶς διαμείναντες γνώριμοι, ἀτὰρ καὶ παραδόξου τοιούτου. XVII. ἐπὶ τῆς Φιλίππου 1
Καισαρείας, ἣν Πανεάδα Φοίνικες προσαγορεύουσιν, φασὶ παρὰ ταῖς αὐτόθι δεικνυμέναις ἐν ταῖς ὑπωρείαις τοῦ καλουμένου Πανείου ὄρους πηγαῖς, ἐξ ὧν καὶ τὸν Ἰορδάνην προχεῖσθαι, κατά τινα ἑορτῆς ἡμέραν σφάγιόν τι καταβάλλεσθαι καὶ τοῦτο τῇ τοῦ δαίμονος δυνάμει ἀφανὲς γίνεσθαι παραδόξως θαῦμά τε εἶναι περιβόητον τοῖς παροῦσι τὸ γινόμενον. παρόντα δ' οὖν ποτε τοῖς πραττομένοις τὸν Ἀστύριον καὶ τὸ πρᾶγμα καταπεπληγμένους ἰδόντα τοὺς πολλούς, οἰκτεῖραι τῆς πλάνης, κἄπειτα ἀνανεύσαντα εἰς οὐρανόν, ἱκε-
Rom. 9, 5 τεῦσαι διὰ Χριστοῦ τὸν ἐπὶ πάντων θεὸν τὸ λαοπλάνον δαιμόνιον ἐλέγξαι καὶ παῦσαι τῆς τῶν ἀνθρώπων ἀπάτης. ταῦτα δέ φασιν εὐξαμένου, ἀθρόως τὸ ἱερεῖον ἐπιπολάσαι ταῖς πηγαῖς οὕτω τε αὐτοῖς τὸ παράδοξον οἴχεσθαι, μηδενὸς μηκέτι θαύματος περὶ τὸν τόπον γινομένου.

XVIII. Ἀλλ' ἐπειδὴ τῆσδε τῆς πόλεως εἰς 1
μνήμην ἐλήλυθα, οὐκ ἄξιον ἡγοῦμαι παρελθεῖν διηγησιν καὶ τοῖς μεθ' ἡμᾶς μνημονεύεσθαι ἀξίαν.
Matt. 9, 20 τὴν γὰρ αἱμορροοῦσαν, ἣν ἐκ τῶν ἱερῶν εὐαγγελίων πρὸς τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν τοῦ πάθους ἀπαλλαγὴν εὕρασθαι μεμαθήκαμεν, ἐνθένδε ἔλεγον ὁρμᾶσθαι τόν τε οἶκον αὐτῆς ἐπὶ τῆς πόλεως δείκνυσθαι καὶ τῆς ὑπὸ τοῦ σωτῆρος εἰς αὐτὴν εὐεργεσίας θαυμαστὰ τρόπαια παραμένειν. ἑστάναι γὰρ ἐφ' 2
ὑψηλοῦ λίθου πρὸς μὲν ταῖς πύλαις τοῦ αὐτῆς οἴκου γυναικὸς ἐκτύπωμα χάλκεον, ἐπὶ γόνυ κεκλιμένον καὶ τεταμέναις ἐπὶ τὸ πρόσθεν ταῖς

A great many other facts are mentioned about this man by his friends, who have survived to our day, and also the following wonderful event. XVII. At Caesarea Philippi, which Phoenicians call Paneas, it is said that on a certain festival a victim is thrown down among the springs that are shown there, on the slopes of the mountain called Paneion, from which the Jordan takes its source; and that it becomes invisible in some miraculous way through the demon's power, a circumstance, they say, that is looked upon by those present as a far-famed marvel. Now [the story goes] that once Astyrius was there when this was being done, and when he saw the multitude struck with amazement at the affair, in pity for their error he looked up toward heaven and besought God who is over all, through Christ, to confound the demon who was causing the people to err, and put an end to the deception of these men. And it is said that, when he had thus prayed, of a sudden the sacrifice floated on the surface of the springs; and thus their miracle came to an end, and no further marvel ever took place in connexion with that spot.

XVIII. But since I have come to mention this city, I do not think it right to omit a story that is worthy to be recorded also for those that come after us. For they say that she who had an issue of blood, and who, as we learn from the sacred Gospels, found at the hands of our Saviour relief from her affliction, came from this place, and that her house was pointed out in the city, and that marvellous memorials of the good deed, which the Saviour wrought upon her, still remained. For [they said] that there stood on a lofty stone at the gates of her house a brazen figure in relief of a woman, bending on her knee and stretching

χερσὶν ἱκετευούσῃ ἐοικός, τούτου δὲ ἄντικρυς ἄλλο τῆς αὐτῆς ὕλης, ἀνδρὸς ὄρθιον σχῆμα, διπλοΐδα κοσμίως περιβεβλημένον καὶ τὴν χεῖρα τῇ γυναικὶ προτεῖνον, οὗ παρὰ τοῖς ποσὶν ἐπὶ τῆς στήλης αὐτῆς ξένον τι βοτάνης εἶδος φύειν, ὃ μέχρι τοῦ κρασπέδου τῆς τοῦ χαλκοῦ διπλοΐδος ἀνιόν, ἀλεξιφάρμακόν τι παντοίων νοσημάτων τυγχάνειν. τοῦτον τὸν ἀνδριάντα εἰκόνα τοῦ 3
Ἰησοῦ φέρειν ἔλεγον, ἔμενεν δὲ καὶ εἰς ἡμᾶς, ὡς καὶ ὄψει παραλαβεῖν ἐπιδημήσαντας αὐτοὺς τῇ πόλει. καὶ θαυμαστὸν οὐδὲν τοὺς πάλαι ἐξ ἐθνῶν 4
εὐεργετηθέντας πρὸς τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν ταῦτα πεποιηκέναι, ὅτε καὶ τῶν ἀποστόλων αὐτοῦ τὰς εἰκόνας Παύλου καὶ Πέτρου καὶ αὐτοῦ δὴ τοῦ Χριστοῦ διὰ χρωμάτων ἐν γραφαῖς σῳζομένας ἱστορήσαμεν, ὡς εἰκός, τῶν παλαιῶν ἀπαραφυλάκτως οἷα σωτῆρας ἐθνικῇ συνηθείᾳ παρ' ἑαυτοῖς τοῦτον τιμᾶν εἰωθότων τὸν τρόπον.

XIX. Τὸν γὰρ Ἰακώβου θρόνον, τοῦ πρώτου 1
τῆς Ἱεροσολύμων ἐκκλησίας τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν πρὸς τοῦ σωτῆρος καὶ τῶν ἀποστόλων ὑποδεξαμένου,
Gal. 1, 19 ὃν καὶ ἀδελφὸν τοῦ Χριστοῦ χρηματίσαι οἱ θεῖοι λόγοι περιέχουσιν, εἰς δεῦρο πεφυλαγμένον οἱ τῇδε κατὰ διαδοχὴν περιέποντες ἀδελφοὶ σαφῶς τοῖς πᾶσιν ἐπιδείκνυνται οἷον περὶ τοὺς ἁγίους ἄνδρας τοῦ θεοφιλοῦς ἕνεκεν οἵ τε πάλαι καὶ οἱ εἰς ἡμᾶς ἔσῳζόν τε καὶ ἀποσῴζουσι σέβας. καὶ ταῦτα μὲν ταύτῃ.

XX. Ὅ γε μὴν Διονύσιος πρὸς ταῖς δηλωθείσαις 1
ἐπιστολαῖς αὐτοῦ ἔτι καὶ τὰς φερομένας ἑορταστικὰς τὸ τηνικαῦτα συντάττει, πανηγυρικωτέρους

forth her hands like a suppliant, while opposite to this there was another of the same material, an upright figure of a man, clothed in comely fashion in a double cloak and stretching out his hand to the woman ; at his feet on the monument itself a strange species of herb was growing, which climbed up to the border of the double cloak of brass, and acted as an antidote to all kinds of diseases. This statue, they said, bore the likeness of Jesus. And it was in existence even to our day, so that we saw it with our own eyes when we stayed in the city. And there is nothing wonderful in the fact that those heathen, who long ago had good deeds done to them by our Saviour, should have made these objects, since we saw the likenesses of His apostles also, of Paul and Peter, and indeed of Christ Himself, preserved in pictures painted in colours. And this is what we should expect, for the ancients were wont, according to their pagan habit, to honour them as saviours, without reservation, in this fashion.

XIX. Now the throne of James, who was the first to receive from the Saviour and the apostles the episcopate of the church at Jerusalem, who also, as the divine books show, was called a brother of Christ, has been preserved to this day ; and by the honour that the brethren in succession there pay to it, they show clearly to all the reverence in which the holy men were and still are held by the men of old time and those of our day, because of the love shown them by God. So much for these matters.

XX. But to resume. Dionysius, in addition to the letters of his that were mentioned, composed at that time also the festal letters which are still extant, in which he gives utterance to words specially suited to

ἐν αὐταῖς περὶ τῆς τοῦ πάσχα ἑορτῆς ἀνακινῶν λόγους. τούτων τὴν μὲν Φλαυΐῳ προσφωνεῖ, τὴν δὲ Δομετίῳ καὶ Διδύμῳ, ἐν ᾗ καὶ κανόνα ἐκτίθεται ὀκταετηρίδος, ὅτι μὴ ἄλλοτε ἢ μετὰ τὴν ἐαρινὴν ἰσημερίαν προσήκοι τὴν τοῦ πάσχα ἑορτὴν ἐπιτελεῖν, παριστάμενος· πρὸς ταύταις καὶ ἄλλην τοῖς κατ' Ἀλεξάνδρειαν συμπρεσβυτέροις ἐπιστολὴν διαχαράττει ἑτέροις τε ὁμοῦ διαφόρως, καὶ ταύτας ἔτι τοῦ διωγμοῦ συνεστῶτος.

XXI. Ἐπιλαβούσης δὲ ὅσον οὔπω τῆς εἰρήνης, 1
ἐπάνεισι μὲν εἰς τὴν Ἀλεξάνδρειαν, πάλιν δ' ἐνταῦθα στάσεως καὶ πολέμου συστάντος, ὡς οὐχ οἷόν τε ἦν αὐτῷ τοὺς κατὰ τὴν πόλιν ἅπαντας ἀδελφούς, εἰς ἑκάτερον τῆς στάσεως μέρος διῃρημένους, ἐπισκοπεῖν, αὖθις ἐν τῇ τοῦ πάσχα ἑορτῇ, ὥσπερ τις ὑπερόριος, ἐξ αὐτῆς τῆς Ἀλεξανδρείας διὰ γραμμάτων αὐτοῖς ὡμίλει. καὶ Ἱέρακι δὲ 2
μετὰ ταῦτα τῶν κατ' Αἴγυπτον ἐπισκόπῳ ἑτέραν ἑορταστικὴν ἐπιστολὴν γράφων, τῆς κατ' αὐτὸν τῶν Ἀλεξανδρέων στάσεως μνημονεύει διὰ τούτων·

" Ἐμοὶ δέ, τί θαυμαστὸν εἰ πρὸς τοὺς πορρωτέρω παροικοῦντας χαλεπὸν τὸ κἂν δι' ἐπιστολῶν ὁμιλεῖν, ὅτε καὶ τὸ πρὸς ἐμαυτὸν αὐτῷ μοι διαλέγεσθαι καὶ τῇ ἰδίᾳ ψυχῇ συμβουλεύεσθαι καθ-
Philem. 12 έστηκεν ἄπορον; πρὸς γοῦν τὰ ἐμαυτοῦ σπλάγχνα, 3
τοὺς ὁμοσκήνους καὶ συμψύχους ἀδελφοὺς καὶ τῆς αὐτῆς πολίτας ἐκκλησίας, ἐπιστολιμαίων δέομαι γραμμάτων, καὶ ταῦθ' ὅπως διαπεμψαίμην, ἀμήχανον φαίνεται. ῥᾷον γὰρ ἄν τις οὐχ ὅπως εἰς τὴν ὑπερορίαν, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἀπ' ἀνατολῶν ἐπὶ δυσμὰς

a solemn occasion with reference to the festival of the Pascha. Of these he addressed one to Flavius, another to Domitius and Didymus in which also he sets forth a canon based on a cycle of eight years, proving that it is not proper to celebrate the festival of the Pascha at any other time than after the vernal equinox. In addition to these he penned also another letter to his fellow-presbyters at Alexandria, and to others at the same time in different places. And these [he wrote] while the persecution was still proceeding.

XXI. Peace had all but arrived, when he returned to Alexandria. But when faction and war broke out there once more, since it was not possible for him to discharge his oversight over all the brethren in the city, separated as they were into one or other part of the faction, he again at the festival of the Pascha communicated with them by letter, as if he were someone in a foreign country, from Alexandria itself. And to Hierax, after this, a bishop of those in Egypt he writes another festal letter, mentioning in the following terms the faction prevailing among the Alexandrians in his day :

" But as for me, what wonder is it if I find it difficult to communicate even by letter with those who live at some distance, seeing that it has become impossible even for myself to converse with myself, or to take counsel with my own soul ? Certainly, I have need to write by letter to my very heart, that is, the brethren that are of the same household and mind with me, and citizens of the same church ; and there seems no possible way of getting this correspondence through. For it were easier for a man to pass, I do not say to a foreign country, but even from East to

περαιωθείη, ἢ τὴν Ἀλεξάνδρειαν ἀπ' αὐτῆς τῆς Ἀλεξανδρείας ἐπέλθοι. τῆς γὰρ ἐρήμου τῆς 4
πολλῆς καὶ ἀτριβοῦς ἐκείνης ἦν ἐν δυσὶν γενεαῖς διώδευσεν ὁ Ἰσραήλ, ἄπειρος μᾶλλον καὶ ἄβατός ἐστιν ἡ μεσαιτάτη τῆς πόλεως ὁδός· καὶ τῆς θαλάσσης ἦν ἐκεῖνοι ῥαγεῖσαν καὶ διατειχισθεῖσαν ἔσχον ἱππήλατον καὶ ἐν τῇ λεωφόρῳ κατεποντίσθησαν Αἰγύπτιοι, οἱ γαληνοὶ καὶ ἀκύμαντοι λιμένες γεγόνασιν εἰκών, πολλάκις φανέντες ἀπὸ τῶν ἐν αὐτοῖς φόνων οἷον ἐρυθρὰ θάλασσα· ὁ δ' 5
ἐπιρρέων ποταμὸς τὴν πόλιν ποτὲ μὲν ἐρήμου τῆς ἀνύδρου ξηρότερος ὤφθη καὶ μᾶλλον αὐχμώδης
Deut. 8, 15; Ps. 78, 20 ἐκείνης ἦν διαπορευόμενος ὁ Ἰσραὴλ οὕτως ἐδίψησεν, ὡς Μωσῆ μὲν καταβοᾶν, ῥυῆναι δ'
Ps. 136, 4; Wisdom 11, 4 αὐτοῖς παρὰ τοῦ θαυμάσια ποιοῦντος μόνου ἐκ πέτρας ἀκροτόμου ποτόν· ποτὲ δὲ τοσοῦτος 6
ἐπλήμμυρεν ὡς πᾶσαν τὴν περίχωρον τάς τε ὁδοὺς καὶ τοὺς ἀγροὺς ἐπικλύσαντα, τῆς ἐπὶ Νῶε γενομένης τοῦ ὕδατος φορᾶς ἐπαγαγεῖν ἀπειλήν· ἀεὶ δὲ αἵματι καὶ φόνοις καὶ καταποντισμοῖς κάτεισιν
μεμιασμένος, οἷος ὑπὸ Μωσῆ γέγονεν τῷ Φαραώ,
Ex. 7, 20, 21 μεταβαλὼν εἰς αἷμα καὶ ἐποζέσας. καὶ ποῖον 7
γένοιτ' ἂν τοῦ πάντα καθαίροντος ὕδατος ὕδωρ ἄλλο καθάρσιον; πῶς ἂν ὁ πολὺς καὶ ἀπέραντος ἀνθρώποις ὠκεανὸς ἐπιχυθεὶς τὴν πικρὰν ταύτην ἀποσμήξαι θάλασσαν; ἢ πῶς ἂν ὁ μέγας ποταμός, ὁ ἐκπορευόμενος ἐξ Ἐδέμ, τὰς τέσσαρας ἀρχὰς εἰς ἃς ἀφορίζεται, μετοχετεύσας εἰς μίαν τοῦ
Gen. 2, 10, 13 Γηών, ἀποπλύναι τὸν λύθρον; ἢ πότε ὁ τεθολω- 8
μένος ὑπὸ τῶν πονηρῶν πανταχόθεν ἀναθυμιάσεων ἀὴρ εἰλικρινὴς γένοιτο; τοιοῦτοι γὰρ ἀπὸ τῆς γῆς ἀτμοὶ καὶ ἀπὸ θαλάσσης ἄνεμοι ποταμῶν τε

West, than to traverse Alexandria from Alexandria itself. For the street that runs through the very centre of the city is harder to traverse and more impassable than that great and trackless desert through which Israel journeyed for two generations. And our calm and waveless harbours have become an image of the sea, which, split up and made into a wall on either side, they had for a carriage road, and in the highway[1] the Egyptians were drowned; and from the murders that take place in them they oftentimes appeared like a Red Sea. And the river that flows on past the city at one time appeared drier than the waterless desert, and more arid than that in whose crossing Israel so thirsted that Moses cried out, and there flowed to them, from Him who alone doeth wonders, drink out of the rock of flint. At another time it overflowed to such an extent that it submerged the whole neighbourhood, both the roads and the fields, threatening to bring upon us the rush of waters that took place in the days of Noah. And always its course is defiled with blood and murders and drownings, such as it became for Pharaoh by the hand of Moses, when it was turned to blood and stank. And what other water could there be to cleanse the water that cleanses all things? How could the great ocean that men cannot pass, if it were poured upon it, purge this horrid sea? Or how could the great river that goeth out of Eden, if it were to divert the four heads, into which it is parted, into one, the Gihon, wash away the gore? Or when might the air, made foul by the vile exhalations on all sides, become pure? For such are the vapours that are given off from the land, winds from the sea, breezes

[1] Omitting ὧν before ἐν τῇ λεωφορῳ, as Schwartz suggests.

αὖραι καὶ λιμένων ἀνιμήσεις ἀποπνέουσιν, ὡς σηπομένων ἐν πᾶσι τοῖς ὑποκειμένοις στοιχείοις 9
νεκρῶν ἰχῶρας εἶναι τὰς δρόσους. εἶτα θαυμάζουσιν καὶ διαποροῦσιν, πόθεν οἱ συνεχεῖς λοιμοί, πόθεν αἱ χαλεπαὶ νόσοι, πόθεν αἱ παντοδαπαὶ φθοραί, πόθεν ὁ ποικίλος καὶ πολὺς τῶν ἀνθρώπων ὄλεθρος, διὰ τί μηκέτι τοσοῦτο πλῆθος οἰκητόρων ἡ μεγίστη πόλις ἐν αὐτῇ φέρει, ἀπὸ νηπίων ἀρξαμένη παίδων μέχρι τῶν εἰς ἄκρον γεγηρακότων, ὅσους ὠμογέροντας οὓς ἐκάλει, πρότερον ὄντας ἔτρεφεν· ἀλλ' οἱ τεσσαρακοντοῦται καὶ μέχρι τῶν ἑβδομήκοντα ἐτῶν τοσοῦτον πλέονες τότε, ὥστε μὴ συμπληροῦσθαι νῦν τὸν ἀριθμὸν αὐτῶν, προσεγγραφέντων καὶ συγκαταλεγέντων εἰς τὸ δημόσιον σιτηρέσιον τῶν ἀπὸ τεσσαρεσκαίδεκα ἐτῶν μέχρι τῶν ὀγδοήκοντα, καὶ γεγόνασιν οἷον ἡλικιῶται τῶν πάλαι γεραιτάτων οἱ ὄψει νεώτατοι. καὶ οὕτω 10
μειούμενον ἀεὶ καὶ δαπανώμενον ὁρῶντες τὸ ἐπὶ γῆς ἀνθρώπων γένος, οὐ τρέμουσιν, αὐξομένου καὶ προκόπτοντος τοῦ παντελοῦς αὐτῶν ἀφανισμοῦ."

XXII. Μετὰ ταῦτα λοιμικῆς τὸν πόλεμον 1
διαλαβούσης νόσου τῆς τε ἑορτῆς πλησιαζούσης, αὖθις διὰ γραφῆς τοῖς ἀδελφοῖς ὁμιλεῖ, τὰ τῆς συμφορᾶς ἐπισημαινόμενος πάθη διὰ τούτων·

"Τοῖς μὲν ἄλλοις ἀνθρώποις οὐκ ἂν δόξειεν 2
καιρὸς ἑορτῆς εἶναι τὰ παρόντα, οὐδὲ ἔστιν αὐτοῖς οὔτε οὗτος οὔτε τις ἕτερος, οὐχ ὅπως τῶν ἐπιλύπων, ἀλλ' οὐδ' εἴ τις περιχαρής, ὃν οἰηθεῖεν μάλιστα. νῦν μέν γε θρῆνοι πάντα, καὶ πενθοῦσιν πάντες,

[1] The pestilence which began in A.D. 250 afflicted the Empire at intervals for twenty years. Alexandria was probably the first city it visited.

from the rivers and mists from the harbours, that the dews are discharges from corpses rotting in all their constituent elements. Yet men marvel and are at a loss as to whence come the constant plagues,[1] whence the grievous diseases, whence the various forms of death, whence the manifold and great human mortality, why this greatest of cities no longer contains within it so great a multitude of inhabitants, from infant children up to those extremely advanced in years, as it used formerly to support of those known as men of green old age! Nay, those of forty years old and up to seventy were then so numerous, that the full total of their number is not to be reached now, when those from fourteen to eighty years have been registered and reckoned together for the public food-ration[2]; and the youngest in appearance have become of equal age, so to speak, with those who long ago were the oldest.[3] And though the human race upon earth is thus ever diminishing and consuming away before their eyes, they do not tremble, as its total disappearance draws nearer and nearer."

XXII. After this, when the war was followed by a pestilential disease, and the feast was at hand, he communicated once more by letter with the brethren, indicating the sufferings of the calamity, as follows:

"To other men the present would not seem to be a time for festival, nor for them is this or any other time of such a nature; I speak not of times of mourning, but even of any time that might be thought especially joyful. Now indeed all is lamentation, and all men mourn, and wailings resound

[2] We have no other evidence, apart from this passage, of this "dole" or public distribution of a food ration.

[3] *i.e.* the young, by sharing in the dole, were now classed along with the old.

καὶ περιηχοῦσιν οἰμωγαὶ τὴν πόλιν διὰ τὸ πλῆθος
τῶν τεθνηκότων καὶ τῶν ἀποθνῃσκόντων ὁσημέραι·
ὡς γὰρ ἐπὶ τῶν πρωτοτόκων τῶν Αἰγυπτίων γέ- 3
Ex. 12, 30 γραπται, οὕτως καὶ νῦν ἐγενήθη κραυγὴ μεγάλη·
οὐ γὰρ ἔστιν οἰκία, ἐν ᾗ οὐκ ἔστιν ἐν αὐτῇ τεθνη-
κώς, καὶ ὄφελόν γε εἷς.

"Πολλὰ μὲν γὰρ καὶ δεινὰ καὶ τὰ πρὸ τούτου
συμβεβηκότα· πρῶτον μὲν ἡμᾶς ἤλασαν, καὶ μόνοι 4
πρὸς ἁπάντων διωκόμενοι καὶ θανατούμενοι ἑωρ-
τάσαμεν καὶ τότε, καὶ πᾶς ὁ τῆς καθ' ἕκαστον
θλίψεως τόπος πανηγυρικὸν ἡμῖν γέγονε χωρίον,
ἀγρὸς ἐρημία ναῦς πανδοχεῖον δεσμωτήριον, φαι-
δροτάτην δὲ πασῶν ἤγαγον ἑορτὴν οἱ τέλειοι
μάρτυρες, εὐωχηθέντες ἐν οὐρανῷ· μετὰ δὲ ταῦτα 5
πόλεμος καὶ λιμὸς ἐπέλαβεν, ἃ τοῖς ἔθνεσι συν-
διηνέγκαμεν, μόνοι μὲν ὑποστάντες ὅσα ἡμῖν
ἐλυμήναντο, παραπολαύσαντες δὲ καὶ ὧν ἀλλήλους
εἰργάσαντό τε καὶ πεπόνθασιν, καὶ τῇ Χριστοῦ
πάλιν ἐνηυφράνθημεν εἰρήνῃ, ἣν μόνοις ἡμῖν
δέδωκεν· βραχυτάτης δὲ ἡμῶν τε καὶ αὐτῶν 6
τυχόντων ἀναπνοῆς, ἐπικατέσκηψεν ἡ νόσος αὕτη,
πρᾶγμα φόβου τε παντὸς φοβερώτερον ἐκείνοις καὶ
συμφορᾶς ἥστινος οὖν σχετλιώτερον καὶ ὡς ἴδιός
Thuc. ii. 64. 1 τις αὐτῶν ἀπήγγειλεν συγγραφεύς, 'πρᾶγμα μόνον
δὴ τῶν πάντων ἐλπίδος κρεῖσσον γενόμενον,' ἡμῖν
δὲ οὐ τοιοῦτο μέν, γυμνάσιον δὲ καὶ δοκίμιον
οὐδενὸς τῶν ἄλλων ἔλαττον. ἀπέσχετο μὲν γὰρ
οὐδὲ ἡμῶν, πολλὴ δὲ ἐξῆλθεν εἰς τὰ ἔθνη."

Τούτοις ἑξῆς ἐπιφέρει λέγων· "οἱ γοῦν πλεῖστοι 7
τῶν ἀδελφῶν ἡμῶν δι' ὑπερβάλλουσαν ἀγάπην
καὶ φιλαδελφίαν ἀφειδοῦντες ἑαυτῶν καὶ ἀλλήλων

throughout the city because of the number of dead and of those that are dying day by day. For as it is written of the firstborn of the Egyptians, so also it is now : ' There was a great cry ; for there is not a house where there is not one dead ' : and would indeed that it were but one !

" For of a truth many and terrible were the things also that happened to us before this. At first they drove us out, and alone we kept our festival at that time also, persecuted and put to death by all, and every single spot where we were afflicted became for us a place of festive assembly, field, desert, ship, inn, prison ; but the brightest of all festivals was kept by the perfect martyrs, when they feasted in heaven. And, after that, war and famine came upon us, which we bore along with the heathen. Alone we endured all the injuries they inflicted upon us, while we had the benefit besides of what they wrought upon each other and what they suffered ; and we found our joy once more in the peace of Christ, which He has given to us alone. But when the briefest breathing-space had been granted us and them, there descended upon us this disease, a thing that is to them more fearful than any other object of fear, more cruel than any calamity whatsoever, and, as one of their own writers declared, ' the only thing of all that proved worse than what was expected.' Yet to us it was not so, but, no less than the other misfortunes, a source of discipline and testing. For indeed it did not leave us untouched, although it attacked the heathen with great strength."

Following these remarks he adds as follows : " The most, at all events, of our brethren in their exceeding love and affection for the brotherhood were unsparing

ἐχόμενοι, ἐπισκοποῦντες ἀφυλάκτως τοὺς νοσοῦντας, λιπαρῶς ὑπηρετούμενοι, θεραπεύοντες ἐν Χριστῷ, συναπηλλάττοντο ἐκείνοις ἀσμενέστατα, τοῦ παρ' ἑτέρων ἀναπιμπλάμενοι πάθους καὶ τὴν νόσον ἐφ' ἑαυτοὺς ἕλκοντες ἀπὸ τῶν πλησίον καὶ ἑκόντες ἀναμασσόμενοι τὰς ἀλγηδόνας. καὶ πολλοὶ νοσοκομήσαντες καὶ ῥώσαντες ἑτέρους, ἐτελεύτησαν αὐτοί, τὸν ἐκείνων θάνατον εἰς ἑαυτοὺς μεταστησάμενοι καὶ τὸ δημῶδες ῥῆμα, μόνης ἀεὶ δοκοῦν φιλοφροσύνης ἔχεσθαι, ἔργῳ δὴ τότε πληροῦντες, 'ἀπιόντες αὐτῶν περίψημα.' οἱ γοῦν 8
ἄριστοι τῶν παρ' ἡμῖν ἀδελφῶν τοῦτον τὸν τρόπον ἐξεχώρησαν τοῦ βίου, πρεσβύτεροί τέ τινες καὶ διάκονοι καὶ τῶν ἀπὸ τοῦ λαοῦ, λίαν ἐπαινούμενοι, ὡς καὶ τοῦ θανάτου τοῦτο τὸ εἶδος, διὰ πολλὴν εὐσέβειαν καὶ πίστιν ἰσχυρὰν γινόμενον, μηδὲν ἀποδεῖν μαρτυρίου δοκεῖν. καὶ τὰ σώματα 9
δὲ τῶν ἁγίων ὑπτίαις χερσὶ καὶ κόλποις ὑπολαμβάνοντες καθαιροῦντές τε ὀφθαλμοὺς καὶ στόματα συγκλείοντες ὠμοφοροῦντές τε καὶ διατιθέντες, προσκολλώμενοι, συμπλεκόμενοι, λουτροῖς τε καὶ περιστολαῖς κατακοσμοῦντες, μετὰ μικρὸν ἐτύγχανον τῶν ἴσων, ἀεὶ τῶν ὑπολειπομένων ἑφεπομένων τοῖς πρὸ αὐτῶν. τὰ δέ γε ἔθνη πᾶν τοὐναν- 10
τίον· καὶ νοσεῖν ἀρχομένους ἀπωθοῦντο καὶ ἀπέφευγον τοὺς φιλτάτους κἀν ταῖς ὁδοῖς ἐρρίπτουν ἡμιθνῆτας καὶ νεκροὺς ἀτάφους ἀπεσκυβαλίζοντο, τὴν τοῦ θανάτου διάδοσιν καὶ κοινωνίαν ἐκτρεπό-

[1] περίψημα. This word was used of worthless persons whom, in time of plague or some other calamity, the Athenians used to throw into the sea, in the belief that they would wipe off the guilt of the nation. By the third century A.D.

of themselves and clave to one another, visiting the sick without a thought as to the danger, assiduously ministering to them, tending them in Christ, and so most gladly departed this life along with them; being infected with the disease from others, drawing upon themselves the sickness from their neighbours, and willingly taking over their pains. And many, when they had cared for and restored to health others, died themselves, thus transferring their death to themselves, and then in very deed making good the popular saying, that always seems to be merely an expression of courtesy: for 'in departing' they became 'their devoted servants.'[1] In this manner the best at any rate of our brethren departed this life, certain presbyters and deacons and some of the laity, receiving great commendation, so that this form of death seems in no respect to come behind martyrdom, being the outcome of much piety and strong faith. So, too, the bodies of the saints they would take up in their open hands to their bosom, closing their eyes and shutting their mouths, carrying them on their shoulders and laying them out; they would cling to them, embrace them, bathe and adorn them with their burial clothes, and after a little receive the same services themselves, for those that were left behind were ever following those that went before. But the conduct of the heathen was the exact opposite. Even those who were in the first stages of the disease they thrust away, and fled from their dearest. They would even cast them in the roads half-dead, and treat the unburied corpses as vile refuse, in their attempts to avoid the spreading and contagion of the death-

[1] περίψημά σου had, apparently, become a common expression of formal compliment: "Your humble and devoted servant."

μενοι, ἦν οὐκ ἦν καὶ πολλὰ μηχανωμένοις ἐκκλῖναι ῥᾴδιον."

Μετὰ δὲ καὶ ταύτην τὴν ἐπιστολήν, εἰρηνευ- 1
σάντων τῶν κατὰ τὴν πόλιν, τοῖς κατ' Αἴγυπτον ἀδελφοῖς ἑορταστικὴν αὖθις ἐπιστέλλει γραφήν, καὶ ἐπὶ ταύτῃ πάλιν ἄλλας διατυποῦται· φέρεται δέ τις αὐτοῦ καὶ περὶ σαββάτου καὶ ἄλλη περὶ γυμνασίου.

Ἑρμάμμωνι δὲ πάλιν καὶ τοῖς κατ' Αἴγυπτον 1
ἀδελφοῖς δι' ἐπιστολῆς ὁμιλῶν πολλά τε ἄλλα περὶ τῆς Δεκίου καὶ τῶν μετ' αὐτὸν διεξελθὼν κακοτροπίας, τῆς κατὰ τὸν Γαλλιῆνον εἰρήνης ἐπιμιμνήσκεται· XXIII. οὐδὲν δὲ οἷον τὸ καὶ τού- 1
των ὧδέ πως ἐχόντων ἀκοῦσαι·

"Ἐκεῖνος μὲν οὖν τῶν ἑαυτοῦ βασιλέων τὸν μὲν προέμενος, τῷ δὲ ἐπιθέμενος, παγγενεῖ ταχέως καὶ πρόρριζος ἐξηφανίσθη, ἀνεδείχθη δὲ καὶ συνανωμολογήθη παρὰ πάντων ὁ Γαλλιῆνος, παλαιὸς ἅμα βασιλεὺς καὶ νέος, πρῶτος ὢν καὶ μετ' ἐκείνους παρών. κατὰ γὰρ τὸ ῥηθὲν πρὸς τὸν 2
προφήτην Ἡσαΐαν 'τὰ ἀπ' ἀρχῆς ἰδοὺ ἥκασιν, καὶ καινὰ ἃ νῦν ἀνατελεῖ.' ὥσπερ γὰρ νέφος τὰς ἡλιακὰς ἀκτῖνας ὑποδραμὸν καὶ πρὸς ὀλίγον ἐπηλυγάσαν ἐσκίασεν αὐτὸν καὶ ἀντ' αὐτοῦ προεφάνη, εἶτα παρελθόντος ἢ διατακέντος τοῦ νέφους, ἐξεφάνη πάλιν ἐπανατείλας ὁ προανατείλας ἥλιος, οὕτω προστὰς καὶ προσπελάσας ἑαυτὸν ὁ Μακριανὸς τῆς ἐφεστώσης Γαλλιήνου βασιλείας, ὃ μὲν οὐκ ἔστιν, ἐπεὶ μηδὲ ἦν, ὃ δὲ ἔστιν ὁμοίως ὥσπερ ἦν, καὶ οἷον ἀποθεμένη τὸ γῆρας ἡ βασιλεία καὶ 3

[1] Macrianus, who incited Valerian to persecute (10. 4) and

plague ; a thing which, for all their devices, it was not easy for them to escape."

And also after this letter, when peace reigned in the city, he once more sent a festal letter to the brethren in Egypt, and following this he again indited others. And there is extant, also, a certain letter of his on the Sabbath, and another on Exercise.

Communicating by a letter again with Hermammon and the brethren in Egypt, he recounts in full many other things about the wickedness of Decius and his successors, and mentions the peace under Gallienus.

XXIII. But there is nothing like hearing the nature of these happenings also.

"He[1] then, after inciting one of his emperors and attacking the other, of a sudden disappeared altogether, root and branch with all his family, and Gallienus was proclaimed and acknowledged by all, being at once an old and a new emperor, for he was before and came after them ; for in accordance with that which was spoken to the prophet Isaiah : 'Behold, the former things are come to pass, and new things which shall now spring forth.'[2] For as when a cloud speeds underneath the rays of the sun, and for a short time screens and darkens it, and appears instead of it, but when the cloud passes by or is melted away, the sun that shone before again shines forth and once more appears ; so Macrianus, after coming forward and getting for himself access to the imperial power that belonged to Gallienus, is no more, since indeed he never was, while Gallienus is like as he was before ; and the monarchy has, as it

attempted to dethrone Gallienus (10. 8). He and his son were subsequently defeated in battle and slain.

[2] A mixed quotation from Is. xlii. 9 and xliii. 19.

τὴν προοῦσαν ἀνακαθηραμένη κακίαν, ἀκμαιότερον νῦν ἐπανθεῖ καὶ πορρώτερον ὁρᾶται καὶ ἀκούεται καὶ διαφοιτᾷ πανταχοῦ."

Εἶθ' ἑξῆς καὶ τὸν χρόνον, καθ' ὃν ταῦτ' ἔγραφεν, 4
διὰ τούτων σημαίνει· " καί μοι πάλιν τὰς ἡμέρας τῶν βασιλικῶν ἐτῶν ἔπεισι σκοπεῖν. ὁρῶ γάρ, ὡς ὀνομασθέντες μὲν οἱ ἀσεβέστατοι μετ' οὐ πολὺ γεγόνασιν ἀνώνυμοι, ὁ δὲ ὁσιώτερος καὶ φιλοθεώτερος ὑπερβὰς τὴν ἑπταετηρίδα, νῦν ἐνιαυτὸν
1 Cor. 5, 8 ἕνατον διανύει, ἐν ᾧ ἡμεῖς ἑορτάσωμεν."

XXIV. Ἐπὶ τούτοις ἅπασιν σπουδάζεται αὐτῷ 1
καὶ τὰ Περὶ ἐπαγγελιῶν δύο συγγράμματα, ἡ δ' ὑπόθεσις αὐτῷ Νέπως ἦν, ἐπίσκοπος τῶν κατ' Αἴγυπτον, Ἰουδαϊκώτερον τὰς ἐπηγγελμένας τοῖς ἁγίοις ἐν ταῖς θείαις γραφαῖς ἐπαγγελίας ἀποδοθήσεσθαι διδάσκων καί τινα χιλιάδα ἐτῶν τρυφῆς σωματικῆς ἐπὶ τῆς ξηρᾶς ταύτης ἔσεσθαι ὑποτιθέμενος. δόξας γοῦν οὗτος ἐκ τῆς Ἀποκαλύψεως 2
Ἰωάννου τὴν ἰδίαν κρατύνειν ὑπόληψιν, Ἔλεγχον ἀλληγοριστῶν λόγον τινὰ περὶ τούτου συντάξας ἐπέγραψεν· πρὸς ὃν ὁ Διονύσιος ἐν τοῖς Περὶ 3
ἐπαγγελιῶν ἐνίσταται, διὰ μὲν τοῦ προτέρου τὴν αὐτοῦ γνώμην ἣν εἶχεν περὶ τοῦ δόγματος, παρατιθέμενος, διὰ δὲ τοῦ δευτέρου περὶ τῆς Ἀποκαλύψεως Ἰωάννου διαλαμβάνων· ἔνθα τοῦ Νέπωτος κατὰ τὴν ἀρχὴν μνημονεύσας, ταῦτα περὶ αὐτοῦ γράφει· " ἐπεὶ δὲ σύνταγμά τι προκομίζουσιν 4

---

[1] The seventh year of Gallienus ended towards the close of A.D. 260, apparently a short time before the capture of Valerian. From that time to the destruction of the Macriani

were, put aside its old age and cleansed itself from its former wickedness, and now blossoms forth in fuller bloom, is seen and heard more widely and spreads abroad everywhere."

Then, following on this, he indicates also the time at which he wrote this, in these words: "And it occurs to me once more to observe the days of the imperial years. For I perceive that those wicked persons, though they were named with honour, after a short time have become nameless; while he, who is holier and filled with more love to God, has passed the period of seven years, and is now completing a ninth year,[1] in which let us keep the feast."

XXIV. Besides all these, the two treatises *On Promises* were also composed by him. The occasion was supplied him by the teaching of Nepos, a bishop of those in Egypt, that the promises which had been made to the saints in the divine Scriptures should be interpreted after a more Jewish fashion, and his assumption that there will be a kind of millennium on this earth devoted to bodily indulgence. Thinking, for example, to establish his own peculiar opinion from the Apocalypse of John, he composed a certain book on the subject and entitled it *Refutation of the Allegorists*.[2] Dionysius attacked him in the books *On Promises*, in the first of which he sets out the view that he himself held with regard to the doctrine, and in the second treats of the Apocalypse of John. There, at the beginning, he mentions Nepos, writing as follows about him: "But since they bring forward

[1] in his ninth year he was, to use Dionysius's metaphor, "under a cloud."

[2] The "Allegorists" were those who, like Dionysius, protested against a literal interpretation of Revelation: see 25. 6.

Νέπωτος, ᾧ λίαν ἐπερείδονται ὡς ἀναντιρρήτως ἀποδεικνύντι τὴν τοῦ Χριστοῦ βασιλείαν ἐπὶ γῆς ἔσεσθαι, ἐν ἄλλοις μὲν πολλοῖς ἀποδέχομαι καὶ ἀγαπῶ Νέπωτα τῆς τε πίστεως καὶ τῆς φιλοπονίας καὶ τῆς ἐν ταῖς γραφαῖς διατριβῆς καὶ τῆς πολλῆς ψαλμῳδίας, ᾗ μέχρι νῦν πολλοὶ τῶν ἀδελφῶν εὐθυμοῦνται, καὶ πάνυ δι' αἰδοῦς ἄγω τὸν ἄνθρωπον, ταύτῃ μᾶλλον ἢ προανεπαύσατο· ἀλλὰ φίλη γὰρ καὶ προτιμοτάτη πάντων ἡ ἀλήθεια, ἐπαινεῖν τε χρὴ καὶ συναινεῖν ἀφθόνως, εἴ τι ὀρθῶς λέγοιτο, ἐξετάζειν δὲ καὶ διευθύνειν, εἴ τι μὴ φαίνοιτο ὑγιῶς ἀναγεγραμμένον. καὶ πρὸς μὲν παρόντα καὶ ψιλῷ λόγῳ δογματίζοντα αὐτάρκης ἦν ἂν ἡ ἄγραφος ὁμιλία, δι' ἐρωτήσεως καὶ ἀποκρίσεως
2 Tim. 2, 25 πείθουσα καὶ συμβιβάζουσα τοὺς ἀντιδιατιθεμένους· γραφῆς δὲ ἐκκειμένης, ὡς δοκεῖ τισιν, πιθανωτάτης καί τινων διδασκάλων τὸν μὲν νόμον καὶ τοὺς προφήτας τὸ μηδὲν ἡγουμένων καὶ τὸ τοῖς εὐαγγελίοις ἕπεσθαι παρέντων καὶ τὰς τῶν ἀποστόλων ἐπιστολὰς ἐκφαυλισάντων, τὴν δὲ τοῦ συγγράμματος τούτου διδασκαλίαν ὡς μέγα δή τι καὶ κεκρυμμένον μυστήριον κατεπαγγελλομένων καὶ τοὺς ἁπλουστέρους ἀδελφοὺς ἡμῶν οὐδὲν ἐώντων ὑψηλὸν καὶ μεγαλεῖον φρονεῖν οὔτε περὶ
1 Tim. 6, 14 τῆς ἐνδόξου καὶ ἀληθῶς ἐνθέου τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν
Cf. 2 Thess. 2, 1; 1 John 3, 2 ἐπιφανείας οὔτε τῆς ἡμετέρας ἐκ νεκρῶν ἀναστάσεως καὶ τῆς πρὸς αὐτὸν ἐπισυναγωγῆς καὶ ὁμοιώσεως, ἀλλὰ μικρὰ καὶ θνητὰ καὶ οἷα τὰ νῦν, ἐλπίζειν ἀναπειθόντων ἐν τῇ βασιλείᾳ τοῦ θεοῦ, ἀναγκαῖον καὶ ἡμᾶς ὡς πρὸς παρόντα τὸν ἀδελφὸν ἡμῶν διαλεχθῆναι Νέπωτα."

Τούτοις μεθ' ἕτερα ἐπιφέρει λέγων· "ἐν μὲν θ

a certain composition of Nepos, on which they rely greatly as proving indisputably that the kingdom of Christ will be on earth, let me say that in many other respects I approve and love Nepos, for his faith and devotion to work, his diligent study of the Scriptures and his abundant psalmody, by which many of the brethren have till this day been cheered ; and I am full of respectful regard for the man, all the more for that he has gone to his rest already. But truth is dear and to be honoured above all things,[1] and one must give ungrudging praise and assent to whatever is stated rightly, but examine and correct whatever appears to be unsoundly written. And if he were present and putting forward his opinions merely in words, conversation, without writing, would be sufficient, persuading and instructing by question and answer 'them that oppose themselves.' But when a book is published, which some think most convincing, and when certain teachers, who consider the law and the prophets of no value and disregard the following of the Gospels and depreciate the epistles of the apostles, yet make promises concerning the teaching of this treatise as if it were some great and hidden mystery, and do not suffer the simpler of our brethren to have high and noble thoughts, either about the glorious and truly divine appearing of our Lord, or of our resurrection from the dead and our gathering together and being made like unto Him, but persuade them to hope for what is petty and mortal and like the present in the kingdom of God—then we also are compelled to argue with Nepos our brother as if he were present."

After other remarks he adds as follows : " Now

[1] *Cf.* Aristotle, *Eth. Nic.* i. 1096 a.

οὖν τῷ Ἀρσενοΐτῃ γενόμενος, ἔνθα, ὡς οἶδας, πρὸ πολλοῦ τοῦτο ἐπεπόλαζεν τὸ δόγμα, ὡς καὶ σχίσματα καὶ ἀποστασίας ὅλων ἐκκλησιῶν γεγονέναι, συγκαλέσας τοὺς πρεσβυτέρους καὶ διδασκάλους τῶν ἐν ταῖς κώμαις ἀδελφῶν, παρόντων καὶ τῶν βουλομένων ἀδελφῶν, δημοσίᾳ τὴν ἐξέτασιν ποιήσασθαι τοῦ λόγου προετρεψάμην, καὶ τοῦτό μοι προσαγαγόντων τὸ βιβλίον ὥς τι ὅπλον καὶ τεῖχος ἄμαχον, συγκαθεσθεὶς αὐτοῖς τριῶν ἑξῆς ἡμερῶν ἐξ ἕω μέχρις ἑσπέρας, διευθύνειν ἐπειράθην τὰ γεγραμμένα· ἔνθα καὶ τὸ εὐσταθὲς καὶ τὸ φιλάληθες καὶ τὸ εὐπαρακολούθητον καὶ συνετὸν ὑπερηγάσθην τῶν ἀδελφῶν, ὡς ἐν τάξει καὶ μετ' ἐπιεικείας τὰς ἐρωτήσεις καὶ τὰς ἐπαπορήσεις καὶ τὰς συγκαταθέσεις ἐποιούμεθα, τὸ μὲν ἐκ παντὸς τρόπου καὶ φιλονείκως τῶν ἅπαξ δοξάντων περιέχεσθαι, εἰ καὶ μὴ φαίνοιτο ὀρθῶς ἔχοντα, παραιτησάμενοι, μήτε δὲ τὰς ἀντιλογίας ὑποστελλόμενοι, ἀλλ' ἐς ὅσον οἷόν τε, τῶν προκειμένων ἐπιβατεύειν καὶ κρατύνειν αὐτὰ πειρώμενοι, μήτε, εἰ λόγος αἱροῖ, μεταπείθεσθαι καὶ συνομολογεῖν αἰδούμενοι, ἀλλ' εὐσυνειδήτως καὶ ἀνυποκρίτως καὶ ταῖς καρδίαις πρὸς τὸν θεὸν ἡπλωμέναις τὰ ταῖς ἀποδείξεσι καὶ διδασκαλίαις τῶν ἁγίων γραφῶν συνιστανόμενα καταδεχόμενοι. καὶ τέλος ὅ τε τῆς διδαχῆς ταύτης ἀρχηγὸς καὶ εἰσηγητής, ὁ καλούμενος Κορακίων, ἐν ἐπηκόῳ πάντων τῶν παρόντων ἀδελφῶν ὡμολόγησεν καὶ διεμαρτύρατο ἡμῖν μηκέτι τούτῳ προσέξειν μηδὲ διαλέξεσθαι περὶ τούτου μηδὲ μεμνῆσθαι μηδὲ διδάξειν, ὡς ἱκανῶς ὑπὸ τῶν ἀντιλεχθέντων ἠρημένος· τῶν τε ἄλλων ἀδελφῶν οἳ μὲν ἔχαιρον

when I came to the nome of Arsinoë, where, as thou knowest, this doctrine had long been prevalent, so that schisms and defections of whole churches had taken place, I called together the presbyters and teachers of the brethren in the villages (there were present also such of the brethren as wished), and I urged them to hold the examination of the question publicly. And when they brought me this book as some invincible weapon and rampart, I sat with them and for three successive days from morn till night attempted to correct what had been written. On that occasion I conceived the greatest admiration for the brethren, their firmness, love of truth, facility in following an argument, and intelligence, as we propounded in order and with forbearance the questions, the difficulties raised and the points of agreement; on the one hand refusing to cling obstinately and at all costs (even though they were manifestly wrong) to opinions once held; and on the other hand not shirking the counter-arguments, but as far as possible attempting to grapple with the questions in hand and master them. Nor, if convinced by reason, were we ashamed to change our opinions and give our assent; but conscientiously and unfeignedly and with hearts laid open to God we accepted whatever was established by the proofs and teachings of the holy Scriptures. And in the end the leader and introducer of this teaching, Coracion, as he was called, in the hearing of all the brethren present, assented, and testified to us that he would no longer adhere to it, nor discourse upon it, nor mention nor teach it, since he had been sufficiently convinced by the contrary arguments. And as to the rest of the

ἐπὶ τῇ κοινολογίᾳ καὶ τῇ πρὸς πάντας συγκαταβάσει καὶ συνδιαθέσει."

XXV. Εἶθ' ἑξῆς ὑποβάς, περὶ τῆς Ἀποκαλύψεως Ἰωάννου ταῦτά φησιν· "τινὲς μὲν οὖν τῶν πρὸ ἡμῶν ἠθέτησαν καὶ ἀνεσκεύασαν πάντῃ τὸ βιβλίον, καθ' ἕκαστον κεφάλαιον διευθύνοντες ἄγνωστόν τε καὶ ἀσυλλόγιστον ἀποφαίνοντες ψεύδεσθαί τε τὴν ἐπιγραφήν. Ἰωάννου γὰρ οὐκ εἶναι λέγουσιν, ἀλλ' οὐδ' ἀποκάλυψιν εἶναι τὴν σφόδρα καὶ παχεῖ κεκαλυμμένην τῷ τῆς ἀγνοίας παραπετάσματι, καὶ οὐχ ὅπως τῶν ἀποστόλων τινά, ἀλλ' οὐδ' ὅλως τῶν ἁγίων ἢ τῶν ἀπὸ τῆς ἐκκλησίας τούτου γεγονέναι ποιητὴν τοῦ γράμματος, Κήρινθον δὲ τὸν καὶ τὴν ἀπ' ἐκείνου κληθεῖσαν Κηρινθιανὴν συστησάμενον αἵρεσιν, ἀξιόπιστον ἐπιφημίσαι θελήσαντα τῷ ἑαυτοῦ πλάσματι ὄνομα. τοῦτο γὰρ εἶναι τῆς διδασκαλίας αὐτοῦ τὸ δόγμα, ἐπίγειον ἔσεσθαι τὴν τοῦ Χριστοῦ βασιλείαν, καὶ ὧν αὐτὸς ὠρέγετο, φιλοσώματος ὢν καὶ πάνυ σαρκικός, ἐν τούτοις ὀνειροπολεῖν ἔσεσθαι, γαστρὸς καὶ τῶν ὑπὸ γαστέρα πλησμοναῖς, τοῦτ' ἐστὶ σιτίοις καὶ ποτοῖς καὶ γάμοις καὶ δι' ὧν εὐφημότερον ταῦτα ᾠήθη ποριεῖσθαι, ἑορταῖς καὶ θυσίαις καὶ ἱερείων σφαγαῖς. ἐγὼ δὲ ἀθετῆσαι μὲν οὐκ ἂν τολμήσαιμι τὸ βιβλίον, πολλῶν αὐτὸ διὰ σπουδῆς ἐχόντων ἀδελφῶν, μείζονα δὲ τῆς ἐμαυτοῦ φρονήσεως τὴν ὑπόληψιν τὴν περὶ αὐτοῦ λαμβάνων, κεκρυμμένην εἶναί τινα καὶ θαυμασιωτέραν τὴν καθ' ἕκαστον ἐκδοχὴν ὑπολαμβάνω. καὶ γὰρ εἰ μὴ συνίημι, ἀλλ' ὑπονοῶ γε νοῦν τινα βαθύτερον ἐγκεῖσθαι τοῖς

[1] *Cf.* Gaius (iii. 28. 2 above).

brethren, some rejoiced at the joint conference, and the mutual deference and unanimity which all displayed. . . ."

XXV. Then, in due course, lower down he speaks thus, with reference to the Apocalypse of John: "Some indeed of those before our time rejected and altogether impugned the book, examining it chapter by chapter and declaring it to be unintelligible and illogical, and its title false. For they say that it is not John's, no, nor yet an apocalypse (unveiling), since it is veiled by its heavy, thick curtain of unintelligibility; and that the author of this book was not only not one of the apostles, nor even one of the saints or those belonging to the Church, but Cerinthus, the same who created the sect called "Cerinthian" after him, since he desired to affix to his own forgery a name worthy of credit. For that this was the doctrine which he taught, that the kingdom of Christ would be on earth; and he dreamed that it would consist in those things which formed the object of his own desires (for he was a lover of the body and altogether carnal), in the full satisfaction of the belly and lower lusts, that is, in feasts and carousals and marriages, and (as a means, he thought, of procuring these under a better name) in festivals and sacrifices and slayings of victims.[1] But for my part I should not dare to reject the book, since many brethren hold it in estimation; but, reckoning that my perception is inadequate to form an opinion concerning it, I hold that the interpretation of each several passage is in some way hidden and more wonderful.[2] For even although I do not understand it, yet I suspect that some deeper meaning underlies the words. For I

[2] *i.e.* than appears on the surface.

ῥήμασιν, οὐκ ἰδίῳ ταῦτα μετρῶν καὶ κρίνων λογισμῷ, πίστει δὲ τὸ πλέον νέμων ὑψηλότερα ἢ ὑπ' ἐμοῦ καταληφθῆναι νενόμικα, καὶ οὐκ ἀποδοκιμάζω ταῦτα ἃ μὴ συνεώρακα, θαυμάζω δὲ μᾶλλον ὅτι μὴ καὶ εἶδον."

Ἐπὶ τούτοις τὴν ὅλην τῆς Ἀποκαλύψεως βασανίσας γραφὴν ἀδύνατόν τε αὐτὴν κατὰ τὴν πρόχειρον ἀποδείξας νοεῖσθαι διάνοιαν, ἐπιφέρει λέγων· "συντελέσας δὴ πᾶσαν ὡς εἰπεῖν τὴν προφητείαν, μακαρίζει ὁ προφήτης τούς τε
Rev. 22, 7. 8 φυλάσσοντας αὐτὴν καὶ δὴ καὶ ἑαυτόν. 'μακάριος' γάρ φησιν 'ὁ τηρῶν τοὺς λόγους τῆς προφητείας τοῦ βιβλίου τούτου κἀγὼ Ἰωάννης ὁ βλέπων καὶ ἀκούων ταῦτα.' καλεῖσθαι μὲν οὖν αὐτὸν Ἰωάννην καὶ εἶναι τὴν γραφὴν Ἰωάννου ταύτην οὐκ ἀντερῶ, ἁγίου μὲν γὰρ εἶναί τινος καὶ θεοπνεύστου συναινῶ· οὐ μὴν ῥᾳδίως ἂν συνθείμην τοῦτον εἶναι τὸν ἀπόστολον, τὸν υἱὸν Ζεβεδαίου, τὸν ἀδελφὸν Ἰακώβου, οὗ τὸ εὐαγγέλιον τὸ κατὰ Ἰωάννην ἐπιγεγραμμένον καὶ ἡ ἐπιστολὴ ἡ καθολική. τεκμαίρομαι γὰρ ἔκ τε τοῦ ἤθους ἑκατέρων καὶ τοῦ τῶν λόγων εἴδους καὶ τῆς τοῦ βιβλίου διεξαγωγῆς λεγομένης, μὴ τὸν αὐτὸν εἶναι. ὁ μὲν γὰρ εὐαγγελιστὴς οὐδαμοῦ τὸ ὄνομα αὐτοῦ παρεγγράφει οὐδὲ κηρύσσει ἑαυτὸν οὔτε διὰ τοῦ εὐαγγελίου οὔτε διὰ τῆς ἐπιστολῆς."

Εἶθ' ὑποβάς, πάλιν ταῦτα λέγει· "Ἰωάννης δὲ οὐδαμοῦ, οὐδὲ ὡς περὶ ἑαυτοῦ οὐδὲ ὡς περὶ ἑτέρου· ὁ δὲ τὴν Ἀποκάλυψιν γράψας εὐθύς τε
Rev. 1, 1. 2 ἐν ἀρχῇ ἑαυτὸν προτάσσει 'Ἀποκάλυψις Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, ἣν ἔδωκεν αὐτῷ δεῖξαι τοῖς δούλοις αὐτοῦ ἐν τάχει, καὶ ἐσήμανεν ἀποστείλας διὰ τοῦ

do not measure and judge these things by my own reasoning, but, assigning to faith the greater value, I have come to the conclusion that they are too high for my comprehension, and I do not reject what I have not understood, but I rather wonder that I did not indeed see them."

Moreover, after closely examining the whole book of the Apocalypse and demonstrating that it cannot be understood in the literal sense, he adds as follows: "After completing the whole, one might say, of his prophecy, the prophet calls those blessed who observe it, and indeed himself also; for he says: 'Blessed is he that keepeth the words of the prophecy of this book, and I John, he that saw and heard these things.' That, then, he was certainly named John and that this book is by one John, I will not gainsay; for I fully allow that it is the work of some holy and inspired person. But I should not readily agree that he was the apostle, the son of Zebedee, the brother of James, whose are the Gospel entitled According to John and the Catholic Epistle. For I form my judgement from the character of each and from the nature of the language and from what is known as the general construction of the book, that [the John therein mentioned] is not the same. For the evangelist nowhere adds his name, nor yet proclaims himself, throughout either the Gospel or the Epistle."

Then lower down he again speaks thus: ". . . But John nowhere, either in the first or the third person. But he who wrote the Apocalypse at the very beginning puts himself forward: 'The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which he gave him to show unto his servants quickly, and he sent and signified it by his angel unto

ἀγγέλου αὐτοῦ τῷ δούλῳ αὐτοῦ Ἰωάννῃ, ὃς ἐμαρτύρησεν τὸν λόγον τοῦ θεοῦ καὶ τὴν μαρτυρίαν αὐτοῦ, ὅσα εἶδεν·· εἶτα καὶ ἐπιστολὴν γράφει·
Rev. 1, 4 ‘ Ἰωάννης ταῖς ἑπτὰ ἐκκλησίαις ταῖς ἐν τῇ Ἀσίᾳ, χάρις ὑμῖν καὶ εἰρήνη.’ ὁ δέ γε εὐαγγελιστὴς οὐδὲ τῆς καθολικῆς ἐπιστολῆς προέγραψεν ἑαυτοῦ τὸ ὄνομα, ἀλλὰ ἀπερίττως ἀπ’ αὐτοῦ τοῦ μυστηρίου
1 John 1, 1 τῆς θείας ἀποκαλύψεως ἤρξατο· ‘ ὃ ἦν ἀπ’ ἀρχῆς, ὃ ἀκηκόαμεν, ὃ ἑωράκαμεν τοῖς ὀφθαλμοῖς ἡμῶν ’· ἐπὶ ταύτῃ γὰρ τῇ ἀποκαλύψει καὶ ὁ κύριος τὸν
Matt. 16, 17 Πέτρον ἐμακάρισεν, εἰπών· ‘ μακάριος εἶ Σίμων βὰρ Ἰωνᾶ, ὅτι σὰρξ καὶ αἷμα οὐκ ἀπεκάλυψέν σοι, ἀλλ’ ὁ πατήρ μου ὁ οὐράνιος.’ ἀλλ’ οὐδὲ ἐν τῇ δευτέρᾳ φερομένῃ Ἰωάννου καὶ τρίτῃ, καίτοι βραχείαις οὔσαις ἐπιστολαῖς, ὁ Ἰωάννης ὀνομαστὶ
2 John 1; 3 John 1 πρόκειται, ἀλλὰ ἀνωνύμως ‘ ὁ πρεσβύτερος ’ γέγραπται. οὗτος δέ γε οὐδὲ αὔταρκες ἐνόμισεν, εἰς ἅπαξ ἑαυτὸν ὀνομάσας διηγεῖσθαι τὰ ἑξῆς,
Rev. 1, 9 ἀλλὰ πάλιν ἀναλαμβάνει ‘ ἐγὼ Ἰωάννης, ὁ ἀδελφὸς ὑμῶν καὶ συγκοινωνὸς ἐν τῇ θλίψει καὶ βασιλείᾳ καὶ ἐν ὑπομονῇ Ἰησοῦ, ἐγενόμην ἐν τῇ νήσῳ τῇ καλουμένῃ Πάτμῳ διὰ τὸν λόγον τοῦ θεοῦ καὶ τὴν μαρτυρίαν Ἰησοῦ.’ καὶ δὴ καὶ πρὸς τῷ τέλει
Rev. 22, 7. 8 ταῦτα εἶπεν· ‘ μακάριος ὁ τηρῶν τοὺς λόγους τῆς προφητείας τοῦ βιβλίου τούτου κἀγὼ Ἰωάννης ὁ βλέπων καὶ ἀκούων ταῦτα.’

‘‘ Ὅτι μὲν οὖν Ἰωάννης ἐστὶν ὁ ταῦτα γράφων, αὐτῷ λέγοντι πιστευτέον· ποῖος δὲ οὗτος, ἄδηλον. οὐ γὰρ εἶπεν ἑαυτὸν εἶναι, ὡς ἐν τῷ εὐαγγελίῳ πολλαχοῦ, τὸν ἠγαπημένον ὑπὸ τοῦ κυρίου μαθητὴν
John 13, 25 οὐδὲ τὸν ἀναπεσόντα ἐπὶ τὸ στῆθος αὐτοῦ οὐδὲ τὸν ἀδελφὸν Ἰακώβου οὐδὲ τὸν αὐτόπτην καὶ αὐτήκοον

his servant John ; who bare witness of the word of God and his testimony, even of all things that he saw.' Then he also writes an epistle : 'John to the seven churches which are in Asia ; Grace to you and peace.' But the evangelist did not write his name even at the beginning of the Catholic Epistle, but without anything superfluous began with the mystery itself of the divine revelation : 'That which was from the beginning, that which we have heard, that which we have seen with our eyes.' It was in respect of this revelation that the Lord also called Peter blessed, saying : 'Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-Jonah : for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my heavenly Father.' Nay, not even in the second or third extant epistles of John, although they are short, is John set forth by name ; but he has written 'the elder,' without giving his name. But this writer did not even consider it sufficient, having once mentioned his name, to narrate what follows, but he takes up his name again : 'I John, your brother and partaker with you in the tribulation and kingdom and in the patience of Jesus, was in the isle that is called Patmos, for the word of God and the testimony of Jesus.' Moreover at the close he speaks thus : 'Blessed is he that keepeth the words of the prophecy of this book, and I John, he that saw and heard these things.'

"That the writer of these words, therefore, was John, one must believe, since he says it. But what John, is not clear. For he did not say that he was, as is frequently said in the Gospel, the disciple loved by the Lord, nor he which leaned back on His breast, nor the brother of James, nor the eye-witness and

τοῦ κυρίου γενόμενον. εἶπεν γὰρ ἄν τι τούτων τῶν προδεδηλωμένων, σαφῶς ἑαυτὸν ἐμφανίσαι
Rev. 1, 9 βουλόμενος· ἀλλὰ τούτων μὲν οὐδέν, ἀδελφὸν δὲ ἡμῶν καὶ συγκοινωνὸν εἶπεν καὶ μάρτυρα Ἰησοῦ
Rev. 22, 7. 8 καὶ μακάριον ἐπὶ τῇ θέᾳ καὶ ἀκοῇ τῶν ἀποκαλύψεων. πολλοὺς δὲ ὁμωνύμους Ἰωάννῃ τῷ ἀποστόλῳ νομίζω γεγονέναι, οἳ διὰ τὴν πρὸς ἐκεῖνον ἀγάπην καὶ τῷ θαυμάζειν καὶ ζηλοῦν
John 21, 20, etc. ἀγαπηθῆναί τε ὁμοίως αὐτῷ βούλεσθαι ὑπὸ τοῦ κυρίου, καὶ τὴν ἐπωνυμίαν τὴν αὐτὴν ἠσπάσαντο, ὥσπερ καὶ ὁ Παῦλος πολὺς καὶ δὴ καὶ ὁ Πέτρος ἐν τοῖς τῶν πιστῶν παισὶν ὀνομάζεται. ἔστιν μὲν οὖν καὶ ἕτερος Ἰωάννης ἐν ταῖς Πράξεσι τῶν
Acts 12, 25 ἀποστόλων, ὁ ἐπικληθεὶς Μάρκος, ὃν Βαρναβᾶς καὶ Παῦλος ἑαυτοῖς συμπαρέλαβον, περὶ οὗ καὶ
Acts 13, 5 πάλιν λέγει ‘ εἶχον δὲ καὶ Ἰωάννην ὑπηρέτην.’ εἰ δὲ οὗτος ὁ γράψας ἐστίν, οὐκ ἂν φαίην· οὐδὲ γὰρ ἀφῖχθαι σὺν αὐτοῖς εἰς τὴν Ἀσίαν γέγραπται,
Acts 13, 13 ἀλλὰ ‘ ἀναχθέντες μέν,’ φησίν, ‘ ἀπὸ τῆς Πάφου οἱ περὶ τὸν Παῦλον ἦλθον εἰς Πέργην τῆς Παμφυλίας, Ἰωάννης δὲ ἀποχωρήσας ἀπ’ αὐτῶν ὑπέστρεψεν εἰς Ἱεροσόλυμα ’· ἄλλον δέ τινα οἶμαι τῶν ἐν Ἀσίᾳ γενομένων, ἐπεὶ καὶ δύο φασὶν ἐν Ἐφέσῳ γενέσθαι μνήματα καὶ ἑκάτερον Ἰωάννου λέγεσθαι.

“ Καὶ ἀπὸ τῶν νοημάτων δὲ καὶ ἀπὸ τῶν ῥημάτων καὶ τῆς συντάξεως αὐτῶν εἰκότως ἕτερος οὗτος παρ’ ἐκεῖνον ὑποληφθήσεται. συνᾴδουσι μὲν γὰρ ἀλλήλοις τὸ εὐαγγέλιον καὶ ἡ ἐπιστολή,
John 1, 1 ὁμοίως τε ἄρχονται· τὸ μέν φησιν ‘ ἐν ἀρχῇ ἦν ὁ
1 John 1, 1 λόγος,’ ἡ δὲ ‘ ὃ ἦν ἀπ’ ἀρχῆς ’ τὸ μέν φησιν ‘ καὶ

hearer of the Lord. For he would have mentioned some one of these aforesaid epithets, had he wished to make himself clearly known. Yet he makes use of none of them, but speaks of himself as our brother and partaker with us, and a witness of Jesus, and blessed in seeing and hearing the revelations. I hold that there have been many persons of the same name as John the apostle, who for the love they bore him, and because they admired and esteemed him and wished to be loved, as he was, of the Lord, were glad to take also the same name after him ; just as Paul, and for that matter Peter too, is a common name among boys of believing parents. So then, there is also another John in the Acts of the Apostles, whose surname was Mark, whom Barnabas and Paul took with themselves, concerning whom also the Scripture says again : ' And they had also John as their attendant.' But as to whether it were he who was the writer, I should say No. For it is written that he did not arrive in Asia along with them, but ' having set sail, the Scripture says, from Paphos Paul and his company came to Perga in Pamphylia ; and John departed from them and returned to Jerusalem.' But I think that there was a certain other [John] among those that were in Asia, since it is said both that there were two tombs at Ephesus, and that each of the two is said to be John's.

" And from the conceptions too, and from the terms and their arrangement, one might naturally assume that this writer was a different person from the other. For there is indeed a mutual agreement between the Gospel and the Epistle, and they begin alike. The one says : ' In the beginning was the Word ' ; the other : ' That which was from the begin-

John 1, 14 ὁ λόγος σὰρξ ἐγένετο καὶ ἐσκήνωσεν ἐν ἡμῖν καὶ
ἐθεασάμεθα τὴν δόξαν αὐτοῦ, δόξαν ὡς μονο-
γενοῦς παρὰ πατρός,' ἣ δὲ τὰ αὐτὰ σμικρῷ
1 John 1, 1. 2 παρηλλαγμένα 'ὃ ἀκηκόαμεν, ὃ ἑωράκαμεν τοῖς
ὀφθαλμοῖς ἡμῶν, ὃ ἐθεασάμεθα καὶ αἱ χεῖρες
ἡμῶν ἐψηλάφησαν, περὶ τοῦ λόγου τῆς ζωῆς καὶ
ἡ ζωὴ ἐφανερώθη.' ταῦτα γὰρ προανακρούεται, 1
διατεινόμενος, ὡς ἐν τοῖς ἑξῆς ἐδήλωσεν, πρὸς τοὺς
1 John 4, 2 οὐκ ἐν σαρκὶ φάσκοντας ἐληλυθέναι τὸν κύριον·
δι' ἃ καὶ συνῆψεν ἐπιμελῶς 'καὶ ὃ ἑωράκαμεν,
μαρτυροῦμεν καὶ ἀπαγγέλλομεν ὑμῖν τὴν ζωὴν
τὴν αἰώνιον, ἥτις ἦν πρὸς τὸν πατέρα καὶ ἐφανερώθη
ἡμῖν· ὃ ἑωράκαμεν καὶ ἀκηκόαμεν, ἀπαγγέλλομεν
καὶ ὑμῖν.' ἔχεται αὐτοῦ καὶ τῶν προθέσεων οὐκ 2
ἀφίσταται, διὰ δὲ τῶν αὐτῶν κεφαλαίων καὶ
ὀνομάτων πάντα διεξέρχεται· ὧν τινὰ μὲν ἡμεῖς
συντόμως ὑπομνήσομεν, ὁ δὲ προσεχῶς ἐντυγ- 2
χάνων εὑρήσει ἐν ἑκατέρῳ πολλὴν τὴν ζωήν, πολὺ
τὸ φῶς ἀποτροπὴν τοῦ σκότους, συνεχῆ τὴν
ἀλήθειαν τὴν χάριν τὴν χαρὰν τὴν σάρκα καὶ τὸ
αἷμα τοῦ κυρίου τὴν κρίσιν τὴν ἄφεσιν τῶν ἁμαρ-
τιῶν τὴν πρὸς ἡμᾶς ἀγάπην τοῦ θεοῦ τὴν πρὸς
ἀλλήλους ἡμᾶς ἀγάπης ἐντολήν, ὡς πάσας δεῖ
φυλάττειν τὰς ἐντολάς· ὁ ἔλεγχος τοῦ κόσμου τοῦ

[1] 1 John i. 1, 2, 3.
[2] The text is probably corrupt.
[3] John i. 4, and *passim*; 1 John ii. 25; iii. 14 f., etc.
[4] John i.-xii. *passim*; 1 John i. 5, 7; ii. 8-10.
[5] John i. 14, and *passim*; 1 John i. 8; iii. 19, etc.
[6] John i. 14, 16, 17; 2 John 3.

ning.' The one says: 'And the Word became flesh, and dwelt among us (and we beheld his glory, glory as of the only-begotten from the Father)'; the other, the same words slightly changed: 'That which we have heard, that which we have seen with our eyes, that which we beheld, and our hands handled, concerning the Word of life; and the life was manifested.' For these words he employs as a prelude, since he is aiming, as he shows in what follows, at those who were asserting that the Lord had not come in the flesh. Therefore he was careful also to add: 'And that which we have seen, we bear witness, and declare unto you the life, the eternal life, which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us; that which we have seen and heard, declare we unto you also.'[1] He is consistent with himself[2] and does not depart from what he has proposed, but proceeds throughout under the same heads and expressions, certain of which we shall mention concisely. But the attentive reader will find frequently in one and the other 'the life,'[3] 'the light,'[4] 'turning from darkness'; continually 'the truth,'[5] 'the grace,'[6] 'the joy,'[7] 'the flesh[8] and blood[9] of the Lord,' 'the judgement,'[10] 'the forgiveness of sins,'[11] 'the love of God toward us,'[12] the 'commandment' that we should 'love one another,'[13] that we should 'keep all the commandments'[14]; the 'conviction' of 'the

[7] John iii. 29, etc.; 1 John i. 4; 2 John 12; 3 John 4 (*v.l.* "grace").
[8] John i. 13, 14; vi. 53, 56, etc.; 1 John iv. 2.
[9] John vi. 53-56; xix. 34; 1 John i. 7; v. 6, 8.
[10] John iii. 19, etc.; 1 John iv. 17; *cf.* ii. 18, etc.
[11] *Cf.* John xx. 23: 1 John i. 9; ii. 12; *cf.* iii. 5.
[12] John iii. 16; xiv. 23; xvii. 23; 1 John iii. 1; iv. 11, etc.
[13] John xiii. 34; xv. 12, 17; 1 John iii. 23, etc.
[14] John xv. 10; 1 John ii. 3; iii. 22 ff., etc.

διαβόλου τοῦ ἀντιχρίστου ἡ ἐπαγγελία τοῦ ἁγίου πνεύματος ἡ υἱοθεσία τοῦ θεοῦ ἡ διόλου πίστις ἡμῶν ἀπαιτουμένη ὁ πατὴρ καὶ ὁ υἱός, πανταχοῦ· καὶ ὅλως διὰ πάντων χαρακτηρίζοντας ἕνα καὶ τὸν αὐτὸν συνορᾶν τοῦ τε εὐαγγελίου καὶ τῆς ἐπιστολῆς χρῶτα πρόκειται. ἀλλοιοτάτη δὲ καὶ 2
ξένη παρὰ ταῦτα ἡ Ἀποκάλυψις, μήτε ἐφαπτομένη μήτε γειτνιῶσα τούτων μηδενί, σχεδόν, ὡς εἰπεῖν, μηδὲ συλλαβὴν πρὸς αὐτὰ κοινὴν ἔχουσα· ἀλλ' 2
οὐδὲ μνήμην τινὰ οὐδὲ ἔννοιαν οὔτε ἡ ἐπιστολὴ τῆς Ἀποκαλύψεως ἔχει (ἔα γὰρ τὸ εὐαγγέλιον) οὔτε τῆς ἐπιστολῆς ἡ Ἀποκάλυψις, Παύλου διὰ τῶν ἐπιστολῶν ὑποφήναντός τι καὶ περὶ τῶν ἀποκαλύψεων αὐτοῦ, ἃς οὐκ ἐνέγραψεν καθ' αὑτάς.

"Ἔτι δὲ καὶ διὰ τῆς φράσεως τὴν διαφορὰν 2
ἔστιν τεκμήρασθαι τοῦ εὐαγγελίου καὶ τῆς ἐπιστολῆς πρὸς τὴν Ἀποκάλυψιν. τὰ μὲν γὰρ οὐ 2
μόνον ἀπταίστως κατὰ τὴν τῶν Ἑλλήνων φωνήν, ἀλλὰ καὶ λογιώτατα ταῖς λέξεσιν τοῖς συλλογισμοῖς ταῖς συντάξεσιν τῆς ἑρμηνείας γέγραπται, πολλοῦ γε δεῖ βάρβαρόν τινα φθόγγον ἢ σολοικισμὸν ἢ ὅλως ἰδιωτισμὸν ἐν αὐτοῖς εὑρεθῆναι· ἑκάτερον γὰρ εἶχεν, ὡς ἔοικεν, τὸν λόγον, ἀμφοτέρους αὐτῷ
1 Cor. 12, 8 χαρισαμένου τοῦ κυρίου, τόν τε τῆς γνώσεως τόν
1 Cor. 14, 6 τε τῆς φράσεως· τούτῳ δὲ ἀποκαλύψεις μὲν 2
ἑωρακέναι καὶ γνῶσιν εἰληφέναι καὶ προφητείαν οὐκ ἀντερῶ, διάλεκτον μέντοι καὶ γλῶσσαν οὐκ ἀκριβῶς ἑλληνίζουσαν αὐτοῦ βλέπω, ἀλλ' ἰδιώμασίν

[1] John xvi. 8; 1 John ii. 16 f.
[2] 1 John iii. 8; *cf.* ii. 14, etc. [3] 1 John ii. 18 f.
[4] John xiv. 16, etc.; 1 John iii. 24; iv. 13; *cf.* ii. 20.
[5] John i. 12; xi. 52; 1 John iii. 1, 2, etc.

world,'[1] of 'the devil,'[2] of 'the antichrist'[3]; the promise of the Holy Spirit[4]; the adoption of the sons of God[5]; the 'faith'[6] that is demanded of us throughout; 'the Father' and 'the Son'[7]: these are to be found everywhere. In a word, it is obvious that those who observe their character throughout will see at a glance that the Gospel and Epistle have one and the same complexion. But the Apocalypse is utterly different from, and foreign to, these writings; it has no connexion, no affinity, in any way with them; it scarcely, so to speak, has even a syllable in common with them. Nay more, neither does the Epistle (not to speak of the Gospel) contain any mention or thought of the Apocalypse, nor the Apocalypse of the Epistle, whereas Paul in his epistles gave us a little light also on his revelations, which he did not record separately.

"And further, by means of the style one can estimate the difference between the Gospel and Epistle and the Apocalypse. For the former are not only written in faultless Greek, but also show the greatest literary skill in their diction, their reasonings, and the constructions in which they are expressed. There is a complete absence of any barbarous word, or solecism, or any vulgarism whatever. For their author had, as it seems, both kinds of word, by the free gift of the Lord, the word of knowledge and the word of speech. But I will not deny that the other writer had seen revelations and received knowledge and prophecy; nevertheless I observe his style and that his use of the Greek language is not accurate, but that he employs barbarous idioms, in some places

[6] John i. 7, etc.; 1 John v. 4.
[7] John iii. 36 and *passim*; 1 John iv. 14, etc.

τε βαρβαρικοῖς χρώμενον καί που καὶ σολοικί- 2
ζοντα· ἅπερ οὐκ ἀναγκαῖον νῦν ἐκλέγειν· οὐδὲ γὰρ
ἐπισκώπτων (μή τις νομίσῃ) ταῦτα εἶπον, ἀλλὰ μόνον
τὴν ἀνομοιότητα διευθύνων τούτων τῶν γραφῶν."

XXVI. Ἐπὶ ταύταις τοῦ Διονυσίου φέρονται 1
καὶ ἄλλαι πλείους ἐπιστολαί, ὥσπερ αἱ κατὰ
Σαβελλίου πρὸς Ἄμμωνα τῆς κατὰ Βερνίκην
ἐκκλησίας ἐπίσκοπον καὶ ἡ πρὸς Τελεσφόρον καὶ
ἡ πρὸς Εὔφρανορα καὶ πάλιν Ἄμμωνα καὶ Εὔπορον·
συντάττει δὲ περὶ τῆς αὐτῆς ὑποθέσεως καὶ ἄλλα
τέσσαρα συγγράμματα, ἃ τῷ κατὰ Ῥώμην ὁμω-
νύμῳ Διονυσίῳ προσφωνεῖ. καὶ πλείους δὲ παρὰ 2
ταύτας εἰσὶν αὐτοῦ παρ' ἡμῖν ἐπιστολαὶ καὶ δὴ καὶ
πολυεπεῖς λόγοι ἐν ἐπιστολῆς χαρακτῆρι γραφέντες,
ὡς οἱ περὶ φύσεως, Τιμοθέῳ τῷ παιδὶ προσπε-
φωνημένοι, καὶ ὁ περὶ πειρασμῶν, ὃν καὶ αὐτὸν
Εὐφράνορι ἀνατέθεικεν. ἐπὶ τούτοις καὶ Βασιλείδῃ 3
τῶν κατὰ τὴν Πεντάπολιν παροικιῶν ἐπισκόπῳ
γράφων, φησὶν ἑαυτὸν εἰς τὴν ἀρχὴν ἐξήγησιν
πεποιῆσθαι τοῦ Ἐκκλησιαστοῦ, διαφόρους δ' ἡμῖν
[τε] καὶ πρὸς τοῦτον καταλέλοιπεν ἐπιστολάς.

Τοσαῦτα ὁ Διονύσιος· ἀλλὰ γὰρ ἤδη μετὰ τὴν
τούτων ἱστορίαν φέρε, καὶ τὴν καθ' ἡμᾶς τοῖς
μετέπειτα γνωρίζειν γενεὰν ὁποία τις ἦν, παρα-
δῶμεν. XXVII. Ξύστον τῆς Ῥωμαίων ἐκκλησίας 1
ἔτεσιν ἕνδεκα προστάντα διαδέχεται τῷ κατ'
Ἀλεξάνδρειαν ὁμώνυμος Διονύσιος. ἐν τούτῳ δὲ
καὶ Δημητριανοῦ κατ' Ἀντιόχειαν τὸν βίον μεταλ-
λάξαντος, τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν Παῦλος ὁ ἐκ Σαμοσάτων
παραλαμβάνει. τούτου δὲ ταπεινὰ καὶ χαμαιπετῆ 2
περὶ τοῦ Χριστοῦ παρὰ τὴν ἐκκλησιαστικὴν διδα-
σκαλίαν φρονήσαντος ὡς κοινοῦ τὴν φύσιν ἀνθρώπου

committing downright solecisms. These there is no necessity to single out now. For I have not said these things in mockery (let no one think it), but merely to establish the dissimilarity of these writings."

XXVI. In addition to these letters of Dionysius there are extant also many others, as for example those against Sabellius to Ammon bishop of the church at Bernice, and that to Telesphorus, and that to Euphranor and Ammon again and Euporus. And he composed on the same subject also four other treatises, which he addressed to his namesake at Rome, Dionysius. And we have many letters of his besides these, and moreover lengthy books written in epistolary form, such as those on Nature, addressed to Timothy his boy, and that on Temptations, which also he dedicated to Euphranor. In addition to these, in writing also to Basilides, bishop of the communities in the Pentapolis, he says that he himself had written an exposition of the beginning of Ecclesiastes; and he has left behind for our benefit various other letters addressed to this person.

So much for Dionysius. But come now, after recording these things, let us hand down for the information of posterity the character of our own generation. XXVII. When Xystus had presided over the church of the Romans for eleven years,[1] he was succeeded by Dionysius, namesake of him of Alexandria. At this time also, when Demetrian had departed this life at Antioch, Paul of Samosata received the episcopate. As this person espoused low and mean views as to Christ, contrary to the Church's teaching, namely, that He was in His nature

[1] Xystus II. was bishop from Aug. or Sept. 257 to Aug. 258. Eusebius should have said "eleven months."

γενομένου, ὁ μὲν κατ' Ἀλεξάνδρειαν Διονύσιος παρακληθεὶς ὡς ἂν ἐπὶ τὴν σύνοδον ἀφίκοιτο, γῆρας ὁμοῦ καὶ ἀσθένειαν τοῦ σώματος αἰτιασάμενος, ἀνατίθεται τὴν παρουσίαν, δι' ἐπιστολῆς τὴν αὐτοῦ γνώμην, ἣν ἔχοι περὶ τοῦ ζητουμένου, παραστήσας, οἱ δὲ λοιποὶ τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν ποιμένες ἄλλος ἄλλοθεν ὡς ἐπὶ λυμεῶνα τῆς Χριστοῦ ποίμνης συνήεσαν, οἱ πάντες ἐπὶ τὴν Ἀντιόχειαν σπεύδοντες.

XXVIII. Τούτων οἳ μάλιστα διέπρεπον, Φιρ- 1
μιλιανὸς μὲν τῆς Καππαδοκῶν Καισαρείας ἐπίσκοπος ἦν, Γρηγόριος δὲ καὶ Ἀθηνόδωρος ἀδελφοὶ τῶν κατὰ Πόντον παροικιῶν ποιμένες καὶ ἐπὶ τούτοις Ἕλενος τῆς ἐν Ταρσῷ παροικίας καὶ Νικομᾶς τῆς ἐν Ἰκονίῳ, οὐ μὴν ἀλλὰ καὶ τῆς ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις ἐκκλησίας Ὑμέναιος τῆς τε ὁμόρου ταύτης Καισαρείας Θεότεκνος, Μάξιμος ἔτι πρὸς τούτοις, τῶν κατὰ Βόστραν δὲ καὶ οὗτος ἀδελφῶν διαπρεπῶς ἡγεῖτο, μυρίους τε ἄλλους οὐκ ἂν ἀπορήσαι τις ἅμα πρεσβυτέροις καὶ διακόνοις τῆς αὐτῆς ἕνεκεν αἰτίας ἐν τῇ προειρημένῃ πόλει συγκροτηθέντας ἀπαριθμούμενος, ἀλλὰ τούτων γε οἱ μάλιστα ἐπιφανεῖς οἵδε ἦσαν. πάντων οὖν κατὰ 2
καιροὺς διαφόρως καὶ πολλάκις ἐπὶ ταὐτὸν συνιόντων, λόγοι καὶ ζητήσεις καθ' ἑκάστην ἀνεκινοῦντο σύνοδον, τῶν μὲν ἀμφὶ τὸν Σαμοσατέα τὰ τῆς ἑτεροδοξίας ἐπικρύπτειν ἔτι καὶ παρακαλύπτεσθαι πειρωμένων, τῶν δὲ ἀπογυμνοῦν καὶ εἰς φανερὸν ἄγειν τὴν αἵρεσιν καὶ τὴν εἰς Χριστὸν βλασφημίαν αὐτοῦ διὰ σπουδῆς ποιουμένων.

Ἐν τούτῳ δὲ Διονύσιος τελευτᾷ κατὰ τὸ 3
δωδέκατον τῆς Γαλλιηνοῦ βασιλείας, προστὰς τῆς

an ordinary man, Dionysius of Alexandria was invited to attend the synod, but, pleading as his excuse both old age and bodily weakness, he postponed his coming, and furnished by letter the opinion that he held on the subject in question. But the rest of the pastors of the churches, from various quarters, all hasted to Antioch, and assembled as against a spoiler of the flock of Christ.

XXVIII. Among those who were the most distinguished were Firmilian, bishop of Caesarea in Cappadocia; the brothers Gregory and Athenodore, pastors of the communities in Pontus; and in addition to these, Helenus, [bishop] of the community at Tarsus, and Nicomas, of the community at Iconium; nor must we omit Hymenaeus, of the church at Jerusalem, and Theotecnus, of this neighbouring church of Caesarea; and moreover there was Maximus also, who was ruling with distinction the brethren at Bostra; and one would not be at a loss to reckon up countless others, together with presbyters and deacons, who were gathered together in the abovementioned city for the same cause. But these were the most famous among them. When all, then, were coming together frequently on different occasions, arguments and questions were mooted at each meeting, the Samosatene and his party attempting to keep still concealed and to cloak what was heterodox, while the others were earnestly engaged in laying bare and bringing into the open his heresy and blasphemy against Christ.

At that time Dionysius died in the twelfth year of the reign of Gallienus,[1] having presided in the epis-

[1] A.D. 264-265.

κατ' Ἀλεξάνδρειαν ἐπισκοπῆς ἔτεσιν ἑπτακαίδεκα, διαδέχεται δ' αὐτὸν Μάξιμος.

Γαλλιηνοῦ δ' ἐφ' ὅλοις ἐνιαυτοῖς πεντεκαίδεκα 4
τὴν ἀρχὴν κεκρατηκότος, Κλαύδιος κατέστη διάδοχος.

Δεύτερον οὗτος διελθὼν ἔτος Αὐρηλιανῷ μεταδίδωσι τὴν ἡγεμονίαν· XXIX. καθ' ὃν τελευταίας 1
συγκροτηθείσης πλείστων ὅσων ἐπισκόπων συνόδου, φωραθεὶς καὶ πρὸς ἁπάντων ἤδη σαφῶς καταγνωσθεὶς ἑτεροδοξίαν ὁ τῆς κατὰ Ἀντιόχειαν αἱρέσεως ἀρχηγὸς τῆς ὑπὸ τὸν οὐρανὸν καθολικῆς ἐκκλησίας ἀποκηρύττεται. μάλιστα δ' αὐτὸν εὐ- 2
θύνας ἐπικρυπτόμενον διήλεγξεν Μαλχίων, ἀνὴρ τά τε ἄλλα λόγιος καὶ σοφιστοῦ τῶν ἐπ' Ἀντιοχείας Ἑλληνικῶν παιδευτηρίων διατριβῆς προεστώς, οὐ μὴν ἀλλὰ καὶ δι' ὑπερβάλλουσαν τῆς εἰς Χριστὸν πίστεως γνησιότητα πρεσβυτερίου τῆς αὐτόθι παροικίας ἠξιωμένος· οὗτός γέ τοι ἐπισημειουμένων ταχυγράφων ζήτησιν πρὸς αὐτὸν ἐνστησάμενος, ἣν καὶ εἰς δεῦρο φερομένην ἴσμεν, μόνος ἴσχυσεν τῶν ἄλλων κρυψίνουν ὄντα καὶ ἀπατηλὸν φωρᾶσαι τὸν ἄνθρωπον.

XXX. Μίαν δὴ οὖν ἐκ κοινῆς γνώμης οἱ ἐπὶ 1
ταὐτὸν συγκεκροτημένοι ποιμένες διαχαράξαντες ἐπιστολὴν εἰς πρόσωπον τοῦ τε Ῥωμαίων ἐπισκόπου Διονυσίου καὶ Μαξίμου τοῦ κατ' Ἀλεξάνδρειαν ἐπὶ πάσας διαπέμπονται τὰς ἐπαρχίας, τὴν αὐτῶν τε σπουδὴν τοῖς πᾶσιν φανερὰν καθιστάντες καὶ τοῦ Παύλου τὴν διάστροφον ἑτεροδοξίαν, ἐλέγχους τε καὶ ἐρωτήσεις ἃς πρὸς αὐτὸν ἀνακεκινήκασιν, καὶ ἔτι τὸν πάντα βίον τε καὶ τρόπον τοῦ ἀνδρὸς διηγούμενοι· ἐξ ὧν μνήμης ἕνεκεν

copate at Alexandria for seventeen years. He was succeeded by Maximus.

Gallienus having held the principate for fifteen entire years, Claudius was established as his successor.[1]

When he had completed his second year, he gave over the government to Aurelian. XXIX. In Aurelian's day a final synod of an exceedingly large number of bishops was assembled, and the leader of the heresy at Antioch, being unmasked and now clearly condemned of heterodoxy by all, was excommunicated from the Catholic Church under heaven. The person foremost in calling him to account and in utterly refuting his attempts at concealment was Malchion, a learned man, who also was head of a school of rhetoric, one of the Greek educational establishments at Antioch; and, moreover, for the surpassing sincerity of his faith in Christ he had been deemed worthy of the presbyterate of that community. In fact, this man had stenographers to take notes as he held a disputation with Paul, which we know to be extant even to this day; and he, alone of them all, was able to unmask that crafty and deceitful person.

XXX. The pastors, then, who had been assembled together, indited unanimously a single letter personally to Dionysius, bishop of Rome, and Maximus, of Alexandria, and sent it throughout all the provinces. In it they make manifest to all their zeal, and also the perverse heterodoxy of Paul, as well as the arguments and questions that they addressed to him; and moreover they describe the man's whole life and conduct. From which, by way of memorial, it may

[1] A.D. 270.

καλῶς ἂν ἔχοι ταύτας αὐτῶν ἐπὶ τοῦ παρόντος διελθεῖν τὰς φωνάς·

"Διονυσίῳ καὶ Μαξίμῳ καὶ τοῖς κατὰ τὴν 2
οἰκουμένην πᾶσιν συλλειτουργοῖς ἡμῶν ἐπισκόποις καὶ πρεσβυτέροις καὶ διακόνοις καὶ πάσῃ τῇ ὑπὸ τὸν οὐρανὸν καθολικῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ Ἕλενος καὶ Ὑμέναιος καὶ Θεόφιλος καὶ Θεότεκνος καὶ Μάξιμος Πρόκλος Νικομᾶς καὶ Αἰλιανὸς καὶ Παῦλος καὶ Βωλανὸς καὶ Πρωτογένης καὶ Ἱέραξ καὶ Εὐτύχιος καὶ Θεόδωρος καὶ Μαλχίων καὶ Λούκιος καὶ οἱ λοιποὶ πάντες οἱ σὺν ἡμῖν παροικοῦντες τὰς ἐγγὺς πόλεις καὶ ἔθνη ἐπίσκοποι καὶ πρεσβύτεροι καὶ διάκονοι καὶ αἱ ἐκκλησίαι τοῦ θεοῦ ἀγαπητοῖς ἀδελφοῖς ἐν κυρίῳ χαίρειν."

Τούτοις μετὰ βραχέα ἐπιλέγουσιν ταῦτα· "ἐπ- 3
εστέλλομεν δὲ ἅμα καὶ παρεκαλοῦμεν πολλοὺς καὶ τῶν μακρὰν ἐπισκόπων ἐπὶ τὴν θεραπείαν τῆς θανατηφόρου διδασκαλίας, ὥσπερ καὶ Διονύσιον τὸν ἐπὶ τῆς Ἀλεξανδρείας καὶ Φιρμιλιανὸν τὸν ἀπὸ τῆς Καππαδοκίας, τοὺς μακαρίτας· ὧν ὁ μὲν καὶ ἐπέστειλεν εἰς τὴν Ἀντιόχειαν, τὸν ἡγεμόνα τῆς πλάνης οὐδὲ προσρήσεως ἀξιώσας οὐδὲ πρὸς πρόσωπον γράψας αὐτῷ, ἀλλὰ τῇ παροικίᾳ πάσῃ, ἧς καὶ τὸ ἀντίγραφον ὑπετάξαμεν· ὁ δὲ Φιρ- 4
μιλιανός, καὶ δὶς ἀφικόμενος, κατέγνω μὲν τῶν ὑπ' ἐκείνου καινοτομουμένων, ὡς ἴσμεν καὶ μαρτυροῦμεν οἱ παραγενόμενοι καὶ ἄλλοι πολλοὶ συνίσασιν, ἐπαγγειλαμένου δὲ μεταθήσεσθαι, πιστεύσας καὶ ἐλπίσας ἄνευ τινὸς περὶ τὸν λόγον λοιδορίας τὸ πρᾶγμα εἰς δέον καταστήσεσθαι, ἀνεβάλετο, παρακρουσθεὶς ὑπὸ τοῦ καὶ τὸν θεὸν
Jude 3. 4 τὸν ἑαυτοῦ καὶ κύριον ἀρνουμένου καὶ τὴν πίστιν,

be well on the present occasion to give an account of these their utterances.

" To Dionysius and Maximus and to all our fellow-ministers throughout the world, bishops, presbyters and deacons, and to the whole Catholic Church under heaven, Helenus and Hymenaeus and Theophilus and Theotecnus and Maximus, Proclus, Nicomas and Aelianus and Paul and Bolanus and Protogenes and Hierax and Eutychius and Theodore and Malchion and Lucius and all the others who, with us, sojourn in the adjacent cities and provinces, bishops and presbyters and deacons and the churches of God, as to brethren beloved in the Lord send greeting."

A little further on they proceed thus : " And we wrote [1] inviting many even of the bishops at a distance to come and heal this deadly doctrine, as for example, both Dionysius at Alexandria and Firmilian of Cappadocia, those blessed men. The former of these wrote to Antioch, [not to the bishop,] neither deeming the leader of the heresy worthy of being addressed nor writing to him personally, but to the whole community ; of which letter also we subjoin a copy. Firmilian, on the other hand, even came twice, and condemned Paul's new-fangled ideas, as we who were present know and bear witness, and many others know as well ; but, on his promising to change, he adjourned the [proceedings], hoping and believing that the matter would be fittingly concluded without any reproach to the Word ; for he was deceived by him who both denied his God and Lord, and also did not

[1] The Greek (imperf.) implies a continued correspondence.

ἦν καὶ αὐτὸς πρότερον εἶχεν, μὴ φυλάξαντος. ἔμελλεν δὲ καὶ νῦν ὁ Φιρμιλιανὸς εἰς τὴν Ἀντιόχειαν διαβήσεσθαι καὶ μέχρι γε Ταρσῶν ἦκεν, ἄτε τῆς ἀρνησιθέου κακίας αὐτοῦ πεῖραν εἰληφώς· ἀλλὰ γὰρ μεταξύ, συνεληλυθότων ἡμῶν καὶ καλούντων καὶ ἀναμενόντων, ἄχρι ἂν ἔλθῃ, τέλος ἔσχεν τοῦ βίου."

Μεθ' ἕτερα δ' αὖθις τὸν βίον τοῦ αὐτοῦ οἵας ἐτύγχανεν ἀγωγῆς, διαγράφουσιν ἐν τούτοις· "ὅπου δὲ ἀποστὰς τοῦ κανόνος, ἐπὶ κίβδηλα καὶ
1 Cor. 5, 12 νόθα διδάγματα μετελήλυθεν, οὐδὲν δεῖ τοῦ ἔξω ὄντος τὰς πράξεις κρίνειν, οὐδ' ὅτι πρότερον πένης ὢν καὶ πτωχὸς καὶ μήτε παρὰ πατέρων παραλαβὼν μηδεμίαν εὐπορίαν μήτε ἐκ τέχνης ἤ τινος ἐπιτηδεύματος κτησάμενος, νῦν εἰς ὑπερβάλλοντα πλοῦτον ἐλήλακεν ἐξ ἀνομιῶν καὶ ἱεροσυλιῶν καὶ ὧν αἰτεῖ καὶ σείει τοὺς ἀδελφούς, καταβραβεύων τοὺς ἀδικουμένους καὶ ὑπισχνούμενος βοηθήσειν μισθοῦ, ψευδόμενος δὲ καὶ τούτους καὶ μάτην καρπούμενος τὴν τῶν ἐν πράγμασιν ὄντων ἑτοιμότητα πρὸς τὸ διδόναι ὑπὲρ ἀπαλλαγῆς τῶν
1 Tim. 6, 5 ἐνοχλούντων, πορισμὸν ἡγούμενος τὴν θεοσέβειαν·
Rom. 12, 16; 1 Tim. 6, 17 οὔτε ὡς ὑψηλὰ φρονεῖ καὶ ὑπερῆρται, κοσμικὰ ἀξιώματα ὑποδυόμενος καὶ δουκηνάριος μᾶλλον ἢ ἐπίσκοπος θέλων καλεῖσθαι καὶ σοβῶν κατὰ τὰς ἀγορὰς καὶ ἐπιστολὰς ἀναγινώσκων καὶ ὑπαγορεύων ἅμα βαδίζων δημοσίᾳ καὶ δορυφορούμενος, τῶν μὲν προπορευομένων, τῶν δ' ἐφεπομένων, πολλῶν τὸν ἀριθμόν, ὡς καὶ τὴν πίστιν φθονεῖσθαι

[1] A procurator of high rank, so called because he had a salary of 200 sestertia.

preserve the faith that he himself formerly held. And Firmilian was now again on his way to cross over to Antioch, and had got as far as Tarsus, for he had had experience of the villainy of this denier of God. But while we had come together and were actually calling him and awaiting his arrival, in the midst of it all he reached life's end."

Again, after other remarks they describe the manner of his life, in the following terms : " But whereas he departed from the canon [of truth], and has turned aside to spurious and bastard doctrines, we are under no obligation to judge the actions of him that is without, not even because, though he was formerly poor and penniless, neither having received a livelihood from his fathers nor having got it from a trade or any occupation, he has now come to possess abundant wealth, as a result of lawless deeds and sacrilegious plunderings and extortions exacted from the brethren by threats ; for he deprives the injured of their rights, and promises to help them for money, yet breaks his word with these also, and with a light heart makes his harvest out of the readiness of persons engaged in lawsuits to make an offer, for the sake of being rid of those that trouble them ; seeing that he considers that godliness is a way of gain. Neither [do we judge him] because he sets his mind on high things and is lifted up, clothing himself with wordly honours and wishing to be called *ducenarius*[1] rather than bishop, and struts in the market-places,[2] reading and dictating letters as he walks in public, and attended by a bodyguard, some preceding, some following, and that too in numbers : with the result

[2] *Cf.* Demosthenes, Κατὰ Μειδίου, 158: *τρεῖς ἀκολούθους ἢ τέτταρας αὐτὸς ἔχων διὰ τῆς ἀγορᾶς σοβεῖ.*

καὶ μισεῖσθαι διὰ τὸν ὄγκον αὐτοῦ καὶ τὴν ὑπερ-
ηφανίαν τῆς καρδίας· οὔτε τὴν ἐν ταῖς ἐκκλησια- 9
στικαῖς συνόδοις τερατείαν, ἣν μηχανᾶται, δοξο-
κοπῶν καὶ φαντασιοκοπῶν καὶ τὰς τῶν ἀκεραιο-
τέρων ψυχὰς τοῖς τοιούτοις ἐκπλήττων, βῆμα μὲν
καὶ θρόνον ὑψηλὸν ἑαυτῷ κατασκευασάμενος, οὐχ
ὡς Χριστοῦ μαθητής, σήκρητόν τε, ὥσπερ οἱ τοῦ
κόσμου ἄρχοντες, ἔχων τε καὶ ὀνομάζων, παίων
τε τῇ χειρὶ τὸν μηρὸν καὶ τὸ βῆμα ἀράττων τοῖς
ποσὶν καὶ τοῖς μὴ ἐπαινοῦσιν μηδὲ ὥσπερ ἐν τοῖς
θεάτροις κατασείουσιν ταῖς ὀθόναις μηδ' ἐκβοῶσίν
τε καὶ ἀναπηδῶσιν κατὰ τὰ αὐτὰ τοῖς ἀμφ' αὐτὸν
στασιώταις, ἀνδράσιν τε καὶ γυναίοις, ἀκόσμως
οὕτως ἀκροωμένοις, τοῖς δ' οὖν ὡς ἐν οἴκῳ θεοῦ
σεμνοπρεπῶς καὶ εὐτάκτως ἀκούουσιν ἐπιτιμῶν
καὶ ἐνυβρίζων καὶ εἰς τοὺς ἀπελθόντας ἐκ τοῦ βίου
τούτου παροινῶν ἐξηγητὰς τοῦ λόγου φορτικῶς
ἐν τῷ κοινῷ καὶ μεγαλορημονῶν περὶ ἑαυτοῦ,
καθάπερ οὐκ ἐπίσκοπος ἀλλὰ σοφιστὴς καὶ γόης·
ψαλμοὺς δὲ τοὺς μὲν εἰς τὸν κύριον ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦν 1
Χριστὸν παύσας ὡς δὴ νεωτέρους καὶ νεωτέρων
ἀνδρῶν συγγράμματα, εἰς ἑαυτὸν δὲ ἐν μέσῃ τῇ
ἐκκλησίᾳ τῇ μεγάλῃ τοῦ πάσχα ἡμέρᾳ ψαλμῳδεῖν
γυναῖκας παρασκευάζων, ὧν καὶ ἀκούσας ἄν τις
φρίξειεν· οἷα καὶ τοὺς θωπεύοντας αὐτὸν ἐπισκόπους
τῶν ὁμόρων ἀγρῶν τε καὶ πόλεων καὶ πρεσβυτέ-
ρους ἐν ταῖς πρὸς τὸν λαὸν ὁμιλίαις καθίσιν δια-
λέγεσθαι· τὸν μὲν γὰρ υἱὸν τοῦ θεοῦ οὐ βούλεται 1
συνομολογεῖν ἐξ οὐρανοῦ κατεληλυθέναι (ἵνα τι

that the faith is ill thought of and hated because of his conceit and the overweening pride of his heart. Nor [do we judge] the quackery in church assemblies that he devises, courting popularity and posing for appearance' sake, and thus astonishing the minds of the simpler folk, with the tribunal and lofty throne that he prepared for himself, not befitting a disciple of Christ, and the *secretum*[1] which, in imitation of the rulers of the world, he has and so styles. Also, he smites his hand on his thigh and stamps the tribunal with his feet ; and those who do not applaud or wave their handkerchiefs, as in a theatre, or shout out and jump up in the same way as do the men and wretched women who are his partizans and hearken in this disorderly fashion, but who listen, as in God's house, with orderly and becoming reverence,—these he rebukes and insults. And towards the interpreters of the Word who have departed this life he behaves in an insolent and ill-bred fashion in the common assembly, and brags about himself as though he were not a bishop but a sophist and charlatan. And as to psalms, he put a stop to those addressed to our Lord Jesus Christ, on the ground that they are modern and the compositions of modern men, but he trains women to sing hymns to himself in the middle of the church on the great day of the Pascha, which would make one shudder to hear. Such also is the kind of discourse that he permits the bishops of the neighbouring country and towns, who fawn upon him, and the presbyters as well, to deliver in their sermons to the people. For he is not willing to acknowledge with us that the Son of God has come down from heaven

[1] The *secretum* was the private chamber of a magistrate or judge.

προλαβόντες τῶν μελλόντων γραφήσεσθαι θῶμεν, καὶ τοῦτο οὐ λόγῳ ψιλῷ ῥηθήσεται, ἀλλ' ἐξ ὧν ἐπέμψαμεν ὑπομνημάτων δείκνυται πολλαχόθεν, οὐχ ἥκιστα δὲ ὅπου λέγει Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν κάτωθεν), οἱ δὲ εἰς αὐτὸν ψάλλοντες καὶ ἐγκωμιάζοντες ἐν τῷ λαῷ ἄγγελον τὸν ἀσεβῆ διδάσκαλον ἑαυτῶν ἐξ οὐρανοῦ κατεληλυθέναι λέγουσιν, καὶ ταῦτα οὐ κωλύει, ἀλλὰ καὶ λεγομένοις πάρεστιν ὁ ὑπερήφανος· τὰς δὲ συνεισάκτους αὐτοῦ γυναῖκας, 12
ὡς Ἀντιοχεῖς ὀνομάζουσιν, καὶ τῶν περὶ αὐτὸν πρεσβυτέρων καὶ διακόνων, οἷς καὶ τοῦτο καὶ τὰ ἄλλα ἁμαρτήματα ἀνίατα ὄντα συγκρύπτει, συνειδὼς καὶ ἐλέγξας, ὅπως αὐτοὺς ὑπόχρεως ἔχῃ, περὶ ὧν λόγοις καὶ ἔργοις ἀδικεῖ, μὴ τολμῶντας κατηγορεῖν τῷ καθ' ἑαυτοὺς φόβῳ, ἀλλὰ καὶ πλουσίους ἀπέφηνεν, ἐφ' ᾧ πρὸς τῶν τὰ τοιαῦτα ζηλούντων φιλεῖται καὶ θαυμάζεται—τί ἂν ταῦτα γράφοιμεν; ἐπιστάμεθα δέ, ἀγαπητοί, ὅτι τὸν 13
ἐπίσκοπον καὶ τὸ ἱερατεῖον ἅπαν παράδειγμα
Tit. 2, 7 εἶναι δεῖ τῷ πλήθει πάντων καλῶν ἔργων, καὶ οὐδὲ ἐκεῖνο ἀγνοοῦμεν ὅσοι ὑπὸ τοῦ συνεισάγειν ἑαυτοῖς γυναῖκας ἐξέπεσον, οἳ δ' ὑπωπτεύθησαν, ὥστ' εἴ καὶ δοίη τις αὐτῷ τὸ μηδὲν ἀσελγὲς ποιεῖν, ἀλλά τήν γε ὑπόνοιαν τὴν ἐκ τοῦ τοιούτου πράγματος φυομένην ἐχρῆν εὐλαβηθῆναι, μή τινα σκανδαλίσῃ, τοὺς δὲ καὶ μιμεῖσθαι προτρέψῃ. πῶς γὰρ ἂν ἐπιπλήξειεν ἢ νουθετήσειεν ἕτερον 14
μὴ συγκαταβαίνειν ἐπὶ πλέον εἰς ταὐτὸν γυναικί,
Cf. Eccles. 9. 8, 9 μὴ ὀλίσθῃ, φυλαττόμενον, ὡς γέγραπται, ὅστις

[1] Paul held that Jesus Christ was a mere man, although anointed in a special degree with the Holy Ghost. Hence He had no divine origin from above: He was "from below."

(to anticipate something of what we are about to write ; and this will not be merely asserted, but is proved from many passages of the notes that we send, and not least where he says that Jesus Christ is from below [1]) ; while they who sing psalms to him and utter his praises in the congregation say that their impious teacher has come down an angel from heaven. And he does not prevent this, but is even present when such things are said, arrogant fellow that he is. And as to the *subintroductae*,[2] as the Antiochenes call them, his own and those of the presbyters and deacons in his company, with whom he joins in concealing both this and the other incurable sins (though he knows of, and has convicted, them), that he may have them under obligation to him, and that they may not dare, through fear for themselves, to accuse him of his misdemeanours in word and deed ; yea, he has even made them rich, for which cause he is the beloved and admired of those who affect such conduct—why should we write of these things ? But we know, beloved, that the bishop and the priesthood as a whole should be a pattern to the people of all good works ; and we are not ignorant of this : how many have fallen through procuring *subintroductae* for themselves, while others are under suspicion ; so that even if it be granted that he does nothing licentious, yet he ought at least to guard against the suspicion that arises from such a practice, lest he cause someone to stumble, and induce others also to imitate him. For how could he rebuke another, or counsel him not to consort any further with a woman and so guard against a slip, as it is written, seeing that he has

[2] *i.e.* spiritual "sisters."

μίαν μὲν ἀπέστησεν ἤδη, δύο δὲ ἀκμαζούσας καὶ εὐπρεπεῖς τὴν ὄψιν ἔχει μεθ' ἑαυτοῦ, κἂν ἀπίῃ που, συμπεριφέρει, καὶ ταῦτα τρυφῶν καὶ ὑπερεμπιμπλάμενος; ὧν ἕνεκα στενάζουσι μὲν καὶ ὀδύρονται πάντες καθ' ἑαυτούς, οὕτω δὲ τὴν τυραννίδα καὶ δυναστείαν αὐτοῦ πεφόβηνται, ὥστε κατηγορεῖν μὴ τολμᾶν. ἀλλὰ ταῦτα μέν, ὡς προειρήκαμεν, εὔθυνεν ἄν τις ἄνδρα τὸ γοῦν φρόνημα καθολικὸν ἔχοντα καὶ συγκαταριθμούμενον ἡμῖν, τὸν δ' ἐξορχησάμενον τὸ μυστήριον καὶ ἐμπομπεύσαντα τῇ μιαρᾷ αἱρέσει τῇ Ἀρτεμᾶ (τί γὰρ οὐ χρὴ μόλις τὸν πατέρα αὐτοῦ δηλῶσαι;) οὐδὲν δεῖν ἡγούμεθα τούτων τοὺς λογισμοὺς ἀπαιτεῖν."

Cf. 1 Tim. 3, 16

Εἶτ' ἐπὶ τέλει τῆς ἐπιστολῆς ταῦτ' ἐπιλέγουσιν· "ἠναγκάσθημεν οὖν ἀντιτασσόμενον αὐτὸν τῷ θεῷ καὶ μὴ εἴκοντα ἐκκηρύξαντες, ἕτερον ἀντ' αὐτοῦ τῇ καθολικῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ καταστῆσαι ἐπίσκοπον, θεοῦ προνοίᾳ ὡς πεπείσμεθα, τὸν τοῦ μακαρίου Δημητριανοῦ καὶ ἐπιφανῶς προστάντος πρὸ τούτου τῆς αὐτῆς παροικίας υἱὸν Δόμνον, ἅπασιν τοῖς πρέπουσιν ἐπισκόπῳ καλοῖς κεκοσμημένον, ἐδηλώσαμέν τε ὑμῖν, ὅπως τούτῳ γράφητε καὶ παρὰ τούτου τὰ κοινωνικὰ δέχησθε γράμματα· τῷ δὲ Ἀρτεμᾷ οὗτος ἐπιστελλέτω καὶ οἱ τὰ Ἀρτεμᾶ φρονοῦντες τούτῳ κοινωνείτωσαν."

Τοῦ δὴ οὖν Παύλου σὺν καὶ τῇ τῆς πίστεως ὀρθοδοξίᾳ τῆς ἐπισκοπῆς ἀποπεπτωκότος, Δόμνος, ὡς εἴρηται, τὴν λειτουργίαν τῆς κατὰ Ἀντιόχειαν ἐκκλησίας διεδέξατο· ἀλλὰ γὰρ μηδαμῶς ἐκστῆναι τοῦ Παύλου τοῦ τῆς ἐκκλησίας οἴκου θέλοντος,

[1] § 6. [2] *Cf.* v. 28. 1, where he is called Artemon.

sent one away already, and has two in his company in the flower of youth and beauty, and even if he go away anywhere, he brings them around with him, living all the while in luxury and surfeiting ? Wherefore, though all groan and lament in private, so fearful have they become of his tyranny and power, that they dare not accuse him. Yet, as we have said before,[1] one might call to account for these matters a man who has at any rate a catholic mind and is numbered along with us ; but as for one who burlesqued the mystery, and strutted about in the abominable heresy of Artemas[2] (for why should we not bring ourselves to declare his father ?)—from such a one we think that we are under no obligation to demand a reckoning for these things."

Then at the close of the letter they add as follows : " We were compelled therefore, as he opposed himself to God and refused to yield, to excommunicate him, and appoint another bishop in his stead for the Catholic Church [choosing] by the providence of God, as we are persuaded, Domnus the son of the blessed Demetrian, who formerly presided with distinction over the same community ; he is adorned with all the noble qualities suitable for a bishop, and we notify [this his appointment] unto you that ye may write to him, and from him receive letters of communion. But let this fellow write to Artemas, and let those who side with Artemas hold communion with him."

When Paul, then, had fallen from the episcopate as well as from his orthodoxy in the faith, Domnus, as has been said, succeeded to the ministry of the church at Antioch. But as Paul refused on any account to give up possession of the church-building,

βασιλεὺς ἐντευχθεὶς Αὐρηλιανὸς αἰσιώτατα περὶ τοῦ πρακτέου διείληφεν, τούτοις νεῖμαι προστάττων τὸν οἶκον, οἷς ἂν οἱ κατὰ τὴν Ἰταλίαν καὶ τὴν Ῥωμαίων πόλιν ἐπίσκοποι τοῦ δόγματος[1] ἐπιστέλλοιεν. οὕτω δῆτα ὁ προδηλωθεὶς ἀνὴρ μετὰ τῆς ἐσχάτης αἰσχύνης ὑπὸ τῆς κοσμικῆς ἀρχῆς ἐξελαύνεται τῆς ἐκκλησίας.

Τοιοῦτος μέν γέ τις ἦν τὸ τηνικάδε περὶ ἡμᾶς ὁ Αὐρηλιανός, προϊούσης δ' αὐτῷ τῆς ἀρχῆς ἀλλοΐόν τι περὶ ἡμῶν φρονήσας, ἤδη τισὶν βουλαῖς, ὡς ἂν διωγμὸν καθ' ἡμῶν ἐγείρειεν, ἀνεκινεῖτο, πολύς τε ἦν ὁ παρὰ πᾶσιν περὶ τούτου λόγος· μέλλοντα δὲ ἤδη καὶ σχεδὸν εἰπεῖν τοῖς καθ' ἡμῶν γράμμασιν ὑποσημειούμενον θεία μέτεισιν δίκη, μόνον οὐχὶ ἐξ ἀγκώνων τῆς ἐγχειρήσεως αὐτὸν ἀποδεσμοῦσα λαμπρῶς τε τοῖς πᾶσιν συνορᾶν παριστῶσα ὡς οὔποτε γένοιτ' ἂν ῥᾳστώνη τοῖς τοῦ βίου ἄρχουσιν κατὰ τῶν τοῦ Χριστοῦ ἐκκλησιῶν, μὴ οὐχὶ τῆς ὑπερμάχου χειρὸς θείᾳ καὶ οὐρανίῳ κρίσει παιδείας ἕνεκα καὶ ἐπιστροφῆς, καθ' οὓς ἂν αὐτὴ δοκιμάζοι καιρούς, τοῦτ' ἐπιτελεῖσθαι συγχωρούσης. ἔτεσι γοῦν ἓξ κρατήσαντα τὸν Αὐρηλιανὸν διαδέχεται Πρόβος, καὶ τοῦτον δέ που τοῖς ἴσοις ἐπικατασχόντα Κᾶρος ἅμα παισὶν Καρίνῳ καὶ Νουμεριανῷ, πάλιν τ' αὖ καὶ τούτων οὐδ' ὅλοις τρισὶν ἐνιαυτοῖς διαγενομένων, μέτεισιν τὰ τῆς ἡγεμονίας Διοκλητιανὸν καὶ τοὺς μετ' αὐτὸν εἰσποιηθέντας, ἐφ' ὧν ὁ καθ' ἡμᾶς

[1] τοῦ δόγματος, *i.e.* the Christian religion: probably a translation of the actual words used by Aurelian.

the emperor Aurelian, on being petitioned, gave an extremely just decision regarding the matter, ordering the assignment of the building to those with whom the bishops of the doctrine [1] in Italy and Rome should communicate in writing. Thus, then, was the aforesaid man driven with the utmost indignity from the church by the ruler of this world.

Such indeed was the disposition of Aurelian towards us at that time. But as his reign advanced, he changed his mind with regard to us, and was now being moved by certain counsels to stir up persecution against us; and there was great talk about this on all sides. But as he was just on the point of so doing and was putting, one might almost say, his signature to the decrees against us, the divine Justice visited him, and pinioned his arms, so to speak, to prevent his undertaking. Thus it was clearly shown for all to see that the rulers of this world would never find it easy to proceed against the churches of Christ, unless the hand which champions us were to permit this to be done, as a divine and heavenly judgement to chasten and turn us, at whatsoever times it should approve. At all events, when Aurelian had reigned for six years,[2] he was succeeded by Probus. He held the government for something like the same number of years,[3] and Carus with his sons Carinus and Numerianus succeeded him; and when they in their turn had remained in office for not three entire years, the government devolved on Diocletian [4] and on those who were brought in after him; and under them was

[2] A.D. 270-275.

[3] A.D. 276-282, two emperors, Tacitus and Florianus, coming between Aurelian and Probus with short reigns.

[4] A.D. 284.

συντελεῖται διωγμὸς καὶ ἡ κατ' αὐτὸν τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν καθαίρεσις.

Ἀλλὰ γὰρ μικρῷ τούτου πρότερον τὸν ἐπὶ Ῥώμης ἐπίσκοπον Διονύσιον ἔτεσιν ἐννέα διελθόντα τὴν λειτουργίαν διαδέχεται Φῆλιξ.

XXXI. Ἐν τούτῳ καὶ ὁ μανεὶς τὰς φρένας ἐπώνυμός τε τῆς δαιμονώσης αἱρέσεως τὴν τοῦ λογισμοῦ παρατροπὴν καθωπλίζετο, τοῦ δαίμονος, αὐτοῦ δὴ τοῦ θεομάχου σατανᾶ, ἐπὶ λύμῃ πολλῶν τὸν ἄνδρα προβεβλημένου. βάρβαρος δῆτα τὸν βίον αὐτῷ λόγῳ καὶ τρόπῳ τήν τε φύσιν δαιμονικός τις ὢν καὶ μανιώδης, ἀκόλουθα τούτοις ἐγχειρῶν, Χριστὸν αὐτὸν μορφάζεσθαι ἐπειρᾶτο, τοτὲ μὲν
John 14, 16 f. τὸν παράκλητον καὶ αὐτὸ τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον αὐτὸς ἑαυτὸν ἀνακηρύττων καὶ τυφούμενός γε
Matt. 10, 1, etc. ἐπὶ τῇ μανίᾳ, τοτὲ δέ, οἷα Χριστός, μαθητὰς δώδεκα κοινωνοὺς τῆς καινοτομίας αἱρούμενος· δόγματά γε μὴν ψευδῆ καὶ ἄθεα ἐκ μυρίων τῶν πρόπαλαι ἀπεσβηκότων ἀθέων αἱρέσεων συμπεφορημένα καττύσας, ἐκ τῆς Περσῶν ἐπὶ τὴν καθ' ἡμᾶς οἰκουμένην ὥσπερ τινὰ θανατηφόρον ἰὸν ἐξωμόρξατο, ἀφ' οὗ δὴ τὸ Μανιχαίων δυσσεβὲς ὄνομα τοῖς πολλοῖς εἰς ἔτι νῦν ἐπιπολάζει. τοιαύτη
1 Tim. 6, 20 μὲν οὖν ἡ καὶ τῇδε τῆς ψευδωνύμου γνώσεως ὑπόθεσις, κατὰ τοὺς δεδηλωμένους ὑποφυείσης χρόνους.

XXXII. Καθ' οὓς Φήλικα τῆς Ῥωμαίων προστάντα ἐκκλησίας ἔτεσιν πέντε Εὐτυχιανὸς διαδέχεται· οὐδ' ὅλοις δὲ μησὶν οὗτος δέκα διαγενόμενος, Γαΐῳ τῷ καθ' ἡμᾶς καταλείπει τὸν κλῆρον· καὶ τούτου δὲ ἀμφὶ τὰ πεντεκαίδεκα ἔτη προ-

[1] The similarity between Μάνης (Mani) and μανεὶς, although

accomplished the persecution of our day and the destruction of the churches therein.

But a short time before this, Felix succeeded in the ministry Dionysius, bishop of Rome, who had completed nine years.

XXXI. At that time also the madman,[1] named after his devil-possessed heresy, was taking as his armour mental delusion ; for the devil, that is Satan himself, the adversary of God, had put the man forward for the destruction of many. His very speech and manners proclaimed him a barbarian in mode of life, and, being by nature devilish and insane, he suited his endeavours thereto and attempted to pose as Christ : at one time giving out that he was the Paraclete and the Holy Spirit Himself, conceited fool that he was, as well as mad ; at another time choosing, as Christ did, twelve disciples as associates in his new-fangled system. In short, he stitched together false and godless doctrines that he had collected from the countless, long-extinct, godless heresies, and infected our empire with, as it were, a deadly poison that came from the land of the Persians; and from him the profane name of Manichaean is still commonly on men's lips to this day. Such, then, was the foundation on which rested this knowledge which is falsely so called, which sprang up at the time we have mentioned.

XXXII. At that time Felix, who had presided over the church of the Romans for five years, was succeeded by Eutychianus. This person did not survive for even ten entire months ; he left the office to Gaius our contemporary. And when he had presided

the words have no etymological relation to each other, is sufficient to give Eusebius occasion for punning.

στάντος, Μαρκελλῖνος κατέστη διάδοχος, ὃν καὶ αὐτὸν ὁ διωγμὸς κατείληφεν.

Κατὰ τούσδε τῆς Ἀντιοχέων ἐπισκοπῆς μετὰ Δόμνον ἠγήσατο Τίμαιος, ὃν ὁ καθ' ἡμᾶς διεδέξατο Κύριλλος· καθ' ὃν Δωρόθεον, πρεσβείου τοῦ κατὰ Ἀντιόχειαν ἠξιωμένον, λόγιον ἄνδρα ἔγνωμεν. φιλόκαλος δ' οὗτος περὶ τὰ θεῖα γεγονώς, καὶ τῆς Ἑβραίων ἐπεμελήθη γλώττης, ὡς καὶ αὐταῖς ταῖς Ἑβραϊκαῖς γραφαῖς ἐπιστημόνως ἐντυγχάνειν. ἦν δ' οὗτος τῶν μάλιστα ἐλευθερίων προπαιδείας τε τῆς καθ' Ἕλληνας οὐκ ἄμοιρος, τὴν φύσιν δὲ ἄλλως εὐνοῦχος, οὕτω πεφυκὼς ἐξ αὐτῆς γενέσεως, ὡς καὶ βασιλέα διὰ τοῦτο, οἷόν τι παράδοξον, αὐτὸν οἰκειώσασθαι καὶ τιμῆσαί γε ἐπιτροπῇ τῆς κατὰ Τύρον ἁλουργοῦ βαφῆς. τούτου μετρίως τὰς γραφὰς ἐπὶ τῆς ἐκκλησίας διηγουμένου κατηκούσαμεν.

Μετὰ δὲ Κύριλλον Τύραννος τῆς Ἀντιοχέων παροικίας τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν διεδέξατο, καθ' ὃν ἤκμασεν ἡ τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν πολιορκία.

Τῆς δ' ἐν Λαοδικείᾳ παροικίας ἠγήσατο μετὰ Σωκράτην Εὐσέβιος, ἀπὸ τῆς Ἀλεξανδρέων ὁρμηθεὶς πόλεως· αἰτία δ' αὐτῷ τῆς μεταναστάσεως ὑπῆρξεν ἡ κατὰ τὸν Παῦλον ὑπόθεσις, δι' ὃν τῆς Συρίας ἐπιβάς, πρὸς τῶν τῇδε περὶ τὰ θεῖα ἐσπουδακότων τῆς οἰκαδε πορείας εἴργεται, ἐπέραστόν τι θεοσεβείας χρῆμα τῶν καθ' ἡμᾶς γενόμενος, ὡς καὶ ἀπὸ τῶν προπαρατεθεισῶν Διονυσίου φωνῶν διαγνῶναι ῥᾴδιον. Ἀνατόλιος αὐτῷ διάδοχος, ἀγαθός, φασίν, ἀγαθοῦ, καθίσταται, γένος

[1] 11. 3, 24.

for about fifteen years, Marcellinus was appointed his successor, the same whom the persecution has overtaken.

In the time of these persons, in succession to Domnus, Timaeus was in charge of the episcopate of Antioch, whom our contemporary Cyril succeeded. During Cyril's episcopate we came to know Dorotheus, a learned man, who had been deemed worthy of the presbyterate at Antioch. In his zeal for all that is beautiful in divine things, he made so careful a study of the Hebrew tongue that he read with understanding the original Hebrew Scriptures. And he was by no means unacquainted with the most liberal studies and Greek primary education; but withal he was by nature a eunuch, having been so from his very birth, so that even the emperor, accounting this as a sort of miracle, took him into his friendship and honoured him with the charge of the purple dye-works at Tyre. We heard him giving a measured exposition of the Scriptures in the church.

After Cyril, Tyrannus succeeded to the episcopate of the community of the Antiochenes, in whose day the attack upon the churches was at its height.

After Socrates as head of the community at Laodicea came Eusebius, being a native of the city of Alexandria. The reason of his migration was the affair of Paul. For when he had come to Syria on business connected with Paul, he was prevented from returning home by those who had divine things at heart. He was a goodly example of piety among our contemporaries, as it will be easy to discover from the expressions of Dionysius quoted above.[1] Anatolius was appointed his successor, one good man, as they say, following another. He also was by race an

μὲν καὶ αὐτὸς Ἀλεξανδρεύς, λόγων δ' ἕνεκα καὶ παιδείας τῆς Ἑλλήνων φιλοσοφίας τε τὰ πρῶτα τῶν μάλιστα καθ' ἡμᾶς δοκιμωτάτων ἀπενηνεγμένος, ἅτε ἀριθμητικῆς καὶ γεωμετρίας ἀστρονομίας τε καὶ τῆς ἄλλης, διαλεκτικῆς εἴτε φυσικῆς, θεωρίας ῥητορικῶν τε αὖ μαθημάτων ἐληλακὼς εἰς ἄκρον· ὧν ἕνεκα καὶ τῆς ἐπ' Ἀλεξανδρείας Ἀριστοτέλους διαδοχῆς τὴν διατριβὴν λόγος ἔχει πρὸς τῶν τῇδε πολιτῶν συστήσασθαι αὐτὸν ἀξιωθῆναι. μυρίας μὲν οὖν τοῦδε καὶ ἄλλας ἀριστείας ἐν τῇ κατ' Ἀλεξάνδρειαν τοῦ Πιρουχίου πολιορκίᾳ μνημονεύουσιν, ἅτε τῶν ἐν τέλει προνομίας ἐξαιρέτου πρὸς ἁπάντων ἠξιωμένου, δείγματος δ' ἕνεκα μόνου τοῦδε ἐπιμνησθήσομαι. τοῦ πυροῦ, φασίν, τοῖς πολιορκουμένοις ἐπιλελοιπότος, ὡς ἤδη τῶν ἔξωθεν πολεμίων μᾶλλον αὐτοῖς τὸν λιμὸν ἀφόρητον καθεστάναι, παρὼν ὁ δηλούμενος οἰκονομεῖταί τι τοιοῦτον. θατέρου μέρους τῆς πόλεως τῷ Ῥωμαϊκῷ συμμαχοῦντος στρατῷ ταύτῃ τε τυγχάνοντος ἀπολιορκήτου, τὸν Εὐσέβιον (ἔτι γὰρ εἶναι τότε αὐτόθι πρὸ τῆς ἐπὶ Συρίαν μεταναστάσεως), ἐν τοῖς ἀπολιορκήτοις ὄντα μέγα τε κλέος καὶ διαβόητον ὄνομα μέχρι καὶ τοῦ Ῥωμαίων στρατηλάτου κεκτημένον, περὶ τῶν λιμῷ διαφθειρομένων κατὰ τὴν πολιορκίαν πέμψας ὁ Ἀνατόλιος ἐκδιδάσκει· ὃ δὲ μαθών, σωτηρίαν τοῖς ἀπὸ τῶν πολεμίων αὐτομόλοις παρασχεῖν ὡς ἐν μεγίστῃ χάριτι δωρεᾶς τὸν Ῥωμαίων στρατηγὸν αἰτεῖται, καὶ τῆς ἀξιώσεώς γε τυχὼν ἐμφανὲς τῷ Ἀνατολίῳ καθίστησιν. ὃ δὲ αὐτίκα τὴν ἐπαγγελίαν

Alexandrian, who for his learning, secular education and philosophy had attained the first place among our most illustrious contemporaries; inasmuch as in arithmetic and geometry, in astronomy and other sciences, whether of logic or of physics, and in the arts of rhetoric as well, he had reached the pinnacle. It is recorded that because of these attainments the citizens there deemed him worthy to establish the school of the Aristotelian tradition[1] at Alexandria. Now countless other of his deeds of prowess are related during the siege of the Pirucheum[2] at Alexandria, seeing that he was deemed worthy by all of an extraordinary privilege among the officials; but as an example I shall make mention of the following one only. It is said that when the wheat failed the besieged, so that hunger was now a more intolerable thing than their enemies without, the person of whom we are speaking, being present, adopted the following device. The other part of the city was fighting in alliance with the Roman army, and thus was not besieged. Among these latter was Eusebius (for it is said that he was still there at that time before his migration to Syria), who had won so great fame and so widespread a reputation that it reached the ears even of the Roman general. To him Anatolius sent, and informed him as to those that were perishing of hunger in the siege. When he learnt it, he asked the Roman commander as a very great favour to grant safety to deserters from the enemy; and having obtained his request acquainted Anatolius of the fact. The moment Anatolius received the promise, he

[1] Lit. "succession."

[2] The Greek quarter at Alexandria, in which were the most important buildings.

δεξάμενος, βουλὴν τῶν Ἀλεξανδρέων συναγαγών, τὰ μὲν πρῶτα πάντας ἠξίου φιλικὴν δοῦναι Ῥωμαίοις δεξιάν, ὡς δ' ἀγριαίνοντας ἐπὶ τῷ λόγῳ συνεῖδεν, "ἀλλ' οὐ τούτῳ γε," φησίν, "ἀντιλέξειν ποθ' ὑμᾶς οἴομαι, εἰ τοὺς περιττοὺς καὶ ἡμῖν αὐτοῖς οὐδαμῇ χρησίμους, γραῖδας καὶ νήπια καὶ πρεσβύτας, ἐκδοῦναι πυλῶν ἔξω βαδίζειν ὅποι καὶ βούλοιντο, συμβουλεύσαιμι. τί γὰρ δὴ τούτους εἰς μάτην, ὅσον οὔπω τεθνηξομένους, παρ' ἑαυτοῖς ἔχομεν; τί δὲ τοὺς ἀναπήρους καὶ τὰ σώματα λελωβημένους τῷ λιμῷ κατατρύχομεν, τρέφειν δέον μόνους ἄνδρας καὶ νεανίας καὶ τὸν ἀναγκαῖον πυρὸν τοῖς ἐπὶ φυλακῇ τῆς πόλεως ἐπιτηδείοις ταμιεύεσθαι;" τοιούτοις τισὶν λογισμοῖς πείσας τὸ συνέδριον, ψῆφον πρῶτος ἀναστὰς ἐκφέρει πᾶν τὸ τῇ στρατείᾳ μὴ ἐπιτήδειον εἴτε ἀνδρῶν εἴτε γυναικῶν γένος ἀπολύειν τῆς πόλεως, ὅτι μηδὲ καταμένουσιν αὐτοῖς καὶ εἰς ἄχρηστον ἐν τῇ πόλει διατρίβουσιν ἐλπὶς ἂν γένοιτο σωτηρίας, πρὸς τοῦ λιμοῦ διαφθαρησομένοις. ταύτῃ δὲ τῶν λοιπῶν ἁπάντων τῶν ἐν τῇ βουλῇ συγκαταθεμένων μικροῦ δεῖν τοὺς πάντας τῶν πολιορκουμένων διεσώσατο, ἐν πρώτοις μὲν τῶν ἀπὸ τῆς ἐκκλησίας, ἔπειτα δὲ καὶ τῶν ἄλλων τῶν κατὰ τὴν πόλιν πᾶσαν ἡλικίαν διαδιδράσκειν προμηθούμενος, οὐ μόνον τῶν κατὰ τὴν ψῆφον δεδογμένων, τῇ δὲ τούτων προφάσει καὶ μυρίους ἄλλους, λεληθότως γυναικείαν στολὴν ἀμπισχομένους νύκτωρ τε τῇ ἐκείνου φροντίδι τῶν πυλῶν ἐξιόντας καὶ ἐπὶ τὴν Ῥωμαίων στρατιὰν ὁρμῶντας. ἔνθα τοὺς πάντας ὑποδεχόμενος ὁ Εὐσέβιος πατρὸς καὶ ἰατροῦ δίκην κεκακωμένους ἐκ τῆς μακρᾶς πολιορκίας διὰ πάσης προνοίας καὶ

assembled a council of the Alexandrians, and at first requested all to extend the right hand of fellowship to the Romans. But when he perceived that they were getting angry at the proposal, "At any rate," said he, "I do not think you would contradict me if I were to counsel that those who were superfluous and in no wise useful to us ourselves, old women and young children and old men, should be permitted to go outside the gates whithersoever they wish. Why keep we these persons with us to no purpose, seeing they are all but on the point of death? Why destroy we with hunger the maimed and crippled in body, when we should support only men and youths, and husband the necessary wheat for such as are required to guard the city?" With some such arguments he persuaded the assembly, and was the first to rise and give his vote that the whole body of those who were not required for the army, whether men or women, should depart from the city, because were they to remain and uselessly stay therein, there would be no hope of safety for them, since they would perish with hunger. And when all the rest of those in the assembly assented to this proposal, he went within a little of saving the whole of them that were besieged; he took care that first of all those belonging to the Church, and then the rest remaining in the city, of all ages, should escape, not only those who came under the terms of the vote, but also great numbers of others, passing themselves off as such, who secretly donned women's attire, and by his management left the gates by night and hastened to the Roman army. Eusebius was there to receive them all, and, like a father and physician, restore them, in evil plight after their long siege, with every kind of forethought and

θεραπείας ἀνεκτᾶτο. τοιούτων ἡ κατὰ Λαοδίκειαν
ἐκκλησία δύο ἐφεξῆς κατὰ διαδοχὴν ἠξιώθη ποι-
μένων, σὺν θείᾳ προμηθείᾳ μετὰ τὸν δηλωθέντα
πόλεμον ἐκ τῆς Ἀλεξανδρέων πόλεως ἐπὶ τὰ τῇδε
μετεληλυθότων. οὐμενοῦν ἐσπουδάσθη πλεῖστα τῷ
Ἀνατολίῳ συγγράμματα, τοσαῦτα δ' εἰς ἡμᾶς
ἐλήλυθεν, δι' ὧν αὐτοῦ καταμαθεῖν δυνατὸν ὁμοῦ
τό τε λόγιον καὶ πολυμαθές· ἐν οἷς μάλιστα τὰ περὶ
τοῦ πάσχα δόξαντα παρίστησιν, ἀφ' ὧν ἀναγκαῖον
ἂν εἴη τούτων ἐπὶ τοῦ παρόντος μνημονεῦσαι.

ΕΚ ΤΩΝ ΠΕΡΙ ΤΟΥ ΠΑΣΧΑ ΑΝΑΤΟΛΙΟΥ ΚΑΝΟΝΩΝ

"Ἔχει τοίνυν ἐν τῷ πρώτῳ ἔτει τὴν νουμηνίαν
τοῦ πρώτου μηνός, ἥτις ἀπάσης ἐστὶν ἀρχὴ τῆς
ἐννεακαιδεκαετηρίδος, τὴν κατ' Αἰγυπτίους μὲν
Φαμενὼθ κ̄ς̄, κατὰ δὲ τοὺς Μακεδόνων μῆνας
Δύστρου κβ, ὡς δ' ἂν εἴποιεν Ῥωμαῖοι, πρὸ ῑα̅
Καλανδῶν Ἀπριλίων. εὑρίσκεται δὲ ὁ ἥλιος ἐν
τῇ προκειμένῃ Φαμενὼθ κ̄ς̄ οὐ μόνον ἐπιβὰς τοῦ
πρώτου τμήματος, ἀλλ' ἤδη καὶ τετάρτην ἡμέραν
ἐν αὐτῷ διαπορευόμενος. τοῦτο δὲ τὸ τμῆμα
πρῶτον δωδεκατημόριον καὶ ἰσημερινὸν καὶ μηνῶν
ἀρχὴν καὶ κεφαλὴν τοῦ κύκλου καὶ ἄφεσιν τοῦ
τῶν πλανητῶν δρόμου καλεῖν εἰώθασιν, τὸ δὲ
πρὸ τούτου μηνῶν ἔσχατον καὶ τμῆμα δωδέκατον
καὶ τελευταῖον δωδεκατημόριον καὶ τέλος τῆς τῶν
πλανητῶν περιόδου· δι' ὃ καὶ τοὺς ἐν αὐτῷ τιθεμέ-
νους τὸν πρῶτον μῆνα καὶ τὴν τεσσαρεσκαιδεκάτην
τοῦ πάσχα κατ' αὐτὴν λαμβάνοντας οὐ μικρῶς
οὐδ' ὡς ἔτυχεν ἁμαρτάνειν φαμέν. ἔστιν δ' οὐχ

[1] See note, p. 244.

attention. Such were the two pastors that the church of Laodicea was deemed worthy to have successively, who by divine providence, after the above-mentioned war, had left the city of the Alexandrians to come there. Not a very great many works, indeed, were composed by Anatolius, but enough have reached us to enable us to perceive both his eloquence and his great erudition. In these works he especially presents his opinions with reference to the Pascha; from which it may be necessary on the present occasion to give the following passage.

From the Canons of Anatolius on the Pascha.[1]

"It has therefore in the first year the new moon of the first month, which is the beginning of the whole nineteen-year cycle, on the 26th of Phamenoth according to the Egyptians, but according to the months of the Macedonians the 22nd of Dystrus, or, as the Romans would say, the 11th before the Kalends of April. The sun is found on the aforesaid 26th of Phamenoth not only to have arrived at the first sign of the zodiac, but already to be passing through the fourth day within it. This sign is commonly called the first of the twelve divisions and the equinoctial [sign] and the beginning of months and head of the cycle and the starting-point of the planetary course. But the preceding sign is the last of the months and the twelfth sign and the last of the twelve divisions and the end of the planetary circuit. Therefore we say that they who place the first month in it, and determine the fourteenth day of the Pascha accordingly,[2] are guilty of no small or ordinary mistake.

[2] The Greek (*κατ' αὐτήν*) is unintelligible; we give the general sense.

ἡμέτερος οὗτος ὁ λόγος, Ἰουδαίοις δὲ ἐγινώσκετο
τοῖς πάλαι καὶ πρὸ Χριστοῦ ἐφυλάττετό τε πρὸς
αὐτῶν μάλιστα· μαθεῖν δ' ἔστιν ἐκ τῶν ὑπὸ
Φίλωνος Ἰωσήπου Μουσαίου λεγομένων, καὶ οὐ
μόνων τούτων, ἀλλὰ καὶ τῶν ἔτι παλαιοτέρων
ἀμφοτέρων Ἀγαθοβούλων, τῶν ἐπίκλην διδα-
σκάλων Ἀριστοβούλου τοῦ πάνυ, ὃς ἐν τοῖς ὁ΄
κατειλεγμένος τοῖς τὰς ἱερὰς καὶ θείας Ἑβραίων
ἑρμηνεύσασι γραφὰς Πτολεμαίῳ τῷ Φιλαδέλφῳ
καὶ τῷ τούτου πατρί, καὶ βίβλους ἐξηγητικὰς τοῦ
Μωυσέως νόμου τοῖς αὐτοῖς προσεφώνησεν βασι-
λεῦσιν. οὗτοι τὰ ζητούμενα κατὰ τὴν Ἔξοδον 1
ἐπιλύοντες, φασὶ δεῖν τὰ διαβατήρια θύειν ἐπ'
ἴσης ἅπαντας μετὰ ἰσημερίαν ἐαρινήν, μεσοῦντος
τοῦ πρώτου μηνός· τοῦτο δὲ εὑρίσκεσθαι, τὸ
πρῶτον τμῆμα τοῦ ἡλιακοῦ, ἢ ὥς τινες αὐτῶν
ὠνόμασαν, ζῳοφόρου κύκλου διεξιόντος ἡλίου.
ὁ δὲ Ἀριστόβουλος προστίθησιν ὡς εἴη ἐξ ἀνάγκης
τῇ τῶν διαβατηρίων ἑορτῇ μὴ μόνον τὸν ἥλιον
ἰσημερινὸν διαπορεύεσθαι τμῆμα, καὶ τὴν σελήνην
δέ. τῶν γὰρ ἰσημερινῶν τμημάτων ὄντων δύο, 1
τοῦ μὲν ἐαρινοῦ, τοῦ δε μετοπωρινοῦ, καὶ δια-
μετρούντων ἄλληλα δοθείσης τε τῆς τῶν δια-
βατηρίων ἡμέρας τῇ τεσσαρεσκαιδεκάτῃ τοῦ μηνὸς
μεθ' ἑσπέραν, ἐνστήξεται μὲν ἡ σελήνη τὴν ἐναν-
τίαν καὶ διάμετρον τῷ ἡλίῳ στάσιν, ὥσπερ οὖν
ἔξεστιν ἐν ταῖς πανσελήνοις ὁρᾶν, ἔσονται δὲ ὃ
μὲν κατὰ τὸ ἐαρινὸν ἰσημερινόν, ὁ ἥλιος, τμῆμα,
ἢ δὲ ἐξ ἀνάγκης κατὰ τὸ φθινοπωρινὸν ἰσημερινόν,
ἡ σελήνη. οἶδα πλεῖστα καὶ ἄλλα πρὸς αὐτῶν 1
λεγόμενα, τοῦτο μὲν πιθανά, τοῦτο δὲ κατὰ τὰς
κυριακὰς ἀποδείξεις προϊόντα, δι' ὧν παριστάνειν

And this is not our own statement, but the fact was known to the Jews, those of old time even before Christ, and it was carefully observed by them. One may learn it from what is said by Philo, Josephus and Musaeus, and not only by them but also by those of still more ancient date, the two Agathobuli, surnamed the Masters of Aristobulus the Great. He was reckoned among the Seventy who translated the sacred and divine Hebrew Scriptures for Ptolemy Philadelphus and his father ; and he dedicated books exegetical of the Law of Moses to the same kings. These writers, when they resolve the questions relative to the Exodus, say that all equally ought to sacrifice the passover after the vernal equinox, at the middle of the first month ; and that this is found to occur when the sun is passing through the first sign of the solar, or, as some have named it, the zodiacal cycle. And Aristobulus adds that at the feast of the passover it is necessary that not only the sun should be passing through an equinoctial sign, but the moon also. For as the equinoctial signs are two, the one vernal, the other autumnal, diametrically opposite each to other, and as the fourteenth of the month, at evening, is assigned as the day of the passover, the moon will have its place in the station that is diametrically opposed to the sun, as may be seen in full moons ; and the one, the sun, will be in the sign of the vernal equinox, while the other, the moon, will of necessity be in that of the autumnal. I know many other statements of theirs, some of them probable, others advanced as absolute proofs,[1] by which they attempt to establish that the Feast of

[1] The translation is uncertain.

πειρῶνται τὴν τοῦ πάσχα καὶ τῶν ἀζύμων ἑορτὴν δεῖν πάντως μετ' ἰσημερίαν ἄγεσθαι· παρίημι δὲ τὰς τοιαύτας τῶν ἀποδείξεων ὕλας ἀπαιτῶν ὧν
2 Cor. 3, 15, 16, 18 περιῄρηται μὲν τὸ ἐπὶ τῷ Μωυσέως νόμῳ κάλυμμα, ἀνακεκαλυμμένῳ δὲ τῷ προσώπῳ λοιπὸν ἤδη Χριστὸν καὶ τὰ Χριστοῦ ἀεὶ κατοπτρίζεσθαι μαθήματά τε καὶ παθήματα. τοῦ δὲ τὸν πρῶτον παρ' Ἑβραίοις μῆνα περὶ ἰσημερίαν εἶναι παραστατικὰ καὶ τὰ ἐν τῷ Ἐνὼχ μαθήματα."

Καὶ ἀριθμητικὰς δὲ καταλέλοιπεν ὁ αὐτὸς ἐν 2
ὅλοις δέκα συγγράμμασιν εἰσαγωγὰς καὶ ἄλλα δείγματα τῆς περὶ τὰ θεῖα σχολῆς τε αὐτοῦ καὶ πολυπειρίας. τούτῳ πρῶτος ὁ τῆς Παλαιστίνων 2
Καισαρείας ἐπίσκοπος Θεότεκνος χεῖρας εἰς ἐπισκοπὴν ἐπιτέθεικεν, διάδοχον ἑαυτοῦ μετὰ τελευτὴν ποριεῖσθαι τῇ ἰδίᾳ παροικίᾳ προμνώμενος, καὶ δὴ ἐπὶ σμικρόν τινα χρόνον ἄμφω τῆς αὐτῆς προύστησαν ἐκκλησίας· ἀλλὰ γὰρ ἐπὶ τὴν Ἀντιόχειαν τῆς κατὰ Παῦλον συνόδου καλούσης, τὴν Λαοδικέων πόλιν παριὼν πρὸς τῶν ἀδελφῶν αὐτόθι κοιμηθέντος Εὐσεβίου κεκράτηται.

Καὶ τοῦ Ἀνατολίου δὲ τὸν βίον μεταλλάξαντος, 2
τῆς ἐκεῖσε παροικίας ὕστατος τῶν πρὸ τοῦ διωγμοῦ καθίσταται Στέφανος, λόγων μὲν φιλοσόφων καὶ τῆς ἄλλης παρ' Ἕλλησι παιδείας παρὰ τοῖς πολλοῖς θαυμασθείς, οὐχ ὁμοίως γε μὴν περὶ τὴν θείαν πίστιν διατεθειμένος, ὡς προϊὼν ὁ τοῦ διωγμοῦ καιρὸς ἀπήλεγξεν, εἴρωνα μᾶλλον δειλόν τε καὶ ἄνανδρον ἤπερ ἀληθῆ φιλόσοφον ἀποδείξας τὸν ἄνδρα. οὐ μὴν ἐπὶ τούτῳ γε καταστρέφειν ἔμελλε 2

the Passover and of unleavened bread ought without exception to be held after the equinox. But I refrain from demanding proofs thus composed from those for whom the veil upon the law of Moses has been taken away, and for whom it now remains with unveiled face ever to behold as in a mirror Christ and the things of Christ, both what He learned and what He suffered.[1] But that the first month with the Hebrews lies around the equinox is shown also by the teachings in the Book of Enoch."[2]

And the same person has left behind an *Introduction to Arithmetic* also in ten complete treatises, and, as well, evidences of his study and deep knowledge of divine things. Theotecnus, bishop of Caesarea in Palestine, first had ordained him to the episcopate, seeking to procure him as his successor in his own community after his death, and indeed for some short time both presided over the same church. But, the synod with reference to Paul summoning him to Antioch, as he was passing by the city of the Laodiceans he was retained there by the brethren, Eusebius having fallen asleep.

And when Anatolius also departed this life, Stephen was appointed over the community there, the last bishop before the persecution. He won widespread admiration for his knowledge of philosophy and other secular learning, but he was not similarly disposed towards the divine faith, as the progress of the persecution clearly proved, demonstrating that the man was more of a dissembler, more of a craven and coward, than a true philosopher. But indeed the church and her affairs were not destined to perish

[1] *μαθήματα παθήματα*, Herod. i. 207 ; *cf.* Heb. v. 8.
[2] Enoch lxxii. 6, 9, 31, 32.

τὰ τῆς ἐκκλησίας, ἀνορθοῦται δ' αὐτὰ πρὸς αὐτοῦ θεοῦ τοῦ πάντων σωτῆρος αὐτίκα τῆς αὐτόθι παροικίας ἐπίσκοπος ἀναδειχθεὶς Θεόδοτος, πράγμασιν αὐτοῖς ἀνὴρ καὶ τὸ κύριον ὄνομα καὶ τὸ ἐπίσκοπον ἐπαληθεύσας. ἰατρικῆς μὲν γὰρ σωμάτων ἀπεφέρετο τὰ πρῶτα τῆς ἐπιστήμης, ψυχῶν δὲ θεραπευτικῆς οἷος οὐδὲ ἄλλος ἀνθρώπων ἐτύγχανεν φιλανθρωπίας γνησιότητος συμπαθείας σπουδῆς τῶν τῆς παρ' αὐτοῦ δεομένων ὠφελείας ἕνεκεν, πολὺ δὲ ἦν αὐτῷ καὶ τὸ περὶ τὰ θεῖα μαθήματα συνησκημένον. οὗτος μὲν δὴ τοιοῦτος ἦν.

Ἐν Καισαρείᾳ δὲ τῆς Παλαιστίνης Θεότεκνον 2
σπουδαιότατα τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν διελθόντα Ἀγάπιος διαδέχεται· ὃν καὶ πολλὰ καμεῖν γνησιωτάτην τε πρόνοιαν τῆς τοῦ λαοῦ προστασίας ἴσμεν πεποιημένον πλουσίᾳ τε χειρὶ πάντων μάλιστα πενήτων ἐπιμεμελημένον. κατὰ τοῦτον ἐλλογιμώτατον αὐτῷ 2
τε βίῳ φιλόσοφον ἀληθῆ πρεσβείου τῆς αὐτόθι παροικίας ἠξιωμένον Πάμφιλον ἔγνωμεν· ὃν ὁποῖός τις ἦν καὶ ὅθεν ὁρμώμενος, οὐ σμικρᾶς ἂν γένοιτο δηλοῦν ὑποθέσεως· ἕκαστα δὲ τοῦ κατ' αὐτὸν βίου καὶ ἧς συνεστήσατο διατριβῆς, τούς τε κατὰ τὸν διωγμὸν ἐν διαφόροις ὁμολογίαις ἀγῶνας αὐτοῦ καὶ ὃν ἐπὶ πᾶσιν ἀνεδήσατο τοῦ μαρτυρίου στέφανον, ἐν ἰδίᾳ τῇ περὶ αὐτοῦ διειλήφαμεν ὑποθέσει. ἀλλ' οὗτος μὲν τῶν τῇδε θαυμασιώτατος· ἐν δὲ 2
τοῖς μάλιστα καθ' ἡμᾶς σπανιωτάτους γενομένους ἴσμεν τῶν μὲν ἐπ' Ἀλεξανδρείας πρεσβυτέρων Πιέριον, Μελέτιον δὲ τῶν κατὰ Πόντον ἐκκλησιῶν ἐπίσκοπον. ἀλλ' ὁ μὲν ἄκρως ἀκτήμονι βίῳ καὶ 2

because of him ; they were set to rights by one who was immediately proclaimed bishop of that community by God Himself, the Saviour of all, even Theodotus, a man whose deeds themselves proved true his title to his own name and that of a bishop. He had reached, indeed, the first rank in the science of healing bodies, but in that of curing souls he was second to none among men, because of his benevolence, sincerity, fellow-feeling and zeal towards those that sought his aid ; and he was also greatly devoted to the study of divinity. Such a one was he.

But at Caesarea in Palestine Theotecnus, after exercising his episcopal office in the most zealous fashion, was succeeded by Agapius, whom also we know to have laboured much, displaying a most genuine regard for the government of his people, and with a liberal hand caring especially for all the poor. In his day we came to know Pamphilus, a most eloquent man and a true philosopher in his mode of life, who had been deemed worthy of the presbyterate of that community. It would be no small undertaking to show the kind of man he was and whence he came. But of each particular of his life and of the school that he established, as well as his contest in various confessions during the persecution, and the crown of martyrdom with which he was wreathed at the end of all, we have treated separately in a special work concerning him. Truly he was the most admirable of those of that city ; but as men possessed of especially rare qualities in our day we know Pierius, one of the presbyters at Alexandria, and Meletius, bishop of the churches in Pontus. The former of these had been noted for his life of extreme

μαθήμασιν φιλοσόφοις δεδοκίμαστο, ταῖς περὶ τὰ θεῖα θεωρίαις καὶ ἐξηγήσεσιν καὶ ταῖς ἐπὶ τοῦ κοινοῦ τῆς ἐκκλησίας διαλέξεσιν ὑπερφυῶς ἐξησκημένος· ὁ δὲ Μελέτιος (τὸ μέλι τῆς Ἀττικῆς ἐκάλουν αὐτὸν οἱ ἀπὸ παιδείας) τοιοῦτος ἦν οἷον ἂν γράψειέν τις τὸν κατὰ πάντα λόγων ἕνεκα τελεώτατον. ῥητορικῆς μέν γε τὴν ἀρετὴν οὐδ' οἷόν τε θαυμάζειν ἐπαξίως, ἀλλὰ τοῦτο μὲν εἶναι αὐτῷ φαίη ἄν τις τὸ κατὰ φύσιν· τῆς δ' ἄλλης πολυπειρίας τε καὶ πολυμαθείας τίς ἂν τὴν ἀρετὴν ὑπερβάλοιτο, ὅτι δὴ ἐπὶ πάσαις λογικαῖς ἐπι- 28
στήμαις τὸν τεχνικώτατον καὶ λογιώτατον, καὶ μόνον πεῖραν αὐτοῦ λαβών, εἶπες ἄν; ἐφάμιλλα δὲ αὐτῷ καὶ τὰ τῆς ἀρετῆς παρῆν τοῦ βίου. τοῦτον κατὰ τὸν τοῦ διωγμοῦ καιρὸν τοῖς κατὰ Παλαιστίνην κλίμασιν διαδιδράσκοντα ἐφ' ὅλοις ἔτεσιν ἑπτὰ κατενοήσαμεν.

Τῆς δ' ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις ἐκκλησίας μετὰ τὸν 29
μικρῷ πρόσθεν δεδηλωμένον ἐπίσκοπον Ὑμέναιον Ζαβδᾶς τὴν λειτουργίαν παραλαμβάνει· μετ' οὐ πολὺ δὲ τούτου κεκοιμημένου, Ἕρμων ὕστατος τῶν μέχρι τοῦ καθ' ἡμᾶς διωγμοῦ τὸν εἰς ἔτι νῦν ἐκεῖσε πεφυλαγμένον ἀποστολικὸν διαδέχεται θρόνον.

Καὶ ἐπ' Ἀλεξανδρείας δὲ Μάξιμον ὀκτωκαίδεκα 30
ἔτεσιν μετὰ τὴν Διονυσίου τελευτὴν ἐπισκοπεύσαντα Θεωνᾶς διαδέχεται· καθ' ὃν ἐπὶ τῆς Ἀλεξανδρείας ἐπὶ ταὐτὸν τῷ Πιερίῳ πρεσβυτερίου ἠξιωμένος Ἀχιλλᾶς ἐγνωρίζετο, τῆς ἱερᾶς πίστεως τὸ διδασκαλεῖον ἐγκεχειρισμένος, οὐδενὸς ἧττον σπανιώτατον φιλοσοφίας ἔργον καὶ πολιτείας

poverty and for his learning in philosophy. He was exceedingly well practised in the deeper study of divine things and in expositions thereof, as well as in his public discourses in church. Meletius [1] (educated persons used to call him the honey of Attica) was such as one would describe as a most accomplished scholar in all respects. It is impossible to admire sufficiently his skill in oratory, yet this might be said to be his by a natural gift. But who could surpass the excellence of his great experience and erudition as well, because you would say, even on a single trial, that he was the most skilful and learned man in all branches of literature? Equally, too, was his life distinguished for its virtues. We took note of him during the period of the persecution, as for seven whole years he was fleeing in the regions of Palestine.

In the church at Jerusalem, after the bishop Hymenaeus mentioned shortly before, Zabdas received the ministry. After no great time he fell asleep, and Hermo, the last of the bishops up to the persecution in our day, succeeded to the apostolic throne that has still been preserved there to the present day.[2]

And at Alexandria too, Maximus, who had held the episcopate for eighteen years after the death of Dionysius, was succeeded by Theonas. In his day at Alexandria Achillas, deemed worthy of the presbyterate along with Pierius, was well known; he had been entrusted with the school of the sacred faith, having displayed a wealth of philosophy most rare and inferior to none, and a manner of life that was

[1] His sobriquet "the honey (μέλι) of Attica" is a pun on his name.

[2] See c. 19 of this book.

εὐαγγελικῆς τρόπον γνήσιον ἐπιδεδειγμένος. μετὰ δὲ Θεωνᾶν ἐννεακαίδεκα ἔτεσιν ἐξυπηρετησάμενον διαδέχεται τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν τῶν ἐπ' Ἀλεξανδρείας Πέτρος, ἐν τοῖς μάλιστα καὶ αὐτὸς διαπρέψας ἐφ' ὅλοις δυοκαίδεκα ἐνιαυτοῖς, ὧν πρὸ τοῦ διωγμοῦ τρισὶν οὐδ' ὅλοις ἔτεσιν ἡγησάμενος τῆς ἐκκλησίας, τὸν λοιπὸν τοῦ βίου χρόνον εὐτονωτέρᾳ τῇ συνασκήσει ἑαυτόν τε ἦγεν καὶ τῆς κοινῆς τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν ὠφελείας οὐκ ἀφανῶς ἐπεμέλετο. ταύτῃ δ' οὖν ἐνάτῳ ἔτει τοῦ διωγμοῦ τὴν κεφαλὴν ἀποτμηθεὶς τῷ τοῦ μαρτυρίου κατεκοσμήθη στεφάνῳ. 3

Ἐν τούτοις τὴν τῶν διαδοχῶν περιγράψαντες ὑπόθεσιν, ἀπὸ τῆς τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν γενέσεως ἐπὶ τὴν τῶν προσευκτηρίων καθαίρεσιν εἰς ἔτη συντείνουσαν πέντε καὶ τριακόσια, φέρε, ἑξῆς τοὺς καθ' ἡμᾶς τῶν ὑπὲρ εὐσεβείας ἀνδρισαμένων ἀγῶνας, ὅσοι τε καὶ ὁπηλίκοι γεγόνασιν, καὶ τοῖς μεθ' ἡμᾶς εἰδέναι διὰ γραφῆς καταλείψωμεν. 3

Note on the Paschal Canons of Anatolius (ch. xxxii. 14-19).

The Paschal Table of Anatolius is based on the supposition that after the lapse of every cycle of nineteen years the full moons recur on the same days of the month, and at the same hours. This method of calculation, although not strictly accurate, was an advance on the eight-year cycle employed by Hippolytus (vi. 22) and Dionysius of Alexandria (vii. 20). Anatolius reckons as the first year of his

truly in accordance with the Gospel. After Theonas had given his utmost service for nineteen years, Peter succeeded to the episcopate of the Alexandrians, and he too was especially prominent for twelve entire years ; he ruled the church for less than three entire years before the persecution, and for the remainder of his days practised a life of severer discipline, and cared in no hidden manner for the general good of the churches. For this reason, therefore, in the ninth year of the persecution he was beheaded, and so adorned with the crown of martyrdom.

In these books having concluded the subject of the successions, from the birth of our Saviour to the destruction of the places of prayer—a subject that extends over three hundred and five years—come, let us next leave in writing, for the information of those also that come after us, what the extent and nature have been of the conflicts in our own day of those who manfully contended for piety.

---

cycle that upon which "the new moon of the first month" (*i.e.* the Jewish Nisan or Abib, corresponding to our March-April) falls upon March 22: he is, however, in error about the vernal equinox, which he places on March 19 (§ 15, where March 22 is "the fourth day") instead of March 21. He rightly insists (as did also Dionysius) that the paschal full moon must fall *after* the equinox, as opposed to those, whom he mentions at the close of § 15, who regarded the full moon ("the fourteenth day"), if it fell on the day before the equinox, as the paschal moon.

Η̄

Τάδε καὶ ἡ ὀγδόη περιέχει βίβλος τῆς Ἐκκλησιαστικῆς ἱστορίας

Ᾱ Περὶ τῶν πρὸ τοῦ καθ' ἡμᾶς διωγμοῦ.

Β̄ Περὶ τῆς τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν καθαιρέσεως.

Γ̄ Περὶ τοῦ τρόπου τῶν κατὰ τὸν διωγμὸν ἠγωνισμένων.

Δ̄ Περὶ τῶν ἀοιδίμων τοῦ θεοῦ μαρτύρων, ὡς πάντα τόπον ἔπλησαν τῆς ἑαυτῶν μνήμης, ποικίλους τοὺς ὑπὲρ εὐσεβείας ἀναδησάμενοι στεφάνους.

Ε̄ Περὶ τῶν κατὰ Νικομήδειαν.

Ϛ̄ Περὶ τῶν κατὰ τοὺς βασιλικοὺς οἴκους.

Ζ̄ Περὶ τῶν κατὰ Φοινίκην Αἰγυπτίων.

Η̄ Περὶ τῶν κατὰ τὴν Αἴγυπτον.

Θ̄ Περὶ τῶν κατὰ Θηβαΐδα.

Ῑ Φιλέου μάρτυρος περὶ τῶν κατ' Ἀλεξάνδρειαν πεπραγμένων ἔγγραφοι διδασκαλίαι.

ΙᾹ Περὶ τῶν κατὰ Φρυγίαν.

ΙΒ̄ Περὶ πλείστων ἑτέρων ἀνδρῶν τε καὶ γυναικῶν διαφόρως ἠγωνισμένων.

CONTENTS OF BOOK VIII

The Eighth Book of the Ecclesiastical History contains the following:

I. On the events before the persecution in our day.

II. On the destruction of the churches.

III. On the nature of the conflicts endured in the persecution.

IV. On the famed martyrs of God, how they filled every place with their memory, being wreathed with varied crowns for piety.

V. On those in Nicomedia.

VI. On those in the imperial palaces.

VII. On the Egyptians in Phoenicia.

VIII. On those in Egypt.

IX. On those in the Thebais.

X. Accounts in writing of Phileas the martyr concerning what had taken place at Alexandria.

XI. On the martyrs in Phrygia.

XII. On very many others, both men and women, who endured various conflicts.

ΙΓ Περὶ τῶν τῆς ἐκκλησίας προέδρων τῶν τὸ γνήσιον ἧς ἐπρέσβευον εὐσεβείας διὰ τοῦ σφῶν αἵματος ἐπιδεδειγμένων.

ΙΔ Περὶ τοῦ τρόπου τῶν τῆς εὐσεβείας ἐχθρῶν.

ΙΕ Περὶ τῶν τοῖς ἐκτὸς συμβεβηκότων.

ΙϚ Περὶ τῆς ἐπὶ τὸ κρεῖττον τῶν πραγμάτων μεταβολῆς.

ΙΖ Περὶ τῆς τῶν κρατούντων παλινῳδίας.

XIII. On the presidents of the Church who displayed in their own blood the genuineness of the piety of which they were ambassadors.

XIV. On the character of the enemies of piety.

XV. On the events which happened to those without [the Church].

XVI. On the change of affairs for the better.

XVII. On the recantation of the rulers.

H

Τὴν τῶν ἀποστόλων διαδοχὴν ἐν ὅλοις ἑπτὰ περιγράψαντες βιβλίοις, ἐν ὀγδόῳ τούτῳ συγγράμματι τὰ καθ' ἡμᾶς αὐτούς, οὐ τῆς τυχούσης ἄξια ὄντα γραφῆς, ἔν τι τῶν ἀναγκαιοτάτων ἡγούμεθα δεῖν εἰς γνῶσιν καὶ τῶν μεθ' ἡμᾶς παραδοῦναι, καὶ ἄρξεταί γε ὁ λόγος ἡμῖν ἐντεῦθεν.

I. Ὅσης μὲν καὶ ὁποίας πρὸ τοῦ καθ' ἡμᾶς 1
διωγμοῦ δόξης ὁμοῦ καὶ παρρησίας ὁ διὰ Χριστοῦ τῷ βίῳ κατηγγελμένος τῆς εἰς τὸν τῶν ὅλων θεὸν εὐσεβείας λόγος παρὰ πᾶσιν ἀνθρώποις, Ἕλλησί τε καὶ βαρβάροις, ἠξίωτο, μεῖζον ἢ καθ' ἡμᾶς ἐπαξίως διηγήσασθαι· τεκμήρια δ' ἂν γένοιτο τῶν 2
κρατούντων αἱ περὶ τοὺς ἡμετέρους δεξιώσεις, οἷς καὶ τὰς τῶν ἐθνῶν ἐνεχείριζον ἡγεμονίας, τῆς περὶ τὸ θύειν ἀγωνίας κατὰ πολλὴν ἦν ἀπέσῳζον περὶ τὸ δόγμα φιλίαν αὐτοὺς ἀπαλλάττοντες. τί 3
δεῖ περὶ τῶν κατὰ τοὺς βασιλικοὺς λέγειν οἴκους καὶ τῶν ἐπὶ πᾶσιν ἀρχόντων; οἳ τοῖς οἰκείοις εἰς πρόσωπον ἐπὶ τῷ θείῳ παρρησιαζομένοις λόγῳ τε καὶ βίῳ συνεχώρουν, γαμεταῖς καὶ παισὶ καὶ οἰκέταις, μόνον οὐχὶ καὶ ἐγκαυχᾶσθαι ἐπὶ τῇ παρρησίᾳ τῆς πίστεως ἐπιτρέποντες· οὓς ἐξόχως καὶ μᾶλλον τῶν συνθεραπόντων ἀποδεκτοὺς ἡγοῦντο

BOOK VIII

HAVING concluded the succession from the apostles in seven entire books, in this eighth treatise we regard it as one of our most urgent duties to hand down, for the knowledge of those that come after us, the events of our own day, which are worthy of no casual record ; and from this point our account will take its beginning.

I. It is beyond our powers to describe in a worthy manner the measure and nature of that honour as well as freedom which was accorded by all men, both Greeks and barbarians, before the persecution in our day, to that word of piety toward the God of the universe which had been proclaimed through Christ to the world. Yet proofs might be forthcoming in the favours granted by the rulers to our people ; to whom they would even entrust the government of the provinces, freeing them from agony of mind as regards sacrificing, because of the great friendliness that they used to entertain for their doctrine. Why need one speak of those in the imperial palaces and of the supreme rulers, who allowed the members of their households—wives, children and servants—to practise openly to their face the divine word and conduct, and—one might say—permitted them even to boast of the freedom accorded to the faith ? And these they used to regard with especial esteem and more

οἷος ἐκεῖνος ἦν Δωρόθεος, πάντων αὐτοῖς εὐ- 4
νούστατός τε καὶ πιστότατος καὶ τούτων ἕνεκα
διαφερόντως παρὰ τοὺς ἐν ἀρχαῖς καὶ ἡγεμονίαις
ἐντιμότατος, ὅ τε σὺν αὐτῷ περιβόητος Γοργόνιος
καὶ ὅσοι τῆς αὐτῆς ὁμοίως τούτοις ἠξίωντο διὰ
τὸν τοῦ θεοῦ λόγον τιμῆς· οἵας τε καὶ τοὺς καθ' 5
ἑκάστην ἐκκλησίαν ἄρχοντας παρὰ πᾶσιν ἐπι-
τρόποις καὶ ἡγεμόσιν ἀποδοχῆς ἦν ὁρᾶν ἀξιου-
μένους. πῶς δ' ἂν τις διαγράψειεν τὰς μυρι-
άνδρους ἐκείνας ἐπισυναγωγὰς καὶ τὰ πλήθη τῶν
κατὰ πᾶσαν πόλιν ἀθροισμάτων τάς τε ἐπισήμους
ἐν τοῖς προσευκτηρίοις συνδρομάς; ὧν δὴ ἕνεκα
μηδαμῶς ἔτι τοῖς πάλαι οἰκοδομήμασιν ἀρκού-
μενοι, εὐρείας εἰς πλάτος ἀνὰ πάσας τὰς πόλεις
ἐκ θεμελίων ἀνίστων ἐκκλησίας. ταῦτα δὲ τοῖς 6
χρόνοις προϊόντα ὁσημέραι τε εἰς αὔξην καὶ
μέγεθος ἐπιδιδόντα οὐδεὶς ἀνεῖργεν φθόνος οὐδέ
τις δαίμων πονηρὸς οἷός τε ἦν βασκαίνειν οὐδ'
ἀνθρώπων ἐπιβουλαῖς κωλύειν, ἐς ὅσον ἡ θεία καὶ
οὐράνιος χεὶρ ἔσκεπέν τε καὶ ἐφρούρει, οἷα δὴ
ἄξιον ὄντα, τὸν ἑαυτῆς λαόν.

Ὡς δ' ἐκ τῆς ἐπὶ πλέον ἐλευθερίας ἐπὶ χαυνότητα 7
καὶ νωθρίαν τὰ καθ' ἡμᾶς μετηλλάττετο, ἄλλων
ἄλλοις διαφθονουμένων καὶ διαλοιδορουμένων καὶ
μόνον οὐχὶ ἡμῶν αὐτῶν ἑαυτοῖς προσπολεμούντων
ὅπλοις, εἰ οὕτω τύχοι, καὶ δόρασιν τοῖς διὰ λόγων
ἀρχόντων τε ἄρχουσι προσρηγνύντων καὶ λαῶν
ἐπὶ λαοὺς καταστασιαζόντων τῆς τε ὑποκρίσεως
ἀφάτου καὶ τῆς εἰρωνείας ἐπὶ πλεῖστον ὅσον κακίας
προϊούσης, ἡ μὲν δὴ θεία κρίσις, οἷα φίλον αὐτῇ,
πεφεισμένως, τῶν ἀθροισμάτων ἔτι συγκροτου-

favourably than their fellow-servants. Such a one was the famous Dorotheus, who surpassed all in his devotion and faithfulness to them, and for this reason was more highly honoured than men who held positions as rulers or governors. With him was the celebrated Gorgonius and all those who, like them, had been deemed worthy of the same honour because of the word of God. With what favour one might note that the rulers in every church were honoured by all procurators and governors! And how could one fully describe those assemblies thronged with countless men, and the multitudes that gathered together in every city, and the famed concourses in the places of prayer; by reason of which they were no longer satisfied with the buildings of olden time, and would erect from the foundations churches of spacious dimensions throughout all the cities? And as these things went forward with the times, and day by day increasingly grew mightier, no envy could stop them, nor was any evil spirit able to cast its spell or hinder them by human devices, so long as the divine and heavenly hand was sheltering and guarding, as a worthy object, its own people.

But when, as the result of greater freedom, a change to pride and sloth came over our affairs, we fell to envy and fierce railing against one another, warring upon ourselves, so to speak, as occasion offered, with weapons and spears formed of words; and rulers attacked rulers and laity formed factions against laity, while unspeakable hypocrisy and pretence pursued their evil course to the furthest end: until the divine judgement with a sparing hand, as is its wont (for the assemblies were still crowded),

μένων, ἠρέμα καὶ μετρίως τὴν αὐτῆς ἐπισκοπὴν ἀνεκίνει, ἐκ τῶν ἐν στρατείαις ἀδελφῶν καταρχομένου τοῦ διωγμοῦ· ὡς δ' ἀνεπαισθήτως ἔχοντες 8
οὐχ ὅπως εὐμενὲς καὶ ἵλεω καταστήσεσθαι τὸ θεῖον προυθυμούμεθα, οἷα δέ τινες ἄθεοι ἀφρόντιστα καὶ ἀνεπίσκοπα τὰ καθ' ἡμᾶς ἡγούμενοι ἄλλας ἐπ' ἄλλαις προσετίθεμεν κακίας οἵ τε δοκοῦντες ἡμῶν ποιμένες τὸν τῆς θεοσεβείας θεσμὸν παρωσάμενοι ταῖς πρὸς ἀλλήλους ἀνεφλέγοντο φιλονεικίαις, αὐτὰ δὴ ταῦτα μόνα, τὰς ἔριδας καὶ τὰς ἀπειλὰς τόν τε ζῆλον καὶ τὸ πρὸς ἀλλήλους ἔχθος τε καὶ μῖσος ἐπαύξοντες οἷά τε τυραννίδας τὰς φιλαρχίας ἐκθύμως διεκδικοῦντες, τότε δή, τότε κατὰ τὴν φάσκουσαν τοῦ Ἱερεμίου φωνὴν
Lam. 2, 1. 2 (with variations from LXX) ἐγνόφωσεν ἐν ὀργῇ αὐτοῦ κύριος τὴν θυγατέρα Σιὼν καὶ κατέρριψεν ἐξ οὐρανοῦ δόξασμα Ἰσραὴλ οὐκ ἐμνήσθη τε ὑποποδίου ποδῶν αὐτοῦ ἐν ἡμέρᾳ ὀργῆς αὐτοῦ· ἀλλὰ καὶ κατεπόντισεν κύριος πάντα τὰ ὡραῖα Ἰσραὴλ καὶ καθεῖλεν πάντας τοὺς
Ps. 89, 40 φραγμοὺς αὐτοῦ, κατά τε τὰ ἐν Ψαλμοῖς προ- 9
Ps. 89, 39-45 θεσπισθέντα κατέστρεψεν τὴν διαθήκην τοῦ δούλου αὐτοῦ καὶ ἐβεβήλωσεν εἰς γῆν διὰ τῆς τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν καθαιρέσεως τὸ ἁγίασμα αὐτοῦ καὶ καθεῖλεν πάντας τοὺς φραγμοὺς αὐτοῦ, ἔθετο τὰ ὀχυρώματα αὐτοῦ δειλίαν· διήρπασάν τε τὰ πλήθη τοῦ λαοῦ πάντες οἱ διοδεύοντες ὁδόν, καὶ δὴ ἐπὶ τούτοις ὄνειδος ἐγενήθη τοῖς γείτοσιν αὐτοῦ. ὕψωσεν γὰρ τὴν δεξιὰν τῶν ἐχθρῶν αὐτοῦ καὶ ἀπέστρεψεν τὴν βοήθειαν τῆς ῥομφαίας αὐτοῦ καὶ οὐκ ἀντελάβετο αὐτοῦ ἐν τῷ πολέμῳ· ἀλλὰ καὶ κατέλυσεν ἀπὸ καθαρισμοῦ αὐτὸν καὶ τὸν θρόνον αὐτοῦ εἰς τὴν γῆν κατέρραξεν ἐσμίκρυνέν τε τὰς

quietly and moderately began to exercise its oversight, the persecution commencing with the brethren in the army. But when in our blindness we took not the least care to secure the goodwill and propitious favour of the Deity, but, like some kind of atheists, imagined that our affairs escaped all heed and oversight, we went on adding one wickedness to another; and those accounted our pastors, casting aside the sanctions of the fear of God, were enflamed with mutual contentions, and did nothing else but add to the strifes and threats, the jealousy, enmity and hatred that they used one to another, claiming with all vehemence the objects of their ambition as if they were a despot's spoils; then indeed, then according to the word spoken by Jeremiah, the Lord hath darkened the daughter of Zion in his anger, and hath cast down from heaven the glory of Israel; he hath not remembered his footstool in the day of his anger; but the Lord hath also swallowed up all the beauty of Israel and hath broken down all his hedges. And according to what has been foretold in the Psalms, He hath overturned the covenant of his servant and hath profaned to the ground, through the destruction of the churches, his sanctuary and hath broken down all his hedges, he hath made his strongholds cowardice. All that pass by the way have spoiled the multitudes of the people, yea more, he hath become a reproach to his neighbours. For he hath exalted the right hand of his adversaries, and hath turned back the help of his sword and hath not taken his part in the battle. But he hath also made his purification to cease, and hath cast his throne down to the ground, and hath

ἡμέρας τοῦ χρόνου αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἐπὶ πᾶσιν κατέχεεν αὐτοῦ αἰσχύνην.

II. Συντετέλεσται δῆτα καθ' ἡμᾶς ἅπαντα, ὁπηνίκα τῶν μὲν προσευκτηρίων τοὺς οἴκους ἐξ ὕψους εἰς ἔδαφος αὐτοῖς θεμελίοις καταρριπτουμένους, τὰς δ' ἐνθέους καὶ ἱερὰς γραφὰς κατὰ μέσας ἀγορὰς πυρὶ παραδιδομένας αὐτοῖς ἐπείδομεν ὀφθαλμοῖς τούς τε τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν ποιμένας αἰσχρῶς ὧδε κἀκεῖσε κρυπταζομένους, τοὺς δὲ ἀσχημόνως ἁλισκομένους καὶ πρὸς τῶν ἐχθρῶν καταπαιζομένους, ὅτε καὶ κατ' ἄλλον προφητικὸν λόγον ἐξεχύθη ἐξουδένωσις ἐπ' ἄρχοντας, καὶ
Ps. 107, 40 ἐπλάνησεν αὐτοὺς ἐν ἀβάτῳ καὶ οὐχ ὁδῷ. ἀλλὰ τούτων μὲν οὐχ ἡμέτερον διαγράφειν τὰς ἐπὶ τέλει σκυθρωπὰς συμφοράς, ἐπεὶ καὶ τὰς πρόσθεν τοῦ διωγμοῦ διαστάσεις τε αὐτῶν εἰς ἀλλήλους καὶ ἀτοπίας οὐχ ἡμῖν οἰκεῖον μνήμῃ παραδιδόναι· δι' ὃ καὶ πλέον οὐδὲν ἱστορῆσαι περὶ αὐτῶν διέγνωμεν ἢ δι' ὧν ἂν τὴν θείαν δικαιώσαιμεν κρίσιν. οὐκοῦν οὐδὲ τῶν πρὸς τοῦ διωγμοῦ πεπειραμένων ἢ τῶν
1 Tim. 1, 19 εἰς ἅπαν τῆς σωτηρίας νεναυαγηκότων αὐτῇ τε γνώμῃ τοῖς τοῦ κλύδωνος ἐναπορριφέντων βυθοῖς μνήμην ποιήσασθαι προήχθημεν, μόνα δ' ἐκεῖνα τῇ καθόλου προσθήσομεν ἱστορίᾳ, ἃ πρώτοις μὲν ἡμῖν αὐτοῖς, ἔπειτα δὲ καὶ τοῖς μεθ' ἡμᾶς γένοιτ' ἂν πρὸς ὠφελείας. ἴωμεν οὖν ἐντεῦθεν ἤδη τοὺς ἱεροὺς ἀγῶνας τῶν τοῦ θείου λόγου μαρτύρων ἐν ἐπιτομῇ διαγράψοντες.

Ἔτος τοῦτο ἦν ἐννεακαιδέκατον τῆς Διοκλητιανοῦ βασιλείας, Δύστρος μήν, λέγοιτο δ' ἂν οὗτος Μάρτιος κατὰ Ῥωμαίους, ἐν ᾧ τῆς τοῦ

[1] A.D. 303.

shortened the days of his time and, last of all, he hath covered him with shame.

II. All things in truth were fulfilled in our day, when we saw with our very eyes the houses of prayer cast down to their foundations from top to bottom, and the inspired and sacred Scriptures committed to the flames in the midst of the market-places, and the pastors of the churches, some shamefully hiding themselves here and there, while others were ignominiously captured and made a mockery by their enemies; when also, according to another prophetic word, He poureth contempt upon princes, and causeth them to wander in the waste, where there is no way.

But as to these, it is not our part to describe their melancholy misfortunes in the issue, even as we do not think it proper to hand down to memory their dissensions and unnatural conduct to one another before the persecution. Therefore we resolved to place on record nothing more about them than what would justify the divine judgement. Accordingly, we determined not even to mention those who have been tried by the persecution, or have made utter shipwreck of their salvation, and of their own free will were plunged in the depths of the billows; but we shall add to the general history only such things as may be profitable, first to ourselves, and then to those that come after us. Let us proceed, therefore, from this point to give a summary description of the sacred conflicts of the martyrs of the divine Word.

It was the nineteenth year of the reign of Diocletian,[1] and the month Dystrus,[2] or March, as the Romans would call it, in which, as the festival of the

[2] The seventh month of the Macedonian year, which began in September.

σωτηρίου πάθους ἑορτῆς ἐπελαυνούσης ἥπλωτο πανταχόσε βασιλικὰ γράμματα, τὰς μὲν ἐκκλησίας εἰς ἔδαφος φέρειν, τὰς δὲ γραφὰς ἀφανεῖς πυρὶ γενέσθαι προστάττοντα, καὶ τοὺς μὲν τιμῆς ἐπειλημμένους ἀτίμους, τοὺς δ' ἐν οἰκετίαις, εἰ ἐπιμένοιεν τῇ τοῦ Χριστιανισμοῦ προθέσει, ἐλευθερίας στερεῖσθαι προαγορεύοντα. καὶ ἡ μὲν πρώτη καθ' ἡμῶν γραφὴ τοιαύτη τις ἦν· μετ' οὐ πολὺ δὲ ἑτέρων ἐπιφοιτησάντων γραμμάτων, προσετάττετο τοὺς τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν προέδρους πάντας τοὺς κατὰ πάντα τόπον πρῶτα μὲν δεσμοῖς παραδίδοσθαι, εἶθ' ὕστερον πάσῃ μηχανῇ θύειν ἐξαναγκάζεσθαι.

III. τότε δὴ οὖν, τότε πλεῖστοι μὲν ὅσοι τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν ἄρχοντες, δειναῖς αἰκίαις προθύμως ἐναθλήσαντες, μεγάλων ἀγώνων ἱστορίας ἐπεδείξαντο, μυρίοι δ' ἄλλοι τὴν ψυχὴν ὑπὸ δειλίας προναρκήσαντες προχείρως οὕτως ἀπὸ πρώτης ἐξησθένησαν προσβολῆς, τῶν δὲ λοιπῶν ἕκαστος εἴδη διάφορα βασάνων ἐνήλλαττεν, ὃ μὲν μάστιξιν αἰκιζόμενος τὸ σῶμα, ὃ δὲ στρεβλώσεσιν καὶ ξεσμοῖς ἀνυπομονήτοις τιμωρούμενος, ἐφ' οἷς ἤδη τινὲς οὐκ αἴσιον ἀπηνέγκαντο τοῦ βίου τέλος. ἄλλοι δ' αὖ πάλιν ἄλλως τὸν ἀγῶνα διεξῆσαν· ὃ μὲν γάρ τις ἑτέρων βίᾳ συνωθούντων καὶ ταῖς παμμιάροις καὶ ἀνάγνοις προσαγόντων θυσίαις ὡς τεθυκὼς ἀπηλλάττετο, καὶ εἰ μὴ τεθυκὼς ἦν, ὃ δὲ μηδ' ὅλως προσπελάσας μηδέ τινος ἐναγοῦς ἐφαψάμενος, εἰρηκότων δ' ἑτέρων ὅτι τεθύκοι, σιωπῇ φέρων τὴν συκοφαντίαν ἀπῄει· ἄλλος ἡμιθνὴς αἰρόμενος ὡς ἂν ἤδη νεκρὸς ἐρρίπτετο, καί τις αὖ πάλιν ἐπ' ἐδάφους κείμενος μακρὰν

[1] *i.e.* Easter.

Saviour's Passion[1] was coming on, an imperial letter was everywhere promulgated, ordering the razing of the churches to the ground and the destruction by fire of the Scriptures, and proclaiming that those who held high positions would lose all civil rights, while those in households, if they persisted in their profession of Christianity, would be deprived of their liberty. Such was the first document against us. But not long afterwards we were further visited with other letters, and in them the order was given that the presidents of the churches should all, in every place, be first committed to prison, and then afterwards compelled by every kind of device to sacrifice. III. Then indeed, then very many rulers of the churches contended with a stout heart under terrible torments, and displayed spectacles of mighty conflicts; while countless others, whose souls cowardice had numbed beforehand, readily proved weak at the first assault; while of the rest, each underwent a series of varied forms of torture: one would have his body maltreated by scourgings; another would be punished with the rack and torn to an unbearable degree, whereat some met a miserable end to their life. But others, again, emerged from the conflict otherwise: one man was brought to the abominable and unholy sacrifices by the violence of others who pressed round him, and dismissed as if he had sacrificed, even though he had not; another who did not so much as approach or touch any accursed thing, when others had said that he had sacrificed, went away bearing the false accusation in silence. A third was taken up half-dead and cast aside as if he were a corpse already; and, again, a certain person lying on the ground was dragged a long distance by the feet, having been

ἐσύρετο τοῖν ποδοῖν, ἐν τεθυκόσιν αὐτοῖς λελογισμένος. ὁ δέ τις ἐβόα καὶ μεγάλῃ διεμαρτύρετο φωνῇ τῆς θυσίας τὴν ἄρνησιν, καὶ ἄλλος Χριστιανὸς εἶναι ἐκεκράγει, τῇ τοῦ σωτηρίου προσρήματος ὁμολογίᾳ λαμπρυνόμενος· ἕτερος τὸ μὴ τεθυκέναι μηδὲ θύσειν ποτὲ διετείνετο. ὅμως δ' οὖν καὶ οἵδε πολυχειρίᾳ τῆς ἐπὶ τοῦτο τεταγμένης στρατιωτικῆς παρατάξεως κατὰ στόματος παιόμενοι καὶ κατασιγαζόμενοι κατά τε προσώπου καὶ παρειῶν τυπτόμενοι μετὰ βίας ἐξωθοῦντο· οὕτως ἐξ ἅπαντος οἱ τῆς θεοσεβείας ἐχθροὶ τὸ δοκεῖν ἡνυκέναι περὶ πολλοῦ ἐτίθεντο.

Ἀλλ' οὐ καὶ κατὰ τῶν ἁγίων αὐτοῖς μαρτύρων ταῦτα προυχώρει· ὧν εἰς ἀκριβῆ διήγησιν τίς ἂν ἡμῖν ἐξαρκέσειεν λόγος; IV. μυρίους μὲν γὰρ ἱστορήσαι ἄν τις θαυμαστὴν ὑπὲρ εὐσεβείας τοῦ θεοῦ τῶν ὅλων ἐνδεδειγμένους προθυμίαν, οὐκ ἐξ ὅτουπερ μόνον ὁ κατὰ πάντων ἀνεκινήθη διωγμός, πολὺ πρότερον δὲ καθ' ὃν ἔτι τὰ τῆς εἰρήνης συνεκροτεῖτο. ἄρτι γὰρ ἄρτι πρῶτον ὥσπερ ἀπὸ κάρου βαθέος ὑποκινουμένου τοῦ τὴν ἐξουσίαν εἰληφότος κρύβδην τε ἔτι καὶ ἀφανῶς μετὰ τὸν ἀπὸ Δεκίου καὶ Οὐαλεριανοῦ μεταξὺ χρόνον ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις ἐπιχειροῦντος οὐκ ἀθρόως τε τῷ καθ' ἡμῶν ἐπαποδυομένου πολέμῳ, ἀλλ' ἔτι τῶν κατὰ τὰ στρατόπεδα μόνων ἀποπειρωμένου (ταύτῃ γὰρ καὶ τοὺς λοιποὺς ἁλῶναι ῥᾳδίως ᾤετο, εἰ πρότερον ἐκείνων καταγωνισάμενος περιγένοιτο), πλείστους παρῆν τῶν ἐν στρατείαις ὁρᾶν ἀσμενέστατα τὸν ἰδιωτικὸν προασπαζομένους βίον, ὡς ἂν μὴ

[1] Galerius, or, as some have thought, the Devil. The

reckoned among those who had voluntarily sacrificed. One cried out and with a loud voice attested his refusal to sacrifice, and another shouted aloud that he was a Christian, glorying in his confession of the saving Name. Another stoutly maintained that he had not sacrificed, and never would. Nevertheless these also were struck on the mouth and silenced by a large band of soldiers drawn up for that purpose, and with blows on their face and cheeks driven forcibly away. So great store did the enemies of godliness set on seeming by any means to have accomplished their purpose.

But even such methods did not avail them against the holy martyrs. What word of ours could suffice for an accurate description of these? IV. For one might tell of countless numbers who displayed a marvellous zeal for piety to the God of the universe; not only from what time the persecution was stirred up against all, but long before, during the period when peace was still firmly established. For when he who had received the authority[1] was just now awakening, as it were, from profound torpor, though he was in a secret and hidden manner already making attempts against the churches during the time that came after Decius and Valerian, and did not get himself in readiness for the war against us all at once, but as yet made an attempt only upon those in the camps (for in this way he thought that the rest also could easily be taken, if first of all he were to get the better in the conflict with these): then one could see great numbers of those in the army most gladly embracing civil life, so that they might not prove

[1] "profound torpor" is the forty years' peace—the interval between the persecutions of Valerian and Diocletian.

ἔξαρνοι γένοιντο τῆς περὶ τὸν τῶν ὅλων δημιουργὸν εὐσεβείας. ὡς γὰρ ὁ στρατοπεδάρχης, ὅστις 3
ποτὲ ἦν ἐκεῖνος, ἄρτι πρῶτον ἐνεχείρει τῷ κατὰ τῶν στρατευμάτων διωγμῷ, φυλοκρινῶν καὶ διακαθαίρων τοὺς ἐν τοῖς στρατοπέδοις ἀναφερομένους αἱρεσίν τε διδοὺς ἢ πειθαρχοῦσιν ἧς μετῆν αὐτοῖς ἀπολαύειν τιμῆς ἢ τοὐναντίον στέρεσθαι ταύτης, εἰ ἀντιτάττοιντο τῷ προστάγματι, πλεῖστοι ὅσοι τῆς Χριστοῦ βασιλείας στρατιῶται τὴν εἰς αὐτὸν ὁμολογίαν, μὴ μελλήσαντες, τῆς δοκούσης δόξης καὶ εὐπραγίας ἧς εἶχοντο, ἀναμφιλόγως προυτίμησαν. ἤδη δὲ σπανίως τούτων εἷς που καὶ 4
δεύτερος οὐ μόνον τῆς ἀξίας τὴν ἀποβολήν, ἀλλὰ καὶ θάνατον τῆς εὐσεβοῦς ἐνστάσεως ἀντικατηλλάττοντο, μετρίως πως ἤδη τότε τοῦ τὴν ἐπι-
Heb. 12, 4 βουλὴν ἐνεργοῦντος καὶ μέχρις αἵματος ἐπ' ἐνίων φθάνειν ἐπιτολμῶντος, τοῦ πλήθους, ὡς ἔοικεν, τῶν πιστῶν δεδιττομένου τε αὐτὸν ἔτι καὶ ἀποκναίοντος ἐπὶ τὸν κατὰ πάντων ἀθρόως ἐφορμῆσαι πόλεμον. ὡς δὲ καὶ γυμνότερον ἐπαπεδύετο, οὐδ' ἔστιν λόγῳ δυνατὸν ἀφηγήσασθαι ὅσους καὶ ὁποίους τοῦ θεοῦ μάρτυρας ὀφθαλμοῖς παρῆν ὁρᾶν τοῖς ἀνὰ πάσας τάς τε πόλεις καὶ τὰς χώρας οἰκοῦσιν.

V. Αὐτίκα γοῦν τῶν οὐκ ἀσήμων τις, ἀλλὰ 1
καὶ ἄγαν κατὰ τὰς ἐν τῷ βίῳ νενομισμένας ὑπεροχὰς ἐνδοξοτάτων, ἅμα τῷ τὴν κατὰ τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν ἐν τῇ Νικομηδείᾳ προτεθῆναι γραφήν, ζήλῳ τῷ κατὰ θεὸν ὑποκινηθεὶς διαπύρῳ τε ἐφορμήσας τῇ πίστει, ἐν προφανεῖ καὶ δημοσίῳ κειμένην ὡς ἀνοσίαν καὶ ἀσεβεστάτην ἀνελὼν

[1] His name was Veturius, as Eusebius tells us in his

renegades in their piety toward the Creator of the universe. For when the supreme commander,[1] whoever he was, was just making his first attempt at persecuting the soldiers—separating into classes and thoroughly sifting out those serving in the camps, giving them a choice whether they would obey and enjoy the rank they held, or else be deprived of it, if they continued to disobey the commandment—a great many soldiers of Christ's kingdom, without hesitation, unquestionably preferred to confess Him than retain the seeming glory and prosperity that they possessed. And already in rare cases one or two of these were receiving not only loss of honour but even death in exchange for their godly stedfastness, for as yet the instigator of the plot was working with a certain moderation and daring to proceed unto blood only in some instances; fearing, presumably, the multitude of believers, and hesitating to plunge into the war against us all at once. But when he prepared himself still further for battle, it is quite impossible to recount the number or the splendour of God's martyrs that it was given to the inhabitants throughout all the cities and country parts to see.

V. To begin with, the moment that the decree against the churches was published at Nicomedia, a certain person[2] by no means obscure, but most highly honoured as the world counts pre-eminence, moved by zeal toward God and carried away by his burning faith, seized and tore it to pieces, when posted up in an open and public place, as an unholy and profane

Chronicle. The words "whoever he was" are probably contemptuous—he was not worth naming.

[2] Probably Euethius, who suffered martyrdom at Nicomedia on February 24, the day on which the edict was published. Tradition, however, identified him with St. George of England.

σπαράττει, δυεῖν ἐπιπαρόντων κατὰ τὴν αὐτὴν πόλιν βασιλέων, τοῦ τε πρεσβυτάτου τῶν ἄλλων καὶ τοῦ τὸν τέταρτον ἀπὸ τούτου τῆς ἀρχῆς ἐπικρατοῦντος βαθμόν. ἀλλ' οὗτος μὲν τῶν τηνικάδε πρῶτος τοῦτον διαπρέψας τὸν τρόπον ἅμα τε τοιαῦτα οἷα καὶ εἰκὸς ἦν ὑπομείνας ὡς ἂν ἐπὶ τοιούτῳ τολμήματι, τὸ ἄλυπον καὶ ἀτάραχον εἰς αὐτὴν τελευταίαν διετήρησεν ἀναπνοήν.

VI. Πάντων δὲ ὅσοι τῶν πώποτε ἀνυμνοῦνται θαυμάσιοι καὶ ἐπ' ἀνδρείᾳ βεβοημένοι εἴτε παρ' Ἕλλησιν εἴτε παρὰ βαρβάροις, θείους ἤνεγκεν ὁ καιρὸς καὶ διαπρεπεῖς μάρτυρας τοὺς ἀμφὶ τὸν Δωρόθεον βασιλικοὺς παῖδας, οἳ καὶ τῆς ἀνωτάτω παρὰ τοῖς δεσπόταις ἠξιωμένοι τιμῆς γνησίων τε αὐτοῖς διαθέσει τέκνων οὐ λειπόμενοι, μείζονα
Ibid. 11, 26 πλοῦτον ὡς ἀληθῶς ἤγηνται τῆς τοῦ βίου δόξης καὶ τρυφῆς τοὺς ὑπὲρ εὐσεβείας ὀνειδισμούς τε καὶ πόνους καὶ τοὺς κεκαινουργημένους ἐπ' αὐτοῖς πολυτρόπους θανάτους· ὧν ἑνός τινος οἵῳ κέχρηται μνησθέντες τῷ τοῦ βίου τέλει, σκοπεῖν ἐξ αὐτοῦ καὶ τὰ τοῖς ἄλλοις συμβεβηκότα τοῖς ἐντυγχάνουσιν καταλείψομεν.

Ἤγετό τις εἰς μέσον κατὰ τὴν προειρημένην πόλιν ἐφ' ὧν δεδηλώκαμεν ἀρχόντων. θύειν δὴ οὖν προσταχθείς, ὡς ἐνίστατο, γυμνὸς μετάρσιος ἀρθῆναι κελεύεται μάστιξίν τε τὸ πᾶν σῶμα καταξαίνεσθαι, εἰς ὅτε ἡττηθεὶς κἂν ἄκων τὸ προστατ-
τόμενον ποιήσειεν. ὡς δὲ καὶ ταῦτα πάσχων ἀδιάτρεπτος ἦν, ὄξος λοιπὸν ἤδη τῶν ὀστέων ὑποφαινομένων αὐτοῦ σὺν καὶ ἅλατι φύραντες κατὰ τῶν διασαπέντων τοῦ σώματος μερῶν ἐνέχεον·

[1] *i.e.* Diocletian. [2] *i.e.* Galerius.

thing; [and this he did] while two emperors were present in the same city, the senior of them all,[1] and he who held the fourth place in the government after him.[2] But this man was the first of those at that time who thus distinguished himself; and, at the same time, in his endurance of such results as naturally followed a daring act of this kind, he maintained an untroubled and undisturbed demeanour to his very last breath.

VI. But among all those whose praises have ever yet been sung as worthy of admiration and famed for courage, whether by Greeks or barbarians, this occasion produced those divine and outstanding martyrs Dorotheus and the imperial servants that were with him. These persons had been deemed worthy of the highest honour by their masters, who loved them no less than their own children; but they accounted the reproaches and sufferings for piety and the many forms of death that were newly devised against them, as truly greater riches than the fair fame and luxury of this life. We shall mention the kind of death that one of them met, and leave our readers to gather from that instance what happened to the others.

A certain man was publicly brought forward in the city of which we have spoken above, under the rulers we have mentioned. He was ordered to sacrifice; and, as he refused, the command was given that he should be raised on high naked, and have his whole body torn with scourges, until he should give in, and even against his will do what was bidden him. But when he remained unmoved even under these sufferings, they proceeded to mix vinegar and salt together and pour them into the mangled parts of his body, where the bones were already showing. And as he

ὡς δὲ καὶ ταύτας ἐπάτει τὰς ἀλγηδόνας, ἐσχάρα τοὐντεῦθεν καὶ πῦρ εἰς μέσον εἵλκετο, καὶ κρεῶν ἐδωδίμων δίκην τὰ λείψανα αὐτῷ τοῦ σώματος ὑπὸ τοῦ πυρὸς οὐκ εἰς ἄθρουν, ὡς ἂν μὴ συντόμως ἀπαλλαγείη, κατὰ βραχὺ δὲ ἀνηλίσκετο, οὐ πρότερον ἀνεῖναι τῶν ἐπιτιθέντων αὐτὸν τῇ πυρᾷ συγχωρουμένων, πρὶν ἂν καὶ μετὰ τοσαῦτα τοῖς προσταττομένοις ἐπινεύσειεν. ὁ δ' ἀπριξ ἐχόμενος 4
τῆς προθέσεως νικηφόρος ἐν αὐταῖς βασάνοις παρέδωκε τὴν ψυχήν. τοιοῦτον τῶν βασιλικῶν ἑνὸς τὸ μαρτύριον παίδων, ἄξιον ὡς ὄντως καὶ τῆς προσηγορίας· Πέτρος γὰρ ἐκαλεῖτο.

Οὐ χείρονα δὲ καὶ τὰ κατὰ τοὺς λοιποὺς ὄντα 5
λόγου φειδόμενοι συμμετρίας παραλείψομεν, τοσοῦτον ἱστορήσαντες ὡς ὅ τε Δωρόθεος καὶ ὁ Γοργόνιος ἑτέροις ἅμα πλείοσιν τῆς βασιλικῆς οἰκετίας μετὰ τοὺς πολυτρόπους ἀγῶνας βρόχῳ τὴν ζωὴν μεταλλάξαντες, τῆς ἐνθέου νίκης ἀπηνέγκαντο βραβεῖα.

Ἐν τούτῳ τῆς κατὰ Νικομήδειαν ἐκκλησίας ὁ 6
τηνικαῦτα προεστὼς Ἄνθιμος διὰ τὴν εἰς Χριστὸν μαρτυρίαν τὴν κεφαλὴν ἀποτέμνεται· τούτῳ δὲ πλῆθος ἄθρουν μαρτύρων προστίθεται, οὐκ οἶδ' ὅπως ἐν τοῖς κατὰ τὴν Νικομήδειαν βασιλείοις πυρκαϊᾶς ἐν αὐταῖς δὴ ταῖς ἡμέραις ἀφθείσης, ἣν καθ' ὑπόνοιαν ψευδῆ πρὸς τῶν ἡμετέρων ἐπιχειρηθῆναι λόγου διαδοθέντος, παγγενεῖ σωρηδὸν βασιλικῷ νεύματι τῶν τῇδε θεοσεβῶν οἱ μὲν ξίφει κατεσφάττοντο, οἱ δὲ διὰ πυρὸς ἐτελειοῦντο, ὅτε λόγος ἔχει προθυμίᾳ θείᾳ τινὶ καὶ ἀρρήτῳ ἄνδρας ἅμα γυναιξὶν ἐπὶ τὴν πυρὰν καθαλέσθαι· δήσαντες δὲ οἱ δήμιοι ἄλλο τι πλῆθος ἐπὶ σκάφαις τοῖς θαλαττίοις ἐναπέρριπτον βυθοῖς. τοὺς δέ γε βασι- 7

despised these pains also, a gridiron and fire were then produced, and the remnants of his body, just as if it were flesh for eating, were consumed by the fire, not all at once, in case he might find immediate release, but little by little ; nor were those who placed him on the pyre allowed to desist, until, after such sufferings, he should signify his assent to what was commanded. But he clung fixedly to his purpose, and triumphantly gave up the ghost in the midst of his tortures. Such was the martyrdom of one of the imperial servants, who truly was worthy of his name. For he was called Peter.

But we shall pass by the martyrdoms of the rest, though they were not inferior, having regard to the due proportions of the book ; only placing it on record that Dorotheus and Gorgonius, together with many others of the imperial household, after conflicts of various kinds, departed this life by strangling, and so carried off the prizes of the God-given victory.

At that time Anthimus, who then presided over the church at Nicomedia, was beheaded for his witness to Christ. And with him was associated a large number of martyrs all together ; for, I know not how, in the palace at Nicomedia a fire broke out in those very days, and through a false suspicion the rumour went around that it was the work of our people : and by the imperial command the God-fearing persons there, whole families and in heaps, were in some cases butchered with the sword ; while others were perfected by fire, when it is recorded that men and women leaped upon the pyre with a divine and unspeakable eagerness. The executioners bound a multitude of others, and [placing them] on boats threw them into the depths of the sea. As to the imperial

λικοὺς μετὰ θάνατον παῖδας, γῇ μετὰ τῆς προσηκούσης κηδείας παραδοθέντας, αὖθις ἐξ ὑπαρχῆς ἀνορύξαντες ἐναπορρῖψαι θαλάττῃ καὶ αὐτοὺς ᾤοντο δεῖν οἱ νενομισμένοι δεσπόται, ὡς ἂν μὴ ἐν μνήμασιν ἀποκειμένους προσκυνοῖέν τινες, θεοὺς δὴ αὐτούς, ὥς γε ᾤοντο, λογιζόμενοι.

Καὶ τὰ μὲν ἐπὶ τῆς Νικομηδείας κατὰ τὴν ἀρχὴν ἀποτελεσθέντα τοῦ διωγμοῦ τοιαῦτα· οὐκ εἰς 8
μακρὸν δ' ἑτέρων κατὰ τὴν Μελιτηνὴν οὕτω καλουμένην χώραν καὶ αὖ πάλιν ἄλλων ἀμφὶ τὴν Συρίαν ἐπιφυῆναι τῇ βασιλείᾳ πεπειραμένων, τοὺς πανταχόσε τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν προεστῶτας εἱρκταῖς καὶ δεσμοῖς ἐνεῖραι πρόσταγμα ἐφοίτα βασιλικόν. καὶ ἦν ἡ θέα τῶν ἐπὶ τούτοις γινομένων πᾶσαν 9
διήγησιν ὑπεραίρουσα, μυρίου πλήθους ἐν παντὶ τόπῳ καθειργνυμένου καὶ τὰ πανταχῇ δεσμωτήρια, ἀνδροφόνοις καὶ τυμβωρύχοις πάλαι πρότερον ἐπεσκευασμένα, τότε πληρούντων ἐπισκόπων καὶ πρεσβυτέρων καὶ διακόνων ἀναγνωστῶν τε καὶ ἐπορκιστῶν, ὡς μηδὲ χώραν ἔτι τοῖς ἐπὶ κακουργίαις κατακρίτοις αὐτόθι λείπεσθαι.

Αὖθις δ' ἑτέρων τὰ πρῶτα γράμματα ἐπικατ- 10
ειληφότων, ἐν οἷς τοὺς κατακλείστους θύσαντας μὲν ἐᾶν βαδίζειν ἐπ' ἐλευθερίας, ἐνισταμένους δὲ μυρίαις καταξαίνειν προστέτακτο βασάνοις, ὥς ἂν πάλιν ἐνταῦθα τῶν καθ' ἑκάστην ἐπαρχίαν μαρτύρων ἀριθμήσειέν τις τὸ πλῆθος καὶ μάλιστα τῶν κατὰ τὴν Ἀφρικὴν καὶ τὸ Μαύρων ἔθνος Θηβαΐδα τε καὶ κατ' Αἴγυπτον; ἐξ ἧς καὶ εἰς

[1] The province of Armenia Minor, of which Melitene was the capital.

servants, whose bodies after death had been committed to the ground with fitting honours, their reputed masters, starting afresh, deemed it necessary to exhume them and cast them also into the sea, lest any, regarding them as actually gods (so at least they imagined), should worship them as they lay in their tombs.

Such were the things that were done in Nicomedia at the beginning of the persecution. But not long afterwards, when some in the district known as Melitene,[1] and again on the other hand when others in Syria, had attempted to take possession of the Empire,[2] an imperial command went forth that the presidents of the churches everywhere should be thrown into prison and bonds. And the spectacle of what followed surpasses all description ; for in every place a countless number were shut up, and everywhere the prisons, that long ago had been prepared for murderers and grave-robbers, were then filled with bishops and presbyters and deacons, readers and exorcists, so that there was no longer any room left there for those condemned for wrongdoing.

Moreover, the first letter was followed by others, wherein the order had been given that those in prison should be allowed to go in liberty if they sacrificed, but if they refused, should be mutilated by countless tortures. And then, once more, how could one here number the multitude of the martyrs in each province, and especially of those in Africa and Mauretania,[3] and in Thebais and Egypt? From this last country also some departed into other

[2] It is quite uncertain to what rising Eusebius here refers.
[3] Lit. "the province (ἔθνος) of the Moors."

ἑτέρας ἤδη προελθόντες πόλεις τε καὶ ἐπαρχίας διέπρεψαν τοῖς μαρτυρίοις.

VII. Ἴσμεν γοῦν τοὺς ἐξ αὐτῶν διαλάμψαντας 1
ἐν Παλαιστίνῃ, ἴσμεν δὲ καὶ τοὺς ἐν Τύρῳ τῆς Φοινίκης· οὓς τίς ἰδὼν οὐ κατεπλάγη τὰς ἀναρίθμους μάστιγας καὶ τὰς ἐν τούτοις τῶν ὡς ἀληθῶς παραδόξων τῆς θεοσεβείας ἀθλητῶν ἐνστάσεις τόν τε παραχρῆμα μετὰ τὰς μάστιγας ἐν θηρσὶν ἀνθρωποβόροις ἀγῶνα καὶ τὰς ἐν τούτῳ παρδάλεων καὶ διαφόρων ἄρκτων συῶν τε ἀγρίων καὶ πυρὶ καὶ σιδήρῳ κεκαυτηριασμένων βοῶν προσβολὰς καὶ τὰς πρὸς ἕκαστον τῶν θηρίων θαυμασίους τῶν γενναίων ὑπομονάς; οἷς γιγνομένοις καὶ αὐτοὶ 2
παρῆμεν, ὁπηνίκα τοῦ μαρτυρουμένου σωτῆρος ἡμῶν, αὐτοῦ δὴ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, τὴν θείαν δύναμιν ἐπιπαροῦσαν ἐναργῶς τε αὐτὴν τοῖς μάρτυσιν ἐπιδεικνῦσαν ἱστορήσαμεν, τῶν ἀνθρωποβόρων ἐπὶ πλείονα χρόνον μὴ προσψαύειν μηδὲ πλησιάζειν τοῖς τῶν θεοφιλῶν σώμασιν ἐπιτολμώντων, ἀλλ' ἐπὶ μὲν τοὺς ἄλλους, ὅσοι δήπουθεν ἔξωθεν ἐρεθισμοῖς παρώρμων αὐτά, φερομένων, μόνων δὲ τῶν ἱερῶν ἀθλητῶν, γυμνῶν ἑστώτων καὶ ταῖς χερσὶν κατασειόντων ἐπί τε σφᾶς αὐτοὺς ἐπισπωμένων (τοῦτο γὰρ αὐτοῖς ἐκελεύετο πράττειν), μηδ' ὅλως ἐφαπτομένων, ἀλλ' ἔσθ' ὅπῃ μὲν καὶ ἐπ' αὐτοὺς ὁρμώντων, οἷα δὲ πρός τινος θειοτέρας δυνάμεως ἀνακρουομένων καὶ αὖ πάλιν εἰς τοὐπίσω χωρούντων· ὃ καὶ εἰς μακρὸν γινόμενον θαῦμα 3
παρεῖχεν οὐ σμικρὸν τοῖς θεωμένοις, ὥστε ἤδη διὰ τὸ ἄπρακτον τοῦ πρώτου δεύτερον καὶ τρίτον προσαφίεσθαι ἐνὶ καὶ τῷ αὐτῷ μάρτυρι θηρίον.

cities and provinces and were distinguished in their martyrdoms.

VII. We know at any rate those of them who were conspicuous in Palestine, and we know also those at Tyre in Phoenicia. Who that saw them was not struck with amazement at the numberless lashes and the stedfastness displayed under them by these truly marvellous champions of godliness; at the conflict with man-eating wild beasts that followed immediately on the lashes; the attacks that then took place of leopards and different kinds of bears, of wild boars and bulls goaded with hot iron; and the marvellous endurance of these noble persons when opposed to each of the wild beasts? We ourselves were present when these things were happening, what time we beheld the present, divine power of our Saviour, Jesus Christ Himself, the Object of their witness, and the clear manifestation of that power to the martyrs. The man-eating beasts for a considerable time did not dare to touch or even approach the bodies of those who were dear to God, but made their attacks on the others who presumably were provoking and urging them on from the outside; while the holy champions were the only persons they did not reach at all, though they stood naked, waving their hands to draw them on to themselves (for this they were commanded to do); and sometimes, when the beasts would make a rush at them, they would be checked by, as it were, some divine power and once again retreat to the rear. And when this happened for a long time, it occasioned no small astonishment among the spectators, so that, as the first beast did nothing, a second and a third were let loose against one and the same martyr.

Καταπλαγῆναι δ' ἦν τὴν ἐπὶ τούτοις ἀπτόητον 4
τῶν ἱερῶν ἐκείνων καρτερίαν καὶ τὴν ἐν σώμασι
νέοις βεβηκυῖαν καὶ ἀδιάτρεπτον ἔνστασιν. ἑώρας
γοῦν ἡλικίαν οὐδ' ὅλων ἐτῶν εἴκοσι δίχα δεσμῶν
ἑστῶτος νέου καὶ τὰς μὲν χεῖρας ἐφαπλοῦντος εἰς
σταυροῦ τύπον, ἀκαταπλήκτῳ δὲ καὶ ἀτρεμεῖ
διανοίᾳ ταῖς πρὸς τὸ θεῖον σχολαίτατα τεταμένου
λιταῖς μηδ' ὅλως τε μεθισταμένου μηδ' ἀποκλίνον-
τός ποι τοῦ ἔνθα εἱστήκει τόπου, ἄρκτων καὶ παρ-
δάλεων θυμοῦ καὶ θανάτου πνεόντων σχεδὸν αὐτῆς
καθαπτομένων αὐτοῦ τῆς σαρκός, ἀλλ' οὐκ οἶδ'
ὅπως θείᾳ καὶ ἀπορρήτῳ δυνάμει μόνον οὐχὶ
φραττομένων τὸ στόμα καὶ αὖθις παλινδρομούντων
εἰς τοὐπίσω. καὶ οὗτος μέν τις τοιοῦτος ἦν· 5
πάλιν δ' ἂν ἑτέρους εἶδες (πέντε γὰρ οἱ πάντες
ἐτύγχανον) ἠγριωμένῳ ταύρῳ παραβληθέντας, ὃς
τοὺς μὲν ἄλλους τῶν ἔξωθεν προσιόντων τοῖς
κέρασιν εἰς τὸν ἀέρα ῥίπτων διεσπάραττεν, ἡμι-
θνῆτας αἴρεσθαι καταλιπών, ἐπὶ μόνους δὲ θυμῷ
καὶ ἀπειλῇ τοὺς ἱεροὺς ὁρμῶν μάρτυρας οὐδὲ
πλησιάζειν αὐτοῖς οἷός τε ἦν, κυρίττων δὲ τοῖς
ποσὶν καὶ τοῖς κέρασιν τῇδε κἀκεῖσε χρώμενος καὶ
διὰ τοὺς ἀπὸ τῶν καυτήρων ἐρεθισμοὺς θυμοῦ καὶ
Acts 9, 1 ἀπειλῆς πνέων εἰς τοὐπίσω πρὸς τῆς ἱερᾶς ἀνθ-
είλκετο προνοίας, ὡς μηδὲ τούτου μηδὲν μηδαμῶς
αὐτοὺς ἀδικήσαντος, ἕτερα ἄττα αὐτοῖς ἐπαφίεσθαι
θηρία. τέλος δ' οὖν μετὰ τὰς δεινὰς καὶ ποικίλας 6
τούτων προσβολὰς ξίφει κατασφαγέντες οἱ πάντες
ἀντὶ γῆς καὶ τάφων τοῖς θαλαττίοις παραδίδονται
κύμασιν. VIII. καὶ τοιοῦτος μὲν ὁ ἀγὼν τῶν 1
κατὰ Τύρον τοὺς ὑπὲρ εὐσεβείας ἄθλους ἐν-
δειξαμένων Αἰγυπτίων.

One might be astounded at the fearless and valiant bearing of those holy persons in the face of these trials, and the steady, inflexible endurance to be found in young bodies. For example, you might have seen a youth, not twenty years old in all, standing unbound, his hands spread in the form of a cross, and, with a mind undismayed and unmoved, most leisurely engaged in earnest prayer to the Deity ; never a whit changing his ground or retreating from the place where he had taken his stand, while bears and leopards, breathing anger and death, almost touched his very flesh. And yet, by a divine and mysterious power I cannot explain, their mouths were muzzled, so to speak, and they ran back again to the rear. Such a one was he. Again you might have seen others (for they were five in all) thrown to a maddened bull, who, when others approached from the outside, tossed them into the air with his horns and mangled them, leaving them to be taken up half-dead ; but when he rushed in threatening anger at the holy martyrs as they stood unprotected, he was unable even to approach them, though he pawed with his feet and pushed with his horns this way and that ; and though the goading irons provoked him to breathe anger and threatening he was dragged away backwards by Divine Providence ; so that other wild beasts were let loose against them, since the bull in no way did them the slightest injury. Then at last, after the terrible and varied assaults of these beasts, they were all butchered with the sword, and instead of being buried in the earth were committed to the waves of the sea. VIII. Such was the contest of the Egyptians who at Tyre displayed their conflicts on behalf of piety.

Θαυμάσειε δ' ἄν τις αὐτῶν καὶ τοὺς ἐπὶ τῆς οἰκείας γῆς μαρτυρήσαντας, ἔνθα μυρίοι τὸν ἀριθμόν, ἄνδρες ἅμα γυναιξὶν καὶ παισίν, ὑπὲρ τῆς τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν διδασκαλίας, τοῦ προσκαίρου ζῆν καταφρονήσαντες, διαφόρους ὑπέμειναν θανάτους, οἱ μὲν αὐτῶν μετὰ ξεσμοὺς καὶ στρεβλώσεις μάστιγάς τε χαλεπωτάτας καὶ μυρίας ἄλλας ποικίλας καὶ φρικτὰς ἀκοῦσαι βασάνους πυρὶ παραδοθέντες, οἱ δὲ πελάγει καταβροχθισθέντες, ἄλλοι δ' εὐθαρσῶς τοῖς ἀποτέμνουσιν τὰς ἑαυτῶν προτείναντες κεφαλάς, οἱ δὲ καὶ ἐναποθανόντες ταῖς βασάνοις, ἕτεροι δὲ λιμῷ διαφθαρέντες, καὶ ἄλλοι πάλιν ἀνασκολοπισθέντες, οἱ μὲν κατὰ τὸ σύνηθες τοῖς κακούργοις, οἱ δὲ καὶ χειρόνως ἀνάπαλιν κάτω κάρα προσηλωθέντες τηρούμενοί τε ζῶντες, εἰς ὅτε καὶ ἐπ' αὐτῶν ἰκρίων λιμῷ διαφθαρεῖεν.

IX. Πάντα δ' ὑπεραίρει λόγον καὶ ἃς ὑπέμειναν 1
αἰκίας καὶ ἀλγηδόνας οἱ κατὰ Θηβαΐδα μάρτυρες, ὀστράκοις ἀντὶ ὀνύχων ὅλον τὸ σῶμα καὶ μέχρις ἀπαλλαγῆς τοῦ βίου καταξαινόμενοι, γύναιά τε τοῖν ποδοῖν ἐξ ἑνὸς ἀποδεσμούμενα μετέωρά τε καὶ διαέρια κάτω κεφαλὴν μαγγάνοις τισὶν εἰς ὕψος ἀνελκόμενα γυμνοῖς τε παντελῶς καὶ μηδ' ἐπικεκαλυμμένοις τοῖς σώμασιν θέαν ταύτην αἰσχίστην καὶ πάντων ὠμοτάτην καὶ ἀπανθρωποτάτην τοῖς ὁρῶσιν ἅπασιν παρεσχημένα· ἄλλοι δ' αὖ 2
πάλιν δένδρεσιν καὶ πρέμνοις ἐναπέθνῃσκον δεσμούμενοι· τοὺς γὰρ μάλιστα στερροτάτους τῶν κλάδων μηχαναῖς τισιν ἐπὶ ταὐτὸ συνέλκοντες εἰς ἑκάτερά τε τούτων τὰ τῶν μαρτύρων ἀποτείνοντες σκέλη, εἰς τὴν ἑαυτῶν ἡφίεσαν τοὺς κλάδους

But one must admire those of them also that were martyred in their own land, where countless numbers, men, women and children, despising this passing life, endured various forms of death for the sake of our Saviour's teaching. Some of them were committed to the flames after being torn and racked and grievously scourged, and suffering other manifold torments terrible to hear, while some were engulfed in the sea; others with a good courage stretched forth their heads to them that cut them off, or died in the midst of their tortures, or perished of hunger; and others again were crucified, some as malefactors usually are, and some, even more brutally, were nailed in the opposite manner, head-downwards, and kept alive until they should perish of hunger on the gibbet.

IX. But it surpasses all description what the martyrs in the Thebais endured as regards both outrages and agonies. They had the entire body torn to pieces with sharp sherds instead of claws, even until life was extinct. Women were fastened by one foot and swung aloft through the air, head-downwards, to a height by certain machines, their bodies completely naked with not even a covering; and thus they presented this most disgraceful, cruel and inhuman of all spectacles to the whole company of onlookers. Others, again, were fastened to trees and trunks, and so died. For they drew together by certain machines the very strongest of the branches, to each of which they fastened one of the martyr's legs, and then released the branches to take up their

φέρεσθαι φύσιν, ἄθρουν τῶν μελῶν διασπασμὸν καθ' ὧν ταῦτ' ἐνεχείρουν ἐπινοοῦντες. καὶ ταῦτά 3
γε πάντα ἐνηργεῖτο οὐκ ἐπ' ὀλίγας ἡμέρας ἢ χρόνον τινὰ βραχύν, ἀλλ' ἐπὶ μακρὸν ὅλων ἐτῶν διάστημα, ὁτὲ μὲν πλειόνων ἢ δέκα, ὁτὲ δὲ ὑπὲρ τοὺς εἴκοσι τὸν ἀριθμὸν ἀναιρουμένων, ἄλλοτε δὲ οὐχ ἧττον καὶ τριάκοντα, ἤδη δ' ἐγγύς που ἑξήκοντα, καὶ πάλιν ἄλλοτε ἑκατὸν ἐν ἡμέρᾳ μιᾷ ἄνδρες ἅμα κομιδῇ νηπίοις καὶ γυναιξὶν ἐκτείνοντο, ποικίλαις καὶ ἐναλλαττούσαις τιμωρίαις καταδικαζόμενοι.

Ἱστορήσαμεν δὲ καὶ αὐτοὶ ἐπὶ τῶν τόπων γενό- 4
μενοι πλείους ἀθρόως κατὰ μίαν ἡμέραν τοὺς μὲν τῆς κεφαλῆς ἀποτομὴν ὑπομείναντας, τοὺς δὲ τὴν διὰ πυρὸς τιμωρίαν, ὡς ἀμβλύνεσθαι φονεύοντα τὸν σίδηρον ἀτονοῦντά τε διαθλᾶσθαι αὐτούς τε τοὺς ἀναιροῦντας ἀποκάμνοντας ἀμοιβαδὸν ἀλλήλους διαδέχεσθαι· ὅτε καὶ θαυμασιωτάτην ὁρμὴν 5
θείαν τε ὡς ἀληθῶς δύναμιν καὶ προθυμίαν τῶν εἰς τὸν Χριστὸν τοῦ θεοῦ πεπιστευκότων συνεωρῶμεν. ἅμα γοῦν τῇ κατὰ τῶν προτέρων ἀποφάσει ἐπεπήδων ἄλλοθεν ἄλλοι τῷ πρὸ τοῦ δικαστοῦ βήματι Χριστιανοὺς σφᾶς ὁμολογοῦντες, ἀφροντίστως μὲν πρὸς τὰ δεινὰ καὶ τοὺς τῶν πολυειδῶν βασάνων τρόπους διακείμενοι, ἀκαταπλήκτως δὲ παρρησιαζόμενοι ἐπὶ τῇ εἰς τὸν τῶν ὅλων θεὸν εὐσεβείᾳ μετά τε χαρᾶς καὶ γέλωτος καὶ εὐφροσύνης τὴν ὑστάτην ἀπόφασιν τοῦ θανάτου καταδεχόμενοι, ὥστε ψάλλειν καὶ ὕμνους καὶ εὐχαριστίας εἰς τὸν τῶν ὅλων θεὸν μέχρις αὐτῆς ἐσχάτης ἀναπέμπειν ἀναπνοῆς. θαυμάσιοι μὲν 6
οὖν καὶ οὗτοι, ἐξαιρέτως δ' ἐκεῖνοι θαυμασιώτεροι

natural position : thus contriving the rending asunder all at once of the limbs of those who were the objects of this device. And indeed all these things were done, not for a few days or for some brief space, but for a long period extending over whole years—sometimes more than ten, at other times above twenty persons being put to death ; and at others not less than thirty, now nearer sixty, and again at other times a hundred men would be slain in a single day, along with quite young children and women, being condemned to manifold punishments which followed one on the other.

And we ourselves also beheld, when we were at these places, many all at once in a single day, some of whom suffered decapitation, others the punishment of fire ; so that the murderous axe was dulled and, worn out, was broken in pieces, while the executioners themselves grew utterly weary and took it in turns to succeed one another. It was then that we observed a most marvellous eagerness and a truly divine power and zeal in those who had placed their faith in the Christ of God. Thus, as soon as sentence was given against the first, some from one quarter and others from another would leap up to the tribunal before the judge and confess themselves Christians ; paying no heed when faced with terrors and the varied forms of tortures, but undismayedly and boldly speaking of the piety towards the God of the universe, and with joy and laughter and gladness receiving the final sentence of death ; so that they sang and sent up hymns and thanksgivings to the God of the universe even to the very last breath. And while these indeed were marvellous, those especially were marvellous who were distinguished

οἱ πλούτῳ μὲν καὶ εὐγενείᾳ καὶ δόξῃ λόγῳ τε καὶ φιλοσοφίᾳ διαπρέψαντες, πάντα γε μὴν δεύτερα θέμενοι τῆς ἀληθοῦς εὐσεβείας καὶ τῆς εἰς τὸν σωτῆρα καὶ κύριον ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν πίστεως, οἷος Φιλόρωμος ἦν, ἀρχήν τινα οὐ τὴν τυχοῦσαν 7
τῆς κατ' Ἀλεξάνδρειαν βασιλικῆς διοικήσεως ἐγκεχειρισμένος, ὃς μετὰ τοῦ ἀξιώματος καὶ τῆς Ῥωμαϊκῆς τιμῆς, ὑπὸ στρατιώταις δορυφορούμενος, ἑκάστης ἀνεκρίνετο ἡμέρας, Φιλέας τε τῆς Θμουϊτῶν ἐκκλησίας ἐπίσκοπος, διαπρέψας ἀνὴρ ταῖς κατὰ τὴν πατρίδα πολιτείαις τε καὶ λειτουργίαις ἔν τε τοῖς κατὰ φιλοσοφίαν λόγοις· οἳ 8
καὶ μυρίων ὅσων πρὸς αἵματός τε καὶ τῶν ἄλλων φίλων ἀντιβολούντων, ἔτι μὴν τῶν ἐπ' ἀξίας ἀρχόντων, πρὸς δὲ καὶ αὐτοῦ τοῦ δικαστοῦ παρακαλοῦντος ὡς ἂν αὐτῶν οἶκτον λάβοιεν φειδώ τε παίδων καὶ γυναικῶν ποιήσοιντο, οὐδαμῶς πρὸς τῶν τοσούτων ἐπὶ τὸ φιλοζωῆσαι μὲν ἐλέσθαι,
Matt. 10 32 f.; Lk. 12, 8 f. καταφρονῆσαι δὲ τῶν περὶ ὁμολογίας καὶ ἀρνήσεως τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν θεσμῶν ὑπήχθησαν, ἀνδρείῳ δὲ λογισμῷ καὶ φιλοσόφῳ, μᾶλλον δὲ εὐσεβεῖ καὶ φιλοθέῳ ψυχῇ πρὸς ἁπάσας τοῦ δικαστοῦ τάς τε ἀπειλὰς καὶ τὰς ὕβρεις ἐνστάντες, ἄμφω τὰς κεφαλὰς ἀπετμήθησαν.

Χ. Ἐπεὶ δὲ καὶ τῶν ἔξωθεν μαθημάτων ἕνεκα 1
πολλοῦ λόγου ἄξιον γενέσθαι τὸν Φιλέαν ἔφαμεν, αὐτὸς ἑαυτοῦ παρίτω μάρτυς, ἅμα μὲν ἑαυτὸν ὅστις ποτ' ἦν, ἐπιδείξων, ἅμα δὲ καὶ τὰ κατ' αὐτὸν ἐν τῇ Ἀλεξανδρείᾳ συμβεβηκότα μαρτύρια ἀκριβέστερον μᾶλλον ἢ ἡμεῖς ἱστορήσων διὰ τούτων τῶν λέξεων.

for wealth, birth and reputation, as also for learning and philosophy, and yet put everything second to true piety and faith in our Saviour and Lord Jesus Christ. Such was Philoromus; who had been entrusted with an office of no small importance in the imperial administration at Alexandria, and who, in connexion with the dignity and rank that he had from the Romans, used to conduct judicial inquiries every day, attended by a bodyguard of soldiers. Such also was Phileas, bishop of the church of the Thmuites,[1] a man who was distinguished for the services he rendered to his country in public positions, and also for his skill in philosophy. And though great numbers of relatives and other friends besought them, as well as many officials of high rank, and though the judge himself exhorted them to take pity on themselves and spare their children and wives, they could in no wise be induced by this strong pressure to decide in favour of love of life and despise the ordinances of our Saviour as to confessing and denying; but with a brave and philosophic resolution, nay rather, with a pious and godly soul, they stood firm against all the threats and insults of the judge, and both were beheaded.

X. But since we said[2] that Phileas deserved a high reputation for his secular learning as well, let him appear as his own witness, to show us who he was, and at the same time to relate, more accurately than we could, the martyrdoms that took place at Alexandria. Here are his words:

[1] Thmuis was a town in Lower Egypt.
[2] 9. 7, above.

ΑΠΟ ΤΩΝ ΦΙΛΕΟΥ ΠΡΟΣ ΘΜΟΤΙΤΑΣ ΓΡΑΜΜΑΤΩΝ

"Τούτων ἁπάντων ὑποδειγμάτων ἡμῖν καὶ 2
ὑπογραμμῶν καὶ καλῶν γνωρισμάτων ἐν ταῖς
θείαις καὶ ἱεραῖς γραφαῖς κειμένων, οὐδὲν μελ-
λήσαντες οἱ μακάριοι σὺν ἡμῖν μάρτυρες, τὸ τῆς
ψυχῆς ὄμμα πρὸς τὸν ἐπὶ πάντων θεὸν καθαρῶς
τείναντες καὶ τὸν ἐπ' εὐσεβείᾳ θάνατον ἐν νῷ
λαβόντες, ἀπρὶξ τῆς κλήσεως εἴχοντο, τὸν μὲν
κύριον ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν εὑρόντες ἐνανθρωπή-
σαντα δι' ἡμᾶς, ἵνα πᾶσαν μὲν ἁμαρτίαν ἐκκόψῃ,
ἐφόδια δὲ τῆς εἰς τὴν αἰώνιον ζωὴν εἰσόδου ἡμῖν
Phil. 2, 6-8 κατάθηται· οὐ γὰρ ἁρπαγμὸν ἡγήσατο τὸ εἶναι ἴσα
θεῷ, ἀλλ' ἑαυτὸν ἐκένωσεν μορφὴν δούλου λαβών,
καὶ σχήματι εὑρεθεὶς ὡς ἄνθρωπος ἑαυτὸν ἐταπεί-
νωσεν ἕως θανάτου, θανάτου δὲ σταυροῦ· δι' ὃ 3
1 Cor. 12, 31 καὶ ζηλώσαντες τὰ μείζονα χαρίσματα οἱ χριστο-
φόροι μάρτυρες πάντα μὲν πόνον καὶ παντοίας
ἐπινοίας αἰκισμῶν οὐκ εἰς ἅπαξ, ἀλλ' ἤδη καὶ
δεύτερόν τινες ὑπέμειναν, πάσας δὲ ἀπειλὰς οὐ
λόγοις μόνον, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἔργοις τῶν δορυφόρων κατ'
αὐτῶν φιλοτιμουμένων, οὐκ ἐνεδίδουν τὴν γνώμην
1 John 4, 18 διὰ τὸ τὴν τελείαν ἀγάπην ἔξω βάλλειν τὸν φόβον·
ὧν καταλέγειν τὴν ἀρετὴν καὶ τὴν ἐφ' ἑκάστῃ 4
βασάνῳ ἀνδρείαν τίς ἂν ἀρκέσειεν λόγος; ἀνέσεως
γὰρ οὔσης ἅπασι τοῖς βουλομένοις ἐνυβρίζειν, οἳ
μὲν ξύλοις ἔπαιον, ἕτεροι δὲ ῥάβδοις, ἄλλοι δὲ
μάστιξιν, ἕτεροι δὲ πάλιν ἱμᾶσιν, ἄλλοι δὲ σχοινίοις.
καὶ ἦν ἡ θέα τῶν αἰκισμῶν ἐνηλλαγμένη καὶ 5
πολλὴν τὴν ἐν αὐτῇ κακίαν ἔχουσα. οἳ μὲν γὰρ
ὀπίσω τὼ χεῖρε δεθέντες περὶ τὸ ξύλον ἐξηρτῶντο

From the Writings of Phileas to the Thmuites.

"Since all these examples and patterns and goodly tokens are placed before us in the divine and sacred Scriptures, the blessed martyrs with us did not hesitate, but directed the eye of the soul sincerely toward the God who is over all, and with a mind resolved on death for piety they clung fast to their calling, finding that our Lord Jesus Christ became man for our sakes, that He might destroy every kind of sin, and provide us with the means of entering into eternal life. For He counted it not a prize to be on an equality with God, but emptied Himself, taking the form of a servant; and being found in fashion as a man, He humbled Himself unto death, yea, the death of the cross. Wherefore also, desiring earnestly the greater gifts, the Christ-bearing martyrs endured every kind of suffering and all manner of devices of torture, not once, but even a second time in some cases; and though their guards vied in all kinds of threats against them, not only in word but also in deed, they refused to give up their resolution, because perfect love casteth out fear. What account would suffice to reckon up their bravery and courage under each torture? For when all who wished were given a free hand to insult them, some smote them with cudgels, others with rods, others with scourges; others, again, with straps, and others with ropes. And the spectacle of their tortures was a varied one with no lack of wickedness therein. Some with both hands bound behind them were suspended upon the gibbet, and with the aid of cer-

καὶ μαγγάνοις τισὶ διετείνοντο πᾶν μέλος, εἶθ' οὕτως διὰ παντὸς τοῦ σώματος ἐπῆγον ἐκ κελεύσεως οἱ βασανισταί, οὐ καθάπερ τοῖς φονεῦσιν ἐπὶ τῶν πλευρῶν μόνον, ἀλλὰ καὶ τῆς γαστρὸς καὶ κνημῶν καὶ παρειῶν τοῖς ἀμυντηρίοις ἐκόλαζον· ἕτεροι δὲ ἀπὸ τῆς στοᾶς μιᾶς χειρὸς ἐξηρτημένοι αἰωροῦντο, πάσης ἀλγηδόνος δεινοτέραν τὴν ἀπὸ τῶν ἄρθρων καὶ μελῶν τάσιν ἔχοντες· ἄλλοι δὲ πρὸς τοῖς κίοσιν ἀντιπρόσωποι ἐδοῦντο, οὐ βεβηκόσιν τοῖς ποσίν, τῷ δὲ βάρει τοῦ σώματος βιαζομένων μετὰ τάσεως ἀνελκομένων τῶν δεσμῶν. καὶ τοῦθ' ὑπέμενον, οὐκ ἐφ' ὅσον προσδιελέγετο 6
οὐδ' αὐτοῖς ἐσχόλαζεν ὁ ἡγεμών, ἀλλὰ μόνον οὐχὶ δι' ὅλης τῆς ἡμέρας. ὅτε γὰρ καὶ ἐφ' ἑτέρους μετέβαινεν, τοῖς προτέροις κατελίμπανεν ἐφεδρεύειν τοὺς τῇ ἐξουσίᾳ αὐτοῦ ὑπηρετουμένους, εἴ πού τις ἡττηθεὶς τῶν βασάνων ἐνδιδόναι ἐδόκει, ἀφειδῶς δὲ κελεύων καὶ τοῖς δεσμοῖς προσιέναι καὶ μετὰ ταῦτα ψυχορραγοῦντας αὐτοὺς κατατιθεμένους εἰς τὴν γῆν ἕλκεσθαι· οὐ γὰρ εἶναι κἂν 7
μέρος φροντίδος αὐτοῖς περὶ ἡμῶν, ἀλλ' οὕτω καὶ διανοεῖσθαι καὶ πράττειν, ὡς μηκέτ' ὄντων, ταύτην δευτέραν βάσανον ἐπὶ ταῖς πληγαῖς τῶν ὑπεναντίων ἐφευρόντων. ἦσαν δὲ οἱ καὶ μετὰ τοὺς 8
αἰκισμοὺς ἐπὶ τοῦ ξύλου κείμενοι, διὰ τῶν τεσσάρων ὀπῶν διατεταμένοι ἄμφω τὼ πόδε, ὡς καὶ κατὰ ἀνάγκην αὐτοὺς ἐπὶ τοῦ ξύλου ὑπτίους εἶναι, μὴ δυναμένους διὰ τὸ ἔναυλα τὰ τραύματα ἀπὸ τῶν πληγῶν καθ' ὅλου τοῦ σώματος ἔχειν· ἕτεροι δὲ εἰς τοὔδαφος ῥιφέντες ἔκειντο ὑπὸ τῆς τῶν

tain machines stretched out in every limb ; then, as they lay in this plight, the torturers acting on orders began to lay on over their whole body, not only, as in the case of murderers, punishing their sides with the instruments of torture, but also their belly, legs and cheeks. Others were suspended from the porch by one hand and raised aloft ; and in the tension of their joints and limbs experienced unequalled agony. Others were bound with their face towards pillars, their feet not touching the ground, and thus their bonds were drawn tight by the pressure upon them of the weight of the body. And this they would endure, not while the governor conversed or was engaged with them, but almost throughout the entire day. For when he went away to others, he would leave the agents of his authority to watch the first, if perchance anyone should be overcome by the tortures and seem to give in ; and he bade them approach mercilessly with bonds also,[1] and, when they were at the last gasp after all this, take them down to the ground and drag them off. For [he said] that they were not to have the least particle of regard for us, but to be so disposed and act as if we were no longer of any account. Such was the second torture that our enemies devised in addition to the stripes. And some, even after the tortures, were placed in the stocks, and had both feet stretched out to the fourth hole, so that they were compelled to lie on their back therein, being unable [to sit upright] because of the recent wounds they had from the stripes over the whole body. Others were thrown to the ground and lay there, by reason of the whole-

[1] The text gives no good sense : perhaps we should read προστιθέναι for προσιέναι : "he bade them actually add to their bonds without mercy."

βασάνων ἀθρόας προσβολῆς, δεινοτέραν τὴν ὄψιν τῆς ἐνεργείας τοῖς ὁρῶσιν παρέχοντες, ποικίλας καὶ διαφόρους ἐν τοῖς σώμασιν φέροντες τῶν βασάνων τὰς ἐπινοίας. τούτων οὕτως ἐχόντων 9 οἱ μὲν ἐναπέθνῃσκον ταῖς βασάνοις, τῇ καρτερίᾳ καταισχύναντες τὸν ἀντίπαλον, οἱ δὲ ἡμιθνῆτες ἐν τῷ δεσμωτηρίῳ συγκλειόμενοι, μετ' οὐ πολλὰς ἡμέρας ταῖς ἀλγηδόσι συνεχόμενοι ἐτελειοῦντο, οἱ δὲ λοιποὶ τῆς ἀπὸ τῆς θεραπείας ἀνακτήσεως τυχόντες τῷ χρόνῳ καὶ τῇ τῆς φυλακῆς διατριβῇ θαρσαλεώτεροι ἐγίνοντο. οὕτω γοῦν, ἡνίκα προσ- 10 ετέτακτο αἱρέσεως κειμένης ἢ ἐφαψάμενον τῆς ἐναγοῦς θυσίας ἀνενόχλητον εἶναι, τῆς ἐπαράτου ἐλευθερίας παρ' αὐτῶν τυχόντα, ἢ μὴ θύοντα τὴν ἐπὶ θανάτῳ δίκην ἐκδέχεσθαι, οὐδὲν μελλήσαντες ἀσμένως ἐπὶ τὸν θάνατον ἐχώρουν· ἤδεσαν γὰρ τὰ ὑπὸ τῶν ἱερῶν γραφῶν ἡμῖν προορισθέντα. 'ὁ γὰρ
Ex. 22, 20 θυσιάζων,' φησίν, 'θεοῖς ἑτέροις ἐξολοθρευθήσεται,'
Ibid. 20, 3 καὶ ὅτι 'οὐκ ἔσονταί σοι θεοὶ ἕτεροι πλὴν ἐμοῦ.'"

Τοιαῦται τοῦ ὡς ἀληθῶς φιλοσόφου τε ὁμοῦ 11 καὶ φιλοθέου μάρτυρος αἱ φωναὶ ἃς πρὸ τελευταίας ἀποφάσεως, ὑπὸ τὴν δεσμωτικὴν ἔθ' ὑπάρχων τάξιν, τοῖς κατὰ τὴν αὐτοῦ παροικίαν ἀδελφοῖς ἐπεστάλκει, ἅμα μὲν τὰ ἐν οἷς ἦν, ἀνατιθέμενος, ἅμα δὲ καὶ παρορμῶν αὐτοὺς ἐπὶ τὸ ἁπλῆξ ἔχεσθαι καὶ μετ' αὐτὸν ὅσον οὔπω τελειωθησόμενον τῆς ἐν Χριστῷ θεοσεβείας. ἀλλὰ τί χρὴ πολλὰ λέγειν 12 καὶ καινοτέρας ἐπὶ καινοτέραις τῶν ἀνὰ τὴν οἰκουμένην θεοπρεπῶν μαρτύρων ἀθλήσεις παρατίθεσθαι, μάλιστα τῶν οὐκέτι μὲν κοινῷ νόμῳ, πολέμου δὲ τρόπῳ πεπολιορκημένων;

sale application of the tortures ; presenting to those who saw them a sight more terrible than did the actual punishment, in that they bore on their bodies marks of the manifold and varied tortures that were devised. In this condition of affairs, some died under their tortures, having shamed the adversary by their endurance ; while others were shut up half dead in prison, and after not many days perfected by reason of their agonies ; the remainder recovered under treatment, and as the result of time and their stay in prison gained confidence. So then, when the order was given and the choice held out, either to touch the abominable sacrifice and be unmolested, receiving from them the accursed freedom ; or not to sacrifice and be punished with death : without hesitation they gladly went to their death. For they knew what had been prescribed for us by the sacred Scriptures. For he says, 'He that sacrificeth unto other gods shall be utterly destroyed' ; and, 'Thou shalt have none other gods but me.'

Such are the words of the martyr, true lover both of wisdom and of God, which he sent to the brethren in his community before the final sentence, when he was still in a state of imprisonment, at one and the same time showing the conditions in which he was living, and also stirring them up to hold fast to the fear of God in Christ, even after his death who was just about to be perfected. But why need one make a long story and add fresh instance upon instance of the conflicts of the godly martyrs throughout the world, especially of those who were assailed no longer by the common law, but as if they were enemies ?

XI. Ἤδη γοῦν ὅλην Χριστιανῶν πολίχνην 1
αὔτανδρον ἀμφὶ τὴν Φρυγίαν ἐν κύκλῳ περι-
βαλόντες ὁπλῖται πῦρ τε ὑφάψαντες κατέφλεξαν
αὐτοῖς ἅμα νηπίοις καὶ γυναιξὶ τὸν ἐπὶ πάντων
θεὸν ἐπιβοωμένοις, ὅτι δὴ πανδημεὶ πάντες οἱ τὴν
πόλιν οἰκοῦντες λογιστής τε αὐτὸς καὶ στρατηγοὶ
σὺν τοῖς ἐν τέλει πᾶσιν καὶ ὅλῳ δήμῳ Χριστιανοὺς
σφᾶς ὁμολογοῦντες, οὐδ' ὁπωστιοῦν τοῖς προσ-
τάττουσιν εἰδωλολατρεῖν ἐπειθάρχουν.

Καί τις ἕτερος Ῥωμαϊκῆς ἀξίας ἐπειλημμένος, 2
Ἄδυκτος τοὔνομα, γένος τῶν παρ' Ἰταλοῖς
ἐπισήμων, διὰ πάσης προελθὼν ἀνὴρ τῆς παρὰ
βασιλεῦσι τιμῆς, ὡς καὶ τὰς καθόλου διοικήσεις
τῆς παρ' αὐτοῖς καλουμένης μαγιστρότητός τε
καὶ καθολικότητος ἀμέμπτως διελθεῖν, ἐπὶ πᾶσι
τούτοις διαπρέψας τοῖς ἐν θεοσεβείᾳ κατορθώμασιν
καὶ ταῖς εἰς τὸν Χριστὸν τοῦ θεοῦ ὁμολογίαις, τῷ
τοῦ μαρτυρίου διαδήματι κατεκοσμήθη, ἐπ' αὐτῆς
τῆς τοῦ καθολικοῦ πράξεως τὸν ὑπὲρ εὐσεβείας
ὑπομείνας ἀγῶνα.

XII. Τί με χρὴ νῦν ἐπ' ὀνόματος τῶν λοιπῶν 1
μνημονεύειν ἢ τὸ πλῆθος τῶν ἀνδρῶν ἀριθμεῖν ἢ
τὰς πολυτρόπους αἰκίας ἀναζωγραφεῖν τῶν θαυ-
μασίων μαρτύρων, τοτὲ μὲν πέλυξιν ἀναιρουμένων,
οἷα γέγονεν τοῖς ἐπ' Ἀραβίας, τοτὲ δὲ τὰ σκέλη
κατεαγνυμένων, οἷα τοῖς ἐν Καππαδοκίᾳ συμ-
βέβηκεν, καὶ ποτὲ μὲν κατὰ κεφαλῆς ἐκ τοῖν
ποδοῖν εἰς ὕψος ἀναρτωμένων καὶ μαλθακοῦ
πυρὸς ὑποκαιομένου τῷ παραπεμπομένῳ καπνῷ
τῆς φλεγομένης ὕλης ἀποπνιγομένων, οἷα τοῖς ἐν

XI. For instance, at this time armed soldiers surrounded a little town in Phrygia, of which the inhabitants were all Christians, every man of them, and setting fire to it burnt them, along with young children and women as they were calling upon the God who is over all. The reason of this was, that all the inhabitants of the town to a man, the curator himself and the duumvirs with all the officials and the whole assembly, confessed themselves Christians and refused to give the least heed to those who bade them commit idolatry.

And there was a certain other person who had attained to a high position under the Romans, Adauctus by name, a man of illustrious Italian birth ; who had advanced through every grade of honour under the emperors, so as to pass blamelessly through the general administration of what they call the magistracy and ministry of finance. And besides all this, having distinguished himself by his noble deeds of godliness and his confessions of the Christ of God, he was adorned with the crown of martyrdom, enduring the conflict for piety while actually engaged as finance minister.

XII. Why need I now mention the rest by name, or number the multitude of the men, or picture the varied tortures inflicted upon the wonderful martyrs ? Sometimes they were slain with the axe, as was the case with those in Arabia ; at other times they had their legs broken, as happened to those in Cappadocia ; on some occasions they were suspended on high by the feet, head-downwards, while a slow fire was kindled beneath, so that when the wood was alight they were choked by the rising smoke—a

Μέσῃ τῶν ποταμῶν ἐπήχθη, ποτὲ δὲ ῥῖνας καὶ ὦτα καὶ χεῖρας ἀκρωτηριαζομένων τά τε λοιπὰ τοῦ σώματος μέλη τε καὶ μέρη κρεουργουμένων, οἷα τὰ ἐπ' Ἀλεξανδρείας ἦν;

Τί δεῖ τῶν ἐπ' Ἀντιοχείας ἀναζωπυρεῖν τὴν 2
μνήμην, ἐσχάραις πυρὸς οὐκ εἰς θάνατον, ἀλλ' ἐπὶ μακρᾷ τιμωρίᾳ κατοπτωμένων, ἑτέρων τε θᾶττον τὴν δεξιὰν αὐτῷ πυρὶ καθιέντων ἢ τῆς ἐναγοῦς θυσίας ἐφαπτομένων; ὧν τινες τὴν πεῖραν φεύγοντες, πρὶν ἁλῶναι καὶ εἰς χεῖρας τῶν ἐπιβούλων ἐλθεῖν, ἄνωθεν ἐξ ὑψηλῶν δωμάτων ἑαυτοὺς κατεκρήμνισαν, τὸν θάνατον ἅρπαγμα θέμενοι τῆς τῶν δυσσεβῶν μοχθηρίας.

Καί τις ἱερὰ καὶ θαυμασία τὴν τῆς ψυχῆς 3
ἀρετήν, τὸ δὲ σῶμα γυνὴ καὶ τὰ ἄλλα τῶν ἐπ' Ἀντιοχείας πλούτῳ καὶ γένει καὶ εὐδοξίᾳ παρὰ πᾶσι βεβοημένη, παίδων ξυνωρίδα παρθένων τῇ τοῦ σώματος ὥρᾳ καὶ ἀκμῇ διαπρεπουσῶν θεσμοῖς εὐσεβείας ἀναθρεψαμένη, ἐπειδὴ πολὺς ὁ περὶ αὐτὰς κινούμενος φθόνος πάντα τρόπον ἀνιχνεύων λανθανούσας περιειργάζετο, εἶτ' ἐπ' ἀλλοδαπῆς αὐτὰς διατρίβειν μαθὼν πεφροντισμένως ἐπὶ τὴν Ἀντιόχειαν ἐκάλει δικτύων τε ἤδη στρατιωτικῶν εἴσω περιβέβληντο, ἐν ἀμηχάνοις ἑαυτὴν καὶ τὰς παῖδας θεασαμένη καὶ τὰ μέλλοντα ἐξ ἀνθρώπων δεινὰ τῷ λόγῳ παραθεῖσα τό τε πάντων δεινῶν καὶ ἀφορητότερον, πορνείας ἀπειλήν, μηδὲ ἄκροις ὠσὶν ὑπομεῖναι δεῖν ἀκοῦσαι ἑαυτῇ τε καὶ ταῖς κόραις παρακελευσαμένη, ἀλλὰ καὶ τὸ προδοῦναι

[1] We learn from St. Chrysostom that her name was Domnina, and that her daughters were Bernice and Prosdoce.

treatment meted out to those in Mesopotamia; on others, the noses, ears and hands were mutilated, and the remaining limbs and parts of the body cut up, as was done at Alexandria.

Why need one rekindle the memory of those at Antioch, who were roasted on heated gridirons, not unto death, but with a view to lengthy torture; and of others who put their right hand into the very fire sooner than touch the accursed sacrifice? Some of them, to escape such trials, before they were caught and fell into the hands of those that plotted against them, threw themselves down from the tops of lofty houses, regarding death as a prize snatched from the wickedness of evil men.

And a certain holy person,[1] admirable for strength of soul yet in body a woman, and famed as well by all that were at Antioch for wealth, birth and sound judgement, had brought up in the precepts of piety her two unmarried daughters, distinguished for the full bloom of their youthful beauty. Much envy was stirred up on their account, and busied itself in tracing in every manner possible where they lay concealed; and when it discovered that they were staying in a foreign country, of set purpose it recalled them to Antioch. Thus they fell into the soldiers' toils. When, therefore, the woman saw that herself and her daughters were in desperate straits, she placed before them in conversation the terrible things that awaited them from human hands, and the most intolerable thing of all these terrors—the threat of fornication. She exhorted both herself and her girls that they ought not to submit to listen to even the least whisper of such a thing, and said that to surrender their souls to the

τὰς ψυχὰς τῇ τῶν δαιμόνων δουλείᾳ πάντων ὑπάρχειν θανάτων καὶ πάσης χεῖρον ἀπωλείας φήσασα, μίαν τούτων ἁπάντων εἶναι λύσιν ὑπ-ετίθετο τὴν ἐπὶ τὸν κύριον καταφυγήν, κἄπειτα ὁμοῦ τῇ γνώμῃ συνθέμεναι τά τε σώματα περι-στείλασαι κοσμίως τοῖς περιβλήμασιν, ἐπ᾽ αὐτῆς μέσης γενόμεναι τῆς ὁδοῦ, βραχύ τι τοὺς φύλακας εἰς ἀναχώρησιν ὑποπαραιτησάμεναι, ἐπὶ παραρ-ρέοντα ποταμὸν ἑαυτὰς ἠκόντισαν.

Αἵδε μὲν οὖν ἑαυτάς· ἄλλην δ᾽ ἐπ᾽ αὐτῆς Ἀντιο-χείας ξυνωρίδα παρθένων τὰ πάντα θεοπρεπῶν καὶ ἀληθῶς ἀδελφῶν, ἐπιδόξων μὲν τὸ γένος, λαμπρῶν δὲ τὸν βίον, νέων τοὺς χρόνους, ὡραίων τὸ σῶμα, σεμνῶν τὴν ψυχήν, εὐσεβῶν τὸν τρόπον, θαυμαστῶν τὴν σπουδήν, ὡς ἂν μὴ φερούσης τῆς γῆς τὰ τοιαῦτα βαστάζειν, θαλάττῃ ῥίπτειν ἐκέ-λευον οἱ τῶν δαιμόνων θεραπευταί.

Ταῦτα μὲν οὖν παρὰ τοῖσδε· τὰ φρικτὰ δὲ ἀκοαῖς κατὰ τὸν Πόντον ἔπασχον ἕτεροι, καλάμοις ὀξέσιν τοῖν χεροῖν ἐξ ἄκρων ὀνώχων τοὺς δακ-τύλους διαπειρόμενοι, καὶ ἄλλοι, πυρὶ μολίβδου διατακέντος, βρασσούσῃ καὶ πεπυρακτωμένῃ τῇ ὕλῃ τὰ νῶτα καταχεόμενοι καὶ τὰ μάλιστα ἀναγ-καιότατα τοῦ σώματος κατοπτώμενοι, διά τε τῶν ἀπορρήτων ἕτεροι μελῶν τε καὶ σπλάγχνων αἰσχρὰς καὶ ἀσυμπαθεῖς καὶ οὐδὲ λόγῳ ῥητὰς ὑπέμενον πάθας, ἃς οἱ γενναῖοι καὶ νόμιμοι δικασταὶ τὴν σφῶν ἐπιδεικνύμενοι δεινότητα, ὥσπερ τινὰ σοφίας ἀρετήν, φιλοτιμότερον ἐπενόουν, αἰεὶ ταῖς καινότερον ἐφευρισκομέναις αἰκίαις, ὥσπερ ἐν ἀγῶνος βραβείοις, ἀλλήλους ὑπερεξάγειν ἁμιλλώμενοι.

slavery of demons was worse than all kinds of death and every form of destruction. So she submitted that to flee to the Lord was the only way of escape from it all. And when they had both agreed to her opinion, and had arranged their garments suitably around them, on coming to the middle of their journey they quietly requested the guards to allow them a little time for retirement, and threw themselves into the river that flowed by.

Thus were these their own executioners. But another pair of maidens, also at Antioch, godly in every respect and true sisters, famous by birth, distinguished for their manner of life, young in years, in the bloom of beauty, grave of soul, pious in their deportment, admirable in their zeal, the worshippers of demons commanded to be cast into the sea, as if the earth could not endure to bear such excellence.

Thus it happened with these martyrs. And others in Pontus suffered things terrible to hear: sharp reeds were driven through their fingers under the tips of the nails; in the case of others, lead was melted down by fire, and the boiling, burning stuff poured down their backs, roasting the most essential parts of their body; others endured in their privy parts and bowels sufferings that were disgraceful, pitiless, unmentionable, which the noble and law-abiding judges devised with more than usual eagerness, displaying their cruelty as if it were some great stroke of wisdom; striving to outdo one another by ever inventing novel tortures, as if contending for prizes in a contest.

Τὰ δ' οὖν τῶν συμφορῶν ἔσχατα, ὅτε δὴ λοιπὸν ἀπειρηκότες ἐπὶ τῇ τῶν κακῶν ὑπερβολῇ καὶ πρὸς τὸ κτείνειν ἀποκαμόντες πλησμονήν τε καὶ κόρον τῆς τῶν αἱμάτων ἐκχύσεως ἐσχηκότες, ἐπὶ τὸ νομιζόμενον αὐτοῖς χρηστὸν καὶ φιλάνθρωπον ἐτρέποντο, ὡς μηδὲν μὲν ἔτι δοκεῖν δεινὸν καθ' ἡμῶν περιεργάζεσθαι· μὴ γὰρ καθήκειν φασὶν αἵμασιν ἐμφυλίοις μιαίνειν τὰς πόλεις μηδ' ἐπ' ὠμότητι τὴν ἀνωτάτω διαβάλλειν τῶν κρατούντων ἀρχήν, εὐμενῆ τοῖς πᾶσιν ὑπάρχουσαν καὶ πραεῖαν, δεῖν δὲ μᾶλλον τῆς φιλανθρώπου καὶ βασιλικῆς ἐξουσίας εἰς πάντας ἐκτείνεσθαι τὴν εὐεργεσίαν, μηκέτι θανάτῳ κολαζομένους· λελύσθαι γὰρ αὐτῶν καθ' ἡμῶν ταύτην τὴν τιμωρίαν διὰ τὴν τῶν κρατούντων φιλανθρωπίαν. τηνικαῦτα ὀφθαλμοὺς ἐξορύττεσθαι καὶ τοῖν σκελοῖν πηροῦσθαι θάτερον προσετάττετο. ταῦτα γὰρ ἦν αὐτοῖς τὰ φιλάνθρωπα καὶ τῶν καθ' ἡμῶν τιμωριῶν τὰ κουφότατα, ὥστε ἤδη ταύτης ἕνεκα τῆς τῶν ἀσεβῶν φιλανθρωπίας οὐκέτ' εἶναι δυνατὸν ἐξειπεῖν τὸ πλῆθος τῶν ὑπὲρ πάντα λόγον τοὺς μὲν δεξιοὺς ὀφθαλμοὺς ξίφει πρότερον ἐκκοπτομένων κἄπειτα τούτους πυρὶ καυτηριαζομένων, τοὺς δὲ λαιοὺς πόδας κατὰ τῶν ἀγκυλῶν αὖθις καυτῆρσιν ἀχρειουμένων μετά τε ταῦτα τοῖς κατ' ἐπαρχίαν χαλκοῦ μετάλλοις οὐχ ὑπηρεσίας τοσοῦτον ὅσον κακώσεως καὶ ταλαιπωρίας ἕνεκεν καταδικαζομένων πρὸς ἅπασί τε τούτοις ἄλλων ἄλλοις ἀγῶσιν, οὓς μηδὲ καταλέγειν δυνατόν (νικᾷ γὰρ πάντα λόγον τὰ κατ' αὐτοὺς ἀνδραγαθήματα), περιπεπτωκότων.

Ἐν δὴ τούτοις ἐφ' ὅλης τῆς οἰκουμένης διαλάμψαντες οἱ μεγαλοπρεπεῖς τοῦ Χριστοῦ μάρτυρες

But the end of these calamities came when they were now worn out with their excessive wickedness, and were utterly weary of killing and surfeited and sated with shedding blood, and so turned to what they considered merciful and humane conduct; so that they no longer thought that they were doing any harm to us. For it was not fitting, they said, to pollute the cities with the blood of their own people, or to involve in a charge of cruelty the supreme government of the rulers, a government that was well-disposed and mild towards all; but rather that the beneficence of the humane and imperial authority should be extended to all, and the death penalty no longer inflicted. For [they declared] that this their punishment of us had been stopped, thanks to the humanity of the rulers. Then orders were given that their eyes should be gouged out and one of their legs maimed. For this was in their opinion humanity and the lightest of punishments inflicted upon us. Hence, because of this humanity on the part of godless men, it is now no longer possible to tell the incalculable number of those who had their right eye first cut out with a sword and then cauterized with fire, and the left foot rendered useless by the further application of branding irons to the joints, and who after this were condemned to the provincial copper mines, not so much for service as for ill-usage and hardship, and withal fell in with various other trials, which it is not possible even to recount; for their brave and good deeds surpass all reckoning.

In these conflicts verily the magnificent martyrs of Christ were conspicuous throughout all the world,

τοὺς μὲν ἀπανταχοῦ τῆς ἀνδρείας αὐτῶν ἐπόπτας εἰκότως κατεπλήξαντο, τῆς δὲ τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν θείας ὡς ἀληθῶς καὶ ἀπορρήτου δυνάμεως ἐμφανῆ δι' ἑαυτῶν τὰ τεκμήρια παρεστήσαντο. ἑκάστου μὲν οὖν ἐπ' ὀνόματος μνημονεύειν μακρὸν ἂν εἴη, μή τί γε τῶν ἀδυνάτων.

XIII. Τῶν δὲ κατὰ τὰς ἐπισήμους πόλεις μαρτυρησάντων ἐκκλησιαστικῶν ἀρχόντων πρῶτος ἡμῖν ἐν εὐσεβῶν στήλαις τῆς Χριστοῦ βασιλείας ἀνηγορεύσθω μάρτυς ἐπίσκοπος τῆς Νικομηδέων πόλεως, τὴν κεφαλὴν ἀποτμηθείς, Ἄνθιμος, τῶν δ' ἐπ' Ἀντιοχείας μαρτύρων τὸν πάντα βίον ἄριστος πρεσβύτερος τῆς αὐτόθι παροικίας, Λουκιανός, ἐν τῇ Νικομηδείᾳ καὶ αὐτὸς βασιλέως ἐπιπαρόντος τὴν οὐράνιον τοῦ Χριστοῦ βασιλείαν λόγῳ πρότερον δι' ἀπολογίας, εἶτα δὲ καὶ ἔργοις ἀνακηρύξας. τῶν δ' ἐπὶ Φοινίκης μαρτύρων γένοιντ' ἂν ἐπισημότατοι τὰ πάντα θεοφιλεῖς τῶν λογικῶν Χριστοῦ θρεμμάτων ποιμένες, Τυραννίων ἐπίσκοπος τῆς κατὰ Τύρον ἐκκλησίας πρεσβύτερός τε τῆς κατὰ Σιδῶνα Ζηνόβιος καὶ ἔτι Σιλβανὸς τῶν ἀμφὶ τὴν Ἔμισαν ἐκκλησιῶν ἐπίσκοπος. ἀλλ' οὗτος μὲν θηρίων βορὰ μεθ' ἑτέρων ἐπ' αὐτῆς Ἐμίσης γενόμενος χοροῖς ἀνελήφθη μαρτύρων,
Acts 13, 48 τὼ δ' ἐπ' Ἀντιοχείας ἄμφω τὸν τοῦ θεοῦ λόγον διὰ τῆς εἰς θάνατον ὑπομονῆς ἐδοξασάτην, ὃ μὲν θαλαττίοις παραδοθεὶς βυθοῖς, ὁ ἐπίσκοπος, ὁ δὲ ἰατρῶν ἄριστος Ζηνόβιος ταῖς κατὰ τῶν πλευρῶν ἐπιτεθείσαις αὐτῷ καρτερῶς ἐναποθανὼν βασάνοις. τῶν δ' ἐπὶ Παλαιστίνης μαρτύρων Σιλβανός, ἐπίσκοπος τῶν ἀμφὶ τὴν Γάζαν ἐκκλησιῶν, κατὰ τὰ ἐν Φαινοῖ χαλκοῦ μέταλλα σὺν ἑτέροις ἑνὸς

and, as was natural, everywhere filled with amazement the eye-witnesses of their bravery; while in their own persons they furnished a clear proof that the power of our Saviour is truly divine and inexpressible. To mention, indeed, each by name would be a long task, not to say an impossibility.

XIII. Of those rulers of the churches who were martyred in well-known cities, the first name that we must record on the monuments to holy men, as a martyr of the kingdom of Christ, is that of Anthimus, bishop of the city of the Nicomedians, who was beheaded. Of the martyrs at Antioch the best in his entire life was Lucian, a presbyter of that community; the same who in Nicomedia, where the emperor was, proclaimed the heavenly kingdom of Christ, first by word of mouth in an Apology, and afterwards also by deeds. Of the martyrs in Phoenicia the most famous would be the pastors of the spiritual flocks of Christ, beloved of God in all things, Tyrannion, bishop of the church at Tyre, and Zenobius, presbyter of the church at Sidon, and, moreover, Silvanus, bishop of the churches about Emesa. The last-named became food for wild beasts, along with others, at Emesa itself, and so was received up into the choirs of martyrs; the other two glorified the word of God at Antioch by their endurance unto death; one of them, the bishop, being committed to the depths of the sea, while that best of physicians, Zenobius, died bravely under the tortures that were applied to his sides. Of the martyrs in Palestine, Silvanus, bishop of the churches about Gaza, was beheaded at the copper mines at Phaeno,

δέουσι τὸν ἀριθμὸν τεσσαράκοντα τὴν κεφαλὴν ἀποτέμνεται, Αἰγύπτιοί τε αὐτόθι Πηλεὺς καὶ Νεῖλος ἐπίσκοποι μεθ' ἑτέρων τὴν διὰ πυρὸς ὑπέμειναν τελευτήν. καὶ τὸ μέγα δὲ κλέος τῆς Καισαρέων παροικίας ἐν τούτοις ἡμῖν μνημονευέσθω Πάμφιλος πρεσβύτερος, τῶν καθ' ἡμᾶς θαυμασιώτατος, οὗ τῶν ἀνδραγαθημάτων τὴν ἀρετὴν κατὰ τὸν δέοντα καιρὸν ἀναγράψομεν. τῶν δ' ἐπ' Ἀλεξανδρείας καθ' ὅλης τε Αἰγύπτου καὶ Θηβαΐδος διαπρεπῶς τελειωθέντων πρῶτος Πέτρος, αὐτῆς Ἀλεξανδρείας ἐπίσκοπος, θεῖόν τι χρῆμα διδασκάλων τῆς ἐν Χριστῷ θεοσεβείας, ἀναγεγράφθω, καὶ τῶν σὺν αὐτῷ πρεσβυτέρων Φαῦστος καὶ Δῖος καὶ Ἀμμώνιος, τέλειοι Χριστοῦ μάρτυρες, Φιλέας τε καὶ Ἡσύχιος καὶ Παχύμιος καὶ Θεόδωρος, τῶν ἀμφὶ τὴν Αἴγυπτον ἐκκλησιῶν ἐπίσκοποι, μυρίοι τε ἐπὶ τούτοις ἄλλοι διαφανεῖς, οἳ πρὸς τῶν κατὰ χώραν καὶ τόπον παροικιῶν μνημονεύονται· ὧν ἀνὰ τὴν πᾶσαν οἰκουμένην ὑπὲρ τῆς εἰς τὸ θεῖον εὐσεβείας ἠγωνισμένων γραφῇ παραδιδόναι τοὺς ἄθλους ἐπ' ἀκριβές τε ἕκαστα τῶν περὶ αὐτοὺς συμβεβηκότων ἱστορεῖν οὐχ ἡμέτερον, τῶν δ' ὄψει τὰ πράγματα παρειληφότων ἴδιον ἂν γένοιτο· οἷς γε μὴν αὐτὸς παρεγενόμην, τούτους καὶ τοῖς μεθ' ἡμᾶς γνωρίμους δι' ἑτέρας ποιήσομαι γραφῆς. κατά γε μὴν τὸν παρόντα λόγον τὴν παλινῳδίαν τῶν περὶ ἡμᾶς εἰργασμένων τοῖς εἰρημένοις ἐπισυνάψω τά τε ἐξ ἀρχῆς τοῦ διωγμοῦ συμβεβηκότα, χρησιμώτατα τυγχάνοντα τοῖς ἐντευξομένοις.

Τὰ μὲν οὖν πρὸ τοῦ καθ' ἡμῶν πολέμου τῆς Ῥωμαίων ἡγεμονίας, ἐν ὅσοις δὴ χρόνοις τὰ τῶν

with others, in number forty save one ; and Egyptians there, Peleus and Nilus, bishops, together with others, endured death by fire. And among these we must mention the great glory of the community of Caesarea, Pamphilus, a presbyter, the most marvellous man of our day ; the merit of whose brave and good deeds we shall record at the proper time. Of those at Alexandria and throughout all Egypt and the Thebais who were perfected gloriously, the first that must be recorded is Peter, bishop of Alexandria itself, a divine example of the teachers of godliness in Christ ; and of the presbyters with him Faustus, Dius and Ammonius, perfect martyrs of Christ ; and Phileas, Hesychius, Pachymius and Theodore, bishops of the churches in Egypt ; and countless other famous persons as well, who are commemorated by the communities in their own district and locality. It is not our part to commit to writing the conflicts of those who fought throughout the world on behalf of piety toward the Deity, and to record in detail each of their happenings ; but that would be the especial task of those who witnessed the events. Yet I shall make known to posterity in another work[1] those with whom I was personally conversant. In this present book, however, I shall subjoin to what has been said the recantation[2] of the things that were wrought concerning us, and all that befell since the beginning of the persecution, most profitable as they are to my readers.

Now as concerns the state of the Roman government before the war against us, during all the periods

[1] The reference is probably to the account of Pamphilus given in the *Martyrs of Palestine*. Eusebius's *Life of Pamphilus* was, apparently, already written.

[2] See c. 17. 3-10.

ἀρχόντων φίλιά τε ἦν ἡμῖν καὶ εἰρηναῖα, ὁπόσης ἀγαθῶν εὐφορίας καὶ εὐετηρίας ἠξίωτο, τίς ἂν ἐξαρκέσειεν λόγος διηγήσασθαι; ὅτε καὶ οἱ μάλιστα τῆς καθόλου κρατοῦντες ἀρχῆς δεκαετηρίδας καὶ εἰκοσαετηρίδας ἐκπλήσαντες, ἐν ἑορταῖς καὶ πανηγύρεσιν φαιδροτάταις τε θαλίαις καὶ εὐφροσύναις μετὰ πάσης εὐσταθοῦς διετέλουν εἰρήνης.

Οὕτω δ' αὐτοῖς ἀπαραποδίστως αὐξούσης καὶ 10
ἐπὶ μέγα ὁσημέραι προϊούσης τῆς ἐξουσίας, ἀθρόως τῆς πρὸς ἡμᾶς εἰρήνης μεταθέμενοι, πόλεμον ἄσπονδον ἐγείρουσιν· οὔπω δ' αὐτοῖς τῆς τοιᾶσδε κινήσεως δεύτερον ἔτος πεπλήρωτο, καί τι περὶ τὴν ὅλην ἀρχὴν νεώτερον γεγονὸς τὰ πάντα πράγματα ἀνατρέπει. νόσου γὰρ οὐκ αἰσίας 11
τῷ πρωτοστάτῃ τῶν εἰρημένων ἐπισκηψάσης, ὑφ' ἧς ἤδη καὶ τὰ τῆς διανοίας εἰς ἔκστασιν αὐτῷ παρήγετο, σὺν τῷ μετ' αὐτὸν δευτερείοις τετιμημένῳ τὸν δημώδη καὶ ἰδιωτικὸν ἀπολαμβάνει βίον· οὕπω δὲ ταῦθ' οὕτω πέπρακτο, καὶ διχῇ τὰ πάντα τῆς ἀρχῆς διαιρεῖται, πρᾶγμα μηδ' ἄλλοτέ πω πάλαι γεγονὸς μνήμῃ παραδεδομένον.

Χρόνου δ' οὐ πλείστου μεταξὺ γενομένου βασι- 12
λεὺς Κωνστάντιος τὸν πάντα βίον πραότατα καὶ τοῖς ὑπηκόοις εὐνοϊκώτατα τῷ τε θείῳ λόγῳ προσφιλέστατα διαθέμενος, παῖδα γνήσιον Κωνσταντῖνον αὐτοκράτορα· καὶ Σεβαστὸν ἀνθ' ἑαυτοῦ

---

[1] Festivals at the beginning of the tenth and of the twentieth year of a reign.

[2] A.D. 305.

[3] *i.e.* Diocletian.

[4] *i.e.* Maximinian.

[5] The meaning of this sentence is that the Empire was

that the rulers were friendly and peaceably disposed toward us, no words could sufficiently describe how bountiful and plenteous was its harvest of good things; when also those who held the chiefest places in a world-empire completed the decennalia and vicennalia[1] of their principate, and used to pass their days in festivals and public games, in the most joyous feasts and gaieties, possessing complete, well-established peace.

But as their authority thus increased without let or hindrance and day by day waxed greater, all at once they departed from their peaceful attitude towards us and stirred up a relentless war. And the second year[2] of this kind of movement on their part had not fully expired, when a sort of revolution affecting the entire principate took place and threw the whole of public life into confusion. For a fateful disease fell upon him who stood first among those of whom we spoke,[3] which caused his mind to become deranged; and, along with him who had been honoured with the second place after him,[4] he resumed the ordinary life of a private citizen. And this had not yet taken place, when the whole principate was rent in twain, a thing that had never even been recorded as having happened at any time in days gone by.[5]

But after no very great interval of time the Emperor Constantius, who all his life long was most mildly and favourably disposed toward his subjects, and most friendly towards the divine word, died[6] according to the common law of nature, leaving his lawful son Constantine Emperor and Augustus in his

divided *in respect of its treatment of Christians*: persecution continued in the East, while it ceased in the West.

[6] A.D. 306.

καταλιπών, κοινῷ φύσεως νόμῳ τελευτᾷ τὸν βίον, πρῶτός τε ἐν θεοῖς ἀνηγορεύετο παρ' αὐτοῖς, ἁπάσης μετὰ θάνατον, ὅση βασιλεῖ τις ἂν ὠφείλετο, τιμῆς ἠξιωμένος, χρηστότατος καὶ ἠπιώτατος βασιλέων· ὃς δὴ καὶ μόνος τῶν καθ' ἡμᾶς ἐπαξίως 13
τῆς ἡγεμονίας τὸν πάντα τῆς ἀρχῆς διατελέσας χρόνον καὶ τἄλλα τοῖς πᾶσι δεξιώτατον καὶ εὐεργετικώτατον παρασχὼν ἑαυτὸν τοῦ τε καθ' ἡμῶν πολέμου μηδαμῶς ἐπικοινωνήσας, ἀλλὰ καὶ τοὺς ὑπ' αὐτὸν θεοσεβεῖς ἀβλαβεῖς καὶ ἀνεπηρέαστους φυλάξας καὶ μήτε τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν τοὺς οἴκους καθελὼν μήθ' ἕτερόν τι καθ' ἡμῶν καινουργήσας, τέλος εὔδαιμον καὶ τρισμακάριον ἀπείληφεν τοῦ βίου, μόνος ἐπὶ τῆς αὐτοῦ βασιλείας εὐμενῶς καὶ ἐπιδόξως ἐπὶ διαδόχῳ γνησίῳ παιδὶ πάντα σωφρονεστάτῳ τε καὶ εὐσεβεστάτῳ τελευτήσας.

Τούτου παῖς Κωνσταντῖνος εὐθὺς ἀρχόμενος 14
βασιλεὺς τελεώτατος καὶ Σεβαστὸς πρὸς τῶν στρατοπέδων καὶ ἔτι πολὺ τούτων πρότερον πρὸς αὐτοῦ τοῦ παμβασιλέως θεοῦ ἀναγορευθείς, ζηλωτὴν ἑαυτὸν τῆς πατρικῆς περὶ τὸν ἡμέτερον λόγον εὐσεβείας κατεστήσατο.

Καὶ οὗτος μὲν τοιοῦτος· Λικίννιος δ' ἐπὶ τούτοις ὑπὸ κοινῆς ψήφου τῶν κρατούντων αὐτοκράτωρ καὶ Σεβαστὸς ἀναπέφηνεν. ταῦτα Μαξιμῖνον δει- 15
νῶς ἐλύπει, μόνον Καίσαρα παρὰ πάντας εἰς ἔτι τότε χρηματίζοντα· ὃς δὴ οὖν τὰ μάλιστα τυραννικὸς ὤν, παραρπάσας ἑαυτῷ τὴν ἀξίαν, Σεβαστὸς

[1] Not, of course, the first emperor to receive divine honours, but the first of the four rulers who at that time divided the Empire between them.

stead; and was the first [of the new tetrarchy] to be proclaimed among the gods by them,[1] being deemed worthy of every honour after death that might be due to an emperor, kindest and mildest of emperors that he was. He indeed was the only one of our contemporaries who passed the whole period of his principate in a manner worthy of his high office; and in other respects displayed himself in a most favourable and beneficent light toward all; and he took no part in the war against us, but even preserved the God-fearing persons among his subjects from injury and harsh treatment; neither did he pull down the church-buildings nor employ any other new device against us. So he has had as his reward a happy and thrice-blessed issue of his life; for he alone enjoyed a favourable and glorious end while he was still emperor, with a lawful son, in all respects most prudent and godly, to succeed him.

His son Constantine from the very first was proclaimed by the armies most perfect Emperor and Augustus, and, long before them, by God Himself, the King Supreme; and he set himself to be an emulator of his father's piety toward our doctrine.

Such was he. And afterwards Licinius was declared Emperor and Augustus by a common vote of the rulers.[2] These things caused great vexation to Maximin, since up to that time he was still entitled only Caesar by all. Therefore, being above all things a tyrant, he fraudulently seized the honour for himself, and became Augustus, appointed such by him-

[2] The reference seems to be to the Congress of Carnuntum, Nov. 307, when Licinius, who appears to have been already Caesar, was given the title of Augustus.

ἦν, αὐτὸς ὑφ' ἑαυτοῦ γεγονώς. ἐν τούτῳ δὲ Κωνσταντίνῳ μηχανὴν θανάτου συρράπτων ἁλοὺς ὁ μετὰ τὴν ἀπόθεσιν ἐπανῃρῆσθαι δεδηλωμένος αἰσχίστῳ καταστρέφει θανάτῳ· πρώτου δὲ τούτου τὰς ἐπὶ τιμῇ γραφὰς ἀνδριάντας τε καὶ ὅσα τοιαῦτα ἐπ' ἀναθέσει νενόμισται, ὡς ἀνοσίου καὶ δυσσεβεστάτου καθῄρουν.

XIV. Τούτου παῖς Μαξέντιος, ὁ τὴν ἐπὶ 1
Ῥώμης τυραννίδα συστησάμενος, ἀρχόμενος μὲν τὴν καθ' ἡμᾶς πίστιν ἐπ' ἀρεσκείᾳ καὶ κολακείᾳ τοῦ δήμου Ῥωμαίων καθυπεκρίνατο ταύτῃ τε τοῖς ὑπηκόοις τὸν κατὰ Χριστιανῶν ἀνεῖναι προστάττει διωγμόν, εὐσέβειαν ἐπιμορφάζων καὶ ὡς ἂν δεξιὸς καὶ πολὺ πρᾶος παρὰ τοὺς προτέρους φανείη· οὐ 2
μὴν οἷος ἔσεσθαι ἠλπίσθη, τοιοῦτος ἔργοις ἀναπέφηνεν, εἰς πάσας δ' ἀνοσιουργίας ὀκείλας, οὐδὲν ὅ τι μιαρίας ἔργον καὶ ἀκολασίας παραλέλοιπεν, μοιχείας καὶ παντοίας ἐπιτελῶν φθοράς. διαζευγνύς γέ τοι τῶν ἀνδρῶν τὰς κατὰ νόμον γαμετάς, ταύταις ἐνυβρίζων ἀτιμότατα, τοῖς ἀνδράσιν αὖθις ἀπέπεμπεν, καὶ ταῦτ' οὐκ ἀσήμοις οὐδ' ἀφανέσιν ἐγχειρῶν ἐπετήδευεν, ἀλλ' αὐτῶν δὴ μάλιστα τῶν τὰ πρῶτα τῆς Ῥωμαίων συγκλήτου βουλῆς ἀπενηνεγμένων ἐμπαροινῶν τοῖς ἐξοχωτάτοις. οἱ πάντες δ' αὐτὸν ὑποπεπτηχότες, 3
δῆμοι καὶ ἄρχοντες, ἔνδοξοί τε καὶ ἄδοξοι, δεινῇ κατετρύχοντο τυραννίδι, καὶ οὐδ' ἠρεμούντων καὶ τὴν πικρὰν φερόντων δουλείαν ἀπαλλαγή τις ὅμως ἦν τῆς τοῦ τυράννου φονώσης ὠμότητος. ἐπὶ σμικρᾷ γοῦν ἤδη ποτὲ προφάσει τὸν δῆμον εἰς

[1] *i.e.* Maximian: see § 11 above.

self. At this time he who had resumed office again after his[1] abdication, as we have shown, was discovered devising a plot to secure the death of Constantine, and died a most shameful death. He was the first [emperor] whose honorific inscriptions and statues and all such things as it has been customary to set up publicly they threw down, as belonging to an infamous and utterly godless person.

XIV. His son Maxentius, who secured for himself the tyranny at Rome, at the beginning counterfeited our faith in order to please and fawn upon the Roman populace; and for this reason ordered his subjects to give over the persecution against Christians; for he was feigning piety and endeavouring to appear favourable and very mild above his predecessors. Yet his deeds have not shown him to be such as it was hoped he would be. On the contrary, he drove headlong into every form of wickedness, and there is not a single abominable and dissolute act that he has left undone, committing adulteries and all kinds of rape. In fact he used to separate from their husbands lawfully married women, insult them with the utmost dishonour, and send them back again to their husbands; and he made it his business thus to assail persons neither undistinguished nor obscure, but the most eminent of those who had attained the highest rank in the assembly of the Roman Senate were the very and especial objects of his offensive behaviour. All cowered before him, people and rulers, famous and obscure, and were worn out by his terrible tyranny; and even though they remained quiet and endured the bitter servitude, still there was no escape from the tyrant's murderous cruelty. Once, for example, on a small pretence he gave the people

φόνον τοῖς ἀμφ' αὐτὸν δορυφόροις ἐκδίδωσιν, καὶ ἐκτείνετο μυρία τοῦ δήμου Ῥωμαίων πλήθη, ἐπὶ μέσης τῆς πόλεως, οὐ Σκυθῶν οὐδὲ βαρβάρων ἀλλ' αὐτῶν τῶν οἰκείων δόρασι καὶ πανοπλίαις· συγκλητικῶν γε μὴν φόνος ὁπόσος δι' ἐπιβουλὴν 4
ἐνηργεῖτο τῆς οὐσίας, οὐδ' ἐξαριθμήσασθαι δυνατόν, ἄλλοτε ἄλλαις πεπλασμέναις αἰτίαις μυρίων ἀναιρουμένων. ἡ δὲ τῶν κακῶν τῷ τυράννῳ 5
κορωνὶς ἐπὶ γοητείαν ἤλαυνεν, μαγικαῖς ἐπινοίαις τοτὲ μὲν γυναῖκας ἐγκύμονας ἀνασχίζοντος, τοτὲ δὲ νεογνῶν σπλάγχνα βρεφῶν διερευνωμένου λέοντάς τε κατασφάττοντος καί τινας ἀρρητοποιίας ἐπὶ δαιμόνων προκλήσεις καὶ ἀποτροπιασμὸν τοῦ πολέμου συνισταμένου· διὰ τούτων γὰρ αὐτῷ τὰ τῆς νίκης κατορθωθήσεσθαι ἡ πᾶσα ἐτύγχανεν ἐλπίς.

Οὗτος μὲν οὖν ἐπὶ Ῥώμης τυραννῶν οὐδ' ἔστιν 6
εἰπεῖν οἷα δρῶν τοὺς ὑπηκόους κατεδουλοῦτο, ὡς ἤδη καὶ τῶν ἀναγκαίων τροφῶν ἐν ἐσχάτῃ σπάνει καὶ ἀπορίᾳ καταστῆναι, ὅσην ἐπὶ Ῥώμης οὐδ' ἄλλοτε οἱ καθ' ἡμᾶς γενέσθαι μνημονεύουσιν.

Ὁ δ' ἐπ' ἀνατολῆς τύραννος Μαξιμῖνος, ὡς ἂν 7
πρὸς ἀδελφὸν τὴν κακίαν, πρὸς τὸν ἐπὶ Ῥώμης φιλίαν κρύβδην σπενδόμενος, ἐπὶ πλεῖστον χρόνον λανθάνειν ἐφρόντιζεν· φωραθείς γέ τοι ὕστερον δίκην τίννυσι τὴν ἀξίαν. ἦν δὲ θαυμάσαι ὅπως 8
καὶ οὗτος τὰ συγγενῆ καὶ ἀδελφά, μᾶλλον δὲ κακίας τὰ πρῶτα καὶ τὰ νικητήρια τῆς τοῦ κατὰ Ῥώμην τυράννου κακοτροπίας ἀπενηνεγμένος· γοήτων τε γὰρ καὶ μάγων οἱ πρῶτοι τῆς ἀνωτάτω

over to his bodyguard to be slaughtered, and immense numbers of the Roman people were killed, in the midst of the city, by the spears and arms, not of Scythians nor even of barbarians, but of their very fellow-citizens. Of a truth it would not even be possible to reckon how many senators were slaughtered because of designs on their wealth, for countless numbers were done away with for feigned reasons, varying according to circumstances. But the finishing touch of all the tyrant's evil deeds was when he resorted to witchcraft: bent upon magic, at one time he would rip up pregnant women, at another explore the entrails of the new-born babes, slaughter lions, and invent certain abominable actions to invoke demons, and as a sacrifice to avert war. For all his hope lay in these means of securing victory.

Indeed, one cannot even mention the kind of things that this tyrant at Rome did to enslave his subjects; so that they were actually reduced to such extreme scarcity and lack of even necessary food, as has never been known, according to our contemporaries, either at Rome or elsewhere.

But the tyrant in the East, Maximin, secretly forming a friendly alliance with the tyrant at Rome, as with a brother in wickedness, for a very long time thought that it was unknown. As a matter of fact, afterwards he was detected[1] and paid the just penalty. It was marvellous how he acquired a family likeness and kinship with the villainy of the tyrant at Rome, nay rather, carried off the first prize for wickedness and the reward of victory over him. For it was the principal charlatans and magicians who were deemed

[1] When Constantine entered Rome after the battle of the Milvian Bridge (ix. 9. 2-7).

παρ' αὐτῷ τιμῆς ἠξίωντο, ψοφοδεοῦς ἐς τὰ μάλιστα καὶ δεισιδαιμονεστάτου καθεστῶτος τήν τε περὶ τὰ εἴδωλα καὶ τοὺς δαίμονας περὶ πολλοῦ τιθεμένου πλάνην· μαντειῶν γοῦν δίχα καὶ χρησμῶν οὐδὲ μέχρις ὄνυχος ὡς εἰπεῖν τολμᾶν τι κινεῖν οἷός τε ἦν· οὗ χάριν καὶ τῷ καθ' ἡμῶν σφοδρότερον ἢ οἱ 9
πρόσθεν καὶ πυκνότερον ἐπετίθετο διωγμῷ, νεὼς κατὰ πᾶσαν πόλιν ἐγείρειν καὶ τὰ χρόνου μήκει καθῃρημένα τεμένη διὰ σπουδῆς ἀνανεοῦσθαι προστάττων ἱερέας τε εἰδώλων κατὰ πάντα τόπον καὶ πόλιν καὶ ἐπὶ τούτων ἑκάστης ἐπαρχίας ἀρχιερέα τῶν ἐν πολιτείαις ἕνα γέ τινα τῶν μάλιστα ἐμφανῶς διὰ πάσης ἐμπρέψαντα λειτουργίας μετὰ στρατιωτικοῦ στίφους καὶ δορυφορίας ἐκτάσσων ἀνέδην τε πᾶσιν γόησιν, ὡς ἂν εὐσεβέσιν καὶ θεῶν προσφιλέσιν, ἡγεμονίας καὶ τὰς μεγίστας προνομίας δωρούμενος. ἐκ δὴ τούτων ὁρμώμενος, 10
πόλιν μὲν οὐ μίαν οὐδὲ χώραν, ὅλας δὲ ἄρδην τὰς ὑπ' αὐτὸν ἐπαρχίας χρυσοῦ καὶ ἀργύρου καὶ χρημάτων ἀμυθήτων εἰσπράξεσιν ἐπισκήψεσίν τε βαρυτάταις καὶ ἄλλοτε ἄλλαις καταδίκαις ἠνία καὶ κατεπίεζεν. τῶν γε μὴν εὐπόρων τὰς ἐκ προγόνων περιποιηθείσας οὐσίας ἀφαιρούμενος, πλούτους ἀθρόως καὶ σωροὺς χρημάτων τοῖς ἀμφ' αὐτὸν κόλαξιν ἐδωρεῖτο. παροινίας γε μὴν καὶ 11
μέθης ἐς τοσαύτην ἠνέχθη φοράν, ὡς ἐν τοῖς πότοις παρακόπτειν καὶ τῶν φρενῶν παρεξίστασθαι τοιαῦτά τε μεθύοντα προστάττειν, οἷα ἀνανήψαντα αὐτὸν τῇ ὑστεραίᾳ εἰς μετάμελον ἄγειν· κραιπάλης δὲ καὶ ἀσωτίας μηδενὶ καταλιπὼν ὑπερβολήν, κακίας διδάσκαλον τοῖς ἀμφ' αὐτὸν ἄρχουσί τε καὶ ἀρχομένοις ἑαυτὸν καθίστη, θρύπτεσθαι μὲν τὸ

worthy by him of the highest honour; he became exceedingly frightened at every noise and superstitious, and attached great importance to error with regard to idols and demons. For instance, without divinations and oracles he could not dare to move even a nail's breadth, if I may say so. Accordingly, he applied himself to the persecution against us with more energy and persistence than those before him, ordering temples to be erected in every city and the sacred groves that had been destroyed through long lapse of time to be restored with all diligence; and he appointed idol priests in every locality and city, and over them as high priest of each province one of those engaged in statecraft, who was the most manifestly distinguished in every branch of the public service, with an escort and bodyguard soldiers; and he recklessly bestowed governments and the greatest privileges on all charlatans, as if they were pious and dear to the gods. Henceforward he vexed and oppressed, not a single city nor even district, but the provinces under him completely and as a whole, by exactions of gold and silver and unspeakably large amounts of goods, and by the heaviest assessments and varied fines. Taking away from the wealthy the possessions they had gotten from their ancestors, he bestowed upon his train of flatterers riches and heaps of goods in a single gift. In truth he carried his drunken excesses to such a point that he became mad and deranged in his cups, and when drunk would give such orders as he would repent of next day when he was sober. In debauchery and riotous living he suffered none to surpass him, but appointed himself instructor in villainy to those around him, rulers and ruled alike. He induced the

στρατιωτικὸν διὰ πάσης τρυφῆς τε καὶ ἀκολασίας
ἐνάγων, ἡγεμόνας δὲ καὶ στρατοπεδάρχας δι'
ἁρπαγῶν καὶ πλεονεξίας χωρεῖν κατὰ τῶν ὑπηκόων
μόνον οὐχὶ συντυραννοῦντας αὐτῷ προκαλούμενος.
τί δεῖ τὰς ἐμπαθεῖς τἀνδρὸς αἰσχρουργίας μνη- 12
μονεύειν ἢ τῶν πρὸς αὐτοῦ μεμοιχευμένων ἀπ-
αριθμεῖσθαι τὴν πληθύν; οὐκ ἦν γέ τοι πόλιν αὐτὸν
παρελθεῖν μὴ οὐχὶ ἐκ παντὸς φθορὰς γυναικῶν
παρθένων τε ἁρπαγὰς εἰργασμένον. κατὰ πάντων 13
γέ τοι αὐτῷ ταῦτα προυχώρει, μὴ ὅτι μόνων
Χριστιανῶν· οἳ θανάτου καταφρονήσαντες παρ'
οὐθὲν αὐτοῦ τὴν τοσαύτην ἔθεντο τυραννίδα. οἱ
μὲν γὰρ ἄνδρες ἀνατλάντες πῦρ καὶ σίδηρον καὶ
προσηλώσεις θῆράς τε ἀγρίους καὶ θαλάττης
βυθοὺς ἀποτομάς τε μελῶν καὶ καυτῆρας καὶ
ὀφθαλμῶν κεντήσεις τε καὶ ἐξορύξεις καὶ τοῦ
παντὸς σώματος ἀκρωτηριασμοὺς λιμόν τε ἐπὶ
τούτοις καὶ μέταλλα καὶ δεσμά, ἐπὶ πάντων
μᾶλλον ὑπομονὴν τὴν ὑπὲρ εὐσεβείας ἐνεδείξαντο
ἢ τὸ σέβας τὸ εἰς θεὸν εἰδώλοις ἀντικατηλλάξαντο·
αἱ δ' αὖ γυναῖκες οὐχ ἧττον τῶν ἀνδρῶν ὑπὸ τῆς 14
τοῦ θείου λόγου διδασκαλίας ἠρρενωμέναι, αἳ μὲν
τοὺς αὐτοὺς τοῖς ἀνδράσιν ἀγῶνας ὑποστᾶσαι ἴσα
τῆς ἀρετῆς ἀπηνέγκαντο βραβεῖα, αἳ δὲ ἐπὶ φθορὰν
ἑλκόμεναι θᾶττον τὴν ψυχὴν θανάτῳ ἢ τὸ σῶμα τῇ
φθορᾷ παραδεδώκασιν. μόνη γοῦν τῶν ὑπὸ τοῦ 15
τυράννου μεμοιχευμένων Χριστιανὴ τῶν ἐπ' Ἀλε-
ξανδρείας ἐπισημοτάτη τε καὶ λαμπροτάτη τὴν
ἐμπαθῆ καὶ ἀκόλαστον Μαξιμίνου ψυχὴν δι'
ἀνδρειοτάτου παραστήματος ἐξενίκησεν, ἔνδοξος
μὲν τὰ ἄλλα πλούτῳ τε καὶ γένει καὶ παιδείᾳ,
πάντα γε μὴν δεύτερα σωφροσύνης τεθειμένη· ἣν

army to become enervated as a result of every kind of wanton excess; encouraging governors and commanders to proceed against their subjects with rapacity and extortion, almost as if they were his fellow-tyrants. Why need one recall the man's disgraceful deeds of passion or reckon up the multitude of those whom he debauched? In fact, he could not pass by a city without continually ravishing women and abducting virgins. And in this he was successful with all, save only with Christians. Despising death they set at naught this his fierce tyranny. For the men endured fire and sword and nailings; wild beasts and engulfing in the sea: cutting off and burning of limbs, stabbing and digging out of eyes, and mutilation of the whole body; and, in addition to these, hunger and mines and bonds: thus showing on all occasions that they preferred to endure for the sake of piety rather than transfer to idols the honour due to God. And the women, on the other hand, showed themselves no less manly than the men, inspired by the teaching of the divine Word: some, undergoing the same contests as the men, won equal rewards for their valour; and others, when they were being dragged away to dishonour, yielded up their souls to death rather than their bodies to seduction. A certain Christian lady,[1] for example, most famous and distinguished among those at Alexandria, alone of those whom the tyrant ravished conquered the lustful and licentious soul of Maximin by her brave spirit. Renowned though she was for wealth, birth and education, she had put everything second to modest behaviour. Many a time he im-

[1] Rufinus informs us that her name was Dorothea.

καὶ πολλὰ λιπαρήσας, κτεῖναι μὲν ἑτοίμως θυῆσκειν ἔχουσαν οὐχ οἷός τε ἦν, τῆς ἐπιθυμίας μᾶλλον τοῦ θυμοῦ κατακρατούσης αὐτοῦ, φυγῇ δὲ ζημιώσας πάσης ἀφείλετο τῆς οὐσίας. μυρίαι δὲ ἄλλαι πρὸς 16
τῶν κατ' ἔθνος ἀρχόντων, πορνείας ἀπειλὴν μηδ' ἀκοῦσαι δεδυνημέναι, πᾶν εἶδος βασάνων καὶ στρεβλώσεων καὶ θανατηφόρου κολάσεως ὑπέστησαν.

Θαυμασταὶ μὲν οὖν καὶ αὗται, ὑπερφυῶς γε μὴν θαυμασιωτάτη ἡ ἐπὶ Ῥώμης εὐγενεστάτη τῷ ὄντι καὶ σωφρονεστάτη γυνὴ πασῶν αἷς ἐμπαροινεῖν ὁ ἐκεῖσε τύραννος Μαξέντιος, τὰ ὅμοια Μαξιμίνῳ δρῶν, ἐπειρᾶτο. ὡς γὰρ ἐπιστάντας τῷ οἴκῳ τοὺς 17
τὰ τοιαῦτα τῷ τυράννῳ διακονουμένους ἐπύθετο (Χριστιανὴ δὲ καὶ αὕτη ἦν), τόν τε ἄνδρα τὸν αὐτῆς, καὶ ταῦτα Ῥωμαίων ὄντα ἔπαρχον, τοῦ δέους ἕνεκα λαβόντας ἄγειν αὐτὴν ἐπιτρέψαντα, ἐς βραχὺ ὑποπαραιτησαμένη, ὡς ἂν δὴ κατακοσμηθείη τὸ σῶμα, εἴσεισιν ἐπὶ τοῦ ταμιείου καὶ μονωθεῖσα ξίφος καθ' ἑαυτῆς πήγνυσιν, θανοῦσά τε παραχρῆμα, τὸν μὲν νεκρὸν τοῖς προαγωγοῖς καταλιμπάνει, ἔργοις δ' αὐτοῖς ἁπάσης φωνῆς γεγωνοτέροις, ὅτι μόνον χρημάτων ἀήττητόν τε καὶ ἀνώλεθρον ἡ παρὰ Χριστιανοῖς ἀρετὴ πέφυκεν, εἰς πάντας ἀνθρώπους τούς τε νῦν ὄντας καὶ τοὺς μετὰ ταῦτα γενησομένους ἐξέφηνεν. τοσαύτη δῆτα 18
κακίας φορὰ ὑφ' ἕνα καὶ τὸν αὐτὸν συνηνέχθη καιρὸν πρὸς τῶν δύο τυράννων ἀνατολὴν καὶ δύσιν διειληφότων κατεργασθεῖσα· τίς δ' ἂν τὴν τῶν τοσούτων διερευνώμενος αἰτίαν διστάξαι μὴ οὐχὶ τὸν καθ' ἡμῶν διωγμὸν ἀποφήνασθαι; ὅτε γε μάλιστα οὐ πρότερον τὰ τῆς τοσῆσδε πέπαυτο

portuned her, yet was unable to put her to death though willing to die, for his lust overmastered his anger; but punishing her with exile he possessed himself of all her property. A great number of others, unable even to listen to a threat of fornication, underwent every form of torture and racking and mortal punishment at the hands of the provincial governors.

These indeed were wonderful, yet most surpassingly wonderful was that woman at Rome,[1] truly the most noble and chaste of all those towards whom the tyrant there, Maxentius, in conduct like Maximin, attempted to act offensively. For when she learnt that at her house were those who ministered to the tyrant in such deeds (and she also was a Christian), and that her husband, and he too a prefect of the Romans, through fear had permitted them to take and lead her off, she begged to be excused for a brief space, as if forsooth to adorn her person, entered her chamber, and when alone transfixed herself with a sword. And straightway dying she left her corpse to her procurers; but by deeds that themselves were more eloquent than any words she made it known to all men, both those present and those to come hereafter, that a Christian's virtue is the only possession that cannot be conquered or destroyed. To such an extent, in truth, did the two tyrants, who had divided among them East and West, carry the wickedness that they wrought at one and the same time. But who is there, in search for the reason of such evils, who would be at a loss to find it in the persecution against us? Especially as there was no cessation of this

[1] Sophronia, according to Rufinus.

συγχύσεως ἢ Χριστιανοὺς τὰ τῆς παρρησίας ἀπολαβεῖν.

XV. Διὰ παντός γέ τοι τοῦ κατὰ τὸν διωγμὸν 1
δεκαέτους χρόνου τῶν εἰς ἐπιβουλὴν καὶ πόλεμον
τὸν κατ' ἀλλήλων οὐδὲν αὐτοὺς διαλέλοιπεν.
ἁπλωτα μὲν τὰ κατὰ θάλατταν ἦν οὐδ' ἐξῆν ποθεν
καταπλεύσαντας μὴ οὐχὶ πάσαις αἰκίαις ὑπάγεσθαι
στρεβλουμένους καὶ τὰς πλευρὰς καταξαινομένους
βασάνοις τε παντοίαις, μὴ ἄρα παρὰ τῶν δι'
ἐναντίας ἐχθρῶν ἥκοιεν, ἀνακρινομένους καὶ τέλος
σταυροῖς ἢ τῇ διὰ πυρὸς ὑπαγομένους κολάσει·
ἀσπίδων ἐπὶ τούτοις καὶ θωρήκων παρασκευαὶ 2
βελῶν τε καὶ δοράτων καὶ τῆς ἄλλης πολεμικῆς
παρατάξεως ἑτοιμασίαι τριήρων τε καὶ τῶν κατὰ
ναυμαχίαν ὅπλων κατὰ πάντα συνεκροτοῦντο
τόπον οὐδ' ἦν ἄλλο τι παντί τῳ προσδοκᾶν ἢ
πολέμων κατὰ πᾶσαν ἔφοδον ἡμέραν. τούτοις
καὶ ὁ μετὰ ταῦτα λιμός τε καὶ λοιμὸς ἐγκατα-
σκήπτει, περὶ ὧν κατὰ καιρὸν ἱστορήσομεν τὰ
δέοντα.

XVI. Τοιαῦτ' ἦν τὰ διὰ παντὸς τοῦ διωγμοῦ 1
παρατετακότα, δεκάτῳ μὲν ἔτει σὺν θεοῦ χάριτι
παντελῶς πεπαυμένου, λωφᾶν γε μὴν μετ' ὄγδοον
ἔτος ἐναρξαμένου. ὡς γὰρ τὴν εἰς ἡμᾶς ἐπισκοπὴν
εὐμενῆ καὶ ἵλεω ἡ θεία καὶ οὐράνιος χάρις ἐν-
εδείκνυτο, τότε δῆτα καὶ οἱ καθ' ἡμᾶς ἄρχοντες,
αὐτοὶ δὴ ἐκεῖνοι δι' ὧν πάλαι τὰ τῶν καθ' ἡμᾶς
ἐνηργεῖτο πολέμων, παραδοξότατα μεταθέμενοι τὴν
γνώμην, παλινῳδίαν ᾖδον χρηστοῖς περὶ ἡμῶν
προγράμμασιν καὶ διατάγμασιν ἡμερωτάτοις τὴν
ἐπὶ μέγα ἀφθεῖσαν τοῦ διωγμοῦ πυρκαϊὰν σβεν-
νύντες. οὐκ ἀνθρώπινον δέ τι τούτου κατέστη 2

great state of confusion until Christians recovered their rights of freedom.

XV. In fact, during the whole period of ten years of persecution there was no respite in their plotting and warfare against each other. The seas were unnavigable, and none, no matter whence they sailed, could escape being subjected to all kinds of torments : stretched on the rack and having their sides torn, and being examined under all sorts of tortures in case they should possibly be coming from the enemy of the contrary part, and in the end subjected to crucifixion or punishment by fire. Moreover, every place was busy with the preparation of shields and armour, the getting ready of darts and spears and other warlike accoutrements, and of triremes and naval gear ; and no one expected anything but an enemy attack all day long. And subsequently the famine and pestilence broke out among them, about which we shall recount what is necessary at the proper time.

XVI. Such was the state of affairs that continued throughout the whole persecution ; which came completely to an end, by the grace of God, in the tenth year,[1] though indeed it began to abate after the eighth year. For when the divine and heavenly grace showed that it watched over us with kindly and propitious regard, then indeed our rulers also, those very persons who had long time committed acts of war against us, changed their mind in the most marvellous manner, and gave utterance to a recantation, quenching the fire of persecution that had blazed so furiously, by means of merciful edicts and the most humane ordinances. But this was not due to any human agency nor to the pity, as one

[1] A.D. 313.

αἴτιον οὐδ' οἷκτος, ὡς ἂν φαίη τις, ἢ φιλανθρωπία τῶν ἀρχόντων· πολλοῦ δεῖ· πλείω γὰρ ὁσημέραι καὶ χαλεπώτερα ἀρχῆθεν καὶ εἰς ἐκεῖνο τοῦ καιροῦ τὰ καθ' ἡμῶν αὐτοῖς ἐπενοεῖτο, ποικιλωτέραις μηχαναῖς ἄλλοτε ἄλλως τὰς καθ' ἡμῶν αἰκίας ἐπικαινουργούντων· ἀλλ' αὐτῆς γε τῆς θείας προνοίας ἐμφανὴς ἐπίσκεψις, τῷ μὲν αὐτῆς καταλλαττομένης λαῷ, τῷ δ' αὐθέντῃ τῶν κακῶν ἐπεξιούσης καὶ πρωτοστάτῃ τῆς τοῦ παντὸς διωγμοῦ κακίας ἐπιχολουμένης. καὶ γὰρ εἴ τι 3
ταῦτ' ἐχρῆν κατὰ θείαν γενέσθαι κρίσιν, ἀλλά "οὐαί," φησὶν ὁ λόγος, "δι' οὗ δ' ἂν τὸ σκάνδαλον ἔρχηται." μέτεισιν δ' οὖν αὐτὸν θεήλατος κόλασις, ἐξ αὐτῆς αὐτοῦ καταρξαμένη σαρκὸς καὶ μέχρι τῆς ψυχῆς προελθοῦσα. ἀθρόα μὲν γὰρ 4
περὶ τὰ μέσα τῶν ἀπορρήτων τοῦ σώματος ἀπόστασις αὐτῷ γίνεται, εἶθ' ἕλκος ἐν βάθει συριγγῶδες καὶ τούτων ἀνίατος νομὴ κατὰ τῶν ἐνδοτάτω σπλάγχνων· ἀφ' ὧν ἄλεκτόν τι πλῆθος σκωλήκων βρύειν θανατώδη τε ὀδμὴν ἀποπνεῖν, τοῦ παντὸς ὄγκου τῶν σωμάτων ἐκ πολυτροφίας αὐτῷ καὶ πρὸ τῆς νόσου εἰς ὑπερβολὴν πλήθους πιμελῆς μεταβεβληκότος, ἣν τότε κατασαπεῖσαν ἀφόρητον καὶ φρικτοτάτην τοῖς πλησιάζουσιν παρέχειν τὴν θέαν. ἰατρῶν δ' οὖν οἱ μὲν οὐδ' 5
ὅλως ὑπομεῖναι τὴν τοῦ δυσώδους ὑπερβάλλουσαν ἀτοπίαν οἷοί τε, κατεσφάττοντο, οἱ δὲ διῳδηκότος τοῦ παντὸς ὄγκου καὶ εἰς ἀνέλπιστον σωτηρίας ἀποπεπτωκότος μηδὲν ἐπικουρεῖν δυνάμενοι, ἀνηλεῶς ἐκτείνοντο.

---

[1] Galerius.

might say, or humanity of the rulers. Far from it. For from the beginning up to that time they were daily plotting further and severer measures against us; from time to time they were inventing fresh assaults upon us by means of still more varied devices. But it was due to the manifestation of the Divine Providence itself, which, while it became reconciled to the people, attacked the perpetrator of these evils,[1] and was wroth with him as the chief author of the wickedness of the persecution as a whole. For verily, though it was destined that these things should come to pass as a divine judgement, yet the Scripture says, "Woe, through whomsoever the offence cometh."[2] A divinely-sent punishment, I say, executed vengeance upon him, beginning at his very flesh and proceeding to the soul. For all at once an abscess appeared in the midst of his privy parts, then a deeply-seated fistular ulcer; which could not be cured and ate their way into the very midst of his entrails. Hence there sprang an innumerable multitude of worms, and a deadly stench was given off, since the entire bulk of his members had, through gluttony, even before the disease, been changed into an excessive quantity of soft fat, which then became putrid and presented an intolerable and most fearful sight to those that came near it. As for the physicians, some of them were wholly unable to endure the exceeding and unearthly stench, and were butchered; others, who could not be of any assistance since the whole mass had swollen and reached a point where there was no hope of recovery, were put to death without mercy.

[2] Luke xvii. 1 (inexact quotation). The words, "and was wroth . . . cometh" are omitted in several important MSS.

XVII. Καὶ δὴ τοσούτοις παλαίων κακοῖς συν- 1
αίσθησιν τῶν κατὰ τῶν θεοσεβῶν αὐτῷ τετολ-
μημένων ἴσχει, συναγαγὼν δ' οὖν εἰς ἑαυτὸν τὴν
διάνοιαν, πρῶτα μὲν ἀνθομολογεῖται τῷ τῶν ὅλων
θεῷ, εἶτα τοὺς ἀμφ' αὐτὸν ἀνακαλέσας, μηδὲν
ὑπερθεμένους τὸν κατὰ Χριστιανῶν ἀποπαῦσαι
διωγμὸν νόμῳ τε καὶ δόγματι βασιλικῷ τὰς
ἐκκλησίας αὐτῶν οἰκοδομεῖν ἐπισπέρχειν καὶ τὰ
συνήθη διαπράττεσθαι, εὐχὰς ὑπὲρ τοῦ βασιλείου
ποιουμένους, προστάττει. αὐτίκα γοῦν ἔργου τῷ 2
λόγῳ παρηκολουθηκότος, ἥπλωτο κατὰ πόλεις
βασιλικὰ διατάγματα, τὴν παλινῳδίαν τῶν καθ'
ἡμᾶς τοῦτον περιέχοντα τὸν τρόπον·

"Αὐτοκράτωρ Καῖσαρ Γαλέριος Οὐαλέριος 3
Μαξιμιανὸς ἀνίκητος Σεβαστός, ἀρχιερεὺς μέ-
γιστος, Γερμανικὸς μέγιστος, Αἰγυπτιακὸς μέγι-
στος, Θηβαϊκὸς μέγιστος, Σαρματικὸς μέγιστος
πεντάκις, Περσῶν μέγιστος δίς, Κάρπων μέγιστος
ἑξάκις, Ἀρμενίων μέγιστος, Μήδων μέγιστος,
Ἀδιαβηνῶν μέγιστος, δημαρχικῆς ἐξουσίας τὸ
εἰκοστόν, αὐτοκράτωρ τὸ ἐννεακαιδέκατον, ὕπατος
τὸ ὄγδοον, πατὴρ πατρίδος, ἀνθύπατος· καὶ 4
Αὐτοκράτωρ Καῖσαρ Φλαύιος Οὐαλέριος Κων-
σταντῖνος εὐσεβὴς εὐτυχὴς ἀνίκητος Σεβαστός,
ἀρχιερεὺς μέγιστος, δημαρχικῆς ἐξουσίας, αὐτο-
κράτωρ τὸ πέμπτον, ὕπατος, πατὴρ πατρίδος,
ἀνθύπατος. [καὶ Αὐτοκράτωρ Καῖσαρ Οὐαλέριος 5
Λικιννιανὸς Λικίννιος εὐσεβὴς εὐτυχὴς ἀνίκητος
Σεβαστός, ἀρχιερεὺς μέγιστος, δημαρχικῆς ἐξ-

[1] *i.e.* hailed as *Imperator* by the army after some notable victory.

[2] Lactantius states that the edict was issued in the name of all four emperors (*cf.* also 16. 1), so that Maximin's

XVII. And wrestling with such terrible misfortunes he was conscience-stricken for the cruel deeds he had perpetrated against the godly. Collecting, therefore, his thoughts, he first openly confessed to the God of the universe; then he called those around him, and commanded them without delay to cause the persecution against Christians to cease, and by an imperial law and decree to urge them to build their churches and to perform their accustomed rites, offering prayers on the Emperor's behalf. Action immediately followed his word, and imperial ordinances were promulgated in each city, containing the recantation of the [persecution edicts] of our time, after this manner: "The Emperor Caesar Galerius Valerius Maximianus Invictus Augustus, Pontifex Maximus, Germanicus Maximus, Aegyptiacus Maximus, Thebaicus Maximus, Sarmaticus Maximus five times, Persicus Maximus twice, Carpicus Maximus six times, Armeniacus Maximus, Medicus Maximus, Adiabenicus Maximus, holding the Tribunician Power for the twentieth time, Emperor for the nineteenth time,[1] Consul for the eighth, Father of his country, Proconsul:[2] . . . And the Emperor Caesar Flavius Valerius Constantinus Pius Felix Invictus Augustus, Pontifex Maximus, holding the Tribunician Power, Emperor for the fifth time, Consul, Father of his country, Proconsul: [And the Emperor Caesar Valerius Licinianus Licinius Pius Felix Invictus Augustus, Pontifex Maximus, holding the Tribunician

names and titles, here omitted, must have appeared in the original where the lacuna is indicated. Similarly, some MSS. omit the reference to Licinius, which is here placed in brackets. Both Maximin and Licinius persecuted the Christians subsequently, and this fact may have led to the omission of their names.

ουσίας τὸ τέταρτον, αὐτοκράτωρ τὸ τρίτον, ὕπατος, πατὴρ πατρίδος, ἀνθύπατος, ἐπαρχιώταις ἰδίοις χαίρειν.]

" Μεταξὺ τῶν λοιπῶν, ἅπερ ὑπὲρ τοῦ χρησίμου 6
καὶ λυσιτελοῦς τοῖς δημοσίοις διατυπούμεθα,
ἡμεῖς μὲν βεβουλήμεθα πρότερον κατὰ τοὺς
ἀρχαίους νόμους καὶ τὴν δημοσίαν ἐπιστήμην τὴν
τῶν Ῥωμαίων ἅπαντα ἐπανορθώσασθαι καὶ τούτου
πρόνοιαν ποιήσασθαι ἵνα καὶ οἱ Χριστιανοί,
οἵτινες τῶν γονέων τῶν ἑαυτῶν καταλελοίπασιν
τὴν αἵρεσιν, εἰς ἀγαθὴν πρόθεσιν ἐπανέλθοιεν·
ἐπείπερ τινὶ λογισμῷ τοσαύτη αὐτοὺς πλεονεξία 7
κατεσχήκει καὶ ἄνοια κατειλήφει ὡς μὴ ἕπεσθαι
τοῖς ὑπὸ τῶν πάλαι καταδειχθεῖσιν, ἅπερ ἴσως
πρότερον καὶ οἱ γονεῖς αὐτῶν ᾖσαν καταστήσαντες,
ἀλλὰ κατὰ τὴν αὐτῶν πρόθεσιν καὶ ὡς ἕκαστος
ἐβούλετο, οὕτως ἑαυτοῖς καὶ νόμους ποιῆσαι καὶ
τούτους παραφυλάσσειν καὶ ἐν διαφόροις διάφορα
πλήθη συνάγειν. τοιγαροῦν τοιούτου ὑφ' ἡμῶν 8
προστάγματος παρακολουθήσαντος ὥστε ἐπὶ τὰ
ὑπὸ τῶν ἀρχαίων κατασταθέντα ἑαυτοὺς μετα-
στήσαιεν, πλεῖστοι μὲν κινδύνῳ ὑποβληθέντες,
πλεῖστοι δὲ ταραχθέντες παντοίους θανάτους ὑπ-
έφερον· καὶ ἐπειδὴ τῶν πολλῶν τῇ αὐτῇ ἀπονοίᾳ 9
διαμενόντων ἐωρῶμεν μήτε τοῖς θεοῖς τοῖς ἐπ-
ουρανίοις τὴν ὀφειλομένην θρησκείαν προσάγειν
αὐτοὺς μήτε τῷ τῶν Χριστιανῶν προσέχειν,
ἀφορῶντες εἰς τὴν ἡμετέραν φιλανθρωπίαν καὶ
τὴν διηνεκῆ συνήθειαν δι' ἧς εἰώθαμεν ἅπασιν
ἀνθρώποις συγγνώμην ἀπονέμειν, προθυμότατα

Power for the fourth time, Emperor for the third time, Consul, Father of his country, Proconsul: to the people of their provinces, greeting.]

"Among the other measures that we frame for the use and profit of the state, it had been our own wish formerly that all things should be set to rights in accordance with the ancient laws and public order[1] of the Romans; and to make provision for this, namely, that the Christians also, such as had abandoned the persuasion of their own ancestors, should return to a sound mind; seeing that through some reasoning they had been possessed of such self-will and seized with such folly[2] that, instead of following the institutions of the ancients, which perchance their own forefathers had formerly established, they made for themselves, and were observing, laws merely in accordance with their own disposition and as each one wished, and were assembling various multitudes in divers places: Therefore when a command of ours soon followed to the intent that they should betake themselves to the institutions of the ancients, very many indeed were subjected to peril, while very many were harassed and endured all kinds of death; And since the majority held to the same folly, and we perceived that they were neither paying the worship due to the gods of heaven nor honouring the god of the Christians; having regard to our clemency and the invariable custom by which we are wont to accord pardon to all men, we thought it right in this

[1] ἐπιστήμη is the usual translation of *disciplina* (the word in the original in this place) in documents of this kind. The same word and translation occur again in § 9.

[2] The words, "and . . . folly" are omitted in some important MSS. of Eusebius, but are in the original Latin, as given by Lactantius.

καὶ ἐν τούτῳ τὴν συγχώρησιν τὴν ἡμετέραν ἐπεκτεῖναι δεῖν ἐνομίσαμεν, ἵνα αὖθις ὦσιν Χριστιανοὶ καὶ τοὺς οἴκους ἐν οἷς συνήγοντο, συνθῶσιν οὕτως ὥστε μηδὲν ὑπεναντίον τῆς ἐπιστήμης αὐτοὺς πράττειν. δι' ἑτέρας δὲ ἐπιστολῆς τοῖς δικασταῖς δηλώσομεν τί αὐτοὺς παραφυλάξασθαι δεήσει· ὅθεν κατὰ ταύτην τὴν συγχώρησιν τὴν ἡμετέραν ὀφείλουσιν τὸν ἑαυτῶν θεὸν ἱκετεύειν περὶ τῆς σωτηρίας τῆς ἡμετέρας καὶ τῶν δημοσίων καὶ τῆς ἑαυτῶν, ἵνα κατὰ πάντα τρόπον καὶ τὰ δημόσια παρασχεθῇ ὑγιῆ καὶ ἀμέριμνοι ζῆν ἐν τῇ ἑαυτῶν ἑστίᾳ δυνηθῶσι."

Ταῦτα κατὰ τὴν Ῥωμαίων φωνήν, ἐπὶ τὴν Ἑλλάδα γλῶτταν κατὰ τὸ δυνατὸν μεταληφθέντα, τοῦτον εἶχεν τὸν τρόπον. τί δὴ οὖν ἐπὶ τούτοις γίνεται, ἐπιθεωρῆσαι καιρός.

case also to extend most willingly our indulgence: That Christians may exist again and build the houses in which they used to assemble, always provided that they do nothing contrary to order. In another letter we shall indicate to the judges how they should proceed. Wherefore, in accordance with this our indulgence, they will be bound to beseech their own god for our welfare, and that of the state, and their own; that in every way both the well being of the state may be secured, and they may be enabled to live free from care in their own homes."

Such is the character of this edict in the Latin tongue, translated into Greek as well as may be. Now it is time to consider carefully what happened subsequently.

Ἀλλ' ὁ μὲν τῆς γραφῆς αἴτιος μετὰ τὴν τοιάνδε 1
ὁμολογίαν αὐτίκα καὶ οὐκ εἰς μακρὸν τῶν ἀλγη-
δόνων ἀπαλλαγεὶς μεταλλάττει τὸν βίον. τοῦτον
δὴ λόγος ἔχει πρῶτον αἴτιον τῆς τοῦ διωγμοῦ
καταστῆναι συμφορᾶς, ἔτι πάλαι πρὸ τῆς τῶν
λοιπῶν βασιλέων κινήσεως τοὺς ἐν στρατείαις
Χριστιανοὺς καὶ πρώτους γε ἁπάντων τοὺς ἐπὶ
τοῦ ἰδίου οἴκου παρατρέπειν ἐκβεβιασμένον καὶ
τοὺς μὲν ἐκ τῆς στρατιωτικῆς ἀξίας ἀποκινοῦντα,
τοὺς δὲ ἀτιμότατα καθυβρίζοντα, ἤδη δὲ καὶ
θάνατον ἑτέροις ἐπαρτῶντα καὶ τοὔσχατόν γε τοὺς
τῆς βασιλείας κοινωνοὺς ἐπὶ τὸν κατὰ πάντων
ἀνακεκινηκότα διωγμόν· ὧν καὶ αὐτῶν οὐκ ἄξιον
τὸ τοῦ βίου τέλος παραδοῦναι σιωπῇ. τεττάρων 2
οὖν τὴν κατὰ πάντων διειληχότων ἀρχήν, οἳ μὲν
χρόνῳ καὶ τιμῇ προηγούμενοι οὐδ' ὅλοις δυεῖν
ἔτεσιν ἐπιγενόμενοι τῷ διωγμῷ μεθίστανται τῆς
βασιλείας, ᾗ καὶ πρόσθεν ἡμῖν δεδήλωται, καὶ δὴ
τὸν ἐπίλοιπον τοῦ βίου χρόνον δημώδει καὶ
ἰδιωτικῷ τρόπῳ διαγενόμενοι τέλος τοιόνδε τῆς
ζωῆς εἰλήχασιν, ὁ μὲν τιμῇ τε καὶ χρόνῳ τῶν 3
πρωτείων ἠξιωμένος μακρᾷ καὶ ἐπιλυποτάτῃ τῇ
τοῦ σώματος ἀσθενείᾳ διεργασθείς, ὁ δὲ τὰ δεύτερα
αὐτοῦ φέρων ἀγχόνῃ τὴν ζωὴν ἀπορρήξας, κατά

[1] For an account of the mss. of the *Ecclesiastical History* see Vol. I. pp. xxvii-xxix.

THE APPENDIX TO BOOK VIII

(*found in codd. AER*).[1]

But the author of the edict, after such a confession, was immediately, though not for long, released from his pains, and so departed this life. It is recorded that this same person was the prime author of the calamity of the persecution; since long before the movement of the other emperors he had used force to turn aside [from the faith] the Christians in the army—and, first of all, those in his own house—degrading some from their military rank, and heaping the most shameful insults on others; and since he was already threatening others even with death, and, finally, had stirred up his partners in the principate to the general persecution. It is not possible to pass over the ends of these same emperors in silence. Four, then, had divided the supreme power between them. Those who were the more advanced in age and honour[2] retired from the principate not two whole years after the persecution began, as we have already stated, and passed the remainder of their existence like ordinary, private citizens. The end of their lives fell out thus. The one who had attained the chief place in honour and age[3] fell a victim to a prolonged and most painful infirmity of the body; while he who held the second place to him[4] ended his life by

[2] Diocletian and Maximinian (viii. 13. 10, 11).
[3] Diocletian. [4] Maximinian.

τινα δαιμονίαν προσημείωσιν τοῦτο παθὼν διὰ πλείστας αὐτῷ τετολμημένας ῥᾳδιουργίας. τῶν δὲ μετὰ τούτους ὁ μὲν ὕστατος, ὃν δὴ καὶ ἀρχηγὸν τοῦ παντὸς ἔφαμεν γεγονέναι διωγμοῦ, τοιαῦτα οἷα καὶ προδεδηλώκαμεν πέπονθεν, ὁ δὲ τοῦτον προάγων χρηστότατος καὶ ἠπιώτατος βασιλεὺς Κωνστάντιος, ἐπαξίως τῆς ἡγεμονίας τὸν ἅπαντα τῆς ἀρχῆς διατελέσας χρόνον [ἀλλὰ] καὶ τἄλλα τοῖς πᾶσι δεξιώτατον καὶ εὐεργετικώτατον παρασχὼν ἑαυτόν, ἀτὰρ καὶ τοῦ καθ' ἡμῶν πολέμου ἔξω γενόμενος καὶ τοὺς ὑπ' αὐτὸν θεοσεβεῖς ἀβλαβεῖς καὶ ἀνεπηρεάστους διαφυλάξας καὶ μήτε τοὺς οἴκους τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν καθελὼν μήθ' ἕτερόν τι μηδ' ὅλως καθ' ἡμῶν ἐπικαινουργήσας, τέλος εὔδαιμον καὶ τρισμακάριον ὄντως ἀπείληφεν τοῦ βίου, μόνος ἐπὶ τῆς αὐτοῦ βασιλείας εὐμενῶς καὶ ἐπιδόξως ἐπὶ διαδόχῳ τῆς βασιλείας γνησίῳ παιδὶ τὰ πάντα σωφρονεστάτῳ καὶ εὐσεβεστάτῳ τελευτήσας· ὃς εὐθὺς ἀρχόμενος βασιλεὺς τελεώτατος καὶ Σεβαστὸς πρὸς τῶν στρατοπέδων ἀναγορευθείς, ζηλωτὴν ἑαυτὸν τῆς πατρικῆς περὶ τὸν ἡμέτερον λόγον εὐσεβείας κατεστήσατο. τοιαύτη τῶν προαναγεγραμμένων τεττάρων ἡ τοῦ βίου ἔκβασις, κατὰ παρηλλαγμένους χρόνους γεγενημένη. τούτων δὴ μόνος ἔτι λιπὼν ὁ μικρῷ πρόσθεν ἡμῖν εἰρημένος σὺν τοῖς μετὰ ταῦτα εἰς τὴν ἀρχὴν εἰσποιηθεῖσι τὴν προδεδηλωμένην ἐξομολόγησιν διὰ τοῦ προεκτεθέντος ἐγγράφου λόγου τοῖς πᾶσι φανερὰν κατεστήσαντο.

---

[1] Galerius. [2] § 1.

strangling : suffering this fate, in accordance with a certain demoniacal prediction, for the numerous crimes he had perpetrated. Of those after them, he[1] who held the last place—the same who was the originator, as we stated,[2] of the whole persecution—suffered the fate which we have mentioned above[2]; but he who ranked next before him, that kindest and mildest of emperors, Constantius, passed the whole period of his principate in a manner worthy of his high office, and in other respects displayed himself in a most beneficent and favourable light to all; yea, and he held himself aloof from the war against us, and carefully preserved his God-fearing subjects from injury and harsh treatment; neither did he pull down the church-buildings nor employ any other additional new device against us at all. So he has had as his reward a truly happy and thrice-blessed issue of his life; for he alone met with a favourable and glorious end while he was still emperor, with a lawful son, in all respects most prudent and godly, to succeed him in the office. He from the very first was proclaimed by the armies most perfect Emperor and Augustus; and he set himself to be an emulator of his father's piety towards our doctrine. Such was the issue which befell, at different times, the lives of the four men of whom we have written above. Of these same persons, he of whom we spoke a little while ago alone still remained,[3] and, in conjunction with those who subsequently were admitted to the principate,[4] openly placed before all the aforesaid confession in the document which was set out above.

[3] ἐτὶ λιπών: but we should require λειπόμενος to give the above sense.

[4] Constantine, Licinius, and Maximin.

Θ̄

Τάδε καὶ ἡ ἐνάτη περιέχει βίβλος τῆς Ἐκκλησιαστικῆς ἱστορίας

Ā Περὶ τῆς ἐπιπλάστου ἀνέσεως.
B̄ Περὶ τῆς μετέπειτα διαστροφῆς.
Γ̄ Περὶ τοῦ κατὰ Ἀντιόχειαν νεοπαγοῦς ξοάνου.
Δ̄ Περὶ τῶν καθ' ἡμῶν ψηφισμάτων.
Ē Περὶ τῶν ἐπιπλάστων ὑπομνημάτων.
Ϛ̄ Περὶ τῶν ἐν τῷδε τῷ χρόνῳ μεμαρτυρηκότων.
Z̄ Περὶ τῆς καθ' ἡμῶν ἐν στήλαις ἀνατεθείσης γραφῆς.
H̄ Περὶ τῶν μετὰ ταῦτα συμβεβηκότων ἐν λιμῷ καὶ λοιμῷ καὶ πολέμοις.
Θ̄ Περὶ τῆς τῶν τυράννων καταστροφῆς τοῦ βίου, καὶ οἵαις ἐχρήσαντο πρὸ τῆς τελευτῆς φωναῖς.
[Ī Περὶ τῆς τῶν θεοφιλῶν βασιλέων νίκης].
Ī[Ā] Περὶ τῆς ὑστάτης ἀπωλείας τῶν τῆς θεοσεβείας ἐχθρῶν.

CONTENTS OF BOOK IX

The Ninth Book of the Ecclesiastical History contains the following:

I. On the feigned relaxation.

II. On the change for the worse that ensued.

III. On the new-made idol at Antioch.

IV. On the petitions against us.

V. On the forged memoirs.

VI. On those who were martyred at this time.

VII. On the document against us set up on tablets.

VIII. On the subsequent events, the famine and pestilence and wars.

IX. On the close of the tyrants' lives, and what expressions they made use of before the end.

X. On the victory of the God-beloved Emperors.

XI. On the final destruction of the enemies of godliness.

Θ

I. Τὰ μὲν δὴ τῆς παλινῳδίας τοῦ προτεθέντος 1
βασιλικοῦ νεύματος ἥπλωτο τῆς Ἀσίας πάντῃ
καὶ πανταχοῦ κατά τε τὰς ἀμφὶ ταύτην ἐπαρχίας·
ὧν τοῦτον ἐπιτελεσθέντων τὸν τρόπον Μαξιμῖνος,
ὁ ἐπ᾽ ἀνατολῆς τύραννος, δυσσεβέστατος εἰ καί
τις ἄλλος, καὶ τῆς εἰς τὸν τῶν ὅλων θεὸν εὐσεβείας
πολεμιώτατος γεγονώς, οὐδαμῶς τοῖς γραφεῖσιν
ἀρεσθείς, ἀντὶ τοῦ προτεθέντος γράμματος λόγῳ
προστάττει τοῖς ὑπ᾽ αὐτὸν ἄρχουσιν τὸν καθ᾽
ἡμῶν ἀνεῖναι πόλεμον. ἐπεὶ γὰρ αὐτῷ μὴ ἐξῆν
ἄλλως τῇ τῶν κρειττόνων ἀντιλέγειν κρίσει, τὸν
προεκτεθέντα νόμον ἐν παραβύστῳ θεὶς καὶ ὅπως
ἐν τοῖς ὑπ᾽ αὐτὸν μέρεσιν μὴ εἰς προῦπτον ἀχθείη,
φροντίσας, ἀγράφῳ προστάγματι τοῖς ὑπ᾽ αὐτὸν
ἄρχουσιν τὸν καθ᾽ ἡμῶν διωγμὸν ἀνεῖναι προσ-
τάττει· οἳ δὲ τὰ τῆς παρακελεύσεως ἀλλήλοις
διὰ γραφῆς ὑποσημαίνουσιν. ὁ γοῦν παρ᾽ αὐτοῖς 2
τῷ τῶν ἐξοχωτάτων ἐπάρχων ἀξιώματι τετι-
μημένος Σαβῖνος πρὸς τοὺς κατ᾽ ἔθνος ἡγουμένους
τὴν βασιλέως ἐμφαίνει γνώμην διὰ Ῥωμαϊκῆς
ἐπιστολῆς· ἧς καὶ αὐτῆς ἡ ἑρμηνεία τοῦτον
περιέχει τὸν τρόπον·

"Λιπαρωτάτῃ καὶ καθωσιωμένῃ σπουδῇ ἡ 3
θειότης τῶν δεσποτῶν ἡμῶν θειοτάτων αὐτο-
κρατόρων πάντων τῶν ἀνθρώπων τὰς διανοίας

BOOK IX

I. The recantation of the imperial will set forth above [1] was promulgated broadcast throughout Asia and in the neighbouring provinces. After this had thus been done, Maximin, the tyrant of the East, a monster of impiety if ever there was one, who had been the bitterest enemy of piety toward the God of the universe, was by no means pleased with what was written, and instead of making known the letter set forth above gave verbal commands to the rulers under him to relax the war against us. For since he might not otherwise gainsay the judgement of his superiors, he put in a corner the law set forth above ; and, taking measures how it might never see the light of day in the districts under him, by an oral direction he commanded the rulers under him to relax the persecution against us. And they intimated to each other in writing the terms of the order. Sabinus, for instance, whom they had honoured with the rank of most excellent prefect, made known the Emperor's decision to the provincial governors in a Latin epistle. The translation of the same runs as follows :

" With a most earnest and devoted zeal the Divinity of our most divine masters, the Emperors, has for a long time determined to lead all men's

[1] viii. 17.

πρὸς τὴν ὁσίαν καὶ ὀρθὴν τοῦ ζῆν ὁδὸν περιαγαγεῖν ἔτι πάλαι ὥρισεν, ὅπως καὶ οἱ ἀλλοτρίᾳ Ῥωμαίων συνηθείᾳ ἀκολουθεῖν δοκοῦντες τὰς ὀφειλομένας θρησκείας τοῖς ἀθανάτοις θεοῖς ἐπιτελοῖεν· ἀλλ' ἡ τινῶν ἔνστασις καὶ τραχυτάτη 4
βουλὴ εἰς τοσοῦτον περιέστη ὡς μήτε λογισμῷ δικαίῳ τῆς κελεύσεως δύνασθαι ἐκ τῆς ἰδίας προθέσεως ἀναχωρεῖν μήτε τὴν ἐπικειμένην τιμωρίαν αὐτοὺς ἐκφοβεῖν. ἐπειδὴ τοίνυν συνέβαινεν 5
ἐκ τοῦ τοιούτου τρόπου πολλοὺς εἰς κίνδυνον ἑαυτοὺς περιβάλλειν, κατὰ τὴν προσοῦσαν εὐγένειαν τῆς εὐσεβείας ἡ θειότης τῶν δεσποτῶν ἡμῶν τῶν δυνατωτάτων αὐτοκρατόρων ἀλλότριον εἶναι τῆς προθέσεως τῆς θειοτάτης τῆς ἰδίας δοκιμάζουσα τὸ ἐκ τῆς τοιαύτης αἰτίας εἰς τοσοῦτον κίνδυνον τοὺς ἀνθρώπους περιβάλλειν, ἐκέλευσεν διὰ τῆς ἐμῆς καθοσιώσεως τῇ σῇ ἀγχινοίᾳ διαχαράξαι ἵν' εἴ τις τῶν Χριστιανῶν τοῦ ἰδίου ἔθνους τὴν θρησκείαν μετιὼν εὑρεθείη, τῆς κατ' αὐτοῦ ἐνοχλήσεως καὶ τοῦ κινδύνου αὐτὸν ἀποστήσειας καὶ μή τινα ἐκ ταύτης τῆς προφάσεως τιμωρίᾳ κολαστέον νομίσειας, ὁπότε τῇ τοῦ τοσούτου χρόνου συνελεύσει συνέστη αὐτοὺς μηδενὶ τρόπῳ πεπεῖσθαι δεδυνῆσθαι ὅπως ἀπὸ τῶν τοιούτων ἐνστάσεων ἀναχωρήσαιεν. γράψαι τοιγαροῦν πρὸς 6
τοὺς λογιστὰς καὶ τοὺς στρατηγοὺς καὶ τοὺς πραιποσίτους τοῦ πάγου ἑκάστης πόλεως ἡ σὴ ἐπιστρέφεια ὀφείλει ἵνα γνοῖεν περαιτέρω αὐτοῖς τούτου τοῦ γράμματος φροντίδα ποιεῖσθαι μὴ προσήκειν."

Ἐπὶ τούτοις οἱ κατ' ἐπαρχίαν τὴν τῶν 7
γραφέντων αὐτοῖς ἐπαληθεύειν προαίρεσιν νενο-

thoughts into the holy and right path of life, so that those also who seemed to follow customs foreign to the Romans should perform the acts of worship due to the immortal gods. But the obstinacy and most unyielding determination of some was carried to such a length, that neither could they be turned back from their own purpose by just reasoning embodied in the order, nor did they fear the punishment that threatened. Since therefore it has come about that many by such conduct endanger themselves, in accordance with the noble piety that is theirs, the Divinity of our masters, the most mighty Emperors, deeming it foreign to their divine purpose that for such a reason they should so greatly endanger these men, gave commandment through my Devotedness to write to thy Intelligence, that if any of the Christians be found following the religion of his nation, thou shouldest set him free from molestation directed against him and from danger, nor shouldest thou deem anyone punishable on this charge, since so long a passage of time has proved that they can in no wise be persuaded to abandon such obstinate conduct. Let it be thy Solicitude's duty, therefore, to write to the curators and the duumvirs and the magistrates of the district of every city, that they may know that it is not beseeming for them to take any further notice of that letter."[1]

Whereupon the rulers of the provinces, having concluded that the purport of what had been written

[1] If the Greek here is a correct translation of the Latin original, the words "that letter" must refer to some previous document ordering the persecution of Christians.

μικότες, λογισταῖς καὶ στρατηγοῖς καὶ τοῖς κατ' ἀγροὺς ἐπιτεταγμένοις τὴν βασιλικὴν διὰ γραμμάτων ἐμφανῆ καθιστῶσι γνώμην· οὐ μόνον δ' αὐτοῖς διὰ γραφῆς ταῦτα προυχώρει, καὶ ἔργοις δὲ πολὺ πρότερον, ὡς ἂν νεῦμα βασιλικὸν εἰς πέρας ἄγοντες, ὅσους εἶχον δεσμωτηρίοις καθειργμένους διὰ τὴν εἰς τὸ θεῖον ὁμολογίαν, εἰς φανερὸν προάγοντες ἠλευθέρουν, ἀνιέντες τούτων δὴ αὐτῶν τοὺς ἐν μετάλλοις ἐπὶ τιμωρίᾳ δεδομένους· τοῦτο γὰρ ἐπ' ἀληθείας βασιλεῖ δοκεῖν ὑπειλήφασιν ἠπατημένοι. καὶ δὴ τούτων οὕτως ἐπιτελεσθέν- 8
2 Cor. 4, 6 των, ἀθρόως οἷόν τι φῶς ἐκ ζοφερᾶς νυκτὸς ἐκλάμψαν, κατὰ πᾶσαν πόλιν συγκροτουμένας παρῆν ὁρᾶν ἐκκλησίας συνόδους τε παμπληθεῖς καὶ τὰς ἐπὶ τούτων ἐξ ἔθους ἐπιτελουμένας ἀγωγάς· καταπέπληκτο δ' οὐ σμικρῶς ἐπὶ τούτοις πᾶς τις τῶν ἀπίστων ἐθνῶν, τῆς τοσαύτης μεταβολῆς τὸ παράδοξον ἀποθαυμάζων μέγαν τε καὶ μόνον ἀληθῆ τὸν Χριστιανῶν θεὸν ἐπιβοώμενος. τῶν 9
δ' ἡμετέρων οἳ μὲν τὸν τῶν διωγμῶν ἀγῶνα πιστῶς καὶ ἀνδρικῶς διηθληκότες τὴν πρὸς ἅπαντας αὖθις ἀπελάμβανον παρρησίαν, ὅσοι δὲ τὰ τῆς πίστεως νενοσηκότες τὰς ψυχὰς ἐτύγχανον κεχειμασμένοι, ἀσμένως περὶ τὴν σφῶν θεραπείαν ἔσπευδον, ἀντιβολοῦντες καὶ σωτηρίας δεξιὰν τοὺς ἐρρωμένους αἰτούμενοι τόν τε θεὸν ἵλεων αὐτοῖς γενέσθαι καθικετεύοντες· εἶτα δὲ καὶ οἱ γενναῖοι τῆς θεο- 10
σεβείας ἀθληταὶ τῆς εἰς τὰ μέταλλα κακοπαθείας ἐλευθερούμενοι ἐπὶ τὰς αὐτῶν ἐστέλλοντο, γαῦροι καὶ φαιδροὶ διὰ πάσης ἰόντες πόλεως εὐφροσύνης τε ἀλέκτου καὶ ἣν οὐδὲ λόγῳ δυνατὸν ἑρμηνεῦσαι παρρησίας ἔμπλεοι. στίφη δ' οὖν πολυάνθρωπα 11

to them was a genuine expression, made known by means of letters the imperial resolve to curators, duumvirs and rural magistrates. And not only did they further these measures by writing, but also much more so by action. With a view to carrying out the imperial will, as many as they kept shut up in prisons for their confession of the Deity they brought into the light of day and set free, releasing such of these same persons as were consigned to the mines for punishment. For this, in truth, they mistakenly conceived to be the Emperor's wish. And when these things had thus been carried into effect, as though some light shined forth all at once out of a gloomy night, one might see churches thronged in every city, and crowded assemblies, and the rites performed thereat in the customary manner. And every single one of the unbelieving heathen was in no small degree amazed at these happenings, marvelling at the miracle of so great a change, and extolling the Christians' God as alone great and true. Of our own people, those who had faithfully and bravely contended throughout the conflict of persecutions once more resumed their confident bearing in the sight of all; but those whose faith had been diseased and souls storm-tost eagerly strove for their own healing, beseeching and begging the strong for the right hand of safety, and supplicating God to be merciful to them. And then also the noble champions of godliness, freed from their evil plight in the mines, returned to their own homes. Proudly and joyously they went through every city, full of unspeakable mirth and a boldness that cannot even be expressed in words. Yea, thronging crowds of men

κατὰ μέσας λεωφόρους καὶ ἀγορὰς ᾠδαῖς καὶ ψαλμοῖς τὸν θεὸν ἀνυμνοῦντα τὰ τῆς πορείας ἤννεν, καὶ τοὺς μετὰ τιμωρίας ἀπηνεστάτης μικρῷ πρόσθεν δεσμίους τῶν πατρίδων ἀπεληλαμένους εἶδες ἂν ἱλαροῖς καὶ γεγηθόσι προσώποις τὰς αὐτῶν ἑστίας ἀπολαμβάνοντας, ὡς καὶ τοὺς πρότερον καθ' ἡμῶν φονῶντας τὸ θαῦμα παρὰ πᾶσαν ὁρῶντας ἐλπίδα, συγχαίρειν τοῖς γεγενημένοις.

II. Ταῦτα δ' οὐκέθ' οἷός τε φέρειν ὁ τύραννος 1
μισόκαλος καὶ πάντων ἀγαθῶν ἐπίβουλος ὑπάρχων, ὃν ἔφαμεν τῶν ἐπ' ἀνατολῆς ἄρχειν μερῶν, οὐδ' ὅλους ἐπὶ μῆνας ἓξ τοῦτον ἐπιτελεῖσθαι τὸν τρόπον ἠνέσχετο. ὅσα δ' οὖν πρὸς ἀνατροπὴν τῆς εἰρήνης μηχανώμενος πρῶτον μὲν εἴργειν ἡμᾶς τῆς ἐν τοῖς κοιμητηρίοις συνόδου διὰ προφάσεως πειρᾶται, εἶτα διά τινων πονηρῶν ἀνδρῶν αὐτὸς ἑαυτῷ καθ' ἡμῶν πρεσβεύεται, τοὺς Ἀντιοχέων πολίτας παρορμήσας ἐπὶ τὸ μηδαμῶς τινα Χριστιανῶν τὴν αὐτῶν οἰκεῖν ἐπιτρέπεσθαι πατρίδα ὡς ἐν μεγίστῃ δωρεᾷ παρ' αὐτοῦ τυχεῖν ἀξιῶσαι, καὶ ἑτέρους δὲ ταὐτὸν ὑποβαλεῖν διαπράξασθαι· ὧν πάντων ἀρχηγὸς ἐπ' αὐτῆς Ἀντιοχείας ἐπιφύεται Θεότεκνος, δεινὸς καὶ γόης καὶ πονηρὸς ἀνὴρ καὶ τῆς προσωνυμίας ἀλλότριος· ἐδόκει δὲ λογιστεύειν τὰ κατὰ τὴν πόλιν.

III. Πλεῖστα δ' οὖν οὗτος καθ' ἡμῶν στρα- 1
τευσάμενος καὶ πάντα τρόπον τοὺς ἡμετέρους ὥσπερ τινὰς φῶρας ἀνοσίους ἐκ μυχῶν θηρεῦσαι διὰ σπουδῆς πεποιημένος πάντα τε ἐπὶ διαβολῇ

went on their journey, praising God in the midst of thoroughfares and market-places with songs and psalms; and you might see those who shortly before had been prisoners undergoing the harshest punishment and driven from their native lands, now regaining with gay and joyful countenances their own hearths so that even those who formerly were thirsting for our blood, seeing the wondrous thing contrary to all expectation, rejoiced with us at what had happened.

II. This the tyrant could no longer endure, hater as he was of that which is good, and plotter against every virtuous man (he was the ruler, as we said,[1] of the eastern parts); nor did he suffer matters thus to be carried on for six entire months. Numerous, therefore, were his devices to overturn the peace: at first he attempted on some pretext to shut us out from assembling in the cemeteries,[2] then through the medium of certain evil men he sent embassies to himself against us, having urged the citizens of Antioch to ask that they might obtain from him, as a very great boon, that he should in no wise permit any of the Christians to inhabit their land, and to contrive that others should make the same suggestion. The originator of all this sprang up at Antioch itself in the person of Theotecnus, a clever cheat and an evil man, and quite unlike his name.[3] He was accounted to hold the post of curator[4] in the city.

III. This man, then, many times took the field against us; and, having been at pains by every method to hunt our people out of hiding-places as if they were unholy thieves, having employed every

[1] 1. 1. [2] *Cf.* vii. 11. 10, note.

[3] Theotecnus means Child of God.

[4] The chief finance officer of a municipality.

καὶ κατηγορίᾳ τῇ καθ' ἡμῶν μεμηχανημένος, καὶ θανάτου δὲ αἴτιος μυρίοις ὅσοις γεγονώς, τελευτῶν εἴδωλόν τι Διὸς Φιλίου μαγγανείαις τισὶν καὶ γοητείαις ἱδρύεται, τελετάς τε ἀνάγνους αὐτῷ καὶ μυήσεις ἀκαλλιερήτους ἐξαγίστους τε καθαρμοὺς ἐπινοήσας, μέχρι καὶ βασιλέως τὴν τερατείαν δι' ὧν ἐδόκει χρησμῶν ἐπεδείκνυτο. καὶ δὴ καὶ οὗτος κολακείᾳ τῇ καθ' ἡδονὴν τοῦ κρατοῦντος ἐπεγείρει κατὰ Χριστιανῶν τὸν δαίμονα καὶ τὸν θεὸν δὴ κελεῦσαί φησιν ὑπερορίους τῆς πόλεως καὶ τῶν ἀμφὶ τὴν πόλιν ἀγρῶν ὡς ἂν ἐχθροὺς αὐτῷ Χριστιανοὺς ἀπελάσαι.

IV. Τούτῳ δὲ πρώτῳ κατὰ γνώμην πράξαντι 1
πάντες οἱ λοιποὶ τῶν ἐν τέλει τὰς ὑπὸ τὴν αὐτὴν ἀρχὴν πόλεις οἰκοῦντες τὴν ὁμοίαν ὁρμῶνται ψῆφον ποιήσασθαι, προσφιλὲς εἶναι τοῦτο βασιλεῖ τῶν κατ' ἐπαρχίαν ἡγεμόνων συνεωρακότων καὶ τοῦτ' αὐτὸ διαπράξασθαι τοῖς ὑπηκόοις ὑποβεβληκότων· ὧν δὴ καὶ αὐτῶν τοῖς ψηφίσμασιν 2
δι' ἀντιγραφῆς ἀσμενέστατα ἐπινεύσαντος τοῦ τυράννου, αὖθις ἐξ ὑπαρχῆς ὁ καθ' ἡμῶν ἀνεφλέγετο διωγμός.

Ἱερεῖς δῆτα κατὰ πόλιν τῶν ξοάνων καὶ ἐπὶ τούτοις ἀρχιερεῖς πρὸς αὐτοῦ Μαξιμίνου οἱ μάλιστα ταῖς πολιτείαις διαπρέψαντες καὶ διὰ πασῶν ἔνδοξοι γενόμενοι καθίσταντο, οἷς καὶ πολλή τις εἰσήγετο σπουδὴ περὶ τὴν τῶν θεραπευομένων πρὸς αὐτῶν θρησκείαν. ἡ γοῦν ἔκτοπος τοῦ 3
κρατοῦντος δεισιδαιμονία, συνελόντι φάναι, πάντας τοὺς ὑπ' αὐτὸν ἄρχοντάς τε καὶ ἀρχομένους εἰς

device to slander and accuse us, having been the cause even of death to countless numbers, he ended by erecting a statue of Zeus the Befriender with certain juggleries and sorceries, and having devised unhallowed rites for it and ill-omened initiations and abominable purifications,[1] he exhibited his wonder-working by what oracles he pleased, even in the Emperor's presence. And moreover this fellow, in order to flatter and please him who was ruling, stirred up the demon against the Christians, and said that the god, forsooth, had given orders that the Christians should be driven away beyond the borders of the city and country round about, since they were his enemies.

IV. This man was the first to act thus of set purpose, and all the other officials who lived in the cities under the same rule hastened to make a like decision, the provincial governors having seen at a glance that it was pleasing to the Emperor, and having suggested to their subjects to do the very same thing. And when the tyrant had given a most willing assent to their petitions[2] by a rescript, once more the persecution against us was rekindled.

Maximin himself appointed as priests of the images in each city and, moreover, as high priests, those who were especially distinguished in the public services and had made their mark in the entire course thereof. These persons brought great zeal to bear on the worship of the gods whom they served. Certainly, the outlandish superstition of the ruler was inducing, in a word, all under him, both governors and governed,

[1] Eusebius here borrows some phrases from Dion. Alex. (vii. 10. 4 above).

[2] We have thus translated ψηφίσματα ("decisions") here and wherever it occurs in this book, inasmuch as these "decisions" were "petitions" against Christians.

τὴν αὐτοῦ χάριν πάντα πράττειν καθ' ἡμῶν ἐνῆγεν, ταύτην αὐτῷ χάριν μεγίστην ἀνθ' ὧν ἐνόμιζον πρὸς αὐτοῦ τεύξεσθαι εὐεργεσιῶν, ἀντιδωρουμένων, τὸ καθ' ἡμῶν φονᾶν καί τινας εἰς ἡμᾶς καινοτέρας κακοηθείας ἐνδείκνυσθαι.

V. Πλασάμενοι δῆτα Πιλάτου καὶ τοῦ σωτῆρος 1
ἡμῶν ὑπομνήματα πάσης ἔμπλεα κατὰ τοῦ Χριστοῦ βλασφημίας, γνώμῃ τοῦ μείζονος ἐπὶ πᾶσαν διαπέμπονται τὴν ὑπ' αὐτὸν ἀρχὴν διὰ προγραμμάτων παρακελευόμενοι κατὰ πάντα τόπον, ἀγρούς τε καὶ πόλεις, ἐν ἐκφανεῖ ταῦτα τοῖς πᾶσιν ἐκθεῖναι τοῖς τε παισὶ τοὺς γραμματοδιδασκάλους ἀντὶ μαθημάτων ταῦτα μελετᾶν καὶ διὰ μνήμης κατέχειν παραδιδόναι.

Ὧν τοῦτον ἐπιτελουμένων τὸν τρόπον, ἕτερος 2
στρατοπεδάρχης, ὃν δοῦκα Ῥωμαῖοι προσαγορεύουσιν, ἀνὰ τὴν Δαμασκὸν τῆς Φοινίκης ἐπίρρητά τινα γυναικάρια ἐξ ἀγορᾶς ἀνάρπαστα ποιήσας, βασάνους αὐταῖς ἐπιθήσειν ἠπείλει, λέγειν ἐγγράφως ἐπαναγκάζων, ὡς δὴ εἴησάν ποτε Χριστιαναὶ συνειδεῖέν τε αὐτοῖς ἀθεμιτουργίας ἐν αὐτοῖς τε τοῖς κυριακοῖς πράττειν αὐτοὺς τὰ ἀκόλαστα καὶ ὅσα ἄλλα λέγειν αὐτὰς ἐπὶ διαβολῇ τοῦ δόγματος ἤθελεν· ὧν καὶ οὗτος ἐν ὑπομνήμασιν τὰς φωνὰς ἐντεθείσας βασιλεῖ κοινοῦται, καὶ δὴ προστάξαντος εἰς πάντα τόπον καὶ πόλιν καὶ ταῦτα δημοσιοῦται τὰ γράμματα. VI. ἀλλ' ὃ μὲν οὐκ 1
εἰς μακρὸν αὐτόχειρ ἑαυτοῦ γεγονὼς ὁ στρατάρχης δίκην τίννυσιν τῆς κακοτροπίας.

Ἡμῶν δ' αὖ φυγαὶ πάλιν ἀνεκινοῦντο καὶ διωγμοὶ χαλεποὶ τῶν τε κατὰ πάσας ἐπαρχίας

[1] *i.e.* the commander of the frontier troops.

to do everything against us in order to secure his favour; in return for the benefits which they thought to secure from him, they bestowed upon him this greatest of boons, namely, to thirst for our blood and to display some more novel tokens of malice toward us.

V. Having forged, to be sure, Memoirs of Pilate and our Saviour, full of every kind of blasphemy against Christ, with the approval of their chief they sent them round to every part of his dominions, with edicts that they should be exhibited openly for everyone to see in every place, both town and country, and that the primary teachers should give them to the children, instead of lessons, for study and committal to memory.

While this was thus being carried out, another person, a commander, whom the Romans style *dux*,[1] caused certain infamous women to be abducted from the market-place at Damascus in Phoenicia, and, by continually threatening them with the infliction of tortures, compelled them to state in writing that they were once actually Christians, and privy to their unhallowed deeds, and that the Christians practised in the very churches lewdness and everything else that he wished these women to say in defamation of our faith. He also made a memorandum of their words and communicated it to the Emperor, and moreover at his command published this document also in every place and city. VI. But not long afterwards he, that is to say, the commander, died by his own hand, and thus paid the penalty for his wickedness.

But as for us, banishments and severe persecutions were again renewed, and the rulers in every province

ἡγουμένων αὖθις δειναὶ καθ' ἡμῶν ἐπαναστάσεις, ὡς καί τινας ἀλόντας τῶν περὶ τὸν θεῖον λόγον ἐπιφανῶν ἀπαραίτητον τὴν ἐπὶ θανάτῳ ψῆφον καταδέξασθαι.

Ὧν τρεῖς ἐν Ἐμίσῃ πόλει τῆς Φοινίκης Χριστιανοὺς σφᾶς ὁμολογήσαντες, θηρίων βορᾷ παραδίδονται· ἐπίσκοπος ἦν ἐν τούτοις Σιλβανός, τὴν ἡλικίαν ὑπέργηρως, ἐν ὅλοις ἔτεσιν τεσσαράκοντα τὴν λειτουργίαν διηνυκώς.

Κατὰ δὲ τὸν αὐτὸν χρόνον καὶ Πέτρος τῶν κατ' Ἀλεξάνδρειαν παροικιῶν προστὰς ἐπιφανέστατα, θεῖον ἐπισκόπων χρῆμα βίου τε ἀρετῆς ἕνεκα καὶ τῆς τῶν ἱερῶν λόγων συνασκήσεως, ἐξ οὐδεμιᾶς ἀνάρπαστος γεγονὼς αἰτίας, μηδεμιᾶς προλαβούσης προσδοκίας, ἀθρόως οὕτως καὶ ἀλόγως, ὡς ἂν Μαξιμίνου προστάξαντος, τὴν κεφαλὴν ἀποτέμνεται, σὺν αὐτῷ δὲ καὶ τῶν κατ' Αἴγυπτον ἐπισκόπων ἄλλοι πλείους ταὐτὸν ὑπομένουσιν.

Λουκιανός τε, ἀνὴρ τὰ πάντα ἄριστος βίῳ τε ἐγκρατεῖ καὶ τοῖς ἱεροῖς μαθήμασιν συγκεκροτημένος, τῆς κατὰ Ἀντιόχειαν παροικίας πρεσβύτερος, ἀχθεὶς ἐπὶ τῆς Νικομηδέων πόλεως, ἔνθα τηνικαῦτα βασιλεὺς διατρίβων ἐτύγχανεν, παρασχών τε ἐπὶ τοῦ ἄρχοντος τὴν ὑπὲρ ἧς προῖστατο διδασκαλίας ἀπολογίαν, δεσμωτηρίῳ παραδοθεὶς κτίννυται.

Τοσαῦτα δῆτα ἐν βραχεῖ τῷ μισοκάλῳ Μαξιμίνῳ καθ' ἡμῶν συνεσκεύαστο, ὡς τοῦ προτέρου δοκεῖν πολλῷ χαλεπώτερον τοῦτον ἡμῖν ἐπεγηγέρθαι διωγμόν. VII. Ἀνὰ μέσας γέ τοι τὰς πόλεις, ὃ μηδὲ ἄλλοτέ ποτε, ψηφίσματα πόλεων καθ' ἡμῶν καὶ βασιλικῶν πρὸς ταῦτα διατάξεων ἀντιγραφαὶ

once more rose up cruelly against us, with the result that some of those eminent in the divine Word were taken, and received the sentence of death without mercy.

Of these, three in Emesa, a city of Phoenicia, were consigned to wild beasts as food, having declared themselves Christians. Among them was a bishop, Silvanus, exceedingly advanced in age, who had exercised his ministry for forty entire years.

At the same time Peter also, who presided with the greatest distinction over the communities at Alexandria—a truly divine example of a bishop on account of his virtuous life and his earnest study of the holy Scriptures—was seized for no reason at all and quite unexpectedly ; and then immediately and unaccountably beheaded, as if by the command of Maximin. And along with him many others of the Egyptian bishops endured the same penalty.

Lucian, a most excellent man in every respect, of temperate life and well versed in sacred learning, a presbyter of the community at Antioch, was brought to the city of Nicomedia, where the Emperor was then staying ; and, having made his defence before the ruler on behalf of the doctrine which he professed, he was committed to prison and put to death.

So mightily, indeed, did that hater of the good, Maximin, contrive against us in a short space, that this persecution which he had stirred up seemed to us much more severe than the former one. VII. In fact, in the midst of the cities—a thing that had never happened before—petitions presented against us by cities, and rescripts containing imperial ordin-

στήλαις ἐντετυπωμένα χαλκαῖς ἀνωρθοῦντο, οἵ τε παῖδες ἀνὰ τὰ διδασκαλεῖα Ἰησοῦν καὶ Πιλάτον καὶ τὰ ἐφ' ὕβρει πλασθέντα ὑπομνήματα διὰ στόματος κατὰ πᾶσαν ἔφερον ἡμέραν.

Ἐνταῦθά μοι ἀναγκαῖον εἶναι φαίνεται αὐτὴν δὴ ταύτην τὴν ἐν στήλαις ἀνατεθεῖσαν τοῦ Μαξιμίνου γραφὴν ἐντάξαι, ἵν' ὁμοῦ τῆς τε τοῦ ἀνδρὸς θεομισείας ἡ ἀλαζὼν καὶ ὑπερήφανος αὐθάδεια φανερὰ κατασταίη καὶ τῆς παρὰ πόδας αὐτὸν μετελθούσης ἱερᾶς δίκης ἡ ἄὕπνος κατὰ τῶν ἀσεβῶν μισοπονηρία, πρὸς ἧς ἐλαθεὶς οὐκ εἰς μακρὸν τἀναντία περὶ ἡμῶν ἐβουλεύσατό τε καὶ δι' ἐγγράφων νόμων ἐδογμάτισεν.

ΑΝΤΙΓΡΑΦΟΝ ΕΡΜΗΝΕΙΑΣ ΤΗΣ ΜΑΞΙΜΙΝΟΥ ΠΡΟΣ ΤΑ ΚΑΘ' ΗΜΩΝ ΨΗΦΙΣΜΑΤΑ ΑΝΤΙΓΡΑΦΗΣ ΑΠΟ ΤΗΣ ΕΝ ΤΥΡΩΙ ΣΤΗΛΗΣ ΜΕΤΑΛΗΦΘΕΙΣΗΣ

"Ἤδη ποτὲ ἡ ἀσθενὴς θρασύτης τῆς ἀνθρωπίνης διανοίας ἴσχυσεν πᾶσαν πλάνης ἀμαυρότητα καὶ ὁμίχλην ἀποσεισαμένη καὶ ἀνασκεδάσασα, ἥτις πρὸ τούτου οὐ τοσοῦτον τῶν ἀσεβῶν ὅσον τῶν ἀθλίων ἀνθρώπων τὰς αἰσθήσεις ὀλεθρίῳ ἀγνοίας σκότῳ ἐνειληθείσας ἐπολιόρκει, ἐπιγνῶναι ὡς τῇ τῶν ἀθανάτων θεῶν φιλαγάθῳ προνοίᾳ διοικεῖται καὶ σταθεροποιεῖται· ὅπερ πρᾶγμα ἄπιστόν ἐστιν εἰπεῖν ὅπως κεχαρισμένον ὅπως τε ἥδιστον καὶ προσφιλὲς ἡμῖν γέγονεν ὡς μέγιστον δεῖγμα τῆς θεοφιλοῦς ὑμῶν προαιρέσεως δεδωκέναι, ὁπότε καὶ πρὸ τούτου οὐδενὶ ἄγνωστον ἦν ὁποίας παρατηρήσεως καὶ θεοσεβείας πρὸς τοὺς ἀθανάτους θεοὺς ἐτυγχάνετε ὄντες, οἷς οὐ ψιλῶν καὶ

ances in reply, were set up, engraved on brazen tablets ; while the children in the schools had every day on their lips the names of Jesus and Pilate and the Memoirs forged to insult us.

At this point I think it necessary to insert this same document of Maximin that was set up on tablets, so as to make manifest at once the boastful, overweening arrogance of this hater of God, and the divine Justice that followed close upon his heels with its sleepless hatred of the evil in wicked men. It was this which smote him ; and not long afterwards he reversed his policy with regard to us, and made a decree by laws in writing.

Copy of a Translation of the Rescript of Maximin in answer to the Petitions against us, taken from the Tablet at Tyre.

" Now at length, the feeble boldness of the human mind has shaken off and dispersed all blinding mists of error, that error which hitherto was attacking the senses of men not so much wicked as wretched, and was wrapping them in the baneful darkness of ignorance ; and it has been enabled to recognize that it is governed and established by the benevolent providence of the immortal gods. It passes belief to say how grateful, how exceeding pleasant and agreeable, it has proved to us that you have given a very great proof of your godly disposition ; since even before this none could be ignorant what regard and picty you were displaying towards the immortal gods, in

ὑποκένων ῥημάτων πίστις, ἀλλὰ συνεχὴς[1] καὶ παράδοξος[2] ἔργων ἐπισήμων γνωρίζεται. διόπερ ἐπαξίως 5
ἡ ὑμετέρα πόλις θεῶν ἀθανάτων [φόβον][3] ἵδρυμά τε
καὶ οἰκητήριον ἐπικαλοῖτο· πολλοῖς γοῦν παραδείγμασιν καταφαίνεται τῇ τῶν οὐρανίων θεῶν αὐτὴν
ἐπιδημίᾳ ἀνθεῖν. ἰδοὺ τοίνυν ἡ ὑμετέρα πόλις 6
πάντων τῶν ἰδίᾳ διαφερόντων αὐτῆς ἀμελήσασα
καὶ τὰς πρότερον τῶν ὑπὲρ αὐτῆς πραγμάτων
δεήσεις παριδοῦσα, ὅτε πάλιν ᾔσθετο τοὺς τῆς
ἐπαράτου ματαιότητος γεγονότας ἔρπειν ἄρχεσθαι
καὶ ὥσπερ ἀμεληθεῖσαν καὶ κεκοιμημένην πυρὰν
ἀναζωπυρουμένων τῶν πυρσῶν μεγίστας πυρκαϊὰς
ἀναπληροῦσαν, εὐθέως πρὸς τὴν ἡμετέραν εὐσέβειαν, ὥσπερ πρὸς μητρόπολιν πασῶν θεοσεβειῶν,
χωρίς τινος μελλήσεως κατέφυγεν, ἴασίν τινα καὶ
βοήθειαν ἀπαιτοῦσα· ἥντινα διάνοιαν σωτηριώδη 7
διὰ τὴν πίστιν τῆς ὑμετέρας θεοσεβείας τοὺς
θεοὺς ὑμῖν ἐμβεβληκέναι δῆλόν ἐστιν. ἐκεῖνος
τοιγαροῦν, ἐκεῖνος ὁ ὕψιστος καὶ μέγιστος Ζεύς,
ὁ προκαθήμενος τῆς λαμπροτάτης ὑμῶν πόλεως,
ὁ τοὺς πατρῴους ὑμῶν θεοὺς καὶ γυναῖκας καὶ
τέκνα καὶ ἑστίαν καὶ οἴκους ἀπὸ πάσης ὀλεθρίου
φθορᾶς ῥυόμενος, ταῖς ὑμετέραις ψυχαῖς τὸ σωτήριον ἐνέπνευσεν βούλημα, ἐπιδεικνὺς καὶ ἐμφαίνων ὅπως ἐξαίρετόν ἐστιν καὶ λαμπρὸν καὶ
σωτηριῶδες μετὰ τοῦ ὀφειλομένου σεβάσματος
τῇ θρησκείᾳ καὶ ταῖς ἱεροθρησκείαις τῶν ἀθανάτων
θεῶν προσιέναι. τίς γὰρ οὕτως ἀνόητος ἢ νοῦ 8
παντὸς ἀλλότριος εὑρεθῆναι δύναται, ὃς οὐκ
αἴσθεται τῇ φιλαγάθῳ τῶν θεῶν σπουδῇ συμβαίνειν μήτε τὴν γῆν τὰ παραδιδόμενα αὐτῇ σπέρματα

[1] MSS. *συνεχῆ*. [2] MSS. *παράδοξα*.

whom is manifested a faith, not of bare and empty words, but constant and admirable in its noble deeds. Wherefore your city might worthily be called a temple and dwelling-place of the immortal gods. Certainly, by many signs it appears that it flourishes because there the immortal gods sojourn. Behold therefore, your city put away all thought for its own private advantage and neglected former requests for its own affairs, when once again it perceived that the followers of that accursed folly were beginning to spread, as a neglected and smouldering pyre which, when its fires are rekindled into flame, forms once more a mighty conflagration. Then immediately and without any delay it had recourse to our piety, as to a metropolis of all religious feeling, requesting some healing and help. It is evident that the gods have placed in your heart this saving thought on account of your faith and godly fear. Accordingly it was he, the most exalted and mighty, even Zeus, he who presides over your far-famed city, he who protects your ancestral gods and women and children and hearth and home from all destruction, who inspired your hearts with this saving purpose ; it was he who plainly showed how excellent and splendid and saving a thing it is to draw nigh to the worship and sacred rites of the immortal gods with due reverence. For who can be found so senseless or bereft of all intelligence as not to perceive that it is by the benevolent care of the gods that the earth does not refuse the seeds committed to it, and thus disappoint the hus-

[3] This word is evidently corrupt. Schwartz suggests ἄφθορον.

ἀρνεῖσθαι τὴν τῶν γεωργῶν ἐλπίδα κενῇ προσδοκίᾳ σφάλλουσαν, μηδ' αὖ ἀσεβοῦς πολέμου πρόσοψιν ἀνεπικωλύτως ἐπὶ γῆς στηρίζεσθαι καὶ φθαρείσης τῆς τοῦ οὐρανοῦ εὐκρασίας αὐχμῶντα τὰ σώματα πρὸς θάνατον κατασύρεσθαι, μηδὲ μὴν ἀμέτρων ἀνέμων πνεύμασι τὴν θάλασσαν κυμαίνουσαν κορυφοῦσθαι, μηδέ γε καταιγίδας ἀπροσδοκήτους καταρρηγνυμένας ὀλέθριον χειμῶνα ἐπεγείρειν, ἔτι τοίνυν μηδὲ τὴν τροφὸν ἁπάντων καὶ μητέρα γῆν ἀπὸ τῶν κατωτάτω λαγόνων ἑαυτῆς ἐν φοβερῷ τρόμῳ καταδυομένην μηδέ γε τὰ ἐπικείμενα ὄρη χασμάτων γινομένων καταλύεσθαι, ἅπερ πάντα καὶ τούτων ἔτι πολλῷ χαλεπώτερα κατὰ πρὸ τούτου πολλάκις γεγονέναι οὐδεὶς ἀγνοεῖ. καὶ ταῦτα 9
σύμπαντα διὰ τὴν ὀλέθριον πλάνην τῆς ὑποκένου ματαιότητος τῶν ἀθεμίτων ἐκείνων ἀνθρώπων ἐγίνετο, ἡνίκα κατὰ τὰς ψυχὰς αὐτῶν ἐπεπόλαζεν καὶ σχεδὸν εἰπεῖν τὰ πανταχοῦ τῆς οἰκουμένης αἰσχύναις ἐπίεζεν."

Τούτοις μεθ' ἕτερα ἐπιλέγει· "ἐφοράτωσαν ἐν 10
τοῖς πλατέσιν ἤδη πεδίοις ἀνθοῦντα τὰ λήϊα καὶ τοῖς ἀστάχυσιν ἐπικυμαίνοντα καὶ τοὺς λειμῶνας δι' εὐομβρίαν φυαῖς καὶ ἄνθεσιν λαμπομένους καὶ τὴν τοῦ ἀέρος κατάστασιν εὔκρατόν τε καὶ πραοτάτην ἀποδοθεῖσαν, χαιρέτωσαν λοιπὸν ἅπαντες 11
διὰ τῆς ἡμετέρας εὐσεβείας ἱερουργίας τε καὶ τιμῆς τῆς τοῦ δυνατωτάτου καὶ στερροτάτου ἀέρος ἐξευμενισθείσης[1] καὶ διὰ τοῦτο τῆς εὐδινοτάτης εἰρήνης βεβαίως μεθ' ἡσυχίας ἀπολαύοντες ἡδυνέσθωσαν. καὶ ὅσοι τῆς τυφλῆς ἐκείνης πλάνης καὶ περιόδου παντάπασιν ὠφεληθέντες εἰς ὀρθὴν καὶ καλλίστην διάνοιαν ἐπανῆλθον, μειζόνως μὲν

bandmen of their hope with vain expectation? Or, again, that the spectre of unholy war does not plant itself without opposition upon the earth, so that squalid bodies are dragged off to death, while the wholesome air of heaven is polluted? Or, indeed, that the sea does not toss and swell under the blasts of immoderate winds? Or that hurricanes do not burst without warning and stir up a death-dealing tempest? Or, still further, that the earth, the nurse and mother of all, does not sink from its deepest hollows with fearful tremor, and the mountains that lie upon it crash into the resulting chasms? For all these evils, and evils even more terrible, have happened many a time before this, as everyone knows. And all these things happened at once because of the baneful error and vain folly of those unhallowed men, when that error took possession of their souls, and, one might almost say, oppressed the whole world everywhere with its deeds of shame."

After other remarks he adds: "Let them behold in the broad plains the crops already ripe with waving ears of corn, the meadows, thanks to opportune rains, brilliant with plants and flowers, and the weather that has been granted us temperate and very mild; further, let all rejoice since through our piety, through the sacrifices and veneration we have rendered, the most powerful and intractable air has been propitiated, and let them take pleasure in that they therefore enjoy the most serene peace securely and in quiet. And let as many as have been wholly rescued from that blind folly and error and returned to a right and goodly frame of mind rejoice indeed the

[1] The text of this clause is hopelessly corrupt.

οὖν χαιρέτωσαν ὡς ἂν ἐκ χειμῶνος ἀπροσδοκήτου ἢ νόσου βαρείας ἀποσπασθέντες καὶ ἡδεῖαν εἰς τοὐπιὸν ζωῆς ἀπόλαυσιν καρπωσάμενοι· εἰ δὲ τῇ 12
ἐπαράτῳ αὐτῶν ματαιότητι ἐπιμένοιεν, πολλῷ πόρρωθεν τῆς ὑμετέρας πόλεως καὶ περιχώρου, καθὼς ἠξιώσατε, ἀποχωρισθέντες ἐξελαθήτωσαν, ἵν' οὕτως κατ' ἀκολουθίαν τῆς ἀξιεπαίνου ὑμῶν περὶ τοῦτο σπουδῆς παντὸς μιάσματος καὶ ἀσεβείας ἀποχωρισθεῖσα ἡ ὑμετέρα πόλις καὶ τὴν ἔμφυτον αὐτῇ πρόθεσιν μετὰ τοῦ ὀφειλομένου σεβάσματος ταῖς τῶν ἀθανάτων θεῶν ἱερουργίαις ὑπακούοι.

"Ἵνα δὲ εἰδῆτε ὅσῳ προσφιλὴς ἡμῖν γέγονεν ἡ 13
περὶ τούτου ἀξίωσις ὑμῶν, καὶ χωρὶς ψηφισμάτων καὶ χωρὶς δεήσεως αὐθαιρέτῳ βουλήσει ἡ ἡμετέρα προθυμοτάτη φιλαγαθίας ψυχή, ἐπιτρέπομεν τῇ ὑμετέρᾳ καθοσιώσει ὁποίαν δ' ἂν βουληθῆτε μεγαλοδωρεὰν ἀντὶ ταύτης ὑμῶν τῆς φιλοθέου προθέσεως αἰτῆσαι. καὶ ἤδη μὲν τοῦτο ποιεῖν καὶ λαβεῖν 14
ἀξιώσατε· τεύξεσθε γὰρ αὐτῆς χωρίς τινος ὑπερθέσεως· ἥτις παρασχεθεῖσα τῇ ὑμετέρᾳ πόλει εἰς ἅπαντα τὸν αἰῶνα τῆς περὶ τοὺς ἀθανάτους θεοὺς φιλοθέου εὐσεβείας παρέξει μαρτυρίαν, τοῦ δὲ ὑμᾶς ἀξίων ἐπάθλων τετυχηκέναι παρὰ τῆς ἡμετέρας φιλαγαθίας ταύτης ὑμῶν ἕνεκεν τῆς τοῦ βίου προαιρέσεως υἱοῖς τε καὶ ἐκγόνοις ὑμετέροις ἐπιδειχθήσεται."

Ταῦτα δὴ καθ' ἡμῶν κατὰ πᾶσαν ἐπαρχίαν 15
ἀνεστηλίτευτο, πάσης ἐλπίδος, τὸ γοῦν ἐπ' ἀνθρώποις, ἀγαθῆς τὰ καθ' ἡμᾶς ἀποκλείοντα· ὡς κατ' αὐτὸ δὴ τὸ θεῖον ἐκεῖνο λόγιον, εἰ δυνατόν, ἐπὶ

more, as if they were delivered from an unexpected hurricane or severe illness and were reaping life's sweet enjoyment for the future. But if they persist in their accursed folly, let them be separated and driven far away from your city and neighbourhood, even as you requested ; that so, in accordance with your praiseworthy zeal in this respect, your city may be separated from all pollution and impiety, and, following its natural desire, may respond with due reverence to the worship of the immortal gods.

" And that you may know how pleasing this your request has been to us, and how fully disposed to benevolence our soul is, of its own accord apart from petitions and entreaties : we permit your Devotedness to ask whatsoever bounty you wish, in return for this your godly intent. And now let it be your resolve so to do and receive. For you will obtain your bounty without delay, the granting of which to your city will furnish a testimony for evermore of our godly piety towards the immortal gods, and a proof to your sons and descendants that you have met with the due meed of reward from our benevolence on account of these your principles of conduct."

This was emblazoned against us in every province, excluding every ray of hope from our condition, at least as far as human help is concerned ; so that, in accordance with the divine oracle itself, if possible

Matt. 24, 24 (*cf.* vi. 41. 10 above) Luke 21, 26

τούτοις καὶ τοὺς ἐκλεκτοὺς αὐτοὺς σκανδαλίζεσθαι. ἤδη γέ τοι σχεδὸν τῆς παρὰ τοῖς πλείστοις ἀποψυχούσης προσδοκίας, ἀθρόως, καθ' ὁδὸν ἔτι τὴν πορείαν ἔν τισιν χώραις διανυόντων τῶν τὴν προκειμένην καθ' ἡμῶν γραφὴν διακονουμένων, ὁ τῆς ἰδίας ἐκκλησίας ὑπέρμαχος θεὸς μόνον οὐχὶ τὴν τοῦ τυράννου καθ' ἡμῶν ἐπιστομίζων μεγαλαυχίαν, τὴν ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν οὐράνιον συμμαχίαν ἐπεδείκνυτο. 16

VIII. Οἱ μὲν οὖν ἐξ ἔθους ὄμβροι τε καὶ ὑετοὶ χειμαδίου τῆς ὥρας ὑπαρχούσης τὴν ἐπὶ γῆς ἀνεῖχον συνήθη φοράν, λιμὸς δ' ἀδόκητος ἐπισκήπτει καὶ λοιμὸς ἐπὶ τούτῳ καί τινος ἑτέρου νοσήματος—ἕλκος δὲ ἦν φερωνύμως τοῦ πυρώδους ἕνεκεν ἄνθρακ προσαγορευόμενον—ἐπιφορά, ὃ καὶ καθ' ὅλων μὲν ἕρπον τῶν σωμάτων σφαλεροὺς ἐνεποίει τοῖς πεπονθόσι κινδύνους, οὐ μὴν ἀλλὰ καὶ κατὰ τῶν ὀφθαλμῶν διαφερόντως ἐπὶ πλεῖστον γινόμενον μυρίους ὅσους ἄνδρας ἅμα γυναιξὶν καὶ παισὶν πηροὺς ἀπειργάζετο. 1

Τούτοις προσεπανίσταται τῷ τυράννῳ ὁ πρὸς Ἀρμενίους πόλεμος, ἄνδρας ἐξ ἀρχαίου φίλους τε καὶ συμμάχους Ῥωμαίων, οὓς καὶ αὐτοὺς Χριστιανοὺς ὄντας καὶ τὴν εἰς τὸ θεῖον εὐσέβειαν διὰ σπουδῆς ποιουμένους ὁ θεομισὴς εἰδώλοις θύειν καὶ δαίμοσιν ἐπαναγκάσαι πεπειραμένος, ἐχθροὺς ἀντὶ φίλων καὶ πολεμίους ἀντὶ συμμάχων κατεστήσατο. 2

Ἀθρόως δὴ ταῦτα πάντα ὑφ' ἕνα καὶ τὸν αὐτὸν συρρεύσαντα καιρόν, τῆς τοῦ τυράννου θρασύτητος τὴν κατὰ τοῦ θείου μεγαλαυχίαν διήλεγξεν, ὅτι 3

[1] Lit. "gagging."

[2] ἄνθραξ, like the English word "carbuncle," means a

even the elect themselves should be caused to stumble at these things. In truth, expectation was already almost failing in very many souls, when all at once, while those serving the writ set forth against us were on their way and had not yet finished their journey in some districts, the Champion of His own Church, even God, stopping,[1] as it were, the proud boasting of the tyrant against us, displayed His heavenly aid on our behalf.

VIII. The customary rains, indeed, and showers of the then prevailing winter season were withholding their usual downpour upon the earth, and we were visited with an unexpected famine, and on top of this a plague and an outbreak of another kind of disease. This latter was an ulcer, which on account of its fiery character was called an anthrax.[2] Spreading as it did over the entire body it used to endanger greatly its victims; but it was the eyes that it marked out for special attack, and so it was the means of blinding numbers of men as well as women and children.

In addition to this, the tyrant had the further trouble of the war against the Armenians, men who from ancient times had been friends and allies of the Romans; but as they were Christians and exceedingly earnest in their piety towards the Deity, this hater of God, by attempting to compel them to sacrifice to idols and demons, made of them foes instead of friends, and enemies instead of allies.

The fact that all these things came together all at once, at one and the same time, served to refute utterly the tyrant's insolent boasting against the Deity; for he used to affirm insolently that, on

precious stone of a dark red colour, and hence is also used of a malignant ulcer of similar appearance.

δὴ τῆς περὶ τὰ εἴδωλα αὐτοῦ σπουδῆς καὶ τῆς καθ' ἡμῶν ἕνεκα πολιορκίας μὴ λιμὸν μηδὲ λοιμὸν μηδὲ μὴν πόλεμον ἐπὶ τῶν αὐτοῦ συμβῆναι καιρῶν ἐθρασύνετο. ταῦτα δ' οὖν ὁμοῦ καὶ κατὰ τὸ αὐτὸ ἐπελθόντα, καὶ τῆς αὐτοῦ καταστροφῆς περιειλήφει τὰ προοίμια. αὐτὸς μὲν οὖν περὶ τὸν πρὸς Ἀρμενίους πόλεμον ἅμα τοῖς αὐτοῦ στρατοπέδοις κατεπονεῖτο, τοὺς δὲ λοιποὺς τῶν τὰς ὑπ' αὐτὸν πόλεις οἰκούντων δεινῶς ὁ λιμός τε ἅμα καὶ ὁ λοιμὸς κατετρυχέτην, ὡς ἑνὸς μέτρου πυρῶν δισχιλίας καὶ πεντακοσίας Ἀττικὰς ἀντικαταλλάττεσθαι. μυρίοι μὲν οὖν ἐτύγχανον οἱ κατὰ πόλεις θνῄσκοντες, πλείους δὲ τούτων οἱ κατ' ἀγρούς τε καὶ κώμας, ὡς ἤδη καὶ τὰς πάλαι τῶν ἀγροίκων πολυάνδρους ἀπογραφὰς μικροῦ δεῖν παντελῆ παθεῖν ἐξάλειψιν, ἀθρόως σχεδὸν ἁπάντων ἐνδείᾳ τροφῆς καὶ λοιμώδει νόσῳ διεφθαρμένων. τινὲς μὲν οὖν τὰ ἑαυτῶν φίλτατα βραχυτάτης τροφῆς τοῖς εὐπορωτέροις ἀπεμπολᾶν ἠξίουν, ἄλλοι δὲ τὰς κτήσεις κατὰ βραχὺ διαπιπράσκοντες εἰς ἐσχάτην ἐνδείας ἀπορίαν ἤλαυνον, ἤδη δέ τινες σμικρὰ χόρτου διαμασώμενοι σπαράγματα καί τινας ἀνέδην φθοροποιοὺς ἐσθίοντες πόας, τὴν τῶν σωμάτων ἕξιν λυμαινόμενοι διώλλυντο. καὶ γυναίων δὲ τῶν κατὰ πόλεις εὐγενίδων τινὲς εἰς ἀναίσχυντον ἀνάγκην πρὸς τῆς ἀπορίας ἐλαθεῖσαι, μεταιτεῖν ἐπὶ τῶν ἀγορῶν προεληλύθεσαν, τῆς πάλαι ἐλευθερίου τροφῆς ὑπόδειγμα διὰ τῆς περὶ τὸ πρόσωπον αἰδοῦς καὶ τῆς ἀμφὶ τὴν περιβολὴν κοσμιότητος ὑποφαίνουσαι. καὶ οἳ μὲν ἀπεσκληκότες ὥσπερ εἴδωλα νεκρὰ ὧδε κἀκεῖσε ψυχορραγοῦντες ἐνσειόμενοί τε καὶ περιολισθαίνοντες ὑπ'

account of his zeal for the idols and his attack upon us, neither famine nor pestilence nor even war took place in his time. These things, then, coming upon him together and at the same time had constituted the prelude of his overthrow. He himself, therefore, was worn out along with his commanders in the Armenian war; while the rest of the inhabitants of the cities under his rule were so terribly wasted by both the famine and the pestilence, that two thousand five hundred Attic drachmas were given for a single measure of wheat. Countless was the number of those who were dying in the cities, and still larger of those in the country parts and villages, with the result that the registers, which formerly contained the names of a numerous rural population, were now all but entirely wiped out; for one might almost say that the entire population perished all at once through lack of food and through plague. Some, indeed, did not hesitate to barter their dearest possessions for the scantiest supply of food with those better provided; others sold off their goods little by little and were driven to the last extremity of want; and others again injured their bodily health, and died from chewing small wisps of hay and recklessly eating certain pernicious herbs. And as for the women, some well-born ladies in cities were driven by their want to shameless necessity, and went forth to beg in the market-places, displaying a proof of their noble upbringing in their shamefacedness and the decency of their apparel. And some, wasted away like ghosts of the departed, and at the last gasp, stumbled and tottered here and there from inability

ἀδυναμίας τοῦ στῆναι κατέπιπτον ἐν μέσαις τε πλατείαις πρηνεῖς ἡπλωμένοι ὀρέξαι σφίσιν μικρὸν τρύφος ἄρτου κατηντιβόλουν καὶ τὴν ψυχὴν πρὸς ἐσχάταις ἔχοντες ἀναπνοαῖς πεινῆν ἐπεβόων, πρὸς μόνην ταύτην τὴν ὀδυνηροτάτην φωνὴν εὐσθενεῖς καθιστάμενοι· οἳ δὲ τὴν πληθὺν τῶν αἰτούντων 9
καταπληττόμενοι, ὅσοι τῶν εὐπορωτέρων ἐδόκουν εἶναι, μετὰ τὸ μυρία παρασχεῖν εἰς ἀπηνῆ λοιπὸν καὶ ἄτεγκτον ἐχώρουν διάθεσιν, τὰ αὐτὰ τοῖς αἰτοῦσιν ὅσον οὔπω καὶ αὐτοὶ πείσεσθαι προσδοκῶντες, ὥστ' ἤδη κατὰ μέσας ἀγορὰς καὶ στενωποὺς νεκρὰ καὶ γυμνὰ σώματα ἐφ' ἡμέραις πλείοσιν ἄταφα διερριμμένα θέαν τοῖς ὁρῶσιν οἰκτροτάτην παρέχειν. ἤδη γέ τοι καὶ κυνῶν τινες ἐγίνοντο 1
βορά, δι' ἣν μάλιστα αἰτίαν οἱ ζῶντες ἐπὶ τὴν κυνοκτονίαν ἐτράποντο δέει τοῦ μὴ λυσσήσαντας ἀνθρωποφαγίαν ἐργάσασθαι. οὐχ ἥκιστα δὲ καὶ 1
ὁ λοιμὸς πάντας οἴκους ἐπεβόσκετο, μάλιστα δ' οὓς ὁ λιμὸς διὰ τὸ εὐπορεῖν τροφῶν οὐχ οἷός τε ἦν ἐκτρῖψαι· οἱ γοῦν ἐν περιουσίαις, ἄρχοντες καὶ ἡγεμόνες καὶ μυρίοι τῶν ἐν τέλει, ὥσπερ ἐπίτηδες τῇ λοιμώδει νόσῳ πρὸς τοῦ λιμοῦ καταλελειμμένοι, ὀξεῖαν καὶ ὠκυτάτην ὑπέμενον τελευτήν. πάντα δ' οὖν οἰμωγῶν ἦν ἀνάπλεα, κατὰ πάντας τε στενωποὺς ἀγοράς τε καὶ πλατείας οὐδ' ἦν ἄλλο τι θεωρεῖν ἢ θρήνους μετὰ τῶν συνήθων αὐτοῖς αὐλῶν τε καὶ κτύπων. τοῦτον δὴ τὸν 1
τρόπον δυσὶν ὅπλοις τοῖς προδεδηλωμένοις λοιμοῦ τε ὁμοῦ καὶ λιμοῦ στρατεύσας, ὅλας ὁ θάνατος ἐν ὀλίγῳ γενεὰς ἐνεμήθη, ὡς ὁρᾶν ἤδη δυεῖν καὶ

to stand, and fell down ; then, stretched out prone in the midst of the streets they would beg for a small morsel of bread to be handed them, and with the last breath in their body cry out that they were hungry, finding strength for this most anguished of cries alone. Others, such as were regarded as belonging to the wealthier classes, amazed at the multitude of beggars, after giving countless doles, henceforth adopted a hard and pitiless frame of mind, since they expected that before very long they would be suffering the same misery as the beggars ; so that in the midst of market-places and alleys dead and naked bodies lay scattered here and there unburied for many days, presenting a most piteous spectacle to those who saw them. Some actually became food even for dogs ; and chiefly for this reason those who were alive turned to killing dogs, for fear lest they might become mad and turn to devouring men. But worst of all, the pestilence also battened upon every house, especially those whom the famine could not completely destroy because they were well provided with food. Men, for example, in affluent circumstances, rulers and governors and numbers of officials, who had been left, as it were, of set purpose by the famine for the benefit of the plague, endured a sharp and very speedy death. So every place was full of lamentations ; in every alley and market-place and street there was nothing to be seen but funeral dirges, together with the flutes and noises [1] that accompany them. Thus waging war with the aforesaid two weapons, pestilence and famine, death devoured whole familes in a short time, so that one might actually see the bodies of two or three dead

[1] Or "beating (of breasts)."

τριῶν σώματα νεκρῶν ὑπὸ μίαν ἐκφορὰν προκομιζόμενα.

Τοιαῦτα τῆς Μαξιμίνου μεγαλαυχίας καὶ τῶν κατὰ πόλεις καθ' ἡμῶν ψηφισμάτων τὰ ἐπίχειρα ἦν, ὅτε καὶ τῆς Χριστιανῶν περὶ πάντα σπουδῆς τε καὶ εὐσεβείας πᾶσιν ἔθνεσιν διάδηλα κατέστη τὰ τεκμήρια. μόνοι γοῦν ἐν τηλικαύτῃ κακῶν περιστάσει τὸ συμπαθὲς καὶ φιλάνθρωπον ἔργοις αὐτοῖς ἐπιδεικνύμενοι, διὰ πάσης ἡμέρας οἳ μὲν τῇ τῶν θνῃσκόντων (μυριάδες δ' ἦσαν οἷς οὔτις ἦν ὁ ἐπιμελησόμενος) κηδείᾳ τε καὶ ταφῇ προσεκαρτέρουν, οἳ δὲ τῶν ἀνὰ πᾶσαν τὴν πόλιν πρὸς τοῦ λιμοῦ κατατρυχομένων τὴν πληθὺν ὑπὸ μίαν σύναξιν ἀθροίζοντες ἄρτους διένεμον τοῖς πᾶσιν, ὡς περιβόητον εἰς πάντας ἀνθρώπους καταστῆναι τὸ πρᾶγμα θεόν τε τῶν Χριστιανῶν δοξάζειν εὐσεβεῖς τε καὶ μόνους θεοσεβεῖς τούτους ἀληθῶς πρὸς αὐτῶν ἐλεγχθέντας τῶν πραγμάτων ὁμολογεῖν.

Ἐφ' οἷς τοῦτον ἐπιτελουμένοις τὸν τρόπον ὁ μέγας καὶ οὐράνιος Χριστιανῶν ὑπέρμαχος θεὸς τὴν κατὰ πάντων ἀνθρώπων διὰ τῶν δεδηλωμένων ἐπιδειξάμενος ἀπειλὴν καὶ ἀγανάκτησιν ἀνθ' ὧν εἰς ἡμᾶς ὑπερβαλλόντως ἐνεδείξαντο, τὴν εὐμενῆ καὶ φαιδρὰν τῆς αὐτοῦ περὶ ἡμᾶς προνοίας αὖθις ἡμῖν αὐγὴν ἀπεδίδου, ὡς ἐν βαθεῖ σκότῳ παραδοξότατα φῶς ἡμῖν ἐξ αὐτοῦ καταλάμπων εἰρήνης ἐκφανές τε τοῖς πᾶσιν καθιστὰς θεὸν αὐτὸν τῶν καθ' ἡμᾶς ἐπίσκοπον διὰ παντὸς γεγονέναι πραγμάτων, μαστίζοντα μὲν καὶ διὰ τῶν περιστάσεων κατὰ καιρὸν ἐπιστρέφοντα τὸν αὐτοῦ λαὸν πάλιν τ' αὖ μετὰ τὴν αὐτάρκη παιδείαν ἵλεω καὶ εὐμενῆ

persons carried out for burial in a single funeral train.

Such were the wages received for the proud boasting of Maximin and for the petitions presented by the cities against us; while the proofs of the Christians' zeal and piety in every respect were manifest to all the heathen. For example, they alone in such an evil state of affairs gave practical evidence of their sympathy and humanity: all day long some of them would diligently persevere in performing the last offices for the dying and burying them (for there were countless numbers, and no one to look after them); while others would gather together in a single assemblage the multitude of those who all throughout the city were wasted with the famine, and distribute bread to them all, so that their action was on all men's lips, and they glorified the God of the Christians, and, convinced by the deeds themselves, acknowledged that they alone were truly pious and God-fearing.

After these things were thus accomplished, God, the great and heavenly Champion of the Christians, when He had displayed His threatening and wrath against all men by the aforesaid means, in return for their exceeding great attacks against us, once again restored to us the bright and kindly radiance of His providential care for us. Most marvellously, as in a thick darkness, He caused the light of peace to shine upon us from Himself, and made it manifest to all that God Himself had been watching over our affairs continually, at times scourging and in due season correcting His people by means of misfortunes, and again on the other hand after sufficient chastise-

τοῖς εἰς αὐτὸν τὰς ἐλπίδας ἔχουσιν ἀναφαινόμενον.

IX. Οὕτω δῆτα Κωνσταντίνου, ὃν βασιλέα ἐκ βασιλέως εὐσεβῆ τε ἐξ εὐσεβεστάτου καὶ πάντα σωφρονεστάτου γεγονέναι προειρήκαμεν, Λικιννίου τε τοῦ μετ' αὐτόν, συνέσει καὶ εὐσεβείᾳ τετιμημένων, πρὸς τοῦ παμβασιλέως θεοῦ τε τῶν ὅλων καὶ σωτῆρος κατὰ τῶν δυσσεβεστάτων τυράννων ἀνεγηγερμένου πολέμου τε νόμῳ παραταξαμένου, θεοῦ συμμαχοῦντος σωτῆρος δύο θεοφιλῶν κατὰ τῶν δύο δυσσεβεστάτων τυράννων ἀνεγηγερμένων πολέμου τε νόμῳ παραταξαμένων, θεοῦ συμμαχοῦντος αὐτοῖς παραδοξότατα, πίπτει μὲν ἐπὶ Ῥώμης ὑπὸ Κωνσταντῖνον Μαξέντιος, ὁ δ' ἐπ' ἀνατολῆς οὐ πολὺν ἐπιζήσας ἐκείνῳ χρόνον, αἰσχίστῳ καὶ αὐτὸς ὑπὸ Λικίννιον οὔπω μανέντα τότε καταστρέφει θανάτῳ.

Πρότερός γε μὴν ὁ καὶ τιμῇ καὶ τάξει τῆς βασιλείας πρῶτος Κωνσταντῖνος τῶν ἐπὶ Ῥώμης κατατυραννουμένων φειδὼ λαβών, θεὸν τὸν οὐράνιον τόν τε τούτου λόγον, αὐτὸν δὴ τὸν πάντων σωτῆρα Ἰησοῦν Χριστόν, σύμμαχον δι' εὐχῶν ἐπικαλεσάμενος, πρόεισιν πανστρατιᾷ, Ῥωμαίοις τὰ τῆς ἐκ προγόνων ἐλευθερίας προμνώμενος. Μαξεντίου δῆτα μᾶλλον ταῖς κατὰ γοητείαν μηχαναῖς ἢ τῇ τῶν ὑπηκόων ἐπιθαρσοῦντος εὐνοίᾳ, προελθεῖν γε μὴν οὐδ' ὅσον πυλῶν τοῦ ἄστεος ἐπιτολμῶντος, ὁπλιτῶν δ' ἀνηρίθμῳ πλήθει καὶ στρατοπέδων λόχοις μυρίοις πάντα τόπον καὶ χώραν καὶ πόλιν, ὅση τις ἐν κύκλῳ τῆς Ῥωμαίων

[1] viii. 13. 12 f.

[2] This is a translation of the text given in ATER. The

ment showing mercy and goodwill to those who fix their hopes on Him.

IX. Thus in truth Constantine, who, as aforesaid,[1] was Emperor and sprung from an Emperor, pious and sprung from a most pious and in every respect most prudent father, and Licinius, who ranked next to him—both honoured for their understanding and piety—were stirred up by the King of kings, God of the universe and Saviour, two men beloved of God, against the two most impious tyrants; and when war was formally engaged, God proved their ally[2] in the most wonderful manner, and Maxentius fell at Rome at the hands of Constantine; while he[3] of the East did not long survive him, for he too perished by a most disgraceful death at the hands of Licinius, [4]who had not yet become mad.[4]

But to resume. Constantine, the superior of the Emperors in rank and dignity, was the first to take pity on those subjected to tyranny at Rome; and, calling in prayer upon God who is in heaven, and His Word, even Jesus Christ the Saviour of all, as his ally, he advanced in full force, seeking to secure for the Romans their ancestral liberty. Maxentius, to be sure, put his trust rather in devices of magic than in the goodwill of his subjects, and in truth did not dare to advance even beyond the city's gates, but with an innumerable multitude of heavy-armed soldiers and countless bodies of legionaries secured every place and district and city that had been reduced to slavery by him in the environs of Rome and in all

shorter text of Eusebius (BDMΣ) runs as follows: "Thus in truth Constantine . . . most prudent father, was stirred up by the . . . Saviour, against those most impious tyrants . . . God proved his ally. . . ."

[3] Maximin. [4] This clause is a later addition.

καὶ Ἰταλίας ἁπάσης ὑπ' αὐτῷ δεδούλωτο, φραξαμένου, ὁ τῆς ἐκ θεοῦ συμμαχίας ἀνημμένος βασιλεὺς ἐπιὼν πρώτῃ καὶ δευτέρᾳ καὶ τρίτῃ τοῦ τυράννου παρατάξει εὖ μάλα τε πάσας ἐλών, πρόεισιν ἐπὶ πλεῖστον ὅσον τῆς Ἰταλίας ἤδη τε αὐτῆς Ῥώμης ἄγχιστα ἦν· εἶθ' ὡς μὴ τοῦ τυράννου χάριν Ῥωμαίοις πολεμεῖν ἀναγκάζοιτο, θεὸς αὐτὸς δεσμοῖς τισιν ὥσπερ τὸν τύραννον πορρωτάτω πυλῶν ἐξέλκει καὶ τὰ πάλαι δὴ κατὰ ἀσεβῶν ὡς ἐν μύθου λόγῳ παρὰ τοῖς πλείστοις ἀπιστούμενα, πιστά γε μὴν πιστοῖς ἐν ἱεραῖς βίβλοις ἐστηλιτευμένα, αὐτῇ ἐναργείᾳ πᾶσιν ἁπλῶς εἰπεῖν, πιστοῖς καὶ ἀπίστοις, ὀφθαλμοῖς τὰ παράδοξα παρειληφόσιν, ἐπιστώσατο. ὥσπερ γοῦν ἐπ' αὐτοῦ Μωυσέως καὶ τοῦ πάλαι θεοσεβοῦς Ἑβραίων
Ex. 15, 4. 5 γένους "ἅρματα Φαραὼ καὶ τὴν δύναμιν αὐτοῦ ἔρριψεν εἰς θάλασσαν, ἐπιλέκτους ἀναβάτας τριστάτας· κατεπόθησαν ἐν θαλάσσῃ ἐρυθρᾷ, πόντος ἐκάλυψεν αὐτούς," κατὰ τὰ αὐτὰ δὴ καὶ Μαξέντιος οἵ τε ἀμφ' αὐτὸν ὁπλῖται καὶ δορυφόροι "ἔδυσαν εἰς βυθὸν ὡς εἰ λίθος," ὁπηνίκα νῶτα δοὺς τῇ ἐκ θεοῦ μετὰ Κωνσταντίνου δυνάμει, τὸν πρὸ τῆς πορείας διήει ποταμόν, ὃν αὐτὸς σκάφεσιν ζεύξας καὶ εὖ μάλα γεφυρώσας μηχανὴν ὀλέθρου καθ' ἑαυτοῦ
Ps. 7, 15. 16 συνεστήσατο· ἐφ' ᾧ ἦν εἰπεῖν "λάκκον ὤρυξεν καὶ ἀνέσκαψεν αὐτόν, καὶ ἐμπεσεῖται εἰς βόθρον ὃν εἰργάσατο. ἐπιστρέψει ὁ πόνος αὐτοῦ εἰς κεφαλὴν αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἐπὶ κορυφὴν αὐτοῦ ἡ ἀδικία αὐτοῦ καταβήσεται."

Ταύτῃ δῆτα τοῦ ἐπὶ τοῦ ποταμοῦ ζεύγματος διαλυθέντος, ὑφιζάνει μὲν ἡ διάβασις, χωρεῖ δ' ἀθρόως αὖτανδρα κατὰ τοῦ βυθοῦ τὰ σκάφη, καὶ

Italy. The Emperor, closely relying on the help that comes from God, attacked the first, second and third of the tyrant's armies, and capturing them all with ease advanced over a large part of Italy, actually coming very near to Rome itself. Then, that he might not be compelled because of the tyrant to fight against Romans, God Himself as if with chains dragged the tyrant far away from the gates ; and those things which were inscribed long ago in the sacred books against wicked men—to which as a myth very many gave no faith, yet were they worthy of faith to the faithful—now by their very clearness found faith, in a word, with all, faithful and faithless, who had the miracle before their eyes. As, for example, in the days of Moses himself and the ancient and godly race of the Hebrews, " Pharaoh's chariots and his host hath he cast into the sea, his chosen horsemen, even captains, they were sunk in the Red Sea, the deep covered them " ; in the same way also Maxentius and the armed soldiers and guards around him " went down into the depths like a stone," when he turned his back before the God-sent power that was with Constantine, and was crossing the river that lay in his path, which he himself had bridged right well by joining of boats, and so formed into an engine of destruction against himself. Wherefore one might say : " He hath made a pit, and digged it, and shall fall into the ditch which he made. His work shall return upon his own head, and his wickedness shall come down upon his own pate."

Thus verily, through the breaking of the bridge over the river, the passage across collapsed, and down went the boats all at once, men and all, into the deep ;

αὐτός γε πρῶτος ὁ δυσσεβέστατος, εἶτα δὲ καὶ οἱ ἀμφ' αὐτὸν ὑπασπισταί, ἢ τὰ θεῖα προαναφωνεῖ
Ex. 15, 10 λόγια, ἔδυσαν ὡς εἰ μόλιβδος ἐν ὕδατι σφοδρῷ· ὥστε εἰκότως εἰ μὴ λόγοις ἔργοις δ' οὖν ὁμοίως 8
Ex. 14, 31 τοῖς ἀμφὶ τὸν μέγαν θεράποντα Μωυσέα τοὺς παρὰ θεοῦ τὴν νίκην ἀραμένους αὐτὰ δὴ τὰ κατὰ τοῦ πάλαι δυσσεβοῦς τυράννου ὧδέ πως ἂν ὑμνεῖν καὶ
Ex. 15, 1. 2. 11 λέγειν "ᾄσωμεν τῷ κυρίῳ, ἐνδόξως γὰρ δεδόξασται. ἵππον καὶ ἀναβάτην ἔρριψεν εἰς θάλασσαν· βοηθὸς καὶ σκεπαστής μου κύριος, ἐγένετό μοι εἰς σωτηρίαν" καὶ "τίς ὅμοιός σοι ἐν θεοῖς, κύριε, τίς ὅμοιός σοι; δεδοξασμένος ἐν ἁγίοις, θαυμαστὸς ἐν δόξαις, ποιῶν τέρατα."

Ταῦτα καὶ ὅσα τούτοις ἀδελφά τε καὶ ἐμφερῆ 9
Κωνσταντῖνος τῷ πανηγεμόνι καὶ τῆς νίκης αἰτίῳ θεῷ αὐτοῖς ἔργοις ἀνυμνήσας, ἐπὶ Ῥώμης μετ' ἐπινικίων εἰσήλαυνεν, πάντων ἀθρόως αὐτὸν ἅμα κομιδῇ νηπίοις καὶ γυναιξὶν τῶν τε ἀπὸ τῆς συγκλήτου βουλῆς καὶ τῶν ἄλλως διασημοτάτων σὺν παντὶ δήμῳ Ῥωμαίων φαιδροῖς ὄμμασιν αὐταῖς ψυχαῖς οἷα λυτρωτὴν σωτῆρά τε καὶ εὐεργέτην μετ' εὐφημιῶν καὶ ἁπλήστου χαρᾶς ὑποδεχομένων· ὁ δ' ὥσπερ ἔμφυτον τὴν εἰς θεὸν εὐσέβειαν κεκτη- 1
μένος, μηδ' ὅλως ἐπὶ ταῖς βοαῖς ὑποσαλευόμενος μηδ' ἐπαιρόμενος τοῖς ἐπαίνοις, εὖ μάλα τῆς ἐκ θεοῦ συνῃσθημένος βοηθείας, αὐτίκα τοῦ σωτηρίου τρόπαιον πάθους ὑπὸ χεῖρα ἰδίας εἰκόνος ἀνατεθῆναι προστάττει, καὶ δὴ τὸ σωτήριον σημεῖον ἐπὶ τῇ δεξιᾷ κατέχοντα αὐτὸν ἐν τῷ μάλιστα τῶν ἐπὶ Ῥώμης δεδημοσιευμένῳ τόπῳ στήσαντας αὐτὴν δὴ ταύτην προγραφὴν ἐντάξαι ῥήμασιν αὐτοῖς τῇ Ῥωμαίων ἐγκελεύεται φωνῇ· "τούτῳ τῷ σω- 1

and first of all he himself, that most wicked of men, and then also the shield-bearers around him, as the divine oracles foretell, sank as lead in the mighty waters. So that suitably, if not in words, at least in deeds, like the followers of the great servant Moses, those who had won the victory by the help of God might in some sort hymn the very same words which were uttered against the wicked tyrant of old, and say : " Let us sing unto the Lord, for gloriously hath he been glorified : the horse and his rider hath he thrown into the sea. The Lord is my strength and protector, he is become my salvation " ; and " Who is like unto thee, O Lord, among the gods ? who is like thee, glorified in saints, marvellous in praises, doing wonders ? " These things, and such as are akin and similar to them, Constantine by his very deeds sang to God the Ruler of all and Author of the victory ; then he entered Rome with hymns of triumph, and all the senators and other persons of great note, together with women and quite young children and all the Roman people, received him in a body with beaming countenances to their very heart as a ransomer, saviour and benefactor, with praises and insatiable joy. But he, as one possessed of natural piety towards God, was by no means stirred by their shouts nor uplifted by their praises, for well he knew that his help was from God ; and straightway he gave orders that a memorial of the Saviour's Passion should be set up in the hand of his own statue ; and indeed when they set him in the most public place in Rome holding the Saviour's sign in his right hand, he bade them engrave this very inscription in these words in the Latin tongue : " By this salutary sign,

τηριώδει σημείῳ, τῷ ἀληθεῖ ἐλέγχῳ τῆς ἀνδρείας τὴν πόλιν ὑμῶν ἀπὸ ζυγοῦ τοῦ τυράννου διασωθεῖσαν ἠλευθέρωσα, ἔτι μὴν καὶ τὴν σύγκλητον καὶ τὸν δῆμον Ῥωμαίων τῇ ἀρχαίᾳ ἐπιφανείᾳ καὶ λαμπρότητι ἐλευθερώσας ἀποκατέστησα."

Καὶ δὴ ἐπὶ τούτοις αὐτός τε Κωνσταντῖνος καὶ 12
σὺν αὐτῷ βασιλεὺς Λικίννιος, οὔπω τότε ἐφ' ἧν ὕστερον ἐκπέπτωκεν μανίαν τὴν διάνοιαν ἐκτραπείς, θεὸν τὸν τῶν ἀγαθῶν ἁπάντων αὐτοῖς αἴτιον εὐμενίσαντες, ἅμφω μιᾷ βουλῇ καὶ γνώμῃ νόμον ὑπὲρ Χριστιανῶν τελεώτατον πληρέστατα διατυποῦνται, καὶ τῶν πεπραγμένων εἰς αὐτοὺς ἐκ θεοῦ τὰ παράδοξα τά τε τῆς κατὰ τοῦ τυράννου νίκης καὶ τὸν νόμον αὐτὸν Μαξιμίνῳ, τῶν ἐπ' ἀνατολῆς ἐθνῶν ἔτι δυναστεύοντι φιλίαν τε πρὸς αὐτοὺς ὑποκοριζομένῳ, διαπέμπονται. ὁ δ' οἷα 13
τύραννος περιαλγὴς ἐφ' οἷς ἔγνω, γεγενημένος, εἶτα μὴ δοκεῖν ἑτέροις εἶξαι βουλόμενος μηδ' αὖ παρεκθέσθαι τὸ κελευσθὲν δέει τῶν προστεταχότων ὡς ἂν ἐξ ἰδίας αὐθεντίας τοῖς ὑπ' αὐτὸν ἡγεμόσιν τοῦτο πρῶτον ὑπὲρ Χριστιανῶν ἐπάναγκες διαχαράττει τὸ γράμμα, τὰ μηδέπω ποτὲ πρὸς αὐτοῦ πεπραγμένα ἐπιπλάστως αὐτὸς καθ' ἑαυτοῦ ψευδόμενος.

ΑΝΤΙΓΡΑΦΟΝ ΕΡΜΗΝΕΙΑΣ ΕΠΙΣΤΟΛΗΣ ΤΟΥ ΤΥΡΑΝΝΟΥ

ΙΧα. "Ἰόβιος Μαξιμῖνος Σεβαστὸς Σαβίνῳ. 1
καὶ παρὰ τῇ σῇ στιβαρότητι καὶ παρὰ πᾶσιν ἀνθρώποις φανερὸν εἶναι πέποιθα τοὺς δεσπότας ἡμῶν Διοκλητιανὸν καὶ Μαξιμιανόν, τοὺς ἡμετέρους πατέρας, ἡνίκα συνεῖδον σχεδὸν ἅπαντας

the true proof of bravery, I saved and delivered your city from the yoke of the tyrant; and moreover I freed and restored to their ancient fame and splendour both the senate and the people of the Romans."

And after this Constantine himself, and with him the emperor Licinius, [1]whose mind was not yet deranged by the madness into which he afterwards fell,[1] having propitiated God as the Author of all their good fortune, both with one will and purpose drew up a most perfect law [2] in the fullest terms on behalf of the Christians [3]; and to Maximin, who was still ruler of the provinces of the East and playing at being their friend, they sent on an account of the marvellous things that God had done for them, as well as of their victory over the tyrant, and the law itself. And he, tyrant that he was, was greatly troubled at the intelligence; but, not wishing to seem to yield to others, nor yet to suppress the command through fear of those who had enjoined it, as if of his own motion he penned perforce this first letter on behalf of the Christians to the governors under him; in which he belies himself, and feigns that he had done things he never had.

Copy of a Translation of the Epistle of the Tyrant

"Jovius Maximinus Augustus to Sabinus. I am persuaded that it is manifest both to thy Firmness and to all men that our masters Diocletian and Maximian, our fathers, when they perceived that

[1] This clause is a later addition.
[2] The so-called Edict of Milan: see x. 5. 1-14.
[3] January 313.

ἀνθρώπους καταλειφθείσης τῆς τῶν θεῶν θρη-
σκείας τῷ ἔθνει τῶν Χριστιανῶν ἑαυτοὺς συμ-
μεμιχότας, ὀρθῶς διατεταχέναι πάντας ἀνθρώπους
τοὺς ἀπὸ τῆς τῶν αὐτῶν θεῶν τῶν ἀθανάτων
θρησκείας ἀναχωρήσαντας προδήλῳ κολάσει καὶ
τιμωρίᾳ εἰς τὴν θρησκείαν τῶν θεῶν ἀνακληθῆναι.
ἀλλ' ὅτε ἐγὼ εὐτυχῶς τὸ πρῶτον εἰς τὴν ἀνατολὴν 2
παρεγενόμην καὶ ἔγνων εἴς τινας τόπους πλείστους
τῶν ἀνθρώπων τὰ δημόσια ὠφελεῖν δυναμένους
ὑπὸ τῶν δικαστῶν διὰ τὴν προειρημένην αἰτίαν
ἐξορίζεσθαι, ἑκάστῳ τῶν δικαστῶν ἐντολὰς δέδωκα
ὥστε μηδένα τούτων τοῦ λοιποῦ προσφέρεσθαι τοῖς
ἐπαρχιώταις ἀπηνῶς, ἀλλὰ μᾶλλον κολακείᾳ καὶ
προτροπαῖς πρὸς τὴν τῶν θεῶν θρησκείαν αὐτοὺς
ἀνακαλεῖν. τηνικαῦτα οὖν, ὅτε ἀκολούθως τῇ κε- 3
λεύσει τῇ ἐμῇ ὑπὸ τῶν δικαστῶν ἐφυλάττετο τὰ
προστεταγμένα, συνέβαινεν μηδένα ἐκ τῶν τῆς
ἀνατολῆς μερῶν μήτε ἐξόριστον μήτε ἐνύβριστον
γίνεσθαι, ἀλλὰ μᾶλλον ἐκ τοῦ μὴ βαρέως κατ'
αὐτῶν τι γίνεσθαι εἰς τὴν τῶν θεῶν θρησκείαν
ἀνακεκλῆσθαι· μετὰ δὲ ταῦτα, ὅτε τῷ παρελθόντι 4
ἐνιαυτῷ εὐτυχῶς ἐπέβην εἰς τὴν Νικομήδειαν
κἀκεῖ διετέλουν, παρεγένοντο πολῖται τῆς αὐτῆς
πόλεως πρός με ἅμα μετὰ τῶν ξοάνων τῶν θεῶν
μειζόνως δεόμενοι ἵνα παντὶ τρόπῳ τὸ τοιοῦτον
ἔθνος μηδαμῶς ἐπιτρέποιτο ἐν τῇ αὐτῶν πατρίδι
οἰκεῖν. ἀλλ' ὅτε ἔγνων πλείστους τῆς αὐτῆς 5
θρησκείας ἄνδρας ἐν αὐτοῖς τοῖς μέρεσιν οἰκεῖν,
οὕτως αὐτοῖς τὰς ἀποκρίσεις ἀπένεμον ὅτι τῇ μὲν
αἰτήσει αὐτῶν ἀσμένως χάριν ἔσχηκα, ἀλλ' οὐ
παρὰ πάντων τοῦτο αἰτηθὲν κατεῖδον· εἰ μὲν οὖν
τινες εἶεν τῇ αὐτῇ δεισιδαιμονίᾳ διαμένοντες,

almost all men had abandoned the worship of the gods and associated themselves with the nation of the Christians, rightly gave orders that all men who deserted the worship of their gods, the immortal gods, should be recalled to the worship of the gods by open correction and punishment. But when under happy auspices I came for the first time to the East, and learnt that in certain places very many persons who were able to serve the public good were being banished by the judges for the aforesaid reason, I gave orders to each of the judges that none of them in future was to deal harshly with the provincials, but rather by persuasive words and exhortations to recall them to the worship of the gods. It came to pass at that time, therefore, when in accordance with my injunction the judges observed what was commanded, that no one in the eastern provinces was either banished or suffered insult, but rather was recalled to the worship of the gods, because no severe measures were employed against them. But afterwards, when last year under happy auspices I had gone to Nicomedia and was staying there, there came to me citizens of the same city with images of the gods, earnestly requesting that on no account should such a nation be permitted to dwell in their city. But when I learnt that very many of the same religion dwelt in those very parts, I thus made them reply: That I was gratified, and thanked them for their request, but I perceived that this request did not come from all. If, then, there were some that persevered in the same superstition, let each one

οὕτως ἕνα ἕκαστον ἐν τῇ ἰδίᾳ προαιρέσει τὴν βούλησιν ἔχειν καὶ εἰ βούλοιντο, τὴν τῶν θεῶν θρησκείαν ἐπιγινώσκειν. ὅμως καὶ τοῖς τῆς αὐτῆς 6
πόλεως Νικομηδεῦσιν καὶ ταῖς λοιπαῖς πόλεσιν, αἳ καὶ αὐταὶ εἰς τοσοῦτον τὴν ὁμοίαν αἴτησιν περισπουδάστως πρός με πεποιήκασιν, δηλονότι ἵνα μηδεὶς τῶν Χριστιανῶν ταῖς πόλεσιν ἐνοικοίη, ἀνάγκην ἔσχον προσφιλῶς ἀποκρίνασθαι, ὅτι δὴ αὐτὸ τοῦτο καὶ οἱ ἀρχαῖοι αὐτοκράτορες πάντες διεφύλαξαν καὶ αὐτοῖς τοῖς θεοῖς, δι' οὓς πάντες ἄνθρωποι καὶ αὐτὴ ἡ τῶν δημοσίων διοίκησις συνίσταται, ἤρεσεν [οὖν] ὥστε τὴν τοσαύτην αἴτησιν, ἣν ὑπὲρ τῆς θρησκείας τοῦ θείου αὐτῶν ἀναφέρουσιν, βεβαιώσαιμι.

"Τοιγαροῦν εἰ καὶ τὰ μάλιστα καὶ τῇ σῇ 7
καθοσιώσει πρὸ τούτου τοῦ χρόνου διὰ γραμμάτων ἐπέσταλται καὶ δι' ἐντολῶν ὁμοίως κεκέλευσται ἵνα μὴ κατὰ τῶν ἐπαρχιωτῶν τὸ τοιοῦτον ἔθος διαφυλάξαι ἐπιμεληθέντων μηδὲν τραχέως, ἀλλὰ ἀνεξικάκως καὶ συμμέτρως συμπεριφέροιντο αὐτοῖς, ὅμως ἵνα μήτε ὑπὸ τῶν βενεφικιαρίων μήτε ὑπ' ἄλλων τῶν τυχόντων ὕβρεις μήτε σεισμοὺς ὑπομένοιεν, ἀκόλουθον ἐνόμισα καὶ τούτοις τοῖς γράμμασιν τὴν σὴν στιβαρότητα ὑπομνῆσαι ὅπως ταῖς κολακείαις καὶ ταῖς προτροπαῖς μᾶλλον τὴν τῶν θεῶν ἐπιμέλειαν τοὺς ἡμετέρους ἐπαρχιώτας ποιήσειας ἐπιγινώσκειν· ὅθεν εἴ τις 8
τῇ αὐτοῦ προαιρέσει τὴν θρησκείαν τῶν θεῶν ἐπιγνωστέον προσλάβοι, τούτους ὑποδέχεσθαι προσήκει· εἰ δέ τινες τῇ ἰδίᾳ θρησκείᾳ ἀκολουθεῖν βούλοιντο, ἐν τῇ αὐτῶν ἐξουσίᾳ καταλείποις.

keep thus his resolve according as he personally wished ; and if they so desired it, let them acknowledge the worship of the gods. Nevertheless to these same Nicomedians and the rest of the cities, who themselves have so very earnestly addressed me a similar request, namely, that no Christian should inhabit their cities, I was compelled to reply in a friendly manner, because the Emperors of old time had carefully observed this very thing, and it was pleasing to the gods themselves, by whom[1] all men and the government itself of the state subsist, that[2] I should confirm such a request as they were making on behalf of the worship of their Deity.

" Therefore, although special letters have been written to thy Devotedness before this time, and likewise it has been laid down by ordinances that no harsh measures should be adopted against provincials who have a mind to persevere in such a custom, but that men should deal with them in a long-suffering and adaptable spirit : nevertheless that they may not suffer insults or extortions at the hands of the *beneficiarii*[3] or any others whatsoever, I think it right by this letter also to put thy Firmness in mind that thou shouldest cause our provincials to recognize the attention they owe to the gods rather by persuasive words and exhortations. Wherefore if any should make it his resolve that the worship of the gods should be recognized, it is fitting to welcome such persons ; but if some desire to follow their own worship, thou shouldest leave it in their own power.

[1] *δι' οὗς* : probably representing *per quos* in the original.

[2] Omitting *οὖν*, as suggested by Schwartz.

[3] This title was given to military officers of a high rank. In this passage it seems to mean officers in the entourage of a provincial governor.

διόπερ ἡ σὴ καθοσίωσις τὸ ἐπιτραπέν σοι διαφυλάτ- 9
τειν ὀφείλει, καὶ μηδενὶ ἐξουσία δοθῇ ὥστε τοὺς
ἡμετέρους ἐπαρχιώτας ὕβρεσι καὶ σεισμοῖς ἐπι-
τρῖψαι, ὁπότε, ὥσπερ προγέγραπται, ταῖς προ-
τροπαῖς μᾶλλον καὶ ταῖς κολακείαις πρὸς τὴν τῶν
θεῶν θρῃσκείαν τοὺς ἡμετέρους ἐπαρχιώτας προσ-
ήκει ἀνακαλεῖν. ἵνα δὲ αὕτη ἡμῶν ἡ κέλευσις
εἰς γνῶσιν πάντων τῶν ἐπαρχιωτῶν τῶν ἡμετέρων
ἔλθῃ, διατάγματι ὑπὸ σοῦ προτεθέντι τὸ κεκελευ-
σμένον ὀφείλεις δηλῶσαι."

Ταῦθ' ὑπὸ τῆς ἀνάγκης ἐκβεβιασμένος, ἀλλ' οὐ 10
κατὰ γνώμην τὴν αὐτοῦ διακελευσάμενος, οὐκέτ'
ἀληθὴς οὐδ' ἀξιόπιστος παρὰ τοῖς πᾶσιν ἦν τῆς
πρόσθεν ἤδη μετὰ τὴν ὁμοίαν συγχώρησιν παλιμ-
βόλου καὶ διεψευσμένης αὐτοῦ γνώμης ἕνεκα.
οὔκουν ἐτόλμα τις τῶν ἡμετέρων σύνοδον συγ- 11
κροτεῖν οὐδ' ἑαυτὸν ἐν φανερῷ καταστήσασθαι,
ὅτι μηδὲ τοῦτ' ἤθελεν αὐτῷ τὸ γράμμα, αὐτὸ
μόνον τὸ ἀνεπηρέαστον ἡμῖν ἐπιτρέπον φυλάτ-
τεσθαι, οὐ μὴν συνόδους ἐπικελεῦον ποιεῖσθαι οὐδ'
οἴκους ἐκκλησιῶν οἰκοδομεῖν οὐδ' ἄλλο τι τῶν
ἡμῖν συνήθων διαπράττεσθαι. καίτοι γε ταῦθ' οἱ 12
τῆς εἰρήνης καὶ εὐσεβείας προήγοροι αὐτῷ τε
ἐπιτρέπειν ἐπεστάλκεσαν καὶ τοῖς ὑπ' αὐτοὺς
ἅπασιν διὰ προγραμμάτων καὶ νόμων συγκεχωρή-
κεσαν· οὐ μὴν ὁ δυσσεβέστατός γε ταύτῃ ἐνδοῦναι
προῄρητο, εἰ μὴ ὅτε πρὸς τῆς θείας συνελαθεὶς
δίκης ὕστατόν γε ἄκων ἐπὶ τοῦτ' ἦλθε.

X. Ἐκπεριῆλθεν δ' αὐτὸν τοιαύτη τις αἰτία. 1
τὸ μέγεθος τῆς οὐ κατ' ἀξίαν ἐπιτραπείσης
ἡγεμονίας αὐτῷ μὴ οἷός τε φέρειν, ἀλλὰ δι'
ἀπειρίαν σώφρονος καὶ βασιλικοῦ λογισμοῦ ἀπειρο-

For this reason it behoves thy Devotedness to observe carefully that which is commanded thee, and that authority be given to none to afflict our provincials with insults and extortions, since, as we wrote above, it is fitting to recall our provincials to the worship of the gods rather by exhortations and persuasive words. And that this our injunction may come to the knowledge of all our provincials, it behoves thee to make known that which has been enjoined in an ordinance put forth by thyself."

Since he issued these commands under the compulsion of necessity and not of his own free will, no one any longer regarded him as truthful or even trustworthy, because after a similar concession he had already on a former occasion showed himself to be changeable and false of disposition. None of our people therefore dared to convene an assembly or to present himself in public, because the letter did not allow him even this. This alone it laid down, that we should be kept from harsh treatment, but it gave no orders about holding meetings or erecting church-buildings or practising any of our customary acts. And yet the advocates of peace and piety, [Constantine and Licinius], had written to him to allow this, and had conceded it to all their subjects by means of edicts and laws. In truth, this monster of iniquity had resolved not to give in as regards this matter; until he was smitten by the divine Justice, and at the last against his will forced to do so.

X. The following were the circumstances that hemmed him in. He was unable to carry on the vast government with which he had been undeservedly entrusted; but, lacking a prudent and

κάλως τοῖς πράγμασιν ἐγχειρῶν ἐπὶ πᾶσίν τε ὑπερηφανίας μεγαλαυχίᾳ τὴν ψυχὴν ἀλόγως ἀρθείς, ἤδη καὶ κατὰ τῶν τῆς βασιλείας κοινωνῶν, τὰ πάντα αὐτοῦ προφερόντων γένει καὶ τροφῇ καὶ παιδείᾳ ἀξιώματι τε καὶ συνέσει καὶ τῷ γε πάντων κορυφαιοτάτῳ, σωφροσύνῃ καὶ τῇ περὶ τὸν ἀληθῆ θεὸν εὐσεβείᾳ, τολμᾶν ὥρμητο θρασύνεσθαι καὶ πρῶτον ἑαυτὸν ταῖς τιμαῖς ἀναγορεύειν. ἐπιτείνας δ' εἰς ἀπόνοιαν τὰ τῆς μανίας, συνθήκας ἃς πρὸς Λικίννιον πεποίητο, παρασπονδήσας, πόλεμον ἄσπονδον αἴρεται· εἶτ' ἐν βραχεῖ τὰ πάντα κυκήσας πᾶσάν τε πόλιν ἐκταράξας καὶ πᾶν στρατόπεδον, μυριάδων τὸ πλῆθος ἀνηρίθμων, συναγαγών, ἔξεισιν εἰς μάχην αὐτῷ παραταξάμενος, δαιμόνων ἐλπίσιν, ὧν δὴ ᾤετο θεῶν, καὶ ταῖς τῶν ὁπλιτῶν μυριάσιν τὴν ψυχὴν ἐπηρμένος.

Καὶ δὴ συμβαλὼν εἰς χεῖρας, ἔρημος τῆς ἐκ θεοῦ καθίσταται ἐπισκοπῆς, τῆς νίκης ἐξ αὐτοῦ τοῦ πάντων ἑνὸς καὶ μόνου θεοῦ τῷ τότε κρατοῦντι πρυτανευθείσης. ἀπόλλυσι δὴ πρῶτον τὸ ἐφ' ᾧ πεποίθει ὁπλιτικόν, τῶν τε ἀμφ' αὐτὸν δορυφόρων γυμνὸν καὶ πάντων ἔρημον αὐτὸν καταλελοιπότων τῷ τε κρατοῦντι προσπεφευγότων, ὑπεκδὺς ὁ δείλαιος ὡς τάχιστα τὸν οὐ πρέποντα αὐτῷ βασιλικὸν κόσμον, δειλῶς καὶ δυσγενῶς καὶ ἀνάνδρως ὑποδύνει τὸ πλῆθος κἄπειτα διαδιδράσκει κρυπταζόμενός τε ἀνὰ τοὺς ἀγροὺς καὶ τὰς κώμας μόλις τῶν πολεμίων τὰς χεῖρας, τὰ τῆς σωτηρίας αὐτῷ προμνώμενος, διέξεισιν, ἔργοις αὐτοῖς εὖ μάλα πιστοὺς καὶ ἀληθεῖς τοὺς θείους ἀποφήνας χρησμούς, ἐν οἷς εἴρηται " οὐ σώζεται βασιλεὺς διὰ

Ps. 33, 16-19

[1] Licinius. This clause is probably a later insertion.

imperial mind, he managed his affairs tactlessly; and, above all, his soul was uplifted in an absurd manner by an overweening arrogance, actually against his colleagues in the Empire, men who were in every way his superiors in birth and upbringing and education, in worth and intelligence, and—what is most important of all—in sobriety and piety towards the true God. So he began to venture to act with insolence, and publicly to style himself first in rank. Then he pushed his madness to the length of insanity, and, breaking the treaty he had made with Licinius, raised an internecine war. Next, in a short time he threw everything into confusion, greatly disturbed every city, and, gathering together all the army, an innumerable multitude of men, went forth to fight him in battle-array, his soul uplifted by the hopes he placed in demons, whom, forsooth, he regarded as gods, and in his myriads of armed soldiers.

But when he joined battle, he found himself bereft of divine Providence, for, by the direction of Him who is the one and only God of all, the victory was given to Licinius who was then ruling. First of all, the armed soldiers in whom he had trusted were destroyed; and when his bodyguard had left him defenceless and wholly deserted, and had gone over to him who was ruling,[1] the wretched man divested himself with all speed of the imperial insignia that ill became him, and in a cowardly, base and unmanly way quietly slipt into the crowd. Then he ran about here and there, hiding himself in the fields and villages; and for all his courting of safety he escaped with difficulty the hands of his enemies, his deeds themselves proclaiming how very trustworthy and true are the divine oracles, in which it has been said:

πολλὴν δύναμιν, καὶ γίγας οὐ σωθήσεται ἐν πλήθει ἰσχύος αὐτοῦ· ψευδὴς ἵππος εἰς σωτηρίαν, ἐν δὲ πλήθει δυνάμεως αὐτοῦ οὐ σωθήσεται. ἰδοὺ οἱ ὀφθαλμοὶ κυρίου ἐπὶ τοὺς φοβουμένους αὐτόν, τοὺς ἐλπίζοντας ἐπὶ τὸ ἔλεος αὐτοῦ, ῥύσασθαι ἐκ θανάτου τὰς ψυχὰς αὐτῶν." οὕτω δῆτα αἰσχύνης ἔμπλεως ὁ τύραννος ἐπὶ τὰ καθ' ἑαυτὸν ἐλθὼν μέρη, πρῶτα μὲν ἐμμανεῖ θυμῷ πολλοὺς ἱερεῖς καὶ προφήτας τῶν πάλαι θαυμαζομένων αὐτῷ θεῶν, ὧν δὴ τοῖς χρησμοῖς ἀναρριπισθεὶς τὸν πόλεμον ἤρατο, ὡς ἂν γόητας καὶ ἀπατεῶνας καὶ ἐπὶ πᾶσιν προδότας τῆς αὐτοῦ γενομένους σωτηρίας ἀναιρεῖ· εἶτα δὲ δοὺς δόξαν τῷ Χριστιανῶν θεῷ νόμον τε τὸν ὑπὲρ ἐλευθερίας αὐτῶν τελεώτατα καὶ πληρέστατα διαταξάμενος, δυσθανατήσας αὐτίκα μηδεμιᾶς αὐτῷ χρόνου δοθείσης προθεσμίας τελευτᾷ τὸν βίον.

Ὁ δὲ καταπεμφθεὶς ὑπ' αὐτοῦ νόμος τοιοῦτος ἦν·

ΑΝΤΙΓΡΑΦΟΝ ΕΡΜΗΝΕΙΑΣ ΤΗΣ ΤΟΥ ΤΥΡΑΝΝΟΥ ΥΠΕΡ ΧΡΙΣΤΙΑΝΩΝ ΔΙΑΤΑΞΕΩΣ ΕΚ ΡΩΜΑΙΚΗΣ ΓΛΩΤΤΗΣ ΕΙΣ ΤΗΝ ΕΛΛΑΔΑ ΜΕΤΑΛΗΦΘΕΙΣΗΣ

"Αὐτοκράτωρ Καῖσαρ Γάϊος Οὐαλέριος Μαξιμῖνος, Γερμανικός, Σαρματικός, εὐσεβὴς εὐτυχὴς ἀνίκητος Σεβαστός. κατὰ πάντα τρόπον ἡμᾶς διηνεκῶς τῶν ἐπαρχιωτῶν τῶν ἡμετέρων τοῦ χρησίμου προνοεῖσθαι καὶ ταῦτα αὐτοῖς βούλεσθαι παρέχειν, οἷς τὰ λυσιτελῆ πάντων μάλιστα κατορθοῦται καὶ ὅσα τῆς λυσιτελείας καὶ τῆς χρησιμότητός ἐστιν τῆς κοινῆς αὐτῶν καὶ ὁποῖα πρὸς τὴν δημοσίαν λυσιτέλειαν ἁρμόζει καὶ ταῖς ἑκάστων

" There is no king saved by much power, and a giant will not be saved by his great strength. A horse is a vain thing for safety, and will not be saved by his great power. Behold, the eyes of the Lord are upon them that fear him, upon them that hope in his mercy ; to deliver their souls from death." Thus, then, did the tyrant, filled with shame, come to his own territory. And first in his mad fury he put to death many priests and prophets of those gods who had formerly been his admiration, and whose oracles had incited him to begin the war, on the ground that they were charlatans and deceivers and, above all, betrayers of his safety. Next, he gave glory to the Christians' God, and drew up a law on behalf of their liberty in the most complete and fullest manner. Then straightway, no respite being granted him, he ended his life by a miserable death.

Now the law issued by him was as follows :

Copy of a Translation of the Ordinance of the Tyrant on behalf of the Christians, made from the Latin tongue into the Greek.

" The Emperor Caesar Gaius Valerius Maximinus Germanicus, Sarmaticus, Pius Felix Invictus Augustus. We believe that no one is ignorant, nay that every man who has recourse to the facts knows and is conscious that it is manifest, that in every way we take unceasing thought for the good of our provincials, and desire to grant them such things as are best calculated to secure the advantage of all, and

διανοίαις προσφιλῆ τυγχάνει, οὐδένα ἀγνοεῖν, ἀλλ' ἕκαστον ἀνατρέχειν ἐπ' αὐτὸ τὸ γινόμενον γινώσκειν τε ἕκαστον τῶν ἀνθρώπων καὶ ἔχειν ἐν ἑαυτῷ δῆλον εἶναι πιστεύομεν. ὁπότε τοίνυν πρὸ 8
τούτου δῆλον γέγονεν τῇ γνώσει τῇ ἡμετέρᾳ ἐκ ταύτης τῆς προφάσεως ἐξ ἧς κεκελευσμένον ἦν ὑπὸ τῶν θειοτάτων Διοκλητιανοῦ καὶ Μαξιμιανοῦ, τῶν γονέων τῶν ἡμετέρων, τὰς συνόδους τῶν Χριστιανῶν ἐξῃρῆσθαι, πολλοὺς σεισμοὺς καὶ ἀποστερήσεις ὑπὸ τῶν ὀφφικιαλίων γεγενῆσθαι, καὶ εἰς τοὐπιὸν δὲ τοῦτο προχωρεῖν κατὰ τῶν ἐπαρχιωτῶν τῶν ἡμετέρων, ὧν μάλιστα πρόνοιαν τὴν προσήκουσαν γίνεσθαι σπουδάζομεν, τῶν οὐσιῶν τῶν ἰδίων αὐτῶν κατατριβομένων, δοθέντων γραμμάτων πρὸς τοὺς ἡγεμόνας ἑκάστης ἐπαρχίας τῷ παρελθόντι ἐνιαυτῷ ἐνομοθετήσαμεν ἵν' εἴ τις βούλοιτο τῷ τοιούτῳ ἔθει ἢ τῇ αὐτῇ φυλακῇ τῆς θρησκείας ἕπεσθαι, τοῦτον ἀνεμποδίστως ἔχεσθαι τῆς προθέσεως τῆς ἑαυτοῦ καὶ ὑπὸ μηδενὸς ἐμποδίζεσθαι μηδὲ κωλύεσθαι καὶ εἶναι αὐτοῖς εὐχέρειαν δίχα τινὸς φόβου καὶ ὑποψίας τοῦθ' ὅπερ ἑκάστῳ ἀρέσκει, ποιεῖν. πλὴν οὐδὲ νῦν λαθεῖν ἡμᾶς ἐδυνήθη ὅτι τινὲς τῶν 9
δικαστῶν παρενεθυμοῦντο τὰς ἡμετέρας κελεύσεις καὶ διστάζειν τοὺς ἡμετέρους ἀνθρώπους περὶ τὰ προστάγματα τὰ ἡμέτερα παρεσκεύασαν καὶ ὀκνηρότερον προσιέναι ταύταις ταῖς θρησκείαις αἷς ἦν ἀρεστὸν αὐτοῖς, ἐποίησαν.

"Ἵνα τοίνυν εἰς τὸ ἑξῆς πᾶσα ὑποψία ἢ ἀμφιβολία 10
τοῦ φόβου περιαιρεθῇ, τοῦτο τὸ διάταγμα προτεθῆναι ἐνομοθετήσαμεν, ἵνα πᾶσιν δῆλον γένηται ἐξεῖναι τούτοις οἵτινες ταύτην τὴν αἵρεσιν καὶ τὴν

whatsoever things are advantageous and useful to their common weal, and such as are suitable to the public advantage and agreeable to every mind. Since, therefore, before this it has been evident to our knowledge that, on the plea that the most divine Diocletian and Maximian, our fathers, had given orders for the abolishment of the Christian assemblies, many extortions and robberies have been practised by the officials, and that this increased as time went on to the detriment of our provincials (for whose good it is our especial desire that there should be due thought), and that their own personal possessions were being destroyed : we addressed a letter to the governors in each province last year, laying it down that if any should wish to follow such a custom or the same religious observances, such a one should adhere to his purpose without hindrance, and be hindered or prevented by no one ; and that they should have a free hand, without fear and suspicion, to do whatsoever each one pleases. But it cannot escape our notice even now that some of the judges misinterpreted our injunctions, and caused our people to have doubts with regard to our commands, and made them somewhat backward in joining in those religious observances that were pleasing to them.

"That, therefore, for the future all suspicion or doubt arising from fear may be removed, we have decreed that this ordinance be published, so that it may be plain to all that those who desire to follow

θρῃσκείαν μετιέναι βούλονται, ἐκ ταύτης τῆς δωρεᾶς τῆς ἡμετέρας, καθὼς ἕκαστος βούλεται ἢ ἡδέα αὐτῷ ἐστιν, οὕτως προσιέναι τῇ θρῃσκείᾳ ταύτῃ ἣν ἐξ ἔθους θρῃσκεύειν εἵλετο. καὶ τὰ κυριακὰ δὲ τὰ οἰκεῖα ὅπως κατασκευάζοιεν, συγκεχώρηται. ἵνα μέντοι καὶ μείζων γένηται ἡ 11
ἡμετέρα δωρεά, καὶ τοῦτο νομοθετῆσαι κατηξιώσαμεν ἵνα εἴ τινες οἰκίαι καὶ χωρία ‹ἃ› τοῦ δικαίου τοῦ τῶν Χριστιανῶν πρὸ τούτου ἐτύγχανον ὄντα, ἐκ τῆς κελεύσεως τῶν γονέων τῶν ἡμετέρων εἰς τὸ δίκαιον μετέπεσεν τοῦ φίσκου ἢ ὑπό τινος κατελήφθη πόλεως, εἴτε διάπρασις τούτων γεγένηται εἴτε εἰς χάρισμα δέδοταί τινι, ταῦτα πάντα εἰς τὸ ἀρχαῖον δίκαιον τῶν Χριστιανῶν ἀνακληθῆναι ἐκελεύσαμεν, ἵνα καὶ ἐν τούτῳ τῆς ἡμετέρας εὐσεβείας καὶ τῆς προνοίας αἴσθησιν πάντες λάβωσιν.''

Αὗται τοῦ τυράννου φωναί, οὐδ' ὅλον ἐνιαυτὸν 12
τῶν κατὰ Χριστιανῶν ἐν στήλαις ἀνατεθειμένων αὐτῷ διαταγμάτων ὑστερήσασαι, καὶ παρ' ᾧ γε μικρῷ πρόσθεν δυσσεβεῖς ἐδοκοῦμεν καὶ ἄθεοι καὶ παντὸς ὄλεθροι τοῦ βίου, ὡς μὴ ὅτι γε πόλιν, ἀλλ' οὐδὲ χώραν οὐδ' ἐρημίαν οἰκεῖν ἐπιτρέπεσθαι, παρὰ τούτῳ διατάξεις ὑπὲρ Χριστιανῶν καὶ νομοθεσίαι συνετάττοντο, καὶ οἱ πρὸ βραχέος πυρὶ καὶ σιδήρῳ θηρίων τε καὶ οἰωνῶν βορᾷ πρὸ ὀφθαλμῶν αὐτοῦ διαφθειρόμενοι καὶ πᾶν εἶδος κολάσεως καὶ τιμωρίας ἀπαλλαγῆς τε βίου οἰκτρότατα ὡς ἂν ἄθεοι καὶ δυσσεβεῖς ὑπομένοντες, οὗτοι νῦν πρὸς τοῦ αὐτοῦ καὶ θρῃσκεύειν ὁμολογοῦνται θρῃσκείαν καὶ ἐπισκευάζειν κυριακὰ ἐπιτρέπονται, καὶ δικαίων τινῶν αὐτοῖς μετεῖναι αὐτὸς ὁ τύραννος ὁμολογεῖ.

this sect and religious observance are permitted, in accordance with this our bounty, as each one wishes or finds it pleasing, to join in that religious observance which from choice he was wont to practise. And permission has also been granted them to build the Lord's houses. Nevertheless, that our bounty may be even greater, we have decided to decree this also : that if any houses or lands, which used formerly to belong by right to the Christians, have by the injunction of our parents passed into the right of the public treasury or have been seized by any city—whether a sale of these has taken place, or they have been handed over to anyone as a gift—we have given orders that all these be restored to the Christians as their original right, so that in this also all may perceive our piety and solicitude."

These are the words of the tyrant that came less than a whole year after the ordinances against the Christians, set up by him on tablets ; and he who a short while previously looked upon us as impious and godless and the pests of society, so that we were not permitted to dwell in, I will not say, a city, but even a spot in the country or a desert—this same person drew up ordinances and legislation on behalf of the Christians ; and those who shortly before were being destroyed by fire and sword and given to wild beasts and birds for food before his eyes, and were enduring every kind of chastisement and punishment and loss of life in the most pitiable manner, as if they were godless and wicked, these he now allows both to observe their form of worship and to build churches; and the tyrant himself confesses that they possess certain rights !

Καὶ δὴ τοιαῦτα ἐξομολογησάμενος, ὥσπερ τινὸς 13
τυχὼν εὐεργεσίας τούτων δὴ αὐτῶν ἕνεκα, ἧττον
ἢ παθεῖν αὐτὸν χρῆν δήπου παθών, ἀθρόᾳ θεοῦ
πληγεὶς μάστιγι ἐν δευτέρᾳ τοῦ πολέμου συμβολῇ
καταστρέφει· γίνεται δ' αὐτῷ τὰ τῆς καταστροφῆς 14
οὐχ οἷα στρατηγοῖς πολεμάρχαις ὑπὲρ ἀρετῆς καὶ
γνωρίμων πολλάκις ἀνδριζομένοις ἐν πολέμῳ τὴν
εὐκλεῆ τελευτὴν εὐθαρσῶς ὑπομεῖναι συνέβη, ἀλλὰ
γὰρ ἅτε τις δυσσεβὴς καὶ θεομάχος, τῆς παρα-
τάξεως ἔτ' αὐτῷ πρὸ τοῦ πεδίου συνεστώσης οἴκοι
μένων αὐτὸς καὶ κρυπταζόμενος, τὴν προσήκουσαν
τιμωρίαν ὑπέχει, ἀθρόᾳ θεοῦ πληγεὶς καθ' ὅλου
τοῦ σώματος μάστιγι, ὡς ἀλγηδόσιν δειναῖς καὶ
περιωδυνίαις ἐλαυνόμενον πρηνῆ καταπεσεῖν, λιμῷ
φθειρόμενον τάς τε σάρκας ὅλας ἀοράτῳ καὶ
θεηλάτῳ πυρὶ τηκόμενον, ὡς διαρρεύσαντα τὸ μὲν
πᾶν εἶδος τῆς παλαιᾶς μορφῆς ἀφανισθῆναι,
ξηρῶν δ' αὐτὸ μόνον ὀστέων οἷόν τι μακρῷ χρόνῳ
κατεσκελετευμένον εἴδωλον ὑπολειφθῆναι, ὡς μηδ'
ἄλλο τι νομίζειν τοὺς παρόντας ἢ τάφον αὐτῷ τῆς
ψυχῆς γεγονέναι τὸ σῶμα, ἐν ἤδη νεκρῷ καὶ
παντελῶς ἀπορρεύσαντι κατορωρυγμένης. σφοδρό- 15
τερον δ' ἔτι μᾶλλον τῆς θέρμης αὐτὸν ἐκ βάθους
μυελῶν καταφλεγούσης, προπηδῶσιν μὲν αὐτῷ
τὰ ὄμματα καὶ τῆς ἰδίας λήξεως ἀποπεσόντα πηρὸν
αὐτὸν ἀφίησιν, ὃ δ' ἐπὶ τούτοις ἔτ' ἐμπνέων
ἀνθομολογούμενος τῷ κυρίῳ θάνατον ἐπεκαλεῖτο,
καὶ τὸ πανύστατον ἐνδίκως ταῦτα τῆς κατὰ τοῦ
Χριστοῦ παροινίας χάριν ὁμολογήσας παθεῖν, τὴν
ψυχὴν ἀφίησιν.

And when he had made these confessions, as if meeting with some kind of reward on this very account—that is, suffering less, to be sure, than it behoved him to suffer—he was smitten all at once by a stroke of God, and perished in the second encounter of the war. But the circumstances of his death were not such as fall to the lot of generals on a campaign, who time after time contend bravely on behalf of virtue and friends, and with a good courage meet a glorious end in battle; but he suffered his due punishment like an impious enemy of God, skulking at home while his army was still stationed in battle-array on the field. All at once he was smitten by a stroke of God over his whole body, with the result that he fell prone under the onslaught of terrible pains and agonies; he was wasted by hunger, and his flesh entirely consumed by an invisible, divinely-sent fire; the form which his body once possessed wasted away and vanished, and there remained only a form of dry bones, like some phantom shape long since reduced to a skeleton, so that those present could not but think that his body had become the tomb of his soul, which had been buried in what was now a corpse and completely wasted away. And as the heat consumed him still more fiercely in the very depths of his marrow, his eyes projected, and falling from their sockets[1] left him blind. Yet he still breathed in this condition, and making confession to the Lord invoked death. So with his last breath he acknowledged that he suffered thus justly because of his violence against Christ; and then gave up the ghost.

[1] In later Greek λῆξις sometimes means 'place,' 'position'; Chrysostom (Hom. lvi. *in Job*. § 2) uses the word, as Eusebius does here, of the place occupied by the eye.

XI. Οὕτω δῆτα Μαξιμίνου ἐκποδὼν γενομένου, 1
ὃς μόνος ἔτι λείπων τῶν τῆς θεοσεβείας ἐχθρῶν,
ἁπάντων χείριστος ἀναπέφηνεν, τὰ μὲν τῆς τῶν
ἐκκλησιῶν ἀνανεώσεως ἐκ θεμελίων χάριτι θεοῦ
τοῦ παντοκράτορος ἠγείρετο ὅ τε τοῦ Χριστοῦ
λόγος, εἰς δόξαν τοῦ τῶν ὅλων θεοῦ διαλάμπων,
μείζονα τῆς πρόσθεν ἀπελάμβανεν παρρησίαν, τὰ
δὲ τῆς δυσσεβείας τῶν τῆς θεοσεβείας ἐχθρῶν
αἰσχύνης ἐσχάτης καὶ ἀτιμίας ἐνεπίμπλατο. πρῶ-
τός τε γὰρ Μαξιμῖνος αὐτὸς κοινὸς ἁπάντων πολέ- 2
μιος ὑπὸ τῶν κρατούντων ἀναγορευθείς, δυσ-
σεβέστατος καὶ δυσωνυμώτατος καὶ θεομισέστατος
τύραννος διὰ προγραμμάτων δημοσίων ἀνεστη-
λίτευτο, γραφαί τε ὅσαι εἰς τιμὴν αὐτοῦ τε καὶ
τῶν αὐτοῦ παίδων κατὰ πᾶσαν ἀνέκειντο πόλιν,
αἳ μὲν ἐξ ὕψους εἰς ἔδαφος ῥιπτούμεναι συνετρί-
βοντο, αἳ δὲ τὰς προσόψεις ἠχρειοῦντο σκοτεινῷ
χρώματι καταμελανούμεναι, ἀνδριάντων τε ὁμοίως
ὁπόσοι εἰς αὐτοῦ τιμὴν διανεστήκεσαν, ὡσαύτως
ῥιπτούμενοι συνετρίβοντο, γέλως καὶ παιδιὰ τοῖς
ἐνυβρίζειν καὶ ἐμπαροινεῖν ἐθέλουσιν ἐκκείμενοι.

Εἶτα δὲ καὶ τῶν ἄλλων τῆς θεοσεβείας ἐχθρῶν 3
πᾶσαι τιμαὶ περιῃροῦντο, ἐκτείνοντο δὲ καὶ πάντες
οἱ τὰ Μαξιμίνου φρονοῦντες, ὅσοι μάλιστα τῶν
ἐν ἀρχικοῖς ἀξιώμασιν ὑπ' αὐτοῦ τετιμημένοι τῇ
πρὸς αὐτὸν κολακείᾳ σοβαρῶς ἐνεπαροίνησαν τῷ
καθ' ἡμᾶς λόγῳ· οἷος ἦν ὁ παρὰ πάντας αὐτῷ 4
τιμιώτατος καὶ αἰδεσιμώτατος ἑταίρων τε γνησιώ-
τατος Πευκέτιος, δὶς ὕπατος καὶ τρὶς ὕπατος καὶ
τῶν καθόλου λόγων ἔπαρχος πρὸς αὐτοῦ καθεστα-
μένος, Κουλκιανός τε ὡσαύτως διὰ πάσης ἀρχικῆς
προελθὼν ἐξουσίας, ὁ καὶ αὐτὸς μυρίοις τοῖς κατ'

XI. When Maximin was thus removed—he who was the only one left of the enemies of godliness, and showed himself the worst of all—by the grace of Almighty God the renewal of the churches from the foundation was set on foot, and the word of Christ received a due increase upon its former freedom, and was clearly heard to the glory of the God of the universe ; while the impiety of the enemies of godliness was covered with the most abject shame and dishonour. For Maximin himself was the first to be proclaimed by the rulers as a common enemy of all, and posted in public edicts on tablets as a most impious, most hateful and God-hating tyrant. As to the portraits which were set up in every city to his honour and that of his children, some were hurled from a height to the ground and smashed to pieces, others had their faces blackened over with dark-coloured paint and so rendered useless ; the statues likewise, as many as had been set up in his honour, were cast down and broken in the same manner, and lay as an object of merriment and sport to those who wished to insult or abuse them.

Next, all the honours of the other enemies of godliness also were taken away, and all who were of the party of Maximin were slain, especially those in high government positions who had been honoured by him, and who indulged in violent abuse against our doctrine in order to fawn upon him. Such was Peucetius, a man whom he honoured and respected above all, the truest of his friends, consul a second and a third time, and appointed by him general finance minister ; such likewise was Culcianus, who had gone through every grade of office in the government, the same person who gloried in the murder

Αἴγυπτον Χριστιανῶν ἐλλαμπρυνάμενος αἵμασιν, ἄλλοι τε ἐπὶ τούτοις οὐκ ὀλίγοι, δι' ὧν μάλιστα τὰ τῆς Μαξιμίνου τυραννίδος ἐκραταιοῦτό τε καὶ ηὔξετο.

Ἐκάλει δὲ ἄρα καὶ Θεότεκνον ἡ δίκη, οὐδαμῶς τὰ κατὰ Χριστιανῶν αὐτῷ πεπραγμένα λήθῃ παραδιδοῦσα. ἐπὶ μὲν γὰρ τῷ κατ' Ἀντιόχειαν ἱδρυθέντι πρὸς αὐτοῦ ξοάνῳ δόξας εὐημερεῖν, ἤδη καὶ ἡγεμονίας ἠξίωτο παρὰ Μαξιμίνου, Λικίννιος δ' ἐπιβὰς τῆς Ἀντιοχέων πόλεως φώραν τε γοήτων ποιησάμενος, τοὺς τοῦ νεοπαγοῦς ξοάνου προφήτας καὶ ἱερεῖς βασάνοις ἠκίζετο, τίνι λόγῳ τὴν ἀπάτην καθυποκρίνοιντο, πυνθανόμενος· ὡς δ' ἐπικρύπτεσθαι αὐτοῖς πρὸς τῶν βασάνων συνελαυνομένοις ἀδύνατον ἦν, ἐδήλουν δὲ τὸ πᾶν μυστήριον ἀπάτην τυγχάνειν τέχνῃ τῇ Θεοτέκνου μεμηχανημένην, τοῖς πᾶσιν τὴν ἀξίαν ἐπιθεὶς δίκην, πρῶτον αὐτὸν Θεότεκνον, εἶτα δὲ καὶ τοὺς τῆς γοητείας κοινωνοὺς μετὰ πλείστας ὅσας αἰκίας θανάτῳ παραδίδωσιν.

Τούτοις ἅπασιν προσετίθεντο καὶ οἱ Μαξιμίνου παῖδες, οὓς ἤδη καὶ τῆς βασιλικῆς τιμῆς τῆς τε ἐν πίναξιν καὶ γραφαῖς ἀναθέσεως πεποίητο κοινωνούς· καὶ οἱ συγγένειαν δὲ τοῦ τυράννου τὸ πρὶν αὐχοῦντες καὶ πάντας ἀνθρώπους καταδυναστεύειν ἐπηρμένοι τὰ αὐτὰ τοῖς προδεδηλωμένοις μετὰ τῆς
Zeph. 3, 2 ἐσχάτης ἀτιμίας ἔπασχον, ἐπεὶ μὴ ἐδέξαντο παιδείαν μηδὲ ἔγνωσαν μηδὲ συνῆκαν τὴν φάσκου-
Ps. 146, 3. 4 σαν ἐν ἱεροῖς λόγοις παρακέλευσιν "μὴ πεποίθετε ἐπ' ἄρχοντας, ἐπὶ υἱοὺς ἀνθρώπων, οἷς οὐκ ἔστιν σωτηρία· ἐξελεύσεται τὸ πνεῦμα αὐτοῦ καὶ ἀποστρέψει εἰς τὴν γῆν αὐτοῦ· ἐν ἐκείνῃ τῇ ἡμέρᾳ

of countless Christians in Egypt; and in addition to these not a few others, who were the chief means of confirming and increasing Maximin's tyranny.

So it was that Theotecnus also was summoned by Justice, who in no wise consigned to oblivion what he did against the Christians. For after he had set up the idol[1] at Antioch, he seemed to be prospering, and had actually been deemed worthy of a governorship by Maximin; but when Licinius came to the city of the Antiochenes, he made a search for charlatans, and plied with tortures the prophets and priests of the new-made idol, to find out by what contrivance they were practising this deceit. And when the infliction of the tortures made concealment impossible for them, and they revealed that the whole mystery was a deceit manufactured by the art of Theotecnus, he inflicted a just punishment upon them all, putting to death, after a long series of tortures, first Theotecnus himself, and then also the partners in his charlatanry.

To all these were added the sons of Maximin, whom he had already caused to share the imperial dignity and to be set up in paintings and pictures.[2] And those who formerly boasted kinship with the tyrant and were moved by pride to lord it over all men underwent the same sufferings, accompanied by the most abject disgrace, as those mentioned above; for they received not correction, nor did they know or understand the exhortation in the sacred books which says: "Put not your trust in princes, in the sons of men, in whom there is no help. His breath shall go forth and he shall return to his

[1] See c. 3.
[2] *Cf.* § 2, above.

ἀπολοῦνται πάντες οἱ διαλογισμοὶ αὐτῶν." οὕτω δῆτα τῶν δυσσεβῶν ἐκκαθαρθέντων, μόνοις ἐφυλάττετο τὰ τῆς προσηκούσης βασιλείας βέβαιά τε καὶ ἀνεπίφθονα Κωνσταντίνῳ καὶ Λικιννίῳ· οἳ τῶν πρόσθεν ἁπάντων ἐκκαθάραντες τοῦ βίου τὴν θεοεχθρίαν, τῶν ἐκ θεοῦ πρυτανευθέντων ἀγαθῶν αὐτοῖς ᾐσθημένως τὸ φιλάρετον καὶ θεοφιλὲς τό τε πρὸς τὸ θεῖον εὐσεβὲς καὶ εὐχάριστον διὰ τῆς ὑπὲρ Χριστιανῶν ἐνεδείξαντο νομοθεσίας.[1]

[1] For οὕτω δῆτα . . . νομοθεσίας ATERMΣ have θεῷ δὴ χάρις ἐπὶ πᾶσιν τῷ παντοκράτορι καὶ βασιλεῖ τῶν ὅλων, πλείστη δὲ καὶ τῷ σωτῆρι καὶ λυτρωτῇ τῶν ψυχῶν ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστῷ, δι' οὗ τὰ τῆς εἰρήνης ἔκ τε τῶν ἔξωθεν ὀχληρῶν καὶ τῶν κατὰ διάνοιαν βέβαια καὶ ἀσάλευτα φυλάττεσθαι ἡμῖν διὰ παντὸς εὐχόμεθα.

---

[1] The following conclusion is found in BDΣ in place of the above: "Thanks be to God, the Almighty and King of the universe, for all things; and abundant thanks be also to

earth. In that day all his thoughts shall perish." [1] Thus verily when the impious ones had been purged away, the kingdom that belonged to them was preserved stedfast and undisputed for Constantine and Licinius alone; who, when they had made it their very first action to purge the world of enmity against God, conscious of the good things that He had bestowed upon them, displayed their love of virtue and of God, their piety and gratitude towards the Deity, by their enactment on behalf of the Christians.

the Saviour and Redeemer of our souls, Jesus Christ, through whom we pray continually that peace from troubles without and troubles in the heart may be preserved for us stedfast and undisturbed." In ATERMΣ this sentence also begins Book X. (In Σ it is found in both places.) The text as printed is probably that of the earlier editions of Eusebius (see vol. i. pp. xix ff.), and was naturally omitted in the last recension, after the *Damnatio memoriae* of Licinius.

Ī

Τάδε καὶ ἡ δεκάτη περιέχει βίβλος τῆς Ἐκκλησιαστικῆς ἱστορίας

Ā Περὶ τῆς ἐκ θεοῦ πρυτανευθείσης ἡμῖν εἰρήνης.
B̄ Περὶ τῆς τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν ἀνανεώσεως.
Γ̄ Περὶ τῶν κατὰ πάντα τόπον ἐγκαινίων.
Δ̄ Πανηγυρικὸς ἐπὶ τῇ τῶν πραγμάτων φαιδρότητι.
[Ē Ἀντίγραφα βασιλικῶν νόμων περὶ τῶν Χριστιανῶν προσηκόντων.
S̄ Περὶ τῆς τῶν κληρικῶν ἀλειτουργησίας.]
Z̄ Περὶ τῆς Λικιννίου εἰς ὕστερον κακοτροπίας καὶ τῆς καταστροφῆς αὐτοῦ.
Η̄ Περὶ τῆς νίκης Κωνσταντίνου καὶ τῶν ὑπ' αὐτοῦ τοῖς ὑπὸ τὴν Ῥωμαίων ἐξουσίαν ὑπαρξάντων.

CONTENTS OF BOOK X

The Tenth Book of the Ecclesiastical History contains the following :

I. On the peace vouchsafed to us from God.
II. On the restoration of the churches.
III. On the dedications in every place.
IV. Panegyric on the joyful condition of affairs.
V. Copies of imperial laws having reference to the Christians.
VI. On the exemption from public service granted to the clerics.
VII. On the subsequent wickedness of Licinius and his tragic end.
VIII. On the victory of Constantine and the blessings which he was the means of procuring for the subjects of the Roman Empire.

I

I. Θεῷ δὴ χάρις ἐπὶ πᾶσιν τῷ παντοκράτορι καὶ βασιλεῖ τῶν ὅλων, πλείστη δὲ καὶ τῷ σωτῆρι καὶ λυτρωτῇ τῶν ψυχῶν ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστῷ, δι' οὗ τὰ τῆς εἰρήνης ἔκ τε τῶν ἔξωθεν ὀχληρῶν καὶ τῶν κατὰ διάνοιαν βέβαια καὶ ἀσάλευτα φυλάττεσθαι ἡμῖν διὰ παντὸς εὐχόμεθα.

Ἅμα δὲ εὐχαῖς καὶ τὸν δέκατον ἐν τούτῳ τοῖς προδιεξοδευθεῖσιν τῆς Ἐκκλησιαστικῆς ἱστορίας ἐπιθέντες τόμον, σοὶ τοῦτον ἐπιγράψομεν, ἱερώτατέ μοι Παυλῖνε, ὥσπερ ἐπισφράγισμά σε τῆς ὅλης ὑποθέσεως ἀναβοώμενοι, εἰκότως δ' ἐν ἀριθμῷ τελείῳ τὸν τέλειον ἐνταῦθα καὶ πανηγυρικὸν τῆς τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν ἀνανεώσεως λόγον κατατάξομεν, θείῳ πνεύματι πειθαρχοῦντες ὧδέ πως ἐγκελευομένῳ "ᾄσατε τῷ κυρίῳ ᾆσμα καινόν, ὅτι θαυμαστὰ ἐποίησεν· ἔσωσεν αὐτῷ ἡ δεξιὰ αὐτοῦ καὶ ὁ βραχίων ὁ ἅγιος αὐτοῦ· ἐγνώρισεν κύριος τὸ σωτήριον αὐτοῦ, ἐναντίον τῶν ἐθνῶν ἀπεκάλυψεν τὴν δικαιοσύνην αὐτοῦ."

Ps. 98, 1. 2

Καὶ δὴ τῷ λογίῳ προστάττοντι τὸ καινὸν ᾆσμα διὰ τοῦδε νῦν ἀκολούθως ἐπιφωνῶμεν ὅτι δὴ μετὰ τὰς δεινὰς καὶ σκοτεινὰς ἐκείνας ὄψεις τε καὶ διηγήσεις τοιαῦτα νῦν ὁρᾶν καὶ τοιαῦτα πανηγυρί-

BOOK X

I. Thanks be to God, the Almighty and King of the universe, for all things ; and abundant thanks be also to the Saviour and Redeemer of our souls, Jesus Christ, through whom we pray continually that peace from troubles without and troubles in the heart may be preserved for us stedfast and undisturbed.

And having now added, while we pray, the tenth tome also of the Ecclesiastical History to those which preceded it, we shall dedicate this tome to thee, my most holy Paulinus,[1] invoking thee as the seal of the whole work ; and fitly in a perfect number we shall here place the perfect and panegyrical discourse on the restoration of the churches, in obedience to the divine Spirit who thus exhorts us : " O sing unto the Lord a new song ; for he hath done marvellous things : His right hand, and His holy arm, hath wrought salvation for him. The Lord hath made known his salvation : His righteousness hath He revealed in the sight of the heathen."

And verily, in accordance with the oracle, which thus bids us, let us now cry aloud the new song, since, after those terrible and gloomy spectacles and narratives, we were accounted worthy now to behold

[1] Bishop of Tyre, and subsequently of his native city, Antioch. Eusebius had a great admiration for him, and dedicated to him not only this book but also his *Onomasticon*.

Matt. 13, 17 ζειν ἠξιώθημεν, οἷα τῶν πρὸ ἡμῶν πολλοὶ τῷ ὄντι
δίκαιοι καὶ θεοῦ μάρτυρες ἐπεθύμησαν ἐπὶ γῆς
ἰδεῖν, καὶ οὐκ εἶδον, καὶ ἀκοῦσαι, καὶ οὐκ ἤκουσαν.
Cf. Phil. 1, 23; Heb. 10, 34 ἀλλ' οἱ μὲν ᾗ τάχος σπεύσαντες τῶν πολὺ κρειτ- 5
τόνων ἔτυχον ἐν αὐτοῖς οὐρανοῖς καὶ παραδείσῳ
2 Cor. 12, 4 τῆς ἐνθέου τρυφῆς ἀναρπασθέντες, ἡμεῖς δὲ καὶ
τάδε μείζονα ἢ καθ' ἡμᾶς ὑπάρχειν ὁμολογοῦντες,
ὑπερεκπεπλήγμεθα μὲν τῆς τοῦ αἰτίου μεγαλο-
δωρεᾶς τὴν χάριν, θαυμάζομεν δὲ εἰκότως ὅλης
ψυχῆς δυνάμει σέβοντες καὶ ταῖς ἀναγράπτοις
προρρήσεσιν ἀληθειαν ἐπιμαρτυροῦντες, δι' ὧν
Ps. 46, 8. 9 εἴρηται· "δεῦτε καὶ ἴδετε τὰ ἔργα κυρίου, ἃ ἔθετο 6
τέρατα ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς, ἀνταναιρῶν πολέμους μέχρι
τῶν περάτων τῆς γῆς· τόξον συντρίψει καὶ συγ-
κλάσει ὅπλον, καὶ θυρεοὺς κατακαύσει ἐν πυρί"·
ἐφ' οἷς ἐναργῶς εἰς ἡμᾶς πεπληρωμένοις χαίροντες,
τὸν ἐφεξῆς συνείρωμεν λόγον.

'Ηφάνιστο μὲν δὴ καθ' ὃν δεδήλωται τρόπον 7
πᾶν τὸ τῶν θεομισῶν γένος καὶ τῆς ἀνθρώπων
ἀθρόως ὄψεως οὕτως ἐξαλήλειπτο, ὡς πάλιν ῥῆμα
Luke 22, 37 θεῖον τέλος ἔχειν τὸ λέγον· "εἶδον ἀσεβῆ ὑπερ-
Ps. 37, 35. 36 υψούμενον καὶ ὑπεραιρόμενον ὡς τὰς κέδρους τοῦ
Λιβάνου· καὶ παρῆλθον, καὶ ἰδοὺ οὐκ ἦν, καὶ
ἐζήτησα τὸν τόπον αὐτοῦ, καὶ οὐχ εὑρέθη"· ἡμέρα 8
δὲ λοιπὸν ἤδη φαιδρὰ καὶ διαυγής, μηδενὸς νέφους
αὐτὴν ἐπισκιάζοντος, φωτὸς οὐρανίου βολαῖς ἀνὰ
τὴν οἰκουμένην ἅπασαν ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις τοῦ
Χριστοῦ κατηύγαζεν, οὐδέ τις ἦν καὶ τοῖς ἔξωθεν
τοῦ καθ' ἡμᾶς θιάσου φθόνος συναπολαύειν εἰ μὴ

[1] ix. 11.

[2] *θίασος*, which originally meant a Bacchic revel or rout, came to signify a religious guild, or confraternity, in which

and to celebrate in panegyric such things as of a truth many righteous men and martyrs of God before us desired to see upon earth and saw them not, and to hear, and heard them not. But they indeed, hasting with all speed, obtained far better things in the heavens themselves and were caught up into a paradise of divine pleasure ; while we, acknowledging that even these present things are beyond our deserts, have been utterly astounded at the munificence of the bounty of which He is the Author, and with our whole soul's might fittingly render Him our awe and worship, attesting the truth of the written predictions, wherein it is said : " Come and behold the works of the Lord, what wonders He hath made in the earth, making wars to cease unto the ends of the earth. He will break the bow and shatter the armour, and the shields he will burn with fire." Rejoicing that these things have been clearly fulfilled to us-ward, let us proceed to take up our narrative.

The whole race of God's enemies had verily been removed even as we have stated,[1] and in a moment blotted out of men's sight ; so that once more a divine saying hath fulfilment, that which says : " I have seen the wicked in great power, and lifted up like the cedars of Lebanon. And I passed by, and, lo, he was not : and I sought his place, and it was not found." And now henceforth a day bright and radiant with rays of heavenly light, overshadowed by never a cloud, shone down upon the churches of Christ throughout the whole world ; nor were even those outside our society [2] grudged, if not the equal enjoy-

sense it is used here. But its application to the Christian society is remarkable.

τῶν ἴσων, ἀπορροῆς δ' οὖν ὅμως καὶ μετουσίας τῶν θεόθεν ἡμῖν πρυτανευθέντων.

II. Πᾶσι μὲν οὖν ἀνθρώποις τὰ ἐκ τῆς τῶν τυράννων καταδυναστείας ἐλεύθερα ἦν, καὶ τῶν προτέρων ἀπηλλαγμένοι κακῶν, ἄλλος ἄλλως μόνον ἀληθῆ θεὸν τὸν τῶν εὐσεβῶν ὑπέρμαχον ὡμολόγει· μάλιστα δ' ἡμῖν τοῖς ἐπὶ τὸν Χριστὸν τοῦ θεοῦ τὰς ἐλπίδας ἀνηρτημένοις ἄλεκτος παρῆν εὐφροσύνη καί τις ἔνθεος ἅπασιν ἐπήνθει χαρὰ πάντα τόπον τὸν πρὸ μικροῦ ταῖς τῶν τυράννων δυσσεβείαις ἠριπωμένον ὥσπερ ἐκ μακρᾶς καὶ θανατηφόρου λύμης ἀναβιώσκοντα θεωμένοις νεώς τε αὖθις ἐκ βάθρων εἰς ὕψος ἄπειρον ἐγειρομένους καὶ πολὺ κρείττονα τὴν ἀγλαΐαν τῶν πάλαι πεπολιορκημένων ἀπολαμβάνοντας.

Ἀλλὰ καὶ βασιλεῖς οἱ ἀνωτάτω συνεχέσι ταῖς ὑπὲρ Χριστιανῶν νομοθεσίαις τὰ τῆς ἐκ θεοῦ μεγαλοδωρεᾶς ἡμῖν εἰς μακρὸν ἔτι καὶ μεῖζον ἐκράτυνον, ἐφοίτα δὲ καὶ εἰς πρόσωπον ἐπισκόποις βασιλέως γράμματα καὶ τιμαὶ καὶ χρημάτων δόσεις· ὧν οὐκ ἀπὸ τρόπου γένοιτ' ἂν κατὰ τὸν προσήκοντα καιρὸν τοῦ λόγου, ὥσπερ ἐν ἱερᾷ στήλῃ, τῇδε τῇ βίβλῳ τὰς φωνὰς ἐκ τῆς Ῥωμαίων ἐπὶ τὴν Ἑλλάδα γλῶσσαν μεταληφθείσας ἐγχαράξαι, ὡς ἂν καὶ τοῖς μεθ' ἡμᾶς ἅπασιν φέροιντο διὰ μνήμης.

III. Ἐπὶ δὴ τούτοις τὸ πᾶσιν εὐκταῖον ἡμῖν καὶ ποθούμενον συνεκροτεῖτο θέαμα, ἐγκαινίων ἑορταὶ κατὰ πόλεις καὶ τῶν ἄρτι νεοπαγῶν προσευκτηρίων ἀφιερώσεις, ἐπισκόπων ἐπὶ ταὐτὸν συνηλύσεις, τῶν πόρρωθεν ἐξ ἀλλοδαπῆς συνδρομαί, λαῶν εἰς λαοὺς φιλοφρονήσεις, τῶν Χριστοῦ σώματος μελῶν

Ezek. 37. 7. 10

ment of our divinely-sent blessings, at any rate a share in their effluence and a participation thereof.

II. So the whole human race was freed from the oppression of the tyrants. And, delivered from his former ills, each one after his own fashion acknowledged as the only true God Him who was the Champion of the pious. But we especially, who had fixed our hopes upon the Christ of God, had gladness unspeakable, and a divine joy blossomed in the hearts of us all as we beheld every place, which a short time before had been laid in ruins by the tyrants' evil deeds, now reviving as if after a long and deadly destruction, and temples rising once more from their foundations to a boundless height, and receiving in far greater measure the magnificence of those that formerly had been destroyed.

Yea, and Emperors, the most exalted, by successive enactments on behalf of the Christians, confirmed still further and more widely God's bounty towards us; and bishops constantly received even personal letters from the Emperor, and honours and gifts of money. It may not be unfitting at the proper place in this work, as on a sacred monument, to insert in this book the text of these documents, translated from Latin into Greek, so that they may also be preserved in remembrance by all those who come after us.

III. After this there was brought about that spectacle for which we all prayed and longed: festivals of dedication in the cities and consecrations of the newly-built houses of prayer, assemblages of bishops, comings together of those from far off foreign lands, kindly acts on the part of laity towards laity, union between the members of Christ's body

εἰς μίαν συνιόντων ἁρμονίαν ἕνωσις. συνήγετο 2
γοῦν ἀκολούθως προρρήσει προφητικῇ μυστικῶς
τὸ μέλλον προσημαινούσῃ ὀστέον πρὸς ὀστέον
καὶ ἁρμονία πρὸς ἁρμονίαν καὶ ὅσα θεσπίζων ὁ
λόγος δι' αἰνιγμάτων ἀψευδῶς προανετείνατο, μία 3
Acts 4, 32 τε ἦν θείου πνεύματος διὰ πάντων τῶν μελῶν
χωροῦσα δύναμις καὶ ψυχὴ τῶν πάντων μία καὶ
προθυμία πίστεως ἡ αὐτὴ καὶ εἷς ἐξ ἁπάντων
θεολογίας ὕμνος, ναὶ μὴν καὶ τῶν ἡγουμένων
ἐντελεῖς θρῃσκεῖαι ἱερουργίαι τε τῶν ἱερωμένων
καὶ θεοπρεπεῖς ἐκκλησίας θεσμοί, ὧδε μὲν ψαλμῳ-
δίαις καὶ ταῖς λοιπαῖς τῶν θεόθεν ἡμῖν παρα-
δοθεισῶν φωνῶν ἀκροάσεσιν, ὧδε δὲ θείαις καὶ
μυστικαῖς ἐπιτελουμέναις διακονίαις, σωτηρίου τε
ἦν πάθους ἀπόρρητα σύμβολα. ὁμοῦ δὲ πᾶν γένος 4
ἡλικίας ἄρρενός τε καὶ θήλεος φύσεως ὅλῃ διανοίας
ἰσχύϊ δι' εὐχῶν καὶ εὐχαριστίας γεγηθότι νῷ καὶ
ψυχῇ τὸν τῶν ἀγαθῶν παραίτιον θεὸν ἐγέραιρον.

Ἐκίνει δὲ καὶ λόγους ἅπας τῶν παρόντων
ἀρχόντων πανηγυρικούς, ὡς ἑκάστῳ παρῆν δυνά-
μεως, θειάζων τὴν πανήγυριν, IV. καί τις ἐν 1
μέσῳ παρελθὼν τῶν μετρίως ἐπιεικῶν, λόγου
σύνταξιν πεποιημένος, ὡς ἐν ἐκκλησίας ἀθροί-
σματι, πλείστων ἐπιπαρόντων ποιμένων ἐν ἡσυχίᾳ
καὶ κόσμῳ τὴν ἀκρόασιν παρεχομένων, ἑνὸς εἰς
πρόσωπον τὰ πάντα ἀρίστου καὶ θεοφιλοῦς ἐπι-
σκόπου, οὗ διὰ σπουδῆς ὁ μάλιστα τῶν ἀμφὶ τὸ
Φοινίκων ἔθνος διαπρέπων ἐν Τύρῳ νεὼς φιλοτίμως
ἐπεσκεύαστο, τοιόνδε παρέσχε λόγον.

as they met together in complete harmony. Certainly, in accordance with a prophetic prediction that mystically signified beforehand what was for to come, there came together bone to bone and joint to joint, and all that the oracular utterance in dark speech truly foretold. One was the power of the divine Spirit that spread through all the members; all were of one soul, and displayed the same zeal for the faith; one hymn of praise to God came from the lips of all. Yea verily, our leaders conducted perfect ceremonies, and the consecrated priests performed the sacred rites and stately ordinances of the Church, here with psalmody and recitation of such other words as have been given us from God, there with the ministering of divine and mystic services; and the ineffable symbols of the Saviour's Passion were present. And all together, of every age, male and female, with the whole power of their mind gave honour to God the Author of their good fortune, in prayer and thanksgiving with joyful heart and soul.

Moreover every one of the Church's rulers that were present, according to his ability, delivered panegyrical orations, inspiring the assembly. IV. And a certain one of moderate parts [1] advanced into the midst, having composed a discourse; and, in the presence of very many pastors who gave it a quiet and orderly hearing as in a church assembly, he delivered the following oration, addressed personally to a single bishop who was in every respect most excellent and beloved of God, by whose zeal and enthusiasm the temple in Tyre, surpassing in splendour all others in Phoenicia, had been erected:

[1] Eusebius himself.

ΠΑΝΗΓΥΡΙΚΟΣ ΕΠΙ ΤΗΙ ΤΩΝ ΕΚΚΛΗΣΙΩΝ ΟΙΚΟΔΟΜΗΙ ΠΑΤΑΙΝΩΙ ΤΥΡΙΩΝ ΕΠΙΣΚΟΠΩΙ ΠΡΟΣΠΕΦΩΝΗΜΕΝΟΣ

"Ὦ *φίλοι θεοῦ καὶ ἱερεῖς οἱ τὸν ἅγιον ποδήρη καὶ* 2
τὸν οὐράνιον τῆς δόξης στέφανον τό τε χρῖσμα τὸ
ἔνθεον καὶ τὴν ἱερατικὴν τοῦ ἁγίου πνεύματος
στολὴν περιβεβλημένοι, σύ τε, ὦ νέον ἁγίου νεὼ
θεοῦ σεμνολόγημα, γεραιρᾷ μὲν φρονήσει παρὰ
θεοῦ τετιμημένε, νέας δὲ καὶ ἀκμαζούσης ἀρετῆς
ἔργα πολυτελῆ καὶ πράξεις ἐπιδεδειγμένε, ᾧ τὸν
ἐπὶ γῆς οἶκον αὐτὸς ὁ τὸν σύμπαντα κόσμον
περιέχων θεὸς δείμασθαι καὶ ἀνανεοῦν Χριστῷ
τῷ μονογενεῖ καὶ πρωτογενεῖ δὲ αὐτοῦ λόγῳ τῇ τε
ἁγίᾳ τούτου καὶ θεοπρεπεῖ νύμφῃ γέρας ἐξαίρετον
Ex. 35, 30 ff. *δεδώρηται, εἴτε τις νέον σε Βεσελεηλ θείας ἀρχι-* 3
1 Kings 7 f.; 2 Chr. 3 ff.; Rev. 21, 2 *τέκτονα σκηνῆς ἐθέλοι καλεῖν εἴτε Σολομῶνα*
καινῆς καὶ πολὺ κρείττονος Ἱερουσαλὴμ βασιλέα
εἴτε καὶ νέον Ζοροβαβελ τὴν πολὺ κρείττονα δόξαν
Hag. 2, 4. 9 *τῆς προτέρας τῷ νεῷ τοῦ θεοῦ περιτιθέντα, ἀλλὰ* 4
καὶ ὑμεῖς, ὦ τῆς ἱερᾶς ἀγέλης Χριστοῦ θρέμματα,
λόγων ἀγαθῶν ἑστία, σωφροσύνης παιδευτήριον
καὶ θεοσεβείας σεμνὸν καὶ θεοφιλὲς ἀκροατήριον·
πάλαι μὲν ἡμῖν τὰς παραδόξους θεοσημίας καὶ 5
τῶν τοῦ κυρίου θαυμάτων τὰς εἰς ἀνθρώπους
εὐεργεσίας διὰ θείων ἀναγνωσμάτων ἀκοῇ παρα-
δεχομένοις ὕμνους εἰς θεὸν καὶ ᾠδὰς ἀναπέμπειν
Ps. 44, 1 *ἐξῆν λέγειν παιδευομένοις '*ὁ *θεός, ἐν τοῖς ὠσὶν*
ἡμῶν ἠκούσαμεν, οἱ πατέρες ἡμῶν ἀνήγγειλαν
ἡμῖν ἔργον ὃ εἰργάσω ἐν ταῖς ἡμέραις αὐτῶν, ἐν
Ps. 136. 12 *ἡμέραις ἀρχαίαις*'· *ἀλλὰ νῦν γε οὐκέτ' ἀκοαῖς οὐδὲ* 6
λόγων φήμαις τὸν βραχίονα τὸν ὑψηλὸν τήν τε

[1] The word is used in the LXX in connexion with the

Panegyric on the building of the churches, addressed to Paulinus, bishop of the Tyrians:

" O friends of God and priests who are clothed with the holy robe[1] and the celestial crown of glory, the divine unction and the priestly garb of the Holy Spirit; and thou, O youthful pride of God's holy temple, honoured indeed by God with revered wisdom, yet noted for the choice deeds and acts of a youthful virtue that cometh to its prime, upon whom He who compasseth the whole world hath bestowed the especial honour of building His house upon earth, and restoring it for Christ His only-begotten and firstborn Word and for Christ's holy and reverend Bride—whether one should call thee a new Bezalel the architect of a divine tabernacle, or Solomon the king of a new and far goodlier Jerusalem, or even a new Zerubbabel who bestowed upon the temple of God that glory which greatly exceeded the former; and you also, ye nurslings of the sacred flock of Christ, dwelling-place of goodly words, school of sobriety, auditory of godliness grave and dear to God: Long ago, as we listened to the reading aloud of those passages of Holy Writ which told of the miraculous signs that God gave and the wondrous deeds that the Lord wrought for the service of men, we could raise hymns and songs to God and say, even as we were taught: 'We have heard with our ears, O God, our fathers have told us, what work thou didst in their days, in the days of old.' But now indeed no longer by hearing or by report do we learn of the stretched out arm and the heavenly right hand of

[1] priestly attire: *cf.* Exod. xxix. 5 τὸν χιτῶνα τὸν ποδήρη, lit. "the garment reaching to the feet."

οὐράνιον δεξιὰν τοῦ παναγάθου καὶ παμβασιλέως
ἡμῶν θεοῦ παραλαμβάνουσιν, ἔργοις δ' ὡς ἔπος
εἰπεῖν καὶ αὐτοῖς ὀφθαλμοῖς τὰ πάλαι μνήμῃ
παραδεδομένα πιστὰ καὶ ἀληθῆ καθορωμένοις, δεύ-
τερον ὕμνον ἐπινίκιον πάρεστιν ἀναμέλπειν ἐναρ-
Ps. 48, 8 γῶς τε ἀναφωνεῖν καὶ λέγειν 'καθάπερ ἠκούσαμεν,
οὕτως καὶ εἴδομεν ἐν πόλει κυρίου τῶν δυνάμεων,
ἐν πόλει τοῦ θεοῦ ἡμῶν.' ποίᾳ δὲ πόλει ἢ τῇδε 7
1 Tim. 3, 15 τῇ νεοπαγεῖ καὶ θεοτεύκτῳ; ἥτις ἐστὶν ἐκκλησία
θεοῦ ζῶντος, στῦλος καὶ ἑδραίωμα τῆς ἀληθείας,
περὶ ἧς καὶ ἄλλο τι θεῖον λόγιον ὧδέ πως εὐ-
Ps. 87, 3 αγγελίζεται 'δεδοξασμένα ἐλαλήθη περὶ σοῦ, ἡ πόλις
τοῦ θεοῦ'· ἐφ' ἣν τοῦ παναγάθου συγκροτήσαντος
ἡμᾶς θεοῦ διὰ τῆς τοῦ μονογενοῦς αὐτοῦ χάριτος,
τῶν ἀνακεκλημένων ἕκαστος ὑμνείτω μόνον οὐχὶ
Ps. 122, 1 βοῶν καὶ λέγων 'εὐφράνθην ἐπὶ τοῖς εἰρηκόσιν
Ps. 26, 8 μοι Εἰς οἶκον κυρίου πορευσόμεθα' καὶ 'κύριε,
ἠγάπησα εὐπρέπειαν οἴκου σου καὶ τόπον σκηνώ-
ματος δόξης σου,' καὶ μὴ μόνον γε ὁ καθεῖς, ἀλλὰ 8
καὶ οἱ πάντες ἀθρόως ἑνὶ πνεύματι καὶ μιᾷ ψυχῇ
Ps. 48, 1 γεραίροντες ἀνευφημῶμεν, 'μέγας κύριος' ἐπι-
λέγοντες 'καὶ αἰνετὸς σφόδρα ἐν πόλει τοῦ θεοῦ
ἡμῶν, ἐν ὄρει ἁγίῳ αὐτοῦ.' καὶ γὰρ οὖν μέγας
Baruch 3, 24 ὡς ἀληθῶς, καὶ μέγας ὁ οἶκος αὐτοῦ, ὑψηλὸς καὶ
25
Ps. 45, 2 ἐπιμήκης καὶ ὡραῖος κάλλει παρὰ τοὺς υἱοὺς τῶν
Ps. 72, 18 ἀνθρώπων· μέγας κύριος ὁ ποιῶν θαυμάσια μόνος·
Job 9, 10 μέγας ὁ ποιῶν μεγάλα καὶ ἀνεξιχνίαστα ἔνδοξά
τε καὶ ἐξαίσια, ὧν οὐκ ἔστιν ἀριθμός· μέγας ὁ
Dan. 2, 21 ἀλλοιῶν καιροὺς καὶ χρόνους, μεθιστῶν βασιλεῖς
Ps. 113, 7 καὶ καθιστῶν, ἐγείρων ἀπὸ γῆς πτωχὸν καὶ ἀπὸ
Luke 1, 52. κοπρίας ἀνιστῶν πένητα. καθεῖλεν δυνάστας ἀπὸ
53
θρόνων, καὶ ὕψωσεν ταπεινοὺς ἀπὸ γῆς· πεινῶντας

our all-gracious God and universal King; nay, by deeds, as one might say, and with our very eyes do we behold that those things committed to memory long ago are faithful and true; and so we can sing a second hymn of victory, and raise our voices aloud and say: 'As we have heard, so have we seen in the city of the Lord of hosts, in the city of our God.' And in what city, if it be not the new-made city that God hath builded, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth; of which also another divine oracle speaketh good tidings, somewhat on this manner: 'Glorious things are spoken of thee, O city of God'? To which city since the all-gracious God hath gathered us, through the grace of His Only-begotten, let each of the guests sing, yea all but shout, and say 'I was glad when they said unto me, we will go unto the house of the Lord'; and 'Lord, I have loved the beauty of thy house, and the place where thy glory dwelleth.' And let not only each one by himself, but also all together with one spirit and one soul, give honour and praise, saying: 'Great is the Lord, and highly to be praised, in the city of our God, in his holy mountain.' Yea verily, He is truly great, and great is His house, lofty and large; and more lovely in beauty than the sons of men. Great is the Lord who only doeth wondrous things. Great is He who doeth great things and past finding out; yea, glorious and marvellous things of which there is no number. Great is He who changeth the times and the seasons, removing kings and setting them up, raising up the poor from the ground, and from the dunghill setting up the needy. He hath put down princes from their thrones, and hath exalted them of low degree from the

Job 38, 15 ἐνέπλησεν ἀγαθῶν, καὶ βραχίονας ὑπερηφάνων συνέτριψεν, οὐ πιστοῖς μόνον, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἀπίστοις τῶν παλαιῶν διηγημάτων τὴν μνήμην πιστωσάμενος, ὁ θαυματουργός, ὁ μεγαλουργός, ὁ τῶν ὅλων δεσπότης, ὁ τοῦ σύμπαντος κόσμου δημιουργός, ὁ παντοκράτωρ, ὁ πανάγαθος, ὁ εἷς καὶ μόνος
Ps. 98, 1 θεός, ᾧ τὸ καινὸν ᾆσμα μέλπωμεν προσυπακούοντες
Ps. 136, 4. 17. 18. 23. 24 ‘τῷ ποιοῦντι θαυμάσια μόνῳ, ὅτι εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα τὸ ἔλεος αὐτοῦ· τῷ πατάξαντι βασιλεῖς μεγάλους καὶ ἀποκτείναντι βασιλεῖς κραταιούς, ὅτι εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα τὸ ἔλεος αὐτοῦ· ὅτι ἐν τῇ ταπεινώσει ἡμῶν ἐμνήσθη ἡμῶν καὶ ἐλυτρώσατο ἡμᾶς ἐκ τῶν ἐχθρῶν ἡμῶν.’

“Καὶ τὸν μὲν τῶν ὅλων πατέρα τούτοις ἀνευφημοῦντες μή ποτε διαλείποιμεν· τὸν δὲ τῶν ἀγαθῶν ἡμῖν δεύτερον αἴτιον, τὸν τῆς θεογνωσίας εἰσηγητήν, τὸν τῆς ἀληθοῦς εὐσεβείας διδάσκαλον, τὸν τῶν ἀσεβῶν ὀλετῆρα, τὸν τυραννοκτόνον, τὸν τοῦ βίου διορθωτήν, τὸν ἡμῶν τῶν ἀπεγνωσμένων σωτῆρα Ἰησοῦν ἀνὰ στόμα φέροντες γεραίρωμεν, ὅτι δὴ μόνος, οἷα παναγάθου πατρὸς μονώτατος ὑπάρχων πανάγαθος παῖς, γνώμῃ τῆς πατρικῆς φιλανθρωπίας τῶν ἐν φθορᾷ κάτω που κειμένων ἡμῶν εὖ μάλα προθύμως ὑποδὺς τὴν φύσιν, οἷά τις ἰατρῶν ἄριστος τῆς τῶν καμνόντων ἕνεκεν σωτηρίας ‘ὁρῇ μὲν δεινά, θιγγάνει δ’ ἀηδέων ἐπ’ ἀλλοτρίῃσί τε ξυμφορῇσιν ἰδίας καρποῦται λύπας,’ οὐ νοσοῦντας αὐτὸ μόνον οὐδ’ ἕλκεσι δεινοῖς καὶ σεσηπόσιν ἤδη τραύμασιν πιεζομένους, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἐν νεκροῖς κειμένους ἡμᾶς ἐξ αὐτῶν μυχῶν τοῦ θανάτου αὐτὸς ἑαυτῷ διεσώσατο, ὅτι

ground. The hungry he hath filled with good things, and he hath broken the arms of the proud. Since, therefore, He hath confirmed not only for the faithful but also for the faithless the record of the ancient narratives, even He, the Doer of wonders, the Doer of great things, the Lord of the universe, the Maker of the whole world, the Almighty, the All-gracious, the one and only God—let us sing to Him the new song, supplying in thought this also: 'To him who alone doeth great wonders: for his mercy endureth for ever . . . to him which smote great kings, . . . and slew mighty kings; for his mercy endureth for ever . . . for he remembered us in our low estate, . . . and hath delivered us from our adversaries.'

"And may we never cease to praise aloud in these words the Father of the universe. But as for Him who is the second cause of our good things, who brought men to the knowledge of God, the Teacher of true piety, the Destroyer of the wicked, the Slayer of tyrants, the Emender of human life, our Saviour when we were in despair, even Jesus, let us honour His name upon our lips; for He alone, as being the one only, all-gracious Son of an all-gracious Father, since the Father in His love for man so ordained it, right willingly put on the nature of us, even of those who anywhere lay low in corruption. And like some excellent physician, who, to save those who are sick, 'though he sees the ills yet touches the foul spots, and for another's misfortunes reaps suffering for himself,'[1] so He by Himself saved from the very abyss of death us, who were not merely sick or oppressed by grievous sores and wounds already putrifying, but even lying among the dead; for none

[1] Hippocrates, Περὶ φυσῶν 1.

μηδ' ἄλλῳ τῳ τῶν κατ' οὐρανὸν τοσοῦτον παρῆν ἰσχύος, ὡς τῇ τῶν τοσούτων ἀβλαβῶς διακονήσασθαι σωτηρίᾳ. μόνος δ' οὖν καὶ τῆς ἡμῶν αὐτῶν βαρυπαθοῦς φθορᾶς ἐφαψάμενος, μόνος τοὺς ἡμετέρους ἀνατλὰς πόνους, μόνος τὰ πρόστιμα
Cf. Is. 53, 4. 5 τῶν ἡμετέρων ἀσεβημάτων περιθέμενος, οὐχ ἡμιθνῆτας, ἀλλὰ καὶ πάμπαν ἐν μνήμασι καὶ
John 11, 39 τάφοις μυσαροὺς ἤδη καὶ ὀδωδότας ἀναλαβὼν πάλαι τε καὶ νῦν σπουδῇ τῇ φιλανθρώπῳ παρὰ πᾶσαν τὴν οὗτινος οὖν ἡμῶν τε αὐτῶν ἐλπίδα σῴζει τε καὶ τῶν τοῦ πατρὸς ἀγαθῶν ἀφθονίαν μεταδίδωσιν, ὁ ζωοποιός, ὁ φωταγωγός, ὁ μέγας ἡμῶν ἰατρὸς καὶ βασιλεὺς καὶ κύριος, ὁ Χριστὸς τοῦ θεοῦ. ἀλλὰ τότε μὲν ἅπαξ ἐν νυκτὶ ζοφερᾷ καὶ σκότῳ βαθεῖ δαιμόνων ἀλιτηρίων πλάνῃ καὶ θεομισῶν πνευμάτων ἐνεργείαις πᾶν τὸ τῶν ἀνθρώπων γένος κατορωρυγμένον ‹ὁρῶν› αὐτὸ μόνον
Cf. Ps. 58, 8 (LXX) ἐπιφανείς, ὡς ἂν κηροῦ διατακέντος ταῖς αὐτοῦ βολαῖς τοῦ φωτός, τὰς πολυδέτους τῶν ἀσεβημάτων ἡμῶν σειρὰς διελύσατο.

"Νῦν δ' ἐπὶ τῇ τοσαύτῃ χάριτι καὶ εὐεργεσίᾳ τοῦ μισοκάλου φθόνου καὶ φιλοπονήρου δαίμονος μόνον οὐχὶ διαρρηγνυμένου καὶ πάσας αὐτοῦ τὰς θανατοποιοὺς καθ' ἡμῶν ἐπιστρατεύοντος δυνάμεις καὶ τὰ μὲν πρῶτα κυνὸς δίχην λυττῶντος τοὺς ὀδόντας ἐπὶ τοὺς ἀφιεμένους κατ' αὐτοῦ λίθους προσαράττοντος καὶ τὸν κατὰ τῶν ἀμυνομένων θυμὸν ἐπὶ τὰ ἄψυχα βλήματα καθιέντος, τοῖς τῶν προσευκητρίων λίθοις καὶ ταῖς τῶν οἴκων ἀψύχοις ὕλαις τὴν θηριώδη μανίαν ἐπερείσαντος ἐρημίαν τε, ὥς γε δὴ αὐτὸς ἑαυτῷ ᾤετο, τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν ἀπεργασαμένου, εἶτα δὲ δεινὰ συρίγματα καὶ τὰς

other in heaven possessed such strength as to minister unscathed for the salvation of so many. He, then, it was who alone laid hold upon the grievous suffering of our corruption, alone endured our sorrows, alone took upon Himself the penalty for our wickednesses; and when we were, I will not say, half dead, but even by this time altogether foul and stinking in tombs and graves, He raised us up, and saveth us now as in the days of old, in His earnest love for man, beyond the hope of anyone, even of ourselves, and of the good things of His Father imparteth to us freely a share—He who is the Giver of life, the Enlightener, our great Physician and King and Lord, the Christ of God. Yea at that time, when He beheld [1] the whole human race lying sunk in gloomy night and darkness profound through the deceit of baneful demons and the operations of God-hating spirits, by naught save His appearing He broke asunder once for all the many-fettered chains of our wickednesses, as wax is melted by the rays of His light.

" And when at this great grace and benefaction the envy that hateth the good, even the demon that loveth the evil, was torn asunder with wrath, so to speak, and was marshalling all his death-dealing forces against us, at first raging like a dog which gnaweth with his teeth at the stones hurled at him and venteth on the lifeless missiles his fury against those who would drive him away, he directed his ferocious madness against the stones of the houses of prayer and the lifeless materials of which the buildings were composed, to work (as at least he thought within himself) the ruin of the churches; then he emitted his dread hissings and serpent-like sounds, at

[1] Supplying ὁρῶν, as Schwartz suggests.

ὀφιώδεις αὐτοῦ φωνὰς τοτὲ μὲν ἀσεβῶν τυράννων ἀπειλαῖς, τοτὲ δὲ βλασφήμοις δυσσεβῶν ἀρχόντων διατάξεσιν ἀφιέντος καὶ προσέτι τὸν αὐτοῦ θάνατον ἐξερευγομένου καὶ τοῖς ἰώδεσι καὶ ψυχοφθόροις δηλητηρίοις τὰς ἁλισκομένας πρὸς αὐτοῦ ψυχὰς φαρμάττοντος καὶ μόνον οὐχὶ νεκροῦντος ταῖς τῶν νεκρῶν εἰδώλων νεκροποιοῖς θυσίαις πάντα τε ἀνθρωπόμορφον θῆρα καὶ πάντα τρόπον ἄγριον καθ' ἡμῶν ὑποσαλεύοντος, αὖθις ἐξ ὑπαρχῆς ὁ τῆς 1
Is. 9, 6 (LXX) Josh. 5, 14 μεγάλης βουλῆς ἄγγελος, ὁ μέγας ἀρχιστράτηγος τοῦ θεοῦ, μετὰ τὴν αὐτάρκη διαγυμνασίαν ἣν οἱ μέγιστοι τῆς αὐτοῦ βασιλείας στρατιῶται διὰ τῆς πρὸς ἅπαντα ὑπομονῆς καὶ καρτερίας ἐνεδείξαντο, ἀθρόως οὕτως φανείς, τὰ μὲν ἐχθρὰ καὶ πολέμια εἰς ἀφανὲς καὶ τὸ μηθὲν κατεστήσατο, ὡς μηδὲ πώποτε ὠνομάσθαι δοκεῖν, τὰ δ' αὐτῷ φίλα καὶ οἰκεῖα δόξης ἐπέκεινα παρὰ πᾶσιν, οὐκ ἀνθρώποις μόνον, ἀλλ' ἤδη καὶ δυνάμεσιν οὐρανίοις ἡλίῳ τε καὶ σελήνῃ καὶ ἄστροις καὶ τῷ σύμπαντι οὐρανῷ τε καὶ κόσμῳ προήγαγεν, ὥστε ἤδη, ὃ μηδὲ 1
ἄλλοτέ πω, τοὺς πάντων ἀνωτάτω βασιλέας ἧς λελόγχασι παρ' αὐτοῦ τιμῆς συνῃσθημένως νεκρῶν μὲν εἰδώλων καταπτύειν προσώποις, πατεῖν δ' ἄθεσμα δαιμόνων θέσμια καὶ παλαιᾶς ἀπάτης πατροπαραδότου καταγελᾶν, ἕνα δὲ αὐτὸν μόνον θεὸν τὸν κοινὸν ἁπάντων καὶ ἑαυτῶν εὐεργέτην γνωρίζειν Χριστόν τε τοῦ θεοῦ παῖδα παμβασιλέα τῶν ὅλων ὁμολογεῖν σωτῆρά τε αὐτὸν ἐν στήλαις ἀναγορεύειν, ἀνεξαλείπτῳ μνήμῃ τὰ κατορθώματα καὶ τὰς κατὰ τῶν ἀσεβῶν αὐτοῦ νίκας μέσῃ τῇ βασιλευούσῃ τῶν ἐπὶ γῆς πόλει βασιλικοῖς χαρακτῆρσι προσεγγράφοντας, ὥστε μόνον τῶν ἐξ αἰῶνος Ἰησοῦν

one time by the threats of wicked tyrants, at another by blasphemous ordinances of impious rulers; yea further, he vomited forth the death that was his, and bewitched the souls he captured by his baneful and soul-destroying poisons, all but causing their death by his death-fraught sacrifices to dead idols, and secretly stirring up every wild beast in shape of man, and every kind of savage thing, against us. But now, now again once more the Angel of mighty counsel, the great Captain of the host of God, after that the greatest soldiers in His kingdom had given sufficient proof of their full training by their endurance and stedfastness in all things, by naught save His sudden appearing caused to vanish into nothingness whatsoever was adverse and hostile, so that it seemed never to have had even a name; howbeit, whatsoever was friendly and dear to Him, that He advanced beyond all glory in the sight of all, not only of men, but even also of the powers of heaven, the sun and moon and stars, and of the whole heaven and earth; so that now—a thing unknown heretofore—the most exalted Emperors of all, conscious of the honour which they have received from Him, spit upon the faces of dead idols, trample upon the unhallowed rites of demons, and laugh at the old deceits they inherited from their fathers: but Him who is the common Benefactor of all and of themselves they recognize as the one and only God, and confess that Christ the Son of God is sovereign King of the universe, and style Him as Saviour on monuments, inscribing in an imperishable record His righteous acts and His victories over the impious ones, in imperial characters in the midst of the city that is Empress among the cities of the world.

Χριστὸν τὸν ἡμῶν σωτῆρα καὶ πρὸς αὐτῶν τῶν ἐπὶ γῆς ἀνωτάτω οὐχ οἷα κοινὸν ἐξ ἀνθρώπων βασιλέα γενόμενον ὁμολογεῖσθαι, ἀλλ' οἷα τοῦ καθ' ὅλων θεοῦ παῖδα γνήσιον καὶ αὐτὸν θεὸν προσκυνεῖσθαι.

"Καὶ εἰκότως· τίς γὰρ τῶν πώποτε βασιλέων τοσοῦτον ἀρετῆς ἠνέγκατο, ὡς πάντων τῶν ἐπὶ γῆς ἀνθρώπων ἀκοὴν καὶ γλῶτταν ἐμπλῆσαι τῆς αὐτοῦ προσηγορίας; τίς βασιλεὺς νόμους εὐσεβεῖς οὕτω καὶ σώφρονας διαταξάμενος ἀπὸ περάτων γῆς καὶ εἰς ἄκρα τῆς ὅλης οἰκουμένης εἰς ἐπήκοον ἅπασιν ἀνθρώποις ἀναγινώσκεσθαι διαρκῶς ἐκράτυνεν; τίς ἀνημέρων ἐθνῶν ἔθη βάρβαρα καὶ ἀνήμερα τοῖς ἡμέροις αὐτοῦ καὶ φιλανθρωποτάτοις παρέλυσε νόμοις; τίς αἰῶσιν ὅλοις ὑπὸ πάντων πολεμούμενος τὴν ὑπὲρ ἄνθρωπον ἀρετὴν ἐπεδείξατο, ὡς ἀνθεῖν ὁσημέραι καὶ νεάζειν διὰ παντὸς τοῦ βίου; τίς ἔθνος τὸ μηδὲ ἀκουσθὲν ἐξ αἰῶνος οὐκ ἐν γωνίᾳ ποι γῆς λεληθός, ἀλλὰ καθ' ὅλης τῆς ὑφ' ἥλιον ἱδρύσατο; τίς εὐσεβείας ὅπλοις οὕτως ἐφράξατο τοὺς στρατιώτας, ὡς ἀδάμαντος τὰς ψυχὰς κραταιοτέρους ἐν τοῖς πρὸς τοὺς ἀντιπάλους ἀγῶσιν διαφαίνεσθαι; τίς βασιλέων ἐς τοσοῦτον κρατεῖ καὶ στρατηγεῖ μετὰ θάνατον καὶ τρόπαια κατ' ἐχθρῶν ἵστησιν καὶ πάντα τόπον καὶ χώραν καὶ πόλιν, Ἑλλάδα τε καὶ βάρβαρον, βασιλικῶν οἴκων αὐτοῦ πληροῖ καὶ θείων ναῶν ἀφιερώμασιν, οἷα τάδε τὰ τοῦδε τοῦ νεὼ περικαλλῆ κοσμήματά τε καὶ ἀναθήματα; ἃ καὶ αὐτὰ σεμνὰ μὲν ὡς ἀληθῶς καὶ μεγάλα ἐκπλήξεώς τε καὶ θαύματος ἄξια καὶ οἷα τῆς τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν βασιλείας ἐναργῆ δείγματα, ὅτι καὶ νῦν αὐτὸς εἶπεν καὶ ἐγενήθησαν, αὐτὸς ἐνετείλατο καὶ ἐκ-

Ps. 33, 9 = 148, 5 (LXX)

Thus Jesus Christ our Saviour, alone of those who have ever been, is acknowledged, even by the most exalted on the earth, not as an ordinary king taken from among men, but is worshipped as the very Son of the God of the universe, and as Himself God.

"And rightly so. For what king ever attained to so much virtue as to fill the ears and tongues of all mankind upon earth with his name? What king, when he had laid down laws so good and wise, was powerful enough to cause them to be published from the ends of the earth and to the bounds of the whole world in the hearing of all mankind? Who abolished the barbarous and uncivilized customs of uncivilized nations by his civilized and most humane laws? Who, when warred on by all men for whole ages, gave such proof of superhuman might as to flourish daily and remain young throughout his entire life? Who established a nation never even heard of since time began, which now lieth not hidden in some obscure corner of the earth but extendeth wherever the sun shineth? Who so defended his soldiers with the weapons of piety that their souls proved harder than adamant when they contended with their adversaries? Which of the kings exerciseth so great a sway, taketh the field after death, triumpheth over enemies, and filleth every place and district and city, both Greek and barbarian, with votive offerings of his royal houses and divine temples, such as the fair ornaments and offerings that we see in this temple? Truly venerable and great are these same things, worthy of amazement and wonder, and in themselves clear proofs of the sovereignty of our Saviour: for even now He spake, and they were made; He

τίσθησαν (τί γὰρ καὶ ἔμελλεν τοῦ παμβασιλέως καὶ πανηγεμόνος καὶ αὐτοῦ θεοῦ λόγου ἐνστήσεσθαι τῷ νεύματι;), σχολῆς τε λόγων οἰκείας εἰς ἀκριβῆ θεωρίαν τε καὶ ἑρμηνείαν τυγχάνει δεόμενα· οὐ μὴν ὅσα καὶ οἷα τὰ τῆς τῶν πεπονηκότων προθυμίας κέκριται παρ' αὐτῷ τῷ θεολογουμένῳ τὸν ἔμψυχον πάντων ὑμῶν καθορῶντι ναὸν καὶ τὸν ἐκ
1 Pet. 2, 5. 7 ζώντων λίθων καὶ βεβηκότων οἶκον ἐποπτεύοντι
Eph. 2, 20. 21 εὖ καὶ ἀσφαλῶς ἱδρυμένον ἐπὶ τῷ θεμελίῳ τῶν ἀποστόλων καὶ προφητῶν, ὄντος ἀκρογωνιαίου
1 Pet. 2, 5. 7 λίθου αὐτοῦ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, ὃν ἀπεδοκίμασαν μὲν οὐχ οἱ τῆς παλαιᾶς καὶ μηκέτ' οὔσης ἐκείνης μόνον, ἀλλὰ καὶ τῆς εἰς ἔτι νῦν τῶν πολλῶν ἀνθρώπων οἰκοδομῆς κακοὶ κακῶν ὄντες ἀρχιτέκτονες, δοκιμάσας δ' ὁ πατὴρ καὶ τότε καὶ νῦν εἰς κεφαλὴν γωνίας τῆσδε τῆς κοινῆς ἡμῶν ἐκκλησίας ἱδρύσατο. τοῦτον δὴ οὖν τὸν ἐξ ὑμῶν αὐτῶν ἐπεσκευασμένον
Cf. 1 Cor. 3, 16 ζῶντος θεοῦ ζῶντα ναόν, τὸ μέγιστον καὶ ἀληθεῖ λόγῳ θεοπρεπὲς ἱερεῖόν φημι, οὗ τὰ ἐνδοτάτω ἄδυτα τοῖς πολλοῖς ἀθεώρητα καὶ ὄντως ἅγια καὶ τῶν ἁγίων ἅγια, τίς ἂν ἐποπτεύσας ἐξειπεῖν τολμήσειεν; τίς δὲ κἂν εἰσκύψαι περιβόλων ἱερῶν
Heb. 4, 14 εἴσω δυνατός, ὅτι μὴ μόνος ὁ μέγας τῶν ὅλων ἀρχιερεύς, ᾧ μόνῳ θέμις πάσης λογικῆς ψυχῆς τὰ ἀπόρρητα διερευνᾶσθαι; τάχα δὲ καὶ ἄλλῳ δευτερεύειν μετὰ τοῦτον ἐνὶ μόνῳ τῶν ἴσων ἐφικτόν, τῷδε τῷ προκαθημένῳ τῆσδε τῆς στρατιᾶς ἡγεμόνι,
Ibid. ὃν αὐτὸς ὁ πρῶτος καὶ μέγας ἀρχιερεὺς δευτερείοις τῶν τῇδε ἱερείων τιμήσας, ποιμένα τῆς ὑμετέρας

commanded, and they were created: for what could resist the will of the universal King and Ruler and the Word of God Himself? Such things would require a discourse of their own, were one carefully to examine and expound them at leisure. Yet indeed the zeal of those who have laboured is not so great or so noble in the judgement of Him whom we address as God, when He looketh into the lively temple which we all compose, and vieweth the house formed of living and firmly set stones, well and securely grounded upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner-stone; which stone the master-builders rejected, not only of that old building which is no more, but also of that building which compriseth the more part of mankind to the present day, evil workmen as they were of evil things; but the Father approved it, and then and now builded it into the head of the corner of this our common Church. This living temple, then, of a living God formed out of ourselves, I mean the greatest sanctuary and truly reverend, whose innermost shrine may not be seen by the common eye, for verily holy it is and a holy of holies—who that viewed it would dare to describe? Who is able even to peer into the temple buildings that surround it, save only the great High Priest of the universe, to whom alone it is permitted to search the hidden mysteries of every rational soul? But perchance it is possible for another also, and for one alone among equals, to take the second place after Him, namely, for the commander who presideth over this army, whom the first and great High Priest Himself hath honoured with the second place in the priestly ministries of this place, the pastor of your

ἐνθέου ποίμνης κλήρῳ καὶ κρίσει τοῦ πατρὸς τὸν ὑμέτερον λαχόντα λαόν, ὡς ἂν θεραπευτὴν καὶ ὑποφήτην αὐτὸς ἑαυτοῦ κατετάξατο, τὸν νέον
Heb. 7, 3 Ἀαρὼν ἢ Μελχισεδεκ ἀφωμοιωμένον τῷ υἱῷ τοῦ θεοῦ μένοντά τε καὶ πρὸς αὐτοῦ τηρούμενον εἰς τὸ διηνεκὲς ταῖς κοιναῖς ἁπάντων ἡμῶν εὐχαῖς. τούτῳ δὴ οὖν ἐξέστω μόνῳ μετὰ τὸν πρῶτον καὶ 2
μέγιστον ἀρχιερέα, εἰ μὴ τὰ πρῶτα, τὰ δεύτερα γοῦν ὅμως ὁρᾶν τε καὶ ἐπισκοπεῖν τῆς ἐνδοτάτω τῶν ὑμετέρων ψυχῶν θεωρίας, πείρᾳ μὲν καὶ χρόνου μήκει ἕκαστον ἀκριβῶς ἐξητακότι σπουδῇ τε τῇ αὐτοῦ καὶ ἐπιμελείᾳ τοὺς πάντας ὑμᾶς ἐν κόσμῳ καὶ λόγῳ τῷ κατ' εὐσέβειαν διατεθειμένῳ δυνατῷ τε ὄντι μᾶλλον ἁπάντων, ὧν αὐτὸς σὺν
Heb. 13, 17 θείᾳ δυνάμει κατηρτίσατο, τούτων τοῖς ἔργοις
(inexact quotation) ἐφαμίλλως ἀποδοῦναι τοὺς λόγους.
Heb. 4, 14 "Ὁ μὲν οὖν πρῶτος καὶ μέγας ἡμῶν ἀρχιερεὺς 2
John 5, 19 ὅσα βλέπει τὸν πατέρα ποιοῦντα, ταῦτα, φησίν, ὁμοίως καὶ ὁ υἱὸς ποιεῖ· ὃ δὲ καὶ αὐτὸς ὡς ἂν ἐπὶ διδάσκαλον τὸν πρῶτον καθαροῖς νοὸς ὄμμασιν
Heb. 12, 2 ἀφορῶν, ὅσα βλέπει ποιοῦντα, ὡς ἂν ἀρχετύποις χρώμενος παραδείγμασιν, τούτων τὰς εἰκόνας, ὡς ἔνι μάλιστα δυνατόν, εἰς τὸ ὁμοιότατον δημιουργῶν
Ex. 31, 2. 3 = 35, 30. 31 ἀπειργάσατο, οὐδὲν ἐκείνῳ καταλιπὼν τῷ Βεσελεηλ, ὃν αὐτὸς ὁ θεὸς πνεύματος ἐμπλήσας σοφίας καὶ συνέσεως καὶ τῆς ἄλλης ἐντέχνου καὶ ἐπιστημονικῆς γνώσεως, τῆς τῶν οὐρανίων τύπων
Cf. Heb. 8, 5 διὰ συμβόλων ναοῦ κατασκευῆς δημιουργὸν ἀνακέκληται. ταύτῃ δ' οὖν καὶ ὅδε Χριστὸν ὅλον, 2
τὸν λόγον, τὴν σοφίαν, τὸ φῶς ἐν τῇ αὐτὸς αὐτοῦ ἀγαλματοφορῶν ψυχῇ, οὐδ' ἔστιν εἰπεῖν οἵᾳ σὺν

divine flock who was allotted and adjudged your people by the Father, as if He Himself had appointed him His attendant and interpreter, the new Aaron or Melchizedek, made like unto the Son of God, abiding and kept by Him continually by the common prayers of you all. To him, therefore, let it be permitted alone, after the first and greatest High Priest, if not in the first at any rate in the second place, to behold and inspect the inmost recesses of your souls; since through experience and length of time[1] he hath proved each one accurately, and by his zealous care he hath disposed you all in a godly order and doctrine; and he best of all is able to give such an account as will match his deeds, of those things that he himself hath wrought by the power of God.

"Now our first and great High Priest saith that whatsoever things he seeth the Father doing, these the Son also doeth in like manner. And this one also, looking unto the first as unto a master with the pure eyes of the mind, whatsoever he seeth Him doing, these he useth as patterns and archetypes, and by his workmanship hath wrought their images, as far as in him lieth, into the closest likeness; thus in no wise doth he come behind that Bezalel, whom God Himself filled with the spirit of wisdom and understanding and with the knowledge as well of crafts and sciences, and called him to be the workman that should construct the temple of heavenly types in symbolic fashion. After this manner, then, this man also, bearing in his own soul the image of Christ entire, the Word, the Wisdom, the Light,

[1] These words seem to imply that Paulinus, though young, had been bishop for some time.

μεγαλοφροσύνῃ πλουσίᾳ τε καὶ ἁπλήστῳ διανοίας χειρὶ καὶ σὺν οἵᾳ πάντων ὑμῶν φιλοτιμίᾳ, τῇ τῶν εἰσφορῶν μεγαλοψυχίᾳ τῆς αὐτῆς αὐτῷ προθέσεως κατὰ μηδένα τρόπον ἀπολειφθῆναι φιλονεικότερον μεγαλοφρονουμένων, τὸν μεγαλοπρεπῆ τόνδε θεοῦ τοῦ ὑψίστου νεὼν τῷ τοῦ κρείττονος παραδείγματι, ὡς ἂν ὁρώμενον μὴ ὁρωμένου, τὴν φύσιν ἐμφερῆ συνεστήσατο, χῶρον μὲν τόνδε, ὅ τι καὶ ἄξιον εἰπεῖν πρῶτον ἁπάντων, πάσης οὐ καθαρᾶς ὕλης ἐχθρῶν ἐπιβουλαῖς κατακεχωσμένον οὐ παριδὼν οὐδὲ τῇ τῶν αἰτίων παραχωρήσας κακίᾳ, ἐξὸν ἐφ' ἕτερον ἐλθόντα, μυρίων ἄλλων εὐπορουμένων τῇ πόλει, ῥᾳστώνην εὕρασθαι τοῦ πόνου καὶ πραγμάτων ἀπηλλάχθαι. ὃ δὲ πρῶτον αὐτὸν ἐπὶ τὸ ἔργον ἐγείρας, εἶτα δὲ τὸν σύμπαντα λαὸν προθυμίᾳ ῥώσας καὶ μίαν ἐξ ἁπάντων μεγάλην χεῖρα συναγαγών, πρῶτον ἆθλον ἠγωνίζετο, αὐτὴν δὴ μάλιστα τὴν ὑπὸ τῶν ἐχθρῶν πεπολιορκημένην, αὐτὴν τὴν προπονήσασαν καὶ τοὺς αὐτοὺς ἡμῖν καὶ πρὸ ἡμῶν διωγμοὺς ὑπομείνασαν, τὴν μητρὸς δίκην τῶν τέκνων ἐρημωθεῖσαν ἐκκλησίαν συναπολαῦσαι δεῖν οἰόμενος τῆς τοῦ παναγάθου μεγαλο-
Heb. 13, 20 δωρεᾶς. ἐπειδὴ γὰρ τοὺς παῖδας αὖθις ὁ μέγας ποιμήν, τοὺς θῆρας καὶ τοὺς λύκους καὶ πᾶν
Ps. 58, 6 ἀπηνὲς καὶ ἄγριον γένος ἀποσοβήσας καὶ τὰς μύλας τῶν λεόντων, ᾗ φησιν τὰ θεῖα λόγια, συντρίψας, ἐπὶ ταὐτὸν αὖθις συνελθεῖν ἠξίωσεν, δικαιότατα καὶ τῆς ποίμνης τὴν μάνδραν ἀνίστη
Ps. 8, 2 τοῦ καταισχῦναι ἐχθρὸν καὶ ἐκδικητὴν καὶ ὡς

hath formed this magnificent temple of God most high, answering in its nature to the pattern of that which is better, even as the visible answereth to the invisible; nor could one describe with what noble-mindedness, with what a liberal hand—whose will to give was insatiable—and with what emulation on the part of you all, ye nobly vied with one another by the large-heartedness of your contributions in no respect to come behind him in this selfsame purpose. And this place—which thing also is worthy to be mentioned first of all—which by the evil designs of our enemies had been covered with all kinds of vile rubbish, he did not overlook nor surrender to the malice of those who did this, though he might have lighted upon another spot (for the city supplied countless other sites), and thus found relief from toil and freedom from trouble. Nay, he first of all aroused himself to the work; then by his zeal he strengthened the whole people, and gathering together all into one great body, entered upon the first contest; for he deemed that she especially who had been destroyed by the enemy, she who had been aforetime afflicted and had endured the same persecutions as we and before us, even the church who like a mother had been bereft of her children, should have her share in the enjoyment of the bounty of the all-gracious God. For since once more the great shepherd, having driven away the wild beasts and the wolves and every kind of cruel and savage creature, and having broken the great teeth of the lions, as the divine oracles say, once more had vouchsafed to bring His sons together, it was most meet that he should also set up the fold of the flock, that he might put to shame the enemy and the avenger,

ἂν ἔλεγχον ταῖς θεομάχοις τῶν ἀσεβῶν προαγάγοι τόλμαις. καὶ νῦν οἳ μὲν οὐκ εἰσὶν οἱ θεομισεῖς, ὅτι μηδὲ ἦσαν, ἐς βραχὺ δὲ ταράξαντες καὶ ταραχθέντες, εἶθ' ὑποσχόντες τιμωρίαν οὐ μεμπτὴν τῇ δίκῃ, ἑαυτοὺς καὶ φίλους καὶ οἴκους ἄρδην ἀναστάτους κατέστησαν, ὡς τὰς πάλαι στήλαις ἱεραῖς καταγραφείσας προρρήσεις ἔργοις πιστὰς ὁμολογεῖσθαι, δι' ὧν τά τε ἄλλα ὁ θεῖος ἐπαληθεύει λόγος, ἀτὰρ καὶ τάδε περὶ αὐτῶν ἀποφαινόμενος

Ps. 37, 14. 15 ' ῥομφαίαν ἐσπάσαντο οἱ ἁμαρτωλοί, ἐνέτειναν τόξον αὐτῶν τοῦ καταβαλεῖν πτωχὸν καὶ πένητα, τοῦ σφάξαι τοὺς εὐθεῖς τῇ καρδίᾳ· ἡ ῥομφαία αὐτῶν εἰσέλθοι εἰς τὰς καρδίας αὐτῶν καὶ τὰ τόξα αὐτῶν συν-

Ps. 9, 6. (LXX) τριβείη ' καὶ πάλιν ' ἀπώλετο τὸ μνημόσυνον αὐτῶν μετ' ἤχου,' καὶ ' τὸ ὄνομα αὐτῶν ἐξήλειπται εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα καὶ εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα τοῦ αἰῶνος,' ὅτι δὴ καὶ ἐν

Ps. 18. 41 κακοῖς γενόμενοι ' ἐκέκραξαν, καὶ οὐκ ἦν ὁ σώζων· πρὸς κύριον, καὶ οὐκ εἰσήκουσεν αὐτῶν, ἀλλ' οἳ μὲν

Ps. 20, 8 (LXX) ' συνεποδίσθησαν καὶ ἔπεσαν, ἡμεῖς δὲ ἀνέστημεν καὶ ἀνωρθώθημεν '· καὶ τό γ' ἐν τούτοις προαναφωνοῦν

Ps. 73, 20 ' κύριε, ἐν τῇ πόλει σου τὴν εἰκόνα αὐτῶν ἐξουδενώσεις ' ἀληθὲς ὑπ' ὀφθαλμοῖς πάντων ἀναπέφανται.

"'Αλλ' οἳ μὲν γιγάντων τρόπον θεομαχίαν ἐνστησάμενοι τοιαύτην εἰλήχασιν τὴν τοῦ βίου καταστροφήν· τῆς δ' ἐρήμου καὶ παρ' ἀνθρώποις ἀπεγνωσμένης τοιαῦτα οἷα τὰ ὁρώμενα τῆς κατὰ θεὸν ὑπομονῆς τὰ τέλη, ὡς ἀναφωνεῖν αὐτῇ τὴν προ-

Is. 35, 1-4. 6. 7 (LXX) φητείαν 'Ησαΐου ταῦτα ' εὐφράνθητι, ἔρημος διψῶσα, ἀγαλλιάσθω ἔρημος καὶ ἀνθείτω ὡς κρίνον· καὶ ἐξανθήσει καὶ ἀγαλλιάσεται τὰ ἔρημα. ἰσχύσατε,

and openly rebuke the evil deeds of impious men fighting against God. And now these men, the haters of God, are no more, for they never were; but after troubling and being troubled for a little while, then they paid to Justice no contemptible penalty, accomplishing the utter overthrow of themselves, their friends and houses; so that the predictions which long ago had been inscribed on sacred records are confessedly proved trustworthy by the facts, in which, among other true things that the divine word speaketh, this also it declareth concerning them: 'The wicked have drawn out the sword, and have bent their bow; to cast down the poor and needy, to slay the upright in heart: may their sword enter into their own hearts, and may their bows be broken'; and again: 'Their memorial is perished with a sound,' and 'Their name hath been blotted out for ever and for ever and ever'; for verily when they also were in trouble 'They cried, and there was none to save: unto the Lord, and he did not hear them'; yea, they indeed 'had their feet bound together and fell, but we rose and stood upright'; and that which was predicted in these words, 'Lord, in thy city thou shalt set at naught their image,' hath been shown to be true before the eyes of all.

"But they verily, engaging like giants in battle against God, have thus brought their lives to a miserable end; while the issue of that godly endurance on the part of her who was deserted and rejected by men was such as we have seen; so that the prophecy of Isaiah calleth aloud unto her in these words: 'Be glad, O thirsty desert; let the desert rejoice and blossom as a lily; and the desert places shall blossom forth and rejoice. . . . Be strong, ye hands that

χεῖρες ἀνειμέναι καὶ γόνατα παραλελυμένα· παρακαλέσατε, ὀλιγόψυχοι τῇ διανοίᾳ, ἰσχύσατε, μὴ φοβεῖσθε. ἰδοὺ ὁ θεὸς ἡμῶν κρίσιν ἀνταποδίδωσιν καὶ ἀνταποδώσει, αὐτὸς ἥξει καὶ σώσει ἡμᾶς· ὅτι, φησίν, ἐρράγη ἐν τῇ ἐρήμῳ ὕδωρ, καὶ φάραγξ ἐν γῇ διψώσῃ, καὶ ἡ ἄνυδρος ἔσται εἰς ἕλη, καὶ εἰς τὴν διψῶσαν γῆν πηγὴ ὕδατος ἔσται.'

"Καὶ τάδε μὲν λόγοις πάλαι προθεσπισθέντα βίβλοις ἱεραῖς καταβέβλητο, τά γε μὴν ἔργα οὐκέτ' ἀκοαῖς, ἀλλ' ἔργοις ἡμῖν παραδέδοται. ἡ ἔρημος ἥδε, ἡ ἄνυδρος, ἡ χήρα καὶ ἀπερίστατος, ἧς ὡς
Ps. 74, 5-7 ἐν δρυμῷ ξύλων ἀξίναις ἐξέκοψαν τὰς πύλας, ἐπὶ τὸ αὐτὸ ἐν πέλυκι καὶ λαξευτηρίῳ συνέτριψαν αὐτήν, ἧς καὶ τὰς βίβλους διαφθείραντες ἐνεπύρισαν ἐν πυρὶ τὸ ἁγιαστήριον τοῦ θεοῦ, εἰς τὴν γῆν ἐβεβήλωσαν τὸ σκήνωμα τοῦ ὀνόματος αὐτοῦ,
Ps. 80, 12. 13 ἣν ἐτρύγησαν πάντες οἱ παραπορευόμενοι τὴν ὁδὸν προκαθελόντες αὐτῆς τοὺς φραγμούς, ἣν ἐλυμήνατο ὗς ἐκ δρυμοῦ καὶ μονιὸς ἄγριος κατενεμήσατο, Χριστοῦ δυνάμει παραδόξῳ νῦν, ὅτε θέλει αὐτός,
Is. 35 (see above) γέγονεν ὡς κρίνον· ἐπεὶ καὶ τότε αὐτοῦ νεύματι,
Heb. 12, 6 ὡς ἂν προκηδομένου πατρός, ἐπαιδεύετο· ὃν γὰρ ἀγαπᾷ κύριος, παιδεύει, μαστιγοῖ δὲ πάντα υἱὸν ὃν παραδέχεται. μέτρῳ δῆτα κατὰ τὸ δέον ἐπιστραφεῖσα, αὖθις ἄνωθεν ἐξ ὑπαρχῆς ἀγαλλιᾶν
Is. 35 (see above) προστάττεται ἐξανθεῖ τε ὡς κρίνον καὶ τῆς ἐνθέου εὐωδίας εἰς πάντας ἀποπνεῖ ἀνθρώπους, ὅτι, φησίν, ἐρράγη ἐν τῇ ἐρήμῳ ὕδωρ τὸ νᾶμα τῆς θείας τοῦ
Tit. 3, 5 σωτηρίου λουτροῦ παλιγγενεσίας, καὶ νῦν γέγονεν
Is. 35 (see above) ἡ πρὸ μικροῦ ἔρημος εἰς ἕλη, καὶ εἰς τὴν διψῶσαν γῆν ἔβρυσεν πηγὴ ὕδατος ζῶντος, ἴσχυσάν τε ὡς

hang down, and ye palsied knees. Be of good courage, ye feeble-hearted, be strong, fear not; behold, our God recompenseth judgement, and will recompense; he will come and save you. . . . For,' saith he, 'water broke out in the desert, and a stream in thirsty ground. And the waterless place shall become marsh-meadows, and upon the thirsty ground shall be a fountain of water.'

"Now these things, foretold long ago, had been recorded in the sacred books in words; howbeit the deeds have come down to us no longer by hearsay, but in actual fact. This desert, this waterless place, this widowed and defenceless one, whose gates they cut down with axes as in a thicket of trees; whom together with hatchet and hammer they brake down; whose books also they destroyed and set on fire the sanctuary of God; they profaned the dwelling-place of His name to the ground; whom all they which pass by the way did pluck, having before broken down her fences, whom the boar out of the wood did ravage and on whom the solitary wild beast did feed: now by the miraculous power of Christ, when He willeth it, hath become as a lily. For at that time also by His command, as of a careful father, she was chastened. For whom the Lord loveth He chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom He receiveth. So then, after being corrected in due measure, once more again she is bidden anew to rejoice, and she blossoms forth as a lily and breathes upon all men of her divine, sweet odour; for, saith he, water broke out in the desert, the streams of the divine regeneration that the washing of salvation bestoweth; and that which a short time before was desert hath now become marsh-meadows, and a fountain of living water hath burst forth upon the thirsty ground; and

ἀληθῶς χεῖρες αἱ τὸ πρὶν ἀνειμέναι, καὶ τῆς τῶν χειρῶν ἰσχύος ἔργα τάδε τὰ μεγάλα καὶ ἐναργῆ δείγματα· ἀλλὰ καὶ τὰ πάλαι σεσαθρωμένα καὶ παρειμένα γόνατα τὰς οἰκείας ἀπολαβόντα βάσεις, τὴν ὁδὸν τῆς θεογνωσίας εὐθυποροῦντα βαδίζει, ἐπὶ τὴν οἰκείαν ποίμνην τοῦ παναγάθου ποιμένος σπεύδοντα. εἰ δὲ καὶ ταῖς τῶν τυράννων ἀπειλαῖς τὰς ψυχάς τινες ἀπενάρκησαν, οὐδὲ τούτους ὁ σωτήριος ἀθεραπεύτους παροράᾳ λόγος, εὖ μάλα δὲ καὶ αὐτοὺς ἰώμενος ἐπὶ τὴν τοῦ θείου παράκλησιν παρορμᾷ λέγων· ‘παρακαλέσατε, οἱ ὀλιγόψυχοι τῇ διανοίᾳ, ἰσχύσατε, μὴ φοβεῖσθε.’

John 10, 16

Isai. 35 (see above)

“Τούτων δεῖν ἀπολαῦσαι τὴν διὰ θεὸν γενομένην ἔρημον τοῦ λόγου προαγορεύοντος, ἐπακούσας ὀξείᾳ διανοίας ἀκοῇ οὗτος ὁ νέος ἡμῶν καὶ καλὸς Ζοροβαβελ μετὰ τὴν πικρὰν ἐκείνην αἰχμαλωσίαν καὶ τὸ βδέλυγμα τῆς ἐρημώσεως, οὐ παριδὼν τὸ πτῶμα νεκρόν, πρώτιστα πάντων παρακλήσεσιν καὶ λιταῖς ἵλεω τὸν πατέρα μετὰ τῆς κοινῆς ὑμῶν ἁπάντων ὁμοφροσύνης καταστησάμενος καὶ τὸν μόνον νεκρῶν ζωοποιὸν σύμμαχον παραλαβὼν καὶ συνεργόν, τὴν πεσοῦσαν ἐξήγειρεν προαποκαθάρας καὶ προθεραπεύσας τῶν κακῶν, καὶ στολὴν οὐ τὴν ἐξ ἀρχαίου παλαιὰν αὐτῇ περιτέθεικεν, ἀλλ’ ὁποίαν αὖθις παρὰ τῶν θείων χρησμῶν ἐξεπαιδεύετο, σαφῶς ὧδε λεγόντων ‘καὶ ἔσται ἡ δόξα τοῦ οἴκου τούτου ἡ ἐσχάτη ὑπὲρ τὴν προτέραν.’

Matt. 24, 15

Cf. Rom. 4, 17

Hag. 2, 9

“Ταύτῃ δ’ οὖν πολὺ μείζονα τὸν χῶρον ἅπαντα περιλαβών, τὸν μὲν ἔξωθεν ὠχυροῦτο περίβολον

[1] Hag. 2. 2 ff.

in very truth hands that before hung down have become strong, of the strength of which hands these great and manifest works are tokens. Yea, and the knees that long ago were diseased and relaxed have recovered their natural movement, and go straight forward upon the way of the knowledge of God, hasting to the flock of the all-gracious Shepherd, their true home. But if through the threats of the tyrants the souls of some have waxed numb, not even these doth the saving Word pass by as incurable, but right well He healeth them also and urgeth them on towards the divine encouragement, saying: 'Be of good courage, ye feeble-hearted, be strong, fear not.'

"The word which prophesied that she whom God had made desert was to enjoy these blessings, this our new and goodly Zerubbabel[1] heard with the sharp hearing of his mind, after that bitter captivity and the abomination of desolation; nor did he pass by the corpse as dead, but first of all with entreaties and prayer he propitiated the Father with the common consent of you all; and taking as his Ally and Fellow-worker Him who alone can quicken the dead, he raised up her that had fallen, having first cleansed and healed her of her ills; and he clothed her with a garment, not the old one that she had from the beginning, but with such a one as he was once more instructed by the divine oracles, which thus clearly say: 'And the latter glory of this house shall be greater than the former.'

"Thus, then, the whole area that he enclosed was much larger.[2] The outer enclosure he made strong

[2] *i.e.* than that occupied by the previous church. The description here given (§§ 37-45) is the earliest account that we possess of the structure and furniture of a Christian church.

τῷ τοῦ παντὸς περιτειχίσματι, ὡς ἂν ἀσφαλέστατον εἴη τοῦ παντὸς ἕρκος· πρόπυλον δὲ μέγα καὶ εἰς ὕψος ἐπηρμένον πρὸς αὐτὰς ἀνίσχοντος ἡλίου ἀκτῖνας ἀναπετάσας, ἤδη καὶ τοῖς μακρὰν περιβόλων ἔξω ἱερῶν ἑστῶσιν τῆς τῶν ἔνδον παρέσχεν ἀφθονίαν θέας, μόνον οὐχὶ καὶ τῶν ἀλλοτρίων τῆς πίστεως ἐπὶ τὰς πρώτας εἰσόδους ἐπιστρέφων τὰς ὄψεις, ὡς ἂν μὴ παρατρέχοι τις ὅτι μὴ τὴν ψυχὴν κατανυγεὶς πρότερον μνήμῃ τῆς τε πρὶν ἐρημίας καὶ τῆς νῦν παραδόξου θαυματουργίας, ὑφ' ἧς τάχα καὶ ἑλκυσθήσεσθαι κατανυγέντα καὶ πρὸς αὐτῆς τῆς ὄψεως ἐπὶ τὴν εἴσοδον προτραπήσεσθαι ἤλπισεν. εἴσω δὲ παρελθόντι πυλῶν οὐκ εὐθὺς ἐφῆκεν ἀνάγνοις καὶ ἀνίπτοις ποσὶν τῶν ἔνδον ἐπιβαίνειν ἁγίων, διαλαβὼν δὲ πλεῖστον ὅσον τὸ μεταξὺ τοῦ τε νεὼ καὶ τῶν πρώτων εἰσόδων, τέτταρσι μὲν πέριξ ἐγκαρσίοις κατεκόσμησεν στοαῖς, εἰς τετράγωνόν τι σχῆμα περιφράξας τὸν τόπον, κίοσι πανταχόθεν ἐπαιρομέναις· ὧν τὰ μέσα διαφράγμασι τοῖς ἀπὸ ξύλου δικτυωτοῖς ἐς τὸ σύμμετρον ἤκουσι μήκους περικλείσας, μέσον αἴθριον ἠφίει εἰς τὴν τοῦ οὐρανοῦ κάτοψιν, λαμπρὸν καὶ ταῖς τοῦ φωτὸς ἀκτῖσιν ἀνειμένον ἀέρα παρέχων. ἱερῶν δ' ἐνταῦθα καθαρσίων ἐτίθει σύμβολα, κρήνας ἄντικρυς εἰς πρόσωπον ἐπισκευάζων τοῦ νεὼ πολλῷ τῷ χεύματι τοῦ νάματος τοῖς περιβόλων ἱερῶν ἐπὶ τὰ ἔσω προϊοῦσιν τὴν ἀπόρυψιν παρεχομένας. καὶ πρώτη μὲν εἰσιόντων αὕτη διατριβή, κόσμον ὁμοῦ καὶ ἀγλαΐαν τῷ παντὶ τοῖς τε τῶν πρώτων εἰσαγωγῶν ἔτι δεομένοις κατάλληλον τὴν μονὴν παρεχομένη.

with the wall surrounding the whole, so that it might be a most secure defence thereof; while he spread out a porch, great and raised aloft, towards the rays of the rising sun, and even to those standing far outside the sacred precincts supplied no scanty view of that which is within; thus, one might say, turning the gaze, even of strangers to the faith, towards the first entrances, so that none might hastily pass by without first having his soul mightily struck by the memory of the former desolation and the wondrous miracle of to-day; struck by which he hoped that perchance such a one would also be impelled, and have his steps turned forwards by the bare sight, towards the entrance. Now he hath not permitted him that passeth inside the gates to tread forthwith with unhallowed and unwashen feet upon the holy places within; but hath left a space exceeding large between the temple and the first entrances, and adorned it all around with four transverse colonnades, fencing the place into a kind of quadrangular figure, with pillars raised on every side, and filling the spaces between them with wooden barriers of lattice-work rising to a convenient height; and in the midst thereof he hath left an open space where men can see the sky, thus providing it with air bright and open to the rays of light. And here he hath placed symbols of sacred purifications, by erecting fountains right opposite the temple, whose copious streams of flowing water supply cleansing to those who are advancing within the sacred precincts. And this is the first stopping-place for those that enter; supplying at once adornment and splendour to the whole, and a place of sojourn suited to such as are still in need of their first instructions.

"'Αλλὰ γὰρ καὶ τὴν τούτων θέαν παραμειψάμενος, πλείοσιν ἔτι μᾶλλον τοῖς ἐνδοτάτω προπύλοις τὰς ἐπὶ τὸν νεὼν παρόδους ἀναπεπταμένας ἐποίει, ὑπὸ μὲν ταῖς ἡλίου βολαῖς αὖθις τρεῖς πύλας ὑφ' ἓν καταθεὶς πλευρόν, ὧν πολὺ τὰς παρ' ἑκάτερα μεγέθει τε καὶ πλάτει πλεονεκτεῖν τῇ μέσῃ χαρισάμενος παραπήγμασί τε χαλκοῦ σιδηροδέτοις καὶ ποικίλμασιν ἀναγλύφοις διαφερόντως αὐτὴν φαιδρύνας, ὡς ἂν βασιλίδι ταύτῃ τοὺς δορυφόρους ὑπέζευξεν· τὸν αὐτὸν δὲ τρόπον καὶ ταῖς παρ' ἑκάτερα τοῦ παντὸς νεὼ στοαῖς τὸν τῶν προπύλων ἀριθμὸν διατάξας, ἄνωθεν ἐπὶ ταύταις ἄλλῳ πλείονι φωτὶ διαφόρους τὰς ἐπὶ τὸν οἶκον εἰσβολὰς ἐπενόει, ταῖς ἀπὸ ξύλου λεπτουργίαις καὶ τὸν περὶ αὐτὰς κόσμον καταποικίλλων.

"Τὸν δὲ βασίλειον οἶκον πλουσιωτέραις ἤδη καὶ δαψιλέσι ταῖς ὕλαις ὠχύρου, ἀφθόνῳ φιλοτιμίᾳ τῶν ἀναλωμάτων χρώμενος· ἔνθα μοι δοκῶ περιττὸν εἶναι τοῦ δομήματος μήκη τε καὶ πλάτη καταγράφειν, τὰ φαιδρὰ ταῦτα κάλλη καὶ τὰ λόγου κρείττονα μεγέθη τήν τε τῶν ἔργων ἀποστίλβουσαν ὄψιν τῷ λόγῳ διεξιόντι ὕψη τε τὰ οὐρανομήκη καὶ τὰς τούτων ὑπερκειμένας πολυτελεῖς τοῦ Λιβάνου κέδρους, ὧν οὐδὲ τὸ θεῖον λόγιον τὴν μνήμην ἀπεσιώπησεν 'εὐφρανθήσεται' φάσκον 'τὰ ξύλα τοῦ κυρίου, καὶ αἱ κέδροι τοῦ Λιβάνου ἃς ἐφύτευσεν.'

Ps. 104, 16 (with variant)

"Τί με δεῖ νῦν τῆς πανσόφου καὶ ἀρχιτεκτονικῆς διατάξεως καὶ τοῦ κάλλους τῆς ἐφ' ἑκάστου μέρους ὑπερβολῆς ἀκριβολογεῖσθαι τὴν ὑφήγησιν, ὅτε τῆς ὄψεως τὴν διὰ τῶν ὤτων ἀποκλείει μάθησιν ἡ

"But verily, passing by this spectacle, he hath thrown open passages to the temple by means of innermost porches in still greater numbers, once again under the rays of the sun placing three gates on one side, upon the middle one of which he hath bestowed a height and size that far surpasseth the two on either side, and hath singled it out for special adornment with bronze fastenings bound with iron and varied embossed work, making the others a bodyguard, as it were, beneath it as their queen. And after the same manner he hath also ordered the number of the porches for the colonnades on either side of the entire temple; and above them hath devised as well separate openings into the building to give still further light; and for these also he hath wrought a varied adornment with delicately-carved wood.

"Now as to the royal house,[1] he hath builded it of abundant and still richer materials, eagerly desiring to spare no expenses. I deem it superfluous for me to describe here the length and breadth of the edifice, to recount in full the brilliant beauty, the magnitude no words can express, and the dazzling appearance of the workmanship, yea, and the loftiness that reacheth heaven, and the costly cedars of Lebanon that are placed above; the mention of which even the divine oracle doth not pass over in silence, saying: 'The trees of the Lord shall be glad, even the cedars of Lebanon which he hath planted.'

"Why need I now speak more particularly of the perfect wisdom and art with which the building hath been ordered, and the surpassing beauty of every part, when the witness of the eyes leaveth no place for the instruction that cometh through the ears?

[1] Or, as we should say, "basilica."

μαρτυρία; ἀλλὰ γὰρ ὧδε καὶ τὸν νεὼν ἐπιτελέσας θρόνοις τε τοῖς ἀνωτάτω εἰς τὴν τῶν προέδρων τιμὴν καὶ προσέτι βάθροις ἐν τάξει τοῖς καθ' ὅλου κατὰ τὸ πρέπον κοσμήσας ἐφ' ἅπασίν τε τὸ τῶν ἁγίων ἅγιον θυσιαστήριον ἐν μέσῳ θείς, αὖθις καὶ τάδε, ὡς ἂν εἴη τοῖς πολλοῖς ἄβατα, τοῖς ἀπὸ ξύλου περιέφραττε δικτύοις εἰς ἄκρον ἐντέχνου λεπτουργίας ἐξησκημένοις, ὡς θαυμάσιον τοῖς ὁρῶσιν παρέχειν τὴν θέαν.

"'Αλλ' οὐδὲ τοὔδαφος ἄρα εἰς ἀμελὲς ἔκειτο αὐτῷ· καὶ τόδε γοῦν λίθῳ μαρμάρῳ εὖ μάλα κόσμῳ παντὶ λαμπρύνας, ἤδη λοιπὸν καὶ ἐπὶ τὰ ἐκτὸς τοῦ νεὼ μετῆει, ἐξέδρας καὶ οἴκους τοὺς παρ' ἑκάτερα μεγίστους ἐπισκευάζων ἐντέχνως ἐπὶ ταὐτὸν εἰς πλευρὰ τῷ βασιλείῳ συνεζευγμένους καὶ ταῖς ἐπὶ τὸν μέσον οἶκον εἰσβολαῖς ἡνωμένους· ἃ καὶ αὐτὰ τοῖς ἔτι καθάρσεως καὶ περιρραντηρίων τῶν διὰ
John 3, 5 ὕδατος καὶ ἁγίου πνεύματος ἐγχρήζουσιν ὁ εἰρηνικώτατος ἡμῶν Σολομὼν ὁ τὸν νεὼν τοῦ θεοῦ δειμάμενος ἀπειργάζετο, ὡς μηκέτι λόγον, ἀλλ' ἔργον γεγονέναι τὴν ἄνω λεχθεῖσαν προφητείαν· γέγονεν
Hag. 2, 9 γὰρ καὶ νῦν ὡς ἀληθῶς ἐστιν ἡ δόξα τοῦ οἴκου τούτου ἡ ἐσχάτη ὑπὲρ τὴν προτέραν.

"Εδει γὰρ καὶ ἀκόλουθον ἦν τοῦ ποιμένος αὐτῆς καὶ δεσπότου ἅπαξ τὸν ὑπὲρ αὐτῆς θάνατον καταδεξαμένου καὶ μετὰ τὸ πάθος, ὃ χάριν αὐτῆς
Cf. Phil. 3, 21; Heb. 2, 9 ῥυπῶν ἐνεδύσατο σῶμα ἐπὶ τὸ λαμπρὸν καὶ ἔνδοξον μεταβεβληκότος αὐτήν τε σάρκα τὴν λυθεῖ-
Cf. 1 Cor. 15, 42 σαν ἐκ φθορᾶς εἰς ἀφθαρσίαν ἀγαγόντος, καὶ τήνδε

[1] *i.e.* the basilica was provided with additional rooms, for various ecclesiastical purposes, which adjoined the main building, or, as we should say, the church proper.

Nevertheless, having thus completed the temple he adorned it with thrones, very lofty, to do honour unto the presidents, and likewise with benches arranged in order throughout in a convenient manner; and after all these he hath placed in the midst the holy of holies even the altar, and again surrounded this part also, that the multitude might not tread thereon, with a fence of wooden lattice-work, delicately wrought with the craftsman's utmost skill, so as to present a marvellous spectacle to those that see it.

"Nor did even the pavement, as one might suppose, escape his care. This also, for example, he hath made exceeding brilliant with every kind of fair marble; and then, finally, passing on outside the temple as well, he hath constructed chambers and buildings on either side, very large, the which he hath skilfully joined together to the sides of the royal house,[1] and united with the openings into the central building. These also were wrought by our most peaceful Solomon, who builded the temple of God, for those who still have need of cleansing and sprinkling with water and the Holy Spirit, insomuch that the aforesaid prophecy[2] is no longer a word only, but is become a fact. For the latter glory of this house hath become, and in truth even now is, greater than the former.

"For it was meet and right that, as her Shepherd and Lord had suffered once for all death on her behalf, and after the Passion had changed the foul body with which He had clothed Himself for her sake into His splendid and glorious body, and brought the very flesh that was dissolved from corruption into incor-

[2] § 36.

ὁμοίως τῶν τοῦ σωτῆρος οἰκονομιῶν ἐπαύρασθαι, ὅτι δὴ καὶ τούτων πολὺ κρείττονα λαβοῦσα
Cf. Heb. 11, 39. 40 παρ' αὐτοῦ τὴν ἐπαγγελίαν, τὴν πολὺ μείζονα δόξαν τῆς παλιγγενεσίας ἐν ἀφθάρτου σώματος ἀναστάσει μετὰ φωτὸς ἀγγέλων χορείας ἐν τοῖς οὐρανῶν ἐπέκεινα τοῦ θεοῦ βασιλείοις σὺν αὐτῷ Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ τῷ πανευεργέτῃ καὶ σωτῆρι διαρκῶς ἐπὶ τοὺς ἑξῆς αἰῶνας ἀπολαβεῖν ποθεῖ. ἀλλὰ γὰρ τέως ἐπὶ τοῦ παρόντος τούτοις ἡ πάλαι χήρα καὶ ἔρημος θεοῦ χάριτι περιβληθεῖσα τοῖς ἄνθεσιν
Is. 35, 1 γέγονεν ἀληθῶς ὡς κρίνον, ᾗ φησιν ἡ προφητεία, καὶ τὴν νυμφικὴν ἀναλαβοῦσα στολὴν τόν τε τῆς εὐπρεπείας περιθεμένη στέφανον οἷα χορεύειν διὰ Ἡσαΐου παιδεύεται τὰ χαριστήρια τῷ βασιλεῖ θεῷ φωναῖς εὐφήμοις γεραίρουσα, αὐτῆς λεγούσης
Is. 61, 10-11 ἐπακούωμεν 'ἀγαλλιάσθω ἡ ψυχή μου ἐπὶ τῷ κυρίῳ· ἐνέδυσεν γάρ με ἱμάτιον σωτηρίου καὶ χιτῶνα εὐφροσύνης· περιέθηκέν μοι ὡς νυμφίῳ μίτραν, καὶ ὡς νύμφην κατεκόσμησέν με κόσμῳ· καὶ ὡς γῆν αὔξουσαν τὸ ἄνθος αὐτῆς, καὶ ὡς κῆπος τὰ σπέρματα αὐτοῦ ἀνατελεῖ, οὕτως κύριος κύριος ἀνέτειλεν δικαιοσύνην καὶ ἀγαλλίαμα ἐνώπιον πάντων τῶν ἐθνῶν.'

"Τούτοις μὲν οὖν αὕτη χορεύει· οἷοις δὲ καὶ ὁ νυμφίος, λόγος ὁ οὐράνιος, αὐτὸς Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς
Is. 54, 4. 6-8 αὐτὴν ἀμείβεται, ἄκουε λέγοντος κυρίου 'μὴ φοβοῦ ὅτι κατῃσχύνθης μηδὲ ἐντραπῇς ὅτι ὠνειδίσθης· ὅτι αἰσχύνην αἰώνιον ἐπιλήσῃ καὶ ὄνειδος τῆς

ruption, she also likewise should enjoy the fruits of the dispensations of the Saviour. For verily having received from Him a promise of much better things than even these, she longeth to receive as her due, lastingly and for the ages that are to come, the much greater glory of the new birth in the resurrection of an incorruptible body, in the company of the choir of the angels of light in the kingdoms of God beyond the heavens, with Christ Jesus Himself her supreme Benefactor and Saviour. But meanwhile in the present time she who hath long been a widow and deserted hath been robed by the grace of God with these blossoms, and is become in truth as a lily, as saith the prophecy ; and having received again the garb of a bride and put on the garland of beauty, she is taught by Isaiah to dance, as it were, presenting her thank-offering to the glory of God the King in words of praise. Let us listen to her as she saith : ' Let my soul rejoice in the Lord ; for he hath clothed me with the garment of salvation and the cloke of gladness, he hath put a chaplet upon me as a bridegroom, and hath adorned me with adornment as a bride. And as the earth that maketh her flower to grow, and as the garden causeth the things that are sown in it to spring forth ; so the Lord, the Lord, will cause righteousness and rejoicing to spring forth before all the nations.'

" With these words, then, she danceth. But with what words the Bridegroom also, even the heavenly Word, Jesus Christ Himself, answereth her, hear the Lord as He saith : ' Fear not for that thou hast been put to shame ; neither dread for that thou hast been put to reproach : for thou shalt forget thy everlasting shame, and the reproach of thy widowhood

χηρείας σου οὐ μὴ μνησθήσῃ, οὐχ ὡς γυναῖκα ἐγκαταλελειμμένην καὶ ὀλιγόψυχον κέκληκέν σε κύριος οὐδ' ὡς γυναῖκα ἐκ νεότητος μεμισημένην. εἶπεν ὁ θεός σου· χρόνον μικρὸν ἐγκατέλιπόν σε, καὶ ἐν ἐλέῳ μεγάλῳ ἐλεήσω σε· ἐν θυμῷ μικρῷ ἀπέστρεψα τὸ πρόσωπόν μου ἀπὸ σοῦ, καὶ ἐν ἐλέῳ αἰωνίῳ ἐλεήσω σε· εἶπεν ὁ ῥυσάμενός σε κύριος.

Is. 51, 17. 18. 22. 23; 52, 1. 2

ἐξεγείρου, ἐξεγείρου, ἡ πιοῦσα ἐκ χειρὸς κυρίου τὸ ποτήριον τοῦ θυμοῦ αὐτοῦ· τὸ ποτήριον γὰρ τῆς πτώσεως, τὸ κόνδυ τοῦ θυμοῦ μου, ἐξέπιες καὶ ἐξεκένωσας. καὶ οὐκ ἦν ὁ παρακαλῶν σε ἀπὸ πάντων τῶν τέκνων σου ὧν ἔτεκες, καὶ οὐκ ἦν ὁ ἀντιλαμβανόμενος τῆς χειρός σου. ἰδοὺ εἴληφα ἐκ τῆς χειρός σου τὸ ποτήριον τῆς πτώσεως, τὸ κόνδυ τοῦ θυμοῦ μου, καὶ οὐ προσθήσεις ἔτι πιεῖν αὐτό· καὶ δώσω αὐτὸ εἰς τὰς χεῖρας τῶν ἀδικησάντων σε καὶ τῶν ταπεινωσάντων σε. ἐξεγείρου, ἐξεγείρου, ἔνδυσαι τὴν ἰσχύν, ἔνδυσαι τὴν δόξαν σου· ἐκτίναξαι τὸν χοῦν καὶ ἀνάστηθι. κάθισον,

Is. 49, 18-21

ἔκλυσαι τὸν δεσμὸν τοῦ τραχήλου σου. ἆρον κύκλῳ τοὺς ὀφθαλμούς σου καὶ ἴδε συνηγμένα τὰ τέκνα σου· ἰδοὺ συνήχθησαν καὶ ἦλθον πρός σε· ζῶ ἐγώ, λέγει κύριος, ὅτι πάντας αὐτοὺς ὡς κόσμον ἐνδύσῃ καὶ περιθήσῃ αὐτοὺς ὡς κόσμον νύμφης· ὅτι τὰ ἔρημά σου καὶ τὰ διεφθαρμένα καὶ τὰ καταπεπτωκότα νῦν στενοχωρήσει ἀπὸ τῶν κατοικούντων σε, καὶ μακρυνθήσονται ἀπὸ σοῦ οἱ καταπίνοντές σε. ἐροῦσιν γὰρ εἰς τὰ ὦτά σου οἱ υἱοί σου οὓς ἀπολώλεκας 'στενός μοι ὁ τόπος, ποίησόν μοι τόπον ἵνα κατοικήσω,' καὶ ἐρεῖς ἐν τῇ καρδίᾳ σου 'τίς ἐγέννησέν μοι τούτους; ἐγὼ δὲ ἄτεκνος καὶ χήρα τούτους δὲ τίς ἐξέθρεψέν

shalt thou remember no more. . . . Not as a wife forsaken and faint-hearted hath the Lord called thee, nor as a wife hated from her youth, saith thy God. For a little time I forsook thee ; and with great mercy I will have mercy on thee. In a little wrath I hid my face from thee, and with everlasting mercy I will have mercy on thee, saith the Lord who delivered thee. Awake, awake, . . . thou who hast drunk at the hand of the Lord the cup of his fury ; for the cup of staggering, the bowl of fury, thou hast drunk and drained it. And there was none to comfort thee among all thy sons whom thou hast brought forth ; and there was none to take thee by the hand. . . . Behold I have taken out of thine hand the cup of staggering, the bowl of my fury ; and thou shalt no more drink it again : and I will put it into the hands of them that did thee wrong and of them that humbled thee. . . . Awake, awake, put on strength, . . . put on thy glory. . . . Shake off the dust and arise. Sit thee down . . . loose the band from thy neck. Lift up thine eyes round about, and behold thy children gathered together. Behold they were gathered together and came to thee. As I live, saith the Lord, thou shalt clothe thee with them all as with an ornament, and gird thyself with them as with the ornament of a bride. For thy desolate and destroyed and ruined places shall now be too strait by reason of them that inhabit thee, and they that swallow thee up shall be far away from thee. For thy sons whom thou hast lost shall say in thy ears, ' the place is too strait for me : give place to me that I may dwell.' And thou shalt say in thine heart, ' who hath begotten me these ? I am childless and a widow, but as for these, who hath brought me them

μοι; ἐγὼ δὲ κατελείφθην μόνη, οὗτοι δέ μοι ποῦ ἦσαν;'

"Ταῦτα Ἡσαΐας προεθέσπισεν, ταῦτα πρόπαλαι περὶ ἡμῶν ἐν ἱεραῖς βίβλοις καταβέβλητο, χρὴν δέ που τούτων τὴν ἀψεύδειαν ἤδη ποτὲ ἔργοις παραλαβεῖν. ἀλλὰ γὰρ τοιαῦτα τοῦ νυμφίου λόγου πρὸς τὴν ἑαυτοῦ νύμφην τὴν ἱερὰν καὶ ἁγίαν ἐκκλησιαν ἐπιφωνοῦντος, εἰκότως ὁ νυμφοστόλος ὅδε
Is. 35, 1 αὐτήν, τὴν ἔρημον, τὴν πτῶμα κειμένην, τὴν παρὰ ἀνθρώποις ἀνέλπιδα, ταῖς κοιναῖς ἁπάντων ἡμῶν εὐχαῖς χεῖρας τὰς ὑμῶν αὐτῶν ὀρέξας ἐξήγειρεν
Is. 52, 1 καὶ ἐξανέστησεν θεοῦ τοῦ παμβασιλέως νεύματι καὶ τῆς Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ δυνάμεως ἐπιφανείᾳ τοιαύτην τε ἀναστήσας κατεστήσατο, οἵαν ἐκ τῆς τῶν ἱερῶν χρησμῶν καταγραφῆς ἐδιδάσκετο.

"Θαῦμα μὲν οὖν μέγιστον τοῦτο καὶ πέρα πάσης ἐκπλήξεως, μάλιστα τοῖς ἐπὶ μόνῃ τῇ τῶν ἔξωθεν φαντασίᾳ τὸν νοῦν προσανέχουσιν· θαυμάτων δὲ θαυμασιώτερα τά τε ἀρχέτυπα καὶ τούτων τὰ πρωτότυπα νοητὰ καὶ θεοπρεπῆ παραδείγματα, τὰ τῆς ἐνθέου φημὶ καὶ λογικῆς ἐν ψυχαῖς οἰκοδομῆς ἀνα-
Gen. 1, 26 νεώματα· ἣν αὐτὸς ὁ θεόπαις κατ' εἰκόνα τὴν αὐτὸς αὐτοῦ δημιουργήσας πάντῃ τε καὶ κατὰ πάντα τὸ θεοείκελον δεδωρημένος, ἄφθαρτον φύσιν, ἀσώματον, λογικήν, πάσης γεώδους ὕλης ἀλλοτρίαν, αὐτονοερὰν οὐσίαν, ἅπαξ τὸ πρῶτον ἐκ τοῦ μὴ ὄντος εἰς τὸ εἶναι συστησάμενος, νύμφην ἁγίαν καὶ νεὼν πανίερον ἑαυτῷ τε καὶ τῷ πατρὶ κατ-

---

[1] Paulinus is here described as the friend of the Bridegroom (Christ) who assists the Bride (the Church).

[2] Eusebius means that wonderful as the restoration of the

up? I was left alone, but these, where had I them?'

"These things Isaiah prophesied, these things had of old been recorded concerning us in sacred books; but it was necessary that somehow we should come to learn their truthfulness at some time by facts. Moreover, since the Bridegroom, even the Word, thus addresseth His Bride, the sacred and Holy Church, fittingly did this paranymph [1] stretch out your hands in the common prayers of you all, and awake and raise up her who was desolate, who lay like a corpse, of whom men despaired, by the will of God the universal King and the manifestation of the power of Jesus Christ; and having raised he restored her to be such as he learnt from the record of the sacred oracles.

"A mighty wonder truly is this, and surpassing all amazement, especially in the eyes of such as take heed only to the appearance of outward things. But more wonderful than wonders are the archetypes, the rational prototypes of these things, and their divine models,[2] I mean the renewal of the God-given, spiritual edifice in our souls. This edifice the Son of God Himself created in His own image, and everywhere and in all things hath bestowed upon it the divine likeness, an incorruptible nature, an essence incorporeal, spiritual, a stranger to all earthly matter and endowed with intelligence of its own; once for all at the first He formed it into being from that which was not, and hath made it a holy bride and an all-sacred temple for Himself and the Father. And this

church is, more wonderful is the restoration of the soul, inasmuch as the spiritual is the archetype or prototype of the material.

εἰργάσατο· ὃ καὶ σαφῶς αὐτὸς ὁμολογῶν ἐκφαίνει,
2 Cor. 6, 16 λέγων ‘ἐνοικήσω ἐν αὐτοῖς καὶ ἐμπεριπατήσω, καὶ
ἔσομαι αὐτῶν θεὸς καὶ αὐτοὶ ἔσονταί μοι λαός.’
καὶ τοιαύτη μὲν ἡ τελεία καὶ κεκαθαρμένη ψυχή,
ἀρχῆθεν οὕτω γεγενημένη, οἷα τὸν οὐράνιον λόγον
ἀγαλματοφορεῖν.

“‘Ἀλλὰ γὰρ φθόνῳ καὶ ζήλῳ τοῦ φιλοπονήρου 57
δαίμονος φιλοπαθὴς καὶ φιλοπόνηρος ἐξ αὐτ-
εξουσίου αἱρέσεως γενομένη, ὑπαναχωρήσαντος
αὐτῆς τοῦ θείου ὡς ἂν ἔρημος προστάτου, εὐάλωτος
καὶ εἰς ἐπιβουλὴν εὐχερὴς τοῖς ἐκ μακροῦ δια-
φθονουμένοις ἀπελήλεγκται, ταῖς τε τῶν ἀορά-
των ἐχθρῶν καὶ νοητῶν πολεμίων ἐλεπόλεσι καὶ
μηχαναῖς καταβληθεῖσα, πτῶμα ἐξαίσιον κατα-
Luke 21, 6 πέπτωκεν, ὡς ὅσον οὐδ’ ἐπὶ λίθῳ λίθον τῆς ἀρετῆς
ἑστῶτα ἐν αὐτῇ διαμεῖναι, ὅλην δὲ δι’ ὅλου χαμαὶ
κεῖσθαι νεκράν, τῶν περὶ θεοῦ φυσικῶν ἐννοιῶν
πάμπαν ἀπεστερημένην. πεπτωκυῖαν δῆτα αὐτὴν 58
Gen. 1, 27 ἐκείνην τὴν κατ’ εἰκόνα θεοῦ κατασκευασθεῖσαν
Ps. 80, 13 ἐλυμήνατο οὐχ ὗς οὗτος ὁ ἐκ δρυμοῦ τοῦ παρ’
ἡμῖν ὁρατοῦ, ἀλλά τις φθοροποιὸς δαίμων καὶ θῆρες
ἄγριοι νοητοί, οἳ καὶ τοῖς πάθεσιν οἷα πεπυρακτω-
Eph. 6, 16 μένοις τῆς σφῶν κακίας βέλεσιν αὐτὴν ἐξυφάψαντες,
(inexact quotation) ἐνεπύρισαν ἐν πυρὶ τὸ θεῖον ὄντως ἁγιαστήριον
Ps. 74, 7 τοῦ θεοῦ εἰς τὴν γῆν τε ἐβεβήλωσαν τὸ σκήνωμα
τοῦ ὀνόματος αὐτοῦ, εἶτα πολλῷ τῷ προσχώματι
τὴν ἀθλίαν κατορύξαντες, εἰς ἀνέλπιστον πάσης
περιέτρεψαν σωτηρίας.

“‘Αλλ’ ὅ γε κηδεμὼν αὐτῆς λόγος ὁ θεοφεγγὴς 59
καὶ σωτήριος τὴν κατ’ ἀξίαν δίκην τῶν ἁμαρτη-
μάτων ὑποσχοῦσαν αὖθις ἐξ ὑπαρχῆς ἀνελάμβανεν,
πατρὸς παναγάθου φιλανθρωπίᾳ πειθόμενος. αὐτὰς 60

also He Himself clearly showeth, when He thus confesseth : ' I will dwell in them, and walk in them ; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.' Such then, is the perfect and purified soul, thus begotten from the beginning so as to bear the image of the heavenly Word.

" But when through the envy and jealousy of the demon which loveth evil she became of her own free choice a lover of that which is sensual and evil, and the Deity departed from her, leaving her bereft of a protector, she fell an easy capture and prey to the snares of those who long had envied her ; and, laid low by the engines and machines of her invisible enemies and spiritual foes, she fell a tremendous fall, so that not even one stone upon another of her virtue remained standing in her ; nay, she lay her full length upon the ground, absolutely dead, altogether deprived of her inborn thoughts concerning God. Yea, verily, as she lay fallen there, she who was made in the image of God, it was not that boar out of the wood which we can see that ravaged her, but some death-dealing demon and spiritual wild beasts, who also have inflamed her with their passions as with fiery darts of their own wickedness, and have set the truly divine sanctuary of God on fire, and have profaned the dwelling-place of His name to the ground ; then they buried the hapless one in a great heap of earth, and brought her to a state bereft of all hope of salvation.

" But her Guardian, the Word, the divinely-bright and saving One, when she had paid the just penalty for her sins, once more again restored her, hearkening to the loving-kindness of an all-gracious Father.

δὴ οὖν πρώτας τὰς τῶν ἀνωτάτω βασιλευόντων ψυχὰς προελόμενος, τῶν μὲν δυσσεβῶν καὶ ὀλεθρίων πάντων αὐτῶν τε τῶν δεινῶν καὶ θεομισῶν τυράννων τὴν οἰκουμένην ἅπασαν δι' αὐτῶν τῶν θεοφιλεστάτων ἐκαθήρατο· εἶτα δὲ τοὺς αὐτῷ γνωρίμους ἄνδρας, τοὺς πάλαι διὰ βίου ἱερωμένους αὐτῷ, κρύβδην γε μὴν ὡς ἐν κακῶν χειμῶνι πρὸς τῆς αὐτοῦ σκέπης καλυπτομένους, εἰς φανερὸν ἀγαγὼν καὶ ταῖς τοῦ πατρὸς μεγαλοδωρεαῖς ἐπαξίως τιμήσας, αὖθις καὶ διὰ τούτων τὰς μικρῷ πρόσθεν ἐρρυπωμένας ψυχὰς ὕλης τε παντοίας καὶ χώματος ἀσεβῶν ἐπιταγμάτων συμπεφορημένας ὄρυξι καὶ δικέλλαις ταῖς πληκτικαῖς τῶν μαθημάτων διδασκαλίαις ἐξεκάθηρέν τε καὶ ἀπέσμηξεν, λαμπρόν τε καὶ διαυγῆ τῆς πάντων 61
ὑμῶν διανοίας τὸν χῶρον ἀπειργασμένος, ἐνταῦθα λοιπὸν τῷ πανσόφῳ καὶ θεοφιλεῖ τῷδε παραδέδωκεν ἡγεμόνι· ὃς τά τε ἄλλα κριτικὸς καὶ ἐπιλογιστικὸς τυγχάνων τήν ‹τε› τῶν αὐτῷ κεκληρωμένων ψυχῶν εὖ διαγινώσκων καὶ φυλοκρινῶν διάνοιαν,
Cf. 1 Cor. 3, 12 ἐκ πρώτης ὡς εἰπεῖν ἡμέρας οἰκοδομῶν οὔπω καὶ εἰς δεῦρο πέπαυται, τοτὲ μὲν διαυγῆ τὸν χρυσόν, τοτὲ δὲ δόκιμον καὶ καθαρὸν τὸ ἀργύριον καὶ τοὺς τιμίους καὶ πολυτελεῖς λίθους ἐν πᾶσιν ὑμῖν ἁρμόττων, ὡς ἱερὰν αὖθις καὶ μυστικὴν ἔργοις τοῖς εἰς ὑμᾶς ἀποπληροῦν προφητείαν, δι' ἧς εἴρηται 62
Is. 54, 11-14 ‘ἰδοὺ ἐγὼ ἑτοιμάζω σοι ἄνθρακα τὸν λίθον σου καὶ τὰ θεμέλιά σου σάπφειρον καὶ τὰς ἐπάλξεις σου ἴασπιν καὶ τὰς πύλας σου λίθους κρυστάλλου καὶ τὸν περίβολόν σου λίθους ἐκλεκτοὺς καὶ πάντας τοὺς υἱούς σου διδακτοὺς θεοῦ καὶ ἐν πολλῇ εἰρήνῃ τὰ τέκνα σου· καὶ ἐν δικαιοσύνῃ οἰκοδομηθήσῃ.’

First, then, choosing unto Himself the souls of the supreme Emperors, by means of these men most dearly beloved of God He cleansed the whole world of all the wicked and baneful persons and of the cruel God-hating tyrants themselves. And then those men that were His disciples, who all their life long had been consecrated to Him, yet secretly concealed, as in a storm of evils, by His sheltering care, these He brought out openly and honoured worthily with the great gifts of His Father's bounty. And by their means He once more purified and cleansed with pickaxes and mattocks, namely, the penetrating teachings of His instruction, those souls which a short time before had been befouled and overlaid with every sort of matter and rubbish contained in impious decrees; and when He had made bright and clear the place of the understanding of all of you, He then for the future consigned it to this all-wise and God-beloved ruler. He, discerning and prudent as he is in all else, distinguisheth also and discerneth the understanding of the souls committed to his charge; and from the first day, so to speak, even unto now he hath never ceased to build, and among you all to fit into its place, at one time the radiant gold, at another the approved and purified silver and the precious and costly stones; so as once more to fulfil in his deeds to you-ward the sacred and mystic prophecy, in which it hath been said: 'Behold I prepare for thee thy stone of carbuncle, and thy foundations of sapphire, and thy battlements of jasper, and thy gates of crystals, and thy wall of choice stones, and all thy sons taught of God, and in great peace thy children: and in righteousness shalt thou be built.'

"Δικαιοσύνῃ δῆτα οἰκοδομῶν, κατ' ἀξίαν τοῦ 6
παντὸς λαοῦ διήρει τὰς δυνάμεις, οἷς μὲν τὸν
ἔξωθεν αὐτὸ μόνον περιφράττων περίβολον, τὴν
ἁπλανῆ πίστιν περιτειχίσας (πολὺς δὲ ὁ τοιοῦτος
καὶ μέγας λεώς, οὐδὲν κρεῖττον φέρειν οἰκοδόμημα
διαρκῶν), οἷς δὲ τὰς ἐπὶ τὸν οἶκον ἐπιτρέπων εἰσ-
όδους, θυραυλεῖν καὶ ποδηγεῖν τοὺς εἰσιόντας κατα-
τάττων, οὐκ ἀπεικότως τοῦ νεὼ πρόπυλα νε-
νομισμένους, ἄλλους δὲ πρώτοις τοῖς ἔξωθεν
ἀμφὶ τὴν αὐλὴν ἐκ τετραγώνου κίοσιν ὑπεστήριζεν,
ταῖς πρώταις τῶν τεττάρων εὐαγγελίων τοῦ
γράμματος προσβολαῖς ἐμβιβάζων· τοὺς δ' ἤδη
ἀμφὶ τὸν βασίλειον οἶκον ἑκατέρωσε παραζεύγνυσιν,
ἔτι μὲν κατηχουμένους καὶ ἐν αὐξῇ καὶ προκοπῇ
καθεστῶτας, οὐ μὴν πόρρω που καὶ μακρὰν τῆς
τῶν ἐνδοτάτω θεοπτίας τῶν πιστῶν διεζευγ-
μένους. ἐκ δὴ τούτων τὰς ἀκηράτους ψυχὰς θείῳ 6
λουτρῷ χρυσοῦ δίκην ἀποσμηχθείσας παραλαβών,
κἀνταῦθα τοὺς μὲν κίοσιν τῶν ἐξωτάτω πολὺ
κρείττοσιν ἐκ τῶν ἐνδοτάτω μυστικῶν τῆς γραφῆς
δογμάτων ὑποστηρίζει, τοῖς δὲ πρὸς τὸ φῶς
ἀνοίγμασιν καταυγάζει, προπύλῳ μὲν ἑνὶ μεγίστῳ 6
τῆς τοῦ παμβασιλέως ἑνὸς καὶ μόνου θεοῦ δοξο-
λογίας τὸν πάντα νεὼν κατακοσμῶν, Χριστοῦ
δὲ καὶ ἁγίου πνεύματος παρ' ἑκάτερα τῆς τοῦ
πατρὸς αὐθεντίας τὰς δευτέρας αὐγὰς τοῦ φωτὸς
παρασχόμενος· τῶν τε λοιπῶν διὰ τοῦ παντὸς
οἴκου ἄφθονον καὶ πολὺ διάφορον τῆς καθ' ἕκαστον
ἀληθείας τὸ σαφὲς καὶ φωτεινὸν ἐνδεικνύμενος,
1 Pet. 2, 5 πάντῃ δὲ καὶ πανταχόθεν τοὺς ζῶντας καὶ βε-

[1] §§ 63-68 contain a comparison of the material church with the spiritual temple (those who worship in it).

" Building verily in righteousness,[1] he duly divided the whole people according to their several abilities ; with some he fenced the outer enclosure and this alone, surrounding it with a wall of unerring faith (and this was the great multitude of the people who were unable to support a mightier structure) ; to others he entrusted the entrances to the house, setting them to haunt the doors and guide the steps of those entering, wherefore they have not unnaturally been reckoned as gateways of the temple ; others he supported with the first outer pillars that are about the quadrangular courtyard, bringing them to their first acquaintance with the letter of the four Gospels. Others he joineth closely to the royal house on either side, still indeed under instruction and in the stage of progressing and advancing, yet not far off nor greatly separated from the faithful who possess the divine vision of that which is innermost. Taking from the number of these last the pure souls that have been cleansed like gold by the divine washing, he then supporteth some of them with pillars much greater than the outermost, from the innermost mystic teachings of the Scriptures, while others he illumineth with apertures towards the light. The whole temple he adorneth with a single, mighty gateway, even the praise of the one and only God, the universal King ; and on either side of the Father's sovereign power he provideth the secondary beams of the light of Christ and the Holy Spirit. As to the rest, throughout the whole house he showeth in an abundant and much varied manner the clearness and splendour of the truth that is in each one, in that everywhere and from every source he hath included the living and firmly set and

βηκότας καὶ εὐπαγεῖς τῶν ψυχῶν λίθους ἐγκρίνας, τὸν μέγαν καὶ βασιλικὸν ἐξ ἁπάντων οἶκον ἐπισκευάζεται λαμπρὸν καὶ φωτὸς ἔμπλεω τά τε ἔνδοθεν καὶ τὰ ἐκτός, ὅτι μὴ ψυχὴ μόνον καὶ διάνοια, καὶ τὸ σῶμα δὲ αὐτοῖς ἁγνείας καὶ σωφροσύνης πολυανθεῖ κόσμῳ κατηγλάϊστο.

66 "'Ενεισιν δ' ἐν τῷδε τῷ ἱερῷ καὶ θρόνοι βάθρα τε μυρία καὶ καθιστήρια, ἐν ὅσαις ψυχαῖς τὰ τοῦ θείου πνεύματος ἐφιζάνει δωρήματα, οἷα καὶ πάλαι ὤφθη τοῖς ἀμφὶ τοὺς ἱεροὺς ἀποστόλους, οἷς
Acts 2, 3 ἐφάνησαν διαμεριζόμεναι γλῶσσαι ὡς εἰ πυρὸς ἐκάθισέν τε ἐφ' ἕνα ἕκαστον αὐτῶν. ἀλλ' ἐν μὲν 67 τῷ πάντων ἄρχοντι ἴσως αὐτὸς ὅλος ἐγκάθηται Χριστός, ἐν δὲ τοῖς μετ' αὐτὸν δευτερεύουσιν ἀναλόγως, καθ' ὅσον ἕκαστος χωρεῖ, Χριστοῦ
Heb. 2, 4 δυνάμεως καὶ πνεύματος ἁγίου μερισμοῖς. βάθρα δ' ἂν εἶεν καὶ ἀγγέλων αἱ τινῶν ψυχαὶ τῶν εἰς παιδαγωγίαν καὶ φρουρὰν ἑκάστῳ παραδεδομένων, σεμνὸν δὲ καὶ μέγα καὶ μονογενὲς θυσιαστήριον 68 ποῖον ἂν εἴη ἢ τῆς τοῦ κοινοῦ πάντων ἱερέως [τῆς ψυχῆς] τὸ εἰλικρινὲς καὶ ἁγίων ἅγιον; ᾧ παρεστὼς
Heb. 4, 14 ἐπὶ δεξιᾷ ὁ μέγας τῶν ὅλων ἀρχιερεὺς αὐτὸς Ἰησοῦς, ὁ μονογενὴς τοῦ θεοῦ, τὸ παρὰ πάντων εὐῶδες θυμίαμα καὶ τὰς δι' εὐχῶν ἀναίμους καὶ ἀΰλους θυσίας φαιδρῷ τῷ βλέμματι καὶ ὑπτίαις ὑποδεχόμενος χερσὶν τῷ κατ' οὐρανὸν πατρὶ καὶ θεῷ τῶν ὅλων παραπέμπεται, πρῶτος αὐτὸς προσκυνῶν καὶ μόνος τῷ πατρὶ τὸ κατ' ἀξίαν ἀπονέμων

[1] Omitting τῆς ψυχῆς, with Schwartz, as being a gloss: the meaning is that the sacred altar in the material church

well-wrought stones of men's souls. Thus he hath builded the great and royal house composed of all, bright and full of light both within and without; for not alone soul and mind, but even their body had been made glorious with the many-blossomed adornment of chastity and sobriety.

"Now there are also in this fane thrones and countless benches and seats, as many as are the souls on which the gifts of the divine Spirit find their resting-place; such as long ago appeared to the sacred Apostles and those that were with them, to whom there were manifested tongues parting asunder, like as of fire; and it sat upon each one of them. But while in the ruler of all, as is right, the entire Christ hath taken His seat, in those who have the second place after him [this bounty] is proportioned to each one's capacity, by gifts of the power of Christ and of the Holy Ghost. And the souls of some might be the seats even of angels, of those to whom the instruction and guarding of each several person hath been committed. But as to the reverend, mighty and unique altar, what might it be save the spotless holy of holies of the common priest of all?[1] Standing beside it on the right hand the great High Priest of the universe, even Jesus, the only-begotten of God, receiveth with joyful countenance and upturned hands the sweet-smelling incense from all, and the bloodless and immaterial sacrifices offered in prayer, and sendeth them on their way to the heavenly Father and God of the universe; whom He Himself first adoreth and alone rendereth to His Father the honour that is due; after which He also beseecheth

[1] typifies the spiritual sanctuary (*i.e.* the soul) of Jesus Christ.

σέβας, εἶτα δὲ καὶ πᾶσιν ἡμῖν εὐμενῆ διαμένειν καὶ δεξιὸν εἰς ἀεὶ παραιτούμενος.

"Τοιοῦτος ὁ μέγας νεὼς ὃν καθ' ὅλης τῆς ὑφ' 6
ἥλιον οἰκουμένης ὁ μέγας τῶν ὅλων δημιουργὸς λόγος συνεστήσατο, τῶν ἐπέκεινα οὐρανίων ἀψίδων πάλιν καὶ αὐτὸς νοερὰν ταύτην ἐπὶ γῆς εἰκόνα κατεργασάμενος, ὡς ἂν διὰ πάσης τῆς κτίσεως τῶν τε ἐπὶ γῆς λογικῶν ζῴων ὁ πατὴρ αὐτῷ τιμῷτό τε καὶ σέβοιτο. τὸν δὲ ὑπερουράνιον 7
χῶρον καὶ τὰ ἐκεῖσε τῶν τῇδε παραδείγματα τήν
Gal. 4, 26 τε ἄνω λεγομένην Ἱερουσαλὴμ καὶ τὸ Σιὼν ὄρος
Heb. 12, 22. 23 τὸ ἐπουράνιον καὶ τὴν ὑπερκόσμιον πόλιν τοῦ ζῶντος θεοῦ, ἐν ᾗ μυριάδες ἀγγέλων πανηγύρεις καὶ ἐκκλησία πρωτοτόκων ἀπογεγραμμένων ἐν οὐρανοῖς ταῖς ἀρρήτοις καὶ ἀνεπιλογίστοις ἡμῖν θεολογίαις τὸν σφῶν ποιητὴν καὶ πανηγεμόνα τῶν ὅλων γεραίρουσιν, οὔτις θνητὸς οἷός τε κατ'
1 Cor. 2, 9 ἀξίαν ὑμνῆσαι, ὅτι δὴ ὀφθαλμὸς οὐκ εἶδεν καὶ οὖς οὐκ ἤκουσεν καὶ ἐπὶ καρδίαν ἀνθρώπου οὐκ ἀνέβη αὐτὰ δὴ ταῦτα ἃ ἡτοίμασεν ὁ θεὸς τοῖς ἀγαπῶσιν αὐτόν· ὧν ἤδη ἐν μέρει καταξιωθέντες, 7
ἄνδρες ἅμα παισὶν καὶ γυναιξίν, σμικροὶ καὶ μεγάλοι, πάντες ἀθρόως ἐν ἑνὶ πνεύματι καὶ μιᾷ ψυχῇ μὴ διαλίπωμεν ἐξομολογούμενοι καὶ τὸν τοσούτων ἡμῖν ἀγαθῶν παραίτιον ἀνευφημοῦντες,
Ps. 103, 3-5. 10. 12. 13 τὸν εὐιλατεύοντα πάσαις ταῖς ἀνομίαις ἡμῶν, τὸν ἰώμενον πάσας τὰς νόσους ἡμῶν, τὸν λυτρούμενον ἐκ φθορᾶς τὴν ζωὴν ἡμῶν, τὸν στεφανοῦντα ἡμᾶς ἐν ἐλέει καὶ οἰκτιρμοῖς, τὸν ἐμπιμπλῶντα ἐν ἀγαθοῖς τὴν ἐπιθυμίαν ἡμῶν, ὅτι οὐ κατὰ τὰς ἁμαρτίας ἡμῶν ἐποίησεν ἡμῖν οὐδὲ κατὰ τὰς ἀνομίας ἡμῶν ἀνταπέδωκεν ἡμῖν, ὅτι καθ' ὅσον ἀπέχουσιν

Him to remain favourable and propitious toward us all for ever.

"Such is the great temple which the Word, the great Creator of the universe, hath builded throughout the whole world beneath the sun, forming again this spiritual image upon earth of those vaults beyond the vaults of heaven; so that by the whole creation and by the rational, living creatures upon earth His Father might be honoured and revered. But as for the region above the heavens and the models there of things on this earth, and the Jerusalem that is above, as it is called, and the mount Zion the heavenly mount, and the supramundane city of the living God, in which innumerable hosts of angels in general assembly and the church of the firstborn who are enrolled in heaven honour their Maker and the Sovereign of the universe, proclaiming His praises in unutterable words of which we cannot conceive: these no mortal man can worthily hymn, for in truth eye saw not, and ear heard not, nor did there enter into the heart of man those same things which God prepared for them that love Him. Of these things now in part deemed worthy, let us all together, men with women and children, small and great, with one spirit and one soul, never cease to praise and acclaim Him who is the Author of so great blessings to us; who is very merciful to all our iniquities, who healeth all our diseases, who redeemeth our life from destruction, who crowneth us with mercy and pities, who satisfieth our desire with good things; for He hath not dealt with us after our sins, nor rewarded us after

ἀνατολαὶ ἀπὸ δυσμῶν, ἐμάκρυνεν ἀφ' ἡμῶν τὰς ἀνομίας ἡμῶν· καθὼς οἰκτείρει πατὴρ υἱοὺς αὐτοῦ, ὠκτείρησεν κύριος τοὺς φοβουμένους αὐτόν.

"Ταῦτα καὶ νῦν καὶ εἰς τὸν ἑξῆς ἅπαντα χρόνον 72
ταῖς μνήμαις ἀναζωπυροῦντες, ἀτὰρ καὶ τῆς παρούσης πανηγύρεως καὶ τῆς φαιδρᾶς ταύτης καὶ λαμπροτάτης ἡμέρας τὸν αἴτιον καὶ πανηγυριάρχην νύκτωρ καὶ μεθ' ἡμέραν διὰ πάσης ὥρας καὶ δι' ὅλης ὡς εἰπεῖν ἀναπνοῆς ἐν νῷ προορώμενοι, στέργοντες καὶ σέβοντες ψυχῆς ὅλῃ δυνάμει, καὶ νῦν ἀναστάντες μεγάλῃ διαθέσεως φωνῇ καθικετεύσωμεν, ὡς ἂν ὑπὸ τὴν αὐτοῦ μάνδραν ἐς τέλος ἡμᾶς σκεπάζων διασῴζοιτο, τὴν παρ' αὐτοῦ βραβεύων ἀρραγῆ καὶ ἄσειστον αἰωνίαν εἰρήνην ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ τῷ σωτῆρι ἡμῶν, δι' οὗ αὐτῷ ἡ δόξα εἰς τοὺς σύμπαντας αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων. ἀμήν."

V. Φέρε δή, λοιπὸν καὶ τῶν βασιλικῶν διατάξεων Κωνσταντίνου καὶ Λικιννίου τὰς ἐκ τῆς Ῥωμαίων φωνῆς μεταληφθείσας ἑρμηνείας παραθώμεθα. 1

ΑΝΤΙΓΡΑΦΟΝ ΒΑΣΙΛΙΚΩΝ ΔΙΑΤΑΞΕΩΝ ΕΚ ΡΩΜΑΙΚΗΣ ΓΛΩΤΤΗΣ ΜΕΤΑΛΗΦΘΕΙΣΩΝ

"Ἤδη μὲν πάλαι σκοποῦντες τὴν ἐλευθερίαν τῆς 2
θρησκείας οὐκ ἀρνητέαν εἶναι, ἀλλ' ἑνὸς ἑκάστου τῇ διανοίᾳ καὶ τῇ βουλήσει ἐξουσίαν δοτέον τοῦ τὰ θεῖα πράγματα τημελεῖν κατὰ τὴν αὐτοῦ προ-

[1] This document, quoted in §§ 2-14, goes by the name of the "Ediet of Milan," although it is, properly speaking, not an edict, but a reseript, being addressed to an individual, to wit, a governor, by whose edict it was to be made known to

our iniquities ; for as far as the east is from the west, so far hath He removed our iniquities from us. Like as a father pitieth his sons, so the Lord pitied them that fear Him.

" Let us rekindle the memories of these things both now and for all time hereafter ; yea, and let us keep before our minds night and day, through every hour and, one might say, in every breath, the Author of the present assembly, and this happy and most glorious day, even the Ruler of the assembly Himself ; let us cherish and revere Him with the whole power of our soul ; and now let us rise and beseech Him in loud accents, as befitteth our earnest desire, that He would shelter and preserve us to the end in His fold, and award us that eternal peace, unbroken and undisturbed, which cometh from Him, in Christ Jesus our Saviour, through whom to Him be glory for ever and ever. Amen."

V. But come, let us now quote also the translations made from the Latin of the imperial ordinances of Constantine and Licinius.

Copy of Imperial Ordinances translated from the Latin tongue.[1]

In our watchfulness in days gone by that freedom of worship should not be denied, but that each one according to his mind and purpose should have authority given him to care for divine things in the

the people of his province. It is probable that at Milan, in 313 (ix. 11. 9), Constantine and Licinius drew up a norm of instructions to governors which might be copied, with perhaps some variations in detail, and sent to the various provinces. One redaction of that norm was translated by Eusebius, another was transcribed by Lactantius (*De Mortibus Persecutorum* 48).

αἵρεσιν ἕκαστον, κεκελεύκειμεν τοῖς τε Χριστιανοῖς . . . τῆς αἱρέσεως καὶ τῆς θρησκείας τῆς ἑαυτῶν τὴν πίστιν φυλάττειν· ἀλλ' ἐπειδὴ πολλαὶ καὶ διάφοροι αἱρέσεις ἐν ἐκείνῃ τῇ ἀντιγραφῇ, ἐν ᾗ τοῖς αὐτοῖς συνεχωρήθη ἡ τοιαύτη ἐξουσία, ἐδόκουν προστεθεῖσθαι σαφῶς, τυχὸν ἴσως τινὲς αὐτῶν μετ' ὀλίγον ἀπὸ τῆς τοιαύτης παραφυλάξεως ἀπεκρούοντο.

"'Οπότε εὐτυχῶς ἐγὼ Κωνσταντῖνος ὁ Αὔγουστος κἀγὼ Λικίννιος ὁ Αὔγουστος ἐν τῇ Μεδιολάνῳ ἐληλύθειμεν καὶ πάντα ὅσα πρὸς τὸ λυσιτελὲς καὶ τὸ χρήσιμον τῷ κοινῷ διέφερεν, ἐν ζητήσει ἔσχομεν, ταῦτα μεταξὺ τῶν λοιπῶν ἅτινα ἐδόκει ἐν πολλοῖς ἅπασιν ἐπωφελῆ εἶναι, μᾶλλον δὲ ἐν πρώτοις διατάξαι ἐδογματίσαμεν, οἷς ἡ πρὸς τὸ θεῖον αἰδώς τε καὶ τὸ σέβας ἐνείχετο, τοῦτ' ἔστιν, ὅπως δῶμεν καὶ τοῖς Χριστιανοῖς καὶ πᾶσιν ἐλευθέραν αἵρεσιν τοῦ ἀκολουθεῖν τῇ θρησκείᾳ ᾗ δ' ἂν βουληθῶσιν, ὅπως ὅ τί ποτέ ἐστιν θειότητος καὶ οὐρανίου πράγματος, ἡμῖν καὶ πᾶσι τοῖς ὑπὸ τὴν ἡμετέραν ἐξουσίαν διάγουσιν εὐμενὲς εἶναι δυνηθῇ. τοίνυν ταύτην τὴν [ἡμετέραν] βούλησιν ὑγιεινῷ καὶ ὀρθοτάτῳ λογισμῷ ἐδογματίσαμεν, ὅπως μηδενὶ παντελῶς ἐξουσία ἀρνητέα ᾗ τοῦ ἀκολουθεῖν καὶ αἱρεῖσθαι τὴν τῶν Χριστιανῶν παραφύλαξιν ἢ θρησκείαν ἑκάστῳ τε ἐξουσία δοθείη τοῦ διδόναι ἑαυτοῦ τὴν διάνοιαν ἐν ἐκείνῃ τῇ θρησκείᾳ, ἣν αὐτὸς ἑαυτῷ ἁρμόζειν νομίζει, ὅπως ἡμῖν δυνηθῇ τὸ θεῖον ἐν πᾶσι τὴν ἔθιμον σπουδὴν καὶ καλοκἀγαθίαν παρέχειν· ἅτινα οὕτως ἀρέσκειν ἡμῖν ἀντιγράψαι ἀκόλουθον ἦν, ἵν' ἀφαιρεθεισῶν παν-

[1] Some words have fallen out of the text.

[2] *αἱρέσεις*, *cf.* § 6, where the Latin original has *conditiones*.

way that pleased him best, we had given orders that both to the Christians [and to all others liberty should be allowed][1] to keep to the faith of their own sect and worship. But inasmuch as many and various conditions[2] seemed clearly to have been added in that rescript, in which such rights were conceded to the same persons, it may be that perchance some of them were shortly afterwards repelled from such observance.

"When I Constantine Augustus and I Licinius Augustus had come under happy auspices to Milan, and discussed all matters that concerned the public advantage and good, among the other things that seemed to be of benefit to the many,[3]—or rather, first and foremost—we resolved to make such decrees as should secure respect and reverence for the Deity; namely, to grant both to the Christians and to all the free choice of following whatever form of worship they pleased, to the intent that all the divine and heavenly powers that be might be favourable to us and all those living under our authority. Therefore with sound and most upright reasoning we resolved on this[4] counsel: that authority be refused to no one whomsoever to follow and choose the observance or form of worship that Christians use, and that authority be granted to each one to give his mind to that form of worship which he deems suitable to himself, to the intent that the Divinity[5] . . . may in all things afford us his wonted care and generosity. It was fitting to send a rescript that this is our pleasure, in order that when those conditions had altogether been

[3] Lat. *pluribus hominibus*; the Gk. has ἐν πολλοῖς ἅπασιν (*pluribus omnibus*).

[4] Omitting ἡμετέραν, with the Latin.

[5] The Latin adds "cuius religioni liberis mentibus obsequimur."

τελῶς τῶν αἱρέσεων, αἵτινες τοῖς προτέροις ἡμῶν γράμμασι τοῖς πρὸς τὴν σὴν καθοσίωσιν ἀποσταλεῖσι περὶ τῶν Χριστιανῶν ἐνείχοντο καὶ ἄτινα πάνυ σκαιὰ καὶ τῆς ἡμετέρας πραότητος ἀλλότρια εἶναι ἐδόκει, ταῦτα ὑφαιρεθῇ καὶ νῦν ἐλευθέρως καὶ ἁπλῶς ἕκαστος αὐτῶν τῶν τὴν αὐτὴν προαίρεσιν ἐσχηκότων τοῦ φυλάττειν τὴν τῶν Χριστιανῶν θρησκείαν ἄνευ τινὸς ὀχλήσεως τοῦτο αὐτὸ παραφυλάττοι. ἄτινα τῇ σῇ ἐπιμελείᾳ πληρέστατα δηλῶσαι ἐδογματίσαμεν, ὅπως εἰδείης ἡμᾶς ἐλευθέραν καὶ ἀπολελυμένην ἐξουσίαν τοῦ τημελεῖν τὴν ἑαυτῶν θρησκείαν τοῖς αὐτοῖς Χριστιανοῖς δεδωκέναι. ὅπερ ἐπειδὴ ἀπολελυμένως αὐτοῖς ὑφ' ἡμῶν δεδωρῆσθαι θεωρεῖς, ‹συνορᾷ› ἡ σὴ καθοσίωσις καὶ ἑτέροις δεδόσθαι ἐξουσίαν τοῖς βουλομένοις τοῦ μετέρχεσθαι τὴν παρατήρησιν καὶ θρησκείαν ἑαυτῶν ὅπερ ἀκολούθως τῇ ἡσυχίᾳ τῶν ἡμετέρων καιρῶν γίνεσθαι φανερόν ἐστιν, ὅπως ἐξουσίαν ἕκαστος ἔχῃ τοῦ αἱρεῖσθαι καὶ τημελεῖν ὁποίαν δ' ἂν βούληται [τὸ θεῖον]. τοῦτο δὲ ὑφ' ἡμῶν γέγονεν, ὅπως μηδεμιᾷ τιμῇ μηδὲ θρησκείᾳ τινὶ μεμειῶσθαί τι ὑφ' ἡμῶν δοκοίη.

"Καὶ τοῦτο δὲ πρὸς τοῖς λοιποῖς εἰς τὸ πρόσωπον τῶν Χριστιανῶν δογματίζομεν, ἵνα τοὺς τόπους αὐτῶν, εἰς οὓς τὸ πρότερον συνέρχεσθαι ἔθος ἦν αὐτοῖς, περὶ ὧν καὶ τοῖς πρότερον δοθεῖσιν πρὸς τὴν σὴν καθοσίωσιν γράμμασιν τύπος ἕτερος ἦν ὡρισμένος τῷ προτέρῳ χρόνῳ, [ἵν'] εἴ τινες ἢ παρὰ τοῦ ταμείου τοῦ ἡμετέρου ἢ παρά τινος ἑτέρου φαίνοιντο ἠγορακότες, τούτους τοῖς αὐτοῖς Χριστιανοῖς ἄνευ ἀργυρίου καὶ ἄνευ τινὸς

[1] Reading *θεωρεῖς* in place of *θεωρεῖ* and inserting *συνορᾷ*, with Schwartz. [2] *τιμῇ*: Lat. *honori*.

removed, which were contained in our former letters sent to thy Devotedness, concerning the Christians, those things also which seemed to be wholly unfortunate and foreign to our clemency might be removed, and that now each one of those who were possessed of the same purpose—namely, to observe the Christians' form of worship—should observe this very thing, freely and simply, without any hindrance. Which things we have resolved, to signify in the fullest manner to thy Carefulness, to the intent that thou mayest know that we have granted to these same Christians free and unrestricted authority to observe their own form of worship. And when thou perceivest that this has been granted unrestrictedly to them by us, thy Devotedness will understand [1] that authority has been given to others also, who wish to follow their own observance and form of worship—a thing clearly suited to the peacefulness of our times—so that each one may have authority to choose and observe whatever form he pleases. This has been done by us, to the intent that we should not seem to have detracted in any way from any rite [2] or form of worship.

"And this, moreover, with special regard to the Christians, we resolve: That their places, at which it was their former wont to assemble, concerning which also in the former letter dispatched to thy Devotedness a definite ordinance [3] had been formerly laid down, if any should appear to have bought them either from our treasury or from any other source—that these they should restore to these same Christians without payment or any demand for com-

[3] Lat. *certa forma*. Eusebius has τύπος ἕτερος, as if he had read *cetera* in the Latin.

ἀπαιτήσεως τῆς τιμῆς, ὑπερτεθείσης [δίχα] πάσης ἀμελείας καὶ ἀμφιβολίας, ἀποκαταστήσωσι, καὶ εἴ τινες κατὰ δῶρον τυγχάνουσιν εἰληφότες, τοὺς αὐτοὺς τόπους ὅπως ἢ τοῖς αὐτοῖς Χριστιανοῖς τὴν ταχίστην ἀποκαταστήσωσιν οὕτως ὡς ἢ οἱ ἠγορακότες τοὺς αὐτοὺς τόπους ἢ οἱ κατὰ δωρεὰν εἰληφότες αἰτῶσί τι παρὰ τῆς ἡμετέρας καλοκἀγαθίας προσέλθωσι τῷ ἐπὶ τόπων ἐπάρχῳ [δικάζοντι], ὅπως καὶ αὐτῶν διὰ τῆς ἡμετέρας χρηστότητος πρόνοια γένηται. ἅτινα πάντα τῷ σώματι τῷ τῶν Χριστιανῶν παρ' αὐτὰ διὰ τῆς σῆς σπουδῆς ἄνευ τινὸς παρολκῆς παραδίδοσθαι δεήσει.

"Καὶ ἐπειδὴ οἱ αὐτοὶ Χριστιανοὶ οὐ μόνον ἐκείνους εἰς οὓς συνέρχεσθαι ἔθος εἶχον, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἑτέρους τόπους ἐσχηκέναι γινώσκονται διαφέροντας οὐ πρὸς ἕκαστον αὐτῶν, ἀλλὰ πρὸς τὸ δίκαιον τοῦ αὐτῶν σώματος, τοῦτ' ἔστιν τῶν Χριστιανῶν, ταῦτα πάντα ἐπὶ τῷ νόμῳ ὃν προειρήκαμεν, δίχα παντελῶς τινος ἀμφισβητήσεως τοῖς αὐτοῖς Χριστιανοῖς, τοῦτ' ἔστιν τῷ σώματι [αὐτῶν] καὶ τῇ συνόδῳ [ἑκάστῳ] αὐτῶν ἀποκαταστῆναι κελεύσεις, τοῦ προειρημένου λογισμοῦ δηλαδὴ φυλαχθέντος, ὅπως αὐτοὶ οἵτινες τοὺς αὐτοὺς ἄνευ τιμῆς, καθὼς προειρήκαμεν, ἀποκαθιστῶσι, τὸ ἀζήμιον τὸ ἑαυτῶν παρὰ τῆς ἡμετέρας καλοκἀγαθίας ἐλπίζοιεν.

"Ἐν οἷς πᾶσιν τῷ προειρημένῳ σώματι τῶν Χριστιανῶν τὴν σπουδὴν δυνατώτατα παρασχεῖν ὀφείλεις, ὅπως τὸ ἡμέτερον κέλευσμα τὴν ταχίστην παραπληρωθῇ, ὅπως καὶ ἐν τούτῳ διὰ τῆς ἡμετέρας χρηστότητος πρόνοια γένηται τῆς κοινῆς καὶ δημοσίας ἡσυχίας. τούτῳ γὰρ τῷ λογισμῷ, καθὼς καὶ προείρηται, ἡ θεία σπουδὴ περὶ ἡμᾶς, ἧς ἐν

pensation, setting aside all negligence and doubtfulness; and if any chance to have received them by gift, that they should restore them with all speed to these same Christians: provided that if either those who have purchased these same places or those who have received them by gift request aught of our generosity, let them approach the prefect of the district,[1] to the intent that through our kindness thought may be taken for them also. All which things must be handed over to the corporation of the Christians by thy zealous care immediately and without delay.

"And inasmuch as these same Christians had not only those places at which it was their wont to assemble, but also are known to have had others, belonging not to individuals among them, but to the lawful property of their corporation, that is, of the Christians, all these, under the provisions of the law set forth above, thou wilt give orders to be restored without any question whatsoever to these same Christians, that is, to their corporation and assembly; provided always, of course, as aforesaid, that those persons who restore the same without compensation, as we have mentioned above, may look for indemnification, as far as they are concerned, from our generosity.

"In all these things thou shouldest use all the diligence in thy power for the above-mentioned corporation of the Christians, that this our command may be fulfilled with all speed, so that in this also, through our kindness, thought may be taken for the common and public peace. For by this method, as we have also said before, the divine

[1] Omitting the gloss δικάζοντι.

πολλοῖς ἤδη πράγμασιν ἀπεπειράθημεν, διὰ παντὸς τοῦ χρόνου βεβαίως διαμείναι, ἵνα δὲ ταύτης τῆς ἡμετέρας νομοθεσίας καὶ τῆς καλοκἀγαθίας ὁ ὅρος πρὸς γνῶσιν πάντων ἐνεχθῆναι δυνηθῇ, προταχθέντα τοῦ σοῦ προστάγματος ταῦτα τὰ ὑφ' ἡμῶν γραφέντα πανταχοῦ προθεῖναι καὶ εἰς γνῶσιν πάντων ἀγαγεῖν ἀκόλουθόν ἐστιν, ὅπως ταύτης τῆς ἡμετέρας καλοκἀγαθίας ἡ νομοθεσία μηδένα λαθεῖν δυνηθῇ."

ΑΝΤΙΓΡΑΦΟΝ ΕΤΕΡΑΣ ΒΑΣΙΛΙΚΗΣ ΔΙΑΤΑΞΕΩΣ ΗΝ ΑΥΘΙΣ ΠΕΠΟΙΗΤΑΙ, ΜΟΝΗΙ ΤΗΙ ΚΑΘΟΛΙΚΗΙ ΕΚΚΛΗΣΙΑΙ ΤΗΝ ΔΩΡΕΑΝ ΔΕΔΟΣΘΑΙ ΥΠΟΣΗΜΗΝΑΜΕΝΟΣ

"Χαῖρε Ἀνυλῖνε, τιμιώτατε ἡμῖν. ἔστιν ὁ τρόπος οὗτος τῆς φιλαγαθίας τῆς ἡμετέρας, ὥστε ἐκεῖνα ἅπερ δικαίῳ ἀλλοτρίῳ προσήκει, μὴ μόνον μὴ ἐνοχλεῖσθαι, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἀποκαθιστᾶν βούλεσθαι ἡμᾶς, Ἀνυλῖνε τιμιώτατε. ὅθεν βουλόμεθα ἵν', ὁπόταν ταῦτα τὰ γράμματα κομίσῃ, εἴ τινα ἐκ τούτων τῶν τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ τῇ καθολικῇ τῶν Χριστιανῶν ἐν ἑκάσταις πόλεσιν ἢ καὶ ἄλλοις τόποις διέφερον [καὶ] κατέχοιντο νῦν ἢ ὑπὸ πολιτῶν ἢ ὑπό τινων ἄλλων, ταῦτα ἀποκατασταθῆναι παραχρῆμα ταῖς αὐταῖς ἐκκλησίαις ποιήσῃς, ἐπειδήπερ προῃρήμεθα ταῦτα ἅπερ αἱ αὐταὶ ἐκκλησίαι πρότερον ἐσχήκεσαν, τῷ δικαίῳ αὐτῶν ἀποκατασταθῆναι. ὁπότε τοίνυν συνορᾷ ἡ καθοσίωσις ἡ σὴ ταύτης ἡμῶν τῆς κελεύσεως σαφέστατον εἶναι τὸ πρόσταγμα, σπούδασον, εἴτε κῆποι εἴτε οἰκίαι

[1] The Latin original shows that some words are omitted here by Eusebius.

care for us, which we have already experienced in many matters, will remain stedfast[1] . . . continually. And that the form which this our enactment and generosity takes may be brought to the knowledge of all, it is fitting that this which we have written be set forth by thy order and published everywhere, and brought to the knowledge of all, to the intent that the enactment which embodies this our generosity may escape the notice of no one."

Copy of another Imperial Ordinance which he also made, indicating that the bounty had been granted to the Catholic Church alone.

"Greeting, Anulinus, our most honoured Sir. It is the custom of our benevolence, that we will that whatsoever appertains by right to another should not only not suffer harm, but even be restored, most honoured Anulinus. Wherefore we will that, when thou receivest this letter, if aught of those things that belonged to the Catholic Church[2] of the Christians in any city, or even in other places, be now in the possession either of citizens or of any others: these thou shouldest cause to be restored forthwith to these same churches, inasmuch as it has been our determination that those things which these same churches possessed formerly should be restored to them as their right. Since, therefore, thy Devotedness perceives that the order of this our command is most explicit, do thy diligence that

[2] Eusebius (see heading) took this to mean the Catholic Church as opposed to the Donatist schismatics; but this is very improbable. The phrase refers to the Church in Africa as it was before the persecution and before the schism.

εἴθ' ὁτιουνδήποτε τῷ δικαίῳ τῶν αὐτῶν ἐκκλησιῶν διέφερον, σύμπαντα αὐταῖς ἀποκατασταθῆναι ὡς τάχιστα, ὅπως τούτῳ ἡμῶν τῷ προστάγματι ἐπιμελεστάτην σε πειθάρχησιν παρεσχηκέναι καταμάθοιμεν. ἔρρωσο, Ἀνυλῖνε, τιμιώτατε καὶ ποθεινότατε ἡμῖν."

ΑΝΤΙΓΡΑΦΟΝ ΒΑΣΙΛΙΚΗΣ ΕΠΙΣΤΟΛΗΣ ΔΙ' ΗΣ ΣΥΝΟΔΟΝ ΕΠΙΣΚΟΠΩΝ ΕΠΙ ΡΩΜΗΣ ΚΕΛΕΥΕΙ ΓΕΝΕΣΘΑΙ ΥΠΕΡ ΤΗΣ ΤΩΝ ΕΚΚΛΗΣΙΩΝ ΕΝΩΣΕΩΣ ΤΕ ΚΑΙ ΟΜΟΝΟΙΑΣ

"Κωνσταντῖνος Σεβαστὸς Μιλτιάδῃ ἐπισκόπῳ Ῥωμαίων καὶ Μάρκῳ. ἐπειδὴ τοιοῦτοι χάρται παρὰ Ἀνυλίνου τοῦ λαμπροτάτου ἀνθυπάτου τῆς Ἀφρικῆς πρός με πλείους ἀπεστάλησαν, ἐν οἷς ἐμφέρεται Καικιλιανὸν τὸν ἐπίσκοπον τῆς Χαρταγενησίων πόλεως παρά τινων κολλήγων αὐτοῦ τῶν κατὰ τὴν Ἀφρικὴν καθεστώτων ἐν πολλοῖς πράγμασιν εὐθύνεσθαι, καὶ τοῦτό μοι βαρὺ σφόδρα δοκεῖ τὸ ἐν ταύταις ταῖς ἐπαρχίαις, ἃς τῇ ἐμῇ καθοσιώσει αὐθαιρέτως ἡ θεία πρόνοια ἐνεχείρισεν κἀκεῖσε πολὺ πλῆθος λαοῦ, ὄχλον ἐπὶ τὸ φαυλότερον ἐπιμένοντα εὑρίσκεσθαι ὡς ἂν εἰ διχοστατοῦντα καὶ μεταξὺ ἐπισκόπους διαφορὰς ἔχειν, ἔδοξέ μοι ἵν' αὐτὸς ὁ Καικιλιανὸς μετὰ δέκα ἐπισκόπων τῶν αὐτὸν εὐθύνειν δοκούντων καὶ δέκα ἑτέρων οὓς αὐτὸς τῇ ἑαυτοῦ δίκῃ ἀναγκαίους ὑπολάβοι, εἰς τὴν Ῥώμην πλῷ ἀπιέναι, ἵν' ἐκεῖσε ὑμῶν παρόντων, ἀλλὰ μὴν καὶ Ῥετικίου καὶ Ματέρνου καὶ Μαρίνου, τῶν κολλήγων ὑμῶν, οὓς

[1] The Donatists (so called from a bishop of theirs, Donatus) alleged that Caecilian had been consecrated by a bishop (Felix) who in the Diocletian persecution had proved himself a

all things, whether gardens or buildings or whatsoever belonged to these same churches by right, be restored to them with all speed; so that we may learn that thou hast yielded the most careful obedience to this our order. Fare thee well, Anulinus, our most honoured and esteemed Sir."

Copy of an Imperial Letter, in which he commands the holding of a Synod of bishops at Rome on behalf of the union and concord of the churches.

"Constantine Augustus to Miltiades bishop of the Romans, and to Mark. Inasmuch as documents of such a nature have been sent to me in numbers by Anulinus, the right honourable proconsul of Africa, from which it appears that Caecilian,[1] the bishop of the city of the Carthaginians, is called to account on many charges by some of his colleagues in Africa; and inasmuch as it seems to me to be a very serious matter that in those provinces, which Divine Providence has chosen to entrust to my Devotedness, and where there is a great number of people, the multitude should be found pursuing the worse course of action, splitting up, as it were, and the bishops at variance among themselves: it seemed good to me that Caecilian himself, with ten bishops, who seem to call him to account, and such ten others as he may deem necessary to his suit, should set sail for Rome, that there a hearing may be granted him in the presence of yourselves, and moreover of Reticius and Maternus and Marinus also, your colleagues

traditor, i.e. had surrendered up the Scriptures to the pagan authorities. Hence they held that Caecilian's consecration was invalid; and by appointing a bishop of their own in his stead began what is known as the Donatist schism.

τούτου ἕνεκεν εἰς τὴν Ῥώμην προσέταξα ἐπισπεῦσαι, δυνηθῇ ἀκουσθῆναι, ὡς ἂν καταμάθοιτε τῷ σεβασμιωτάτῳ νόμῳ ἁρμόττειν. ἵνα μέντοι 2 καὶ περὶ πάντων αὐτῶν τούτων πληρεστάτην δυνηθῆτε ἔχειν γνῶσιν, τὰ ἀντίτυπα τῶν ἐγγράφων τῶν πρός με παρὰ Ἀνυλίνου ἀποσταλέντων γράμμασιν ἐμοῖς ὑποτάξας, πρὸς τοὺς προειρημένους κολλήγας ὑμῶν ἐξέπεμψα· οἷς ἐντυχοῦσα ἡ ὑμετέρα στερρότης δοκιμάσει ὄντινα χρὴ τρόπον τὴν προειρημένην δίκην ἐπιμελέστατα διευκρινῆσαι καὶ κατὰ τὸ δίκαιον τερματίσαι, ὁπότε μηδὲ τὴν ὑμετέραν ἐπιμέλειαν λανθάνει τοσαύτην με αἰδῶ τῇ ἐνθέσμῳ καθολικῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ ἀπονέμειν, ὡς μηδὲν καθόλου σχίσμα ἢ διχοστασίαν ἔν τινι τόπῳ βούλεσθαί με ὑμᾶς καταλιπεῖν. ἡ θειότης ὑμᾶς τοῦ μεγάλου θεοῦ διαφυλάξαι πολλοῖς ἔτεσι, τιμιώτατε."

ΑΝΤΙΓΡΑΦΟΝ ΒΑΣΙΛΙΚΗΣ ΕΠΙΣΤΟΛΗΣ ΔΙ' ΗΣ ΠΡΟΣ- 2
ΤΑΤΤΕΙ ΔΕΥΤΕΡΑΝ ΓΕΝΕΣΘΑΙ ΣΥΝΟΔΟΝ ΥΠΕΡ ΤΟΥ ΠΑΣΑΝ ΤΩΝ ΕΠΙΣΚΟΠΩΝ ΠΕΡΙΕΛΕΙΝ ΔΙΧΟΣΤΑΣΙΑΝ

"Κωνσταντῖνος Σεβαστὸς Χρήστῳ ἐπισκόπῳ Συρακουσίων. ἤδη μὲν πρότερον, ὅτε φαύλως καὶ ἐνδιαστρόφως τινὲς περὶ τῆς θρησκείας τῆς ἁγίας καὶ ἐπουρανίου δυνάμεως καὶ τῆς αἱρέσεως τῆς καθολικῆς ἀποδιίστασθαι ἤρξαντο, ἐπιτέμνεσθαι βουληθεὶς τὰς τοιαύτας αὐτῶν φιλονεικίας, οὕτω διατετυπώκειν ὥστε ἀποσταλέντων ἀπὸ τῆς Γαλλίας τινῶν ἐπισκόπων, ἀλλὰ μὴν καὶ τούτων κληθέντων ἀπὸ τῆς Ἀφρικῆς τῶν ἐξ ἐναντίας

[1] This is the reading of the Latin and some MSS. of Eusebius here and also in § 24; 6. 5; in each case Schwartz reads the fut. indic.

(whom I have ordered to hasten to Rome for this purpose), in such a manner as ye may perceive to be in accordance with the most sacred law. Nevertheless, that ye may have the fullest knowledge of all these same matters, I have subjoined to my letter copies of the documents that were sent to me by Anulinus, and have dispatched them to your aforesaid colleagues. Which when your Firmness reads, he will gauge by what method the most careful investigation can be made of the above-mentioned suit, and a just decision arrived at; since it does not escape the notice of your Carefulness that the respect which I pay to the lawful Catholic Church is so great, that it is my wish that ye should leave no schism whatsoever or division in any place. May the divinity of the great God preserve [1] you safely for many years, most honoured Sirs.[2] "

Copy of an Imperial Letter, in which he gives orders for the holding of a second Synod for the purpose of removing all division among the bishops.

" Constantine Augustus to Chrestus bishop of the Syracusans. Already on a former occasion, when some in a base and perverse manner began to create divisions with regard to the worship of the holy and heavenly Power and the Catholic religion, in my desire to cut short such dissensions among them, I had given orders to the effect that certain bishops should be sent from Gaul, nay further, that the opposing parties, who were contending stubbornly

[2] Gk. " Sir "; but the Lat. correctly gives the plural. The Letter, however, seems to have been addressed principally to Miltiades: nothing is known of Mark, who is associated with him in the opening sentence.

μοίρας καταλλήλως, ἐνστατικῶς καὶ ἐπιμόνως διαγωνιζομένων παρόντος τε καὶ τοῦ τῆς Ῥώμης ἐπισκόπου, τοῦτο ὅπερ ἐδόκει κεκινῆσθαι, δυνηθῇ ὑπὸ τῆς παρουσίας αὐτῶν μετὰ πάσης ἐπιμελοῦς διακρίσεως κατορθώσεως τυχεῖν. ἀλλ' ἐπειδή, ὡς συμβαίνει, ἐπιλαθόμενοί τινες καὶ τῆς σωτηρίας τῆς ἰδίας καὶ τοῦ σεβάσματος τοῦ ὀφειλομένου τῇ ἁγιωτάτῃ αἱρέσει, ἔτι καὶ νῦν τὰς ἰδίας ἔχθρας παρατείνειν οὐ παύονται, μὴ βουλόμενοι τῇ ἤδη ἐξενεχθείσῃ κρίσει συντίθεσθαι καὶ διοριζόμενοι ὅτι δὴ ἄρα ὀλίγοι τινὲς τὰς γνώμας καὶ τὰς ἀποφάσεις ἑαυτῶν ἐξήνεγκαν ἢ καὶ μὴ πρότερον ἁπάντων τῶν ὀφειλόντων ζητηθῆναι ἀκριβῶς ἐξετασθέντων πρὸς τὸ τὴν κρίσιν ἐξενέγκαι πάνυ ταχέως καὶ ὀξέως ἔσπευσαν, ἔκ τε τούτων ἁπάντων ἐκεῖνα συμβαίνει γενέσθαι, τὸ καὶ τούτους αὐτοὺς ἀδελφικὴν καὶ ὁμόφονα ὀφείλοντας ἔχειν ὁμοψυχίαν αἰσχρῶς, μᾶλλον δὲ μυσερῶς ἀλλήλων ἀποδιεστάναι καὶ τοῖς ἀνθρώποις τοῖς ἀλλοτρίας ἔχουσι τὰς ψυχὰς ἀπὸ τῆς ἁγιωτάτης θρησκείας ταύτης πρόφασιν χλεύης διδόναι,—ὅθεν προνοητέον μοι ἐγένετο, ὅπως τοῦτο ὅπερ ἐχρῆν μετὰ τὴν ἐξενεχθεῖσαν ἤδη κρίσιν αὐθαιρέτῳ συγκαταθέσει πεπαῦσθαι, κἂν νῦν ποτε δυνηθῇ πολλῶν παρόντων τέλους τυχεῖν. ἐπειδὴ τοίνυν πλείστους ἐκ διαφόρων καὶ ἀμυθήτων τόπων ἐπισκόπους εἰς τὴν Ἀρελατησίων πόλιν εἴσω Καλανδῶν Αὐγούστων συνελθεῖν ἐκελεύσαμεν, καὶ σοὶ γράψαι ἐνομίσαμεν ἵνα λαβὼν παρὰ τοῦ λαμπροτάτου Λατρωνιανοῦ τοῦ κονρήκτορος Σικελίας δημόσιον ὄχημα, συζεύξας σεαυτῷ καὶ δύο γέ τινας τῶν ἐκ

and persistently together, should be summoned from Africa; that so, in the presence also of the bishop of Rome, this question which appeared to have been raised might through their coming receive a right solution by means of a careful examination in every particular. But since, as it happens, some, forgetful both of their own salvation and the reverence they owe to their most holy religion, even now do not cease to perpetuate their private enmities, being unwilling to conform to the judgement already passed, and affirming that after all it was a few persons who gave their opinions and decisions, or that they were in a hurry to pass judgement very speedily and sharply without having first accurately examined all those matters that ought to have been investigated; and since, as a result of all this, it has come to pass that even those very persons, who ought to be of one mind in brotherly concord, are separate from each other in a disgraceful, nay rather in an abominable, fashion, and give to those men whose souls are strangers to this most holy religion to scoff—wherefore it became incumbent upon me to provide that that which ought to have ceased by voluntary agreement, after the judgement already passed, may even now, if possible, be ended by the presence of many persons. Inasmuch, therefore, as we have commanded that very many bishops from various and numberless places should assemble at the city of Arles by the Kalends of August, we have thought it good to write to thee also, that thou shouldest procure from the right honourable Latronianus, the "corrector[1]" of Sicily, a public vehicle, and joining to thy

[1] In the fourth century this was the title of governors of certain provinces.

τοῦ δευτέρου θρόνου, οὓς ἂν σὺ αὐτὸς ἐπιλέξασθαι κρίνῃς, ἀλλὰ μὴν καὶ τρεῖς παῖδας τοὺς δυνησομένους ὑμῖν κατὰ τὴν ὁδὸν ὑπηρετήσασθαι παραλαβών, εἶσω τῆς αὐτῆς ἡμέρας ἐπὶ τῷ προειρημένῳ τόπῳ ἀπάντησον, ὡς ἂν διά τε τῆς σῆς στερ- 2
ρότητος καὶ διὰ τῆς λοιπῆς τῶν συνιόντων ὁμοψύχου καὶ ὁμόφρονος συνέσεως καὶ τοῦτο ὅπερ ἄχρι τοῦ δεῦρο φαύλως δι' αἰσχράς τινας ζυγομαχίας παραμεμένηκεν, ἀκουσθέντων πάντων τῶν μελλόντων λεχθήσεσθαι παρὰ τῶν νῦν ἀπ' ἀλλήλων διεστώτων, οὕσπερ ὁμοίως παρεῖναι ἐκελεύσαμεν, δυνηθῇ εἰς τὴν ὀφειλομένην θρησκείαν καὶ πίστιν ἀδελφικήν τε ὁμόνοιαν κἂν βραδέως ἀνακληθῆναι. ὑγιαίνοντά σε ὁ θεὸς ὁ παντοκράτωρ διαφυλάξαι ἐπὶ πολλοῖς ἔτεσιν."

VI. ΑΝΤΙΓΡΑΦΟΝ ΒΑΣΙΛΙΚΗΣ ΕΠΙΣΤΟΛΗΣ ΔΙ' ΗΣ ΧΡΗΜΑΤΑ ΤΑΙΣ ΕΚΚΛΗΣΙΑΙΣ ΔΩΡΕΙΤΑΙ

"Κωνσταντῖνος Αὔγουστος Καικιλιανῷ ἐπισκόπῳ Χαρταγένης. ἐπειδήπερ ἤρεσεν κατὰ πάσας ἐπαρχίας, τάς τε Ἀφρικὰς καὶ τὰς Νουμιδίας καὶ τὰς Μαυριτανίας, ῥητοῖς τισι τῶν ὑπηρετῶν τῆς ἐνθέσμου καὶ ἁγιωτάτης καθολικῆς θρησκείας εἰς ἀναλώματα ἐπιχορηγηθῆναί τι, ἔδωκα γράμματα πρὸς Οὖρσον τὸν διασημότατον καθολικὸν τῆς Ἀφρικῆς καὶ ἐδήλωσα αὐτῷ ὅπως τρισχιλίους φόλλεις τῇ σῇ στερρότητι ἀπαριθμῆσαι φροντίσῃ. σὺ τοίνυν, ἡνίκα τὴν προδηλουμένην ποσότητα 2
τῶν χρημάτων ὑποδεχθῆναι ποιήσεις, ἅπασι τοῖς προειρημένοις κατὰ τὸ βρέουιον τὸ πρὸς σὲ παρὰ

[1] *i.e.* presbyters.

company two others of those of the second rank,[1] whomsoever thou thyself mayest decide to choose, and, moreover, taking with you three servants who shall be able to attend upon you on the way, do thou be present at the above-mentioned place by that same day; so that both by thy Firmness and by the unanimous wisdom of the others assembled, this quarrel also (which hitherto, by reason of certain disgraceful contentions, has maintained a miserable existence), when all has been heard that will be said by those who are now at variance among themselves, whom likewise we have commanded to be present, may, if only tardily, give place to a due state of religion and faith and brotherly concord. May the Almighty God preserve thee in good health for many years."

VI. *Copy of an Imperial Letter in which grants of money are made to the churches.*

"Constantine Augustus to Caecilian bishop of Carthage. Forasmuch as it has been our pleasure in all provinces, namely the African, the Numidian and the Mauretanian, that somewhat be contributed for expenses to certain specified ministers of the lawful and most holy Catholic religion, I have dispatched a letter to Ursus, the most distinguished finance minister of Africa, and have notified to him that he be careful to pay over to thy Firmness three thousand *folles*.[2] Do thou therefore, when thou shalt secure delivery of the aforesaid sum of money, give orders that this money be distributed among all the above-mentioned persons in accordance with the schedule

[2] The *follis* was originally a bag of small coins, but afterwards came to denote a coin itself, the double denarius.

Ὅσίου ἀποσταλὲν ταῦτα τὰ χρήματα διαδοθῆναι κέλευσον. εἰ δ' ἄρα πρὸς τὸ συμπληρωθῆναί μου 3
τὴν εἰς τοῦτο περὶ ἅπαντας αὐτοὺς προαίρεσιν ἐνδεῖν τι καταμάθοις, παρὰ Ἡρακλείδα τοῦ ἐπιτρόπου τῶν ἡμετέρων κτημάτων ἀναμφιλέκτως ὅπερ ἀναγκαῖον εἶναι καταμάθοις, αἰτῆσαι ὀφείλεις, καὶ γὰρ παρόντι αὐτῷ προσέταξα ἵν' εἴ τι ἂν χρημάτων παρ' αὐτοῦ ἡ σὴ στερρότης αἰτήσῃ, ἄνευ δισταγμοῦ τινος ἀπαριθμῆσαι φροντίσῃ. καὶ 4
ἐπειδὴ ἐπυθόμην τινὰς μὴ καθεστώσης διανοίας τυγχάνοντας ἀνθρώπους τὸν λαὸν τῆς ἁγιωτάτης καὶ καθολικῆς ἐκκλησίας φαύλῃ τινὶ ὑπονοθεύσει βούλεσθαι διαστρέφειν, γίνωσκέ με Ἀνυλίνῳ ἀνθυπάτῳ ἀλλὰ μὴν καὶ Πατρικίῳ τῷ οὐικαρίῳ τῶν ἐπάρχων παροῦσι τοιαύτας ἐντολὰς δεδωκέναι ἵν' ἐν τοῖς λοιποῖς ἅπασι καὶ τούτου μάλιστα τὴν προσήκουσαν φροντίδα ποιήσωνται καὶ μὴ ἀνάσχωνται περιορᾶν τοιοῦτο γινόμενον. διόπερ εἴ 5
τινας τοιούτους ἀνθρώπους ἐν αὐτῇ τῇ μανίᾳ ἐπιμένειν κατίδοις, ἄνευ τινὸς ἀμφιβολίας τοῖς προειρημένοις δικασταῖς πρόσελθε καὶ αὐτὸ τοῦτο προσανένεγκε ὅπως αὐτοὺς ἐκεῖνοι, καθάπερ αὐτοῖς παροῦσιν ἐκέλευσα, ἐπιστρέψωσιν. ἡ θειότης τοῦ μεγάλου θεοῦ σε διαφυλάξαι ἐπὶ πολλοῖς ἔτεσιν."

VII. ΑΝΤΙΓΡΑΦΟΝ ΒΑΣΙΛΙΚΗΣ ΕΠΙΣΤΟΛΗΣ ΔΙ' ΗΣ 1
ΤΟΥΣ ΠΡΟΕΣΤΩΤΑΣ ΤΩΝ ΕΚΚΛΗΣΙΩΝ ΠΑΣΗΣ ΑΠΟΛΕΛΥΣΘΑΙ ΤΗΣ ΠΕΡΙ ΤΑ ΠΟΛΙΤΙΚΑ ΛΕΙΤΟΥΡΓΙΑΣ ΠΡΟΣΤΑΤΤΕΙ

"Χαῖρε, Ἀνυλῖνε, τιμιώτατε ἡμῖν. ἐπειδὴ ἐκ πλειόνων πραγμάτων φαίνεται παρεξουθενηθεῖσαν

[1] In the administration of this period, the Vicar was the governor of a "diocese" or group of provinces; the Prefect

sent to thee by Hosius. But if, after all, thou shalt find that there is aught lacking for the fulfilment of this my purpose in respect of them all, thou shouldest ask without doubting whatsoever thou findest to be necessary from Heraclides our procurator fiscal. For indeed when he was here I gave him orders that if thy Firmness should ask any money from him, he should be careful to pay it over without any scruple. And since I have learnt that certain persons of unstable mind are desirous of turning aside the laity of the most holy and Catholic Church by some vile method of seduction, know that I have given such commands to Anulinus, the proconsul, and moreover to Patricius, the Vicar of the Prefects,[1] when they were here, that they should give due attention in all other matters and especially in this, and not suffer such an occurrence to be overlooked; therefore if thou observest any such men continuing in this madness, do not thou hesitate to go to the above-mentioned judges and bring this matter before them, so that (as I commanded them when they were here) they may turn these people from their error. May the divinity of the great God preserve thee for many years."

VII. *Copy of an Imperial Letter, in which he gives orders that the presidents of the churches be released from all public offices.*

"Greeting, Anulinus, our most honoured Sir. Since from many facts it appears that the setting at

had under his control a still larger administrative area. Patricius as Vicar of Africa was in the jurisdiction of the Prefect of Italy. His title *vicarius praefectorum* (pl.) is a relic of more ancient days, when the Prefects were regarded as associated together in office.

τὴν θρησκείαν, ἐν ᾗ ἡ κορυφαία τῆς ἁγιωτάτης ἐπουρανίου αἰδὼς φυλάττεται, μεγάλους κινδύνους ἐνηνοχέναι τοῖς δημοσίοις πράγμασιν αὐτήν τε ταύτην ἐνθέσμως ἀναληφθεῖσαν καὶ φυλαττομένην μεγίστην εὐτυχίαν τῷ Ῥωμαϊκῷ ὀνόματι καὶ σύμπασι τοῖς τῶν ἀνθρώπων πράγμασιν ἐξαίρετον εὐδαιμονίαν παρεσχηκέναι, τῶν θείων εὑρεσιῶν τοῦτο παρεχουσῶν, ἔδοξεν ἐκείνους τοὺς ἄνδρας τοὺς τῇ ὀφειλομένῃ ἁγιότητι καὶ τῇ τοῦ νόμου τούτου παρεδρίᾳ τὰς ὑπηρεσίας τὰς ἐξ αὐτῶν τῇ τῆς θείας θρησκείας θεραπείᾳ παρέχοντας τῶν καμάτων τῶν ἰδίων τὰ ἔπαθλα κομίσασθαι, Ἀνυλῖνε τιμιώτατε. διόπερ ἐκείνους τοὺς 2
εἴσω τῆς ἐπαρχίας τῆς σοι πεπιστευμένης ἐν τῇ καθολικῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ, ᾗ Καικιλιανὸς ἐφέστηκεν, τὴν ἐξ αὐτῶν ὑπηρεσίαν τῇ ἁγίᾳ ταύτῃ θρησκείᾳ παρέχοντας, οὕσπερ κληρικοὺς ἐπονομάζειν εἰώθασιν, ἀπὸ πάντων ἅπαξ ἁπλῶς τῶν λειτουργιῶν βούλομαι ἀλειτουργήτους διαφυλαχθῆναι, ὅπως μὴ διά τινος πλάνης ἢ ἐξολισθήσεως ἱεροσύλου ἀπὸ τῆς θεραπείας τῆς τῇ θειότητι ὀφειλομένης ἀφέλκωνται, ἀλλὰ μᾶλλον ἄνευ τινὸς ἐνοχλήσεως τῷ ἰδίῳ νόμῳ ἐξυπηρετῶνται, ὧνπερ μεγίστην περὶ τὸ θεῖον λατρείαν ποιουμένων πλεῖστον ὅσον τοῖς κοινοῖς πράγμασι συνοίσειν δοκεῖ. ἔρρωσο, Ἀνυλῖνε, τιμιώτατε καὶ ποθεινότατε ἡμῖν."

VIII. Τοιαῦτα μὲν οὖν ἡμῖν ἡ θεία καὶ οὐράνιος 1
τῆς τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν ἐπιφανείας ἐδωρεῖτο χάρις, τοσαύτη τε ἅπασιν ἀνθρώποις ἀγαθῶν ἀφθονία διὰ τῆς ἡμετέρας ἐπρυτανεύετο εἰρήνης. καὶ ὧδε μὲν τὰ καθ' ἡμᾶς ἐν εὐφροσύναις καὶ πανηγύρεσιν 2

naught of divine worship, by which the highest reverence for the most holy and heavenly [Power] is preserved, has brought great dangers upon public affairs, and that its lawful restoration and preservation have bestowed the greatest good fortune on the Roman name and singular prosperity on all the affairs of mankind (for it is the Divine Providence which bestows these blessings): it has seemed good that those men who, with due holiness and constant observance of this law, bestow their services on the performance of divine worship, should receive the rewards of their own labours, most honoured Anulinus. Wherefore it is my wish that those persons who, within the province committed to thee, in the Catholic Church over which Caecilian presides, bestow their service on this holy worship—those whom they are accustomed to call clerics—should once for all be kept absolutely free from all the public offices, that they be not drawn away by any error or sacrilegious fault from the worship which they owe to the Divinity, but rather without any hindrance serve to the utmost their own law. For when they render supreme service to the Deity, it seems that they confer incalculable benefit on the affairs of the State. Fare thee well, Anulinus, our most honoured and esteemed Sir."

VIII. Such then were the gifts that the divine and heavenly grace of our Saviour bestowed upon us by His appearing, and such was the abundance of good things that the peace which came to us procured for all mankind. And thus our happy state was celebrated with rejoicings and festive assemblies. Never-

ἐτελεῖτο· οὐκ ἦν δὲ ἄρα τῷ μισοκάλῳ φθόνῳ τῷ τε φιλοπονήρῳ δαίμονι φορητὸς ἡ τῶν ὁρωμένων θέα, ὥσπερ οὖν οὐδὲ Λικιννίῳ πρὸς σώφρονα λογισμὸν ἐτύγχανεν αὐτάρκη τὰ τοῖς πρόσθεν δεδηλωμένοις τυράννοις συμβεβηκότα· ὃς εὖ φερομένης τῆς ἀρχῆς αὐτῷ βασιλέως τε μεγάλου Κωνσταντίνου δευτερείων τιμῆς ἐπιγαμβρίας τε καὶ συγγενείας τῆς ἀνωτάτω ἠξιωμένος, μιμήσεως μὲν τῆς τῶν καλῶν ἀπελιμπάνετο, τῆς δὲ τῶν ἀσεβῶν τυράννων μοχθηρίας ἐζήλου τὴν κακοτροπίαν, καὶ ὧν τοῦ βίου τὴν καταστροφὴν ἐπεῖδεν αὐτοῖς ὀφθαλμοῖς, τούτων ἔπεσθαι τῇ γνώμῃ μᾶλλον ἢ τῇ τοῦ κρείττονος ἐμμένειν φιλίᾳ τε καὶ διαθέσει ᾑρεῖτο. διαφθονηθείς γέ τοι τῷ πανεν- 3
εργέτῃ, πόλεμον δυσαγῆ καὶ δεινότατον πρὸς αὐτὸν ἐκφέρει, οὐ φύσεως νόμων φεισάμενος, οὐχ ὁρκωμοσιῶν οὐχ αἵματος οὐ συνθηκῶν μνήμην ἐν διανοίᾳ λαβών. ὁ μὲν γὰρ αὐτῷ οἷα πανάγαθος 4
βασιλεὺς εὐνοίας παρέχων ἀληθοῦς σύμβολα, συγγενείας τῆς πρὸς αὐτὸν οὐκ ἐφθόνησεν γάμων τε λαμπρῶν ἀδελφῆς μετουσίαν οὐκ ἀπηρνήσατο, ἀλλὰ καὶ τῆς ἐκ πατέρων εὐγενείας βασιλικοῦ τε ἀνέκαθεν αἵματος κοινωνὸν γενέσθαι ἠξίωσεν τῆς τε κατὰ πάντων ἀπολαύειν ἀρχῆς οἷα κηδεστῇ καὶ συμβασιλεῖ παρεῖχεν τὴν ἐξουσίαν, οὐκ ἔλαττον μέρος τῶν ὑπὸ Ῥωμαίους ἐθνῶν διέπειν αὐτῷ καὶ διοικεῖν κεχαρισμένος. ὁ δ' ἔμπαλιν τούτοις 5
τἀναντία διεπράττετο, παντοίας ὁσημέραι κατὰ

---

[1] Maxentius and Maximin.

[2] This perhaps refers to the treaty of December 314, when a new partition of the Empire was made, and five of the

theless the envy that hates the good, even the demon who loves the evil, could not endure the sight of what he beheld ; as indeed that which had happened to the above-mentioned tyrants[1] was not sufficient even for Licinius, to bring him to sound reason. He who had been deemed worthy of the principate in a state of prosperity, of second rank after the great Emperor Constantine, of a connexion by marriage and the most exalted kinship with him, ceased from the following of good men and zealously affected the evil manners and wickedness of the impious tyrants ; and he preferred to follow the judgement of those whose end he had seen with his very eyes, rather than continue on terms of friendship and love with his superior. Filled, in fact, with envy of the common benefactor, he waged an impious and most terrible war against him, neither giving respect to the laws of nature nor bestowing a thought on sworn treaties or ties of blood or agreements. For Constantine, all-gracious Emperor that he was, furnished him with the tokens of genuine goodwill, did not grudge him kinship with himself, and did not refuse him the enjoyment of an illustrious union in the person of his sister. Nay further, he deemed him worthy to partake of his ancestral nobility and his imperial blood and origin, and bestowed on him, as a brother-in-law and joint-emperor, the right to a share in the supreme government[2] : for of his bounty he gave him the ruling and administration of no inferior part of the peoples under the Roman sway. But Licinius pursued an exactly opposite line of conduct : he was daily contriving all kinds of

[1] European provinces passed from Licinius to Constantine (Gibbon, i. 432).

τοῦ κρείττονος μηχανὰς ἐπιτεχνώμενος πάντας τε ἐπινοῶν ἐπιβουλῆς τρόπους, ὡς ἂν κακοῖς τὸν εὐεργέτην ἀμείψοιτο. τὰ μὲν οὖν πρῶτα πειρώμενος τὴν συσκευὴν ἐπικρύπτειν, φίλος εἶναι προσεποιεῖτο, δόλῳ τε καὶ ἀπάτῃ πλειστάκις ἐπιθέμενος ῥᾷστα ἂν τυχεῖν τοῦ προσδοκωμένου ἤλπισεν· τῷ δὲ ἄρα ὁ θεὸς ἦν φίλος κηδεμών τε καὶ φύλαξ, ὃς αὐτῷ τὰς ἐν ἀπορρήτῳ καὶ σκότει μηχανωμένας ἐπιβουλὰς εἰς φῶς ἄγων διήλεγχεν. τοσοῦτον ἀρετῆς τὸ μέγα τῆς θεοσεβείας ὅπλον πρὸς ἄμυναν μὲν ἐχθρῶν, οἰκείας δὲ φυλακὴν σωτηρίας ἰσχύει· ᾧ δὴ πεφραγμένος ὁ θεοφιλέστατος ἡμῶν βασιλεὺς τὰς τοῦ δυσωνύμου πολυπλόκους ἐπιβουλὰς διεδίδρασκεν. ὃ δὲ τὴν λαθραίαν συσκευὴν ὡς οὐδαμῶς ἑώρα κατὰ γνώμην αὐτῷ χωροῦσαν, τοῦ θεοῦ πάντα δόλον τε καὶ ῥᾳδιουργίαν τῷ θεοφιλεῖ βασιλεῖ κατάφωρα ποιοῦντος, οὐκέθ' οἷός τε ὢν ἐπικρύπτεσθαι, προφανῆ πόλεμον αἴρεται. ὁμόσε δῆτα Κωνσταντίνῳ πολεμεῖν διαγνούς, ἤδη καὶ κατὰ τοῦ θεοῦ τῶν ὅλων, ὃν ἠπίστατο σέβειν αὐτόν, παρατάττεσθαι ὥρμᾶτο, κἄπειτα τοὺς ὑπ' αὐτῷ θεοσεβεῖς, μηδὲν μηδ' ὅλως πώποτε τὴν ἀρχὴν αὐτοῦ λυπηρὸν διαθεμένους, ἠρέμα τέως καὶ ἡσυχῇ πολιορκεῖν ἐπεβάλλετο. καὶ τοῦτ' ἔπραττεν, δεινῶς ἀβλεπτεῖν ὑπὸ τῆς ἐμφύτου κακίας ἠναγκασμένος. οὔτ' οὖν τὴν μνήμην τῶν πρὸ αὐτοῦ Χριστιανοὺς ἐκδιωξάντων πρὸ ὀφθαλμῶν ἔθετο οὐδ' ὧν αὐτὸς ὀλετὴρ καὶ τιμωρὸς δι' ἃς μετῆλθον ἀσεβείας κατέστη· ἀλλὰ γὰρ τοῦ σώφρονος ἐκτραπεὶς λογισμοῦ, διαρρήδην δὲ μανεὶς τὰς φρένας, τὸν θεὸν αὐτὸν οἷα δὴ Κωνσταντίνου βοηθὸν ἀντὶ τοῦ βοηθουμένου πολεμεῖν ἐγνώκει.

Cf. Eph. 5, 11-13

devices against his superior, and inventing all manner of plans to reward his benefactor with evil. At first, indeed, he attempted to conceal the intrigue, and feigned friendliness, hoping that frequent recourse to guile and deceit would most easily secure his expectations. But God proved to be Constantine's Friend and Protector and Guardian, who brought to light the plots that were devised secretly and in darkness, and confounded them. Such power is there in the great weapon of godliness to ward off the enemy and to preserve its own in safety. Fenced verily with this, our Emperor, most dear to God, escaped the plots of this ill-famed master of intrigue. And he, when he saw that his covert design was by no means going according to his wish (for God disclosed every guile and wickedness to the Emperor whom He loved), since he was no longer able to conceal himself, raised an open warfare. And, to be sure, in his decision to make war at close quarters upon Constantine, he was already hastening to battle also against the God of the universe, whom, as he knew, Constantine worshipped; and so he designed an attack, quietly and silently at first, upon his godly subjects, who had never at any time done any harm at all to his rule. And this he did, because his innate wickedness had perforce brought upon him terrible blindness. Thus he neither kept before his eyes the memory of those who had persecuted Christians before him, nor of those whom he himself destroyed and punished for the evil deeds they had pursued. But he turned aside from the path of sound reason, and becoming altogether mad, decided to make war on God Himself, as the Protector of Constantine, instead of on him who was being protected.

Καὶ πρῶτα μὲν τῆς οἰκίας τῆς αὐτοῦ πάντα 1
Χριστιανὸν ἀπελαύνει, ἔρημον αὐτὸς αὐτὸν ὁ
δείλαιος τῆς τούτων καθιστὰς ὑπὲρ αὐτοῦ πρὸς
τὸν θεὸν εὐχῆς, ἣν ὑπὲρ ἁπάντων αὐτοῖς ποιεῖσθαι
Cf. 1 Tim. 2, 1. 2 πάτριον μάθημα τυγχάνει· εἶτα δὲ τοὺς κατὰ
πόλιν στρατιώτας ἐκκρίνεσθαι καὶ ἀποβάλλεσθαι
τοῦ τῆς τιμῆς ἀξιώματος, εἰ μὴ τοῖς δαίμοσιν
θύειν αἱροῖντο, παρακελεύεται.

Καὶ ἔτι γε ταῦτα ἦν μικρά, τῇ τῶν μειζόνων 1
συγκρινόμενα παραθέσει. τί δεῖ τῶν καθ' ἕκαστα
καὶ κατὰ μέρος τῷ θεομισεῖ πεπραγμένων μνη-
μονεύειν ὅπως τε νόμους ἀνόμους ὁ παρανομώ-
τατος ἐξεῦρεν; τούς γέ τοι ἐν ταῖς εἰρκταῖς
ταλαιπωρουμένους ἐνομοθέτει μηδένα μεταδόσει
τροφῆς φιλανθρωπεύεσθαι μηδ' ἐλεεῖν τοὺς ἐν
δεσμοῖς λιμῷ διαφθειρομένους μηδ' ἁπλῶς ἀγαθὸν
εἶναι μηδένα μηδ' ἀγαθόν τι πράττειν τοὺς καὶ
πρὸς αὐτῆς τῆς φύσεως ἐπὶ τὸ συμπαθὲς τῶν
πέλας ἑλκομένους. καὶ ἦν γε νόμων οὗτος ἄντι-
κρυς ἀναιδὴς καὶ ἀπηνέστατος, πᾶσαν ἥμερον
ὑπερεξάγων φύσιν, ἐφ' ᾧ καὶ τιμωρία προσέκειτο
τοὺς ἐλεοῦντας τὰ ἴσα πάσχειν τοῖς ἐλεουμένοις
δεσμοῖς τε καὶ φυλακαῖς καθείργνυσθαι, τὴν ἴσην
τοῖς καταπονουμένοις ὑπομένοντας τιμωρίαν, τοὺς
τὰ φιλάνθρωπα διακονουμένους. τοιαῦται αἱ Λικιν- 1
νίου διατάξεις. τί χρὴ τὰς περὶ γάμων καινο-
τομίας ἀπαριθμεῖσθαι ἢ τοὺς ἐπὶ τοῖς τὸν βίον
μεταλλάττουσιν νεωτερισμοὺς αὐτοῦ, δι' ὧν τοὺς
παλαιοὺς Ῥωμαίων εὖ καὶ σοφῶς κειμένους νόμους
περιγράψαι τολμήσας, βαρβάρους τινὰς καὶ ἀν-

[1] *Cf.* Dion. Al. *ad Herm.* (vii. 1 above).

First, he drove away every Christian from his palace; thus by his own act depriving himself, wretched man, of the prayers to God on his behalf,[1] which after the custom of their fathers they are taught to make for all men. Then he gave orders that the soldiers in cities were to be singled out and deprived of honourable rank, unless they chose to sacrifice to demons.

And, moreover, these were but small matters when judged by comparison with graver measures. What need is there to mention singly and successively the things done by this hater of God: how, to wit, this most lawless of men invented lawless laws? In fact, with regard to those who were suffering under imprisonment, he laid down a law that no one should treat them humanely by distributing food, or have pity on those who were perishing of hunger in bonds; and that no one should be kindly at all, or do any kindly action, even when they were moved by mere natural feeling to sympathize with their neighbours. And of his laws this one at least was quite openly shameless and the harshest of all, in its putting aside of every civilized, natural feeling, by which also it was enacted as a punishment that those who showed pity should suffer the same as those whom they pitied, and that those who humanely ministered should endure the same punishment as those who were undergoing it, and be consigned to bonds and imprisonment. Such were the ordinances of Licinius. Why should one recount his innovations with regard to marriage, or his revolutionary changes in respect of those who were departing this life, wherein he dared to annul the ancient laws of the Romans well and wisely laid down, and in their stead brought in certain that were

ἡμέρους ἀντεισῆγεν, νόμους ἀνόμους ὡς ἀληθῶς
καὶ παρανόμους, ἐπισκήψεις τε μυρίας κατὰ τῶν
ὑποχειρίων ἐθνῶν ἐπενόει χρυσοῦ τε καὶ ἀργύρου
παντοίας εἰσπράξεις ἀναμετρήσεις τε γῆς καὶ τῶν
κατ' ἀγροὺς μηκέτ' ὄντων ἀνθρώπων πρόπαλαι δὲ
κατοιχομένων ἐπιζήμιον κέρδος, οἵους δ' ἐφεῦρεν
ἐπὶ τούτοις ὁ μισάνθρωπος κατὰ μηδὲν ἠδικη-
κότων ἐξορισμούς, οἵας εὐπατριδῶν καὶ ἀξιολόγων
ἀνδρῶν ἀπαγωγάς, ὧν δὴ τὰς κουριδίας ἀπο-
ζευγνὺς γαμετὰς μιαροῖς τισιν οἰκέταις ἐφ' ὕβρει
πράξεως αἰσχρᾶς παρεδίδου, ὅσαις δὲ αὐτὸς ὁ
ἐσχατόγηρως γυναιξὶν ὑπάνδροις παρθένοις τε
κόραις ἐμπαροινῶν τὴν ἀκόλαστον τῆς αὐτοῦ
ψυχῆς ἐπιθυμίαν ἐπλήρου—τί χρὴ ταῦτα μηκύνειν,
τῆς τῶν ἐσχάτων αὐτοῦ πράξεων ὑπερβολῆς μικρὰ
τὰ πρῶτα καὶ τὸ μηθὲν εἶναι διελεγχούσης;

Τὸ γοῦν τέλος αὐτῷ τῆς μανίας ἐπὶ τοὺς ἐπι-
σκόπους ἐχώρει, ἤδη τε τούτους, ὡς ἂν τοῦ ἐπὶ
πάντων θεοῦ θεράποντας, ἐναντίους ὑπάρχειν οἷς
ἔδρα ἡγούμενος, οὕπω μὲν ἐκ τοῦ φανεροῦ διὰ
τὸν ἀπὸ τοῦ κρείττονος φόβον, λάθρα δὲ αὖθις καὶ
δολίως συνεσκευάζετο, ἀνῄρει τε τούτων δι' ἐπι-
βουλῆς τῶν ἡγεμόνων τοὺς δοκιμωτάτους. καὶ ὁ
τρόπος δὲ τοῦ κατ' αὐτῶν φόνου ξένος τις ἦν καὶ
οἷος οὐδεπώποτε ἠκούσθη. τὰ γοῦν ἀμφὶ τὴν
Ἀμάσειαν καὶ τὰς λοιπὰς τοῦ Πόντου πόλεις
κατεργασθέντα πᾶσαν ὑπερβολὴν ὠμότητος ὑπερ-
ηκόντισεν· ἔνθα τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν τοῦ θεοῦ αἱ μὲν
ἐξ ὕψους εἰς ἔδαφος αὖθις κατερρίπτοντο, τὰς δὲ
ἀπέκλειον, ὡς ἂν μὴ συνάγοιτό τις τῶν εἰωθότων
μηδὲ τῷ θεῷ τὰς ἐποφειλομένας ἀποδιδῷ λατρείας.
συντελεῖσθαι γὰρ οὐχ ἡγεῖτο ὑπὲρ αὐτοῦ τὰς

barbarous and uncivilized, that truly were lawless and contrary to law; or the countless assessments that he devised to the detriment of his subject peoples, and the manifold exactions of gold and silver, the revaluations of land, and the lucrative fines of men in the country parts no longer alive but long since departed? And, moreover, as to the banishments that this hater of mankind inflicted upon those who had done no wrong, the arrests of noble and highly-esteemed men, whose wedded wives he separated from them and consigned to certain abominable members of his household for disgraceful insult; as to the many married women and unwedded girls with whom this drunken old dotard satisfied his soul's unbridled lust—why should one enlarge on these things, when the outrageous character of his last deeds show the first to be small and of no account?

For example, in the final stage of his madness he proceeded against the bishops, and deeming them opposed to his doings, as being the servants of the supreme God, forthwith plotted against them, not openly as yet (for he feared his superior), but once more with secrecy and guile; and the most highly respected of these, by the contrivance of the governors, he put to death. And the manner in which they were murdered was strange and hitherto unheard of. For instance, the things that were done at Amasea and the other cities of Pontus outdid every excess of cruelty. There some of the churches of God were again thrown down from the top to the bottom; others they shut up, so that none of the accustomed worshippers might assemble or pay to God the service due to Him. For he did not think that the prayers were offered on his behalf—such was the

εὐχάς, συνειδότι φαύλῳ τοῦτο λογιζόμενος, ἀλλ' ὑπὲρ τοῦ θεοφιλοῦς βασιλέως πάντα πράττειν ἡμᾶς καὶ τὸν θεὸν ἱλεοῦσθαι πέπειστο· ἔνθεν ὥρμᾶτο καθ' ἡμῶν τὸν θυμὸν ἐπισκήπτειν. καὶ δῆτα τῶν ἡγεμόνων οἱ κόλακες, τὰ φίλα πράττειν τῷ δυσαγεῖ πεπεισμένοι, τῶν ἐπισκόπων τοὺς μὲν συνήθως ταῖς τῶν κακούργων ἀνδρῶν περιέβαλλον τιμωρίαις, ἀπήγοντό τε καὶ ἐκολάζοντο ἀπροφασίστως τοῖς μιαιφόνοις ὁμοίως οἱ μηδὲν ἠδικηκότες· ἤδη δέ τινες καινοτέραν ὑπέμενον τελευτήν, ξίφει τὸ σῶμα εἰς πολλὰ τμήματα κατακρεουργούμενοι καὶ μετὰ τὴν ἀπηνῆ ταύτην καὶ φρικτοτάτην θέαν τοῖς τῆς θαλάσσης βυθοῖς ἰχθύσιν εἰς βορὰν ῥιπτούμενοι. φυγαὶ δὴ αὖθις ἐπὶ τούτοις τῶν θεοσεβῶν ἐγίνοντο ἀνδρῶν, καὶ πάλιν ἀγροὶ καὶ πάλιν ἐρημίαι νάπαι τε καὶ ὄρη τοὺς Χριστοῦ θεράποντας ὑπεδέχοντο. ἐπεὶ δὲ καὶ ταῦτα τοῦτον προυχώρει τῷ δυσσεβεῖ τὸν τρόπον, λοιπὸν καὶ τὸν κατὰ πάντων ἀνακινεῖν διωγμὸν ἐπὶ διάνοιαν ἐβάλλετο, ἐκράτει τε γνώμης καὶ οὐδὲν ἐμποδὼν ἦν αὐτῷ μὴ οὐχὶ ἐν ἔργῳ χωρεῖν, εἰ μὴ τάχιστα τὸ μέλλον ἔσεσθαι προλαβὼν ὁ τῶν οἰκείων ψυχῶν ὑπέρμαχος θεὸς ὡς ἐν βαθεῖ σκότῳ καὶ νυκτὶ ζοφωδεστάτῃ φωστῆρα μέγαν ἀθρόως καὶ σωτῆρα τοῖς πᾶσιν ἐξέλαμψεν, τὸν αὐτοῦ θεράποντα Κωνσταντῖνον
Ex. 6, 1, etc. Ex. 14, 31 ὑψηλῷ βραχίονι ἐπὶ τὰ τῇδε χειραγωγήσας.

IX. τούτῳ μὲν οὖν ἄνωθεν ἐξ οὐρανοῦ καρπὸν εὐσεβείας ἐπάξιον τὰ τρόπαια τῆς κατὰ τῶν ἀσεβῶν παρεῖχε νίκης, τὸν δ' ἀλιτήριον αὐτοῖς συμβούλοις ἅπασιν καὶ φίλοις ὑπὸ τοῖς Κωνσταντίνου ποσὶν πρηνῆ κατέβαλεν.

Ὡς γὰρ εἰς ἔσχατα μανίας τὰ κατ' αὐτὸν

reckoning of an evil conscience—but had been persuaded that we did everything and supplicated God on behalf of the Emperor whom He loved. Hence he hastened to vent his wrath on us. And in truth the sycophants among the governors, persuaded that they were doing what pleased the impious man, plied some of the bishops with penalties suitable for malefactors, and those who had done no wrong were led away and punished, without a pretext, like murderers. And some endured at that time a more novel form of death : their bodies were cut with a sword into many pieces, and after this cruel and most fearful sight they were cast into the depths of the sea as food for fishes. Thereupon the men of God began again to flee, and once more the fields, once more the deserts, glens and mountains received the servants of Christ. And when the impious man was thus successful in these measures also, he then conceived the idea of stirring up anew the persecution against all. He had power to accomplish his purpose, and there was nothing to hinder him carrying it into effect, had not God, the Champion of the souls that are His own, foreseeing with all speed what would come to pass, caused to shine forth all at once, as it were out of deep darkness and most murky night, a great luminary and saviour of them all, leading thither with a lofty arm his servant Constantine. IX. To him, then, as the worthy fruit of piety did God vouchsafe from heaven above the trophies of victory over the wicked men ; as for the guilty one, He laid him low, with all his counsellors and friends, prone beneath the feet of Constantine.

For when Licinius had carried his madness to the

ἤλαυνεν, οὐκέτ' ἀνεκτὸν εἶναι λογισάμενος βασιλεὺς ὁ τῷ θεῷ φίλος τὸν σώφρονα συναγαγὼν λογισμὸν καὶ τὸν στερρὸν τοῦ δικαίου τρόπον φιλανθρωπίᾳ κερασάμενος, ἐπαμῦναι κρίνει τοῖς ὑπὸ τῷ τυράννῳ ταλαιπωρουμένοις, καὶ τό γε πλεῖστον ἀνθρώπων γένος, βραχεῖς λυμεῶνας ἐκποδὼν ποιησάμενος, ἀνασώσασθαι ὁρμᾶται. μόνῃ γὰρ αὐτῷ χρωμένῳ φιλανθρωπίᾳ τὸν πρὸ τούτου χρόνον καὶ τὸν οὐ συμπαθείας ἄξιον ἐλεοῦντι, τῷ μὲν οὐδὲν ἐγίνετο πλέον, τῆς κακίας οὐκ ἀπαλλαττομένῳ, αὖξοντι δὲ μᾶλλον τὴν κατὰ τῶν ὑποχειρίων ἐθνῶν λύτταν, τοῖς δὲ κακουμένοις οὔτις ἐλείπετο σωτηρίας ἐλπίς, ὑπὸ δεινῷ θηρὶ κατατυραννουμένοις. δι' ὃ δὴ τῷ φιλαγάθῳ μίξας τὸ μισοπόνηρον ὁ τῶν ἀγαθῶν ἀρωγὸς πρόεισιν ἅμα παιδὶ Κρίσπῳ βασιλεῖ φιλανθρωποτάτῳ σωτήριον δεξιὰν ἅπασιν τοῖς ἀπολλυμένοις ἐκτείνας· εἶθ' οἷα παμβασιλεῖ θεῷ θεοῦ τε παιδὶ σωτῆρι ἁπάντων ποδηγῷ καὶ συμμάχῳ χρώμενοι, πατὴρ ἅμα καὶ υἱὸς ἄμφω κύκλῳ διελόντες τὴν κατὰ τῶν θεομισῶν παράταξιν, ῥᾳδίαν τὴν νίκην ἀποφέρονται, τῶν κατὰ τὴν συμβολὴν πάντων ἐξευμαρισθέντων αὐτοῖς ὑπὸ τοῦ θεοῦ κατὰ γνώμην. ἀθρόως δῆτα καὶ λόγου θᾶττον οἱ μὲν χθὲς καὶ πρὸ ἡμέρας θανάτου
Acts 9, 1 πνέοντες καὶ ἀπειλῆς οὐκέτ' ἦσαν, οὐδὲ μέχρις ὀνόματος μνημονευόμενοι, γραφαί τε αὐτῶν καὶ τιμαὶ τὴν ἀξίαν αἰσχύνην ἀπελάμβανον, καὶ ἃ τοῖς πάλαι δυσσεβέσιν τυράννοις ἐνεῖδεν αὐτοῖς ὀφθαλμοῖς Λικίννιος, ταῦτα ὁμοίως καὶ αὐτὸς ἔπασχεν,

[1] Licinius was defeated first at Adrianople, 3 July, and secondly, when he had fled to Byzantium and had been forced to cross the Straits, at Chrysopolis (Scutari),

uttermost, the Emperor, the friend of God, reckoning that he was no longer to be endured, summoned his sound powers of reason, and tempering the stern qualities of justice with humanity determined to succour those who were being evil intreated under the tyrant's power ; and hastened, by putting a few spoilers out of the way, to rescue the greater part of the human race. For hitherto, when he employed humanity alone and showed mercy to him who was undeserving of sympathy, there was no improvement in Licinius : he did not give over his wickedness, but rather increased his mad fury against his subject peoples ; while as for those who were ill-treated, no hope of salvation was left for them, ground down as they were by a terrible wild beast. Wherefore, mingling a hatred of evil with a love of goodness, the defender of the good went forth, with that most humane Emperor, his son Crispus, stretching out the right hand of salvation to all who were perishing. Then, inasmuch as they had God the universal King and Son of God, the Saviour of all, as their Guide and Ally, the father and son both together divided their battle-array against the haters of God on all sides and easily won the victory ;[1] for everything in the encounter was made smooth for them by God according to His purpose. Yea verily, all at once and in less time than it takes to say it, those who the other day were breathing death and threatening were no more, nor was even so much as their name remembered ; their pictures and honours received a well-deserved disgrace ; and the things that Licinius had seen with his own eyes happen to the impious tyrants

[1] September 18 or 20, 324. Shortly afterwards, Constantine had him put to death.

Zeph. 3, 2 ὅτι μηδ' αὐτὸς ἐδέξατο παιδείαν μηδὲ ἐπὶ ταῖς τῶν πέλας ἐσωφρονίσθη μάστιξιν, τὴν ὁμοίαν δ' ἐκείνοις τῆς ἀσεβείας μετελθὼν ὁδόν, ἐπὶ τὸν ἴσον αὐτοῖς ἐνδίκως περιηνέχθη κρημνόν.

'Αλλ' οὗτος μὲν ταύτῃ πῃ βεβλημένος ἔκειτο· 6
ὁ δ' ἀρετῇ πάσῃ θεοσεβείας ἐκπρέπων μέγιστος νικητὴς Κωνσταντῖνος σὺν παιδὶ Κρίσπῳ, βασιλεῖ θεοφιλεστάτῳ καὶ τὰ πάντα τοῦ πατρὸς ὁμοίῳ, τὴν οἰκείαν ἑῴαν ἀπελάμβανον καὶ μίαν ἡνωμένην τὴν 'Ρωμαίων κατὰ τὸ παλαιὸν παρεῖχον ἀρχήν, τὴν ἀπ' ἀνίσχοντος ἡλίου πᾶσαν ἐν κύκλῳ κατὰ θάτερα τῆς οἰκουμένης ἄρκτον τε ὁμοῦ καὶ μεσημβρίαν εἰς ἕσχατα δυομένης ἡμέρας ὑπὸ τὴν αὐτῶν ἄγοντες εἰρήνην. ἀφῄρητο δ' οὖν ἐξ ἀνθρώπων 7
πᾶν δέος τῶν πρὶν αὐτοὺς πιεζούντων, λαμπρὰς δ' ἐτέλουν καὶ πανηγυρικὰς ἑορτῶν ἡμέρας, ἣν τε φωτὸς ἔμπλεα πάντα, καὶ μειδιῶσι προσώποις ὄμμασί τε φαιδροῖς οἱ πρὶν κατηφεῖς ἀλλήλους ἔβλεπον, χορεῖαι δ' αὐτοῖς καὶ ὕμνοι κατὰ πόλεις ὁμοῦ καὶ ἀγροὺς τὸν παμβασιλέα θεὸν πρώτιστα πάντων, ὅτι δὴ τοῦτ' ἐδιδάχθησαν, κἄπειτα τὸν εὐσεβῆ βασιλέα παισὶν ἅμα θεοφιλέσιν ἐγέραιρον, κακῶν δ' ἀμνηστία παλαιῶν ἦν καὶ λήθη πάσης 8
δυσσεβείας, παρόντων δ' ἀγαθῶν ἀπόλαυσις καὶ προσέτι μελλόντων προσδοκίαι. ἥπλωντο δ' οὖν κατὰ πάντα τόπον τοῦ νικητοῦ βασιλέως φιλανθρωπίας ἔμπλεοι διατάξεις νόμοι τε μεγαλοδωρεᾶς καὶ ἀληθοῦς εὐσεβείας γνωρίσματα περιέχοντες. οὕτω δῆτα πάσης τυραννίδος ἐκκαθαρθείσης, 9
μόνοις ἐφυλάττετο τὰ τῆς προσηκούσης βασιλείας βέβαιά τε καὶ ἀνεπίφθονα Κωνσταντίνῳ καὶ τοῖς

of days gone by, these he himself also likewise suffered; for neither did he receive correction nor did he learn wisdom from the strokes that fell upon his neighbours, but pursued the same path of iniquity as they did, and justly reeled over the same precipice.

Thus was Licinius cast down prostrate. But Constantine the most mighty Victor, resplendent with every virtue that godliness bestows, together with his son Crispus, an Emperor most dear to God and in all respects like unto his father, recovered the East that belonged to them, and formed the Roman Empire, as in the days of old, into a single united whole, bringing under their peaceful rule all of it, from the rising sun round about in the two directions, north as well as south, even to the uttermost limits of the declining day. So then, there was taken away from men all fear of those who formerly oppressed them; they celebrated brilliant festivals; all things were filled with light, and men, formerly downcast, looked at each other with smiling countenances and beaming eyes; with dancing and hymns in city and country alike they gave honour first of all to God the universal King, for this they had been instructed to do, and then to the pious Emperor with his sons beloved of God; old ills were forgotten and oblivion cast on every deed of impiety; present good things were enjoyed, with the further hope of those which were yet for to come. And, in short, there were promulgated in every place ordinances of the victorious Emperor full of love for humanity, and laws that betokened munificence and true piety. Thus verily, when all tyranny had been purged away, the kingdom that belonged to them was preserved stedfast and undisputed for Constantine and his sons alone;

αὐτοῦ παισίν, οἳ τῶν πρόσθεν ἁπάντων ἀποσμήξαντες τοῦ βίου τὴν θεοστυγίαν, τῶν ἐκ θεοῦ πρυτανευθέντων ἀγαθῶν αὐτοῖς ἠσθημένως τὸ φιλάρετον καὶ θεοφιλὲς τό τε πρὸς τὸ θεῖον εὐσεβὲς καὶ εὐχάριστον δι' ὧν εἰς προῦπτον ἅπασιν ἀνθρώποις παρέσχον ὁρᾶν, ἐπεδείξαντο

who, when they had made it their very first action to cleanse the world from hatred of God, conscious of the good things that He had bestowed upon them, displayed their love of virtue and of God, their piety and gratitude towards the Deity, by their manifest deeds in the sight of all men.

INDEX OF PROPER NAMES

IN VOLS. I. AND II.

Abdus, i. 95
Abercius Marcellus, i. 473
Abgar Uchama, i. 89-97
Abilius, i. 233, 241
Abraham, i. 15, 41-45
Achaeus, ii. 171
Achillas, ii. 243
Achior, i. 63
Actium, ii. 53
Adamantius, name of Origen, ii. 49
Adauctus, ii. 287
Adiabene, i. 137
Aelia, i. 137, 313; ii. 65, 139. See also Jerusalem
Aelianus, ii. 215
Aelius Publius, i. 495
Aemilianus, ii. 155-161
Aemilius Frontinus, i. 491
Africa, ii. 269, 455, 459
Africanus, i. 51-65; ii. 83-85
Agabus, i. 117, 485
Agapius, ii. 241
Agathobuli, the, ii. 237
Agathonice, i 359
Agrippa I., i. 117, 129-133
Agrippa II., i. 161, 179, 231
Agrippa Castor, i. 315
Agrippinus, i. 373, 461
Albinus, i. 177-179, 223
Alburnus, i. 113
Alce, i. 357
Alcibiades, martyr, i. 443
Alcibiades, Montanist, i. 443
Alcibiades, opponent of Montanism, i. 485
Alexander, alabarch, i. 119
Alexander, bishop in Cappadocia and subsequently of Jerusalem, ii. 31, 37-39, 43, 49, 65, 79, 93, 131, 139
Alexander, Bishop of Rome, i. 305 309, 451
Alexander, martyrs named, i. 431, 483; ii. 107, 167
Alexander, Montanist martyr, i. 489-491
Alexander Severus, ii. 67, 79
Alexandria, i. 305, 463; ii. 9 ff., 79, 99 ff., 231, 243 f., 279, 289, 297
Alexas, i. 71
Amasea, ii. 473
Amastris, i. 381
Ambrose, ii. 55, 69, 81
Ammia, i. 485
Ammon, Bishop of Bernice, ii. 209
Ammon, martyr, ii. 109
Ammonarion, ii. 107
Ammonius, martyr, ii. 297
Ammonius Saccas, ii. 59 ff.
Ananias, courier, i. 89
Ananus, son of Ananus (Annas), i. 177 f.
Anatolius, ii. 229 ff., 244 f.
Anchialus, i. 495
Andrew, i. 191, 293
Anencletus, i. 233, 241, 449
Anicetus, i. 327 f., 335, 373 f., 451, 511
Annas (Ananus), i. 75 f.
Annianus, i. 179, 233, 241
Anonymous writer on Montanism, i. 473 ff.
Anteros, ii. 81
Anthimus, ii. 267, 295
Antinoopolis, i. 321; ii. 87
Antinous, i. 321
Antioch, ii. 39, 131, 209 ff., 289 f., 295, 335
Antipas, Herod, i. 73 ff., 117

Antipater, i. 51, 61
Antoninus, i. 399
Antoninus. See Marcus Aurelius
Antoninus (Caracalla), ii. 31, 67
Antoninus (Elagabalus), ii. 67
Antoninus Pius, i. 331 f., 369, 391, 449
Antoninus Verus. See Marcus Aurelius
Antony, i. 47, 61
Anulinus, ii. 453 f., 457, 463 f.
Apamea on the Maeander, i. 481, 483
Apelles, i. 467 ff.
Apion, grammarian, i. 119, 291
Apion, writer, i. 515
Apocalypse of John, i. 235 f., 257, 293, 371 f., 385, 457, 493; ii. 77, 197 ff.
Apolinarius, i. 375, 387, 393 f., 447, 473, 493 f.
Apollonia, ii. 103
Apolloniades, i. 523
Apollonius, martyr, i. 501
Apollonius, writer against Montanism, i. 487 ff.
Apollophanes, ii. 59
Aquila, Prefect of Egypt, ii. 17, 25
Aquila, presbyter, ii. 165
Aquila, translator of O.T., i. 459; ii. 51 f.
Arabia, ii. 63, 87, 91, 287
Arabian Mountain, ii. 111
Arabianus, i. 515
Archelaus, i. 53 f., 73
Ardabav, i. 475
Aretas, i. 79
Aristides, apologist, i. 309
Aristides, correspondent of Africanus, i. 55; ii. 85
Aristion, i. 293, 297
Aristobulus II., High Priest, i. 53, 61
Aristobulus, philosopher, ii. 45, 237
Ariston of Pella, i. 313
Aristotle, i. 523; ii. 230
Aries, ii. 459
Armenia, ii. 129, 351
Arsinoë, ii. 195
Artaxerxes, i. 229, 461
Artemon (Artemas), i. 517; ii. 223
Ascalon, i. 51, 61
Asclepiades, Bishop of Antioch, ii. 39, 67
Asclepiades, heretic, i. 523
Asclepiodotus, i. 519
Asphaltites, Lake. See Dead Sea
Asterius Urbanus (Urbanus), i. 481
Astyrius, ii. 173 f.
Ater, ii. 107
Athenodore, ii. 83, 171, 211
Athens, i. 379, 391; ii. 85
Attalus, i. 415, 425 ff., 443
Atticus, Bishop of Synnada, ii. 65
Atticus, the Consular, i. 275
Augustus, i. 47, 51, 53, 73, 389 f.
Aurelian, ii. 213, 225
Aurelius Quirinius, ii. 169
Auses, i. 29
Autolycus, i. 385

Babylas, ii. 83, 95
Babylon (meaning Rome), i. 145
Bacchius, i. 333
Bacchylides, i. 381
Bacchyllus, i. 505
Bar Cabbas, i. 317
Bar Chochebas, i. 311 f.
Bar Coph, i. 317
Bardesanes, i. 399
Barnabas, i. 83, 105, 115 f., 127; ii. 203
—Epistle of, i. 257; ii. 47
Barsabas, i. 295
Bartholomew, i. 463
Basilicus, i. 467
Basilides, Bishop in Pentapolis, ii. 209
Basilides, heresiarch, i. 315 f.
Basilides, martyr, ii. 25 f.
Basilidians, i. 377
Bathezor, i. 213
Bernice, ii. 209
Beryllus, ii. 65, 87
Besas, ii. 107
Bethlehem, i. 47, 65, 73
Beththera, i. 313
Biblis, i. 419
Bithynia, i. 191, 195; ii. 141
Blandina, i. 415, 425 ff.
Blastus, i. 471, 495
Bolanus, ii. 215
Bostra, ii. 65, 87

Caecilian, ii. 455, 461 f., 465
Caesar the philosopher, i. 333
Caesarea, i. 115; ii. 85, 167, 171, 297

Caesarea in Cappadocia, ii. 211
Caesarea Philippi, ii. 175 f.
Caiaphas, i. 75 f.
Caius. See Gaius
Callirhoë, i. 69
Callistus, ii. 67
Candidus, i. 515
Caparattaea, i. 261
Cappadocia, ii. 287
Caricus, i. 493; ii. 41
Carinus, ii. 225
Carpocrates, i. 317
Carpocratians, i. 377
Carpus, i. 359
Carthage, ii. 139, 455, 461
Carus, ii. 225
Cassian, ii. 45
Cassius, i. 513
Celadion, i. 329, 373
Celerinus, ii. 117
Celsus, Bishop of Iconium, ii. 65
Celsus, writer against Christianity, ii. 91
Cephas, i. 83 f.
Cephro, ii. 159 f.
Cerdo, Bishop of Alexandria, i. 241
Cerdo, heretic, i. 327
Cerinthus, i. 263 ff., 337; ii. 197
Chaeremon, Bishop of Nilopolis, ii. 111
Chaeremon, Deacon of Alexandria, ii. 155 f., 165
Chaeremon, Stoic, ii. 59
Chrestus, ii. 457
Chrysophora, i. 383
Clarus, i. 513
Claudius, i. 127, 133, 159 f.
Clemens, Flavius, i. 237
Clement, Bishop of Rome, i. 197, 233 f., 241, 289 f., 375, 383, 449 f.; ii. 45
Clement of Alexandria, i. 105, 177, 243 ff., 389, 463 f., 517; ii. 27, 39, 43 ff.
Cleobius, Cleobians, i. 377
Cleopatra, i. 47
Clopas, i. 233, 273 f., 375
Cnossus, i. 381
Cochaba, i. 63
Coele Syria, i. 465
Colluthion, ii. 161
Colon, ii. 129
Commodus, i. 461, 501
Constantine, ii. 299 ff., 317, 359-365, 371, 387, 445-465, 475, 479 f.
Constantius, ii. 299 f.
Coracion, ii. 195
Corinth, i. 183, 235, 451
Cornelius, Bishop of Antioch, i. 373
Cornelius, Bishop of Rome, ii. 93, 115-125, 129
Cornelius, centurion, i. 115
Cornutus, ii. 59
Crescens, companion of Paul, i. 197
Crescens, opponent of Justin, i. 361 f.
Crete, i. 197, 375, 379
Crispus, ii. 477
Cronion, called Eunus, ii. 105
Cronius, ii. 59
Culcianus, ii. 383
Cumane, i. 481
Cyprian, ii. 115, 139
Cyrene, i. 305
Cyril, ii. 229

Damas, i. 281
Damascus, ii. 339
Dead Sea, i. 69
Debeltum, i. 495
Decius, ii. 93, 137
Demetrian, ii. 131, 139, 171, 209, 223
Demetrius, bishop, ii. 169
Demetrius, Bishop of Alexandria, i. 501; ii. 11, 29 f., 51, 65, 79
Demetrius, Hellenistic Jew, ii. 45
Demetrius, presbyter, ii. 165
Desposyni, i. 63
Diocletian, ii. 225, 265, 299, 365, 377
Dionysia, ii. 107
Dionysius, Areopagite, i. 197, 379
Dionysius, Bishop of Alexandria, ii. 83, 89, 95-113, 125-131, 137-169, 177-215
Dionysius, Bishop of Corinth, i. 183, 197, 375, 379-385
Dionysius, Bishop of Rome, ii. 141, 147, 149, 169 (?), 209, 215, 227
Dioscorus, confessor, ii. 107 f.
Dioscorus, presbyter, ii. 165
Dius, Bishop of Jerusalem, ii. 35
Dius, martyr, ii. 297
Docetae, ii. 43
Domitian, i. 233-241, 273, 391
Domitilla, Flavia, i. 237
Domitius and Didymus, ii. 163, 17

Domnus, Bishop of Caesarea, ii. 171
Domnus, Bishop of Antioch, ii. 223, 229
Domnus, apostate, ii. 39
Dorotheus, imperial servant, ii. 253, 265 f.
Dorotheus, presbyter of Antioch, ii. 229
Dosithians, i. 377

Ebionites, i. 261 f., 459; ii. 53
Edessa, i. 87, 107
Egypt, i. 47, 135, 149, 305, 315, 465; ii. 63, 161, 165, 179, 189, 191, 269, 275, 279
Elagabalus (Antoninus), ii. 67
Eleutherus, i. 331, 375, 405, 445, 449, 451
Eliezer, i. 77
Elpistus, i. 381
Emesa, ii. 341
Encratites, i. 395
Enoch, Book of, ii. 239
Ephesus, i. 191, 195, 243, 271, 281, 293, 335, 337, 371, 455, 491, 503, 507
Epimachus, ii. 107
Eros, i. 373
Esdras, ii. 73
Essenes, i. 377
Estha, i. 59
Ethlopia, i. 111
Euclid, i. 523
Euelpis, ii. 65
Eumeneia, i. 483, 507
Eumenes, i. 311, 329
Eunus, ii. 105
Euphranor, ii. 209
Eupolemus, ii. 45
Euporus, ii. 209
Eusebius, Bishop of Caesarea, ii. 397
Eusebius, Bishop of Laodicea, ii. 155, 165, 167, 229, 233
Eutychianus, ii. 227
Eutychius, ii. 215
Evarestos, i. 279
Evodius, i. 241
Ezra, i. 461; ii. 73

Fabian, ii. 81 f., 91, 93
Fabius, ii. 95, 99, 115, 125, 131, 171
Fadus, i. 135
Faustinus, ii. 165
Faustus, deacon, ii. 157, 165, 167
Faustus, presbyter, ii. 99, 165, 297
Felix, Bishop of Rome, ii. 227
Felix, Procurator of Judaea, i. 161, 165
Festus, i. 165, 169, 177
Firmilian, ii. 67, 131, 139, 171, 211, 215, 217
Flavia Domitilla, i. 237
Flavia Neapolis, i. 333
Flavius Clemens, i. 237
Flavius, unidentified, ii. 179
Florinus, i. 471, 495, 497
Florus, i. 183
Fundanus, i. 323, 391

Gaius, Bishop of Rome, ii. 227
Gaius, companion of Dionysius of Alexandria, ii. 99, 165
Gaius (Caius), Emperor, i. 117 ff., 127, 133, 159
Gaius, martyr, i. 483
Galus (Caius), presbyter of Rome, i. 131, 263, 271; ii. 65 f.
Galba, i. 199
Galen, i. 523
Galerius, ii. 315 ff., 325
Galilæans, i. 49, 377
Gallienus, ii. 151, 169, 189, 211 f.
Gallus, ii. 137, 151
Gamala, i. 49
Gaul, i. 197, 407 ff.; ii. 457
Gaza, ii. 295
Germanicus, i. 341
Germanion, ii. 35
Germans, i. 445
Germanus, ii. 95, 155, 163
Gihon, ii. 181
Gittho, i. 137
Gnostics, i. 317
Gordian, ii. 81, 89
Gordius, ii. 35
Gorgonius, ii. 253, 267
Gorthaeus, Gorotheni, i. 377
Granianus, i. 325
Gratus, i. 475
Gregory, ii. 83, 171, 211

Hadrian, i. 307-313, 321-327
Hebrews, Epistle to, i. 151, 193, 289, 515; ii. 47, 67, 77 f.
Hebrews, Gospel of, i. 257, 263, 299, 377
Hegesippus, i. 171-177, 287 f., 273 ff. 321, 331, 375 f.

Helena, companion of Simon, i. 139
Helena, Queen of Adiabene, i. 135 f.
Helenus, ii. 129, 139, 141, 211, 215
Heliodorus, ii. 139
Helkesaites, ii. 93
Hemerobaptists, i. 377
Heraclas, ii. 17, 51, 61 f., 79, 83, 85, 89, 145, 147
Heraclides, martyr, ii. 23
Heraclides, procurator fiscal, ii. 463
Heraclitus, i. 515
Herais, ii. 23
Hermammon, ii. 137, 151, 189
Hermas, the *Shepherd* of, i. 193 f., 257, 457
Hermo, ii. 243
Hermophilus, i. 523
Hermopolitans, ii. 129
Hero, martyr, (*a*) ii. 23 ; (*b*) ii. 107
Herod Agrippa I., i. 117, 129 ff.
Herod Agrippa II., i. 161, 179, 231
Herod Antipas, i. 61, 75-81, 117
Herod of Ascalon, i. 51, 61
Herod, captain of police, i. 347, 357
Herod the Great, i. 49 ff., 61, 65-73
Herodias, i. 79 f., 117
Heros (Hero), i. 287, 373
Hesychius, ii. 297
Hexapla, ii. 51 f.
Hierapolis, i. 271, 281, 295, 505
Hierax, ii. 179, 215
Hippolytus, ii. 65, 69
Hippolytus, unidentified, ii. 131
Hosius, ii. 463
Hyginus, i. 327, 329, 451, 511
Hymenaeus, ii. 171, 211, 215, 243
Hypotyposeis, ii. 43
Hyrcanus, i. 53, 61

Iconium, ii. 65, 145
Ignatius, i. 241, 281-291
India, i. 463
Ionia, i. 465
Irenaeus, i. 235 f., 297, 375, 445, 449-461, 495-499, 509-515
Ischyrion, ii. 111
Ishmael, i. 77
Isodore, ii. 107
Italy, ii. 115, 119, 225

Jacob, i. 17
James, apostle, i. 105, 127, 129, 199, 293, 465 ; ii. 199, 201
James, epistle of, i. 179
James the Just, i. 105, 169-179 ; ii. 177
Jerusalem (Aelia), i. 53, 89, 105, 135, 161-165, 169, 201-227, 231 f., 281, 309-313, 465 f. ; ii. 31-37, 65, 93 f., 139, 171, 177, 243
"Jerusalem," Montanist, i. 487
Jesus, High Priest, i. 179
Jesus, son of Ananias, i. 223
John, apostle, i. 191, 235 f., 24 -257, 265, 271, 299, 337, 455, 457, 493, 497, 511 ; ii. 49, 75, 77, 199-209. See also Apocalypse
John, Baptist, i. 79 ff., 253
John, elder, i. 293 ff.
John, two named, i. 293 ; ii. 199 ff.
Jonathan, i. 163
Jordan, ii. 175
Joseph, i. 57-65, 105, 459 ; ii. 53
Josephus, i. 79-83, 101, 119-125, 129-133, 135, 161-165, 177 f., 183 f., 203-217, 221-231 ; ii. 45, 237
Joshua, i. 17 f., 31
Judas, brother of the Lord, i. 237, 275
Judas, commentator, ii. 29
Judas, Galilean (Gaulonite), i. 49
Judas, prophet, i. 485
Jude, Epistle of, i. 179, 257 ; ii. 45
Julian, Alexandrian martyr, ii. 105
Julian, Bishop of Alexandria, i. 461, 501 ; ii. 11
Julian, Bishop of Apamea, i. 481
Juliana, ii. 55
Justin Martyr, i. 321-325, 331 f., 359-373, 517
Justus, Bishop of Alexandria, i. 309
Justus of Tiberias, i. 231

Kallistio, i. 469

Lacedaemonians, i. 379
Laetus, ii. 11
Laodicaea, in Asia, i. 388, 507
Laodicea, in Syria, ii. 129, 139, 229, 235, 239
Laranda, ii. 65
Larissa, i. 391
Latronianus, ii. 459
Leonides, ii. 9-15
Libya, ii. 159, 165
Licinius, ii. 301, 317, 359, 365, 371, 373, 445, 467-479

Linus, i. 191, 197, 233, 241, 449
Longinus, ii. 59
Lucian, martyr, ii. 295, 341
Lucian, not identified, ii. 149
Lucius, Bishop of Rome, ii. 139
Lucius, martyr, i. 367 f.
Lucius, member of synod at Antioch, ii. 215
Lucius, presbyter of Alexandria, ii. 165
Lucius, son of Caesar the philosopher, i. 333
Lucius (Verus), Emperor, i. 339
Lucuas, i. 307
Luke, i. 195 f., 255, 289, 455; ii. 47, 75
Lupus, i. 305
Lusius, i. 307
Lyons, i. 407-445
Lysanias, i. 75, 117

MACAR, ii. 107
Maccabees, i. 229; ii. 75
Macherus, i. 81
Macrianus, ii. 151 ff., 189
Macrinus, ii. 67
Magna Graecia (South Italy), i. 465
Magnesia, i. 281
Malchion, ii. 213 f.
Malchus, ii. 167
Mamaea, ii. 67
Manes (Mani), ii. 227
Marcella, ii. 25
Marcellinus, ii. 229
Marcellus, ii. 157
Marcian, i. 515
Marcianists, i. 377, 483
Marcianus, ii. 41
Marcion, i. 327 ff., 373, 379, 385, 395 f., 459, 467, 483; ii. 169
Marcius Turbo, i. 307
Marcus Aemilius, i. 113
Marcus Aurelius, i. 333, 339, 369, 387, 405, 445, 447, 461
Marcus, Bishop of Alexandria, i. 329
Marcus, Bishop of Jerusalem, i. 313, 467
Marcus, heretic, i. 329
Marea (Mareia), i. 149; ii. 161, 165
Marinus, Bishop of Arles, ii. 455
Marinus, Bishop of Tyre, ii. 139
Marinus, martyr, ii. 171 f.
Mark, evangelist, i. 143 f., 179, 251 ff., 297, 455; ii. 49, 75
Mark, not identified, ii. 455
Mary, daughter of Eliezer, i. 213
Mary, the Virgin, i. 22, 261 f., 459; ii. 53
Mary, wife of Clopas, i. 275
Masbothei, i. 377
Maternus, ii. 455
Matthew, i. 251 ff., 293, 297, 455, 463; ii. 75
Matthias, apostle, i. 85, 103, 259, 267, 295
Matthias, father of Josephus, i. 227
Maturus, i. 415, 425
Mauretania, ii. 269, 461
Maxentius, ii. 303 f., 311, 359 ff.
Maximian, ii. 299, 303
Maximilla, i. 471, 479 f., 485, 493
Maximin I., ii. 81
Maximin II., ii. 301, 305-311, 317, 325, 329, 335-359, 365-387
Maximinus, Bishop of Antioch, i. 385, 493
Maximus, Bishop of Alexandria, ii. 155, 165 f., 215
Maximus, Bishop of Bostra, ii. 211, 215
Maximus, Roman confessor, ii. 117
Maximus, writer, i. 515
Mazabanes, ii. 95, 139, 171
Meander, i. 281, 483
Meletius, ii. 241 f.
Melitene, i. 445; ii. 269
Melito, i. 335, 375, 387-393, 507, 517; ii. 47
Melōth, ii. 73
Menander, i. 259 f., 315
Menandrianists, i. 377
Mercuria, ii. 107
Meruzanes, ii. 129
Mesopotamia, i. 307, 399; ii. 141, 289
Metras, ii. 101
Metrodorus, i. 359
Milan, ii. 445, 447
Miltiades, Bishop of Rome, ii. 455
Miltiades, Montanist, i. 473
Miltiades, writer against Montanists, i. 483 ff., 517
Moderatus, ii. 59
Modestus, i. 375, 385
Montanus, i. 443, 471-493
Moses, presbyter of Rome, ii. 125
Musaeus, ii. 237

INDEX OF PROPER NAMES

Musanus, i. 375, 395
Mysia, i. 475

Narcissus, i. 465 f., 505, 513; ii. 33-39
Natalius, i. 519 f.
Nazareth, i. 63
Nebuchadnezzar, i. 461
Nemesion, ii. 109
Neon, ii. 65
Nepos, ii. 191 f.
Nero, i. 161, 167 f., 179 f., 199, 235, 239, 391
Nerva, i. 241
Nicolaïtans, i. 267
Nicolas, i. 267
Nicomachus, ii. 59
Nicomas, ii. 211, 215
Nicomedia, i. 379; ii. 263, 267 f., 295, 341, 367
Nicopolis, ii. 53
Niketas, i. 347, 357
Nilopolis, ii. 111
Nilus, ii. 297
Novatus (Novatian), ii. 113-131, 147
Numenius, ii. 59
Numerianus, ii. 225
Numidia, ii. 461

Onesimus, Bishop of Ephesus, i. 281
Onesimus, friend of Melito, i. 393
Origen, ii. 9-23, 27-31, 49-95
Osrhoëne, i. 105, 505
Ostian Way, i. 183
Otho, i. 199
Otrous, i. 475

Pachymius, ii. 297
Palestine, i. 113; ii. 171
Palmas, i. 381, 505
Pamphilus, ii. 87 f., 241, 297
Paneas, ii. 175
Paneion, ii. 175
Pantaenus, i. 463 f.; ii. 27, 43, 49, 61
Papias, i. 145, 281, 291-299
Papirius, i. 507
Papylas, i. 359
Paraetonium, ii. 165
Parthia, i. 53, 191
Patmos, i. 235; ii. 201
Patricius, ii. 463
Paul, apostle, i. 181 f., 191, 195 f., 269; ii 177, 203
Paul, bishop, ii. 215
Paul, companion of Dionysius of Alexandria, ii. 99, 165
Paul, heretic at Alexandria, ii. 15
Paul of Samosata, i. 517; ii. 209-225, 229, 239
Paulinus, Bishop of Tyre, ii. 391, 397, 413
Paulinus, lay preacher, ii. 65
Peleus, ii. 297
Pella, i. 201, 313
Pentapolis, ii. 143, 209
Pepuza, i. 487, 493
Perennius, i. 501
Pergamon, i. 359, 415
Persians, ii. 227
Pertinax, i. 515
Peter, apostle, i. 141-145, 181, 191 ff., 257 f., 269, 291; ii. 41, 47 f., 75 f., 177, 203
Peter, Bishop of Alexandria, ii. 245, 297, 341
Peter, companion of Dionysius of Alexandria, ii. 99, 165
Peter, imperial servant, ii. 265 f.
Peucetius, ii. 383
Phaeno, ii. 295
Pharisees, i. 377
Philadelphia, i. 283, 357
Phileas, ii. 279-285, 297
Philemon, ii. 141 f.
Philetus, ii. 67, 71
Philip, apostle, i. 271 f. (?evangelist), 293, 295, 505
Philip, Asiarch, i. 351
Philip, Bishop of Gortyna, i. 375, 379, 385
Philip, Emperor, ii. 89-93
Philip, evangelist, i. 271 f. (?), 287
Philip, son of Philip the Emperor, ii. 89
Philip, tetrarch, i. 75, 117, 133
Philo, i. 101, 117-123, 145-159; ii 45, 237
Philomelium, i. 341
Philoromus, ii. 279
Philoumene, i. 467
Phoenicia (Phoenice), i. 107; ii. 271, 295, 341, 397
Phrygia, i. 343, 443; ii. 287
Pierius, ii. 241, 243
Pilate, i. 73 f., 83, 111, 121-127; ii. 339, 343
Pinnas, ii. 169

Pinytus, i. 375, 381
Pionius, i. 359
Pirucheum, ii. 231
Pius, Bishop of Rome, i. 329, 451, 511
Plato, i. 117 ; ii. 59
Pliny, i. 277 f.
Plutarch, ii. 17
Polybius, i. 281
Polycarp, i. 265, 281-285, 335-359, 497 f., 511 f.
Polycrates, i. 271, 503, 505-509
Pompey, i. 53, 61
Pontia, i. 237
Pontianus, ii. 71, 81
Ponticus, i. 433
Pontius, i. 493 ; ii. 41
Pontus, i. 329, 331, 381, 505 ; ii. 83, 141, 171, 211, 241, 291, 473
Porphyry, ii. 57-61
Potamiaena, ii. 25 f.
Pothinus, i. 421 f., 449
Potitus, i. 467
Primus, Bishop of Alexandria, i. 305, 309
Primus, Bishop of Corinth, i. 375
Priscilla, i. 471, 487, 495
Priscus, father of Justin Martyr, i. 333
Priscus, martyr, ii. 167
Probus, ii. 225
Proclus, bishop (?), ii. 215
Proclus, Montanist, i. 183, 271 ; ii. 67
Protoctetus, ii. 81
Protogenes, ii. 215
Ptolemais, ii. 143
Ptolemy, martyr, (*a*) i. 367 ; (*b*) ii. 109
Ptolemy Philadelphus, ii. 237
Ptolemy Soter, son of Lagus, i. 459 f.
Publius, i. 379
Pythagoras, i. 117, 317
Pythagoreans, ii. 59

Quadratus, Bishop of Athens, i. 379
Quadratus, prophet and apologist, i. 287, 307 f., 485
Quinta, ii. 101
Quintus, i. 343
Quirinius, i. 49

Rechab, Rechabim, i. 175
Reticius, ii. 455
Rhodo, i. 467-471
Rhone, i. 407, 437
Rhossus, ii. 41
Rufus, companion of Ignatius, i. 285
Rufus, Governor of Judaea, i. 311
Ruth, i. 63

Sabellius, ii. 143, 209
Sabinus, Praetorian Prefect, ii. 329 f., 365
Sabinus, Prefect of Egypt, ii. 97, 163
Sadducees, i. 177, 377
Sagaris, i. 337, 507
Salome, i. 71
Samaritans, i. 377
Samosata, i. 517 ; ii. 209
Sanctus, i. 415 ff., 425 f.
Saracens, ii. 111
Sardis, i. 335, 337, 507
Sarmatians, i. 445
Saturnilians, i. 377
Saturninus, i. 315, 395 f.
Scythia, i. 191
Sejanus, i. 121
Septimius Severus, i. 515 ; ii. 9, 29, 31
Septuagint, i. 459 f. ; ii. 51 f.
Serapion, Alexandrian, ii. 125 f.
Serapion, Bishop of Antioch, i. 493 f., 501 f. ; ii. 39-43
Serapion, martyr, ii. 103
Serennius Granianus, i. 323 f.
Serenus, two martyrs named, ii. 23
Servillius (Sergius) Paulus, i. 337
Seventy, the, i. 79, 85, 87, 91, 105
Severa, ii. 91
Severiani, i. 397
Severus, i. 397
Sextus, i. 515
Sicily, ii. 57
Sidonius, ii. 117
Silas, i. 485
Silvanus, two bishops so named, ii. 295
Simon, High Priest, i. 77
Simon, sorcerer, i. 109, 137-143, 315, 317, 327, 377
Simonians, i. 377
Smyrna, i. 281 f., 341, 359
Socrates, Bishop of Laodicea, ii. 229
Socrates, sage, i. 363
Sosthenes, i. 83

INDEX OF PROPER NAMES

Sotas, i. 495
Soter, i. 373, 381, 399, 405, 451, 511
Stephen, Bishop of Laodicea, ii. 239
Stephen, Bishop of Rome, ii. 139, 141
Stephen, one of the seven, i. 103, 107, 199, 441
Symeon (Simeon, Simon), i. 233, 241, 275, 279, 311, 375
Symmachus, Bishop of Jerusalem, i. 467
Symmachus, translator, ii. 51 ff.
Syneros, i. 469
Synnada, ii. 65, 145
Syracuse, ii. 457
Syria, ii. 269

Taposiris, ii. 97
Tatian, i. 363, 395 f., 467, 471, 517; ii. 45
Telesphorus, i. 311, 327, 451, 511
Tertullian, i. 113, 181, 239, 279, 447 f.
Thaddaeus, i. 85-97, 107
Thebais, ii. 9, 269, 275, 297
Theboûthis, i. 377
Thelymidres, ii. 129, 139
Themiso, i. 481, 489
Theoctistus, ii. 31, 63, 79, 131, 139
Theodore, lay preacher, ii. 65
Theodore, martyred bishop, ii. 297
Theodore, unidentified, ii. 215
Theodotion, i. 459; ii. 51 f.
Theodotus, banker, i. 519, 523 (?)
Theodotus, Bishop of Laodicea, ii. 241
Theodotus, cobbler, i. 519, 523 (?)
Theodotus, Montanist, i. 443, 479
Theonas, ii. 243 f.
Theophilus, Bishop of Antioch, i. 373, 385
Theophilus, Bishop of Caesarea, i. 503 f., 513
Theophilus, bishop not identified, ii. 215
Theophilus, martyr, ii. 109
Theophrastus, i. 523
Theotecnus, Bishop of Caesarea, ii. 171 f., 211, 215, 239
Theotecnus, Curator of Antioch, ii. 335 f., 385
Therapeutae, Therapeutrides, i. 147-157
Thessalonica, i. 391
Theudas, i. 133 f.
Thmuis, ii. 279 f.
Thomas, i. 87, 91, 107, 191, 259, 29
Thraseas, i. 493, 507
Tiberius, i. 73 f., 111 f., 117
Timaeus, ii. 229
Timothy, Bishop of Ephesus, i. 195
Timothy, "boy" of Dionysius of Alexandria, ii. 97, 209
Titus, Bishop in Crete, i. 197
Titus, Emperor, i. 199, 209, 233
Tobias, i. 91 f.
Trajan, i. 239 ff., 275 ff., 307
Troas, i. 283
Trypho, i. 371 f.
Tymion, i. 487
Tyrannion, ii. 295
Tyrannus, ii. 229
Tyre, ii. 229, 271, 273, 295, 343, 397

Urban, Bishop of Rome, ii. 67, 71
Urban, confessor, ii. 117
Urbicius, i. 367 f.
Ursus, ii. 461

Valentinians, i. 377
Valentinus, i. 327 f., 337, 397
Valerian, ii. 151-155, 169
Valerius Gratus, i. 77
Vatican, i. 183
Vespasian, i. 175, 199, 225, 233, 235, 449
Vettius Epagathus, i. 409
Victor, i. 271, 501, 505-513
Vienne, i. 407, 415

Xystus I., i. 309, 311, 451
Xystus II., ii. 141, 147, 149, 171 209

Zabdas, ii. 243
Zacharias, martyr, i. 411
Zacharias, priest, i. 411
Zadok, i. 49
Zebennus, ii. 71, 83
Zeno, ii. 109
Zenobius, ii. 295
Zephyrinus, i. 181, 517, 521; ii. 49, 67
Zeus, the Befriender, ii. 337
Zosimus, i. 285
Zoticus of Cumane, i. 481, 493
Zoticus of Otrous, i. 475

Printed in Great Britain by R. & R. Clark, Limited, *Edinburgh*